

This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

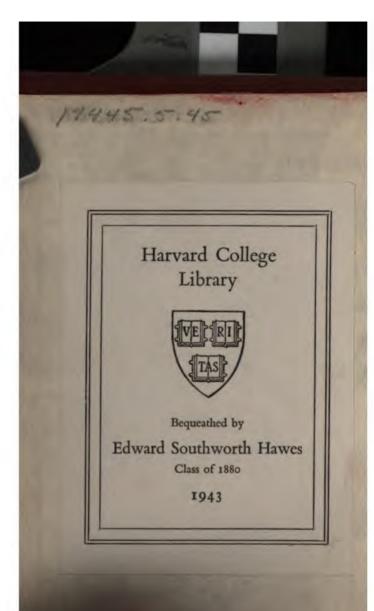
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + Refrain from automated querying Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at http://books.google.com/







.

,

M. a. Harris

The Globe Edition

COMPLETE WORKS

OF

DMUND SPENSER

EDITED FROM THE ORIGINAL EDITIONS AND MANUSCRIPTS

BY

R. MORRIS

MEMBER OF THE COUNCIL OF THE PHILOLOGICAL SOCIETY

WITH A MEMOIR

BY

I. W. HALES, M.A.

LATE FELLOW OF CHRIST'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE MEMBER OF THE COUNCIL OF THE PHILOLOGICAL SOCIETY



NEW EDITION

London
MACMILLAN AND CO.
AND NEW YORK
1890

14445,5.45

MARYARD COLLEGE LIDAARY FROM THE EDWARD S. HAWES ESTATE 1943

First Edition, 1869.

Reprinted, 1871, 1873, 1876, 1879, 1883, 1886, 1890.

1704.73

PREFACE.

present edition of Edmund Spenser's works no attempt has been made to modernize the Poet's language or to furnish the reader with an e text. I have been simply content to reprint the earliest known ediof Spenser's various poems, correcting here and there some few errors ave crept into them, by a careful collation with subsequent editions, most ich were published in the lifetime of the poet. For an account of these their dates of publication the reader is referred to the Biographical Appendix I., at the end of this volume, contains all the most imit variations from the original editions, and will enable the critical reader ige favourably or otherwise of this part of my work, in which I have ed some assistance from the previous labours of Church, Jortin, Warton, odd, as well as from the excellent editions of Professor Child and Mr. Collier. This present edition is the only modern one that contains a faithful s of the first edition of the Daphnaïda, by means of which I have been d to present a text free at least from one error that appears in every t after 1591.*

proce Treatise on Ireland, as printed by Sir James Ware, and followed l recent editors, was found on examination to be very inaccurate and plete.† It seemed scarcely fair to Spenser's memory to let this single of proce remain in so unsatisfactory a state. I have therefore re-edited to three manuscripts belonging to the library of the British Museum.

medition of 1506 and all subsequent ones read-

^{&#}x27;I will withdraw me to some darksome place, Or some deere cave.'

then have proposed to read dreere for deere, but deepe, the lection of the first edition, is in-

wate inself as given by Ware is incorrectly stated. All the manuscripts, as well as the entry backs of the Stationers' Company, read 'A View of the Present State of Ireland,' but, the word 'present' is omitted in all editions that I have seen.

iv

The text itself is from the Additional Manuscript, 22022, the oldest of three manuscripts; and, according to Sir James Ware's account of some of the best manuscripts seen by him, the Ad. MS. is evidently a very good on Harleian MS., 1932, which very closely resembles, even in its omission Ware's text, and Harleian MS. 7388, are very fair manuscripts, and have best collated throughout with the Additional Manuscript and Ware's text.

In compiling the Glossary I have endeavoured to make it as complet as possible; and this, it is hoped, will in some measure compensate for the absence of notes, for which no space could be found in the present volume. have made free use of the labours of previous editors; Todd's Index, Professor Child's Notes, and the glossaries of Mr. J. P. Collier and Mr. Kitchinave been consulted, and have facilitated and lightened my glossarial work.

In Appendix II. will be found Spenser's Letters to Gabriel Harvey, reprint from the edition of 1580. They are also to be found, but in a very inaccuration, in the Folio Edition, 1679, of Spenser's works.

R. M.

August, 1869.

CONTENTS.

						P	AGE									AGE
ID SP	ENSE				1.0			THE THE							RIE	
THE O	FTH	E AUT	THOR	8			3	QUEENE	-					END	OF	10.
BADD	D BREE	or m	THE	AT	тно	R.	5	BRITOMA	RTIS, OI	OF	CHAS	TITY				155
-	-	4.02			2			CANTO	I							155
BADD									п							163
HE FA	ERIE	QUEE	N, TO	V.	ARIO	US		**	III.							168
EMEN	, ETC.						7	29	IV.							175
TRET	2001	- 01	TIT		PAPE	TD		"	v							182
								,,	VI.							188
NE, co								**	VII.							193
BT WE'T	HE RI	CBC)88E,	OR	OF Ho	LI-		,,,	VIII.							200
							11	10	IX.						*	206
	-							93	X.							211
TO L.	-						11		XI.							218
11.			ν.				17		XII.					7.		224
111	_						22				-					
		*	*					THE FOU	RTH I	BOOK	Œ O	F T	HE :	FAE	RIE	
V.				-			32	QUEENI	, con	TAYN	ING	THE	LEG	END	OF	
VI.							38	CAMBEL	AND T	RIAN	OND,	OR	OF	FRIE	ND-	
VI							43									229
2.11				*			49				2					
IX.								CANTO	I							229
X.							60		II							235
XI							68		III.							241
XI	L .			,			74		IV.							247
TON!	BOO	K O	FTH	R	PARE	SIE		"	V							252
ESE C						-		,,	VI.							257
									VII.							262
沙 沙丘 1	P TEM	PERAL	NCE	•			79	21	VIII.							267
ME T.							80	,,	IX.							274
_ n					Ċ	i	86	**	X.							279
_ 111					·		91	,,	XI.							285
- 17	-				·		96	,,	XII,							291
		-	•			•	102									
							106	THE FIF	TH BO	юкі	B OF	7 T	HE	PAB	RIE	
	IL.				•	:	112	QUEEN	B. con	TAYN	ING	THE	LE	GEND	OF	
. 7	IIL .						119	ARTEGAL								295
. 13	κ						125		_, (- •	•	•	•	
. x					•		131	CANTO	I							296
. X	J.						139	,,	П.							. %
_ x	11.		_		_		145	**	III.	-	-	-	_			. 3

vi			•	••••			C	ON7	CENTS.
-								PAGE	
CANTO	TV.		_	_		_		810	THE VISIONS OF BELLAY
	v	:	:	:	:	:	:	816	
"	VI.					•		822	THE VISIONS OF PETRARCH
,,	VII.							827	DAPHNAÏDA
,,	VIII.		•			•		832	
,,	IX.		•		•	•	•	887	COLIN CLOUTS COME HOME AGAIN
"	X. .		•	•	•	•	•	848	ASTROPHEL
**	XI.	•	•	•	•	•	٠	347	
**	XII.	•	•	•	•	•	•	854	THE DOLEFULL LAY OF CLORINDA
THE SIX	TE BO	OKE	OF	TH	E I	FAER	IB		THE MOURNING MUSE OF THESTYLIS
QUEEN	E, com	KYA	IXE	THE	Lan		OF		A PASTORAL ARGLOGUE ON THE
SIR CAL	DORE, O	r of	Com	RTESI		•	•	360	DRATH OF SIR PHILIP SIDNEY
Canto		•		•		•		861	KNIGHT, Erc.
"	п	•	•	•	•	•	•	366	
***	m.	•	÷	•	•	•	•	871	AN ELEGIE, OR FRIENDS PASSION
11	IV.	•	•	•	•	•	•	877	FOR HIS ASTROPHEL
***	V VI.	•	•	•	•	•	٠	881 886	AN EPITAPH UPON THE RIGHT
**	VII.	•	•	•	•	•	•	891	HONOURABLE SIR PHILIP SIDNEY
"	VIII.	•	•	•	•	•	•	896	
"	IX.	•	•	•	•	•	•	402	KNIGHT
"	X.	•	:	:	:	:	:	407	ANOTHER OF THE SAME
"	XI.					·		412	
"	XII.		•	•				418	AMORETTI AND EPITHALAMION
TWO CAN	TOS OF	MU	TAB	ILIT	TB:	WHIC	н,		EPIGRAMS
BOTH FOR	PORME	AND	MAT	TER,	APP	RARE '	70		EPITHALAMION
BE PARCE	LL OF S	OMB	FOLL	OWIN	e B	OOKE	OF.		FOWRE HYMNES
THE FAR	RIE QUE	ENE	. UND	ER T	HR	Lege	CD.		FOWRE HIERES
OF CONST	•	•	•		•			428	AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF LOVE
Canto		•		•	•	•	•	428	AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF BEAUTIE
,,	VII.	•	•	•	•	•	•	429	AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY LOVE.
"	VIII.	•	•	٠	•	•	•	436	
го нів в	OOKE	•	•	٠.	•	•	•	440	AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY BEAUTIE
THE SHE	PHRAR	D8 (CALE	NDI	æ			446	PROTHALAMION, OR A SPOUSALL VERSE
THE RUII	TES OF	TI	MCR.					489	SONNETS
THE TEA	RES OF	' TE	е м	USE	В			497	A VIEW OF THE PRESENT STATE OF
VIRGIL'S	GNAT							504	IRELAND, DISCOURSED BY WAY OF A DIA- LOGUE BETWEENE EUDOXUS AND IRENÆUS
PROSOPO1	DOTA .	^-	V~	og ur	ш.	יישמפו	ne		
TALE .						·		512	APPENDIX I.—VARIATIONS FROM THE ORIGINAL EDITIONS
THE RUD	NTES OF	RO	ME					526	APPENDIX II.—LETTERS FROM SPEN-
MUIOPOT	MUS · v	_D Tr	oe P		,,, ,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,,	ue Ro	·		SER (IMMERITO) TO GABRIEL HAR-
			up Fi		, s T		•••	532	VEY
TERFLIE	•	•	•	•	•	•	•		
TEIONS C	P THE	W	ORLI	B V	AN	TIE	•	586	GLOSSARY

INDEX TO FIRST LINES.

	AUE		PAGE
Knight was pricking on the plaine	11	DARKE is the day, when Phoebus face is	
hepheard borne in Arcady	559	shrowded	572
hman to learne Continence	106	Dayly when do I seeke and sew for peace .	574
rds beye, (no better doe him call,) .	446	Diggon Davie! I bidde her godday	478
; stormes and tempests over-blowne .	806	Doe I not see that fayrest ymages	580
; stormes and tempest and assay .	582		
ing a race as I have run	585		
i, whether on the lowly plaine	572	FAIRE Proud! now tell me, why should faire	
zie! wil rancke Winter's rage .	448	be proud?	577
ther doest thou now, thou greater		Fayre bosom! fraught with vertues richest	
	429	tresure	584
ther Love! wilt thou now carrie		Fayre cruell! why are ye so fierce and cruell?	580
	596	Fayre eyes! the myrrour of my mazed hart .	578
bath nature to so hard a hart	577	Fayre is my love, with her fayre golden heares	585
ere care in beaven? And is there		Fayre Thames streame, that from Ludds stately	
	119	towne	5
rave Lord, whose goodly personage .	8	Fayre ye be sure, but cruell and unkind .	581
en, through tempests cruel wracke.	578	Firebrand of hell, first tynd in Phlegeton .	235
hunted on a day	586	Fresh Spring, the herald of loves mighty king	583
PC expert in perilons wave	112	·· · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	
m winde at all there blew	568		
thip, that fives fayre under sayle .	38	Gor, little booke! thy selfe present	440
many perils doe enfold		Great God of love, that with thy cruell darts	262
whom shall I my case complaine .		Great wrong I doe, I can it not deny	577
		oreas wrong ruse, reas is not using .	
t dismayed that her immoved mind	578	HAPPY, ye leaves! when as those lilly hands .	573
ere the haven nigh at hand	74	Hard is the doubt, and difficult to deeme .	274
self captyved here in care	583		607
dat at my window all alone	541	Here have I cause in men just blame to find .	163
rittle! that I have thus long.	285	High time now gan it wex for Una fayre .	68
e Northerne wagoner had set	17	How long shall this lyke dying lyfe endure	576
a more management and see	•••	now long sussit this lyke thing the chame	
s the day, and through the trembling		I Joy to see how, in your drawen work	583
	605	I saw, in secret to my Dame	586
drare, when shall it please thee		I sing of deadly dolorous debate	532
comment of picare office		In brave poursuitt of honorable deed	96
I fits thy and cheare this sad stownd		Innocent paper; whom too cruell hand.	580
ee, by thy new taken taske		In that proud port, which her so goodly	
h, ye Nymphes, come forth, forsake	•	graceth	574
4'ry bowres	562	In vain I thinke, right honourable Lord	9
to kiese her lyps, (such grace I found,)		In vaine I seeke and sew to her for grace	878
r shame! hold up thy heavy head		In youth before I waved old	. 129

viii INDEX 7	ro FI	RST LINES.
	PAGE	
Is it her nature, or is it her will	579 C	GOODLY golden chayne, wherewith yfere
is not thilke the mery moneth of May	458 C	hatefull hellish Snake! what furie furst
is not thilke same a goteheard prowde	466 C	sacred hunger of ambitious mindes .
It chaunced me on day beside the shore	489 0) what an easie thing is to descry
It falls me here to write of Chastity		I What an endlesse work have I in han
t hath bene through all ages ever seene		! why doe wretched men so much desire
t often fals, (as here it earst befell)		of all Gods workes which doe this wo
t often fals, in course of common life	347	adorne
t was the month in which the righteous Maide		Of Court, it seemes, men Courtesie doe cal
t was the time, when rest, soft sliding downe		Of lovers sad calamities of old
to wine time, which rear, some straining nowing		Of this worlds Theatre in which we stay .
		Oft, when my spirit doth spred her bo
for of my life! full oft for loving you	585	winges
		One day as I unwarily did gaze
the state of the s		One day I sought with her hart-thrilling e
LACKYNG my love, I go from place to place .		One day I wrote her name upon the sand
leave, lady! in your glasse of cristall clene .		One day, whiles that my daylie cares did sle
et not one sparke of filthy lustre fyre	585	
like as a ship, that through the Ocean wyde.	418	
like as a ship with dreadfull storm long tost,	377 F	PENELOPE, for her Ulisses sake
ike as an Hynd forth singled from the heard	193	
Ake as the gentle hart it selfe bewrayes	391	
o! Collin, here the place whose plesaunt syte	463 B	RAPT with the rage of mine own rav
o! I, the Man whose Muse whylome did maske	11	thought.
oe! I have made a Calender for every yeare.	486 B	Receive, most noble Lord, a simple taste
ong languishing in double malady		Receive, most Noble Lord, in gentle gree
ong-while I sought to what I might compare		Redoubted Knights, and honorable Dames
ove lift me up upon thy golden wings		Redoubted Lord, in whose corageous mind
ove, that long since hast to thy mighty powre		Rehearse to me, ye sacred Sisters Nine .
yke as a huntsman after weary chace		Remembrance of that most Heroicke spirit
yke as a ship, that through the Ocean wyde.	Distance in	denowmed Lord, that for your worthiness
yke as the Culver, on the bared bough		Retourne agayne, my forces late dismayd
yac as the Curver, on the baren bough		light well I wote, most mighty Soveraine
		andely thou wrongest my deare harts desi
	7	study thou wrongest my deare narre desi
fagnificke Lord, whose vertues excellent .		
fark when she smiles with amiable cheare	579	
Ie thought I saw the grave where Laura lay	5 8	SEE! how the stubborne damzell doth depr
fen call you fayre, and you doe credit it .	584 S	hall I then silent be, or shall I speake .
fore then most faire, full of the living fire	574 S	hepheards, that wont, on pipes of oaten r
fost glorious Lord of lyfe! that, on this day .	583 S	ilence augmenteth grief, writing encreas
fost happy letters! fram'd by skilfull trade .	584	rage
fost Noble Lord, the pillor of my life	8 S	ince did I leave the presence of my love
fost sacred fyre, that burnest mightily	168 S	ince I have lackt the comfort of that ligh
ly hungry eyes, through greedy covetize .	578 8	o oft as homeward I from her depart .
Iy love is lyke to yse, and I to fyre		o oft as I her beauty doe behold
A source of any and any and any and any		o oft as I this history record
		o oft as I with state of present time .
NE may I, without blot of endless blame .	9 8	o soone as day forth dawning from the E
New yeare, forth looking out of Janus gate	573 S	ome Clarkes doe doubt in their device
	386	art.
No wound, which warlike hand of enemy	-	ome men, I wote, will deeme in Artegall
Nought is more honorable to a knight		
Nought is on earth more sacred or divine	921 3	oone as the morrow fayre with purple bear
Nought is there under heav'ns wide hollow-		weet is the Rose, but growes upon a brere
nesse		weet Smile! the daughter of the Queene
Tought under heaven so strongly doth allure.	322	Love
wginnes that goodly frame of Temperaunce	145 S	weet warriour! when shall I have peace w
turne againe my teme, thou jolly swayne	402	you?

INDEX 1	O	FIRST LINES.	ix
1	PAGE	•	PAGE
. good Hobbinoll, what garres thee		True is, that whileme that good Poet sayd .	371
1	454	Trust not the treason of those smyling lookes	580
Perigot, what shalbe the game	470	and the second of second and the second	900
when shall these wearie woes have			
	578	Unquier thought! whom at the first I bred .	578
aing Architect of cancred guyle	80	Unrighteous Lord of Love, what law is this .	574
strang Postes incompared spirit	9	Upon a day, as Love lay sweetly slumbring	586
me Babel, Empresse of the East	608	o post a cas), as note they sweetly stimulifting .	000
a Peincter, when he was requirde .	10		
x which ye misdeeme, fayre love, is		VENEMOUS toung, tipt with vile adders sting	585
2022 10 222220, 20,10 1010, 2	582	vanances sound, whe were the sources sung	990
m Briton Prince and Facry Knight	155		
me warriors of anticke world	583	Wegit a decemp on did I see to slow.	
le shepheard satte beside a springe	484	Was it a dreame, or did I see it playne We now have playde (Augustus) wantonly .	584
ous image of the Maker's beautie	582		504
	575	Was it the worke of Nature or of Art	576
ious pourtraict of that Angels face . i of love, if they should ever last .	412	Weake is th' assurance that weake flesh re-	
		poseth	581
si-leafe, which you this day doe weare	577 579	Well may I weene, faire Ladies, all this while	188
which me so cruelly tormenteth .		Well said the Wiseman, now prov'd true by	
ry Cuckow, messenger of Spring .	575	this	267
rw next, so soone as Phosbus Lamp	211	What equal torment to the griefe of mind .	257
z hart that harbours vertuous thought	82	What-ever man be he whose heavie minde	542
ther, knowing that his spotted hyde .	580	What guyle is this, that those her golden	
setal smith, with force of fervent		tresses	578
· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	577	What man is he, that boasts of fleshly might.	60
≈ of meaner wits this worke like profit		What man so wise, what earthly witt so ware	43
	5	What man that sees the ever-whirling wheele	423
ne wheele, that runneth often round	575	What Tygre, or what other salvage wight .	337
red forhead, that with grave foresight	229	What vertue is so fitting for a knight	366
wi Muses have made alwaics clame .	7	What warre so cruel, or what siege so sore .	139
spheards boy (best knowen by that		When I behold that beauties wonderment .	576
	549	When I bethinke me on that speech whyleare	436
rayne beauty which I doo admire .	573	When my abodes prefixed time is spent	579
ss, through which my weary steps I		When stout Achilles heard of Helen's rape	6
	860	When those renoumed noble Peres of Greece .	579
sy yeare his race now having run .	582	Where is the Antique glory now become	175
51 that cannot deeme of worthy things	585	Wherefore doth vaine antiquitie so vaunt .	608
mt in the course of heavenly spheares		Who ever doth to temperance apply	102
£4	581	Who ever gave more honourable prize	9
by mason, fit to fast and pray	576	Who now does follow the foule Blatant Beast	407
Mas chearelesse Night ycovered had .	224	Who now shall give unto me words and sound	131
a. why sytten we see	452	Whose upon him selfe will take the skill .	310
raient heads, that with theire counsels		Who so wil seeke, by right deserts, t'attaine .	608
	7	Wonder it is to see in diverse mindes	182
verse then were held in highest price	296	Wrong'd, yet not daring to expresse my paine	504
impie she! that is so well assured .	581	J	
20 Str Guyon with his faithful guyde	86		
her bappy blessings, which ye have .	582	YE gentle Ladies, in whose soveraine powre .	396
From a worke of rare devise	6	Ye heavenly spirites, whose ashle cinders lie.	526
with life, or waile thy worthie death	570	Ye learned sisters, which have oftentimes .	587
. thou art the sommers Nightingale .	8	Ye tradefull Merchants, that, with weary toyle	575
first noble Lord, whose carefull brest	8	Young knight whatever, that dost armes pro-	
E said, what ever man it sayd	279	fesse	97
	413	10000	



.

.

EDMUND SPENSER.

Ille velut fidis arcana sodalibus olim Credebat libris; neque, si male cesserat, unquam Decurrens alio, neque si bene; quo fit ut omnis Votiva patest veluti descripta tabella Vita senis.

Hither as to their fountain other stars Repair and in their urns draw golden light.

IFE of Spenser is wrapt in a similar obscurity to that which hides from us his predecessor Chaucer, and his still greater contemporary Shakspere. As in the f Chancer, our principal external authorities are a few meagre entries in certain documents, and such facts as may be gathered from his works. The birth-year in poet is determined by inference. The circumstances in which each died are ter of controversy. What sure information we have of the intervening events · iife of each one is scanty and interrupted. So far as our knowledge goes, it some slight positive resemblance between their lives. They were both connected the highest society of their times; both enjoyed court favour, and enjoyed it in the antial shape of pensions. They were both men of the greatest learning. were both natives of London. They both died in the close vicinity of Wester Abbey, and lie buried near each other in that splendid cemetery. were eminently different: that of Chaucer was of the active type, Spenser's * contemplative; Chaucer was dramatic, Spenser philosophical; Chaucer objecmenser subjective; but in the external circumstances, so far as we know them, st which these great poets moved, and in the mist which for the most part enfolds creumstances, there is considerable likeness.

easer is frequently alluded to by his contemporaries; they most ardently recogin him, as we shall see, a great poet, and one that might justly be associated the one supreme poet whom this country had then produced—with Chaucer, and paid him constant tributes of respect and admiration; but these mentions of the not generally supply any biographical details.

earliest notice of him that may in any sense be termed biographical occurs in of handbook to the monuments of Westminster Abbey, published by Camden Amongst the Reges, Regine, Nobiles, et alij in Ecclesia Collegiata B. Petri

Westmonasterii sepulti usque ad annum 1606' is enrolled the name of Spenser, with the following brief obituary:

'Edmundus Spencer Londinensis, Anglicorum Poetarum nostri seculi facile princeps, quod ejus poemata faventibus Musis et victuro genio conscripta comprobant. Obijt immatura morte anno salutis 1598, et prope Galfredum Chaucerum conditur qui felicissime poësin Anglicis literis primus illustravit. In quem hæc scripta sunt epitaphia:—

Hic prope Chaucerum situs est Spenserius, illi

Proximus ingenio proximus ut tumulo.

Hic prope Chaucerum, Spensere poeta, poetam
Conderis, et versu quam tumulo propior.
Anglica, te vivo, vixit plausitque poesis;
Nunc moritura timet, te moriente, mori.

'Edmund Spencer, of London, far the first of the English Poets of our age, as his poems prove, written under the smile of the Muses, and with a genius destined to live. He died prematurely in the year of salvation 1598, and is buried near Geoffrey Chaucer, who was the first most happily to set forth poetry in English writing: and on him were written these epitaphs:—

Here nigh to Chaucer Spenser lies; to whom In genius next he was, as now in tomb.

Here nigh to Chaucer, Spenser, stands thy hearse,*
Still nearer standst thou to him in thy verse.
Whilst thou didst live, lived English poetry;
Now thou art dead, it fears that it shall die.*

The next notice is found in Drummond's account of Ben Jonson's conversations with him in the year 1612:

'Spencer's stanzas pleased him not, nor his matter. The meaning of the allegory of his Fairy Queen he had delivered in writing to Sir Walter Rawleigh, which was, "that by the Bleating Beast he understood the Puritans, and by the false Duessa the Queen of Scots." He told, that Spencer's goods were robbed by the Irish, and his house and a little child burnt, he and his wife escaped, and after died for want of bread in King Street; he refused 20 pieces sent him by my lord Essex, and said he was sure he had no time to spend them.'†

The third record occurs in Camden's History of Queen Elizabeth (Annales rerum Anglicarum et Hibernicarum regnante Elizabetha), first published in a complete form in 1628. There the famous antiquary registering what demises marked the year 1598 (our March 25, 1598, to March 24, 1599), adds to his list Edmund Spenser, and thus writes of him: 'Ed. Spenserus, patria Londinensis, Cantabrigienis autem alumnus, Musis adeo arridentibus natus ut omnes Anglicos superioris zeri Poetas, ne Chaucero quidem concive excepto, superaret. Sed peculiari Poetis fato semper cum paupertate conflictatus, etsi Greio Hibernise proregi fuerit ab epistolis. Vix enim ibi secessum et scribendi otium nactus, quam a rebellibus è laribus ejectus et bonis spoliatus, in Angliam inops reversus statim exspiravit, Westmonasterii prope Chaucerum impensis
** Compare 'Underneath this marble hearse, &c.'

t Works of William Drummond of Hawthornden. Edinburgh, 1711, p. 225.

comitis Essexise inhumatus, Poëtis funus ducentibus flebilibusque carminibus et calamis in tumulum conjectis.'* This is to say: 'Edmund Spenser, a Londoner by birth, and a scholar also of the University of Cambridge, born under so favourable an aspect of the Muses that he surpassed all the English Poets of former times, not excepting Chaucer himself, his fellow-citizen. But by a fate which still follows Poets he always wrastled with poverty, though he had been secretary to the Lord Grey Lord Deputy of Ireland. For scarce had he there settled himself into a retired privacy and got leisure to write, when he was by the rebels thrown out of his dwelling plundered of his goods, and returned into England a poor man, where he shortly after died and was interred at Westminster, near to Chaucer, at the charge of the Earl o Essex, his hearse being attended by poets and mournful elegies and poems, with the pens that wrote them thrown into his tomb.' †

In 1633, Sir James Ware prefaced his edition of Spenser's prose work on the State of Ireland with these remarks:—

'How far these collections may conduce to the knowledge of the antiquities and state of this land, let the fit reader judge: yet something I may not passe by touching Mr. Edmund Spenser and the worke it selfe, lest I should seeme to offer injury to his worth, by others so much celebrated. Hee was borne in London of ar ancient and noble family, and brought up in the Universitie of Cambridge, where (as the fruites of his after labours doe manifest) he mispent not his time. After this he became secretary to Arthur Lord Grey of Wilton, Lord Deputy of Ireland, a valiant and worthy governour, and shortly after, for his services to the Crowne, he had bestowed upon him by Queene Elizabeth, 3,000 acres of land in the countie of Corke. There he finished the later part of that excellent poem of his "Faery Queene," which was soone after unfortunately lost by the disorder and abuse of his servant whom he had sent before him into England, being then a rebellibus (as Camden's words are) è laribus ejectus et bonis epoliatus. He deceused at Westminster in the year 1599 (others have it wrongly 1598), soon after his return into England, and was buried according to his own desire in the collegiat church there, neers unti-Chancer whom he worthily imitated (at the costes of Robert Earl of Essex) whereupon this spitaph was framed.' And then are quoted the epigrams already given from Camden.

The next passage that can be called an account of Spenser is found in Fuller's Worthies of England, first published in 1662, and runs as follows:—

'Edmond Spencer, born in this city (London), was brought up in Pembroke-hall in Cambridge, where he became an excellent scholar; but especially most happy in English Poetry; as his works do declare in which the many Chaucerisms used (for will not say affected by him) are thought by the ignorant to be blemishes, known by the learned to be beauties, to his book; which notwithstanding had been more sale able, if more conformed to our modern language.

'There passeth a story commonly told and believed, that Spencer presenting hi poems to queen Elizabeth, she, highly affected therewith, commanded the lord Cecil

^{*} Annales, ed. Eearne, iii. 783.

[†] History of Elizabeth, Queen of England. Ed. 1688, pp. 564, 565.

her treasurer, to give him an hundred pound; and when the treasurer (a good steward of the queen's money) alledged that sum was too much; "Then give him," quoth the queen, "What is reason;" to which the lord consented, but was so busied, belike, about matters of higher concernment, that Spencer received no reward, whereupon is presented this petition in a small piece of paper to the queen in her progress:—

I was promis'd on a time, To have reason for my rhyme; From that time unto this season, I receiv'd nor rhyme nor reason.

Hereupon the queen gave strict order (not without some check to her treasurer for the present payment of the hundred pounds the first intended unto him.

'He afterwards went over into Ireland, secretary to the lord Gray, lord deput thereof; and though that his office under his lord was lucrative, yet got he no estate but saith my author "peculiari poetis fato semper cum paupertate conflictatus est." It that it fared little better with him than with William Xilander the German (a mo excellent linguist, antiquary, philosopher and mathematician, who was so poor, the (as Thuanus saith), he was thought "fami non famæ scribere."

'Returning into England, he was robb'd by the rebels of that little he had; at dying for grief in great want, anno 1598, was honourably buried nigh Chaucer

Westminster, where this distich concludeth his epitaph on his monument

Anglica, te vivo, vixit plausitque poesis; Nunc moritura timet, te moriente, mori.

Whilst thou didst live, liv'd English poetry Which fears now thou art dead, that she shall die.

'Nor must we forget, that the expence of his funeral and monument was defrayed the sole charge of Robert, first of that name, earl of Essex.'

The next account is given by Edward Phillips in his Theatrum Poëtarum Anglie rum, first published in 1675. This Phillips was, as is well known, Milton's nepherand according to Warton, in his edition of Milton's juvenile poems, 'there is go reason to suppose that Milton threw many additions and corrections into the Theatru Poëtarum.' Phillips' words therefore have an additional interest for us. 'Edmus Spenser,' he writes, 'the first of our English poets that brought heroic poesy to an perfection, his "Fairy Queen" being for great invention and poetic heighth, judg'd litt inferior, if not equal to the chief of the ancient Greeks and Latins, or modern Italian but the first poem that brought him into esteem was his "Shepherd's Calendar," whis so endeared him to that noble patron of all vertue and learning Sir Philip Sydne that he made him known to Queen Elizabeth, and by that means got him preferred be secretary to his brother * Sir Henry Sidney, who was sent deputy into Irelan where he is said to have written his "Faerie Queen," but upon the return of Sir Henr his employment ceasing, he also return'd into England, and having lost his grefriend Sir Philip, fell into poverty, yet made his last refuge to the Queen's bount and had 500% ordered him for his support, which nevertheless was abridged to 10

no, hearing of it, and owing him a grudge for some reflections in Mother Fale, cry'd out to the queen, What! all this for a song? This he is said in so much to heart, that he contracted a deep melancholy, which soon it his life to a period. So apt is an ingenuous spirit to resent a slighting, he greatest persons; and thus much I must needs say of the merit of so : from so great a monarch, that as it is incident to the best of peets sometter some royal or noble patron, never did any do it more to the height, ater art or elegance, if the highest of praises attributed to so heroic a a justly be termed flattery.' *

enser's works were reprinted—the first three books of the Fasrie Queens enth time—in 1679, there was added an account of his life. In 1687, in his Lives of the most famous English Poets, wrote a formal bio-

e the oldest accounts of Spenser that have been handed down to us. In hem mythical features and blunders are clearly discernible. Since Winstanit may be added, Hughes in 1715, Dr. Birch in 1731, Church in 1758, hat same year, Todd in 1805, Aikin in 1806, Robinson in 1825, Mitford of. Craik in 1845, Prof. Child in 1855, Mr. Collier in 1862, have re-told there is to tell, with various additions and subtractions.

rnal sources of information are, then, extremely scanty. Fortunately our arces are somewhat less meagre. No poet ever more emphatically lived in than did Spenser. The Muses were, so to speak, his own bosom friends, to pened all his heart. With them he conversed perpetually on the various is life; into their ears he poured forth constantly the tale of his joys and . of his hopes, his fears, his distresses.

not one of those poets who can put off themselves in their works, who can rown interests and passions, and live for the time an extraneous life. Intense personality about all his writings, as in those of Milton and of h. In reading them you can never forget the poet in the poem. They I fully reflect the poet's own nature and his circumstances. They are, as it piritual diaries, refined self-portraitures. Horace's description of his own-runner, quoted at the head of this memoir, applies excellently to Spenser. ount the scantiness of our external means of knowing Spenser is perhaps be regretted. Of him it is eminently true that we may know him from his spoems are his best biography. In the sketch of his life to be given here hall be our one great authority.

Thestrem Poet. Anglic., ed. Brydges, 1800, pp. 148, 149.

CHAPTER I.

1552-1579.

FROM SPENSER'S BIRTH TO THE PUBLICATION OF THE SHEPHEARD'S CALENDAR

EDMUND SPENSER was born in London in the year 1552. For both these fact have directly or indirectly his own authority. In his *Prothalamium* he sings of cerswans whom in a vision he saw floating down the river 'Themmes,' that

At length they all to mery London came, To mery London, my most kyndly nurse, That to me gave this lifes first native sourse, Though from another place I take my name, An house of auncient fame.

A MS. note by Oldys the antiquary in Winstanley's Lives of the most fail English Poets, states that the precise locality of his birth was East Smithfield. Smithfield lies just to the east of the Tower, and in the middle of the sixte century, when the Tower was still one of the chief centres of London life and portance, was of course a neighbourhood of far different rank and degree from present social status. The date of his birth is concluded with sufficient certs from one of his sonnets, viz. sonnet 60; which it is pretty well ascertained composed in the year 1593. These sonnets are, as we shall see, of the amo wooing sort; in the one of them just mentioned, the sighing poet declares that but a year since he fell in love, but that that year has seemed to him longer

Then al those fourty which my life out-went.

Hence it is gathered that he was born in 1552. The inscription, then, over his t in Westminster Abbey errs in assigning his birth to 1553; though the error is flagrant than that perpetrated by the inscription that preceded the present one, we set down as his natal year 1510.

Of his parents the only fact secured is, that his mother's name was Elizabeth.

appears from sonnet 74, where he apostrophizes those

Most happy letters! fram'd by skilfull trade
With which that happy name was first desynd,
The which three times thrise happy hath me made,
With guifts of body, fortune and of mind.
The first my being to me gave by kind
From mothers womb deriv'd by dew descent,

EDMUND SPENSER.

The second is the Queen, the third 'my love, my lives last ornament.' examination by Mr. Collier and others of what parish registers there are extant such old churches as stand near East Smithfield—the Great Fire, it will be 1 nembered, broke out some distance west of the Tower, and raged mainly westward has failed to discover any trace of the infant Spenser or his parents. An 'Edmu

Spenser' who is mentioned in the Books of the Treasurer of the Queen's Chamber 1569, as paid for bearing letters from Sir Henry Norris, her Majesty's ambassador France, to the Queen, * and who with but slight probability has been surmised to the poet himself, is scarcely more plausibly conjectured by Mr. Collier to be the poe father. The utter silence about his parents, with the single exception quoted, in t

works of one who, as has been said above, made poetry the confidente of all his jo and sorrows, is remarkable. Whoever they were, he was well connected on his father's side at least. 'T nobility of the Spensers,' writes Gibbon, 'has been illustrated and enriched by t trophies of Marlborough; but I exhort them to consider the "Faerie Queen" as t most precious jewel of their coronet.' Spenser was connected with the then r ennobled, but highly influential family of the Spencers of Althorpe, Northamptonship Theirs was the 'house of auncient fame' alluded to in the quotation made above from

the Prothalamium. He dedicates various poems to the daughters of Sir John Spenc who was the head of that family during the poet's youth and earlier manhood do to 1580, and in other places mentions these ladies with many expressions of rega and references to his affinity. 'Most faire and vertuous Ladie,' he writes to the 'Lac Compton and Mountegle,' the fifth daughter, in his dedication to her of his Moth Hubberds Tale, 'having often sought opportunitie by some good meanes to ma knowen to your Ladiship the humble affection and faithfull duetic, which I ha alwaies professed and am bound to beare to that house, from whence yee spring

have at length found occasion to remember the same by making a simple present you of these my idle labours, &c.' To another daughter, 'the right worthy a vertuous ladie the Ladie Carey,' he dedicates his Muiopotmos; to another, 'the rig honorable the Ladie Strange,' his Teares of the Muses. In the latter dedication speaks of 'your particular bounties, and also some private bands of affinitie, which hath pleased your Ladiship to acknowledge.' It was for this lady Strange, who becar subsequently the wife of Sir Thomas Egerton, that one who came after Spenser Milton, wrote the Arcades. Of these three kinswomen, under the names of Phyll

The honour of the noble familie Of which I meanest boast myself to be. For the particular branch of the Spencer or Spenser family—one branch wrote t

Home Again; he speaks of them as

Charillis, and sweet Amaryllis, Spenser speaks once more in his Colin Clouts Co.

name with s, another with c-to which the poet belonged, it has been well suggest that it was that settled in East Lancashire in the neighbourhood of Pendle Forest.

[·] See Peter Cunningham's Introduction to Extracts from Accounts of the Revels at Court. (Sha speare Society.)

is known on the authority of his friend Kirke, whom we shall mention again presently that Spenser retired to the North after leaving Cambridge; traces of a Norther dialect appear in the Shepheardes Calendar; the Christian name Edmund is shown by the parish registers to have been a favourite with one part of the Lancashire branch—with that located near Filey Close, three miles north of Hurstwood.

Spenser then was born in London, perhaps in East Smithfield, about a year before those hideous Marian fires began to blaze in West Smithfield. His memory would begin to be retentive about the time of Queen Elizabeth's accession. Of his great contemporaries, with most of whom he was to be brought eventually into contact Raleigh was born at Hayes in Devonshire in the same year with him, Camden in Old Bailey in 1551, Hooker near Exeter in or about 1553, Sidney at Penshurs in 1554, Bacon at York House in the West Strand, 1561, Shakspere at Stratford-on Avon in 1564, Devereux, afterwards Earl of Essex, in 1567.

The next assured fact concerning Spenser is that he was admitted a sizar of Pembroke College, then styled Hall, Cambridge, in 1569. Of his life between 1553 and this date we know nothing whatever. In the muster-book of a hundred in Warwickshire Mr. Collier has noted the record of one Edmund Spenser as living in 1569 at Kingsbury, and conjectures that this was the poet's father, and that perhap the poet spent his youth in the same county with Shakspere. But it may be much doubted whether it is a just assumption that every Edmund Spenser that is in any way or anywhere mentioned in the Elizabethan era was either the poet or his father Nor, should it be allowed that the Spenser of Kingsbury was indeed the poet's father could we reasonably indulge in any pretty pictures of a fine friendship between the future authors of Hamlet and of the Faerie Queene. Shakspere was a mere child not yet passed into the second of the Seven Ages, when Spenser, being then about seventeen years old, went up to the University. Perhaps the lines already extracted from the Prothalamium tend to show that, though London born, Spenser was no London bred. They speak of London so specially as

My most kyndly nurse That to me gave this life's first native sourse.

Then the fact, already stated, that the Shepheardes Calendar is written in a Northern dialect points to a prolonged residence in the North. That dialect seems familia and as it were household to him.* Then it is known, as also has already beer said, that he went to the North after the completion of his University career Why should we not accept what would surely seem the obvious conclusion, that hi home was in the North, though for one reason or another—many reasons might be imagined—he was born in London, and perhaps spent his infancy there?—that before going to Cambridge, as afterwards, he resided in Lancashire?

^{*} It may be suggested that what are called the archaisms of Spenser's style may be in particular to the author's long residence in the country with one of the older forms of the language spoker all round him and spoken by him, in fact his remacular. I say in part, because of course his much study of Chaucer must be taken into account. But, as Mr. Richard Morris has remarked to me, he could not have drawn from Chaucer those forms and words of a northern dialect which appear in the Calendar.

EDMUND SPENSER.

Certainly his youth was spent amid the fair sights and sounds of the country. his very boyhood he had lived with Nature face to face. He had wandered at his sweet will about the hills and dales that surrounded his rural home. In one o earliest extant poems (the Twelfth Eclogue of the Shepheardes Calendar) he desc with much fervour and delight, and with his characteristic melody, the life he le

his younger days:-

the Visions of Petrarch.

Whilome in youth when flowrd my joyfull spring, Like swallow swift I wandred here and there; For heate of heedlesse lust me did so sting, That I oft doubted daunger had no feare: I went the wastefull woodes and forrest wide

I wont to raunge amid the mazie thicket And gather nuttes to make my Christmas game, And joyed oft to chace the trembling pricket, Or hunt the hartlesse hare till she were tame. What wreaked I of wintrie ages waste? The deemed I my spring would ever last.

Withouten dread of wolves to bene espide.

How often have I scaled the craggie oke All to dislodge the raven of her nest? How have I wearled, with many a stroke,

The stately walnut-tree, the while the rest Under the tree fell all for nuttes at strife? For like to me was libertie and life.

To be sure he is here writing in the language of pastoral poetry, that is, the lang of this passage is metaphorical; but it is equally clear that the writer was intime and thoroughly acquainted with that life from which his metaphors are drawn, describes a life he had lived.

It seems probable that he was already an author in some sort when he went u Cambridge. In the same year in which he became an undergraduate there appe a work entitled, 'A Theatre wherein be represented as well the Miseries Calamities that follow the Voluptuous Worldlings as also the greate Joyes

Plesures which the Faithful do enjoy. An Argument both Profitable and Delect to all that sincerely loue the Word of God. Deuised by S. John Vander No Vander Noodt was a native of Brabant who had sought refuge in England, 'as

for that I would not beholde the abominations of the Romyshe Antechrist as to es the handes of the bloudthirsty.' 'In the meane space,' he continues, 'for the avoy of idlenesse (the very mother and nourice of all vices) I have among other travayles bene occupied aboute thys little Treatyse, wherein is sette forth the viler. and basenesse of worldely things whiche commonly withdrawe us from heavenly spirituall matters.' This work opens with six pieces in the form of sonnets st epigrams, which are in fact identical with the first six of the Visions of Petrarch sequently published amongst Spenser's works, in which publication they are said to been 'formerly translated.' After these so-called epigrams come fifteen Sonnets, el of poems as is compatible with the fact that the old series is written in blank verse, the latter in rhyme. The sonnets which appear for the first time in the Visions are there describing the Wolf, the River, the Vessel, the City. There are four pieces of the older series which are not reproduced in the later. It would seem probable that they too may have been written by Spenser in the days of his youth, though at a later period of his life he cancelled and superseded them. They are therefore reprinted here in this volume. (See pp. 699-701.)

Vander Noodt, it must be said, makes no mention of Spenser in his volume. It would seem that he did not know English, and that he wrote his Declaration—a sort of commentary in prose on the Visions—in French. At least we are told that this Declaration is translated out of French into English by Theodore Roest. All that is stated of the origin of his Visions is: 'The learned poets M. Francisce Petrarche, gentleman of Florence, did invent and write in Tuscan the six firste... which because they serve wel to our purpose, I have out of the Brabants speache turned them into the English tongue;' and 'The other ten visions next ensuing ar described of one Ioachim du Bellay, gentleman of France, the whiche also, because they serve to our purpose I have translated them out of Dutch into English.' The fact of the Visions being subsequently ascribed to Spenser would not by itself carry much weight. But, as Prof. Craik pertinently asks, 'if this English version was not the work of Spenser, where did Ponsonby [the printer who issued that subsequent publication which has been mentioned] procure the corrections which are not mere typographical errata, and the additions and other variations that are found in his edition?'

In a work called Tragical Tales, published in 1587, there is a letter in verse, dated 1569, addressed to 'Spencer' by George Turberville, then resident in Russia as secretary to the English ambassador, Sir Thomas Randolph. Anthony Wood says this Spencer was the poet; but it can scarcely have been so. 'Turberville himself,' remarks Prof. Craik, 'is supposed to have been at this time in his twenty-ninth or thirtieth year, which is not the age at which men choose boys of sixteen for their friends. Besides, the verses seem to imply a friendship of some standing, and also in the person addressed the habits and social position of manhood. . . . It has not been commonly noticed that this epistle from Russia is not Turberville's only poetical address to his friend Spencer. Among his "Epitaphs and Sonnets" are two other pieces of verse addressed to the same person.'

To the year 1569 belongs that mention referred to above of payment made one 'Edmund Spenser' for bearing letters from France. As has been already remarked, it is scarcely probable that this can have been the poet, then a youth of some seventeen years on the verge of his undergraduateship.

The one certain event of Spenser's life in the year 1569 is that he was then entered as a sizar at Pembroke Hall, Cambridge. He 'proceeded B.A.' in 1573, and 'commenced M.A.' in 1576. There is some reason for believing that his college life was troubled in much the same way as was that of Milton some sixty years later—that there prevailed some misunderstanding between him and the scholastic authorities.

* These are given in the Appendix to present work.

EDMUND SPENSER.

He mentions his university with respect in the Faerie Queene, in book iv. cant where, setting forth what various rivers gathered happily together to celebrate marriage of the Thames and the Medway, he tells how

The plenteous Ouse came far from land
By many a city and by many a towne;
And many rivers taking under-hand
Into his waters as he passeth downe,
The Ele, the Were, the Grant, the Sture, the Rowne.
Thence doth by Huntingdon and CAMBRIDGE flit;
My mother Cambridge, whom as with a crowne
He doth adorne and is adorn'd of it
With many a gentle Muse and many a learned wit.

But he makes no mention of his college. The notorious Gabriel Harvey, an intifriend of Spenser, who was elected a Fellow of Pembroke Hall the year after the function was admitted as a sizar, in a letter written in 1580, asks: 'And wil you no

have my testimoniall of youre old Controllers new behaviour?' and then proceed heap abusive words on some person not mentioned by name but evidently only well known to both the sender and the receiver of the epistle. Having compi list of scurrilities worthy of Falstaff, and attacked another matter which wa abomination to him, Harvey vents his wrath in sundry Latin charges, one of w runs: 'Cetera ferè, ut olim: Bellum inter capita et membra continuatum.' '(matters are much as they were: war kept up between the heads [the dons] and members [the men].' Spenser was not elected to a fellowship; he quitted his col with all its miserable bickerings, after he had taken his master's degree. There ca little doubt that he was a most diligent and earnest student during his residen Cambridge; during it, for example, he must have gained that knowledge of P! works which so distinctly marks his poems, and found in that immortal writ spirit most truly congenial. But it is conceivable that he pursued his studies his own manner, and probably enough excited by his independence the strong approbation of the master and tutor of the college of his day.

Among his contemporaries in his own college were Lancelot Andrews, afterw Master, and eventually Bishop of Winchester, the famous preacher; Gabriel Hamentioned above, with whom he formed a fast friendship, and Edward Kirke, the two, as will be seen, introduced to the world Spenser's first work of any pret

Amongst his contemporaries in the university were Preston, author of Cambyses, Still, author of Gammer Gurtons Needle, with each of whom he was acquainted. friend who would seem to have exercised the most influence over him was Ga Harvey; but this influence, at least in literary matters, was by no means for the Harvey was some three or four years the senior, and of some academic distinct Probably he may be taken as something more than a fair specimen of the averable ship and culture given by the universities at that time. He was an extellassicist; all his admiration was for classical models and works that savour them; he it was who headed the attempt made in England to force upon a melasguage the metrical system of the Greeks and Latins. What baneful influent

exercised over Spenser in this last respect will be shown presently. Kir

Spenser's other close friend; he was one year junior academically to the poet. too, as we shall see, was a profound admirer of Harvey.

After leaving the university in 1576, Spenser, then, about twenty-four years of ag returned to his own people in the North. This fact is learnt from his frie 'E. K.'s' glosses to certain lines in the sixth book of the Shepheardes Calenda E. K. speaks 'of the North countrye where he dwelt,' and 'of his removing out the North parts and coming into the South.' As E. K. writes in the spring of 157 and as his writing is evidently some little time subsequent to the migration he spea of, it may be believed that Spenser quitted his Northern home in 1578. About a ye

then was passed in the North after he left the University. This year was not spent idly. The poetical fruits of it shall be mentioned pr sently. What made it otherwise a memorable year to the poet was his falling deeply love with some fair Northern neighbour. Who she was is not known. He who ador her names her Rosalind, 'a feigned name,' notes E. K., 'which being well order will bewray the very name of hys love and mistresse, whom by that name coloureth.' Many solutions of this anagram have been essayed, mostly on the su position that the lady lived in Kent; but Professor Craik is certainly right in i sisting that she was of the North. In the same Eclogue of the Shepheardes Calend Colin Clout-so the poet designates himself-complains to Hobbinol-that Harvey-of the ill success of his passion. Harvey, we may suppose, is paying him visit in the North; or perhaps the pastoral is merely a versifying of what pass between them in letters. However this may be, Colin is bewailing his hapless fa His friend rejoins :-

Then, if by me thou list advised be, Forsake the soyle that so doth thee bewitch: Leave me those hilles where harbrough his to see, Nor holy-bush, nor brere, nor winding witche: And to the dales resort, where shepheards ritch And fruictfull flocks bene everywhere to see.

Surely E. K.'s gloss is scarcely necessary to tell us what these words mer 'Come down,' they say, 'from your bleak North country hills where she dwells w binds you with her spell, and be at peace far away from her in the genial Sou land.' In another Eclogue (April) the subduing beauty is described as 'the Widdow daughter of the Glen,' surely a Northern address. On these words the well-inform E. K. remarks: 'He calleth Rosalind the Widowes daughter of the glenne, that of a country hamlet or borough, which I thinke is rather sayde to coloure and conce the person, than simply spoken. For it is well known, even in spighte of Colin as Hobbinol, that she is a gentlewoman of no meane house, nor endowed with an vulgare and common gifts, both of nature and manners: but suche indeede, as nee neither Colin be ashamed to have her made knowne by his verses, nor Hobbinol greved that so she should be commended to immortalitie for her rare and singul virtues.' Whoever this charming lady was, and whatever glen she made bright wi her presence, it appears that she did not reciprocate the devoted affection of t studious young Cambridge graduate who, with probably no apparent occupation, w foitering for a while in her vicinity. It was some other—he is called Menalcas

of his rival's pastorals—who found favour in her eyes. The poet could only wail beat his breast. Eclogues I and VI. are all sighs and tears. Perhaps in the rec of time a copy of the Faerie Queene might reach the region where Menalcas! Rosalind were growing old together; and she, with a certain ruth perhaps mixed her anger, might recognise in Mirabella an image of her fair young disdainful! The poet's attachment was no transient flame that flashed and was gone. When the instance of his friend he travelled southward away from the scene of his disfiture, he went weeping and inconsolable. In the Fourth Eclogue Hobbinol is overed by Thenot deeply mourning, and, asked the reason, replies that his grief is

The ladde whome long I loved so deare Nowe loves a lasse that all his love doth scorne He plongd in payne, his tressed locks dooth teare.

Shepheards delights he dooth them all forsweare: Hys pleasant pipe, whych made us meriment, He wylfully hath broke, and doth forbeare His wonted songs, wherein he all outwent.

Colin thou kenst, the Southerne shepheardes boye; Him Love hath wounded with a deadly darte. &c.

memory of Rosalind, in spite of her unkindness, seems to have been fondly cherished the poet, and yielded to no rival vision—though there may have been fleeting fits of == till some fourteen years after he and she had parted-till in the year 1592, we shall see, Spenser, then living in the south of Ireland, met that Elizabeth who mentioned in the sonnet quoted above, and who some year and a half after that -tile became his wife. On the strength of an entry found in the register of St. meat Danes Church in the Strand-'26 Aug. [1587] Florence Spenser, the where of Edmond Spenser -it has been conjectured that the poet was married fare 1587. This conjecture seems entirely unacceptable. There is nothing to fify the theory that the Edmund Spenser of the register was the poet. It is simply radille that Spenser, one who, as has been said, poured out all his soul in his should have wooed and won some fair lady to his wife, without ever a poetical zeion to his courtship and his triumph. It is not at all likely, as far as one can from their titles, that any one of his lost works was devoted to the celebration ary such successful passion. Lastly, besides this important negative evidence, := is distinct positive testimony that long after 1587 the image of Rosalind had e !-ea displaced in his fancy by any other loveliness. In Colin Clouts Come Home :na, written, as will be seen, in 1591, though not published till 1595, after the poet has i de-ply divined of love and beauty,' one Melissa in admiration avers that all true -- are greatly bound to him-most especially women. The faithful Hobbinol says at women have but ill requited their poet :-

[•] The description of his first love was written probably during the courtship, which ended, as we all we in his marriage. The Pirst Love is portrayed in cant. vii., the Last in cant. x, of book vi. the Farry Quene.



EDITORD OF ERIODA

'He is repayd with scorne and foule despite,
That yrkes each gentle heart which it doth heare.'
'Indeed,' says Lucid, 'I have often heard
Faire Rosalind of divers fowly blamed
For being to that swaine too cruell hard.

Lucid however would defend her on the ground that love may not be compelled :-

'Beware therefore, ye groomes, I read betimes How rashly blame of Rosalind ye raise.'

This caution Colin eagerly and ardently reinforces, and with additions. His heart was still all tender towards her, and he would not have one harsh word thrown at her:—

Ah! Shepheards, then said Colin, ye ne weet How great a guilt upon your heads ye draw To make so bold a doome, with words unmeet, Of thing celestiall which ye never saw. For she is not like as the other crew Of shepheards daughters which emongst you bee, But of divine regard and heavenly how, Excelling all that ever ye did see; Not then to her that scorned thing so base, But to myselfe the blame that lookt so hie, So hie her thoughts as she herselfe have place And loath each lowly thing with lofty eie; Yet so much grace let her vouchsafe to grant To simple swaine, sith her I may not love, Yet that I may her honour paravant And praise her worth, though far my wit above. Such grace shall be some guerdon for the griefe And long affliction which I have endured: Such grace sometimes shall give me some reliefe And ease of paine which cannot be recured. And ye my fellow shepheards, which do see And heare the languors of my too long dying, Unto the world for ever witnesse bee That hers I die, nought to the world denying This simple trophe of her great conquest.

This residence of Spenser in the North, which corresponds with that period of Milton's life spent at his father's house at Horton in Buckinghamshire, ended, as there has been occasion to state, in the year 1578. What was the precise cause of Spenser's coming South, is not known for certain. 'E.K.' says in one of his glosses, already quoted in part, that the poet 'for speciall occasion of private affayres (as I have bene partly of himselfe informed) and for his more preferment, removing out of the North parts, came into the South, as Hobbinoll indeede advised him privately.' It is clear from his being admitted at his college as a sizar, that his private means were not good. Perhaps during his residence in the North he may have been dependent on the bounty of his friends. It was then in the hope of some advancement of his fortunes that, bearing with him no doubt in manuscript certain results of all his life's previous labour, he turned away from his cold love and her glen, and all her country, and set his face Town-ward.

aid that his friend Harvey introduced him to that famous accomplished n—that mirror of true knighthood—Sir Philip Sidney, and it would seem thurst became for some time his home. There has already been quoted a line g Spenser as 'the southern shepheardes boye.' This southern shepherd is Sidney. Sidney introduced him to his uncle, the Earl of Leicester, with to at his house in the Strand, where Essex Street now stands, he seems to ded for a while. He dates one of his letters to Harvey, 'Leyesster House, betober, 1579.' Perhaps at this time he commenced, or renewed, or conis acquaintance with his distinguished relatives of Althorpe. During the spent now at Penshurst and in London, he mixed probably with the most intellectual society of his time. Sidney was himself endowed with no mean He, Lord Leicester, Lord Strange, and others, with whom Spenser was, or in all probability, acquainted, were all eminent patrons and protectors of

assage of Spenser's life is of high interest, because in the course of it that era of our literature commonly called the Elizabethan Period may be said segun—we may be said to hear the first notes of

Those melodious bursts that fill The spacious times of great Elizabeth With sounds that echo still.'

s the foremost chronologically of those great spirits who towards the close xteenth century lifted up their immortal voices, and spoke words to be heard of for all time. In the course of this present passage of his life, he published important work—a work which secured him at once the hearty recognition of emporaries as a true poet risen up amongst them. This work was the des Calendar, to which so many references have already been taken to the contract the contract of the contract the contract

sists of twelve eclogues, one for each month of the year. Of these, three (i., xii.), as we have seen, treat specially of his own disappointment in love.

— viii._ and x.) are of a more general character, having old age, a poetry comperfect pattern of a poet' for their subjects. One other (iii.) deals with love-One (iv.), celebrates the Queen, three (v., vii., and ix.) discuss 'Protestant olic,' Anglican and Puritan questions. One (xi.) is an elegy upon 'the death maiden of great blood, whom he calleth Dido.' These poems are ushered into d by Spenser's college friend Edward Kirke, for such no doubt is the true at on of the initials E.K. This gentleman performs his duty in a somewhat manner. He addresses 'to the most excellent and learned both orator and yster Gabriell Harvey' a letter warmly commending 'the new poet' to his w, and defending the antique verbiage of the cologues; he prefixes to the ork a general argument, a particular one to each part; he appends to every 'glosse' explaining words and allusions. The work is dedicated to Sir class. It was published in the winter of 1579-80.

than once in the course of it, Spenser refers to Tityrus as his great master.

xxvi

The gentle shepheard set beside a springe All in the shadow of a bushye brere, That Colin height, which well could pype and singe, For hee of Tityrus his songes did lere.

Tityrus, on E.K.'s authority, was Chaucer. It is evident from the languagethe words and the verbal forms-used in this poem that Spenser had zealously stud Chaucer, whose greatest work had appeared just about two centuries before Spens first important publication. The work, however, in which he imitates Chanc manner is not the Shepheardes Calendar, but his Prosopopoia or Mother Hubberds 7 which he says, writing in a later year, he had 'long sithens composed in the conceipt of my youth.' The form and manner of the Shepheardes Calendar reflect not Chaucer's influence upon the writer, but the influence of a vast event which changed the face of literature since the out-coming of the Canterbury Tales-of revival of learning. That event had put fresh models before men, had gree modified old literary forms, had originated new. The classical influence impreupon Europe was by no means an unmixed good; in some respects it retarded natural development of the modern mind by overpowering it with its prestige stupefying it with a sense of inferiority; while it raised the ideal of perfection tended to give rise to mere imitations and affectations. Amongst these new for was the Pastoral. When Virgil, Theocritus, 'Daphnis and Chloe,' and other writ and works of the ancient pastoral literature once more gained the ascendency, the modern pastoral poetry began to be. This poetry flourished greatly in Italy in sixteenth century. It had been cultivated by Sannazaro, Guarini, Tasso. had been adopted by the poets for their country. In England numerous Eclog made their appearance. Amongst the earliest and the best of these were Spense It would perhaps be unjust to treat this modern pastoral literature as altogether affectation. However unreal, the pastoral world had its charms-a pleasant feel imparted of emancipation, a deep quietude, a sweet tranquillity. If vulgar I discovered their new worlds, and trafficked and bustled there, why should not poet discover his Arcadia, and repose at his ease in it, secure from the noises of going and coming over the roads of the earth?

That fine melodiousness, which is one of Spenser's signal characteristics, may perceived in his *Ecloques*, as also a certain gracefulness of style, which is anot distinguishing mark of him. Perceivable, too, are his great, perilous fluency language and his immense fecundity of mind. The work at once secured him a fr place in the poetical ranks of the day. Sidney mentions it in his *Apologie for Poetri* Abraham Fraunce draws illustrations from it in his *Lawyers Logicke*, which appear in 1588; Meres praises it; 'Maister Edmund Spenser,' says Drayton, 'has denough for the immortality, had he only given us his *Shepheardes Calendar*, a mas piece, if any.' It is easy to discern in *Lycidas* signs of Milton's study of it.

During Spenser's sojourn in the society of the Sidneys and the Dudleys, lett passed between him and Harvey, some of which are extant. From these, and fi the editorial notes of Kirke, we hear of other works written by Spenser, ready to

^{*} See this work amongst Mr. Arber's excellent English Reprints.

Terre of the more even began. The bit as which, it has been submitted .sm of Harvey. On April 10, 1580, Spenser writes to Harvey, wishing him with his 'long expected judgment' upon it. Harvey had already proatence in a letter dated April 7, and this is the sentence: 'In good faith umin nigh forgotten your Facrie Queene; howbeit, by good chaunce I have ir home at the laste, neither in better nor worse case than I founde hir. ou of necessitie have my judgement of hir indeede? To be plaine, I am judgement, if your nine Comædies, wherunto, in imitation of Herodotus. ie names of the Nine Muses, and (in one man's fansie not unworthily), secret Ariostoes Comcedies, eyther for the finenesse of plausible elecution, ness of poetical invention, than that Elvish queene doth to his Orlando uch notwithstanding, you will needes seem to emulate, and hope to overgo, v professed yourself in one of your last letters. Besides that, you know e the usual practise of the most exquisite and odde wittes in all nations, lly in Italie, rather to shewe and advaunce themselves that way than any namely, those three notorious dyscoursing heads Bibiena, Machiavel, and (to let Bembo and Ariosto passe), with the great admiration and wonderment e countrey; being indeede reputed matchable in all points, both for conceyt d eloquent decyphering of matters, either with Aristophanes and Menander with Plautus and Terence in Latin, or with any other in any other tong. not stand greatly with you in your owne matters. If so be the Facry airer in your eie than the Nine Muses, and Hobgoblin runne away with the m Apollo; marke what I saye, and yet I will not say that I thought; but

end for this once, and fare you well, till God or some good Aungell putte

tter minde.

lso of the very best too, instead whereof they have by authority to prescribed certain laws and rules of quantity of English syllable maying had already thereof great practice, Spenser was drawn 't

writes to Harvey, 'more in love with my Englishe versifying the che I should have done long since if I would then have follower allying himself with these Latin prosody bigots Spenser sinner his better taste. 'I like your late Englishe hexameters so exceed tes to Harvey, 'that I also enure my pen sometime in that kinde deed, as I have heard you often defende in word, neither so hards I that it will easily and fairly yield itself to our moother tongue hiefest hardnesse whyche seemeth is in the accente; whyche some as it were yawneth il-favouredly, comming shorte of that it should eeding the measure of the number; as in carpenter the middle. short in speache, when it shall be read long in verse, seemeth like it draweth one legge after hir. And heaven being used shorte as it is in verse stretched with a Diastole is like a lame dogge, that re.'* His ear was far too fine and sensitive to endure the fearful he poets of this Procrustman creed. The language seemed to great agonies and contortions to which it was subjected; and Spense its outeries. But he made himself as deaf as might be. 'It is to tom,' he proceeds, in the letter just quoted from, 'and rough words' th use. For why, a God's name, may not we, as the Greekes, have e owne language, and measure our accentes by the sounde, reserving e verse? . . . I would hartily wish you would either send me the f arte which you observe in quantities; or else follow mine that gave me, being the very same which Mr. Drant devised, but sidney's own judgement, and augmented with my observations, that ordo and agree in one, leaste we overthrowe one another and be est.' He himself produced the following lines in accordance, as he the instructions of the new school :-

IAMBICUM TRIMETRUM.

Unhappic verse! the witnesse of my unhappic state, in sense not meant] Make thy selfe duttring winge of thy fast flying Thought, and fly forth unto my love whersoever she be,

Whether lying rea-tlesse in heavy bedde, or else Sitting so cheerelesse at the cheerefull boorde, or else Playing alone carelesse on hir heavenlie virginals,

If in bed, tell hir that my eyes can take no reste; If at boorde, tell hir that my mouth can cut no meete; If at hir virginals, tell her I can beare no mirth.

Ancient Critical Essays, ed. Hazlewood, 1815, pp. 259, 260.

Asked why? Waking love suffereth no sleepe; Say that raging love doth appall the weake stomacke,

Say that lamenting love marreth the musicall.

Tell hir that hir pleasures were wonte to lull me asleepe, Tell hir that hir beauty was wonte to feede mine eyes, Tell hir that hir sweete tongue was wonte to make me mirth.

Now doe I nightly waste, wanting my kindlie reste, Now doe I dayly starve, wanting my daily food, Now doe I always dye wanting my timely mirth.

And if I waste who will bewalle my heavy chance? And if I starve, who will record my cursed end? And if I dye, who will saye, This was Immerito?

of the sensitive ear wrote these lines. When the pedantic phantasy which a while seduced and corrupted him had gone from him, with what remorse he we remembered these strange monsters of his creation! Let us conclude our this sad fall from harmony by quoting the excellent words of one who was a sproment of Harvey in this as in other matters. 'The hexameter verse,' says his Foure Letters Confuted, 1592, 'I graunt to be a gentleman of an auncient so is many an English beggar), yet this clyme of ours hee cannot thrive in; our two craggy for him to set his plough in; hee goes twitching and hopping in the lake in another; retaining no part of that stately smooth gate, which he had in another; retaining no part of that stately smooth gate, which he had in another; by Spenser in the enjoyment of Sidney's friendship and stage of Sidney's uncle. During this time he would seem to have been con-

horing for some preferment. According to a tradition, first recorded by Fuller, crustor of the success of his suit was the Treasurer, Lord Burghley. It is clear had enemies at Court—at least at a later time. In 1591, in his dedication of looks Come Home Again, he entreats Raleigh, to 'with your good countenance against the malice of evill mouthes, which are always wide open to carpe at successful mouther and the Ruines of Time (see the lines of grief of griefs! O full of all good hearts!') points to the same conclusion; the original lines of the Sixth Book of the Facric Queene, when, having told Butant Beast (not killed as Lord Macaulay says in his essay on Bunyan, but)

--: and tamed' for a while by Sir Calidore, at last broke his iron chain and through the world, and raged sore in each degree and state, he adds:

No may this homely verse, of many meanest,

More then my former writs, all were they dearest, From blamefull blot and free from all that wite With which some wicked tongues did it backebite, And bring into a mighty Peres displeasure,

Hope to escape his venemous despite,

That never so deserved to endite. Therefore do you, my rimes, keep better measure,

And seeke to please; that now is counted wise mens threasure.

Trace of the Muses Calliopo says of certain persons of eminent rank :-

Their great revenues all in sumptnous pride They spend that nought to learning they may spare; And the rich fee which Poets wout divide Now Parasites and Sycophants do share.

Several causes have been suggested to account for this disfavour. The popu tradition was pleased to explain it by making Burghley the ideal dullard who has soul for poetry-to whom one copy of verses is very much as good as another, and copy good for anything. It delighted to bring this commonplace gross-minded per into opposition with one of the most spiritual of geniuses. In this myth Spen represents mind, Burghley matter. But there is no justification in facts for t tradition. It may be that the Lord Treasurer was not endowed with a high in lectual nature; but he was far too wise in his generation not to pretend a virtue he had it not, when circumstances called for anything of the sort. When the Qui patronized literature, we may be sure Lord Burghley was too discreet to dispar and oppress it. Another solution refers to Burghley's Puritanism as the cause of misunderstanding; but, as Spenser too inclined that way, this is inadequate. bably, as Todd and others have thought, what alienated his Lordship at first Spenser's connection with Leicester; what subsequently aggravated the estrangem was his friendship with Essex.

CHAPTER II.

1580-1589.

In the year 1580 Spenser was removed from the society and circumstances in whe had lived and moved, as we have seen, for some two years. From that year near the close of his life his home was to be in Ireland. He paid sundry visits London and its environs in the course of these eighteen years; but it seems clear this home was in Ireland. Perhaps his biographers have hitherto not truly appreciate this residence in Ireland. We shall see that a liberal grant of land was preser bestowed upon him in the county of Cork; and they have reckoned him a success man, and wondered at the querulousness that occasionally makes itself heard in works. Towards the very end of this life, Spenser speaks of himself as one

Whom sullein care
Through discontent of my long fruitlesse stay
In princes court and expectation vayne
Of idle hopes, which still doe fly away
Like empty shaddowes, did afflict my brayne.

Those who marvel at such language perhaps forget what a dreary exile the poet's in Ireland must in fact have been. It is true that it was relieved by several journ to England, by his receiving at least one visit from an English friend, by his findiduring at any rate the earlier part of his absence, some congenial English friend residing in the country, by his meeting at length with that Elizabeth whose excell

sung so sweetly, whom he married; it is also true that there was in Milton and in Wordsworth-s certain great self-containedness, that he world with him wherever he went, that he had great allies and high the very air that flowed around him, whatever land he inhabited; all this vet to be cut off from the fellowship which, however self-sufficing, he so d-to look no longer on the face of Sidney his hero, his ideal embodied, his ar, to hear but as it were an echo of the splendid triumphs won by his and d in those glorious days, to know of his own high fame but by report, to from the friendship of Shakspere-surely this was exile. To live in the a age, and to be severed from those brilliant spirits to which the fame of due! Further, the grievously unsettled, insurgent state of Ireland at this a many a time before and since-must be borne in mind. Living there on the side of a volcanic mountain. That the perils of so living were not ginary, we shall presently see. † He did not shed tears and strike his bosom, iserable Ovid at Tomi; he 'wore rather in his bonds a cheerful brow, lived. omfort,' finding his pleasure in that high spiritual communion I have spoken pleasantly, like some happy father, with the children of his brain, joying aprices, their noblenesses, their sweet adolescence; but still it was exile, fact may explain that tone of discontent which here and there is perceptible 5.25

n 1580 Arthur, Lord Grey of Wilton, was appointed Lord Lieutenant of --p-rhaps through Lord Leicester's influence-made Sponser his Private

There can be no doubt that Spenser proceeded with him to Dublin. It rand, probably about this time, that he made the acquaintance of Sir Walter In 1531 he was appointed Clerk of Degrees and Recognizances in the Irish Chancery, a post which he held for seven years, at the end of which time he he appointment of Clerk to the Council of Munster. In the same year in was assigned the former clerkship, he received also a lease of the lands and Enniscorthy in Wexford county. It is to be hoped that his Chancery Court mitted him to reside for a while on that estate. 'Enniscorthy,' says the Iroland published by Mr. Murray, 'is one of the prettiest little towns in I.m. the largest portion of it being on a steep hill on the right bank of y, which here becomes a deep and navigable stream, and is crossed by a

The quote of these poets, and those of a like spirit, Wordsworth's lines on 'the Characterind three years old,' for in the respect therein mentioned, as in others, these poets are 'asin:

As a fagget sparkles on the hearth,
Not less if unattended and alone,
Than when both young and old sit gathered round,
And take delight in its activity;
Ecen so this happy creature of herself
Is all-sufficient: Solitude to her
Is blithe weiety, who fills the air
With gladness and involuntary songs.

[.]u Cloud's Come Home Again, vv. 312-319.
.u Cloud's Come Home Again, vv. 180-184, quoted below.

bridge of six arches.' There still stands there 'a single tower of the old Francisco monastery.' But Spenser soon parted with this charming spot, perhaps because of inconvenient distance from the scene of his official work. In December of the year which the lease was given, he transferred it to one Richard Synot. In the following year Lord Grey was recalled. 'The Lord Deputy,' says Holinshed, 'after long surfor his revocation, received Her Majesty's letters for the same.' His rule had be marked by some extreme, perhaps necessary, severities, and was probably some what curtly concluded on account of loud complaints made against him on the score. Spenser would seem to have admired and applauded him, both as a rule and as a patron and friend. He mentions him with much respect in his View the Present State of Ireland. One of the sonnets prefixed to the Faerie Queene addressed 'to the most renownned and valiant lord the lord Grey of Wilton,' a speaks of him with profound gratitude:—

Most noble lord, the pillor of my life, And patrone of my Muses pupiliage; Through whose large bountie, poured on me rife. In the first season of my feeble age, I now doe live bound yours by vassalage; Sith nothing ever may redeeme nor reave. Out of your endlesse debt so sure a gage, Vouchsafe in worth this small guift to receave, Which in your noble hands for pledge I leave. Of all the rest that I am tyde t' account.

Lord Grey died in 1593. Spenser may have renewed his friendship with him 1589, when, as we shall see, he visited England. For the present their connecti was broken. It may be considered as fairly certain that when his lordship return to England in 1582, Spenser did not return with him, but abode still in Ireland.

There is, indeed, a 'Maister Spenser' mentioned in a letter written by James VI. Scotland from St. Andrews in 1583 to Queen Elizabeth: 'I have staied Maist Spenser upon the letter quhilk is written with my auin hand quhilk sall be read within the track.' It may be presumed that this gentleman is the same with him whose postal services mention is found, as we have seen, in 1569. At any rate the is nothing whatever to justify his identification with the poet. On the other hand there are several circumstances which seem to indicate that Spenser was in Ireland continuously from the year of his going there with Lord Grey to the year of his risiting England with Raleigh in 1589, when he presented to her Majesty and published the first three books of the Faerie Queene. Whatever certain glimpses we can catch of Spenser during these ten years he is in Ireland.

We have seen that he was holding one clerkship or another in Ireland during all the time. At what exact time he resigned the second—the clerkship of the Council Munster—is not known. It was certainly before 1593; it was probably after his vis to England in the years 1589-91. In the next place, we find him mentioned as forming one of a company described as gathered together at a cottage near Dublin in a work! his friend Lodovick* Bryskett, written, as may be inferred with considerable certainty

^{*} This is the 'Lodovick' mentioned in Sonnet 33, quoted below.

with restless the very with a singular casic method taught all that which Plato to live control by or obscurely left written. The tlate writers' who have the shighly remarkable service of clarifying and making intelligible Plato stocle—perhaps the 'confusion' and 'obscurity' Bryskett speaks of mean the difficulties of a foreign language for one imperfectly acquainted with it lexander Piccolomini, Gio. Baptista Giraldi, and Guazzo, 'all three having upon the Ethick part of Morall Philosopie [sic] both exactly and perspicuously,' the carnestly wishes—and here perhaps, in spite of those queer words about d'Aristotle, we may sympathise with him—that some of our countrymen would by English treatises the study of Moral Philosophy in English.

se while I must struggle with those books which I vaderstand and content myselfe por them, in hope that God (who knoweth the sincerenesse of my desire) will be pleased my vnderstanding, so as I may reape that profit of my reading, which I trauell forwe a gentleman in this company, whom I have had often a purpose to intreate, that as his ight serue him, he would voucheafe to spend some time with me to instruct me in some hard tich I cannot of myselfe understand; knowing him to be not onely perfect in the Greek an also very well read in Philosophie, both morall and naturall. Neuertheless such is my s. as I never yet durst open my mouth to disclose this my desire unto him, though I have ad some hartning thereunto from himselfe. For of lone and kindnes to me, he encouraged thems to follow the reading of the Greeke tongue, and offered me his helpe to make me at it. But now that so good an oportunitie is offered vnto me, to satisfie in some sort my thinks I should commit a great fault, not to myselfe alone, but to all this company, if I st exter my request thus farre, as to mone him to spend this time which we have now to familiar discourse and conversation, in declaring unto us the great benefits which men The knowledge of Morall Philosophic, and in making us to know what the same is, what be thereof, whereby vertues are to be distinguished from vices; and finally that he will be s run oper in such order as he shall thinks good, such and so many principles and rules m shall serue not only for my better instruction, but also for the contentment and satisfaction

XXXIV

that I have alreedy vadertaken a work tending to the same effect, which is in heroical verse under title of a Faerie Queene to represent all the moral vertues, assigning to enery vertue a Knight to the patron and defender of the same, in whose actions and feates of arms and chinalry the operati of that vertue, whereof he is the protector, are to be expressed, and the vices and unruly appet that oppose themselves against the same, to be beaten down and ouercome. Which work, as I h already well entred into, if God shall please to spare me life that I may finish it according to mind, your wish (M. Bryskett) will be in some sort accomplished, though perhaps not so effects as you could desire. And the same may very well serue for my excuse, if at this time I crane to forborne in this your request, since any discourse, that I might make thus on the sudden in suc subject would be but simple, and little to your satisfactions. For it would require good adnisem and premeditation for any man to vndertake the declaration of these points that you have propo containing in effect the Ethicke part of Morall Philosophie. Whereof since I have taken in hand discourse at large in my poeme before spoken, I hope the expectation of that work may serue to f me at this time from speaking in that matter, notwithstanding your motion and all your intrest But I will tell you how I thinke by himselfe he may very well excuse my speech, and yet satisfic you in this matter. I have seene (as he knoweth) a translation made by himselfe out of the Ital tongue of a dialogue comprehending all the Ethick part of Moral Philosophy, written by one those three he formerly mentioned, and that is by Giraldi vnder the title of a dialogue of civil li If it please him to bring us forth that translation to be here read among vs, or otherwise to deliner us, as his memory may serue him, the contents of the same; he shal (I warrant you) satisfie you at the ful, and himselfe wil have no cause but to thinke the time well spent in reviewing his lab especially in the company of so many his friends, who may thereby reape much profit and the tra slation happily fare the better by some mending it may receive in the perusing, as all writings may do by the often examination of the same. Neither let it trouble him that I so turne over to h againe the taske he wold have put me to; for it falleth out fit for him to verifie the principall of this Apologie, even now made for himselfe; because thereby it will appeare that he hath not will drawne himselfe from sernice of the state to liue idle or wholly prinate to himselfe, but hath spe some time in doing that which may greatly benefit others and hath serned not a little to the better of his owne mind, and increasing of his knowledge, though he for modesty pretend much ignoran and pleade want in wealth, much like some rich beggars, who either of custom, or for couetousnes. to begge of others those things whereof they have no want at home. With this answer of Spensers it seemed that all the company were wel satisfied, for after some few speeches whereby the had shewed an extreme longing after his worke of the Fairie Queene, whereof some parcels had be by some of them seene, they all began to presse me to produce my translation mentioned by Spenser that it might be perused among them; or else that I should (as near as I could) deliner or them the contents of the same, supposing that my memory would not much faile me in a thing studied and advisedly set downe in writing as a translation must be."

Bryskett at length assents to Spenser's proposal, and proceeds to read his translation of Giraldi, which is in some sort criticised as he reads, Spenser proposing one or two questions 'arising principally,' as Todd says, 'from the discussion of the doctring of Plato and Aristotle.' This invaluable picture of a scene in Spenser's Irish lishows manifestly in what high estimation his learning and genius were already hele and how, in spite of Harvey's sinister criticisms, he had resumed his great work, tells us too that he found in Ireland a warmly appreciative friend, if indeed he had not known Bryskett before their going to Ireland. Bryskett too, perhaps, was a quainted with Sir Philip Sidney; for one of the elegies written on that famous knight's death and printed along with Astrophel in the elegiac collection made a Spenser—that called A Pastorall Eglogue—was probably Bryskett's composition He accompanied or followed his friend to the south of Ireland, and perhaps through his interest succeeded him after an interval as clerk of the Council of Munster.

What is said of the Faeric Queene in the above quotation may be illustrated fro the sonnet already quoted from, addressed to Lord Grey—one of the sonnets that

XXXV

dern editions are prefixed to the great poem. It speaks of the great

> Rude rymes, the which a rustick Muse did weave In savadge soyle, far from Parnasso mount.

, the sonnet addressed to the Right Honourable the Earl of Ormond and

art addressed to Harvey, is dated 'Dublin this xviij of July, 1586,' ourse of the decad now under consideration, Spenser received a grant of land -of 3,028 acres, out of the forfeited estates of the Earl of Desmond.

bess circumstances put together make it probable, and more than probable, that remained in Ireland after Lord Grey's recall. How thorough his familiarity e country grew to be, appears from the work concerning it which he at last d

rears 1586-7-8 were eventful both for England and for Spenser. In the first expired of wounds received at Zutphen; in the second, Mary Queen of Scots sented: in the third, God blew and scattered the Armada, and also Leicester Spenser weeps over Sidney-there was never, perhaps, more weeping, poetical zer, over any death than over that of Sidney-in his Astrophel, the poem above This poem is scarcely worthy of the sad occasion—the flower of knightst down ere its prime, not yet

> In flushing When blighting was nearest.

dy it in no way expresses what Spenser undoubtedly felt when the woeful news cross the Channel to him in his Irish home. Probably his grief was 'too deep ra.' It was probably one of those 'huge cares' which, in Seneca's phrase, not star,' but 'stupent.' He would fain have been dumb and opened not his mouth; e fashion of the time called upon him to speak. He was expected to bring mortelle, so to say, and lay it on his hero's tomb, though his limbs would v support him, and his hand, quivering with the agony of his heart, could with ry either weave it or carry it. All the six years they had been parted, the of that chivalrous form had never been forgotten. It had served for the one of all that was highest and noblest in his eyes. It had represented for him all aighthood. Nor all the years that he lived after Sidney's death was it for-

It is often before him, as he writes his later poetry, and is greeted always aiving love and sorrow. Thus in the Ruines of Time, he breaks out in a sweet of unextinguished affection :

> Most gentle spirite breathed from above, Out of the bosom of the Makers blis, In whom all bountie and all vertuous love Appeared in their native propertis And did enrich that noble breast of his With treasure passing all this worldes worth Worthie of heaven itselfe, which brought it forth.

His blessed spirite, full of power divine And influence of all celestiall grace,

Loathing this sinfull earth and earthlie slime, Fled backe too soone unto his native place; Too soone for all that did his love embrace, Too soone for all this wretched world, whom he Robd of all right and true nobilitie.

Yet ere his happie soule to heaven went Out of this fieshie gaole, he did devise Unto his heavenlie Maker to present His bodie as a spotles sacrifise, And chose, that guiltie hands of enemies Should powre forth th' offring of his guilties blood, So life exchanging for his countries good.

O noble spirite, live there ever blessed.
The world's late wonder, and the heaven's new ioy.
Live ever there, and leave me here distressed
With mortall cares and cumbrous worlds anoy;
But where thou dost that happiness enloy,
Bid me, O bid me quicklie come to thee,
That happie there I maie thee alwaies see.

Yet whilest the Fates affoord me vitell breath, I will it spend in speaking of thy praise, And sing to thee untill that time lie death By Heaven's doome doe ende my earthlie daies: Thereto doo thou my humble spirite raise, And into me that sacred breath inspire Which thou there breathest perfect and entire.

It is not quite certain in what part of Ireland the poet was living when th that Sidney was not reached him. Was he still residing at Dublin, or had he ferred his home to that southern region which is so intimately associated w name? The sonnet to Harvey above mentioned shows that he was at Dublin of the year of his friend's death. It has been said already that he did not resi Chancery clerkship till 1588. We know that he was settled in Cork county, colman castle, in 1589, because Raleigh visited him there that year. have left Dublin in 1588 or 1589. According to Dr. Birch's Life of Spenser, p to the edition of the Faerie Queene in 1751,* and the Biographia Britannica, th of land made him in Cork is dated June 27, 1586. But the grant, which is ex dated October 26, 1591. Perhaps no great importance ought to be attached statement of Dr. Birch or of the Biographia Britannica; but that he was at Kil before 1591 seems certain. As he resigned his clerkship in the Court of Chan 1588, and was then appointed, as we have seen, clerk of the Council of Munprobably went to live somewhere in the province of Munster that same year may have lived at Kilcolman before it and the surrounding grounds were pr to him; he may have entered upon possession on the strength of a pror them, before the formal grant was issued. He has mentioned the scenery environed his castle twice in his great poem; but it is worth noticing th

^{*} Dr. Birch refers in his note to The Ancient and Present State of the County and City of Charles Smith, vol. 1, book i. c. i, p. 58-63. Edit, Dublin 1750, 8vo. And Fiennes M Minerary, part II. p. 4.

ns occur, not in the books published, as we shall now very soon see, in 1590, the books published six years afterwards. In the famous passage already d to in the eleventh canto of the fourth book, describing the nuptials of the s and the Medway, he recounts in stanzas xl.-xliv. the Irish rivers who were at that great river-gathering, and amongst them

Swift Awniduff which of the English man
Is cal'de Blacks-water, and the Liffar deep,
Sad Trowis, that once his people over-ran,
Strong Allo tombling from Slewlogher steep,
And Mulla mine, whose waves I whilom taught to weep.

ther mention occurs in the former of the two cantos Of Mutability. There at sings that the place appointed for the trial of the titles and best rights of both nly powers' and 'earthly wights' was

Upon the highest hights
Of Arlo-hill (who knows not Arlo-hill?)
That is the highest head (in all mens sights)
Of my old father Mole, whom shepheards quill
Renowned hath with hymnes fit for a rurall skill.

poem called Colin Clouts Come Home Again, written in 1591, and dedicated to Sir leigh from my house at Kilcolman the 27 of December, 1591'*—written therefore a lengthy absence in England—exhibits a full familiarity with the country about Kilcolman. On the whole then we may suppose that his residence at man began not later than 1588. It was to be roughly and terribly ended ten after.

may suppose he was living there in peace and quiet, not perhaps undisturbed by a murmurs of discontent, by signs of unrepressed and irrepressible hostility is his nation, by ill-concealed sympathies with the Spanish invaders amongst tive population, when the Armada came and went. The old castle in which ed had been one of the residences of the Earls of Desmond. It stood some iles from Doneraile, on the north side of a lake which was fed by the river Awbey lla, as the poet christened it.

o miles north-west of Doneraile,' writes Charles Smith in his Natural and Civil y of the County and City of Cork, 1774, (i. 340, 341)—'is Kilcoleman, a ruined of the Earls of Desmond, but more celebrated for being the residence of the tal Spenser, when he composed his divine poem The Faerie Queene. The castle almost level with the ground, and was situated on the north side of a fine n the midst of a vast plain, terminated to the east by the county of Waterford ains; Bally-howra hills to the north, or, as Spenser terms them, the mountains le, Nagle mountains to the south, and the mountains of Kerry to the west. It unded a view of above half the breadth of Ireland; and must have been, when liacent uplands were wooded, a most pleasant and romantic situation; from e, no doubt, Spenser drew several parts of the scenary of his youn.'

[·] Todd proposes to regard this date as a printer's error for 1595, quite unnecessarily.

xxxviii

Here, then, as in some cool sequestered vale of life, for some ten years, his to England excepted, lived Spenser still singing sweetly, still, as he might say, pi with the woods anwsering him and his echo ringing. Sitting in the shade he play many 'a pleasant fit;' he would sing

Some hymne or morall laie, Or carol made to praise his loved lasse;

he would see in the rivers that flowed around his tower beings who lived and I and would sing of their mutual passions. It must have sounded strangely to hea notes of his sweet voice welling forth from his old ruin—to hear music so s and refined issuing from that scarred and broken relic of past turbulencies—

The shepheard swaines that did about him play
. . . with greedle listfull cares
Did stand astonisht at his curious skill
Lake hartlesse deare, dismayed with thunders sound.

He presents a picture such as would have delighted his own fancy, though per the actual experience may not have been unalloyed with pain. It is a picture win many ways resembles that presented by one of a kindred type of genius, who already been mentioned as of affinity with him—by Wordsworth. Wordsworth sang in a certain sense from the shade, far away from the vanity of courts, an uproar of cities; sang 'from a still place, remote from men;' sang, like his Highland girl, all alone with the 'vale profound' 'overflowing with the sou finding, too, objects of friendship and love in the forms of nature which surrounde tranquil home.

Of these two poets in their various lonelinesses one may perhaps quote those exquines written by one of them of a somewhat differently caused isolation: each of them too lacked

Not friends for simple glee, Nor yet for higher sympathy. To his side the fallow-deer Came and rested without fear; The eagle, lord of land and sea, Stooped down to pay him fealty.

He knew the rocks which angels haunt Upon the mountains visitant; He hath kenned them taking using; And into caves where Farries sing He hath entered; and been told. By voices how men lived of old.

Here now and then he was visited, it may be supposed, by old friends. Per that distinguished son of the University of Cambridge, Gabriel Harrey, may while have been his guest; he is introduced under his pastoral name of Hobbino present at the poet's house on his return to Ireland. The most memorable of trisits was that already alluded to—that paid him in 1589 by Sir Walter Raleigh, whom it will be remembered he had become acquainted some nine years be

too, had received a grant from the same huge forfeited estate, a fragment of i been given to Spenser. The granting of these, and other shares of the estates, formed part of a policy then vigorously entertained by the English set—the colonising of the so lately disordered and still restless districts of Ireland. The recipients were termed 'undertakers;' it was one of their repair the ravages inflicted during the recent tumults and bring the lands d to them into some state of cultivation and order.

ars had been followed by a famine. 'Even in the history of Ireland,' writes biographer of Sir Walter Raleigh, 'there are not many scenes more full of an those which the historians of that period rapidly sketch when showing us tion of almost the whole province of Munster in the year 1584, and the years ely succeeding.'*

nims of his duties as an 'undertaker,' in addition perhaps to certain troubles where his rival Essex was at this time somewhat superseding him in the part, and making a temporary absence not undesirable, brought Raleigh into making a temporary absence not undesirable, brought Raleigh into making a temporary absence not undesirable, brought Raleigh into making a temporary absence at the same time a charming it to poet's life at Kilcolman. Colin himself, lately returned home from tells his brother shepherds, at their urgent request, of his 'passed fortunes.' is with Raleigh's visit. One day, he tells them, as he sat

Under the foote of Mole, that mountaine hore, Keeping my sheepe amongst the cooly shade Of the greene alders by the Mullaes shore,

-hepherd, who styled himself the Shepherd of the Ocean-

Whether allured with my pipes delight, Whose pleasing sound yshrilled far about, Or thither led by chaunce, I know not right—

m out, and

Provoked me to plaie some pleasant fit.

. he tells us, a song of Mulla old father Mole's daughter, and of another ed Bregog who loved her. Then his guest sang in turn:—

His song was all a lamentable lay
Of great unkindnesse and of usage hard,
Of Cynthia the ladie of the sea,
Which from her presence faultlesse him debard,
And ever and anon, with singuits rife,
He cryed out, to make his undersong:
Ah! my loves queene and god/esse of my life.
Who shall me pittle when thou doest me wrong?

biward Edwards, 1868, I. c. vi.; see also Colin Clouis Come Home Again, vv. 312-319. led of Essex hath chased Mr. Raleigh from the court and confined him in Ireland.'—Letter, pass 17, 1549, from Captain Francis Allen to Antony Bacon, Esq.—Quoted by Todd from its Memoirs of Queen Elizabeth.—See Mr. Edwards's Life of Raleigh, I. c. vill.

After they had made an end of singing, the shepherd of the ocean

Gan to cast great lyking to my lore, And great dislyking to my lucklesse lot That banisht had my selfe, like wight forlore, Into that waste where I was quite forgot,

and presently persuaded him to accompany him 'his Cinthia to see.'

It has been seen from one of Harvey's letters that the Faerie Queene was begun in 1580; and from what Bryskett says, and what Spenser says him sonnets to Lord Grey, and to Lord Ormond, that it was proceeded with aft had passed over to Ireland. By the close of the year 1589 at least three completely finished. Probably enough parts of other books had been wonly three were entirely ready for publication. No doubt part of the c that passed between Spenser and Raleigh related to Spenser's work. believed that what was finished was submitted to Raleigh's judgment, an concluded that it elicited his warmest approval.* One great object that S posed to himself when he assented to Raleigh's persuasion to visit Englar publication of the first three books of his Faerie Queene.

CHAPTER III.

1590.

Thus after an absence of about nine years, Spenser returned for a time to the returned 'bringing his sheaves with him.' Whatever shadow of misund had previously come between his introducer and her Majesty seems to speedily dissipated. Raleigh presented him to the Queen, who, it wor quickly recognised his merits. 'That goddess'

To mine oaten pipe enclin'd her eare That she thenceforth therein gan take delight, And it desir'd at timely houres to heare Al were my notes but rude and roughly dight.

In the register of the Stationers Company for 1589 occurs the follow quoted here from Mr. Collier's Life of Spenser:—

Primo Die Decembris.—Mr. Ponsonbye. Entred for his Copy a booke intytuled the fa dysposed into xii bookes &c. Aucthorised under thandes of the Archb. of Cante Wardens, vjd.

'The letter of the authors prefixed to his poem expounding his whole is the course of this worke, which for that it giveth great light to the read better understanding is hereunto annexed,' addressed to 'Sir Walter Raleig Lord Wardein of the Stanneryes and her Maiesties lifetenaunt of the

^{*} See Raleigh's lines entitled 'A Vision upon this Conceipt of the Faery Queene,' presence.

Cornewayll,' is dated January 23, 1589—that is, 1590, according to the new sty Shortly afterwards, in 1590, according to both old and new styles, was published William Ponsonby THE FARRIE QUEENE, Disposed into twelve books, Fashion XII Morall vertues.' That day, which we spoke of as beginning to arise in 15

now fully dawned. The silence of well nigh two centuries was now broken, not ag to prevail, by mighty voices. During Spenser's absence in Ireland, William Sh. spere had come up from the country to London. When Spenser arrived in London 1589, this Shakspere was already occupying a notable position in his profession an actor; his name is found in that year-he was then some twenty-five years

age-amongst the leaders of the company to whom the Blackfriars Theatre belongs but what is more important, there can be little doubt he was already not only kno

as an actor, but known and famous as a play-writer. What he had already writ was not comparable with what he was to write subsequently; but those early dran were themselves vastly superior to any English dramatic work that had preced them, and they gave promise of splendid fruits to be thereafter yielded. 1593 appeared Venus and Adonis; in the following year Lucrece; in 1595, Spense Epithalamium; in 1596, the second three books of the Facric Queene; in 15

Bacon's Essays and the first part of Hooker's Ecclesiustical Polity. During all th years various plays, of increasing power and beauty, were proceeding from Sh. spere's hands; by 1598 about half of his extant plays had certainly been co posed. Early in 1599, he, who may be said to have ushered in this illustrious peri he whose radiance first dispersed the darkness and made the day begin to be, poet Spenser, died. But the day did not die with him; it was then but approach

its noon, when he, one of its brightest suns, set. This day may be said to have fu broken in the year 1590, when the first instalment of the great work of Spenser's made its appearance. The three books were dedicated to the Queen. They were followed in the origin edition-are preceded in later editions-first, by the letter to Raleigh above mention

then by six poetical pieces of a commendatory sort, written by friends of the poeby Raleigh who writes two of the pieces, by Harvey who now praises and well-wis the poem he had discountenanced some years before, by 'R. S.,' by 'H. B.,' by 'W. I lastly, by seventeen sonnets addressed by the poet to various illustrious personage to Sir Christopher Hatton, to Lord Burghley, to the Earl of Essex, Lord Char Howard, Lord Grey of Wilton, Lord Buckhurst, Sir Francis Wallingham, Sir Je

Norris, Knight, lord president of Munster, Sir Walter Raleigh, the Countess Pembroke, and others. The excellence of the poem was at once generally perceiv and acknowledged. Spenser had already, as we have seen, gained great applause his Shepheardes Calendar, published some ten years before the coming out of greater work. During these ten years he had resided out of England, as has be

seen; but it is not likely his reputation had been languishing during his absen Webbe in his Discourse of English Poetrie, 1586, had contended 'that Spenser m well wear the garlande, and step before the best of all English poets.' The Shephear Calendar had been reprinted in 1581 and in 1586; probably enough, other work his bad been circulating in manuscript; the hopes of the country had been div towards him; he was known to be engaged in the composition of a great poem. doubt he found himself famous when he reached England on the visit suggested Raleigh; he found a most eager expectant audience; and when at last his Fo Queene appeared, it was received with the utmost delight and admiration. He spoken of in the same year with its appearance as the new laureate.* In the sprin the following year he received a pension from the crown of 50l. per annum. Prably, however, then, as in later days, the most ardent appreciators of Spenser were men of the same craft with himself—the men who too, though in a different degree in a different kind, possessed the 'vision and the faculty divine.'

This great estimation of the Faerie Queene was due not only to the intrinsic cha of the poem—to its exquisitely sweet melody, its intense pervading sense of bear its never stained moral purity, its subtle spiritualness—but also to the time of appearance. For then nearly two centuries no great poem had been written in English tongue. Chaucer had died heirless. Occleve's lament over that great spir

decease had not been made without occasion :-

Alas my worthie maister honorable
This londis verray tresour and richesse
Deth by thy deth hathe harm irreparable
Unto us done; hir vengeable duresse
Dispoiled hathe this lond of sweetnesse
Of rhetoryke, for unto Tullius
Was never man so like amongest us.†

And the doleful confession this orphaned rhymer makes for himself, might been well made by all the men of his age in England:—

My dere mayster, God his soule quite. And fader Chaucer fayne would have me taught, But I was dull, and learned lyte or naught.

No worthy scholar had succeeded the great master. The fifteenth century England had abounded in movements of profound social and political interestmovements which eventually fertilised and enriched and ripened the mind of nation; but, not unnaturally, the immediate literary results had been of no gr value. In the reign of Henry VIII. the condition of literature, for various rease had greatly improved. Surrey and Wyatt had heralded the advent of a brigh ern. From their time the poetical succession had never failed altogether. The n memorable name in our literature between their time and the Facrie Queene is that Sackville, Lord Buckhurst-a name of note in the history of both our dramatic non-dramatic poetry. Sackville was capable of something more than lyrical essi He it was who designed the Micror for Magistrates. To that poem, important compared with the poetry of its day, for its more pretentious conception, he him contributed the two best pieces that form part of it-the Induction and the Comple of Buckingham. These pieces are marked by some beauties of the same sort as the which especially characterise Spenser; but they are but fragments; and in sp

^{*} Nash's Supplication of Piers Pennilesse, 1500. † Warton's History of English Poerry, II. 264, ed. 1840.

EDMUND SPENSER. they belong to an age which happily passed away shortly after the accession of Qu

Elizabeth—they are penetrated by that despondent tone which is so strikingly and

in our literature of the middle years of the sixteenth century, not surprisingly, if general history of the time be considered. Meanwhile, our language had chan much, and Chaucer had grown almost unintelligible to the ordinary reader. fore, about the year 1590, the nation was practically without a great poem. same time, it then, if ever, truly needed one. Its power of appreciation had b quickened and refined by the study of the poetries of other countries; it had tra lated and perused the classical writers with enthusiasm; it had ardently pored (the poetical literature of Italy. Then its life had lately been ennobled by deed splendid courage crowned with as splendid success. In the year 1590, if ever, country, in respect of its literary condition and in respect of its general high noble excitement, was ready for the reception of a great poem. Such a poem undoubtedly was the Facrie Queene, although it may perhaps admitted that it was a work likely to win favour with the refined and cultured secti of the community rather than with the community at large. Strongly impressed it as were the instant influences of the day, yet in many ways it was marked t certain archaic character. It depicted a world—the world of chivalry and romanc which was departed; it drew its images, its forms of life, its scenery, its very languages from the past. Then the genius of our literature in the latter part of Queen Elizabe reign was emphatically dramatic; in the intense life of these years men longed reality. Now the Faerie Queene is one long idealizing. These circumstances are to accounted for partly by the character of Spenser's genius, partly by the fact alrestated that chronologically Spenser is the earliest of the great spirits of his day. truth he stands between two worlds: he belongs partly to the new time, partly to old; he is the last of one age, he is the first of another; he stretches out one he into the past to Chancer, the other rests upon the shoulder of Milton.

CHAPTER IV.

1591-1599.

It is easy to imagine how intensely Spenser enjoyed his visit to London. It uncertain to what extent that visit was prolonged. He dates the dedication of Colin Clouts Come Home Again 'from my house at Kilcolman, the 27 of Decemi 1591.' On the other hand, the dedication of his Daphnaida is dated 'London t first of Januarie 1591,' that is 1592 according to our new style. Evidently there some mistake here. Prof. Craik 'suspects' that in the latter instance 'the d January 1591' is used in the modern meaning; he quotes nothing to justify suc suspicion; but it would seem to be correct. Todd and others have proposed to a the '1591' in the former instance to 1595, the year in which Colin Clouts Come I

Again was published, and with which the allusions made in the poem to contemy

writers agree; but this proposal is, as we shall see, scarcely tenable. The in which the publisher of the Complaints, 1591, of which publication we shall presently, introduces that work to the 'gentle reader,' seems to show that the protection at the time of the publishing easily accessible. He speaks of having ender by all good meanes (for the better encrease and accomplishment of your deligget into my hands such small poems of the same authors, as I heard were abroad in sundrie hands, and not easie to bee come by by himselfe; some of having been diversile imbeziled and purloyned from him since his departure on the says he understands Spenser 'wrote sundrie others' besides those now con besides some other Pamphlets looselie scattered abroad . . . which when I can by himselfe or otherwise attaine too I meane likewise for your fauour sake foorth.' It may be supposed with much probability that Spenser returned Irish castle some time in 1591, in all likelihood after February, in which may received the pension mentioned above, and on the other hand so as to have write the original draught of Colin Clouts Come Home Again before the of December.

The reception of the Faerie Queene had been so favourable that in 1591—is seem, as has been shown, after Spenser's departure—the publisher of the determined to put forth what other poems by the same hand he could together. The result was a volume entitled 'Complaints, containing sundrippoemes of the Worlds Vanitie, whereof the next page maketh mention. By I 'The next page' contains 'a note of the Sundrie Poemes contained in this volume.

- 1. The Ruines of Time.
- 2. The Teares of the Muses.
- 3. Virgils Gnat.
- 4. Prosopopoia or Mother Hubbards Tale.
- . The Ruines of Rome, by Bellay.
- 6. Mulopotmos or The Tale of the Butterflic.
- 7. Visions of the Worlds Vanitle.
- 8. Bellayes Visions.
- 9. Petrarches Visions.

In a short notice addressed to the Gentle Reader which follows—the notice referred to—the publisher of the volume mentions other works by Spens promises to publish them too 'when he can attain to' them. These works are siastes, The Seven Psalms, and Canticum Canticorum—these three translating doubt of parts of the Old Testament—A Sennight Slumber, The State of Lov Dying Pelican—doubtless the work mentioned, as has been seen, in one of Specifican—doubtless the work mentioned, as has been seen, in one of Specifican works had probably been passing from hand to hand in manuscript for years. That old method of circulation survived the invention of the printing period many generations. The perils of it may be illustrated from the fate of the work mentioned. It would seem that the publisher never did attain to them; and have all perished. With regard to the works which were printed and preserve Ruines of Time, as the Dedication shows, was written during Spenser's men visit of 1589-91 to England. It is in fact an elegy dedicated to the Coun Pembroke, on the death of Sir Philip Sidney, 'that most brave Knight, you

other deceased.' 'Sithens my late cumming into England,' the poet writes ipistle Dedicatorie, 'some friends of mine (which might much prevaile with indeede command me) knowing with howe straight bandes of duetie I was nim; as also bound unto that noble house (of which the chiefe hope then a him) have sought to revive them by upbraiding me; for that I have not axie thankefull remembrance towards him or any of them; but suffer their no sleep in silence and forgetfulnesse. Whome chieflie to satisfie, or els to that fowle blot of unthankefulnesse, I have conceived this small Poeme, I by a generall name of the Worlds Ruises: yet speciallie intended to the ing of that noble race from which both you and he sprong, and to the eterof some of the chiefe of them late deceased.' This poem is written in a tone d been extremely frequent during Spenser's youth. Its text is that ancient unity of Vanities; all is Vanity'-a very obvious text in all ages, but perhaps ly so, as has been hinted, in the sixteenth century, and one very frequently at that time. This text is treated in a manner characteristic of the age. It is fied by a series of visions. The poet represents himself as seeing at Verulum arition of a woman weeping over the decay of that ancient town. This stands for the town itself. Of its whileme glories, she says, after a vain ing of them,

> They all are gone and all with them is gone, Ne ought to me remaines, but to lament My long decay.

she continues, weeps with her, no one remembers her,

Save one that mangre fortunes injurie And times decay, and enuies cruell tort Hath writ my record in true seeming sort.

Cambden the nourice of antiquitie, And lanterne unto late succeeding age, To see the light of simple vertite Buried in ruines, through the great outrage Of her owne people, led with warlike rage, Cambden, though time all moniments obscure, Yet thy just labours ever shall endure.

the rebukes herself for these selfish moanings by calling to mind how far olitary she is in her desolation. She recalls to mind the great ones of the land are lately fallen—Leicester, and Dudley, and Sidney—and wonders no longer own ruin. Is not Transit Gloria the lesson taught everywhere? Then other and emblems of instability are seen, some of them not darkly suggesting that passes away from earth and apparently ends may perhaps be glorified elsewhere. Seen of the Muses—dedicated, as we have loose of the poet's fair cousins, the Lady Strange, deplores the general intellected of the cousins, the Lady Strange, deplores the general intellected interaction of the time. It is doubtful whether Spenser fully conceived what a set literary age was beginning about the year 1590. Perhaps his long absence hand, the death of Sidney who was the great hope of England Spenser knew, releasastical controversies raging when he revisited England, may partly account.

for his despondent tone with reference to literature. He introduces each Muse v for the neglect and contempt suffered by her respective province. He who de these tears was himself destined to dry them; and Shakspere, who, if anyone, make the faces of the Muses blithe and bright, was now rapidly approaching his There can be little doubt that Spenser was acquainted with Shakspere. The both been intimately connected with the Earl of Leicester; and though, inash Spenser was probably out of England from 1580-90, and Shakspere did not c to London till 1585 or 1586, they could not have met together at their great p house, yet this intimate connection with one and the same person must certain resulted in their forming many common associations and friendships. Spenser intimate friend of the Earl of Essex; Shakspere was an intimate friend of th of Southampton, who was one of the most attached friends of that Earl of Ess personal acquaintance with Shakspere must undoubtedly have been one of th memorable events of Spenser's visit to London in 1589. Raleigh, who was the f of those famous meetings at the Mermaid Tavern in Friday Street, Cheapside, one of them have introduced to each other the two greatest poets of the day, one the greatest of all days. There can be little doubt that Thalia in the Teares of the refers in the following passage to Shakspere: the comic stage, she says, is degr

> And those sweete wits which wont the like to frame Are now despize and made a laughing game.

And he the man whom Nature selfe had made To mock herselfe and Truth to imitate, With kindly counter under Mimick shade, Our pleasant Willy, ah! is dead of late; With whom all joy and jolly meriment Is also deaded and in dolour drent.

The context shows that by 'dead' is not meant physical death, but that

That same gentle spirit, from whose pen Large streames of honnie and sweete nectar flowe,

produces nothing, sits idle-handed and silent, rather than pander to the grosser of the day.

Of the remaining works published in the Complaints, the only other one of composition is Muiopotmos, which, as Prof. Craik suggests, would seem to allegorical narrative of some matter recently transpired. It is dated 1590, but n is known of any earlier edition than that which appears in the Complaints. other pieces by far the most interesting is Prosepopoia, or Mother Hubbards To only because it is in it, as has been said, Spenser most carefully imitates his master Chaucer, but for its intrinsic merit—for its easy style, its various incide social pictures. In the dedication he speaks of it as *These my idle labours; having long sithens composed in the raw conceipt of my youth, I lately amongs papers lighted upon, and was by others, which liked the same, mooved to se foorth.' However long before its publication the poem in the main was writter can be no doubt that some additions were made to it in ar about the year 15 for Instance, the well-known passage describing 'a suiter's state,' which refie

clearly a bitter personal experience to have been composed before Spenser had gro familiar with the Court. The remaining pieces in the Complaints consist of translations or imitations, co

posed probably some years before, though probably in some cases, as has been sho revised or altogether recast. Probably in the same year with the Complaints *- that is in 1591-was publis

Daphnaida, 'an Elegie upon the death of the noble and vertuous Douglas Howe

daughter and heire of Henry Lord Howard, Viscount Byndon, and wife of Art Georges, Esquire.' This elegy was no doubt written before Spenser returned Ireland. It is marked by his characteristic diffuseness, abundance, melody. Certainly before the close of the year 1591 Spenser found himself once more in old castle of Kilcolman. A life at Court could never have suited him, however irksc

> Where cold and care and penury do dwell, Here to keep sheeps with hunger and with .cyle,

at times his isolation in Ireland may have seemed. When his friends wondered at This barrein soyle,

he made answer that he, Whose former dayes

returning unto

Had in rude fields been altogether spent, Durst not adventure such unknowen wayes, Nor trust the guile of fortune's blandishment; But rather chose back to my sheepe to tourne, Whose utmost hardnesse I before had tryde, Then having learnd repentance late to mourne Amongst those wretches which I then descryde,

That life, with all its intrigues and self-seekings and scandals, had no charms for h Once more settled in his home, he wrote an account of his recent absence from which he entitled Colin Clouts Come Home Again. This poem was not publish

till 1595; but, whatever additions were subsequently made to it, there can be doubt it was originally written immediately after his return to Ireland. Sitting the quiet to which he was but now restored, he reviewed the splendid scenes he l lately witnessed; he recounted the famous wits he had met, and the fair ladies had seen in the great London world; and dedicated this exquisite Diary to the frie who had introduced him into that brilliant circle. It would seem that Raleigh l accused him of indolence. That ever-restless schemer could not appreciate the po

officious, I make you present of this simple pastorall, unworthic of your hig conceipt for the meanesse of the stile but agreeing with the truth in circumstance matter. The which I humbly beseech you to accept in part of paiment of the infir debt in which I acknowledge myselfe bounden unto you for your singular favours sundrie good turnes shewed to me at my late being in England, &c.'

dreaminess. 'That you may see,' writes Spenser, 'that I am not alwaies ydle as think, though not greatly well occupied, nor altogither undutifull, though not precis

The conclusion of this poem commemorates, as we have seen, Spenser's endur • This poem is in this volume reprinted from the edition of 1591. Mr. Morris thinks that: s not aware of this edition. Mr. Collier reprinted from the 2nd edition—that of 1596.

xlviii

affection for that Rosalind who so many years before had turned away her ears his suit. It must have been some twelve months after those faithful lines penned, that the writer conceived an ardent attachment for one Elizabeth. No is known of this lady's previous history. It would appear that she lived in the neighbourhood. The whole course of the wooing and the winning is pourtray the Amoretti or Sonnets and the Epithalamium. It may be gathered from biographically and otherwise interesting pieces, that it was at the close of the 1592 that the poet was made a captive of that beauty he so fondly describes. first three sonnets would seem to have been written in that year. The fourth brates the beginning of the year 1593—the beginning according to our modern w reckoning. All through that year 1593 the lover sighed, beseeched, adored, desp prayed again. Fifty-eight sonnets chronicle the various hopes and fears of that The object of his passion remained as steel and flint, while he wept and wailed pleaded. His life was a long torment.

In vaine I seeke and sew to her for grace
And doe myne humbled hart before her poure;
The whiles her foot she in my necke doth place
And tread my life downe in the lowly floure.

In Lent she is his 'sweet saynt,' and he vows to find some fit service for her.

Her temple fayre is built within my mind In which her glorious image placed is; On which my thoughts doo night and day attend, Like sacred priests that never think amiss.

But all his devotion profited nothing, and he thinks it were better 'at once t He marvels at her cruelty. He cannot address himself to the further composit his great poem. The accomplishment of that great work were

> Sufficient werke for one man's simple head, All were it, as the rest, but rudely writ. How then should I, without another wit, Thinck ever to endure so tedious toyle! Sith that this one is tost with troublons fit Of a proud love that doth my spirit spoyle.

He falls ill in his body too. When the anniversary of his being carried into car comes round, he declares, as has been already quoted, that the year just elapse appeared longer than all the forty years of his life that had preceded it (sonne In the beginning of the year 1594,

> After long stormes and tempests sad assay Which hardly I endured hertofore In dread of death and daungerous dismay With which my silly bark was tossed sore,

he did 'at length descry the happy shore.' The heart of his mistress softened to him. The last twenty-five sonnets are for the most part the songs of a lover acc and happy. It would seem that by this time he had completed three more botthe Fueric Queene, and he asks leave in sonnet 70,

In pleasant mew

To sport my Muse and sing my loves sweet praise, The contemplation of whose heavenly hew My spirit to an higher pitch doth raise.

Probably the Sixth Book was concluded in the first part of the year 1594, just aft his long wooing had been crowned with success. In the tenth canto of that book introduces the lady of his love, and himself 'piping' unto her. In a rarely pleasa place on a fair wooded hill-top Calidore sees the Graces dancing, and Colin Clo piping merrily. With these goddesses is a fourth maid; it is to her alone that Col pipes:—

Pype, jolly shepheard, pype thou now apace Unto thy love that made thee low to lout; Thy love is present there with thee in place; Thy love is there advannst to be another Grace.

Of this fourth maid the poet, after sweetly praising the daughters of sky-ruling Josings in this wise:—

Who can aread what creature mote she bee:

Whether a creature or a goddesse graced With heavenly gifts from heven first enraced? But what so sure she was, she worthy was To be the fourth with those three other placed, Yet was she cer'es but a countrey lasse; Yet she all other countrey lasses farre did passe.

So farre as doth the daughter of the day All other lesser lights in light excell; So farre doth she in beautyfull array Above all other lasses beare the bell; Ne less in vertue that beseems her well Doth she exceede the rest of all her race.

The phrase 'country lass' in this rapturous passage has been taken to signify that &

Probably all that is meant is that her family was not connected with the Court or a Court circle. She was not high-born; but she was not low-born. The final sonn refer to some malicious reports circulating about him, and to some local separation between the sonneteer and his mistress. This separation was certainly ended in June following his acceptance—that is, the June of 1594; for in that month, on Barnabas' day, that is, on the 11th, Spenser was married. This event Spenser contracts in the finest, the most perfect of all his poems, in the most beautiful of bridal songs—in his Epithalamium. He had many a time sung for others; he not be the Muses crown their heads with garlands and help him his own love's praise.

So I unto my selfe along will sing, The woods shall to me answer, and my echo ring.

to resound :-

Then, with the sweetest melody and a refinement and grace incomparable, he sil with a most happy heart of various matters of the marriage day—of his love's wak of the marry music of the minstrels, of her coming forth in all the pride of her v

her standing before the altar, her sad eyes still fastened on the ground, of the bringing her home, of the rising of the evening star, and the fair face of the mean looking down on his bliss not unfavourably, as he would hope. The Amoretti an Epithalamium were registered at the Stationers' Hall on the 19th of November

lowing the marriage. They were published in 1595, Spenser—as appears from the

'Dedication' of them to Sir Robert Needham, written by the printer Ponsonbybeing still absent from England.

Meanwhile the poet had been vexed by other troubles besides those of an Mr. Hardiman,* in his Irish Minstrelsy, has published the requited passion. petitions presented in 1593 to the Lord Chancellor of Ireland by Maurice, Lord Rock Viscount Fermoy, two against 'one Edmond Spenser, gentleman,' one against on Joan Ny Callaghan—who is said to act 'by supportation and maintenance of Edmon Spenser, gentleman, a heavy adversary unto your suppliant.' 'Where,' runs the first petition, 'one Edmond Spenser, gentleman, hath lately exhibited suit against year suppliant for three ploughlands, parcels of Shanballymore (your suppliant's inheri ance) before the Vice-president and Council of Munster, which land hath been here

conveyed; and nevertheless for that the said Spenser, being Clerk of the Council i the said province, and did assign his office unto one Nicholas Curteys among other agreements with covenant that during his life he should be free in the said office \$ his causes, by occasion of which immunity he doth multiply suits against your see pliant in the said province upon pretended title of others &c.' The third petities averred that 'Edmond Spenser of Kilcolman, gentleman, hath entered into the ploughlands, parcel of Ballingerath, and disseised your suppliant thereof, and col tinueth by countenance and greatness the possession thereof, and maketh great was of the wood of the said land, and converteth a great deal of corn growing thereaps

tofore decreed for your suppliant against the said Spenser and others under whom h

to his proper use, to the damage of the complainant of two hundred pounds sterling Whereunto,' continues the document, which is preserved in the Original Rolls Office the said Edmond Spenser appearing in person had several days prefixed unto his peremptorily to answer, which he neglected to do.' Therefore 'after a day of gree given,' on the 12th of February, 1594, Lord Roche was decreed the possession Perhaps the absence from his lady love referred to in the concluding sonnets w occasioned by this litigation. Perhaps also the 'false forged lyes'—the malicies reports circulated about him-referred to in Sonnet 85, may have been connects with these appeals against him. It is clear that all his dreams of Faerie did not mal

him neglectful of his earthly estate. Like Shakspere, like Scott, Spenser did cease to be a man of the world—I use the phrase in no unkindly sense—because I was a poet. He was no mere visionary, helpless in the ordinary affairs of life. 1 the present case it would appear that he was even too keen in looking after his ou Professor Craik charitably suggests that his poverty 'rather the interests. rapacity may be supposed to have urged whatever of hardness there was in his per ceedings.' It is credible enough that these proceedings made him highly unpopul · Irish Minetrelay; or, Bardic Remains of Ireland, by J. Hardiman. London, 1831.

with the native inhabitants of the district, and that they were not forgotten when t clay of reckoning came. 'His name,' says Mr. Hardiman, on the authority of Trotte Walks in Ireland,* 'is still remembered in the vicinity of Kilcolman; but the peopentertain no sentiments of respect or affection for his memory.'

In the same year with the Amoretti was published Colin Clouts Come Home Again Several additions having been made to the original version.

Probably at the close of this year 1595 Spenser a second time crossed to Englan accompanied, it may be supposed, by his wife, carrying with him in manuscript t second three books of his Fueric Queene, which, as we have seen, were complet before his marriage, and also a prose work, A Viuw of the Present State of Irelan Mr. Collier quotes the following entry from the Stationers' Register:—

20 die Januarii [1595].—Mr. Ponsonby. Entred &c. The Second Part of the Facric Queene, cont. t 4, 5, and 6 bookes, vjd.

This second instalment—which was to be the last—of his great poem was duly pulished in that year. The View of the Present State of Ireland was not register till April 1598, and then only conditionally. It was not actually printed till 163 During his stay in England he wrote the Hymns to Heavenly Love and Heavenly Beauward the Prothalamium, which were to be his last works.

More than four years had elapsed since Spenser had last visited London. Duris that period certain memorable works had been produced; the intellectual power that day had expressed itself in no mean manner. When he arrived in Londo towards the close of the year 1595, he would find Shakspere splendidly fulfilling the Promise of his earlier days; he would find Ben Jonson just becoming known to familie would find Bacon already drawing to him the eyes of his time. Spenser probable appent the whole of the year 1596, and part of 1597, in England. In 1597 appears as has already been said, the first part of Hooker's Exclesiastical Polity, and Bacon Essays, and also Jonson's Every Man in His Own Humour.

The reigning favourite at this time was the Earl of Essex. In 1596 his successf descent upon Cadiz raised him to the zenith of his fame. With this nobleman Spens was on terms of intimacy. At his London house in the Strand—a house which he previously been inhabited by Spenser's earlier patron, the Earl of Leicester—it stowhere Essex Street now is, and is still represented by the two pillars which stand at the bottom of that street—Spenser no doubt renewed his friendship with Shaksper This intimacy with Essex, with whatever intellectual advantages it may have becattened, with whatever bright spirits it may have brought Spenser acquainted, probably impeded his prospects of preferment. There can be no doubt that one of the motives that brought him to England was a desire to advance his fortunes. Camda describes him as always poor. His distaste for his residence in Ireland could not be have been aggravated by his recent legal defeat. But he looked in vain for further preferment. He had fame, and to spare, and this was to suffice. It was during the sejourn in England that he spoke of himself, as we have seen, as one

[•] The name and occupation of Spenser is handed down traditionally among them (the Irish); by they seem to entertain no sentiments of respect or affection for his memory; the band came in real engracions times, and the keen recollections of this untutored people are wonderful.'—Trotter's W through Ireland in the Fears 1812, 1814, and 1817. London, 1819, p. 802.

Whom sullen care
Through discontent of my long fruitlesse stay
In princes court and expectation vayne
Of idle hopes which still doe fly away
Like empty shadows, did afflict my brayne.

The publication of the second three books of the Faerie Queene, with a impression of the first three books, placed him on the highest pinnacle of fame. plentiful references to passing events-its adumbrations of the history of the tim however it may be damaging the permanent value of the work from an artistic pr of view, increased its immediate popularity. How keenly these references were ap ciated appears from the anxiety of the Scotch King to have the poet prosecuted for picture of Duessa, in whom Mary Queen of Scots was generally recognised. 'Rol Bowes, the English ambassador in Scotland, writing to Lord Burghley from Ed burgh 12th November, 1596, states that great offence was conceived by the E against Edmund Spenser for publishing in print, in the second part of the Fa Queen, ch. 9, some dishonourable effects, as the King deemed, against himself and mother deceased. Mr. Bowes states that he had satisfied the King as to the privil under which the book was published, yet he still desired that Edmund Spenser for fault might be tried and punished. It further appears, from a letter from Geo Nicolson to Sir Robert Cecil, dated Edinburgh, 25 February, 1597-8, that Wa Quin, an Irishman, was answering Spenser's book, whereat the King was offended.

The View of the Present State of Ireland, written dialogue-wise between Enda and Irenzeus, though not printed, as has been said, till 1633, seems to have enjoye considerable circulation in a manuscript form. There are manuscript copies of a tractate at Cambridge, at Dublin, at Lambeth, and in the British Museum. It partly antiquarian, partly descriptive, partly political. It exhibits a profound seems the unsatisfactory state of the country—a sense which was presently to be justified a frightful manner. Spenser had not been deaf to the ever-growing murmurs of a content by which he and his countrymen had been surrounded. He was not in adva of his time in the policy he advocates for the administration of Ireland. He was from anticipating that policy of conciliation whose triumphant application it reperhaps be the signal honour of our own day to achieve. The measures he proportion of a vigorously repressive sort; they are such measures as belong to a milit occupancy, not to a statesmanly administration. He urges the stationing numer garrisons; he is for the abolishing native customs. Such proposals won a not favourable hearing at that time. They have been admired many a time since.

It is to this work of Spenser's that Protector Cromwell alludes in a letter to council in Ireland, in favour of William Spenser, grandson of Edmund Spenser, fi whom an estate of lands in the barony of Fermoy, in the county of Cork, descended him. 'His grandfather,' he writes, 'was that Spenser who, by his writings touch the reduction of the Irish to civility, brought on him the odium of that nation; for those works and his other good services Queen Elizabeth conferred on him estate which the said William Spenser now claims.'† This latter statement

^{*} Cooper's Athen. Cantab.

f See Mr. Edwards's Life of Raleigh, vol. 1. p. 128.

Spenser, as we have seen, had already held his estate for some he brought his View to England.

ates the dedication of his Hymne from Greenwich, September 1, 1596. r hymns, two had been in circulation for some years, though now for the inted; the other two now first appeared. 'Having in the greener times ,' he writes, 'composed these former two hymnes in the praise of love and I finding that the same too much pleased those of like age and disposition. r too vehemently carried with that kind of affection do rather sucke out seir strong passion than honey to their honest delight, I was moved by wo most excellent ladies [the ladies Margaret, Countess of Cumberland. tess of Warwick] to call in the same; but unable so to do, by reason that s thereof were formerly scattered abroad, I resolved at least to amend. of retraction to reforme them, making (instead of those two hymnes of aturall love and beautie) two others of heavenly and celestiall.' steresting for the illustration it furnishes of Spenser's popularity. It is interesting, if the poems themselves be read in the light of it, as showing : purity of the poet's nature. It is difficult to conceive how those 'former ald in any moral respect need amending. The moralising and corrective th which the two latter were written perhaps diminished their poetical : the themes they celebrate are such as Spenser could not but ever descant elight: they were such as were entirely congenial to his spirit. He here tain special teachings of his great master Plato, and abandoned himself spiritual contemplations he loved. But perhaps the finest of these four e second—that in honour of Beauty. Beauty was indeed the one worship life-not mere material beauty-not 'the goodly hew of white and red the cheekes are sprinkled,' or 'the sweete rosy leaves so fairly spred upon 'that golden wyre,' or 'those sparckling stars so bright,' but that inner suty, of which fair hair and bright eyes are but external expressions.

> So every spirit, as it is most pure And hath in it the more of heavenly light, So it the fairer bodie doth procure To habit in, and it more fairely dight With chearfull grace and amiable sight; For of the soule the bodie forme doth take. For soule is forme and doth the bodic make.

s one high refined rapture.

close of the year 1596 Spenser wrote and published the Prothalamium, all verse made in honour of the double marriage of the two honourable s ladies, the lady Elizabeth, and the lady Katherine Somerset, daughters : honourable the Earl of Worcester, and espoused to the two worthie M. Henry Gilford and M. William Peter Esquyers.' It was composed arn of Essex from Spain, for he is introduced in the poem as then rebouse in the Strand. It is a poem full of grace and beauty, and of rlodiousness.

EDMUND SPENSER. the last complete poem Spenser wrote. No doubt he entertained the idea eting his Faerie Queene; and perhaps it was after 1590 that he composed dditional cantos, which are all, so far as is known, that he actually wrote ast poem completed and published in his lifetime was the Prothalamium, cond visit to England at last came to an end. It was probably in 1597 that ed once more to Kilcolman. In the following year he was recommended by ty for Sheriff of Cork. But his residence in Ireland was now to be rulely d. shry had ever since the suppression of Hugh O'Neal's rebellion in 1580, beng for another opportunity to rise. That suppression had not brought per its train. In the autumn of 1598 broke out another of these fearing ons, of which the history of English rule in Ireland is mainly composed. September of that year Spenser was at the zenith of his prosperity. In that rived the letter recommending his appointment to be Sheriff of Cork. itimate to connect this mark of royal favour with the fact that at the begin he preceding month Lord Burghley had deceased. The great obstructor of n's bounty was removed, and Spenser might hope that now, at last, the hour osperity was come. So far as is known, his domestic life was serene and The joys of the husband had been crowned with those of the father, Two may be gathered from the names given to them-they were christened Sylvanu grine-had been by this time born to him; according to Sir William Betham w up a pedigree of Spenser's family, communicated to the Gentleman's for August 1842, by Mr. F. C. Spenser of Halifax, another son and had been born between the birth of Sylvanus and that of Peregrine. The this time the recognised prince of living poets. The early autumn of 1598 in the culminating enjo, ment of all these happinesses. ber the insurgents burst roughly in upon his peace. No doubt his occupation castle of Tyrone had ever been regarded with fierce jealousy. While he lad his dreams and sung his songs in the valley, there had been curses muttered m from the hills around. At last the day of vengeance came. The outraged shed down upon Kilcolman; the poet and his family barely made their escape; was plundered and burned. According to Ben Jonson, in the conversation mmond, quoted above, not all his family escaped; one little child, new born n the flames. This fact is, perhaps, scarcely consistent with the computation n the Records of Ireland by Ulster King at Arms of all Ireland, which has referred to, and may perhaps be but a popular exaggeration of the calamity Spenser, But, indeed, the fearfulness of this event needs no exaggeration. and distress Spenser arrived once more in London. Probably, the hardships rs he had undergone completely prostrated him. On January 16, 1599, he tavern in King Street, Westminster. Ben Jonson says, 'he died for lack of ut this must certainly be an exaggeration. No doubt he returned to England in a state of poverty-as Camden says; but it is impossible to believe that he arvation. His friend Essex and many another were ready to minister to his

if he needed their ministry. Jonson's story is that he 'refused twenty pieces

'Essex, and said he was sure he had no time to spend them.' This ing more than a more vulgar rumour, so far as it shows anything, a no such very extreme need of succour. Had his destitution been id have accepted the pieces for his family, even though 'he had no himself.' It must be remembered that he was still in receipt se crown; a pension of no very considerable amount, perhaps, but to satisfy the pangs of hunger. King Street, Westminster, was me importance and dignity. But numerous passages might be he died in somewhat straitened circumstances.

thirty-four years after Spenser's death, that in his hurried flight maining six books of the Faeris Queens were lost. But it is very books were ever completed.* Perhaps some fragments of them I the flames at Kilcolman—certainly only two cantos have reached at printed in 1611, when the first six books were republished. By of his contemporaries is that his song was broken off in the I in his Britennia's Pasterals (Book ii. s. 1):—

to one he ended his melodious song, An host of angels flew the clouds among And rapt his swan from his attentive mates To make him one of their associates.

rites :-

If, honour'd Colin, thou hadst lived so long As to have finished thy Fairy song, Not only mine but all tongues would confess, Thou hadst exceeded old Mesonides.

ear Chaucer—by his own wish, it is said—in Westminster Abbey, itibus,' with poets following him to the grave—bearing the pall, as Earl of Essex furnishing the funeral expenses, according to seem from a passage in Browne's Britannia's Pastorals 'that the nument to be erected over him, but that the money was otherwise of her agents.' The present monument, restored in 1778, was untess of Dorset, in 1620.

d again before 1603, as we learn from a petition presented to the Ireland in that year, in which Sylvanus sues to recover from her erstone certain documents relating to the paternal estate. Till a re were descendants of Spenser living in the south of Ireland.

ed to complete his work. See book vi. canto v. st. 2 :
'When time shall be to tell the same;'

J. W. HALES.





THE FAERIE QVEENE.

DISPOSED INTO TWELUE BOOKS, FASHIONING

XII. MORALL VERTUES.

TO

THE MOST HIGH, MIGHTIE, AND MAGNIFICENT

EMPRESSE,

RENOWMED FOR PIETIE, VERTVE, AND ALL GRATIOVS GOVERNMENT.

ELIZABETH,

BY THE GRACE OF GOD,

Obeene of England, Frabnce, and Freland, and of Birginia. Defendobr of the Anith, de.

HER MOST HVMBLE SERVAVNT

EDMVND SPENSER.

DOTH, IN ALL EVMILITIE,

DEDICATE, PRESENT, AND CONSECRATE THESE HIS LABOVRS.

TO LIVE WITH THE ETERNITIE OF HER FAME,1

In the first edition of 1590 the Dedication was as follows:—To the most Mightle as Magnificent Empresse Elizabeth, by the Grace of God Qveene of England, France and Ireian Defender of the Faith &c. Her most humble Seruant:

ED. SPENSER.

A LETTER OF THE AUTHORS,

TRING HIS WHOLE INTENTION IN THE COURSE OF THIS WORKE: WHICH, FOR THAT IT GIVETI GREAT LIGHT TO THE READER, FOR THE BETTER UNDERSTANDING IS HEREUNTO ANNEXED.

TO THE RIGHT NOBLE AND VALGROUS

SIR WALTER RALEIGH, KNIGHT,

TO WARDEIN OF THE STANNERYES, AND HER MAIESTIES LIEFETENAUNT OF THE COUNTY OF CORNEWAYLL.

a ring how doubtfully all Allegories may stweet, and this broke of mine, which I estituled the Faery Queene, being a con-😘 🖟 for arroyding of gealous opinions and exercious, as also for your better light in series of being so by you commanded, some rest with you the general intention and say, who how the whole course thereof I have wide theat expressing of any particular governit and therefore of all the booke is to no gentleman or noble person in vertuous a description: Which for that I conceived to be not plausible and pleasing, being the least historicall fiction, the which the pot of the men delight to read, rather for tter then for profite of the ensample, to the excellency of his person, being made " ... survy mens former workes, and also · · · · a the danager of enry, and suspition In which I have followed all - I' weret Agamemnon and Ulysses hath A covel governour and a vertuous man, Ilms, the other in his Odysseis: · loss close like intention was to doe in Free of Acueus; after him Ariosto com-. to heath in his Orlando, and lately ··· / weered them agains, and formed both • to persons, namely that part which . 150 saying call Ethice, or vertues of a . . . Soured in his Rinaldo; the other * ! I - to e in his Godfredo. By ensample these Poets, I labor to pourtaint to be priced in the twelve private to the state of a state of the state of

which is the purpose of these first tire we bookes: which if I finde to be well accepted, I may be perhaps encoraged to frame the other part of polliticke vertues in his person, after that hee came to be king.

To some, I know, this Methode will seeme displeasaunt, which had rather have good discipline delivered plainly in way of precepts, or sermoned at large, as they use, then thus clowdily enwrapped in Allegoricall devises, But such, me seeme, should be satisfide with the use of these dayes, seeing all things accounted by their shower, and nothing estremed of, that is not delightfull and pleasing to commune sence. For this cause is Xenophon preferred before Plato, for that the one, in the exquisite depth of his judgement, formed a Commune welth, such as it should be; but the other in the person of Cyrus, and the Persians, fashioned a government, such as might best he: So much more profitable and gratious is doctrine by ensample, then by rule. So have I laboured to doe in the person of Arthure: whome I conceive, after his long education by Timon, to whom he was by Merlin delivered to be brought up, so some as he was borne of the Lady Igrayne to have seene in a dream or vision the Faery Queen, with whose excellent beauty ravished, he awaking resolved to seeke her out; and so being by Merlin armed, and by Timon throughly instructed, he went to sceke her forth in Facrye land. In that Facry Queene I meane glory in my generall intention. but in my particular I conceive the most excellent and glorious person of our soveraine the Queene, And yet, in and her kingdome in Facry land. some places els. I doe otherwise shadow her. For considering she beareth two persons, the one of a most royall Queene or Empresse, the other of a most rertuous and beautifull Lady, this latter B Z

part in some places I doe expresse in Belphabe, fashioning her name according to your owne excellent conceipt of Cynthia, (Phaebe and Cynthia being both names of Diana.) So in the person of Prince Arthure I sette forth-magnificence in particular; which vertue, for that (according to Aristotle and the rest) it is the perfection of all the rest, and conteineth in it them all, therefore in the whole course I mention the deedes of Arthure applyable to that vertue, which I write of in that booke. But of the xii, other vertues, I make xii, other knights the patrones, for the more variety of the history: Of which these three bookes contain three.

more variety of the knight of the Redcrosse, in whome I expresse Holynes: The seconde of Sir Guyon, in whome I sette forth Temperaunce: The third of Britamartis, a Lady Knight, in whome I picture Chastity. But, because the beginning of the whole worke seemeth abrupte, and as depending upon other antecedents, it needs that ye know the occasion of these three knights severall adventures. For the Methode of a Poet

historical is not such, as of an Historiographer.
For an Historiographer discourseth of affayres orderly as they were donne, accounting as well the times as the actions; but a Poet thrusteth into the middest, even where it most concerneth him, and there recoursing to the thinges forepaste,

and divining of thinges to come, maketh a pleasing Analysis of all.

ing Analysis of all.

The beginning therefore of my history, if it were to be told by an Historiographer should be the twelfth booke, which is the last; where I devise that the Faery Queene kept her Annuall feaste xii. dayes; uppon which xii. severall dayes, the occasions of the xii. severall adventures hapned, which, being undertaken by xii. severall knights, are in these xii. books severally hundled and discoursed. The first was this. In the beginning of the feast, there presented him selfe a tall clownishe younge man, who falling before the Queene of Faries desired a boone (as the manner then was) which during that feast she might not refuse; which was that hee might have the atchievement of any adventure, which during that feaste should happen; that being graunted, he rested him on the floore, unfitte through his rusticity for a better place. Some after entred a faire Ladge in mourning weedes, riding on a write Asse, with a dwarfe behind her leading a warlike steed, that bove the Armes of a knight, and his speare in the dwarfes hand. Shee, falling before the Queene of Faeries, complayed that her father and mother, an ancient King and Queene, had bene by an huge dragon many years should by me a brasen Castle, who thence suffred feen not to yesses; and therefore besought the

Facry Queene to assigne her som knights to take on him that exployed that clownish person, upstarting, adventure: whereat the Queene muc and the Lady much gainesaying, yet importuned his desire. In the end thim, that unlesse that armony which would serve him (that is, the armond that mean specified by Saint Paul that he could not succeed in that enterbeing forthwith put upon him, with tures thereunto, he seemed the good at that company, and was well liked And estessones taking on him kni mounting on that straunge Courser, with her on that adventure: where I first booke, viz.

A gentle knight was pricking on the p

The second day ther came in a Ping an Infant with bloody hands, wi he complained to have bene slayn by a cresse called Acrasia; and therfo the Faery Queene, to appoint him to performe that adventure; which be to Sir Guyon, he presently went for same Palmer: which is the begin second booke, and the whole subject i third day there came in a Groom plained before the Facry Queene Enchaunter, called Busirane, had most faire Lady, called Amoretta, in most grievous torment, because sl yield him the pleasure of her body. Sir Scudamour, the lover of that sently tooke on him that adventure. vnable to performe it by reason of t chauntments, after long sorrow, in with Britomartis, who succoured hi hewed his lone

But by occasion hereof many other are intermedled; but rather as As intendments: As the love of Britom throw of Marinell, the misery of I vertuousnes of Belphabe, the lase Hellenora, and many the like.

Thus much, Sir, I have briefly

Thus much, Sir, I have briefly direct your understanding to the well History; that from thence guther intention of the conceit, ye may as it gripe at the discourse, which otherwiply seems tedious and confused, craving the continuance of your hono towards me, and th' eternall estate your happines, I humbly take leave.

Yours most humbly affect

ERSES ADDRESSED TO THE AUTHOR.

upon this conceipt of the Faery Thy levely Resolinde seems now forlorne, Queene.

I mw the grave where Laura lay, Temple where the vestall flame burne; and passing by that way uried dust of living fame. ! faire love, and fairer vertue kept. I mw the Facry Queene: woch the soule of Petrarke wept, receforth those graces were not seene; Queene attended, in whose steed him downe on Lauras herse. ardest stones were seene to bleed. f turied ghostes the hevens did perse : ners spright did tremble all for griefe, th' accesse of that celestiall theife.

Another of the same.

fsings. 'orused right true vertues face herein, elfe can best discerne to whom they a bein [divine beauty prayed, let her sole lookes

ant ought, or Temperaunce her dew,

the shall perceive, how far her vertues [of yore: wh of all that live, or such as wrote mil excuse and favour thy good will;

can not be exprest, but by an Angels ses are lov'd, nor letters are of price, s speak our English tongue, but those

W. R.

the learned Shepeheard.

letice

by thy new taken taske. I fury hath enricht thy braynes, by muse in haughty verse to maske, rely Larke that mounting singer.

And all thy gentle flockes forgotten quight: Thy chaunged hart now holdes thy pypes in scorne, Those prety pypes that did thy mates delight; Those trusty mates, that loved thee so well; Whom thou gav'st mirth, as they gave thee the bell.

Yet, as thou earst with thy sweete roundelayes Didst stirre to glee our laddes in homely bowers; So moughtst thou now in these refyned layes Delight the daintie cares of higher powers: And so mought they, in their deepe skanning skill, Alow and grace our Collyns flowing quyll.

And faire befall that Faery Queene of thine, In whose faire eyes love linckt with vertue sittes; Enfusing, by those bewties fyers devyne, Such high conceites into thy humble wittes. As raised hath poore pastors oaten reedes f meaner wits this worke like profit From rustick tunes, to chaunt heroique deedes.

nckoes song delight when Philumena. So mought thy Redcrosse knight with happy hand Victorious be in that faire Ilands right, Which thou dost vayle in Type of Faery land. Elizas blessed field, that Albion hight: That shieldes her friendes, and warres her mightie ht therein be amis, and mend it by Yet still with people, peace, and plentie flowes.

But (jolly shepheard) though with pleasing style Tincely mind aright, and write thy Let not conceipt thy setled sence beguile, Thou feast the humour of the Courtly trayne, Ne daunted be through envy or disdaine. Subject thy dome to her Empyring spright, From whence thy Muse, and all the world, takes HOBYNOLL.

> Fayre Thamis streame, that from Ludds stately towne Runst paying tribute to the Ocean seas, Let all thy Nymphes and Syrens of renowne Be silent, whyle this Bryttane Orpheus playes. Nere thy sweet bunkes there lives that sacred crowne,

Whose hand strowes Palme and never-dying bayes: Let all at once, with thy soft murmuring sowne, Present her with this worthy Poets prayes; he layes that longs to lowly swaynes; For he bath taught hye drifts in shepcherdes weedes, notes from Shepheardes unto kinges: And deepe conceites now singes in Fueries desdes.

R.B.

H. B.

Grave Muses, march in triumph and with prayer Our Gothese here hath given you have to hand: And biddes this rare dispenser of your graves. Bow downe his brow unto her sacred hand. Deserte fludes dew in that most princely doome, In whose sweete brest are all the Muses tredde: So did that great Augustus crit in Roome. With leaves of fame adorne his Poets hedde. Faire le the greenon of your Farry Que to.

Even of the fairest that the world hath secue!

When stout Achilles heard of Helens rape, And what revenge the States of Greece devisd, Thinking by sleight the fatall warres to scape. In womans weedes him selfe he then disguisde; But this devise Ulysses soone did spy. And brought him forth the channes of warre to try.

When Spencer saw the fame was spread so large. Through Faery land, of their renowned Queene, Loth that his Muse should take so great a charge, As in such haughty matter to be seene, To seeme a stepsheard then he made his choice; But Sydney heard him sing, and knew his voice.

And as Ulysses brought faire Thetis sonne From his retyred life to menage armes, So Spencer was by Sidney's speaches wonne To blaze her fame, not fearing future harmes; For well he knew, his Muse would soone be tyred In her high praise, that all the world admired.

Yet as Achilles, in those warlike frayes, Did win the palme from all the Grecian Peeres, So Spenser now, to his immortall prayse, Hath wome the Laurell quite from all his feres.

Grave Muses, march in triumph and with project: What though his taske exceed a humaine witt, Our Goddesee here hath given you leave to land: He is excus'd, sith Sidney thought it fitt.

To looke upon a worke of rare devise
The which a workman setteth out to view,
And not to yield it the deserved prise
That unto such a workmanship is dew,
Doth either prove the judgement to be naugh
Or els doth shew a mind with envy fraught.

To labour to commend a peece of worke, Which no man goes about to discommend. Would raise a jealous doubt, that there did lark some secret doubt whereto the prayse did tend; For when men know the goodnes of the wyne, 'Tis needlesse for the hoast to have a syme.

Thus then, to shew my judgement to be such As can discerne of colours blacke and white, As alls to free my minde from envies tuch, That never gives to any man his right,

I here pronounce this workmanship is such As that no pen can set it forth too much.

And thus I hang a garland at the dore;
Not for to shew the goodness of the ware;
But such hath been the custome heretofore,
And customes very hardly broken are;
And when your tast shall tell you this is tree
Then looke you give your hoast his utmost do
I axon

VERSES

BED, BY THE AUTHOR OF THE FARRIE QUEENE, TO VARIOUS NOBLEMEN, &C.

Right honourable Sir Christopher To the Right Honourable the Earle of Oxen-Lord high Chauncelor of England,

ford, Lord high Chamberlayne of England, &c.

on the pillours of th' earth did sustaine, ught ambitious Rome to tyrannise the peck of all the world to rayne those grave affaires were wont abtine. the sweet Lady Muses for to play: nius the elder Africane, ro oft did Cæsars cares allay. great Lord, that with your counsell ardeine of this kingdom mightily, ike delightes sometimes may eke delay agged brow of carefull Policy; hese ydle rymes lend litle space, a their titles sake may find more grace.

wel honourable and excellent Lord the of Essex. Great Maister of the to her Highnesse, and knight of one order of the Garter, &c. cke Lord, whose vertues excellent, perit a most famous Poets witt base Poeme, for thee far unfitt: ht is thy worth disparaged thereby; rien my Muse, whose fethers, nothing Bt. ret but flagg, and lowly learne to fly, tider wing shall dare alofte to sty *last praises of this Faery Queene; shall it make more famous memory me Heroicke parts, such as they beene: E. voucheafe thy noble countenaunce * int labours needed furtheraunce.

wiest heads, that with theire counsels Receive, most Noble Lord, in gentle gree, The unripe fruit of an unready wit; Which by thy countenaunce doth crave to hee

Defended from foule Envies poisnous bit.

Which so to doe may thee right well best, Sith th' antique glory of thine auncestry Under a shady vele is therein writ, And eke thine owne long living memory, [sway Succeeding them in true nobility: And also for the love which thou doest beare To th' Heliconian ymps, and they to thee; They unto thee, and thou to them, most deare :

Deare as thou art unto thy selfe, so love That loves and honours thee, as doth behove.

To the right honourable the Earle of Northumberland.

The sacred Muses have made alwaies clame To be the Nourses of nobility, And Registres of everlasting fame, thy living praises instrument, the not steigne to let thy name be writt. Then, by like right the noble Progeny, the Poeme, for thee far unfitt:

Which them succeed in fame and worth, are tvde T' embrace the service of sweete Poetry, By whose endevours they are glorifide; And eke from all, of whom it is envide, To patronize the authour of their praise,

> have dide, And crownes their ashes with immortall baies. To thee, therefore, right noble Lord, I wend This present of my paines, it to defend.

Which gives them life, that els would soone

To the right Honourable the Eurle of Ormand and Ossary.

Receive, most noble Lord, a simple taste Of the wilde fruit which salvage soyl hath bred:

Which, being through long wars left almost With brutish barbarisme is overspredd:

And, in so faire a land as may be redd, Not one Parnassus nor one Helicone, Left for sweete Mases to be harboured,

But where thy selfe hast thy brave mansione :

There, in deede, dwel faire Graces many one, And gentle Nymphes, delights of learned And in thy person, without paragone, [wits;

All goodly bountie and true honour sits. Such, therefore, as that wasted soyl doth yield, Receive, dear Lord, in worth, the fruit of barren field.

To the right honourable the Lord Ch. Howard the noble order of the Garter, and one of Let thy faire Cinthias praises be thus rud her Majesties privis Counsel, &c. her Majesties privie Counsel, &c.

And ye, brave Lord, whose goodly personage And noble deeds, each other garnishing, Take you ensample to the present age Of th' old Heroes, whose famous ofspring

The antique Poets wont so much to sing: In this same Pageaunt have a worthy place, Sith those huge castles of Castilian King, That vainly threatned kingdomes to displace,

Like flying doves ye did before you chace; And that proud people, woxen insolent Through many victories, didst first deface:

Thy praises everlasting monument Is in this verse engraven semblably,

That it may live to all posterity. To the most renowmed and valiant Lord, the

Lord Grey of Wilton, knight of the Noble order of the Garter, &c.

Most Noble Lord, the pillor of my life, And Patrone of my Muses pupillage; Through whose large bountie, poured on me In the first season of my feeble age,

I now doe live, bound yours by vassalage; Sith nothing ever may redeeme, nor reave Out of your endlesse debt, so sure a gage, Vouchsafe in worth this small guift to re-

Which in your noble hands for pledge I leave Of all the rest that I am tyde t' account: Rude rymes, the which a rustick Muse did Weave

In savadge soyle, far from Parnasso Mount,

And roughly wrought in an unlearned Loo The which vouchsafe, dear Lord, your favors dooms.

To the right noble and valorous knie Sir Walter Raleigh, Lord Wardein of Stanneryes, and lieftenaunt of Cornew

To thee, that art the sommers Nightingsle Thy soveraine Goddesses most deare delig Why doe I send this rusticke Madrigale That may thy tunefull care unseason qui Thou onely fit this Argument to write,

In whose high thoughts Pleasure hath be her bowre,

And dainty love learnd sweetly to endite My rimes I know unsavory and sowre,

To tast the streames that, like a golden show Flow from thy fruitfull head, of thy lov praise;

Fitter, perhaps, to thonder Martiall stow When so thee list thy lofty Muse to raise:

To the right honourable the Lord Burley Lord high Threasurer of England.

To you, right noble Lord, whose carefull br To menage of most grave affaires is bent And on whose mightie shoulders most d rest

The burdein of this kingdomes governeme As the wide compasse of the firmament On Atlas mighty shoulders is upstayd, Unfitly I these ydle rimes present, The labor of lost time, and wit unstayd:

Yet if their deeper sence be inly wayd,

And the dim vele, with which from co mune vew Their fairer parts are hid, aside be layd,

Perhaps not vaine they may appeare to y Such as they be, vouchsafe them to receav And wipe their faults out of your censure gra E. 5

To the right honourable the Earle of Cu berland.

Redoubted Lord, in whose corageous mind The flowre of chevalry, now bloosming fa Doth promise fruite worthy the noble kil Which of their praises have left you haire;

To you this humble present I prepare, For love of vertue and of Martiall praise To which though nobly ye inclined are, As goodlie well ye shew'd in late assaies et brave ensample of long passed daies In which trew honor yee may fashioned see To like desire of honor may ye raise, And till your mind with magnanimitee.

eceive it, Lord, therefore, as it was ment, or honor of your name and high descent

To the right honourable the Lord of Hunsdon, high Chamberlaine to her Majesty.

enowmed Lord, that, for your worthinesse
And noble deeds, have your deserved place
High in the favour of that Emperesse, The worlds sole glory and her sexes grace: lere eke of right have you a worthie place... Both for your nearnes to that Faerie Queene

And for your owne high merit in like cace : Of which, apparaunt proofe was to be seene, Then that tumultuous rage and fearfull deene Of Northerne rebels ye did pacify, And their disloiall powre defaced clene,

The record of enduring memory. ive, Lord, for ever in this lasting verse. That all posteritie thy honor may reherse

To the right honourable the Lord of Buckhurst, one of her Majestics privic Counsell. n vain I thinke, right honourable Lord,

By this rude rime to memorize thy name, Whose learned Muse hath writ her owne record In golden verse, worthy immortal fame:

Thou much more fit (were leasure to the same)

Thy gracious Soverains praises to compile, And her imperiall Majestie to frame In loftie numbers and heroicke stile. But, sith thou maist not so, give leave a while To baser wit his power therein to spend, Whose grosse defaults thy daintie pen may

And unadvised oversights amend. [file, But evermore vouchsafe it to maintaine Against vile Zoilus backbitings vaine.

Zo the right honourable Sir Fr. Walsingham. knight, principall Secretary to her Ma-jrsty, and one of her honourable privy Counsell.

That Mantuane Poetes incompared spirit, Whose girland now is set in highest place, Had not Mecenas, for his worthy merit, It first advanast to great Augustus grace, Light long perhaps have lien in silence bace

Ne bene so much admir'd of later age. [trace, This lowly Muse, that learns like steps to Flies for like aide unto your Patronage,

That are the great Mecenas of this age, As wel to al that civil artes profess As those that are inspir'd with Martial rage And craves protection of her feeblenesse:

Which if ye yield, perhaps ye may her rayse In bigger tunes to sound your living prayse.

To the right noble Lord and most valiaun Captaine, Sir John Norris, knight, Lore president of Mounster. Who ever gave more honourable prize

To the sweet Muse then did the Martiall crew That their brave deeds she might immortaliz In her shril tromp, and sound their praise dew?

Who then ought more to favour her then you Moste noble Lord, the honor of this age, And Precedent of all that armes ensue? Whose warlike provesse and manly courage,

Tempred with reason and advizement sage, Hath fild sad Belgicke with victorious spoile In Fraunce and Ireland left a famous gage And lately shakt the Lusitanian soile. [fame E. S. Sith, then, each where thou hast dispredd th Love him that hath eternized your name.

> To the right honourable and most vertuou Lady the Countesse of Penbroke.

Remembraunce of that most Heroicke spirit, The hevens pride, the glory of our dales, Which now triumpheth, through immortal merit

Of his brave vertues, crownd with lastin Of hevenlie blis and everlasting praies; [baie Who first my Muse did lift out of the flore To sing his sweet delights in lowlie laies;

Bids me, most noble Lady, to adore His goodly image, living evermore In the divine resemblaunce of your face; Which with your vertues ye embellish more And native beauty deck with hevenli

grace:
For his, and for your owne especial sake,
Vouchsafe from him this token in good wort to take.

To the most vertuous and beautifull Ludy the Lady Carew.

Ne may I, without blot of endlesse blame. You, fairest Lady, leave out of this place; But with remembraunce of your gracion nume, [KL Wherewith that courtly garlond most



VERSES ADDRESSED BY THE AUTHOR.

And deck the world, adorne these verses base. Not that these few lines can in them comprise

10

Those glorious ornaments of hevenly grace,

Wherewith ye triumph over feeble eyes, And in subdued harts do tyranyse; For thereunto doth need a golden quill, And silver leaves, them rightly to devise; But to make humble present of good will:

Which, whenas timely meanes it purchase may, Which, whenas timery meanes it parameters in ampler wise it selfe will forth display

E. S.

The Chian Peincter, when he was requirde To pourtraict Venus in her perfect hew,

To make his worke more absolute, desird Of all the fairest Maides to have the vew Much more me needs, to draw the semble trew

Of beauties Queene, the worlds sole wond

ment, To sharpe my sence with sundry beauties ve And steale from each some part of orname

If all the world to seeke I overwent,
A fairer crew yet no where could I see Then that brave court doth to mine present, [to b

That the worlds pride seemes gathered the To all the gratious and beautifull Ladies in Of each a part I stole by cunning thefte:
the Court. Forgive it me, faire Dames, sith lesse ye ha not lefte.

THE FIRST BOOK

THE FAERIE QUEENE

NG THE LEGEND OF THE KNIGHT OF THE RED CROSSE, OR OF HOLINESSE.

: man whose Muse whylome did, And thou, most dreaded impe of highest forst. a farre unfitter taske, ts sterne to chaunge mine Oaten Knights and Ladies gentle deeds; And with thy mother mylde come to mine

-- having slept in silence long, -- and faithful loves shall moralize After his murdrous spoyles and bloudie rage - 715.

n. O holy virgin! chiefe of nyne, r Novice to performe thy will; u: of thine everlasting scryne rolles, which there lye hidden still, krights, and fayrest Tanaquill, irough the world, and suffered so h ili. .-: rue his undeserved wrong:

b u my weake wit, and sharpen my , tong

Jove, taught, in lowly Shephards weeds, Faire Venus sonne, that with thy cruell dart At that good knight so cunningly didst rove, That glorious fire it kindled in his hart; Lav now thy deadly Heben bowe apart,

[Mart, ayde; mane, the sacred Muse areeds Come, both; and with you bring triumphant in loves and gentle jollities arraid. [allayd.

And with them eke, O Goddesse heavenly Mirrour of grace and Majestic divine, [bright! Great Ladie of the greatest Isle, whose light Like Phœbus lampe throughout the world doth shine,

Shed thy faire beames into my feeble cyne, m st noble Briton Prince so long And raise my thoughtes, too humble and too vile,

To thinke of that true glorious type of thine, The argument of mine afflicted stile: The which to heare vouchsafe, O dearest dread, a-while!

CANTO I.

The Patrone of true Holinesse Foule Errour doth defeate: Hypocrisie, him to entrappe, Doth to his home entreate.

me. MICE 👊 markes of many' a bloody fielde;

TIE Knight was pricking on the Yet armes till that time did he never wield. His angry steede did chide his foming bitt, a mightie armes and silver shielde,

As much disdayning to the curbe to yield:

41 dints of deepe woundes did re- Full jolly knight he seemd, and faire did sitt, As one for knightly giusts and fierce encounters fitt.

And on his brest a bloodie Crosse he bore, The deare remembrance of his dying Lord, For whose sweete sake that glorious badge he

And dead, as living, ever him ador'd: wore, Upon his shield the like was also scor'd, For soveraine hope which in his helpe he had.

Right faithfull true he was in deede and word, But of his cheere did seeme too solemne sad;

Upon a great adventure he was bond. That greatest Gloriana to him gave. (That greatest Glorious Queene of Faery lond) Joying to heare the birdes sweete harmony, To winne him worshippe, and her grace to have. Which, therein shrouded from the tempest dre Which of all earthly thinges he most did crave: And ever as he rode his hart did earne To prove his puissance in battell brave Upon his foe, and his new force to learne, Upon his foe, a Dragon horrible and steame.

A lovely Ladie rode him faire beside, Upon a lowly Asse more white then snow Yet she much whiter; but the same did hide Under a vele, that wimpled was full low; And over all a blacke stole shee did throw: As one that inly mournd, so was she sad, And heavie sate upon her palfrey slow; Seemed in heart some hidden care she had, And by her, in a line, a milkewhite lambe she lad.

So pure and innocent, as that same lambe, She was in life and every vertuous lore; And by descent from Royall lynage came Of ancient Kinges and Queenes, that had of Untill the blustring storme is overblowne; yore

Their scepters stretcht from East to Westerne shore,

And all the world in their subjection held: Till that infernall feend with fouls uprore Forwasted all their land, and them expeld; Whom to avenge she had this Knight from far compeld.

Behind her farre away a Dwarfe did lag,

That lasie seemd, in being ever last, Or wearied with bearing of her bag
Of needments at his backe. Thus as they past, The day with cloudes was suddeine overcast, And angry Jove an hideous storme of raine Did poure into his Lemans lap so fast, That everie wight to shrowd it did constrain;

were fain.

Enforst to seeke some covert nigh at hand, A shadie grove not farr away they spide, That promist ayde the tempest to withstan Whose loftie trees, yelad with sommers prid Did spred so broad, that heavens light did hid Not perceable with power of any starr :

And all within were pathes and alleies wid With footing worne, and leading inward for Yet nothing did he dread, but ever was ydrad. Faire harbour that them seems, so in the entred ar.

And foorth they passe, with pleasure forwa led.

Seemd in their song to scorne the cruell sky Much can they praise the trees so straight a hy,

The sayling Pine; the Cedar proud and tal The vine-propp Elme; the Poplar never of The builder Oake, sole king of forrests all; The Aspine good for staves; the Cypra funerall;

The Laurell, meed of mightie Conquerous And l'oets sage; the Firre that weepeth sti The Willow, worne of forlorne Paramous: The Eugh, obedient to the benders will; The Birch for shaftes; the Sallow for the mi The Mirrhe sweete-bleeding in the bitter word The warlike Beech; the Ash for nothing ill; The fruitfull Olive; and the Platane round The carver Holme; the Maple seeldom inwa

sound.

Led with delight, they thus beguile the wat When, weening to returne whence they [abowi stray,

They cannot finde that path, which first we But wander too and fro in waies unknowns, Furthest from end then, when they nee weene, [OWE That makes them doubt their wits be not the

So many pathes, so many turnings seems, That which of them to take in diverse dos they been.

At last resolving forward still to fare. Till that some end they finde, or in or out, That path they take that beaten seemd me And like to lead the labyrinth about: [be Which when by tract they hunted had through out. And this faire couple cke to shroud themselves At length it brought them to a hollowe ca Amid the thickest woods. The Champion ste from his courser brave. vhile his needlesse spere

then that Ladie milde,

r an hidden shade: light through darknesse

the perill of this place

creedy hardiment,

istring armor made , much like a shade ; ugly monster plaine, orribly displaide, womans shape retaine foule, and full of vile

the durtie ground, er den all overspred, nany toughtes upwound.

sting. Of her there bred which she dayly fed. -nous dugs; each one . all ill-favored:

ept, and suddain all were

ut of her den effraide, ding her hideous taile d; whose folds displaid th at length without en-

seeing one in mayle. s the deadly bale.

Ay wont in desert darknes to remaine, Where plain none might her see, nor she see

any plaine.

Which when the valiant Elfe perceiv'd, he lept lefe ye too rash provoke: As Lyon fierce upon the flying pray, ice unknowne and wilde, And with his trenchand blade her boldly kept w: therefore your stroke, And turning her angle sting, him to dismay;

Threating backe, and forced her to stay:

Therewith enrag'd she loudly gan to bray,

w: therefore your stroke, And turning fierce her speckled taile advanust,
till further tryall made. Threatning her angrie sting, him to dismay;

'shame were to revoke Who, nought aghast, his mightie hand en haunst: [der glaunst. The stroke down from her head unto her shoul-

XVIII

Much daunted with that dint her sence was though nowe too late Yet kindling rage her selfe she gathered round, dazd;

whilest foot is in the gate,
With doubled forces high above the ground:
With doubled forces high above the ground: Tho, wrapping up her wrethed sterne around

Good and man does hate:

Lept fierce upon his shield, and her huge traine

e. Fly, fly! (quoth then All suddenly about his body wound,

this is no place for living Good helpe the man so wrapt in Errours endlesse traine!

could not for ought be His Lady, sad to see his sore constraint, som hole he went, staide: Cride out, Now, now, Sir knight, shew what ve bee;

Add faith unto your force, and be not faint; Strangle her, els she sure will strangle thee. That when he heard, in great perplexitie, His gall did grate for griefe and high disdaine; And, knitting all his force, got one hand free, Wherewith he grypt her gorge with so great

| constraine. paine. That soone to loose her wicked bands did her i

Therewith she spewd out of her filthie maw A floud of poyson horrible and blacke, Full of great lumps of flesh and gobbets raw, Which stunck so vildly, that it forst him slacke [backe. i light upon them shone. His grasping hold, and from her turne him

Her vomit full of bookes and papers was, With loathly frogs and toades, which eyes did lacke, And creeping sought way in the weedy gras:

Her filthic parbreake all the place defiled has.

As when old father Nilus gins to swell With timely pride above the Aegyptian vale,

it backe to turne againe; His fattie waves doe fertile slime outwell, And overflow each plaine and lowly dale:

But, when his later spring gins to avale. Huge heapes of mudd he leaves, wherin there breed

Ten thousand kindes of creatures, partly male And partly femall, of his fruitful seed; Such ugly monstrous shapes elswher may no Their bellies swolne he saw with fulnesse be man reed.

The same so sore annoved has the knight. That, welnigh choked with the deadly stinke, His forces faile, ne can no lenger fight : Whose corage when the feend perceivel to shrinke.

She poured forth out of her hellish sinke Her fruitfull cursed spawne of serpents small. Deformed monsters, fowls, and blacke as inke-Which swarming all about his legs did crall. And him encombred sore, but could not hurt at all.

XXIII

As gentle shepheard in sweete eventide, When ruddy Phebus gins to welke in west, High on an hill, his flocke to vewen wide, Markes which doe byte their hasty supper best;

A cloud of cumbrous gnattes doe him molest, All striving to infixe their feeble stinges, That from their novance he no where can rest: But with his clownish hands their tender wings He brusheth oft, and oft doth mar their murmurings.

XXIV

Thus ill bestedd, and fearefull more of shame Then of the certeine perill he stood in, Halfe furious unto his foe he came, Resolvd in minde all suddenly to win, Or soone to lose, before he once would lin; And stroke at her with more then manly force, That from her body, full of filthic sin, He raft her hatefull heade without remorse: A streame of cole-black blood forth gushed from her cor-e.

XXY

Her scattered brood, soone as their Parent

They saw so rudely falling to the ground, Groning full deadly, all with troublous fear Gathred themselves about her body round, Weening their wonted entrance to have found At her wide mouth; but being there withstood, Silly old man, that lives in hidden cell, They flocked all about her bleeding wound, And sucked up their dying mothers bloud. Making her death their life, and eke her hurt With holy father sits not with such thing their good.

XXVI

That detestable sight him much amazde. To see th' unkindly Impes, of heaven accu Devoure their dam; on whom while so he go Having all satisfide their bloudy thurst, And bowels gushing forth : well worthy & ()f such as drunke her life the which them me Now needeth him no lenger labour spend His free have slaine themselves, with whos should contend.

XXVII

His Lady, seeing all that chaust from fu Approcht in hast to greet his victorie; [#4 And saide. Faire knight, borne under ba Who see your vanquisht foes before you! Well worthie be you of that Armory, Wherein ye have great glory wonne this And proov'd your strength on a strong eni Your first adventure : many such I pray, And henceforth ever wish that like succe may!

XXVIII

Then mounted he upon his Steede again And with the Lady backward sought to That path he kept which beaten was Ne ever would to any byway bend, But still did follow one unto the end.

The which at last out of the wood them been So forward on his way (with God to free He passed forth, and new adventure some Long way he traveiled before he heat ought.

XXIX

At length they chauust to meet upon the An aged Sire, in long blacke weedes yels His feete all bare, his beard all hoarie go And by his belt his booke he hanging be Sober he seemde, and very sagely sad, And to the ground his eyes were lowly b Simple in shew, and voide of malice bad: And all the way he prayed as he went, And often knockt his brest, as one thi repent.

XXX

He faire the knight saluted, louting low Who faire him quited, as that courteous And after asked him, if he did know Of straunge adventures, which abroad die 'Ah! my dear sonne,' (quoth he) ' how sh alas!

Bidding his beades all day for his trespa Tydings of warre and worldly trouble te mell.

of daunger, which hereby doth dwell, nebreid evil ye desire to heare, unge man I can you tidings tell, arth all this countrie, farre and neare.' (saide he.) I chiefly doe inquere, Il thee well rewarde to shew the place, h that wicked wight his dayes doth

I knighthood it is foule disgrace, ch a cursed creature lives so long a

XXXII

me' (quoth he) in wastfull wilderling is, by which no living wight r passe, but thorough great distresse." saide the Ladie,) dra veth toward zbt. i I wote, that of your later fight rwearied be: for what so strong, ting re-t, will also want of might? ne, that measures heaven all day long.

XXXIII

t new day new worke at once begin: ied night, they say, gives counsell ret. -! sir knight, ye have advised bin,' hen that aged man: 'the way to win y : 2 ivise; now day is spent: e with me ye may take up your In · ane night." vatent : [went. . "at godly father to his home they

XXXIV

chalv Hermitage it was, iz a fale, hard by a forests side, resert of people that did pas >> 4.1 holy chappell edifyde, : 5 the Hermite dewly wont to say sythates each morne and eventyde: ty a christall streame did gently play. I tom a sacred fountaine welled forth LTAY.

whithere, the little house they fill, mind the best contentment has.

XXXV

With faire discourse the evening so they pas; For that olde man of pleasing wordes had store, And well could file his tongue as smooth as glas: He told of Saintes and Popes, and evermore

He strowd an Ave-Mary after and before.

XXXVI

The drouping night thus creepeth on them fast And the sad humor loading their eyeliddes, As messenger of Morpheus, on them cast Sweet slombring deaw, the which to sleep them biddes.

Unto their lodgings then his guestes he riddes: Where when all drownd in deadly sleepe he tindes.

He to his studie goes; and there amiddes His magick bookes, and artes of sundrie kindes, He seekes out mighty charmes to trouble sleepy minds.

XXXVII

Then choosing out few words most horrible, doth baite his steedes the Ocean (Let none them read) thereof did verses frame; with which, and other spelles like terrible, He bad awake blacke Plutoes griesly Dame; And cursed heven; and spake reprochful shame with the Sunne take, Sir, your timely Of highest God, the Lord of life and light: A bold bad man, that dar'd to call by name Great Gorgon, prince of darknes and dead night: [flight, 'At which Cocytus quakes, and Styx is put to

XXXVIII

And forth he cald out of deepe darknes dredd Legions of Sprights, the which, like litle flyes The knight was well Fluttring about his ever-damned hedd, Awaite whereto their service he applyed To aide his friendes, or fray his enimies. Of those he chose out two, the falsest twoo, And fittest for to forge true-seeming lyes: The one of them he gave a message too, [doo. The other by him selfe staide, other worke to

XXXXX

He, making speedy way through spersed ayre. And through the world of waters wide and deepe.

To Morpheus house doth hastily repaire. Amid the bowels of the earth full steepe, And low, where dawning day doth never peepe, His dwelling is; there Tethys his wet bed Doth ever wash, and Cynthia still doth steepe the for entertainement where none was: In silver deaw his ever-drouping hed, "bir feast, and all thinges at their will: Whiles and Night over him her mantle black doth spred.

Whose double gates he findeth locked fast, The one faire fram'd of burnisht Yvory, The other all with silver overcast; And wakeful dogges before them farre doe lye,

Watching to banish Care their enimy, Who oft is wont to trouble gentle Sleepe, By them the Sprite doth passe in quietly.

keepe.

And more to lulle him in his slumber soft. A trickling streame from high rock tumbling downe

And ever-drizling raine upon the loft, [sowne Mixt with a murmuring winde, much like the of swarming Bees, did cast him in a swowne. No other novse, nor peoples troublous cryes, As still are wont t'annoy the walled towne, Might there be heard; but carelesse Quiet lyes Wrapt in eternall silence farre from enimyes.

XLII The Messenger approching to him spake;

But his waste wordes retournd to him in vaine: So sound he slept, that nought mought him [paine, awake. Then rudely he him thrust, and pusht with Whereat he gan to stretch; but he againe

Shooke him so hard, that forced him to speake. As one then in a dreame, whose dryer braine Is tost with troubled sights and fancies weake, He mumbled soft, but would not all his silence breake.

XLIII

The Sprite then gan more boldly him to wake, And threatned unto him the dreaded name Of Hecate: whereat he gan to quake And, lifting up his lompish head, with blame Halfe angric asked him, for what he came. (qouth he.) 'me Archimago sent, · Hether' He that the stubborne Sprites can wisely tame. He bids thee to him send for his intent [sent. A fit false dreame, that can delude the sleepers

XLIV

A diverse Dreame out of his prison darke, Delivered it to him, and downe did lay His heavie head, devoide of careful carke; Whose sences all were straight benumbd and starke.

He, backe returning by the Yvorie dore, Remounted up as light as chearefull Larke; And on his litle winges the dreame he bore In hast unto his Lord, where he him left af

XLV

Who all this while, with charmes and hide Had made a Lady of that other Spright, [arl And fram'd of liquid avre her tender parte So lively and so like in all mens sight, And unto Morpheus comes, whom drowneddeepe That weaker sence it could have ravisht quig In drowsie fit he findes: of nothing he takes The maker selfe, for all his wondrous with, Was nigh beguiled with so goodly sight. Her all in white he clad, and over it Cast a black stole, most like to seeme for I

XLVI

Now, when that vdle dreame was to him Unto that Elfin knight he bad him fly, [broug Where he slept soundly void of evil thous And with false shewes abuse his fantasy, In sort as he him schooled privily: And that new creature, borne without her d Full of the makers guyle, with usage sly He taught to imitate that Lady trev Whose semblance she did carrie under fein hew.

XLVII

Thus, well instructed, to their worke thate;

And, comming where the knight in slomber! The one upon his hardie head him plaste And made him dreame of loves and lustfull pl That nigh his manly hart did meltaway, Bathed in wanton blis and wicked joy Then seemed him his Lady by him lay, And to him playnd, how that false winged! Her chaste hart had subdewd to learne Da Pleasures toy.

XLVIII

And she her relfe, of beautic soverals Queene,

Favre Venus, seemde unto his bed to bris Her, whom he, waking, evermore did wee To bee the chastest flowre that ave did spil On earthly braunch, the daughter of a ki Now a loose Leman to vile service bound : And eke the Graces seemed all to sing. The God obayde; and, calling forth straight Hymen Iö Hymen! dauncing all around; way

Whylst freshest Flora her with Yvie girl crownd.

XLIX

in this great passion of unwonted lust. Or wonted feare of doing ought amis, He starteth up, as seeming to reserves Some secret ill, or hidden foe of sus,

efore his face his Ladie is e stole hyding her bayted hooke; blushing offred him to kis,

blandishment and lovely looke hat virgin true which for her t him took.

tismayd to see so uncouth sight, aged at her shamelesse guise, have slaine her in his fierce des-

at tempring with sufferance wise, is hand; and gan himselfe advise sense, and tempt her faigned truth. r hands, in wemens pitteous wise, weepe, to stirre up gentle ruth nuble blood, and for her tender

Ah Sir, my liege Lord, and my e the hidden cruell fate, [love, causes wrought in heaven above, God that doth me thus amate, ve to winne me certaine hate? force he bids me do, or die. :w: yet rew my wretched state, ny hard avenging destinie udge of my life or death indif-

hart her speech seemd to bereave, ame begonne; 'My weaker yeares, faith for succour and sure ayde: ne in languor and long teares. quoth he,) 'what hath ye thus ıyd i

LIII

'Love of your selfe,' she saide, ' and deare constraint,

Lets me not sleepe, but waste the wearie night In secret anguish and unpittied plaint,

Whiles you in carelesse sleepe are drowned quight. Her doubtfull words made that redoubted

knight Suspect her truth: yet since no' untruth he knew,

Her fawning love with foule disdainefull spight He would not shend; but said, 'Deare dame, I rew, [you grew. That for my sake unknowne such griefe unto

LIV

'Assure your selfe, it fell not all to ground; For all so deare as life is to my hart, I deeme your love, and hold me to you bound:

Ne let vaine feares procure your needlesse smart, Where cause is none; but to your rest depart.'

Not all content, yet seemd she to appease Her mournefull plaintes, beguiled of her art, And fed with words that could not chose but [ease.

please: So, slyding softly forth, she turnd as to her

Long after lay he musing at her mood, cleare sake forst me at first to leave Much griev'd to thinke that gentle Dame so singdom - There she stopt with light,

For whose defence he was to shed his blood. At last, dull wearines of former fight Having yrockt asleepe his irkesome spright, fortune and trayle worldly feares, That troublous dreame gan freshly tosse his

braine With bowres, and beds, and ladies deare delight:

But, when he saw his labour all was vaine, ye, that were wont to comfort me With that misformed spright he backs returned againe.

CANTO II.

The guilefull great Enchaunter parts The Redcrosse Knight from Truth : Into whose stead faire falshood steps, And workes him woefull ruth.

e Northerne wagoner had set

To al that in the wide deepe wandring arre: And chearefull Chaunticlere with his note shrill National Market National Services And Servic

When those accursed messengers of hell, That feigning dreame, and that faire-forged Spright,

Came to their wicked maister, and gan tel Their bootelesse paines, and ill succeeding night:

Who, all in rage to see his skilfull might Deluded so, gan threaten hellish paine And sad Proserpines wrath, them to affright: But, when he saw his threatning was but vaine, He cast about, and searcht his baleful bokes againe.

Eftsoones he tooke that miscreated faire, And that false other Spright, on whom he spred A seeming body of the subtile aire. Like a young Squire, in loves and lusty-hed His wanton daies that ever loosely led, Without regard of armes and dreaded fight: Those twoo he tooke, and in a secrete bed, Cove ed with darkenes and misdeeming night, Them both together laid to joy in vaine delight.

Forthwith he runnes with feigned faithfull Unto his guest, who, after troublous sights [hast And dreames, gan now to take more sound repast;

Whom suddenly he wakes with fearful frights, As one aghast with feends or damned sprights, And to him cals; 'Rise, rise! unhappy Swaine, That here wex old in sleepe, whiles wicked [chaine: wights

Have knit themselves in Venus shameful Come, see where your false Lady doth her honor staine.'

All in amaze he suddenly up start With sword in hand, and with the old man went; Who soone him brought into a secret part, Where that false couple were full closely ment In wanton lust and leud enbracement : Which when he saw, he burnt with gealous fire; The eie of reason was with rage yblent, And would have slaine them in his furious ire, But hardly was restreined of that aged sire.

Retourning to his bed in torment great, And bitter anguish of his guilty sight, He could not rest; but did his stout heart eat, And wast his inward gall with deepe despight, Yrkesome of life, and too long lingring night. At last faire Hesperus in highest skie Had spent his lampe, and brought forth dawning light;

Then up he rose, and clad him hast The dwarfe him brought his steed away do fly.

Now when the rosy fingred Mornin Weary of aged Tithones saffron bed, Had spred her purple robe through d And the high hils Titan discovered, The royall virgin shooke off drousy-And, rising forth out of her baser be Lookt for her knight, who far away And for her dwarfe, that wont to wa howre: woef Then gan she wail and weepe to

VIII

And after him she rode, with so mu As her slowe beast could make; but al For him so far had borne his light-fe Pricked with wrath and fiery fierce of That him to follow was but fruitless Yet she her weary limbes would nev But every hil and dale, each wood as Did search, sore grieved in her gent He so ungently left her, whome she lo

But subtill Archimago, when his gu He saw divided into double parts, And Una wandring in woods and for Th' end of his drift, he praisd his dive That had such might over true meani Yet rests not so, but other meanes de How he may worke unto her further For her he hated as the hissing snake And in her many troubles did most

He then devisde himselfe how to di For by his mighty science he could As many formes and shapes in seemi As ever Proteus to himselfe could in Sometime a fowle, sometime a fish in Now like a foxe, now like a dragon for that of himselfe he ofte for feare won And oft would flie away. O! who o Magick spel?

But now seemde best the person to Of that good knight, his late beguile In mighty armes he was yelad anon, And silver shield; upon his coward A bloody crosse, and on his craven c A bounch of heares discolourd divers Full jolly knight he seemde, and wel

he sate upon his courser free, o be.

XII

he knight whose semblaunt he did

with George, was wandred far away. trom his thoughts and gealous feare: is guide, and griefe led him astray. n chaunst to meete upon the way - Sarazio, ali armde to point,

reat -meld was writ with letters gay.

a faire companion of his way, Lady clad in scarlot red. ith gold and pearle of rich assay; Person mitre on her hed with rowns and owches garnished, ther lavish lovers to her gave. a talife y all was overspred trappings, woven like a wave.

XIV

1.-- rt. as d courting dalliannee. 4- terbover all the way; . Le saw the knight his speare ad-.-f - f her mirth and wanton play,

as in his Ladi shearte that day. to a fast that who his coursers side r trickling staind the way, as he

11

· the Regerosse, when him he to with rage dispiteous, "spide and towards ride. · . . i. b. b th fell and furious. 1 sans, they'r fore a hideous. : Falger, and amazed stand:

to troke of their owne hand. age of the and ech to other yealdeth

AVI

... rans, stord with ambitious pride,

rear rule of the rich theesed flocks.

A-tonied, both stand sencelesse as a blocke. we himselfe ye would have deemed Forgetfull of the hanging victory: So stood these twaine, unmoved as a rocke,

Both staring fierce, and holding idely The broken reliques of their former cruelty.

The Sarazin, sore daunted with the buffe, Snatcheth his sword, and flercely to him flies: Who well it wards, and quyteth cuff with cuff: Each others equall puissaunce envies, And through their iron sides with cruell spies

Does seeke to perce; repining courage yields and cared not for God or man a point. As from a force; the flashing for fles, As from a forge, out of their burning shields; And streams of purple bloud new die the ver-

dant fields. xvIII

'Curse on that Cross,' (quoth then the Sarazin,) 'That keepes thy body from the bitter fitt! Dead long ygoe, I wote, thou haddest bin, Had not that charme from thee forwarded itt: But yet I warne thee now assured sitt. And hide thy head.' Therewith upon his crest With rigor so outrageous he smitt, : - r. 2 with golden bels and bosses That a large share it hewd out of the rest.

And glanneing downe his shield from blame him fairly blest.

XIX

Who, thereat wondrous wroth, the sleeping Of native vertue gan eftsoones revive; | spark And at his haughty helmet making mark, So hugely stroke, that it the steele did rive. And eleft his head. He, tumbling downe alive. or salight address; him to the Iray. And cleft his head. He, tumbling downealive, 1, 2a at hand. He, prickte with With blondy mouth his mother earth did kis Greeting his grave: his grudging ghost did strive

With the fraile thesh; at last it flitted is. Whither the soules doe fly of men that live ami-.

The Lady, when she saw her champion tall Like the old mines of a broken towre, Staid not to waile his woefull funerall. But from him fled away with all her powre; Who after her as hastily gan scowre. Bidding the dwarfe with him to bring away The Sarazins shield, signe of the conqueroure. Her soon he overtooke, and had to stay: may.

For present cause was none of dread her to dis-

Shee turning backe, with ruefull county naunce. Cride. Mercy, mercy, Sir, vouchsafe to show treats so heree on either side On silly Dame, subject to hard mischaunce, that, with the terror of the shocke. And to your mighty wil! Her humblesse low, C Z

20

Did much enumove his stout heroicke heart; More busying his quicke eies her face to vist And said, Deare dame, your suddein over- Then his dull eares to heare what shee did to throw

Much rueth me; but now put feare apart, . And tel both who ye be, and who that tooke your part.

Melting in teares, then gan shee thus lament. · The wretched woman, whom unhappy howre Hath now made thrall to your commandement. Before that angry heavens list to lowre, And fortune false betraide me to thy powre Was (O! what now availeth that I was?) Borne the sole daughter of an Emperour, He that the wide West under his rule has. And high hath set his throne where Tiberis doth pas.

XXIII

· He, in the first flowre of my freshest age, Betrothed me unto the onely haire Of a most mighty king, most rich and sage: Was never Prince so faithfull and so faire, Was never Prince so meeke and debonaire; But ere my hoped day of spousall shone.

My dearest Lord fell from high honors staire Into the hands of hys accursed fone. And cruelly was slaine; that shall I ever mone.

XXIV 'His blessed body, spoild of lively breath,

Was afterward, I know not how, convaid. And fro me hid: of whose most innocent death When tidings came to mee, unhappy maid, O, how great sorrow my sad soule assaid! Then forth I went his woefull corse to find, And many yeares throughout the world I straid,

A virgin widow, whose deepe wounded mind With love long time did languish, as the striken

'At last it chaunced this proud Sarazin To meete me wandring; who perforce me led With him away, but yet could never win The Fort, that Ladies hold in soveraigne dread. There lies he now with foule dishonor dead, Who, whiles he livde, was called proud San-

The eldest of three brethren; all three bred
Of one bad sire, whose youngest is Sans joy:
And twixt them both was born the bloudy bold
And twixt them both was born the bloudy bold
Which to expresse he bounds his Sans loy.

XXVI

'In this sad plight, friendlesse, unfortunate, Now miserable I. Fidessa, dwell, ('raving of you, in pitty of my state, To doe none ill, if please ye not doe well.'

In so ritch weedes, and seeming glorious show, He in great passion al this while did dwell, And said, 'faire lady, hart of flint would me The undeserved wees and sorrowes, which ! shew.

XXVII

· Henceforth in safe assuraunce may ye re Having both found a new friend you to sid, And lost an old foe that did you molest; Better new friend then an old foe is said. With chaunge of chear the seeming size maid

Let fal her eien, as shamefast, to the earth, And yeelding soft, in that she nought gains So forth they rode, he feining seemely me And shee coy lookes: so dainty, they maketh derth.

XXVIII

Long time they thus together traveiled; Til, weary of their way, they came at last Where grew two goodly trees, that faire spred Their armes abroad, with gray mosse overc And their greene leaves, trembling with e

blast, Made a calme shadowe far in compasse rou The fearefull shephcard, often there aghas Under them never sat, ne wont there soun llis mery oaten pipe, but shund th' unit ground.

XXIX

But this good knight, soone as he them spie,

For the coole shade him thither hastly go For golden Phoebus, now ymounted hie, From nery wheeles of his faire chariot Hurled his beame so scorehing cruell hot, That living creature mote it not abide; And his new Lady it endured not. There they alight, in hope themselves to From the fierce heat, and rest their weary !

a tide.

XXX

seemely pleasaunce each to Faire makes,

Which to expresse he bends his gentle v And, thinking of those braunches greed A girlond for her dainty forchead fit, [f He pluckt a bough; out of whose rifte came

Smal drops of gory bloud, that trickled

XXXI

a piteous velling voice was heard, - are with guilty hands to teare des in this rough rynd embard; the for hence away, for feare a bas, that happened to me heare, writched Lady, my deare love; I ve, love bought with death too

toost, and up his heare did hove: as sufficien horror could no member

XXXII

can the dreadfull passion and manhood well awake, L' the strange occasion. - much his sence, he thus bespake: : cannot Ghost from Limbo lake. n_1: wandring in empty aire. i conts me bi-bling guiltlesse

VXXIII

2 do no Nor damned Ghost, speake: r areal will to wreake. , ar d.: Last in open plaines. of 51 ow full bitter bleake. _ = 100 doesdry my secret values: I was yet cold and heat

NEXTE

citien, or man or tree, who his griefe imparts, as we estructh to surpresse." said to sefall my smalls. - + 1, ights both bright to

while yeares, when corage a new of chevalres. n v brost, it was my lott at a Lade, whome ye see A training tree; 4. I r de accompanyde. it is a glass meaning tred been . The Laty by his syde:

XXXVI

· Whose forged beauty he did take in hand All other Dames to have exceeded farre : I in defence of mine did likewise stand, starre, Mine, that did then shine as the Morning So both to batteill fierce arranged arre, In which his harder fortune was to fall Under my speare: such is the dye of warre. His Lady, left as a prise martiall, Did yield her comely person to be at my call.

XXXVII

'So doubly lov'd of ladies, unlike faire, Th' one seeming such, the other such indeede, One day in doubt I cast for to compare Whether in beauties glorie did exceede: A Rosy girlond was the victors meede. Both seemde to win, and both seemde won to So hard the discord was to be agreede. [bee, men doe oftentimes mistake. Fredissa was as faire as faire mote bee, and the cares these speaches rare. And ever false Duessa seemde as faire as shee.

XXXVIII

· The wicked witch, now seeing all this while The doubtfull ballaunce equally to sway, What not by right she east to win by guile; And by her hellish science raisd streight way Y stable cross works doth A forgy mist that overcast the day,
Y stable crow a tree; weake And a dull blast, that breathing on her fa
Dimmed her former beauties shining ray, And a dull blast, that breathing on her face And with foule ugly forme did her disgrace: Then was she fayre alone, when none was faire in place.

XXXXX

Then cride she out, " Fye, fye! deformed wight, · Whose borrowed beautie now appeareth plaine Kyigitarby whose mischievous. To have before bewitched all mens sight: 15 have before the reference and mean significant and seed arts of leave her soone, or let her soone be slaine." Her loathly visage viewing with distaine. Eftsoones I thought her such as she me told, And would have kild her; but with faigned The false witch did my wrathfull hand with-

So left her, where she now is turnd to treen mould.

*Thensforth I tooke Duessa for my Dame, , hott And in the witch unweeting joyd long time, No ever wist but that she was the same; till on a day (that day is everic Prime, When Witches wont do penance for their I channel to see her in her proper hew, [crime,) Bathing her selfe in origane and thyme: but del towle Duesa hyde. That ever to have toucht her I did deadly 22

But they did seeme more foule and hideous,

Then womans shape man would believe to bee. Thensforth from her most beastly companie

'Her neather partes misshapen, monstruous, Were hidd in water, that I could not see;

That is the terme prescribed by the spell O! how,' sayd he, 'mote I that well out a

Shall us restore; none else from hence us unbynd.

For danger great, if not assurd decay, [stray.] Heard how in vaine Fradubio did lament, I saw before mine eyes, if I were knowne to And knew well all week.

'The divelish hag by chaunges of my cheare The bleeding bough did thrust into the gro Perceiv'd my thought; and, drownd in sleepie That from the blood he might be innoce night. [smeare And with fresh clay did close the with wicked herbes and syntments did be- wound: My body all, through charmes and magicke Then, turning to his Lady, dead with a might, That all my senses were bereaved quight: Then brought she me into this desert waste,

And by my wretched lovers side me pight; Where now, enclosed in wooden wals full faste, Banisht from living wights, our wearie daies we waste.

"We may not chaunge," (quoth he,) 'this evill He set her on her steede, and forward a living well: [plight, did beare.

That may restore you to your wonted will 'Time and suffised fates to former kyad XLIV

And knew well all was true. But the Full of sad feare and ghastly dreriment, kas When all this speech the living tree had s

XLV

Her seeming dead he fownd with feig feare.

As all unweeting of that well she knew; And paynd himselfe with busic care to re-Her out of carelesse swowne. Her eyelids his **SLIII And dimmed sight, with pale and deadly Medium the life of the sight, with pale and deadly Medium the life of the sight, with pale and deadly Medium the life of the sight, all passed for the life of the

CANTO III.

Forsaken Truth long seekes her love, And makes the Lyon mylde; Marres blind Devotions mart, and fals In hand of leachour vylde.

NOUGHT is there under heav'ns wide hollow

That moves more deare compassion of mind, Then beautic brought t'unworthie wretched- Is from her knight divorced in despayre

Through envies snares, or fortunes freakes I, whether lately through her brightnes blynd, Or through alleageance, and fast fealty. Which I do owe unto all womankynd,

Feele my hart perst with so great agony, When such I see, that all for pitty I could dy.

And now it is empassioned so deepe. For fairest Unaes sake, of whom I sing, That my frayle eies these lines with teares do

steepe, To thinke how she through gr Though true as touch, though daughter king,

Though faire as ever living wight was fay Though nor in word nor deede ill meriting [unkind | And her dew loves deryv'd to that vile witt shavre.

Yet she, most faithfull Ladie, all this whi Forsaken, wofull, solitarie mayd, Far from all peoples preace, as in exile, In wildernesse and wastfull deserts strays To seeke her knight; who, subtily betraye Through that late vision which the Enchant

wrought, Had her abandond. She, of nought affray Through woods and wastnes wide him de sought;

ling, Yet wished tydinges none of him unto

gh wearie of the yrkesome way, hastie beast she did alight; grame her dainty limbs did lay adow, far from all mens sight: rre head her fillet she undight, r stole aside. Her angels face, eye of heaven, shyned bright, sunshine in the shady place;

nortali eve behold such heavenly

, out of the thickest wood Lyon rushed suddeinly, I greedy after salvage blood. royall virgin he did spy, mouth at her ran greedily, ence devourd her tender corse; ray when as he drew more ny,

errof he kist her wearie feet er lilly hands with fawning tong, rouged innocence did weet. i-autie maister the most strong, truth subdue avenging wrong! ied pryde and proud submission re death, when she had marked n melt in great compassion; [long, z teares did shed for pure affection.

VII

Land of everie beast in field," this princely puissance doth abate, is proud to humble weake does

f the hungry rage, which late in little of my sad estate: Lyon, and my noble Lord, e find in cruell hart to hate of my life? why hath he me ab .m lov'd, and ever most adord

VIII

ateares did choke th' end of her we her sorrowfull constraint, loe hart shutting up her payne, argin, borne of heavenly brood, snowy Palfrey got agayne. rne.

The Lyon would not leave her desolate. But with her went along, as a strong gard Of her chast person, and a faythfull mate Of her sad troubles and misfortunes hard : Still, when she slept, he kept both watch and ward;

And, when she wakt, he wayted diligent, With humble service to her will prepard: From her fayre eyes he tooke commandement. And ever by her lookes conceived her intent.

Long she thus traveiled through deserts wyde, By which she thought her wandring knight shold pas, Yet never shew of living wight espyde; Till that at length she found the troden gras, In which the tract of peoples footing was,

rage aswaged with remore, force. Under the steepe foot of a mountaine hore: he sight amazd, forgat his furious The same she followes, till at last she has A damzel spyde, slow footing her before,

That on her shoulders sad a pot of water bore.

To whom approching she to her gan call,

To weet if dwelling place were nigh at hand; But the rude wench her answerd nought at all: She could not heare, nor speake, nor understand; Till, seeing by her side the Lyon stand, With suddeine feare her pitcher downe she And fled away: for never in that land [threw, Face of favre Lady she before did vew. [hew. And that dredd Lyons looke her cast in deadly

XII

Full fast she fled, ne ever lookt behynd, As if her life upon the wager lay; And home she came, whereas her mother blynd Sate in eternall night : nought could she say; But, suddeine catching hold, did her dismay With quaking hands, and other signes of feare: Who, full of ghastly fright and cold affray, Gan shut the dore. By this arrived there Dame Una, weary Dame, and entrance did requere:

Which when none yielded, her unruly Page s so hard from the neighbour wood; With his rude clawes the wicket open rent, And let her in ; where, of his cruell rage heast upon her gazing stood: Nigh dead with feare, and faint astonishment, calmit downe fell his angry mood. Shee found them both in darksome corner pent; Where that old woman day and night did pray Upon her beads, devoutly penitent: Nine hundred Pater nosters every day, er strayed Champion if she might And thrise nine hundred Area she was wont to sav.

XIV

And to augment her painefull penaunce more, Thrise every weeke in ashes shee did sitt, And next her wrinkled skin rough sackecloth

And thrise three times did fast from any bitt; He would no lenger stay him to advize, But now, for feare her beads she did forgett: But open breakes the dore in furious wize But now, for feare her beads she did forgett : Whose needlesse dread for to remove away Faire Una framed words and count'naunce fitt; Which hardly doen, at length she gan them And, seizing cruell clawes on trembling by pray, ther may. Under his Lordly foot him proudly hath

That in their cotage small that night she rest

The day is spent; and commeth drowsie night, When every creature shrowded is in sleepe, Sad Una downe her laies in weary plight, And at her feete the Lyon watch doth keepe : In stead of rest she does lament and weepe For the late losse of her deare loved knight, And sighes, and grones, and evermore does steepe

Her tender brest in bitter teares all night; All night she thinks too long, and often lookes for light.

XVI

Now when Aldeboran was mounted hve Above the shinie Cassiopeias chaire, And all in deadly sleepe did drowned lye One knocked at the dore, and in would fare: He knocked fast, and often curst, and sware, That ready entraunce was not at his call; For on his backe a heavy load he bare Of nightly stelths, and pillage severall, Which he had got abroad by purchas criminall,

He was, to weete, a stout and sturdy thiefe, Wont to robbe churches of their ornaments, And poore mens boxes of their due reliefe, Which given was to them for good intents: The holy Saints of their rich vestiments He did disrobe, when all men carelesse slept, And spoild the Priests of their habiliments; Whiles none the holy things in safety kept Then he by conning sleights in at the window crept.

XVIII

And all that he by right or wrong could find, Unto this house he brought, and did bestow Upon the daughter of this woman blind, Abessa, daughter of Corceca slow, With whom he whoredome usd, that few did And fed her fatt with feast of offerings, [know, And plenty, which in all the land did grow: Ne spared he to give her gold and rings; [things. XIX

Thus, long the dore with rage and threats bett. Yet of those fearfull women mone durst rio The Lyon frayed them, him in to lett. And entring is, when that disdainfull beas Encountring fierce, him suddein doth surpri

prest,

Him booteth not resist, nor succour call, His bleeding hart is in the vengers hand; Who streight him rent in thousand per small,

And quite dismembred hath : the thirsty la Dronke up his life; his corse left on the stra His fearefull freends weare out the wor night,

Ne dare to weepe, nor seeme to understand The heavic hap which on them is alight; Affraid least to themselves the like mishap might.

XXI

Now when broad day the world discover Up Una rose, up rose the lyon eke; And on their former journey furward pas In wates unknowne, her wandring knight seeke.

With paines far passing that long wands That for his love refused deitye. Gree Such were the labours of this Lady meeke, Still seeking him, that from her still did fl Then furthest from her hope, when most weened nye.

XXII

Soone as she parted thence, the fear

twayne, That blind old woman, and her daughter de Came forth; and, finding Kirkrapine th slayne,

For anguish great they gan to rend their he

And when they both had wept and wayld th fill. Then forth they ran, like two smazed dear Halfe mad through malice and revenging w To follow her that was the causer of their

And beat their brests, and naked flesh to ter

XXIII

Whome overtaking, they gan loudly bray With hollow houling, and lamenting cry; Shamefully at her rayling all the way, And now he to her brought part of his stolen And her accusing of dishonesty,

te flowre of faith and chastity : mid-t her rayling, she did pray

retourned with some labour lost; way, as shee did weepe and waile, -r mett in mighty armes embest. wa- not for all his bragging best; Archimag, that Una sought into new troubles to have toste: woman tidings he besought, ach a Lady shee could tellen ought.

XXV

-be gan her passion to renew, and curse, and raile, and rend her at larkett she too lately knew, her shot so many a bitter teare: -- 13 to mone her haplesse chaunce. r that Lady did inquere;

XXVI arms where Una traveild slow,

· . · band, but turned wyde ir in whence when she him spyde. -- n. : - hield her knight by name 25 - he wist it was the same : -..-- cattle

 1 to I ave bene quite abhord,
 1 to I ave that ye displeasen might, - teath unto my deare heart

... e your joyons sight did mis. av is turnel to chearelesse night, tight of death the shadow is: w. my light, and shining

XXVIII

He thereto meeting said, 'My dearest Dame, and mischiefes, and long misery.

and mischiefes, and long misery.

To thinke that knighthood I so much should shame,

As you to leave that have me loved stil, And chose in Faery court, of meere goodwil,

she saw her prayers nought pre. Where noblest knights were to be found on earth.

The earth shall sooner leave her kindly skil To bring forth fruit, and make eternal derth, Then I leave you, my liefe, yborn of hevenly berth.

XXIX

And sooth to say, why I lefte you so long, Was for to seeke adventure in straunge place; Where, Archimago said, a felon strong To many knights did daily worke disgrace; But knight he now shall never more deface : Good cause of mine excuse, that mote ye please Well to accept, and evermore embrace My faithfull service, that by land and seas Have yowd you to defend. Now then, your plaint appease.

His lovely words her seemd due recompence Tall Lady dot inquere;

Tall the forward gan advanue.

Of all her passed paines; one loving howre that it is test, and ske his charmed. For many yeares of sorrow can dispense;

A dram of sweete is worth a pound of sowre. Shee has forgott how many a woeful stowre For him she late endurd; she speakes no more Of past: true is, that true love hath no powre ... A supplier wayting her besyde; To looken backe; his eies be fixt before. -12 -12 to for dread hee durst not Before her stands her knight, for whom she toyld so sore

XXXI

Much like, as when the beaten marinere, va. and towards him gan ride: That long hath wandred in the Ocean wide, Otte soust in swelling Tethys saltish teare: And long time having tand his tawney hide With blustring breath of Heaven, that none can bide,

And scorehing flames of tierce Orions hound; Ab, my long lacked Lord. Soone as the port from far he has espide, the vertex thus long out of my His chearfull whistle merily doth sound. And Nereus crownes with cups; his mates him pledg around.

XXXII

Such joy made Una, when her knight she found;

And eke th' enchaunter joyous seemde no lesse Then the glad marchant, that does yew from ground

His ship far come from watrie wildernesse:

ثعر

He hurles out vowes, and Neptune oft doth

blesse. So forth they past; and all the way they spent Till Una cride, 'O! hold that heavie han Discoursing of her dreadful late distresse,

Deare Sir, what ever that thou be in pla

went.

XXXIII

They had not ridden far, when they might see And, whilest him fortune favourd, fayre One pricking towards them with hastie heat, Full strongly armd, and on a courser free That through his fiersnesse fomed all with sweat,

And the sharpe yron did for anger eat, When his hot ryder spurd his chauffed side: His looke was sterne, and seemed still to threat Have slayne him streight; but when he Cruell revenge, which he in hart did hyde; And on his shield Sansloy in bloody lines was dyde.

XXXIV

beare, He burnt in fire; and gan eftsoones prepare Himselfe to batteill with his couched speare.

Loth was that other, and did faint through feare.

To taste th' untryed dint of deadly steele: But yet his Lady did so well him cheare, That hope of new good hap he gan to feele; So bent his speare, and spurd his horse with yron heele.

XXXX

And full of wrath, that, with his sharphead [perce: speare, Through vainly crossed shield he quite did

And, had his staggering steed not shronke for Amased stands, her selfe so mockt to see feare

That from his sadle quite he did him beare.

He, tombling rudely downe, to ground did rush. From whom her booteth not at all to flie: And from his gored wound a well of bloud did Who, by her cleanly garment catching hold gush.

XXXVI

Dismounting lightly from his loftic steed, He to him lept, in minde to reave his life, And proudly said; 'Lo! there the worthie meed And high disdaine, whenas his soveraine Dat Of him that slew Sansfoy with bloody knife: So rudely handled by her foe he saw, Henceforth his ghost, freed from repining With gaping jawes full greedy at him came strife,

In peace may passen over Lethe lake; When mourning altars, purgd with enimies But he was stout, and lust did now inflame
The black infernall Furies doen aslake:

Ilis corage more, that from his grining

from thee take.

Therewith in haste his helmet gan unlast Discoursing of her dreadful late distresse, In which he askt her, what the Lyon ment; Enough is, that thy foe doth vanquish see Who told her all that fell, in journey as she Now at thy mercy: Mercy not withstand; For he is one the truest knight alive, Though conquered now be lye on lowly le

thrive

XXXVIII

Her piteous wordes might not abate his me But, rudely rending up his helmet, would his age,

In bloudy field; therefore, of life him not d

And hoarie head of Archimago old, His hasty hand he doth amased hold And halfe ashamed wondred at the sight: When nigh he drew unto this gentle payre, For the old man well knew he though unto And saw the Red-crosse which the knight did In charmes and magick to have wonder might,

Ne ever wont in field, ne in round lists, to fich

XXXIX

And said, 'Why Archimago, lucklesse syn What doe I see? what hard mishap is this, That hath thee hether brought to taste miney Or thine the fault, or mine the error is In stead of foe to wound my friend amis? He answered nought, but in a traunce still a And on those guilefull dazed eyes of his The cloude of death did sit. Which does and But that proud Paynim forward came so ferce He left him lying so, ne would no lenger

But to the virgin comes; who all this will beare: By him, who has the guerdon of his guile, Through shield and body eke he should him For so misfeigning her true knight to bee: Yet, so great was the pulssance of his push, Yet is she now in more perplexitie, Left in the hand of that same Paynim bold Her from her l'alfrey pluckt, her visage

behold.

But her fiers servant, full of kingly aw And, ramping on his shield, did weene the sal [life, Have reft away with his sharp rending claw The black infernal Furies doen aslake: His corage more, that from his griping per Life from Sansfoy thou tookst, Sansloy shall He hath his shield redeemd, and forth swerd he drawes.

TLII

weake and feeble was the forse set his puissance to withstand; ong, and of so mightie corse, ed speare in warlike hand, armes did wisely understand. erced through his chaufed chest; point of deadly yron brand, a Lordly hart: with death opprest I, whiles life forsooke his stub-

XLIII

left to keepe the forlome maid poile of lawlesse victors will? ;ard remov'd, her hope dismaid, !kled pray to save or spill: He now, Lord of the field, his pride to fill, With foule reproches and disdaineful spight Her vildly entertaines; and, will or nill, Beares her away upon his courser light: Her prayers nought prevaile, his rage is more of might.

XLIV

And all the way, with great lamenting paine, And piteous plaintes, she filleth his dull eares, That stony hart could riven have in twaine; And all the way she wetts with flowing teares; But he, enrag'd with rancor, nothing heares. Her servile beast yet would not leave her so, But followes her far off, ne ought he feares To be partaker of her wandring woe; [foe.] More mild in beastly kind then that her beastly

CANTO IV.

To sinfull hous of Pryde Duessa Guydes the faithfull knight; Where, brothers death to wreak, Sansjoy Doth chaleng him to fight.

at whatever, that dost armes pro-

long labours huntest after fame, it, beware of ficklenesse, [Dame; id chaunge of thy deare-loved her believe too lightly blame, weening doe thy hart remove; the there is no greater shame see and inconstancie in love; and Redcrosse knights ensample; prove.

.,

that he had faire Una lorne, t misdeeming of her loialtie; sessa in her sted had borne.

and so supposed to be, or traweild; till at last they see Iding bravely gamished; mightie Prince it seemd to be, it a broad high way that led, ough peoples feet which thether led.

111

es of people traveild thetherward i night, of each degree and place; rned, having scaped hard, i beggery, or foule disgrace;

Which ever after in most wretched case, Like loathsome lazars, by the hedges lay. Thether Duessa badd him bend his pace, For she is wearie of the toilsom way, And also nigh consumed is the lingring day.

ıv

A stately Pallace built of squared bricke, Which cunningly was without morter laid. Whose wals were high, but nothing strong nor thick,

And golden foile all over them displaid,
That purest skye with brightnesse they dismaid:

High lifted up were many loftie towres, And goodly galleries far over laid, Full of faire windowes and delightful bowres: And on the top a Diall told the timely howres.

V

It was a goodly heape for to behould.
And spake the praises of the workmans witt;
But full great pittie, that so faire a mould
Did on so weake foundation ever sitt:
For on a sandie hill, that still did flitt
And fall away, it mounted was full hie.
That every breath of heaven shaked itt:
And all the hinder partes, that few could spie,
Were ruinous and old, but painted cunningly.

1.1

Arrived there, they passed in forth right; For still to all the gates stood open wide: Yet charge of them was to a Porter hight, Cald Malvenu, who entrance none denide:

Thence to the hall, which was on every side With rich array and costly arras dight. Infinite sortes of people did abide There waiting long, to win the wished sight Of her, that was the Lady of that Pallace bright.

By them they passe, all gazing on them round. And to the Presence mount; whose glorious yew Their frayle amazed senses did confound: In living Princes court none ever knew Such endlesse richesse, and so sumpteous show; Ne Persia selfe, the nourse of pompous pride, Like ever saw. And there a noble crew Of Lords and Ladies stood on every side.

vIII

beautifide.

High above all a cloth of State was spred, And a rich throne, as bright as sunny day; On which there sate, most brave embellished With royall robes and gorgeons array, A mayden Queene that shone as Titans ray, In glistring gold and perclasse pretions stone: Yet her bright blazing beautie did assay To dim the brightnesse of her glorious throne, As envying her selfe, that too exceeding shone:

Exceeding shone, like Phobus favrest childe,

wilde, Through highest heaven with weaker hand to Her Lordes and Ladies all this while devis Proud of such glory and advancement vayue, Themselves to setten forth to straungers sig While flashing beames do daze his feeble even, Some frounce their curled heare in cour He leaves the welkin way most beaten playne,

[shyne, Their gay attyre; each others greater p skyen With fire not made to burne, but fayrely for to

So proud she shyned in her princely state, Looking to heaven, for earth she did disdayne, And sitting high, for lowly she did hate: Lo! underneath her scornefull feete was lavne A dreadfull Dragon with an hideous trayne: And in her hand she held a mirrhour bright,

Wherein her face she often vewed fayne. And in her selfe-lov'd semblance took delight :: That to strange knight no better countena For she was wondrous faire, as any living wight.

XI

Of griesly Pluto she the daughter was And sad Proscrpina, the Queene of bell: Yet did she thinke her pearelesse worth to per that parentage, with pride so did she swell And thundring Jove, that high in heaven do dwell And wield the world, she claymed for her sy Or if that any else did Jove excell;

For to the highest she did still aspyre

Or, if ought higher were than that, did it des XII

And proud Lucifera men did her call, That made her selfe a Queene, and crownd to Yet rightfull kingdome she had none at all Ne heritage of native soveraintie; But did usurpe with wrong and tyrannic I pon the scepter which she now did hold: Ne ruld her Realme with lawes, but pollici Of Lords and Ladies stood on extra place much And strong autyzement of the Which with their counsels bad, her kingde did uphold.

XIII

Soone as the Elfin knight in presence cam And false Duessa, seeming Lady fayre, Made rowne, and passage for them did p So goodly brought them to the lowest stay Ofher high themse where the A gentle Husher, Vanitie by name, Of her high throne; where they, on humblek Making obeysannce, did the cause declare. Why they were come her roiall state to see To prove the wide report of her great Majest

With loftic eyes, halfe loth to looke so lot That did presume his fathers fyric wayne.

And flaming mouthes of steedes, unwonted Ne other grace vouchsafed them to showe She thancked them in her disdainefull wis [rayne: Of Princesse worthy; searse them had arise guise; And, rapt with whirling wheeles, inflames the Some prancke their ruffes; and others tris [di

XV

does spight.

Goodly they all that knight doe entertay Right glad with him to have increast their cre But to Duess each one himselfe did payne All kindnesse and faire courtesic to shew. For in that court whylome her well they kno Yet the stout Facry mongst the middest cre Thought all their glorie vaine in knightly v And that great Princesse too exceeding pro allowd.

agreeth from her stately place .r. ra in her purple pail Last the dawning day doth call.

- or people, thronging in the hall.

.- _i.tterand light doth all mensions.

XVII

... the Idan Lairlands gay, Jelyme, it as tresh as Flora in her prime;

of way, ay re Pecceks, that excell in pride. Ar their tayles dispredden

VUIII

control of their unequall beasts. er - e e de Coansellours del ryde. and sor has tiall beheast a tions to their kindes applyde: are rest, that the fest did juyde, * I Petersa, the mourse of sm; are, and arms than, Many a the service to begin

1:1

and the Peats is will be bare. serve or a, bie therein little rold: as that little care, and deld; is deeper and most of his dates the of hold his heavie hold. server were right or day. the sayle was very evill feld. \mathbb{R}^{n} . Let $\operatorname{un} \cong \operatorname{of}$ the way. of ther pulathe went, or clo

... manly exercise: r r-c a chalenged s-cyne. consider yet otherwise process risting grie ous malady; or rained continually.

in a name its he did esleyne.

was I the messe, tirst of this company.

XXI

And by his side rode loathsome Gluttony, Darne, and for her coche doth call: Deformed creature, on a filthic swyne, of orth; and she, with princely pace. His belly was upblowne with luxury, And eke with fatnesse swollen were his eyne; And like a Crane his necke was long and fyne - comes; her brightnes brode doth With which he swallowed up excessive feast, For want whereof poore people oft did pyne: And all the way, most like a brutish beast. . . . ther upon her to gaze: amaze. He spued up his gorge, that all did him deteast.

XXII

In greene vine leaves he was right fitly clad, strongers, and to her coche does For other clothes he could not weare for heate; And on his head an yvie girland had, [sweat, From under which fast trickled downe the to match, in roiall rich array, say, Still as he rode he somewhat still did eat, -- gelden chayre; the which, they And in his hand did beare a bouzing can, stance gazing on, when she does ride Of which he supt so off, that on his seat 1 22 hous through heavens bras- His dronken corse he scarse upholden can: In shape and life more like a monster then a

VIIII

Until he was for any worldly thing, And eke unhable once to stirre or go; Not meet to be of counsell to a king. Whose mind in meat and drinke was drowned so, That from his frend he seekdome knew his fo. Full of diseases was his careas blow, And a dry dropsic through his flesh did flow, Which by misdiet daily greater grew, Such one was Chuttony, the second of that erew.

And us xt to him rode Justfull Lechers Upon a bearded Gote, whose rugged heave, And whally cies (the signe of gelosy) Was like the person selfe whom he did beare: Who rough, and blacke, and filthy, did appears, Unseemely man to please faire Ladies eye; Yet he of Ladies oft was loved deare, When fairer faces were bid standen by : Of whodoe-know the bent of women stantacy?

In a greene gowne be clothed was full tane, Which underneath did hide his filthine se: And in his hand a burning hart he bare. Full of vaine follies and new fangleness : For he was talse, and fraught with fieldenesse, And learned had to love with secret lookes; And well could danner, and sing with rueful-110 550 1

ands, through evill gur e. And fortunes tell, and read in loving bookes And thousan cother waies to bait his the-hly Looker.

XXVI

Inconstant man, that loved all he saw, And lusted after all that he did love; Ne would his looser life be tide to law, [prove, But joyd weake wemens hearts to tempt, and If from their loyall loves he might them move: Which lewdoes fild him with reprochfull pain
Of that foule evill, which all men reprove,
That rotts the marrow, and consumes the braine,
Such one was Lechery, the third of all this
Of proud Lucifera, and his owne compane traine.

XXVII

And greedy Avarice by him did ride, Uppon a Camell loaden all with gold; Two iron coffers hong on either side, With precious metall full as they might hold; And in his lap an heap of coine he told; For of his wicked pelfe his God he made, And unto hell him selfe for money sold : Accursed usury was all his trade, And right and wrong ylike in equall ballaunce

XXVIII

His life was nigh unto deaths dore yplaste; And thred-bare cote, and cobled shoes, hee ware; Ne scarse good morsell all his life did taste, But both from backe and belly still did spare, To fill his bags, and richesse to compare: Yet childe ne kinsman living had he none To leave them to; but thorough daily care To get, and nightly feare to lose his owne, He led a wretched life, unto himselfe unknowne.

XXIX

Most wretched wight, whom nothing might

Whose greedy lust did lacke in greatest store; Whose need had end, but no end covetise : Whose welth was want, whose plenty made him pore;

Who had enough, yett wished ever more; A vile disease: and eke in foote and hand A grievous gout tormented him full sore, That well he could not touch, nor goe, nor stand. band.

Such one was Avarice, the fourth of this faire

And next to him malicious Envy rode Upon a ravenous wolfe, and still did chaw Between his cankred teeth a venemous tode, That all the poison ran about his chaw; But inwardly he chawed his owne maw At neighbours welth, that made him ever sad, For death it was, when any good he saw : And wept, that cause of weeping none he had; The shaking Palsey, and Saint Fraunces 6 But when he heard of harme he wexed won- Such one was Wrath, the last of this ungo drous glad.

XXXI

All in a kirtle of discolourd say He clothed was, ypaynted full of eies; And in his bosome secretly there lay An hatefull Snake, the which his taile up In many folds, and mortall sting implyes

He hated all good workes and vertuous de And him no lesse, that any like did use: And who with gratious bread the hungry for His almes for want of faith he doth accus So every good to bad he doth abuse : And eke the verse of famous Poets witt He does backebite, and spightfull pois spues From leprous mouth on all that ever writt Such one vile Envy was, that fifte in row

MXXXIII

sitt,

And him beside rides fierce revenging Wn Upon a Lion, loth for to be led; And in his hand a burning brond he hath The which he brandisheth about his hed: His eies did hurle forth sparcles fiery red, And stared sterne on all that him beheld As ashes pale of hew, and seeming ded: And on his dagger still his hand he held. Trembling through hasty rage when cholhim sweld.

XXXIV

His ruffin raiment all was staind with ble Which he had spilt, and all to rags yrent. Through unadvized rashnes woxen wood For of his hands he had no government, Ne car'd for blood in his avengement : But, when the furious fitt was overpast, His cruel facts he often would repent ; Yet, wilfull man, he never would forecast How many mischieves should ensue his he lesse hast.

XXXV

Full many mischiefes follow cruell Wrath Abhorred bloodshed, and tumultuous strife Unmanly murder, and unthrifty scath, Bitter despight, with rancours rusty knife, And fretting griefe, the enemy of life: All these, and many evils moe haunt ire. The swelling Splene, and Frenzy ragu

tire.

XXXVI

er all upon the wagon beame. han with a smarting whip in hand, h he forward lasht the lassy teme, Nowth still in the mire did stand. te of people did about them band. tor joy: and still before their way must had covered all the land; ermenth their feet, all scattered lav il- and bones of men whose life had m astray.

XXXVII

they marchen in this goodly sort, he solace of the open aire, | sport : tresh thowring fields themselves to the rest rode that false Lady f. ire, · Ime-a next unto the chaire Lucif r. as one of the traine: good knight would not so nigh aire etraunging from their joyaunce

Il wehip seemd far untitt for warlike

XXXVIII

4 : 100

-2 - laced thems lives a space as a since of the breathing fields yfed. we not urned to the princely Place; at errant knight in arms yeled. and he hield, wherein with letters red, s. S. asjoy, they new arrived find: A to harr to harbour thoughts unkind, * . ; bloody vengeaunce in his bitter

XXXIX

rac y a the bat same Facry champions page.
 2 for that did of late destroy
 per; burning all with rage, -, i. ; *, and that same envious gage -- ... rv 'rom him snacht away: .. wi_. ... have the meed he wonne in fray; : -- new untring tierce, reskewd the noble

XI.

th they gan to hurtlen greedily, -1 'mttaile ready to darrayne, *: *:r -hields, and shake their swerds - Ł . [traine; to their sturre they troubled all the : great One-ne, upon eternall paine displea-ure that ensewen might,

Commaunded them their fury to refraine; And, if that either to that shield had right. In equall lists they should the morrow next it tight.

XLI

'Ah dearest Dame,' quoth then the Paynim Pardon the error of enraged wight, [bold. Whome great griefe made forgett the raines to hold

Of reasons rule, to see this recreaunt knight, No knight, but treachour full of false despight And shameful treason, who through guile hath slayn

The prowest knight that ever field did fight, Even stout Sansfoy, (O who can then refrayn?) Whose shield he beares renverst, the more to heap disdayn.

'And, to augment the glorie of his guile, His dearest love, the faire Fidessa, loe! Is there possessed of the traytour vile; Who reapes the harvest sowen by his foe, Sowen in bloodie field, and bought with woe: That brothers hand shall dearely well requight, So be, O Queene! you equall favour showe, Him litle answerd th' angry Elfin knight; He never meant with words, but swords, to plead his right:

XLIII

But threw his gauntlet, as a sacred pledge His cause in combat the next day to try: So been they parted both, with harts on edge To be aveng'd each on his enimy. That night they pas in joy and jollity, Feasting and courting both in bowre and hall: For Steward was excessive Gluttony the shamed shield of claime Which doen, the Chamberlain, Slowth, did to rest them call.

1 Now whenas darkesome night had all displayd Her coleblacke curtein over brightest skye; The warlike youthes on dayntic couches layd. eye,

To muse on meanes of hoped victory. But whenas Morpheus had with leaden mace Arrested all that courtly company. Uprose Duessa from her resting place. [pace. And to the Paynims lodging comes with silent

Whom broad awake she findes, in troublous fitt, Fore-casting how his fee he might annoy; And him amoves with speaches seeming fitt: Ah deare Sansjoy, next dearest to Sanstoy, THE FAERIE QUEENE.

[300i

Cause of my new griefe, cause of my new joy; Joyous to see his ymage in mine eye, And greeve to thinke how foe did him destroy, That was the flowre of grace and chevalrye; Lo! his Fidessa, to thy secret faith I five.

XI.VI

With gentle wordes he can her fayrely greet, And bad say on the secrete of her hart: Then, sighing soft; 'I learne that litle sweet Oft tempred is,' (quoth she,) 'with muchell dart smart: For since my brest was launcht with lovely Of deare Sansfoy, I never joyed howre, But in eternall woes my weaker hart Have wasted, loving him with all my powre,

And for his sake have felt full many an heavie

XLVII

At last, when perils all I weened past, And hop'd to reape the crop of all my care, Into new woes unweeting I was cast By this false faytor, who unworthic ware [snare His worthie shield, whom he with guilefull Entrapped slew, and brought to shamefull grave:

Me, silly maid, away with him he bare, And ever since hath kept in darksom cave, For that I would not yeeld that to Sansfoy I I no whitt reck; ne you the like need to

gave.

stowre.

32

XLVIII

ring clowd,

To you th' inheritance belonges by right Of brothers prayse, to you eke longes his

love. Let not his love, let not his restlesse spright. He unreveng'd, that calles to you above From wandring Stygian shores, where it d endlesse move.

XLIX

Thereto said he, 'Faire Dame, be nought maid For sorrowes past; their griefe is with th Ne yet of present perill be affraid, For needlesse feare did never vantage nous And helplesse hap it booteth not to more. Dead is Sansfoy, his vitall paines are past, Though greeved ghost for vengeance deep grone:

He lives that shall him pay his dewties he And guiltie Elfin blood shall sacrifice in he

O! but I feare the fickle freakes,' (quoth sh 'Of fortune false, and oddes of armes in fe 'Why, dame,' (quoth he) 'what oddes can e bee.

Where both doe fight alike, to win or yield 'Yea, but,' (quoth she) 'he beares a char shield. [pen And eke enchaunted armes, that none t

Ne none can wound the man that does the wield.' 'Charmd or enchaunted,' answerd he th

herce.

'But since faire Sunne bath sperst that low- 'But, faire Fidessa, sithens fortunes guile, Or enimies powre, hath now captived you ring clowd,
And to my loathed life now shewes some light.
Under your beames I will me safely shrowd
From dreaded storme of his disdainfull spight:
To you th' inheritance belonges by right
To you th' inheritance belonges by right 'With proud foes sight my sorrow to rene Where ever yet I be, my secret aide Shall follow you.' So, passing forth, sa

CANTO V.

The faithfull knight in equal field Subdewes his faithlesse for Whom false Duessa saves, and for His cure to hell does goe.

THE noble hart that harbours vertuous thought,

And is with childe of glorious great intent, Can never rest, untill it forth have brought Th'eternall brood of glorie excellent:

Such restlesse passion did all night tormen The flaming corage of that Faery knight, Devizing how that doughtie turnament With greatest honour he atchieven mid Still did he wake, and still did watch [dawning lig

33

, the golden Orientall gate est heaven gan to open fayre; ebus, fresh as brydegrome to his mate, auncing forth, shaking his deawie large auncing forth, shaking his deawie avre, [ayre. Id his glistring beams through gloomy threat; hen the wakeful Elfe perceiv d, streight ed up, and did him selfe prepayre [way, Both stricken stryke, and beaten both doe beat, That from their shields forth flyeth firie light, hat day.

rth he comes into the commune hall;

arely waite him many a gazing eye what end to straunger knights may fall. e away the dull melancholy; my Bardes, that to the trembling chord their timely voices cunningly; my Chroniclers, that can record

es, and warres for Ladies doen by many

ı Lord.

after comes the cruell Sarazin, en maile all armed warily; rnly lookes at him, who not a pin ure for looke of living creatures eye. ring them wines of Greece and Araby, intie spices fetch from furthest Ynd, lle heat of corage privily the wine a solemne oth they bynd ve the sacred lawes of armes that are usynd.

t forth comes that far renowmed Queene:

oyall pomp and princely majestie rbrought unto a paled greene, aced under stately canapee rlike feates of both those knights to see. other side in all mens open vew placed is, and on a tree his shield is hangd with bloody hew; lose the lawrell girlonds to the victor

illing trompett sownded from on hye, ito battaill bad them selves addresse: hining shieldes about their wrestes they [blesse. urning blades about their heades doe struments of wrath and heavinesse reedy force each other doth assayle, rike so fiercely, that they do impresse dinted furrowes in the battred mayle: on walles to ward their blowes are weak and fraile.

VII

The Sarazin was stout and wondrous strong, And heaped blowes like yron hammers great; For after blood and vengeance he did long:

might.

So th' one for wrong, the other strives for right. As when a Gryfon, seized of his pray

A Dragon fiers encountreth in his flight, Through widest ayre making his ydle way, That would his rightfull ravine rend away: With hideous horror both together smight, And souce so sore that they the heavens affray; The wise Southsayer, seeing so sad sight, Th' amazed vulgar telles of warres and mortall

fight. So th' one for wrong, the other strives for right, And each to deadly shame would drive his foe: The cruell steele so greedily doth bight

In tender flesh, that streames of blood down show flow; With which the armes, that earst so bright did Into a pure vermillion now are dyde. Great ruth in all the gazers harts did grow,

Seeing the gored woundes to gape so wyde, That yictory they dare not wish to either side, At last the Paynim chaunst to cast his eye,

His suddein eye flaming with wrathfull fyre, Upon his brothers shield, which hong thereby: Therewith redoubled was his raging yre And said; 'Ah! wretched sonne of wofull syre. Doest thou sit wayling by blacke Stygian lake,

Whylest here thy shield is hangd for victors hyre? And, sluggish german, doest thy forces slake To after-send his foe, that him may overtake?

'Goe, caytive Elfe, him quickly overtake, And soone redeeme from his long-wandring Goe, guiltie ghost, to him my message make, That I his shield have quit from dying loe. Therewith upon his creat he stroke him so,

End of the doubtfull battaile deemed tho The lookers on; and lowd to him gan call The false Duessa, 'Thine the shield, and I, and all I

Soone as the Facric heard his Ladie speake, Out of his swowning dreame he gan awake; And quickning faith, that earst was woxen weake,

The creeping deadly cold away did shake: Tho mov'd with wrath, and shame, and Ladies Of all attonce he cast avengd to be, And with so' exceeding furie at him strake, That forced him to stoupe upon his knee: Had he not stouped so, he should have cloven bee.

XIII

And to him said; 'Goe now, proud Miscreant, Thyselfe thy message do to german deare; Alone he, wandring, thee too long doth want: Goe say, his foe thy shield with his doth beare.' Therewith his heavie hand he high gan reare, Him to have slaine; when lo! a darkesome clowd

Upon him fell: he t.o where doth appeare, But vanisht is. The Elfe him calls alowd But answer pone receives; the darknes him does shrowd.

XIV

In haste Duessa from her place arose, And to him running said; 'O! prowest knight, That ever Ladie to her love did chose, Let now abate the terrour of your might, And quench the flame of furious despight, And bloodie vengeance: lo! th' infernall powres,

Covering your foe with cloud of deadly night, Have borne him hence to Plutoes balefull glory yours. bowres:

The conquest yours; I yours; the shield, and

Not all so satisfide, with gready eye He sought all round about, his thristy blade To bathe in blood of faithlesse enimy Who all that while lay hid in secret shade, He standes amazed how he thence should fade: At last the trumpets Triumph sound on hie; And running Heralds humble homage made, Greeting him goodly with new victorie,
And to him brought the shield, the cause of
enmitie.

Wherewith he goeth to that soveraine Queene: And falling her before on lowly knee,

To her makes present of his service Which she accepts with thankes Greatly advauncing his gay chevi So marcheth home, and by her knight,

Whom all the people followe with Shouting, and clapping all their hight,

That all the ayre it fills, and flyes

Home is he brought, and layd i Where many skilfull leaches him To salve his hurts, that yet still fre In wine and oyle they wash his wo And softly gan embalme on everie And all the while most heavenly About the bed sweet musicke did a Him to beguile of griefe and agony And all the while Duessa wept fal

XVIII

As when a wearie traveiler, that By muddy shore of broad seven-me Unweeting of the perillous wandri Doth meete a cruell craftie Crocod Which, in false griefe hyding hi Doth weepe full sore, and shedd The foolish man, that pities all this w His mournefull plight, is swallow

Forgetfull of his owne that minde

XIX

So wept Duessa untill eventyde. That shyning lampes in Joves were light;

Then forth she rose, ne lenger wou But comes unto the place where knight,

In slombring swownd, nigh voy Lay cover'd with inchaunted cloud Whom when she found, as she plight,

To wayle his wofull case she would But to the Easterne coast of hea speedy way:

Where griesly Night, with visage That Phoebus chearefull face durst And in a foule blacke pitchy mantle She findes forth comming from he Where she all day did hide her hat Before the dore her yron charet sta Already harnessed for journey new And cole blacke steedes yborne of he That on their rusty bits did char were wood.

XXI

she saw Duessa, sunny bright, 1 gold and jewels shining cleare, grew amazed at the sight, equainted light began to feare, al such brightnes there appeare; have backe retyred to her cave, itches speach she gan to heare, t. O thou dreaded Dame! I crave

XXII

and foorth Duessa gan proceede: -- t auncient Grandmother of all. en Jove, whom thou at first didst it house of Gods cælestiall. beget in Damogorgons hall, be serets of the world unmade ist thou thy Nophewes deare to fall. sword most shamefully betrade? the stout Sansjoy doth sleepe in v shade.

VXIII

before, I saw with bitter eyes - v shrinck and rue ith his speare-. ; ray of towles in field he lyes, the was to me too dearely deare. _ ds then boots it to be borne, As some see evill heare? or the reat Nightes children scorne. 50.0

up, dreary Dame, of darknes the reliques of thy race; then avenge, and let be seene 1 Night in brightest day bath

who iren of fayre light deface, stanto a some compassion movid. the term of that great mothers face: to r hart was never provid recognion she hated, never lov'd:

XXV

Deare daughter, rightly may I rew r. as children borne of mee, sees which their foes ensew: . --- the stream of destince, · daybe of strong necessitor, of the to Joves eternall seat? t Day he favoureth, I see,

And by my ruines thinkes to make them great: To make one great by others losse is bad excheat.

XXVI

'Yet shall they not escape so freely all, For some shall pay the price of others guilt; And he the man that made Sansfoy to fall, Shall with his owne blood price that he hath spilt. I have told the message which I But what art thou, that telst of Nephews kilt? I, that do scome not I, Duessa ame,

Quoth she, how ever now, in garments gilt And gorgeous gold anayd, I to thee came, Duessa I, the daughter of Deceipt and Shame."

XXVII

Then, bowing downe her aged backe, she kist The wicked witch, saying, In that tayre face The false resemblaunce of Deceipt, I wist, Did closely lurke; yet so true-seeming grace It carried, that I scarse in darksome place Could it discerne, though I the mother bee Of falshood, and roote of Duessaes race. O welcome, child whom I have longd to see, And now have seene unwares. Lo! now I goe with thee.

XXVIII

Then to her yron wagon she betakes, of triends, nor layd on groning And with her beares the fowle welfavourd witch. [makes:

Through mirkesome aire her ready way she Her twyfold Teme, of which two blacke as pitch,

And two were browne, yet each to each unlich, to here her Nephewes are so fowle. Did softly swim away, ne ever stamp Unlesse she chaunst their stubborne mouths to twitch;

Then, forming tarre, their bridles they would And trampling the fine element would fiercely ratnp.

XXIX

So well they sped, that they be come at length Unto the place whereas the Paynim lay, D void of ontward sence and native strength, Coverd with charmed cloud from yew of day, a And sight of men, since his late luckelesse fray. His ernell wounds, with cruddy blond congeald, They binden up so wisely as they may,

And handle softly, till they can be heald: So lay him in her charett, close in night con ceald.

XXX

And, all the while she stood upon the ground-The wakefull dogs did never cease to bay, As giving warning of th' unwonted sounds With which her yron wheeles did them allray. 36

And her darke griesly looke them much dismay: The messenger of death, the ghastly owle, With drery shrickes did also her bewray; And hungry wolves continually did howle At her abhorred face, so filthy and so fowle.

XXXI

Thence turning backe in silence softe they stole.

And brought the heavy corse with easy pace To yawning gulfe of deepe Avernus hole. By that same hole an entraunce, darke and bace.

With smoake and sulphur hiding all the place, Descends to hell, there creature never past, That backe retourned without heavenly grace

But dreadfull Furies, which their chaines have [men aghast. brast,

And damned sprights sent forth to make ill

XXXII

By that same way the direfull dames doe drive

Their mournefull charett, fild with rusty blood, And downe to Plutoes house are come bilive: Which passing through, on every side them The trembling ghosts with sad amazed mood,

Chattring their iron teeth, and staring wide With stony cies; and all the hellish brood Of feends infernall flockt on every side, To gaze on erthly wight that with the Night durst ride.

XXXIII

They pas the bitter waves of Acheron, Where many soules sit wailing woefully, And come to fiery flood of Phlegeton, Whereas the damned ghosts in torments fry, Aud with sharp shrilling shrickes doe bootlesse CTV

Cursing high Jove, the which them thither sent. The house of endlesse paine is built thereby, In which ten thousand sorts of punishment The cursed creatures doe eternally torment,

Before the threshold dreadfull Cerberus His three deformed heads did lay along, Curled with thousand adders venemous, And lilled forth his bloody daming tong: At them he gan to reare his bristles strong, And felly gnarre, untill Dayes enemy

And suffered them to passen quietly; For she in hell and heaven had power equally.

For daring tempt the Queene of heaven to And Sisyphus an huge round stone did rei Against an hill, ne might from labour lin; There thristy Tantalus hong by the chin; And Tityus fed a vultur on his maw; Typhœus joynts were stretched on a gin; Theseus condemned to endlesse slouth by h And tifty sisters water in leke vessels draw

There was Ixion turned on a wheele,

XXXVI

They all, beholding worldly wights in pl Leave off their worke, unmindfull of their To gaze on them; who forth by them doem Till they be come unto the furthest part; Where was a Cave ywrought by wondror Deepe, darke, uneasy, dolefull, comfortless In which sad Aesculapius far apart Emprisond was in chaines remedile For that Hippolytus rent corse he did redre

XXXVII

Hippolytus a jolly huntsman was, That wont in charett chace the forning bot He all his Peeres in beauty did surpa But Ladies love as losse of time forbore: His wanton stepdame loved him the more But, when she saw her offred sweets reft Her love she turnd to hate, and him before His father fierce of treason false accusd. And with her gealous termes his open en abusd:

XXXVIII

Who, all in rage, his Sea-god syre besong Some cursed vengeaunce on his sonne tod From surging gulf two Monsters streight w brought, With dread whereof his chacing steedes agh Both charett swifte and huntsman overce His goodly corps, on ragged cliffs yrent,

Was quite dismembred, and his members of

scattered on every mountaine as he went,

That of Hippolytus was lefte no monime

XXXIX

His cruell step-dame, seeing what was d Her wicked daies with wretched knife dide In death avowing th' innocence of her at Which hearing, his rash syre began to result is heare, and hasty tong that did offends. The gathering up the reliques of his small And felly gnarre, untill Dayes enemy
Did him appease; then downe his taile he By Dianes meanes, who was Hippolyts a
Them brought to Aesculape, that by his a Did heale them all againe, and joyned part.

XI. sus science in mans witt to rain vired could renew again, fe he might him not deprive. did thrust him downe alive, ; thunderbolt ywounded sore : remaining, he did alwaics strive

a salves to health for to restore,

X 1.1

ent Night arriving did alight h weary wayne, and in her armes b weary wayne, and in its analysis lay lay lay of caytive wretched thralls, that wayled night un discover all his harmes, im with prayer and with praise, her request prolong her nephews;

hing, which daily yet I rew. zarise of my continued paine impt to like end to renew. 1. that, thrust from heaven dew, p+naunce for one fault I pay. goled crime with vengeaunce new me to ceke ? Can Night defray Candring Jove, that rules both and day?

MAILIE

eith sher 'but, sith that heavens t. or, that can t not hope for thing; t that more thee hurten might. wre of everlasting Night? O then far renowmed some shew thy famous might that els hath to thee wonne

ar digreater praise, both never to

hand gan to his wounds to lay, - Is the which his art did teach: = seem, from thence arose away f dredd darknesse, and let stay to there in the leaches cure; searning, took her wouted way

To ronne her timely race, whilst Phoebus pure vizd, that could the dead revive. In westerne waves his weary wagon did recure.

XLV

The false Duessa, leaving novous Night, Returnd to stately pallace of Dame Pryde: Where when she came, she found the Facry knight beavenly fire that raged ever-Departed thence; albee his woundes wyde Not throughly heald unready were to ryde. Good cause he had to hasten thence away; For on a day his wary Dwarfe had spyde Where in a dungeon deepe huge nombers

and day:

XLVI

A ruefull sight as could be seene with eie, ht from dore of death mote raise, Of whom he learned had in secret wise The hidden cause of their captivitie; How mortgaging their lives to Covetise. Through wastfull Pride and wanton Riotise, They were by law of that proud Tyrannesse, proth he) thou temptest me Provokt with Wrath and Envyes false surmise, Condemned to that Dongeon mercilesse, Where they should live in wo, and dye in wretchednesse.

XLVII

There was that great proud king of Babylon, That would compell all nations to adore, And him as onely God to call upon; Till, through celestiall doome thrown out of Into an Oxe he was transformd of yore. | dore, There also was king Crossus, that enhaunst His hart too high through his great richesse store .

And proud Antiochus, the which advaunst be aven bath the excluded quight. His cursed hand gainst God, and on his altares daunst.

XLVIII

And them long time before, great Nimrod was, That first the world with sword and fire war-And aft r him old Ninus far did pas | rayd; In princely pomp, of all the world obayd. There also was that mightie Monarch layd Low under all, yet above all in pride. That name of native syre did towle upbrayd, Tr-va:14: And then the learned And would as Ammons sonne be magnified.

Till, scornd of God and man, a shamefull death he dide.

All these together in one heape were throwne, Like carkases of beastes in butchers stall. And in another corner wide were strowne The Antique ruins of the Romanes fall:

Great Romaius, the Grandsyre of them all: Proud Farquin, and too lordly Lengulas: Stout Scipes and stubborne Hanniball: Ambitions Sylla, and sterne Marius: [nius, High Caesar, great Pompey, and ners Anto-

.

Amongst these mightie men were wemen mixt. Proud wemen, vaine, forgetfull of their yoke. The beld Semiramis, whose sides transfixt With sonnes own blade her fowle reproches

spoke: Fayre Sthenobra, that her selfe did choke With wilfull chord for wanting of ner will; High minded Cleopatra, that with stroke Of Aspes sting her selfe did stoutly kill; And thousands moe the like that did that dongeon fill.

LI

Besides the endlesse routes of wretched For many corses, like a great Lay-sta thralles.

Of murdred men, which therein strong the strong stron

Which thither were assembled day by day From all the world, after their world! falles, Through wicked pride and wasted welthes decay.

But most of all, which in that dongeon lay. Fell from high Princes courtes, or Ladies bowres,

Where they in ydle pomp, or wanton play,

Consumed had their goods and thowres.

And lastly thrown themselves into the

LI

Whose case whenas the careful Ditould.

And made ensample of their mournfu Unto his Maister, he no lenger would There dwell in perill of like painefull But earely rose; and, ere that de light

Discovered had the world to heaven. He by a privy Posterne tooke his flig. That of no envious eyes he mote be a For, doubtlesse, death ensewd if any cryde.

LIII

Scarse could be footing find in that fe For many corses, like a great Lay-sta Of murdred men, which therein stroy Without remorse or decent funerall; Which al through that great Prince did fall,

And came to shamefull end. And ther Forth ryding underneath the castell A Donghill of dead carcases he spyd The dreadfull spectacle of that sad Pryde.

CANTO VI.

From lawlesse lust by wondrous grace Fayre Una is releast: Whom salvage nation does adore, And learnes her wise beheast.

1

As when a ship, that flyes fayre under sayle, An hidden rocke escaped hath unwares, That lay in waite ner wrack for to bewaile, The Marriner yet halfe amazed stares At perill past, and yet in doubt ne dares To joy at his foolhappie oversight: So doubly is distrest twixt joy and cares The dreadlesse corage of this Elfin knight, Having escapt so sad ensamples in his sight.

11

Yet sad he was, that his too hastie speed
The fayre Duess' had forst him leave behind;
For greater conquest of hard love he
And yet more sad, that Una, his deare dreed,
Her truth had stayed with treason so unkind:

Straines.

Yet cryme in her could never creatur But for his love, and for her own self She wandred had from one to other ! Him for to seeke, ne ever would forsa Till her unwares the fiers Sansloy did a

111

Who, after Archimagoes fowle defeated her away into a forest wilde; And, turning wrathfull fyre to lustful With beastly sin thought her to have And made the vassall of his pleasures Yet first he cast by treatie, and by triller to persuade that stubborne for t For greater conquest of hard love he That workes it to his will, then he this straines.

ing wordes he courted her a while; The wyld woodgods, arrived in the place, a levely and oft sighing sore, There tind the virgin, doolfull, desolate,

· saw his flatt'ring artes to fayle, engines bett from batteree; force he gan the fort assayle, weend possessed soone to bee, n speak of ransackt chastitee. ly virgin thus outraged see. rengeance just so long withhold. The innocent pray in hast he does forsake; it dashing thames upon that Pay. Which, quitt from death, yet quakes in every or flashing flames upon that Pay-- ld ?

.- mayden, carefull, comfortlesse, out thrilling shrickes, and shrick-. Labra of wemens great distresse,

a many so most shamefull sight, green in foggy cloud implyes,

the proceeding thought, colories can make her selfe a way. and it for this Lady wrought, rass to plack the gryped pray. and shricks so loud did bray, Factors and Satyres far away w at were danneing in a round,

. they heard that patteons strained so their rurall meriment. [voice, - rose the far rebownded novce, it wight so leadly did lament. 1 . They come incontinent: the raging Sarazin espyde. · ... monstrous rablement. I e to ver saw, he durst not byde. ready steed, and fast away gan

hart did tempt with diverse guile: With ruffled rayments, and fayre blubbred face, and lookes, and sighes she did As her outrageous foe had left her late; [hate. amond stellfast evermore. [abhore; And trembling yet through feare of former at his fyric lustfull eye, All stand amazed at so uncouth sight, he wele that hong her face before: And gin to pittle her unhappie state: + teautie shyne as brightest skye. All stand astonied at her beautie bright, us beartly hart t'efforce her chas- In their rude eyes unworthic of so wofull plight.

She, more amazd, in double dread doth dwell: And every tender part for feare does shake.
As when a greedy Wolfe, through honger fell,

A seely Lamb far from the flock does take, that doe this hideous act behold. Of whom he meanes his bloody feast to make, A Lyon spyes fast running towards him,

lim [grim. With chaunge of feare, to see the Lyon looke so

Such fearefull fitt assaid her trembling hart, At plantes important the skyes. Ne word to speake, he govern-Ne word to speake, ne joynt to move, she had; And read her sorrow in her count'nance sad;

Their frowning forheades with rough hornes What witt of mortal And rustick horror, all asyde doe lay ; [yclad, | plight? And, gently grenning, shew a semblance glad | plight? To comfort her; and, feare to put away,

Their backward bent knees teach her humbly to obay.

XII

The doubtfull Damzell dare not yet committ Her single person to their barbarous truth; But still twixt feare and hope amazd does sitt, Late learnd what harme to hasty trust ensu'th, was sies and forestes did resownd: They, in compassion of her tender youth, And wonder of her beautic soveravne. Are wonne with pitty and unwonted ruth; Systems slept in shady arber And, all prostrate upon the lowly playne. Doe kisse her feete, and fawne on her with

count nance fayne

Their harts she ghesseth by their humble And yieldes her to extremitie of time : | guise. So from the ground she fearelesse doth arise, And walketh forth without suspect of crime. They, all as glad as birdes of joyous Pryme, Thence lead her forth, about her danucing round.

/Shouting, and singing all a shepheards tyme;

And with greene braunches strowing all the But, when they vewed have her beavenly gr ground.

Do worship her as Queene with olive girlond cround.

XIV

And all the way their merry pipes they sound. That all the woods with doubled Eccho ring;

And with their horned feet doe weare the ground, Leaping like wanton kids in pleasant Spring.

So towards old Sylvanus they her bring; Who, with the noyse awaked, commeth out To weet the cause, his weake steps governing And aged limbs on cypresse stadle stout. And with an yvic twyne his waste is girt about.

xv Far off he wonders what them makes so glad;

Or Bacchus merry fruit they did invent, Or Cybeles franticke rites have made them mad: They, drawing nigh, unto their God present That flowre of fayth and beautie excellent. The God himselfe, vewing that mirrhour rare. Stood long amazd, and burnt in his intent His owne fayre Dryope now he thinkes not faire, And Pholoe fowle, when her to this he doth

The woodborne people fall before her flat, And worship her as Goddesse of the wood;

compaire.

And old Sylvanus selfe bethinkes not what To thinke of wight so favre, but gazing stood That was in sacred bandes of wedlocke type In doubt to deeme her borne of earthly brood : To Therion, a loose unruly swayne, Sometimes dame Venus selfe he seemes to see; But Venus never had so sober mood: Sometimes Diana he her takes to be. But misseth bow and shaftes, and buskins to her knee.

XVII

By vew of her he ginneth to revive His ancient love, and dearest Cyparisse; And calles to mind his pourtraiture alive. How favre he was, and yet not favre to this; And how he slew with glauncing dart amisse A gentle Hynd, the which the lovely boy Did love as life, above all worldly blisse; For griefe whereof the lad n'ould after joy, But pynd away in anguish and selfe-wild annov.

The wooddy nymphes, faire Hamadryades, Her to behold do thither runne apace : And all the troupe of light-foot Naiades Flocke all about to see her lovely face;

They envy her in their malitious mind And fly away for feare of fowle disgrace But all the Satyres scorne their woody ki And henceforth nothing faire but her on

they find.

Glad of such lucke, the luckelesse lucky Did her content to please their feeble ex And long time with that salvage people sta And long time with that savage people and to gather breath in many miseryes.

During which time her gentle wit she plyst To teach them truth, which worshipt her And made her th' Image of Idolatryes; [val But when their bootlesse zeale she did resta From her own worship, they her Asse v worship fayn.

It fortuned, a noble warlike knight By just occasion to that forrest came To seeke his kindred, and the lignage righ From whence he tooke his weldeserved a He had in armes abroad wonne muchell fa And fild far landes with glorie of his migi Plaine, faithfull, true, and enimy of shame And ever lov'd to fight for Ladies right; But in vaine glorious frayes he litle did deli

XXI

A Satures sonne, yborne in forrest wyld, By straunge adventure as it did betyde, And there begotten of a Lady myld. Fayre Thyamis, the daughter of Labryde; Who had more joy to raunge the forrest wy. And chase the salvage beast with busic page Then serve his Ladies love, and wa 'easures vayne.

XXII

The forlorne mayd did with loves long burne. And could not lacke her lovers company; But to the woods she goes, to serve her a And followes other game and venery: A Satyre chaunst her wandring for to the And, kindling coles of lust in brutish eye The loyall linkes of wedlocke did unbind And made her person thrall unto his be kind. XXIII

So long in secret cabin there he held Her captive to his sensuall desyn Till that with timely fruit her belly swe And bore a boy unto that salvage syre:

hi beastes and woods, from lawes en exilde.

ZZIV

taught the tender ymp was but 14 roring Buls he would him make d ryde their backes, not made to: In which his might was never overthrowne; ne kes in flight to overtake, [quake, | In which his might was never overthrowne; teast for leare of him did fly, and | But through al Facry lond his famous worth

XXV

fearlesse and so fell he grew, n -yre, and maister of his guise, endde at his horrid yew; in all of hurt, would him advise · 2stes not rashly to despise. is to proveke; for he would learne or and make the Libbard sterne 2. When in rage he for revenge did

reake his powre approved more. a yron yokes he would compell; Pether, and the tusked Bore, event, and the Tigre ernell, ristrans in equall teme to draw. a their stabborne harts to quell. trace tame with dreadfull aw, s ast they feared as a tyrans law.

AXVII ~ dor came upon a day series, to see her little sonne; the same to meet him in the way. re- or le mell pastime donne; * m a Lyonesse did runne, : A with rage did lowd requere .re, whom he away had wonne: to he sake saw how he did beare. 111111

Dirme all quaked at the sight, tacke 200 fast to fly away; · revokt from vaine affright, sec per-waded was to stay,

he suffred her for to may and the late-home childe; 'Ah Satyrane, my dearing and my leaving him the late-home childe; 'For love of me leave off this dreadfull play; For love of me leave off this dreadfull play; And then to him these womanish words gan Ah Satyrane, my dearling and my joy, [say : To dally thus with death is no fit toy : Go, find some other play-fellowes, mine own sweet boy.

In these and like delightes of bloody game taught the tender ymp was but wardize and bastard feare:
Wardize and bastard feare:
Me trayned was, till ryper years he raught;
And there abode, whylst any beast of name
Walkt in that forrest, whom he had not taught on and the rugged Beare; [teare; Walkt in that forces, whom he had not taught the Beares teats her whelps to To feare his force; and then his courage haught Desyrd of forreine foemen to be knowne. And far abroad for straunge adventures sought;

XXX

Yet evermore it was his maner faire,

was blown.

After long labours and adventures spent, Unto those native woods for to repaire, To see his syre and ofspring auncient. And now he thither came for like intent; Where he unwares the fairest Una found, Straunge Lady in so straunge habiliment. Teaching the Satyres, which her sat around. Trew sacred lore, which from her sweet lips did redound.

XXXI He wondred at her wisedome hevenly rare.

Whose like in womens witt he never knew: And, when her curteous deeds he did compare, Gan her admire, and her sad sorrowes rew, Blaming of Fortune, which such troubles threw, And joyd to make proofe of her cruelty On gentle Dame, so burtlesse and so frew: Thenceforth he kept her goodly company. And learnd her discipline of faith and verity.

XXXII

But she, all yowd unto the Rederosse Knight, His wandring perill closely did lament. Ne in this new acquaintaunce could delight; But her deare heart with anguish did torment, And all her witt in secret counsels spent, How to escape. At last in privy wise To Satyrane she shewed her intent; Who, glad to gain such favour, gan devise, recept arms withouten childish How with that pensive Maid he best might thence arise.

XXXIII

So on a day, when Satyres all were gone To do their service to Sylvanus old, The gentle virgin, left behinde alone, , He led away with corage stout and bold. Too late it was to Satyres to be told, Or ever hope recover her agains: In vaine he seekes that having cannot hold, So fast he carried her with carefull paine, That they the woods are past, and come now to the plaine.

XXXIV

The better part now of the lingring day They traveild had, whenas they far espide A weary wight forwanding b, the way; And towards him they gan in laste to ride, To weete of newes that did abroad betide, Or tidings of her knight of the Redcrosse; But he them spying gan to turne aside For feare, as seemd, or for some feigned losse: The thing that might not be, and yet More greedy they of newes fast towards him Where is, (said Satyrane) 'the do crosse,

A silly man, in simple weeds forworne, And soild with dust of the long dried way : His sandales were with toilsome travell torne, And face all tand with scorehing sunny ray, As he had traveild many a sommers day Through boyling sands of Arabie and Ynde, And in his hand a Jacobs staffe, to stay His weary limbs upon ; and eke behind His scrip did hang, in which his needments he did bind.

XXXVI

The knight, approching nigh, of him inquerd Tidings of warre, and of adventures new; But warres, nor new adventures, none he herd. Then Una gan to aske, if ought he knew, Or heard abroad of that her champion trew, That in his armour bare a croslet red?

Ay me! Deare dame, (quoth he) 'well may

To tell the sad sight which mine cies have red; These cies did see that knight both living and eke ded,'

XXXVII

That cruell word her tender hart so thrild, That suddein cold did ronne through every And stony horrour all her sences fild [vaine, With dying fitt, that downe she fell for paine. The knight her lightly reared up againe, And comforted with curteous kind reliefe : Then, wonne from death, she bad him tellen plaine

The further processe of her hidden griefe: The lesser pangs can beare who hath endur'd the chief.

XXXVIII

Then gan the Pilgrim thus: 'I chaunst this This fatall day that shall I ever rew, [day, To see two knights, in travell on my way, (A sory sight) arraung'd in batteill new,

Both breathing vengeaunce, both

My feareful flesh did tremble at th To see their blades so greedily im That, dronke with blood, yet thrist What more? the Redcrosse knight with Paynim knife.'

XXXXIX

'Ah! dearest Lord,' (quoth she) that bee,

And he the stoutest knight that e Ah! dearest dame,' (quoth hee) +

That him of life, and us of joy, he Not faraway,' (quoth he) 'he hence Foreby a fountaine, where I late h Washing his bloody wounds, that steele were cleft.'

Therewith the knight thence ma in hast,

Whiles Una, with huge heavinesse Could not for sorrow follow him s And soone he came, as he the place Whereas that Pagan proud him se In secret shadow by a fountaine si Even he it was, that carst would he Faire Una; whom when Satyrane With foule reprochfull words he defide,

And said; 'Arise, thou cursed M That hast with knightlesse guile, erous train,

Faire knighthood fowly shamed. That good knight of the Redcrosse to Arise, and with like treason now n Thy guilty wrong, or els thee guil The Sarazin, this hearing, rose am And, catching up in hast his three-se And shining helmet, soone him bu field.

XLII

And, drawing nigh him, said; 'A In evill houre thy focs thee hither Anothers wrongs to wreak upon th Yet ill thou blamest me for having My name with guile and traiterous That Rederosse knight, perdie, I me But had he beene where earst his

this errour shalt, I hope, now proven

-

X1.111

ith they gan, both furious and fell, ler blowes, and fiersly to assaile er, lent his enimy to quell, their force they perst both plate d marie.

is while furrowes in their fleshes fraile, and pitty any living cie. [raile of blood adowne their sides did and blood could not them satisfic: gred after death, both chose to win, die.

X1.1V

they fight, and full revenge pursue, tind, each themselves to breathen lett. retreshed, battell oft renue. two Bores, with rancling malice mett, whiles tresh bleeding fiercely frett; respire. is both earth, the whiles they may Le to fight agame, new breathed and : Pr.

VIX

and fight retourne, increasing more -aut torce, and cruell rage attonce, and strokes more hugely then before; their dory wounds, and bloody gore, del ormed, searsely could be known, as Unia traught with auguish sore,

sunter value his errour should not rew: Led with their noise which through the aire was thrown. l had sown. Arriv'd wher they in erth their fruitles blood

Whom all so soone as that proud Sarazin Espide, he gan revive the memory Of his leud lusts, and late attempted sin, And lefte the doubtfull battell bastily, To catch her, newly offred to his eie But Satyrane, with strokes him turning, staid, And sternely bad him other businesse plie Then hunt the steps of pure unspotted Maid: Wherewith he al enraged these bitter speaches said.

XLVII

O foolish facries sonne! what fury mad Hath thee incenst to hast thy dolefull fate? Were it not better I that Lady had Then that thou hadst repented it too late? Most sencelesse man he, that himselfe doth hate, To love another: Lo! then, for thine ayd, ming wrath their cruell tuskes they Here take thy lovers token on thy pate. So they to fight; the whiles the royall Mayd Fledd farre away, of that proud Paynim sore afrayd.

XLVIII

But that false Pilgrim, which that leasing v. when these knights had breathed Being in deed old Archimage, did stay [told, In secret shadow all this to behold; And much rejoyced in their bloody fray: But, when he saw the Damsell passe away, He left his stond, and her pursewd apace, In hope to bring her to her last decay. But for to tell her lamentable cace, And eke this battels end, will need another

CANTO VII.

The Rederosse knight is captive made By Gyaunt proud opprest. Prince Arthure meets with Una greatly with those newes distrest.

. 15 . . wi-e, what earthly witt so ware, ere the crafty cumning traine,

compt doth maske in visour faire. · · · c alours, died deepe in graine,

 2 2e-tures to her jurpose frame. --- man with guile to entertaine?

Daessa, cloked with Fidessaes name.

Who when, returning from the drery Night, She found not in that perilous hous of Pryde, Where she had left the noble Rederosse knight, Her hoped pray, she would no lenger byde, we truth, whose shape she well can. But forth she went to seeke him far and wide. Ere long she found, whereas he wearie sate To reste him selfe foreby a fountaine syde. Disarmed all of yron-coted Plate; actr so of her art was that false Dame, And by his side his steed the grassy forage 111

Hee feedes upon the cooling shade, and bayes His aweatic forehead in the breathing wynd, Which through the trembling leaves full gently playes

Wherein the chearefull birds of sundry kynd Doe chaunt sweet musick to delight his mynd, The witch approching gan him fayrely greet, And with reproch of carelesnes unkynd Upbrayd, for leaving her in place unmeet,

with hony sweet.

Unkindnesse past, they gan of solace treat, And bathe in pleasaunce of the joyous shade, Which shielded them against the boyling heat, And with greene boughes decking a gloomy glade,

About the fountaine like a girlond made; Whose bubbling wave did ever freshly well, Ne ever would through fervent sommer fade: The sacred Nymph, which therein wont to dwell

Was out of Dianes favor, as it then befell.

The cause was this: one day, when Phoebe fayre With all her band was following the chace, This nymph, quite tyr'd with heat of scorching Satt downe to rest in middest of the race : [ayre, The goddesse wroth gan fowly her disgrace And badd the waters, which from her did flow, Be such as she her selfe was then in place. Thenceforth her waters wexed dull and slow And all that drinke thereof do faint and feeble grow.

Hereof this gentle knight unweeting was; And lying downe upon the sandie graile, Dronke of the streame, as cleare as christall Eftsoones his manly forces gan to fayle, [glas: And mightie strong was turnd to feeble frayle, His chaunged powres at first them selves not Till crudled cold his corage gan assayle, [felt; nd cheareful blood in fayntnes chill did melt, Which like a fever fit through all his bodie swelt.

Yet goodly court he made still to his Dame, Pourd out in loosnesse on the grassy grownd, Both carelesse of his health, and of his fame; Till at the last he heard a dreadfull sownd, Which through the wood loud bellowing did rebownd,

That all the earth for terror seemd to shake, And trees did tremble. Th' Elfe, therewith astowna,

Upstarted lightly from his looser And his unready weapons gan in

But ere he could his armour on Or gett his shield, his monstrous With sturdie steps came stalking An hideous Geaunt, horrible and That with his tallnesse seemd The ground eke groned under him With fowle words tempring faire, soure gall His living like saw never living Ne durst behold: his stature did The hight of three the tallest som

The greatest Earth his uncouth And blustring Æolus his boasted Who with his breath, which throu doth pas,

Her hollow womb did secretly in And fild her hidden caves with s That she conceiv'd; and trebling In which the wombes of wemen Brought forth this monstrous ma slyme,

Puft up with emptie wynd, and

So growen great, through arroga Of th' high descent whereof he w And through presumption of hi might,

All other powres and knighthood Such now he marcheth to this m And left to losse; his stalking ste Upon a snaggy Oke, which he ha Out of his mothers bowelles, and His mortall mace, wherewith h dismayde.

That, when the knight he spyde vaunce

With huge force and insupportab And towardes him with dreadfull Who haplesse, and eke hopelesse, Did to him pace sad battaile to d Disarmd, disgraste, and inwardly And eke so faint in every joynt Through that fraile fountain whi made

That scarsely could be weeld

The Geaunt strooke so maynly That could have overthrowne a s And, were not hevenly grace t blesse.

He had beene pouldred all as thir

wary of that deadly stowre r lept from underneath the blow: reding was the villeins powre, the winde it did him overthrow. sences stound that still he lay full

that divelish yron Engin, wrought Hell, and framd by Furies skill, y Nitre and quick Sulphur fraught, with bollet rownd, ordaind to kill, fyre, the heavens it doth fill iring noyse, and all the ayre doth can breath, nor see, nor heare at will, nouldry cloud of duskish stincking [escapt the stroke. nly breath him daunts, who hath

And underneath his filthy feet did tread .1 when the Geaunt saw the knight, The sacred thinges, and holy heastes forehand he heaved up on hye, taught.
to dust thought to have battred Upon this dreadfull Beast with sevenfold head sea loud to him gan crye, reogito! greatest under skye v mortall hand for Ladies sake; v sake, and doe him not to dye, -ht thme eternall bondslave make,

ned, and did stay from further organily guerdon as she spake: she came into his armes wingly to grace did take, is tooke the slombred sencelesse. and out of his swowne awake.

castle brought with hastic forse, Is noted deepe him threw without

: ay forth Duessa was his deare, tomourd in his haughtie eve: r gold and purple pall to weare, 1-wd with royall majestye · make her dreaded more of men. - harte- with awfull terror tye, - least ybredd in filthy fen عد عال

XVII Such one it was, as that renowmed Snake

Which great Alcides in Stremona slew, Long fostred in the filth of Lerna lake: Whose many heades, out budding ever new, Did breed him endlesse labor to subdew. But this same Monster much more ugly was, For seven great heads out of his body grew, An yron brest, and back of scaly bras And all embrewd in blood his eyes did shine as glas.

XVIII

His tayle was stretched out in wondrous length. That to the hous of hevenly gods it raught:

And with extorted powre, and borrow'd strength, The everburning lamps from thence it braught,

And prowdly threw to ground, as things of naught;

He sett the false Duessa, for more aw and dread.

The wofull Dwarfe, which saw his maisters full v worthy meed, unto thy Leman Whiles he had keeping of his grasing steed, And valiant knight become a caytive thrall, When all was past, tooke up his forlorne weed; His mightie Armour, missing most at need; His silver shield, now idle, maisterlesse; His poynant speare that many made to bleed, The rueful moniments of heavinesse: And with them all departes to tell his great distresse.

XX

He had not travaild long, when on the way He wofull Lady, wofull Una, met, Fast flying from that Paynims greedy pray, Whilest Satyrane him from pursuit did let. Who when her eyes she on the Dwarf had set, And saw the signes that deadly tydinges spake, She fell to ground for sorrowfull regret, And lively breath her sad brest did forsake; Yet might her pitteous hart be seene to pant and quake.

The mess-inger of so unhappie newes Would faine have dyde: dead was his hart

that be had kept long time in dark- Yet outwardly some little comfort showes. At last, recovering hart, he does begin

46

Then gins her grieved ghost thus to lament Wherein captiv'd, of life or death be sto and mourne:

'Ye dreary instruments of dolefull sight, That doe this deadly spectacle behold, Why doe ye lenger feed on loathed light, Or liking find to gaze on earthly mould, Sith cruell fates the carefull threds unfould The which my life and love together tyde? Now let the stony dart of sencelesse cold

Perce to my hart, and pas through everie side, And let eternall night so sad sight fro me hyde.

XXIII

'O lightsome day! the lampe of highest Jove, First made by him mens wandring waves to guyde,

When darknesse he in deepest dongeon drove. Henceforth thy hated face for ever hyde, And shut up heavens windowes shyning wyde; For earthly sight can nought but sorrow breed, And late repentance which shall long abyde: Mine eyes no more on vanitie shall feed, But seeled up with death shall have their deadly meed.

Then downe againe she fell unto the ground,

But he her quickly reared up againe: Thrise did she sinke adowne in deadly swownd, And thrise he her reviv'd with busic paine. At last when life recover'd had the raine, And over-wrestled his strong enimy, With foltring tong, and trembling overievaine, Like glauncing light of Phaebus brig The which these reliques sad present unto mine eye.

XXV

'Tem; estuous fortune hath spent all her spight, And thrilling sorrow throwne his utmost dart: Thy sad tong cannot tell more heavy plight Then that I feele, and harbour in mine hart: Who hath endur'd the whole can beare ech

If death it be, it is not the first wound [smart. That launched bath my brest with bleeding Shapt like a Ladies head, exceeding a Begin, and end the bitter balefull stound; If lesse then that I feare, more favour I have found,

The subtile traines of Archimago old , [clare: The wanton loves of false Fidessa fayre, [bold; Of mother perle; and buckled with a Bought with the blood of vanquisht Paynim

To rubb her temples, and to chause her chin,
And everie tender part does tosse and turne:
So hardly he the flitted life does win
Unto her native prison to retourne;
The combat which he with Sansjoy did he
The lucklesse conflict with the Gyaunt so doubt.

XXVII

She heard with patience all unto the end, And strove to maister sorrowfull assay, Which greater grew the more she did con And almost rent her tender hart in tway; And love fresh coles unto her fire did lay; For greater love, the greater is the losse. Was never Lady loved dearer day Then she did love the knight of the Redcrot For whose deare sake so many troubles I

xxviii

did tosse.

At last when fervent sorrow slaked was She up arose, resolving him to find Alive or dead; and forward forth doth pe All as the Dwarfe the way to her assynd; And evermore, in constant carefull mind She fedd her wound with fresh renewed b Long tost with stormes, and bet with bil wind.

High over hills, and lowe adowne the dale She wandred many a wood, and measurd a vale.

At last she chaunced by good hap to med

A goodly knight, faire marching by the w Together with his Squyre, arayed meet: His glitterand armour shined far away From top to toe no place appeared bare, That deadly dint of steele endanger may. Athwart his brest a bauldrick brave be w

That shind, like twinkling stars, with at

most pretious rare.

tong.

And in the midst thereof one pretious sta Of wondrous worth, and eke of wor mights Like Hesperus emongst the lesser lights. And strove for to amaze the weaker sig Thereby his mortall blade full comely In yvory sheath, yearv'd with curious al Then gan the Dwarfe the whole discourse de-Whose hilts were burnisht gold, and I strong

XXXI

d on the bever, seemd to throw e horrour to faint hartes did show;

XXXII

p of all his loftie crest, heares discolourd diversly, led pearle and gold full richly

nd seemd to daunce for jollity, mond tree ymounted hye -ne Silinis all alone. us brave bedecked daintily; r locks do tremble every one

XXXIII

shield all closely cover'd was, mortall eve be ever seene; -te-1 , not of enduring bras. mettals soon consumed beene, ine nd perfect pure and cleene is, one massy entire mould, et Adamant rocke with engines

I speare it never percen could.

XXXIV

o wight he never wont disclose, the testers, huge he would dismay, all armies of his foes, ty no heavens he would affray; 2 shone his glistring ray. - _ cerem face it did attaint. out his beames doth over-lay; victima wexed pale and faynt, too is stayed with magicke arts ... te.

AAXV

· arts hereof had any might. vor be of bold Enchaunters call; was not such as seemd in sight on her the raskall routes appall.

XXXVI

e Helmet, horrid all with gold,
s brightnesse and great terrour For he that made the same was knowne right
rest a Dragon did enfold [bredd: well

pawes, and over all did spredd. To have done much more admirable deedes, inges: his dreadfull hideous hedd, it Merlin was, which whylome did excell All living wightes in might of magicke spell: mouth bright sparckles fiery redd, Both shield and sword, and armour all he wrought

yle was stretcht adowne his back. For this young Prince, when first to armes he But, when he dyde, the Faery Queene it brought

To Faerie lond, where yet it may be seene, if sought:

XXXVII

A gentle youth, his dearely loved Squire, His speare of heben wood behind him bare Whose harmeful head, thrise heated in the fire, Had riven many a brest with pikehead square: A goodly person, and could menage faire His stubborne steed with curbed canon bitt, tle breath that under heaven is Who under him did trample as the aire, And chauft that any on his backe should sitt: The yron rowels into frothy fome he bitt.

XXXVIII

Whenas this knight nigh to the Lady drew, With lovely court he gan her entertaine; But, when he heard her answers loth, he knew Some secret sorrow did her heart distraine; Which to allay, and calme her storming paine, Faire feeling words he wisely gan display, And for her humor fitting purpose faine, to tall sword divide the substance To tempt the cause it selfe for to bewray, Wherewith enmoved, these bleeding words she gan to say.

XXXIX

 What worlds delight, or joy of living speach, Can hart, so plungd in sea of sorrowes deep, And heaped with so huge misfortunes, reach? The carefull cold beginneth for to creep, And in my heart his yron arrow steep, Soone as I thinke upon my bitter bale. Such helplesse harmes yts better hidden keep. Then rip up griefe where it may not availe: My last left comfort is my woes to weepe and waile.

Ah Lady deare,' quoth then the gentle knight, And did tade, and suddeine fall: Well may I ween your griefe is wondrous [spright, great; to - therewith he could transmew. For wondrous great griefe groneth in my dust, and dust to nought at all; Whiles thus I heare you of your sorrowes treat, in her the prouder lookes subdew. But, wochill Lady, let me you intrete, to gazing blind, or turne to other For to unfold the anguish of your hart: Mishaps are maistred by advice discrete,

And counsell mitigates the greatest smart: Found never help who never would his hurts impart.

XI.I

'O, but,' (quoth she) great griefe will not be The pitteous pray of his fiers crue

And can more easily be thought then said." · Right so,' (quoth he) · but he that never would Could never: will to might gives greatest aid."

But griefe.' (quoth she) 'does greater grow displaid,' If then it find not helpe, and breeds despaire.

staid.' | paire.' Whose kingdomes seat Cleopolis i
'No faith so fast,' (quoth she) 'but flesh does There to obtaine some such redou!
'Flesh may empaire,' (quoth he) 'but reason can That Parents deare from tyrants |

XLII His goodly reason, and well-guided speach, So deepe did settle in her gracious thought, That her perswaded to disclose the breach Which love and fortune in her heart had

wrought; And said; 'Faire Sir, I hope good hap hath Had throwne to ground the unreg You to inquere the secrets of my griefe,
Or that your wisedome will direct my thought,
Or that your prowesse can me yield reliefe:
Then, hears the story sad, which I shall tell you
Have felt the bitter dint of his ave briefe.

'The forlorne Maiden, whom your eies have

The laughing stocke of fortunes mockeries, Am th' onely daughter of a King and Queene, Whose parents deare, whiles equal destinies Did ronne about, and their felicities The favourable heavens did not envy, Did spred their rule through all the territories, Which Phison and Euphrates floweth by, ally: And Gehous golden waves doe wash continu-

XLIV

* Till that their cruell cursed enemy, An huge great Dragon, horrible in sight, Bred in the loathly lakes of Tartary, With murdrous ravine, and devouring might, Their kingdome spoild, and countrey wasted My loyalty, not such as it did seer quight:

Themselves, for feare into his jawes to fall, He forst to eastle strong to take their flight; Where, fast embard in mighty brasen wall, He has them now fowr years besiegd to make So thought I eke of him, and thinl them thrall.

XLV

'Full many knights, adventurous and stout, llave enterprized that Monster to subdew. From every coast that heaven walks about Have thither come the noble Martial crew,

That famous harde atchievem Yet never any could that girlond But all still shronke, and still he a All they, for want of faith, or guil

'At last, yled with far reported p Which flying fame throughout th Of doughty knights, whom Facry 1 That noble order hight of maiden Forthwith to court of Gloriane I : Despuire breeds not,' (quoth he) 'where faith is Of Gloriane, great Queene of glor staid.' might.

XLVII

'Yt was my chaunce (my chaun and good)

There for to find a fresh unproved Whose manly hands imbrewd in g brought Had never beene, ne ever by his n

'And ye, the forlorne reliques of His biting sword, and his devouring Which have endured many a dreat Can speake his prowesse that did ear And well could rule; now he ha To be the record of his ruefull losse And of my dolefull disaventurous O! heavie record of the good Rede Where have yee left your lord th well you tosse?

XLIX

'Well hoped I, and faire beginning That he my captive languor shoul Till, all unweeting, an Enchaunter His sence abusd, and made him to That rather death desire then such Be judge, ye heavens, that all t

esteeme, How I him lov'd, and love with all aright.

'Thenceforth me desolate he quite To wander where wilde fortune wou And other bywaies he himselfe bet Where never foote of living wight

chaunced false Duessa meete, e. mine onely deadly dread; er witchcraft, and misseeming

to follow her desires unmeete.

ubtile sleights she him betraid a Graunt huge and tall; umed, dissolute, dismaid, rised, and with mighty mall nervilesse him made to fall, i never foe before behold: darkesome dungeon, wretched

not backe the balefull body dead : Remedilesse for aie he doth him hold, This is my cause of griefe, more great then may be told.'

Ere she had ended all she gan to faint: But he her comforted, and faire bespake: Certes, Madame, ye have great cause of plaint; That stoutest heart, I weene, could cause to quake: But be of cheare, and comfort to you take; For till I have acquitt your captive knight, Assure your selfe I will you not forsake.'

His chearefull words reviv'd her chearelesse spright, ever right. So forth they went, the Dwarfe them guiding

CANTO VIII.

Faire virgin, to redeeme her deare, Brings Arthure to the fight : Who slayes the Gyaunt, wounds the beast, And strips Duessa quight.

many perils doe enfold man, to make him daily fall, heavenly grace doth him uphold, rath acquite him out of all. me, her care continuall, through his own foolish pride s to sinfull bands made thrall: is Rederosse knight in bands have thither guyd. diverance she this Prince doth

traveild thus, untill they came the builded strong and bye: the Dwarfe, 'Lo! yonder is the

Let !, my liege, doth lucklesse ly ; Gyaunts hatefull tyranny: ire Sir, your mightie powres assay, ight alighted by and by teed, and badd the Ladie stay.

~; iit., th' admirer of his might, torth towardes that castle wall, he found fast shutt, ne living

· same, nor answere commers call. a lowne his side in twisted gold . gav. Wyde wonders over all

Of that same hornes great virtues weren told, Which had approved bene in uses manifold.

Was never wight that heard that shrilling sownd, But trembling feare did feel in every vaine: Three miles it might be easy heard around, And Ecchoes three aunswer'd it selfe againe: No false enchauntment, nor deceiptfull traine, Might once abide the terror of that blast, But presently was void and wholly vaine: No gate so strong, no locke so firme and fast, But with that percing noise flew open quite, or brast.

The same before the Geaunts gate he blew, That all the castle quaked from the grownd, And every dore of freewill open flew. The Gyaunt selfe, dismaied with that sound, Where he with his Duessa dalhaunce found, In hast came rushing forth from inner bowre, nd or fight should him befall that With staring countenance sterne, as one stowre astownd,

And staggering steps, to weet what suddem Had wrought that horror strange, and dar'd his dreaded powre.

And after him the proud Duessa came. High mounted on her many headed beast. ar Squire an home of bugle small. And every head with fyric tongue did thanks And every head was crowned on his creast. And bloody mouthed with late cruell feast. That when the knight beheld, his mightie shild Upon his manly arme he soone addrest, And at him fiersly flew, with corage fild, And eger greedinesse through every member thrild.

VII

Therewith the Gyant buckled him to fight, Inflamd with scornefull wrath and high disdaine,

And lifting up his dreadfull club on hight, All armd with ragged snubbes and knottie

graine,
Him thought at first encounter to have slaine.
But wise and wary was that noble Pere;
And, lightly leaping from so monstrous maine,
Did fayre avoide the violence him nere:
It booted nought to thinke such thunderbolts
to beare.

VIII

Ne shame he thought to shonne so hideous might:

The vdle stroke, enforcing furious way,
Missing the marke of his missaymed sight,
Did fall to ground, and with his heavy sway
So deepely dinted in the driven clay,
That three yardes deepe a furrow up did
throw.

The sad earth, wounded with so sore assay, Did grone full grievous underneath the blow, And trembling with strange feare did like an erthquake show.

IX

As when almightie Jove, in wrathfull mood, To wreake the guilt of mortall sins is bent, Hurles forth his thundring dart with deadly

food

Enrold in flames, and smouldring dreriment,
Through riven cloudes and molten firmament:
The fiers threeforked engin, making way,
Both loftic towres and highest trees hath rent,
And all that might his angry passage stay;
And, shooting in the earth, castes up a mount
of clay,

X

His boystrous club, so buried in the grownd, He could not rearen up againe so light, But that the Knight him at advantage found; And, whiles he strove his combred clubbe to quight

Out of the earth, with blade all burning bright He smott off his left arme, which like a block Did tall to ground, deprived of native might: Large streames of blood out of the truncked stock

Forth gushed, like fresh water streame from He lightly left the foe with whom riven rocke.

And to the beast gan turne his ent

XI

Dismayed with so desperate dead And eke impatient of unwonted pa He loudly brayd with beastly yell That all the fieldes rebellowed aga As great a noyse, as when in Cym An heard of Bulles, whom kindly sting,

Doe for the milky mothers want of And fill the fieldes with troublous. The neighbor woods around with mur ring.

XII

That when his deare Duessa hear The evil stownd that daungerd he Unto his aide she hastily did draw Her dreadfull beast; who, swolne Came ramping forth with proud p gate,

And threatned all his heades I brandes.

But him the Squire made quickly Encountring fiers with single swot And twixt him and his Lord did warke stand,

XIII

The proud Duessa, full of wrathfit And tiers disdaine to be affronted: Enforst her purple beast with all h That stop out of the way to overth Scorning the let of so unequall foe But nathemore would that coraged To her yeeld passage gainst his Le But with outrageous strokes did hi And with his body bard the way a twaine.

XIV

Then tooke the angrie witch her Which still she bore, replete with in Death and despeyre did many ther And secret poyson through their in Th' eternall bale of heavie wounde Which, after charmes and some ments said.

She lightly sprinkled on his weaker Therewith his sturdie corage soon And all his sences were with sucdismayd.

XV

So downe he fell before the cruell Who on his neck his bloody clawer That hie nigh crusht out of his pa No powre he had to stirre, nor will That when the carefull knight gar He lightly left the foe with whom And to the beast gan turne his ent

ces quight.

anguish in his hart it wrought, It:

anguish in his hart it wrought, And seemd himselfe as conquered to yield. fall,

XVI

Whiles yet his feeble feet for faintnesse reeld. tvauncing his blood-thirstie blade, Unto the Gyaunt lowdly she gan call; [all.' those deformed heades so sore, 'O! helpe, Orgoglio; helpe! or els we perish

uissaunce proud ensample made: a scalpe downe to his teeth it tore, stormed shape misshaped more. d gusht from the gaping wownd, y garments staynd with filthy ed all the field around, [gore, hoes in blood he waded on the

XXI

At her so pitteous cry was much amoov'd Her champion stout; and for to ayde his frend, Againe his wonted angry weapon proov'd, But all in vaine, for he has redd his end In that bright shield, and all their forces spend Them selves in vaine : for, since that glauncing He hath no powre to hurt, nor to defend. [sight,

XVII

d.

rored for exceeding paine. [bred; As where th' Almighties lightning brond does heard great horror would have light. [ces quight, ng th' emptie ayre with his long It dimmes the dazed eyen, and daunts the sen-

at impatience of his grieved hed, ryder from her loftie sted cast downe, and trodd in durty

Gyaunt some her succoured; azid with smart and frantick yre. g in full fiers, and forst the knight

XXII Whom when the Prince, to batteill new ad-

light,

full drift.

Was.

drest And threatning high his dreadfull stroke, did His sparkling blade about his head he blest. And smote off quite his right leg by the knee, That downe he tombled; as an aged tree, High growing on the top of rocky clift, Whose hartstrings with keene steele nigh hewen be:

clerch wont in two to be disperst. left hand he now unites. beigh rage more strong then both

r-1 : his hideous club aloft he dites. - with furious rigor smites, Oake might seeme to everthrow.

pen has shield so heavie lites and it doubleth him full low: wight could ever beare so mon-. i.) w?

Doth roll adowne the rocks, and fall with feare-

The mightie trunck, halfe rent with ragged rift,

Or as a Castle, reared high and round, By subtile engins and malitious slight Is undermined from the lowest ground, And her foundation forst, and feebled quight. At last downe falles; and with her heaped hight

Her hastic ruine does more heavie make, And yields it selfe unto the victours might. Such was this Gyaunts fall, that seemd to shake The stedfast globe of earth, as it for feare did quake.

will his shield, that covered was, * ve's by chaunce, and open flew: tere if that hevens light did pas. g brightnesse through the aver

to not the same endure to vew. a the Gyaunt spyde with staring

t fall his arme, and soft withdrew bage, that heaved was on hye sain the man, that on the ground Which flowed from his wounds in wondrous

XXIV

The knight, then lightly leaping to the pray. With mortall steele him smot againe so sore, That headlesse his unweldy bodie lay, All wallowd in his owne fowle bloody gore,

store. But, soone as breath out of his brest did pas, That huge great body, which the Gyaunt bore, [Was vanisht quite, and of that monstrous mas Was nothing left, but like an emptie blader

fruitfull headed brast, amazd

twames of that sunshing shield. k blind, and all his sences dazd, he tumbled on the durtie field,

XXV

Whose grievous fall when false Duessa spyde, Her golden cup she cast unto the ground, And crowned mitre rudely threw asyde: Such percing griefe her stubborne hart did

wound,

That she could not endure that dolefull stound But leaving all behind her fled away: The light-foot Squyre her quickly

around, And, by hard meanes enforcing her to stay, So brought unto his Lord as his deserved pray.

XXVI

The roiall Virgin which beheld from farre, In pensive plight and sad perplexitie, [warre, The whole atchievement of this doubtfull ame running fast to greet his victoric, With sober gladnesse and myld modestie;

And with sweet joyous cheare him thus bespake: 'Fayre braunch of noblesse, flowre of chevalrie,

That with your worth the world amazed make,

sake?

How shall I quite the paynes ye suffer for my XXVII

'And you, fresh budd of vertue springing fast, Whom these sad eyes saw nigh unto deaths dore,

What hath poore Virgin for such perill past Wherewith you to reward? Accept therefore My sample selfe, and service evermore: And he that high does sit, and all things see With equall eye, their merites to restore, Behold what ye this day have done for mee, And what I cannot quite requite with usuree.

XXVIII

But sith the heavens, and your faire handeling,

Have made you master of the field this day, Your tortune maister eke with governing, And, well begonne, end all so well, I pray! Ne let that wicked woman scape away For she it is, that did my Lord bethrall, My dearest Lord, and deepe in dongeon lay, Where he his better dayes hath wasted all: O heare, how piteous he to you for ayd does call !

XXIX

Forthwith he gave in charge unto his Squyre, That scarlot whore to keepen carefully; Whyles he himselfe with greedie great desyre Into the Castle entred forcibly. Where living creature none he did espye.

Then gan be lowdly through the house to call , But no man car'd to answere to his crye:

There raignd a solemne silence over all; Nor voice was heard, nor wight was seen bowre or hall.

At last, with creeping crooked pace forther An old old man, with beard as white as = That on a staffe his feeble steps did frame And guyde his wearie gate both too and for For his eye sight him fayled long ygo: And on his arme a bounch of keyes he ! The which naused rust did overgrow: Those were the keyes of every inner dore But he could not them use, but kept them st in store.

XXXI

But very uncouth sight was to behold, How he did fashion his untoward pace; For as he forward mooved his footing old So backward still was turnd his wrineled to Unlike to men, who ever, as they trace, Both feet and face one way are wont to lea This was the auncient keeper of that place, And foster father of the Gyaunt dead; His name Ignaro did his nature right area

His reverend heares and holy gravitee The knight much honord, as beseemed well And gently askt, where all the people bee, Which in that stately building wont to dwi Who answerd him full soft, he could not tel Again he askt, where that same knight wasla Whom great Orgoglio with his puissannee Had made his caytive thrall; againe he say He could not tell; ne ever other answere m

XXXIII

Then asked he, which way he in might pa He could not tell, againe he answered. Thereat the courteous knight displeased w And said; 'Old syre, it seemes thou hast How ill it sits with that same silver hel, In vaine to mocke, or mockt in vaine to be But if thou be, as thou art pourtrahed With natures pen, in ages grave degree Aread in graver wise what I demaund of th

XXXIV

His answere likewise was, he could not tell Whose sencelesse speach, and doted ignore Whenas the noble Prince had marked well, He ghest his nature by his countenance, And calmd his wrath with goodly temperat Then, to him stepping, from his arme did re Those keyes, and made himselfe free entered Each dore he opened without any breach, There was no barre to stop, nor foe him empeach.

XXXV

within full rich arayd he found, il arras, and resplendent gold, ith store of every thing abound, est Princes presence might behold. · floore (too filthy to be told) I of guiltlesse babes, and innocents

[fold. ashes over it was strowed new.

· loide of marble stone was built carv'd with cunning ymagery, new Christians blood was often spilt, dartyres often doen to dye I malice and strong tyranny: send sprites, from underneath the vengeance cryde continually; great griefe were often heard to And empty sides deceived of their dew,

XXXVII

re-could be find that wofull thrall: ame unto an yron doore, as lookt, but key found not at all ant bounch to open it withall; -anie a little grate was pight, ail a powre, to weet if living wight

at tollow, dreary, murmuring voyce is plaintes and dolours did re-Choyce - Plat, which bringes me happy at here live dying every stound, " ... in balefull darkenesse bound? tree Moones have changed thrice . t. u. teen thrice hid underneath the 1 - ivens chearefull face did vew. · thou, that doest of death bring ._ trew.

XXXIX

**n that Champion heard, with : 2 Seatht ar. his bart was thrilled sore: to 2 horrour ran through every joynt. Them to renew, I wote, breeds no delight, a tile knight so fonle forlore Best musicke breeds delight in loathing care

Which shaking off, he rent that yron dore With furious force and indignation fell: Where entred in, his foot could find no flore, But all a deepe descent, as darke as hell, That breathed ever forth a filthic banefull smell.

X1.

But nether darkenesse fowle, nor filthy bands, re were slaine as sheepe out of the Nor novous smell, his purpose could withhold, has decadfull was to vew: But that with constant zele and corage bold, After long paines and labors manifold, He found the meanes that Prisoner up to reare; Whose feeble thighes, unable to uphold [beare; His pined corse, him scarse to light could A ruefull spectacle of death and ghastly drore,

His sad dull cies, deepe sunck in hollow pits, Could not endure th' unwonted sunne to view;

His bare thin cheekes for want of better bits,

piteous mone. Could make a stony hart his hap to rew; st heart would bleede to hear their His rawbone armes, whose mighty brawned bowra [hew,] Were wont to rive steele plates, and helmets very rowing he sought, and everic Were clene consum'd; and all his vitall powres Decayd, and al his flesh shronk up like withered flowres.

XLH

Whome when his Lady saw, to him she ran With hasty joy: to see him made her glad, And sad to view his visage pale and wan, has he sent his voyce, and lowd Who earst in flowres of freshest youth was clad. Tho, when her well of teares she wasted had, She said: 'Ah dearest Lord! what evill starre or therewithin, whom he enlargen on you hath frowind, and pourd his influence of the control of

XLIII

doth marre?

But welcome now, my Lord in wele or woe. Whose presence I have lackt too long a day: And tie on Fortune, mine avowed for. [alay: Whose wrathful wreakes them selves doe now I ground. And for these wronges shall treble penaunce pay Of treble good: good growes of evils pricte. The cheardesse man, whom sorrow diddismay, Had no delight to treaten of his griefe; His long endured famme needed more reliefe,

XLIV

'Faire Lady,' then said that victorious knight. The things, that grievous were to doe, or beare, But th' only good that growes of passed feare Is to be wise, and ware of like agein. This daies ensample hath this lesson deare Deepe written in my heart with yron pen, That blisse may not abide in state of mortall men.

Henceforth, Sir knight, take to you wonted strength,

And maister these mishaps with patient might, Loe! where your foe lies strecht in monstrous length;

And loe! that wicked woman in your sight, The roote of all your care and wreiched plight, Now in your powre, to let her live, or die, 'To doe her die,' (quoth Una) 'were despight, And shame t'avenge so weake an enimy But spoile her of her scarlot robe, and let her fly.

XLVI

So, as she bad, that witch they disaraid, And robd of roiall robes, and purple pall, And ornaments that richly were displaid; Ne spared they to strip her naked all, Then, when they had despoyld her tire and call, Such as she was their eies might her behold, That her misshaped parts did them appall: A loathly, wrinckled hag, ill favoured, old, Whose secret filth good manners biddeth not be told.

XLVII

Her crafty head was altogether bald, And, as in hate of honorable eld, Was overgrowne with scurfe and filthy scald; Her teeth out of her rotten gummes were feld, And her sowre breath abhominably smeld; Her dried dugs, lyke bladders lacking wind, Hong downe, and filthy matter from them Where store they found of all the weld;

Her wrizled skin, as rough as m So scabby was that would he womankind.

Her neather parts, the shame of My chaster Muse for shame write;

But at her rompe she growing h A foxes taile, with dong all fow And eke her feete most monstrous For one of them was like an Ea With griping talaunts armd to The other like a beares uneven More ugly shape yet never living

XLIX

Which when the knights behel were.

And wondred at so fowle deform 'Such then,' (said Una,) 'as she Such is the face of falshood: suc Of fowle Duessa, when her borre Is laid away, and counterfesaum Thus when they had the witch di And all her filthy feature open s They let her goe at will, and unknowne.

Shee, flying fast from heavens And from the world that her dis Fled to the wastfull wildernesse From living eies her open shame And lurkt in rocks and caves, lo But that faire crew of knights, : Did in that castle afterwards ab and rare.

CANTO IX.

His loves and lignage Arthure tells: The knights knitt friendly bands: Sir Trevisan flies from Despeyre, Whom Rederos knight withstands.

O GOODLY golden chayne, wherewith yfere The vertues linked are in lovely wize; And noble mindes of yore allyed were, In brave poursuitt of chevalrous emprize, That none did others safety despize, Nor aid envy to him in need that stands; But friendly each did others praise devize, How to advaunce with favourable hands, As this good Prince redeemd the Rederosse knight from bands,

Who when their powres, emp labor long, With dew repast they had recur-And that weake captive wight

strong.
Them list no lenger there at leas But forward fare as their advent But, ere they parted, Una faire ! That straunger knight his nan tell;

in,' (said the Prince,) 'yee me out the compas of my witt; lignage, and the certein Sire, sprong, from mee are hidden yitt; rid, and shewed hevens light, n pap l taken was unfitt deliver'd to a Fary knight,

ight in gentle thewes and martiall

Timon he me brought bylive: who in youthly yeares hath beene ates th' expertest man alive, isest now on earth I weene: is low in a valley greene, st of Rauran mossy hore, the river Dee, as silver cleene, : billowes rolls with gentle rore; dates he traind mee up in ver-

lore.

great magicien Merlin came, se, ofttimes to visitt mee; sarge my discipline to frame, journture to oversee. oft I askt in privity, s and what lignage I did spring; ere bad me still assured bee,

one and heire unto a king,

bring.

y impe, said then the Lady gent, fitt for such a Tutors hand! centure, or what high intent, : you hither into Facry land,

Arthure, crowne of Martiall

er just term the truth to light

is.' (quoth he) 'to read aright heavenly cause, or understand arting of th' eternall might, us waiss, and rules the thoughts ig wight.

VII

r Le, through fatal deepe fore-ight, : for cause to me unghest; t: bleeding wound, which day

;ht

a rancle in my riven brest,

st good, as he for her had wrought, with forced fury following his behest, nknown, and buried be in thankles ht.

111

With forced fury following his behest, Me hither brought by wayes yet never found, You to have helpt I hold my selfe yet blest. 'Ah! courteous Knight,' (quoth she) 'what courteous Knight,' secret wound [ground?' Could ever find to grieve the gentlest hart on

'Dear Dame,' (quoth he) 'you sleeping sparkes awake, Which, troubled once, into huge flames will Ne ever will their fervent fury slake, Till living moysture into smoke do flow, And wasted life doe lye in ashes low: Yet sithens silence lesseneth not my fire

But, told, it flames; and, hidden, it does glow,

I will revele what ye so much desire. Ah. Love! lay down thy bow, the whiles I may respyre.

1 X ' It was in freshest flowre of youthly yeares, When corage first does creepe in manly chest, Then first the cole of kindly heat appeares To kindle love in every living brest: But me had warnd old Timons wise behest, Those creeping flames by reason to subdew, Before their rage grew to so great unrest, As miserable lovers use to rew, [wexeth new. Which still wex old in woe, whiles we stil

'That ydle name of love, and lovers life, As losse of time, and vertues enimy, I ever scornd, and joyd to stirre up strife, In middest of their mournfull Tragedy; Ay wont to laugh when them I heard to cry, And blow the fire which them to ashes brent: Their God himselfe, grievd at my libertie, Shott many a dart at me with fiers intent : But I them warded all with wary government.

'But all in vaine: no fort can be so strong, Ne fleshly brest can armed be so sownd, But will at last be wonne with battrie long, Or unawares at disavantage found. Nothing is sure that growes on earthly grownd; And who most trustes in arme of fleshly might. And boastes in beauties chaine not to be bownd, Doth soonest fall in disaventrous fight, And yeeldes his caytive neck to victours most despight.

XII

· Ensample make of him your haplesse joy, And of my selfe now mated, as ye see.
Whose prouder vaunt that proud avenging boy
Did soone pluck downe, and curbd my libertee.

For on a day, prickt forth with jollitee Of looser life and heat of hardiment, Raunging the forest wide on courser free, The fields, the floods, the heavens, with one consent. [intent.

Did seeme to laugh on me, and favour mine

XIII

Forwearied with my sportes, I did alight From loftie steed, and downe to sleepe me layd, The verdant gras my couch did goodly dight, And pillow was my helmett fayre displayd; Whiles every sence the humour sweet embayd, And slombring soft my hart did steale away, Me seemed, by my side a royall Mayd Her daintie limbes full softly down did lay : So fayre a creature yet saw never sunny day.

XIV

' Most goodly glee and lovely blandishment She to me made, and badd me love her deare; For dearely sure her love was to me bent, As, when just time expired, should appeare, But whether dreames delude, or true it were, Was never hart so ravisht with delight, Ne living man like wordes did ever heare, As she to me delivered all that night; And at her parting said, She Queene of Facries hight.

'When I awoke, and found her place devoyd, And nought but pressed gras where she had I sorrowed all so much as earst I joyd, [lyen, And washed all her place with watry even. From that day forth I lov'd that face divyne; From that day forth I cast in carefull mynd. To seek her out with labor and long tyne, And never vowd to rest till her I fynd: Nyne monethes I seek in vain, yet ni'll that vow unbynd.

Thus as he spake, his visage wexed pale, And chaunge of hew great passion did bewray ; Yett still he strove to cloke his inward bale, And hide the smoke that did his fire display, Till gentle Una thus to him gan say:
O happy Queene of Faeries! that hast fownd,

Mongst many, one that with his prowesse may Defend thine honour, and thy foes confownd. True loves are often sown, but seldom grow

on grownd.'

Thine, O! then,' said the gentle Redcrosse knight,

Was firmest fixt in myne extrement case. And you, my Lord, the Patrone of my list Of that great Queene may well gaine war grace,

For onely worthie you through proves pro Yf living man mote worthie be to be bette

XVIII

So diversly discoursing of their love, The golden Sunne his glistring head gms And sad remembraunce now the Prince an With fresh desire his voyage to pursew Als Una earnd her traveill to renew. Then those two knights, fast friendship to And love establish each to other trew Gave goodly gifts, the signes of gratefull my And eke, as pledges firme, right hands toget joynd,

XIX

Prince Arthur gave a boxe of Diamond su Embowd with gold and gorgeous ornand Wherein were closd few drops of liquor pa Of wondrous worth, and vertue excellen That any wownd could heale incontinent, I Which to requite, the Redcrosse knight A booke, wherein his Saveours testament Was writt with golden letters rich and bri A worke of wondrous grace, and hable so to save.

Thus beene they parted; Arthur on his wa With Unaes foe, that all her realme did pi But she, now weighing the decayed plight And shrunken synewes of her chosen knig Would not a while her forward course pu Ne bring him forth in face of dreadfull fig Tili he recovered had his former hew; [ki For him to be yet weake and wearie well

So as they traveild, lo! they gan espy An armed knight towards them gallop fast That seemed from some feared foe to fly. Or other griesly thing that him aghast, Still as he fledd his eye was backward ca As if his feare still followed him behynd: Als flew his steed as he his bandes had bri And with his winged beeles did tread the w As he had beene a fole of Pegasus his kynt

XXII

Nigh as he drew, they might perceive his h Next to that Ladies love, shalbe the place, O fayrest virgin! full of heavenly light, Whose wondrous faith, exceeding earthly race, Nor drop of blood in all his face appeares, To bee unarmd, and carld uncombed heare

imbe; and, to increase his feares, 'But not so happy as mote happy bee; ~k an hempen rope he weares. us glistring armes does ill agree: XXIII

are knight toward him crossed fast. at master wight was so dismayd. ir tindes all sencelesse and aghast, selte he seemd to be afrayd; ly he from flying forward stayd, wordes to him deliver might : , aread who hath ye thus arayd, n whom make ye this hasty flight? night I -aw in such misseeming

XXIV

d pought at all; but adding new hr-t amazment, staring wyde eves and hartlesse hollow hew, tord, as one that had aspyde in with their chaines untyde. rame, and yett againe, bespake might; who nought to him replyde; ing every joynt, did inly quake. ; tengue, at last, these words seemd to shake;

XXV

deare love, Sir knight, doe me not comes, he comes fast after mee." back would faine have runne away; terst to stay, and tellen free cause of his perplexitie: rs by his hold hartie speach had fresen hart emboldened bec. his taddies rather feare did reach; at last he made through silence ::. 1 real h.

- w in -afetie -ure,' (quoth he) that would have forced me to dve? so at of leath now turnd fro mee. t-II this haplesse history ?' I nye. it. quoth he) 'no daunger now is I vou recount a ruefull cace, to which with this unlucky eye and had not greater grace a it, had bene partaker of the place.

X X X 11

 knight to keepen companies. " s, and was both hold and tree .

ruch of knighthoodes tayre degree, 'He lov'd, as was his lot, a Lady gent, That him againe lov'd in the least degree; For she was proud, and of too high intent, pe or armes has now no memoree. And joyd to see her lover languish and lament:

XXVIII

· From whom retourning sad and comfortlesse, As on the way together we did fare, We met that villen, (God from him me blesse!) That cursed wight, from whom I scapt whyle-A man of hell that calls himselfe Despayre: Who first us greets, and after fayre areedes Of tydinges straunge, and of adventures rare: So creeping close, as Snake in hidden weedes. Inquireth of our states, and of our knightly

XXIX

deedes.

'Which when he knew, and felt our feeble harts Embost with bale, and bitter byting griefe, Which love had launched with his deadly darts

With wounding words, and termes of foule repriefe. He pluckt from us all hope of dew reliefe,

That earst us held in love of lingring life; Then hopelesse, hartlesse, gan the cunning thicke Perswade us dye, to stint all further strife: To me he lent this rope, to him a rusty knife.

XXX 'With which sad instrument of hasty death, That wofull lover, loathing lenger light, A wyde way made to let forth living breath: But I, more fearefull or more lucky wight, Dismayd with that deformed dismall sight. Fledd fast away, halfe dead with dying feare; Ne yet assur'd of life by you, Sir knight,

Whose like infirmity like channel may be are; But God you never let his charmed speaches heare!

XXXI

' How may a man,' (said he) 'with idle speach Be wome to spoyle the Castle of his health? 'I wote,' (quoth he) 'whom tryall late did teach. That like would not for all this worldes wealth,

Conest (Would I had never His subtile tong like dropping honny mealth hat the heart, and searcheth every vaine; That, ere one be aware, by secret stealth borbt, that well himselfe advanust His powre is reft, and weaknes doth remaine. O! never, Sir, desire to try his guilefull trame?

XXXII

'Certes,' (sayd he) 'hence shall I never rest, Till I that treachours art have heard and tryde; And you, Sir knight, whose name mote I re-Of grace do me anto his cabin guyde,' [quest, ' l, that hight Trevisan,' (quoth he) 'will ryde Against my liking backe to doe you grace:

But nor for gold nor glee will I abyde By you, when ye arrive in that same place; For lever had I die then see his deadly face.'

XXXIII

Ere long they come where that same wicked wight

His dwelling has, low in an hollow cave, For underneath a craggy cliff ypight, Darke, dolefull, dreary, like a greedy grave, That still for carrion carcases doth crave On top whereof ay dwelt the ghastly Owle Shricking his balefull note, which ever drave Far from that haunt all other chearefull fowle, And all about it wandring ghostes did wayle Burking to death this man despayring and howle.

XXXIV

And all about old stockes and stubs of trees, Whereon nor fruit nor leafe was ever seene, Did hang upon the ragged rocky knees; On which had many wretches hanged beene, Whose careases were scattred on the greene, And throwne about the cliffs. Arrived there, And throwne about the chils. Arrived there, And increase in account to the child and dolefull is not great grace to helpe him over p frome.

Or free his feet that in the myre stick

Would faine have fled, ne durst approchen neare; But th' other forst him staye, and comforted in feare.

XXXV

That darkesome cave they enter, where they

That cursed man, low sitting on the ground, Musing full sadly in his sullein mind: His griesic lockes, long growen and unbound, Disordred hong about his shoulders round, And hid his face, through which his hollow

evne Lookt deadly dull, and stared as astound; What if some little payne the passage Ilis raw-bone cheekes, through penuric and That makes frayle flesh to feare the pine, [dyne.

Were shronke into his jawes, as he did never Is not short payne well borne, that

XXXXI

His garment, nought but many ragged clouts, With thomes together pind and patched was, The which his naked sides he wrapt abouts; And him beside there lay upon the gras A dreary corse, whose life away did pas.

All wallowd in his own yet luke-warme blood. Ne may a man prolong, nor shorten, i

That from his wound yet welled fresh, alas!

The souldier may not move from watch

XXXVII

Which pitcous spectacle, approving to The wofull tale that Trevisan had told Whenas the gentle Redcrosse knight (With firic zeale he burnt in courage by Him to avenge before his blood were And to the villein savd; 'Thou dame The authour of this fact we here behol What justice can but judge against the With thine owne blood to price his ble shed in sight?

XXXVIII

'What franticke fit,' (quoth he) 'he distraught

Thee, foolish man, se rash a doome to What justice ever other judgement tal But he should dye who merites not to Is then unjust to each his dew to give Or let him dye, that loatheth living b Or let him die at case, that liveth here

Who travailes by the wearie wandri To come unto his wished home in has And meetes a flood that doth his pass Most envious man, that grieves at nei good;

And fould, that joyest in the woe thou Why wilt not let him passe, that le stood

Upon the bancke, yet wilt thy selfe no

'He there does now enjoy eternall re And happy ease, which thou doest w crave.

And further from it daily wanderest: wave, Γk

And laves the soule to sleepe in quiet Sleepe after toyle, port after stormie s Ease after warre, death after life, does please.

XLI

The knight much wondred at his sudd

stand untill his Captaine bed.' limit by almightie doome,' 1; points the Centonell his roome.

X1.11

leed, what ever thing is donne d earth? Did not he all create ? All ends that was begonne: n his eternall booke of fate ture, and have their certein date.

life. I wote, the greater sin; in, the greater punishment:
at battels, which thou boasts to
[ment. That as a swords poynt through his hart did

ite, and blood-shed, and avenge-5 thy evill life forespent? are both missed the right way,

so further goe, no further stray, 1 whe, and to thy rest betake, out, that life ensewer may: ". life that may it loved make, trather cause it to forsake? age, losse, labour, sorrow, strife,

al- fortune rageth rife: L.:• .

taked man, of death hast greatest

Lean e thou wilt weigh thy state; - dissaventures did amate: in good deepe, wherein of late gen; for death so oft did call; ___ l lucke prolonged hath thy

h hereafter thou maist happen

'Why then doest thou, O man of sin! desire To draw thy dayes forth to their last degree? Is not the measure of thy sinfull hire High heaped up with huge iniquitee, him depart at sound of morning Against the day of wrath to burden thee?

Is not enough, that to this Lady mild Thou falsed hast thy faith with perjure And sold thy selfe to serve Duessa vild, [defild? With whom in al abuse thou hast thy selfe

XLVII

'Is not he just, that all this doth behold a strive with strong necessitie, the world in his still chaunging Shall he thy sins up in his knowledge fold, From highest heven, and beares an equall cie? And guilty be of thine impietie? And gunty be of time impresse.

Is not his lawe, Let every sinner die; [donne, of death is come, let none aske Die shall all flesh? What then must needs be e, nor why.

Is it not better to doe willinglie, Then linger till the glas be all out ronne? Death is the end of woes: die soone, O faeries sonne!'

perse, bereafter deare thou shalt repent; And in his conscience made a secrete breach, life, and blood must blood, repay. Well knowing trew all that he did reherse, And to his fresh remembraunce did reverse The ugly vew of his deformed crimes;

he doth goe, the further he doth That all his manly powres it did disperse,

As he were charmed with inchaunted rimes;

That oftentimes he quakt, and fainted oftentimes.

XLIX

In which amazement when the Miscreaunt Perceived him to waver, weake and fraile, [daunt, Whiles trembling horror did his conscience And hellish anguish did his soule assaile; er, cold that makes the hart to To drive him to despaire, and quite to quaile, Hee shewd him, painted in a table plaine, The damned ghosts that doe in torments waile, of thousands mo, do make a loath- And thousand feends that doe them endlesse [remaine. | paine With fire and brimstone, which for ever shall

The sight whereof so throughly him dismaid, That nought but death before his eies he saw, And ever burning wrath before him laid, By righteous sentence of th' Almighties law. Then gan the villein him to overcraw, And brought unto him swords, ropes, poison, And all that might him to perdition draw; would the like mishaps forestall. And bad him choose what death he would de-| Gods in sire;

For death was dew to him that had provoke

14

But, whenas none of them he saw him take, He to him raught a dagger sharpe and keene, And gave it him in hand; his hand did quake And tremble like a leafe of Aspin greene, And troubled blood through his pale face was

seene To come and goe with tidings from the heart,

As it a ronning messenger had beene. At last, resolv'd to work his finall smart, He lifted up his hand, that backe againe did

start.

LIL

Which whenas Una saw, through every vaine The crudled cold ran to her well of life, As in a swowne: but, soone reliv'd againe, Out of his hand she snatcht the cursed knife, And threw it to the ground, enraged rife, And to him said; 'Fie, fie, faint hearted Knight! What meanest thou by this reprochfull strife? Is this the battaile which thou vauntst to But death he could not worke himse fight

With that fire-mouthed Dragon, horrible and Yet nathelesse it could not doe him bright?

'Come; come away, fraile, feeble, fle Ne let vaine words bewitch thy m Ne divelish thoughts dismay th spright:

In heavenly mercies hast thou not Why shouldst thou then despeirs,

art?

Where justice growes, there grows The which doth quench the bron smart,

And that accurst hand-writing do Arise, sir Knight; arise, and leave place.

So up he rose, and thence amount Which when the carle beheld, and s Would safe depart, for all his sub-He chose an halter from among th And with it hong him selfe, unbid For thousand times he so him sell Till he should die his last, that is,

CANTO X.

Her faithfull knight faire Una brings To house of Hollnesse; Where he is taught repentannce, and The way to hevenly blesse.

What man is he, that boasts of fleshly And vaine assuraunce of mortality, might Which, all so soone as it doth come to fight Against spirituall foes, yields by and by, Or from the fielde most cowardly doth fly! Ne let the man ascribe it to his skill, That thorough grace hath gained victory: If any strength we have, it is to ill, [will. But all the good is Gods, both power and eke

By that which lately hapned Una saw That this her knight was feeble, and too faint ; And all his sinewes woxen weake and raw, Through long enprisonment, and hard constraint,

Which he endured in his late restraint, That yet he was unfitt for bloody fight, Therefore, to cherish him with diets daint, She cast to bring him where he chearen might, But faire Charissa to a lovely fere Till be recovered bad his late decayed plight. Was lineked, and by him had ma

TIT

There was an auncient house nor Renowmd throughout the world for And pure unspotted life : so well. It governd was, and guided everm Through wisedome of a matrone gra Whose onely joy was to relieve the Of wretched soules, and helpe the hel All night she spent in bidding of And all the day in doing good deedes.

Dame Cælia men did her call, as From heaven to come, or thither to The mother of three daughters, wel In goodly thewes, and godly exerc The eldest two, most sober, chast, Fidelia and Speranza, virgins wer Though spousd, yet wanting wedle nize

· did -how.

er aine.

si there, the dore they find fast lockt, ras warely watched night and day, For many fees; but, when they knockt. der oresied unto them streight way. a: a_oi syre, all hery gray, ease tull lowly cast, and gate full slow, Ta staffe his feeble steps to stay, I red ita. They passe in stouping low:

coully thing is hardest to begin: cent if a spatious court they see, are and pleasaunt to be walked in; ben des meete a francklin faire and -ri times with comely courtous glee; . was Zele, that him right well became : is speaches and behaveour hee or hosly to expresse the same, ily did them guide, till to the Hall

elly their prefixes a gentle Squyre, and and pass courteses, of it is usely sail attyre: start and showd great modestee. green to all of each degree, . He them with speaches et the district emitting nicetor, attention of the unfained sweet,

a a Squyre so great persons to

3 111

error des them to his Dame he leades. December 1. Large of the place. is yould was busy at her boades; ** arose with seemely grace, all marron by did pace. or to at the est Unit she beheld, as seem to spring from hevenly

- -: t t tty weary soles to lead;

 this end; *O happy earth. to exist test doc ever frend! 2in. be the of hevenly beath, erication weefull parents head age in the verifying dread,

to accounted inly sweld,

and seemdort in her weaker eld;

What grace hath thee now hither brought this way? Or doen thy feeble feet unweeting hither stray?

· Straunge thing it is an errant knight to see Here in this place; or any other wight,

That hither turnes his steps. So few there bee, That chose the narrow path, or seeke the right : at: and narrow was the way which All keepe the broad high way, and take delight With many rather for to goe astray, And be partakers of their evill plight, Then with a few to walke the rightest way, Offoolish men! why hast ye to your own decay?

Χſ

'Thy selfe to see, and tyred limbes to rest, O matrone sage,' (quoth she) 'Phither came; And this good knight his way with me addrest, Ledd with thy prayses, and broad-blazed fame, That up to heven is blowne." The auncient Dame

Him goodly greeted in her modest guyse, And entertevnd them both, as best became, With all the court'sies that she could devyse, Ne wantedought to shew her bounteous or wise.

XII

Thus as they gan of sondrie thinges devise, Loc! two most goodly virgins came in place, Ylinked arme in arme in lovely wise: With countenance demure, and modest grace, They numbred even steps and equall pace; Of which the eldest, that Fidelia hight, Like sunny beames threw from her Christall face That could have dazd the rash beholders sight, And round about her head did shine like hevens light.

XIII

She was araied all in lilly white, And in her right hand bore a cup of gold. With wine and water fild up to the hi_ht, In which a Serpent did himselfe entold, That horrour made to all that dol behold; But she no whitt did channge her constant mood: And in her other hand she fast did hold

A booke, that was both signd and seald with bleast: Wherem darke thin, were writt, hard to be

understood.

Her younger sister, that Specianza hight, to the against be world now long a Was clad in blow, that her to ceimed well; Not all so chearefull, seried, he of sight, As was her sister; whether the nd did dwell

Or anguish in her hart, is hard to tell, Upon her arme a silver anchor lay, Whereon she leaned ever, as befelf; And ever up to heven, as she did pray, way. She unto him disclosed every whitt; Her stedfast eyes were bent, ne swarved other

They, seeing Una, towardes her gan wend, Who them encounters with like courtesce; Many kind speeches they betweene them spend, And greatly joy each other for to see: Then to the knight with shamefast modestie They turne themselves, at Unaes meeke request.

And him salute with well beseeming glee; Who faire them quites, as him beseemed best, And goodly gan discourse of many a noble gest.

XVI

Then Una thus: 'But she, your sister deare, The deare Charissa, where is she become? Or wants she health, or busic is elswhere?'
'Ah! no,' said they, 'but forth she may not For she of late is lightned of her wombe, [come; And hath encreast the world with one sonne more,

That her to see should be but troublesome. The faithfull knight now grew in little 'Indeed,' (quoth she) 'that should her trouble by hearing her, and by her sisters lore, sore; [more! To such perfection of all hevenly grace, But thankt be God, and her encrease so ever-

XVII

Then said the aged Calia, Deare dame, And you, good Sir. I wote that of youre toyle And labors long, through which ye hither came.

Ye both forwearied be: therefore, a whyle I read you rest, and to your bowres recovle." Then called she a Groome, that forth him ledd Into a goodly lodge, and gan despoile Of puissant armes, and laid in easie bedd His name was meeke Obedience, rightfully Made him forget all that Fidelia told. aredd.

XVIII

And bodies were refresht with dew repast, Fayre Una gan Fidelia fayre request, To have her knight into her schoolchous plaste, That of her heavenly learning he might taste, Who, well acquainted with that come to the wisedom of her wordes divine. And heare the wisedom of her wordes divine, She graunted; and that knight so much Which sinfull horror workes in wounded agraste,

That she him taught celestiall discipline, And opened his dull eyes, that light more in And streightway sent with carefull dilige them shine.

That none could reade except she did [8 And heavenly documents thereout did po That weaker witt of man could never re ()f God; of grace; of justice; of free-will That wonder was to heare her goodly ape For she was hable with her wordes to kill And rayse againe to life the hart that sh

thrill.

And that her sacred Booke, with blood

And, when she list poure out her li spright, She would commaund the hasty Sunne to:

()r backward turne his course from be hight: Sometimes great hostes of men she could Dry-shod to passe she parts the flouds in the

And eke huge mountaines from their seat She would commaund themselves to And throw in raging sea with roaring th Almightic God her gave such powre and

saunce great.

The faithfull knight now grew in littles That wretched world he gan for to abbor And mortall life gan loath as thing forld Greeve with remembrance of his wicked w And prickt with anguish of his sinnes so That he desirde to end his wretched days So much the dart of sinfull guilt the soul mayes.

XXII

But wise Speranza gave him comfort av And taught him how to take assured hok Upon her silver anchor, as was meet; Els had his sinnes, so great and manifold In this distressed doubtfull agony, When him his dearest Una did behold Now when their wearie limbes with kindly Disdeining life, desiring leave to dye, rest.

She found her selfe assayld with great plexity;

And came to Calia to declare her smart plight.

Her wisely comforted all that she might. With goodly counsell and advisement rig To fetch a Leach, the which had great in ase of grieved conscience, [Patience, Yet all with patience wisely she did beare, ald cure the same: His name was For well she wist his cryme could els be never

XXIV

ming to that sowle-diseased knight. when intreat to tell his grief; wre, and all that novd his heavie ŗ'n: it eftecones he gan apply relief a added worder of wondrous might. to case he him recured brief. g-wag'd the passion of his plight, . pa ne endur'd, as seeming now

X X 7.

ne cause and root of all his ill. Taption and infected sin. . ror heald, behind remained still, 2 - re did ranckle yett within, ir a twist the marow and the skin: seems, he lad him privily caresome lowly place far in as at the corresives to apply, dat tame his stubborne

 1 s y k 1stt be did array esc. 7 read humors to abate: with history every day. 🛫 🕾 s wounder to mitigate : attray to the arely and eke late: as a de rithous thesh did rott. · · · · still at hand did wayt. and the purchase tyric whort, 1. Lat. was lette no one corrupted

XXVII

. Presumos with an yron whips ... i, a to disple every day : it is so his bart did prick and nip. tar, e used to embay the fain to wash away. the they del to health restore are we all not live, but east lay at Same di Tra

VVVIII

court project often was so great, case, we ald cave and rore, and his owners ynewes cat. is to a bearing even more are and growings, often fore

cleare.

XXIX Whom, thus recover'd by wise Patience

And trew Repentaunce, they to Una brought; Who, joyous of his cured conscience, Him dearely kist, and fayrely eke besought Himselfe to chearish, and consuming thought and med cines, which had passing To put away out of his carefull brest. By this Charissa, late in child-hed brought, Was woxen strong, and left her fruitfull nest: To her fayre Una brought this unacquainted guest.

She was a woman in her freshest age, Of wondrous beauty, and of bounty rare, With goodly grace and comely personage, That was on earth not easie to compare; Full of great love, but Cupids wanton snare As hell she hated; chaste in worke and will: Her necke and brests were ever open bare, That ay thereof her babes might sucke their fill ; The rest was all in yellow robes arayed still.

XXXI

A multitude of babes about her hong. Playing their sportes, that joyd her to behold; Whom still she fed whiles they were weake and young, But thrust them forth still as they wexed old: And on her head she wore a tyre of gold, Adornd with genuies and oweles wondrous

favic. Whose passing price uneath was to be told: And by her syde there sate a gentle payre, Of turtle doves, she sitting in an yvory chayre.

The knight and Una entring fayre her greet, And bid her joy of that her happy brood; and thence like a well did play: Who them requites with court sies seeming meet.

And enterfaynes with friendly chearefull mood. Then Una her besought, to be so good As in her vertuous rules to schoole her knight, Now after all his torment well withstood In that sad house of Penaunce, where his spright

Had past the paines of hell and long enduring night.

THEFT

She was right joyous of her just request: And taking by the hand that Facric's some, so garactes and her golden hears. Gin him instruct in exercise good behinds the gayne and anguish sore:

Of love, and rightconstast and well red Or love, and rightcon-to-, and well to donne;

And wrath and batrod warely to shonne, That drew on men God- hatted and his wrath, And many soules in dolours had fordonne: In which when him she well instructed bath, From thence to heaven she teacheth him the And had he lesse, yet some he would give to ready path.

AXXIV

Wherein his weaker wandring steps to guyde, An anneient matrone she to her does call. Whose sober lookes her wisedome well deseryde:

Her name was Mercy; well knowne over-all To be both grations and eke liberall: To whom the carefull charge of him she gave, To leade aright, that he should never fall In all his waies through this wide worldes

wave; That Mercy in the end his righteous soule might save.

XXXX

The godly Matrone by the hand him beares Forth from her presence, by a narrow way, scattred with bushy thornes and ragged breares, Which still before him she remov'd away, That nothing might his ready passage stay: And ever, when his feet encombred were. Or gan to shrinke, or from the right to stray, She held him fast, and firmely did upbeare, As carefull Nourse her child from falling oft does reare.

XXXVI

Effsoones unto an holy Hospitall, That was foreby the way, she did him bring; In which seven Bead men, that had vowed all Their life to service of high heavens King, Did spend their daies in doing godly thing. Their gates to all were open evermore, That by the wearie way were traveiling: And one sate wayting ever them before, | pore. To call in commers by that needy were and

XXXVII

The first of them, that eldest was and best, Of all the house had charge and government. As Guardian and Steward of the rest. His office was to give entertainement And lodging unto all that came and went: Not unto such as could him feast againe, And double quite for that he on them spent; But such as want of harbour did constraine: Those for Gods sake his dewty was to entertaine. Ah, dearest God, me graunt, I dead be

XXXVIII

The second was as Almner of the place: His office was the hungry for to feed, And thristy give to drinke; a worke of grace, He feard not once himselfe to be in need,

Ne car'd to hoord for those whom he did bus The grace of God he layd up still in store, Which as a stocke he left unto his seeds. He had enough; what need him care for a

> pore. XXXIX

The third had of their wardrobe custody, In which were not rich tyres, nor garments The plumes of pride, and winges of vasity, But clothes meet to keepe keene cold away, And naked nature seemely to aray; With which bare wretched wights he daylyd The images of God in earthly clay;

And, if that no spare clothes to give he had His owne cote he would cut, and it distrib glad.

The fourth appointed by his office was Poore prisoners to relieve with gratious sy And captives to redeeme with price of bras From Turkes and Sarazins, which then stavd:

And though they faulty were, yet well how That God to us forgiveth every howre Much more then that why they in hands w And he, that harrowd hell with heavie stor The faulty soules from thence brought to heavenly bowre.

The fift had charge sick persons to attend And comfort those in point of death which For them most needeth comfort in the end, When sin, and hell, and death, doe most dist The feeble soule departing hence away. All is but lost, that living we bestow, If not well ended at our dying day.

O man! have mind of that last bitter thro For as the tree does fall, so lyes it ever low

The sixt had charge of them now being d In scennely sort their corses to engrave And deck with dainty flowres their brydell! That to their heavenly spouse both sweet brave They might appeare, when he their soules a

The wondrous workmanship of Gods or mould, Whose face he made all beastes to feare, and g

All in his hand, even dead we honour shou defould!

The seventh, now after death and buriall & Had charge the tender Orphans of the dead And wydowes ayd, least they should be undo . In face of judgement he their right would ple

he power of mighty men did dread Each bone might through his body well be red fem:e: nor would for gold or fee And every sinew seene, through his long fast: wir rightfull causes downe to tread; For nought he car'd his careas long unfed; they their want, and gave them ever And pyn'd his flesh to keepe his body low and

XLIV

n the Elfin knight arrived was, ad chiefest of the seven, whose care n. Mercie, that his steps uphare - led to her with reverence rare haited in meeke lowlinesse, ly well-ome for her did prepare: order she was Patronesse. -- a were their chiefest founderesse.

awhile him staves, himselfe to rest, . rest more hable he might bee; : 5 time, in every good behest, worke of Alme- and charitee. e-tructed with great industree. so perfect he became, the first unto the last degree. 1.1. % he learned had to frame gitte usnesse, without rebuke

MINI

rear Ply that painfull way they pasthat was both steepe and hyd - -: s - real chappell was, I tie Hermitage theo by, aged hely man did lie, ile erres was his meditation.

X L.V 11

then saw from heavens hight: - earthly even both blunt and bad. 21. great age had lost their kindly [spright, r is quick and personnt was his restrict can behold the Sunne. they scale with all their powre and thighes, nigh weary and fordonne. . by her helps the top at last he

X1.V.117

et : - in le that godly aged Sire. But first thou must a season fast and pray that with spangles doth attire orannches of an Oke balte ded.

XLIX

Who, when these two approching he aspide, At their first presence grew agrieved sore, to welcome, towardes him did pas : That forst him lay his bevenly thoughts aside; And had he not that Dame respected more. Whom highly he did reverence and adore He would not once have moved for the knight. They him saluted, standing far afore,

Who, well them greeting, humbly did requight, And asked to what end they clomb that tedious hight?

'What end,' (quoth she) 'should cause us take such paine,

But that same end, which every living wight Should make his marke high heaven to attaine? Is not from hence the way, that leadeth right To that most glorious house, that glistreth bright With burning starres and everliving fire

Whereof the keies are to thy hand behight By wise Fidelia? Shee doth thee require, To shew it to this knight, according his desire."

Thrise happy man, said then the father. grave, · Whose staggering steps thy steady hand doth

lead, And showes the way his sinfull soule to save!

Who better can the way to heaven aread Then thou thyselfe, that was both borne and bred

In bevenly throne, where thousand Angels shine? Thou doest the praiers of the rightcons send

Present before the majesty divine, And his avenging wrath to elemency incline.

 Yet, since thou bidst, thy pleasure shaller donne. Then come, thou man of earth, and see the way, That never yet was seene of Faeries sonne; That never leads the traveiler astray.

But after labors long and sad delay Brings them to joyous rest and endlesse blis. But first thou must a season fast and pray.

And have her strength recur'd from fraile infirmitis,

'That done, he leads him to the highest Mount,

Such one as that same mighty man of God, That blood-red billowes, like a walled front, On either side disparted with his rod, Till that his army dry-foot through them yod, Dwelt forty daies upon; where, writt in stone With bloody letters by the hand of God,

The bitter doome of death and balefull mone He did receive, whiles flashing fire about him shone:

Or like that sacred hill, whose head full hie, Adornd with fruitfull Olives all around, Is, as it were for endlesse memory Of that deare Lord who oft thereon was found, For ever with a flowring girlond crownd: Or like that pleasaunt Mount, that is for ay Through famous Poets verse each where renownd,

On which the thrise three learned Ladies play Their hevenly notes, and make full many a lovely lay.

LV

From thence, far off he unto him did shew A little path that was both steepe and long, Which to a goodly Citty led his vew . Whose wals and towres were builded high and strong

Of perle and precious stone, that earthly tong Cannot describe, nor wit of man can tell; Too high a ditty for my simple song The Citty of the greate king hight it well, Wherem eternall peace and happinesse doth

dwell.

LVI

As he thereon stood gazing, he might see The blessed Angels to and fro descend From highest heven in gladsome companee, And with great joy into that Citty wend, As commonly as frend does with his frend, Whereat he wondred nuch, and gan enquere, What stately building durst so high extend Her lofty towres unto the starry sphere, And what unknowen nation there empeopled were ?

* Faire Knight,' (quoth he) 'Hierusalem that For thou, emongst those Saints whom to The new Hierusalem, that God has built [is, doest see, For those to dwell in that are chosen his, His chosen people, purg'd from sinful guilt With pretious blood, which cruelly was spilt On cursed tree, of that unspotted lam, That for the sinnes of al the world was kilt :

Now are they Saints all in that Citty sam More dear unto their God then younging their dam.

LVIII

'Till now,' said then the knight, 'I wen well.

That great Cleopolis, where I have been, In which that fairest Facry Queene doth of The fairest citty was that might be seens; And that bright towre, all built of class clene,

Panthea, seemd the brightest thing that we But now by proofe all otherwise I weem. For this great Citty that does far surps, And this bright Angels towre quite dim t towre of glas.

'Most trew,' then said the holy aged man 'Yet is Cleopolis, for earthly frame, The fairest peece that eie beholden can; And well beseemes all knights of noble na That covett in th' immortall booke of fame To be eternized, that same to hamnt, And doen their service to that soveraigne De That glory does to them for guerdon gran For she is hevenly borne, and heaven justly vaunt.

LX

'And thou, faire ymp, sprong out in English race,

How ever now accompted Elfins sonne, Well worthy doest thy service for her gra To aide a virgin desolate, foredonne: But when thou famous victory hast wom And high emongst all knights hast hong shield,

Thenceforth the suitt of earthly compa shonne, And wash thy hands from guilt of bloody for

For blood can nought but sin, and wars sorrows yield.

LXI

'Then seek this path that I to thee pres Which after all to heaven shall thee send; Then peaceably thy painefull pilgrimage To yonder same Hierusalem doe bend, Where is for thee ordaind a blessed end:

Shalt be a Saint, and thine owne nations for And Patrone: thou Saint George shalt of

Saint George of mery England, the sign victorec.

ch.' (quoth be) 'of so great

e such glory to attaine?'
e it attaynd, were in like

, and lived in like paine.'
see must I at last be faine o leave, so dearely bought? rmes, where peace doth av

tter battailes all are fought? i, they'are vaine, and vanish

LXIII

(quoth he) 'then turne a-

d, whose joves so fruitlesse

for ale in peace remaine that last long voiage fare, my present hope empare. e.' (said he) 'ne maist thou

maides bequeathed care, into thy hand committ, ed foe thou have her freely

LXIV

me,' (quoth he) 'so God me cause disconsolate, [grace. returne unto this place, in Pilgrims poore estate. I father, why of late t me borne of English blood. - conne doen nominate? I.' (said he) savouchen good. nknowne the cradle of thy

LXV

hattailes fought in face, pyall throne in Britans land,

And vanquisht them, unable to withstand: From thence a Faery thee unweeting reft, There as thou slepst in tender swadling band, And her base Elfin brood there for thee left: Such, men do Chaungelings call, so chaung'd by Facries there.

LXVI

'Thence she thee brought into this Faery lond,
And in an heaped furrow did thee hyde;
Where thee a Ploughman all unwesting fond,

As he his toylesome teme that way did guyde,

As he his toylesome teme that way and guyue,
And brought thee up in ploughmans state to
byde,
Whereof Georgos he thee gave to name;
Till prickt with courage, and thy forces pryde,
To Faery court thou cam'st to seek for fame, And prove thy puissant armes, as seemes thee best became.'

LXVII

'O holy Sire!' (quoth he) 'how shall I quight The many favours I with thee have found That hast my name and nation redd aright, And taught the way that does to heaven bownd!

This saide, adowne he looked to the grownd To have returnd; but dazed were his eyne Through passing brightnes, which did quite

confound His feeble sence, and too exceeding shyne. So darke are earthly thinges compard to things

divine.

LXVIII

At last, whenas himselfe he gan to fynd, To Una back he cast him to retyre, Who him awaited still with pensive mynd. Great thankes, and goodly meed, to that good avre

He thens departing gave for his paynes hyre thou springst from ancient So came to Una, who him joyd to see; And, after litle rest, gan him desyre hat have with mightic hand, Of her adventure myndfull for to bee. ISo leave they take of Celia and her daughters three.

٠.,

CANTO XI.

The knight with that old Dragon fights
Two days incessantly:
The third him overthrowes, and gayns Most glorious victory.

High time now gan it wex for Una fayre To thinke of those her captive Parents deare, And their forwasted kingdom to repayre: Whereto whenas they now approched neare,

With hartie wordes her knight she gan to cheare,

And in her modest maner thus bespake: [deare,

take!

'Now are we come unto my native soyle, spoyle;

Therefore, henceforth, bee at your keeping well. And hartes of great Heroës doest enrage. And ever ready for your foeman fell: The sparke of noble corage now awake

And strive your excellent selfe to excell: That shall ye evermore renowmed make [take.' Thou doest awake, sleepe never he so so Above all knights on earth, that batteill under- And scared nations doest with horror

And pointing forth, 'Lo! yonder is,' (said she) ' The brasen towre, in which my parents deare Till I of warres and bloody Mars doe size.

For dread of that huge feend emprisond be; And Bryton fieldes with Sarazin blood bed For dread of that huge feend emprisond be; Whom I from far see on the walles appeare. Whose sight my feelle soule doth greatly king.

And on the top of all I do espye [cheare: That with their horror heven and earth did the And on the top of all I do espye The watchman wayting tydings glad to heare; That, (O my Parents!) might I happily

Unto you bring, to ease you of your misery! With that they heard a roaring hideous sownd.

That all the ayre with terror filled wyde, And seemd uneath to shake the stedfast ground. Eftsoones that dreadful Dragon they espyde, Where stretcht he lay upon the sunny side Of a great hill, himselfe like a great hill : But, all so soone as he from far descryde

Those glistring armes that heven with light As mountaine doth the valley overcasts.

Then badd the knight his Lady yede alos, And to an hill herselfe withdraw asyde; From whence she might behold that battail proof.

And eke be safe from daunger far descryde. She him obayd, and turnd a little wyde Now, O thou sacred Muse! most learned D Deare knight, as deare as ever knight was Fayre ympe of Phœbus and his aged bryde, That all these sorrowes suffer for my sake.

High heven behold the tedious toyle ye for me That warlike handes ennoblest with immort

O! gently come into my feeble brest; And to the place where all our perilles dwell; Come gently, but not with that mightle relifere hauntes that feend, and does his dayly Wherewith the martiall troupes thou de infest,

name:

That nought their kindled corage may Soone as thy dreadfull trompe begins to so The God of warre with his fiers equipage astownd.

Favre Goddesse, lay that furious fitt asy Twixt that great faery Queene and Pay A worke of labour long, and endlesse pray But now a while lett downe that hand

string, And to my tunes thy second tenor rayse, That I this man of God his godly armes blaze.

VIII

By this, the dreadful Beast drew nie hand, Halfe flying and halfe footing in his has

That with his largenesse measured much And made wide shadow under his huge v did fill, [untill. Approching nigh, he reared high afore
He rousel himselfe full blyth, and hastned them His body monstrous, horrible, and vasts

right.

whenly gore;

ver all with brasen scales was armd, ated cate of steele, so couched neare right mote perce; ne might his corse ee barind nt of swerd, nor push of pointed speare: a- an Eagle, seeing pray appeare, y plumes doth rouze, full rudely dight; ed he, that horror was to heare:

he clashing of an Armor bright,

he two sayles, in which the hollow But far within, as in a hollow glade, yod rol full and worketh speedy way : the pennes, that did his pineons bynd, mayne-vardes with flying canvas

v-e his rouzed scales did send unto the

1-4: b. whenas him list the avre to beat, - 'v force unwonted passage fynd, eie- before him fledd for terror great, the Levens stood still amazed with his ite at.

an long tayle, wownd up in hundred ddes.

ersyred his long bras-scaly back. *reached boughtes when ever he un-1300

k entangled knots adown does slack. at as with shieldes of red and blacke, wil: all the land behind him farre, three tarlongs does but litle lacke; the teint two stinges in fixed arre. a iii sharp, that sharpest steele exmielt farre.

raise and sharpest steele did far exceed : : --- of his cruel rending clawes : a- it -ure, as sure as death in deed, er thing does touch his ravenous pawes. within his reach he ever drawes. near hideous head my tongue to tell Title; for his deepe devouring jawes (x; -1 like the griesly mouth of hell, which into his darke abysse all ravin -11

XIII

Lat more wondrous was, in either jaw ackes of yron teeth enraunged were, a vett trickling blood, and gobbets ran. ire ured budies did appeare,

to increase his wondrous greatnes more. That sight thereof bredd cold congealed feare: rola with wrath and poyson, and with Which to increase, and all atonce to kill, A cloud of smoothering smoke, and sulphure

seare, Out of his stinking gorge forth steemed still, That all the ayre about with smoke and stench did fill.

His blazing eyes, like two bright shining shieldes. Did burne with wrath, and sparkled living

fvre: As two broad Beacons, sett in open fieldes, Send forth their flames far off to every shyre, And warning give that enimies conspyre With fire and sword the region to invade: winges, when forth he did display. So flam'd his eyne with rage and rancorous yre;

Those glaring lampes were sett that made a dreadfull shade.

So dreadfuny he towardes him did pas, Forelifting up a-loft his speckled brest, And often bounding on the brused gras, As for great joyance of his newcome guest. Eftsoones he gan advance his haughty crest. As chauffed Bore his bristles doth upreare; And shoke his scales to battaile ready drest That made the Rederosse knight nigh quake for feare,

As bidding bold defyaunce to his forman neare.

The knight gan fayrely couch his steady speare And fiersely ran at him with rigorous might: The pointed steele, arriving rudely theare, harder hyde would nether perce nor bight.

But, glauncing by, foorth passed forward right. Yet sore amoved with so paissaunt pash. The wrathfull beast about him turned light And him so rudely, passing by, did brush With his long tayle, that horse and man to ground did rush.

Both horse and man up lightly rose againe, And fresh encounter towardes him addrest: But th' vdle stroke yet backe recoyld in vaine, And found no place his deadly point to rest. Exceeding rage entlam'd the furious Beast, To be avenged of so great despight; For never telt his imperceable brest So wondrous force from hand of living wight; Yet had he prov'd the powre of many a puis-sant knight.

Then, with his waving wings displayed wyde, Himselfe up high he lifted from the ground, And with strong flight did forcibly divyde The yielding ayre, which nigh too feeble found Her flitting parts, and element unsound, To beare so great a weight : he, cutting way With his broad sayles, about him soared round; At last, low stouping with unweldy sway,

Snatcht up both horse and man, to beare them quite away.

Long he them bore above the subject plaine, So far as Ewghen bow a shaft may send, Till struggling strong did bim at last constraine To let them downe before his flightes end: As hagard hauke, presuming to contend With hardy fowle above his hable might, His wearie pounces all in vaine doth spend To trusse the pray too heavy for his flight; Which, comming down to ground, does free it selfe by fight.

He so disseized of his gryping grosse, The knight his thrillant speare againe assayd In his bras-plated body to embosse, [layd; And three mens strength unto the stronke he Wherewith the stiffe beame quaked as affrayd, And glauncing from his scaly necke did glyde Close under his left wing, then broad displayd: The percing steele there wrought a wound full wyde. lowdly cryde.

That with the uncouth smart the Monster

He cryde, as raging seas are wont to rore When wintry storme his wrathful wreck does threat :

The rolling billowes beate the ragged shore, As they the earth would shoulder from her seat; And greedy gulfe does gape, as he would eat His neighbour element in his revenge: Then gin the blustring brethren boldly threat

To move the world from off his stedfast henge, And boystrous battaile make, each other to avenge.

XXII

The steely head stuck fast still in his flesh, Till with his cruell clawes he snatcht the wood, And quite a sunder broke, Forth flowed fresh A gushing river of blacke gory blood, That drowned all the land whereon he stood : The streame thereof would drive a water-mill: Trebly augmented was his furious mood With bitter sence of his deepe rooted ill,

large nosethril.

XXIII

His hideous tayle then hurled he about, And therewith all enwrapt the nimble thys Of his froth-fomy steed, whose courage sto Striving to loose the knott that fast him t Himselfe in streighter bandes too rash impli That to the ground he is perforce constrain To throw his ryder; who can quickly ryse From off the earth, with durty blood distays For that reprochfull fall right fowly he disdays

XXIV

And fercely tooke his trenchand blade in his With which he stroke so furious and so fell That nothing seemd the puissaunce could wit Upon his crest the hardned yron fell, [star But his more hardned crest was armd so we That deeper dint therein it would not make Yet so extremely did the buffe him quell, That from thenceforth he shund the like to the But when he saw them come he did them forsake.

XXV

The knight was wroth to see his stroke begut And smot againe with more outrageous mi But backe againe the sparcling steele reco And left not any marke where it did light As if in Adamant rocke it had beene pight The beast, impatient of his smarting wow And of so fierce and forcible despight, [gro Thought with his winges to stye above But his late wounded wing unserviceable for

Then full of griefe and anguish vehement He lowdly brayd, that like was never bear And from his wide devouring oven sent A flake of fire, that flashing in his beard Him all amazd, and almost made afeard: The scorching flame sore swinged all his And through his armour all his body sear That he could not endure so cruell cace, But thought his armes to leave, and he to unlace.

XXVII

Not that great Champion of the antique w Whom famous Poetes verse so much vaunt, And hath for twelve huge labours high as

So many furies and sharpe fits did haunt, When him the poysoned garment did ench When Centaures blood and bloody charmd; As did this knight twelve thousand de

Whom fyrie steele now burnt, that ers arind;

That flames of fire he threw forth from his That erst him goodly armd, now most him harmd.

m feld.

XXVIII

wearie, sore, emboyled, grieved, brent, at, toyle, wounds, armes, smart, and ward fire. er man such mischiefes did torment: tter were; death did he oft desire, h will never come when needes require,

dismayd when that his foe beheld, to suffer him no more respire, his sturdy sterne about to weld.

XXIX

ned, (as fayre it then befell) is backe, unweeting, where he stood, ent time there was a springing well, ich fast trickled forth a silver flood, reat vertues, and for med'cine good: e, before that cursed Dragon got py land, and all with innocent blood 10se sacred waves, it rightly hot l of life, ne yet his vertues had rgot:

o life the dead it could restore, t of sinfull crimes cleane wash away; at with sicknesse were infected sore recure; and aged long decay s one were borne that very day.
this, and Jordan, did excell, English Bath, and eke the German au: lephise, nor Hebrus, match this well: same the knight back overthrowen

XXXI

n the golden Phœbus for to steepe face in billowes of the west, faint steedes watred in Ocean deepe rom their journall labours they did st; at infernall Monster, having kest ie foe into that living well, 1 advaunce his broad discoloured brest is wonted pitch, with countenance fell, pt his yron wings as victor he did vell.

XXXII

when his pensive Lady saw from farre, e and sorrow did her soule assay, ing that the sad end of the warre; to highest God entirely pray red chaunce from her to turne away:

Her dainty limbs in her sad dreriment, But praying still did wake, and waking did lament.

XXXIII

The morrow next gan carely to appeare, That Titan rose to runne his daily race; But earely, ere the morrow next gan reare Out of the sea faire Titans deawy face, Up rose the gentle virgin from her place, And looked all about, if she might spy so strongly stroke, that to the ground Her loved knight to move his manly pace: For she had great doubt of his safety, Since late she saw him fall before his enimy.

XXXIV

At last she saw where he upstarted brave Out of the well, wherein he drenched lay:
As Eagle, fresh out of the ocean wave,
Where he hath lefte his plumes all hory gray, And deckt himselfe with fethers youthly gay, Like Eyas hauke up mounts unto the skies, His newly-budded pineons to assay, And marveiles at himselfe stil as he flies: So new .this new-borne knight to battell new

xxxv

did rise.

Whom when the dam ed feend so fresh did No wonder if he wondered at the sight, [spy, And doubted whether his late enimy It were, or other new supplied knight. He now, to prove his late renewed might, High brandishing his bright deaw-burning blade, Upon his crested scalp so sore did smite, That to the scull a yawning wound it made:

The deadly dint his dulled sences all dismaid. XXXVI

I wote not whether the revenging steele Were hardned with that holy water dew Wherein he fell, or sharper edge did feele, Or his baptized hands now greater grew, Or other secret vertue did ensew : Els never could the force of fleshly arme, Ne molten mettall, in his blood embrew; For till that stownd could never wight him charme. harme By subtilty, nor slight, nor might, nor mighty

xxxvii

The cruell wound enraged him so sore, That loud he yelled for exceeding paine; As hundred ramping Lions seemd to rore, Whom ravenous hunger did thereto constraine: ded hands, and knees full lowly bent, Then gan he tosse aloft his stretched traine, t shee watcht, ne once adowne would And therewith scourge the buxome aire so sore That to his force to yielden it was faine;

No ought his sturdy strokes might stand afore, That glauncing fire out of the yron phil. That high trees overthrew, and rocks in peeces

XXXVIII

The same advancing high above his head, With sharpe intended sting so rude him smott, That to the earth him drove, as stricken dead; Ne living wight would have him life behott: The mortall sting his angry needle shott Quite through his shield, and in his shoulder

Where fast it stucke, ne would thereout be gott: The griefe thereof him wondrous sore diseasd, Ne might his rancling paine with patience be appeasd.

But yet, more mindfull of his honour deare Then of the grievous smart which him did

wring From loathed soile he can him lightly reare, And strove to loose the far infixed sting : Which when in vaine he tryde with strugge-

ling Inflam'd with wrath, his raging blade he hefte, And strooke so strongly, that the knotty string Of his huge taile he quite a sonder clefte; Five joints thereof he hewd, and but the stump

XL

him lefte.

Hart cannot thinke what outrage and what

With fowle enfouldred smoake and flashing fire, The hell-bred beast threw forth unto the skies, That all was covered with darknesse dire: Then, fraught with rancour and engorged yre, He cast at once him to avenge for all; And, gathering up himselfe out of the mire With his uneven wings, did fiercely fall Upon his sunne-bright shield, and grypt it fast withall.

Much was the man encombred with his hold, In feare to lose his weapon in his paw. Ne wist yett how his talaunts to unfold; Nor harder was from Cerberus greedy jaw To plucke a bone, then from his cruell claw To reave by strength the griped gage away : Thrise he assayd it from his foote to draw, And thrise in vaine to draw it did assay; It booted nought to thinke to robbe him of his Whereof great vertues over-all were redd; pray.

XLII

Tho, when he saw no power might prevaile, His trusty sword he cald to his last aid, Wherewith he fiersly did his foe assaile, And double blowes about him stoutly laid,

As sparkles from the Andvile use to #v. When heavy hammers on the wedge are it Therewith at last he forst him to unty One of his grasping feets, him to de thereby.

XLIII

The other foote, fast fixed on his shield, Whenas no strength nor stroks mote him straine

To loose, ne yet the warlike pledge to yind He smott thereat with all his might and ma That nought so wondrous puissaunce mi sustaine:

Upon the joint the lucky steele did light, And made such way that hewd it quit twaine;

The paw yett missed not his minisht mig But hong still on the shield, as it at first pight.

XLIV

For griefe thereof and divelish despight, From his infernall fournace forth he three Huge flames that dimmed all the hevens li Enrold in duskish smoke and brimstone b As burning Aetna from his boyling stew Doth belch out flames, and rockes in pa broke,

And ragged ribs of mountaines molten ne Enwrapt in coleblacke clowds and filthy sm That al the land with stench and heven

horror choke.

The heate whereof, and harmefull pestiled So sore him noyd, that forst him to retire A little backeward for his best defence, To save his body from the scorching fire Which he from hellish entrailes did expire It chaunst, (eternall God that chaunce guide)

As he recoiled backeward, in the mire His nigh foreweried feeble feet did slide. And downe he fell, with dread of shame terrifide.

XLVI

There grew a goodly tree him faire beside Loaden with fruit and apples rosy redd, As they in pure vermilion had been dide For happy life to all which thereon fedd, And life eke everlasting did befall; Great God it planted in that blessed stedd With his Almighty hand, and did it call The tree of life, the crime of our first fat XLVII

all the world like was not to be found, in that soile, where all good things did

I freely sprong out of the fruitfull grownd, incorrupted Nature did them sow, that dredd Dragon all did overthrow. wher like faire tree eke grew thereby, wereof whoso did eat, eftsoones did know

h good and ill. O mournfull memory!

at tree through one mans fault hath doen us all to dy.

XLVIII

om that first tree forth flowd, as from a well, rickling streame of Balme, most soveraine

a dainty deare, which on the ground still fell, overflowed all the fertile plaine, at had deawed bene with timely raine:

and long health that gracious ointment gave,
[againe]
deadly wounds could heale, and reare
sencelesse corse appointed for the grave:

sencelesse corse appointed for the grave:
 that same he fell, which did from death him save.

XLIX or nigh thereto the ever damned Beast

rst not approch, for he was deadly made,
d al that life preserved did detest;
: he it oft adventur'd to invade.
this the drouping day-light gan to fade,
d yield his rowme to sad succeeding night,
so with her sable mantle gan to shade
, face of earth and wayes of living wight,
1 high her burning torch set up in heaven
bright.

•

hen gentle Una saw the second fall
her deare knight, who, weary of long fight
d faint through losse of blood, moov'd not
at all,
t lay, as in a dreame of deepe delight,
meand with pretions Balme, whose vertions

t lay, as in a dreame of deepe delight, meard with pretious Balme, whose vertuous might I heale his woundes, and scorching heat alay;

aine she stricken was with sore affright,
d for his safetie gan devoutly pray,
d watch the noyous night, and wait for
joyous day.

L

ne joyous day gan early to appeare; d fayre Aurora from the deawy bed aged Tithone gan herselfs to reare th rosy cheeks, for shame as blushing red;

Her golden locks for hast were loosely shed
About her eares, when Una her did marke
Clymbe to her charet, all with flowers spred,
From heven high to chace the chearelesse
darke;
[larke.]
With mery note her lowd salutes the mounting

own samues the mounting

11

Then freshly up arose the doughty knight, All healed of his hurts and woundes wide, And did himselfe to battaile ready dight; Whose early foe awaiting him beside To have devourd, so soone as day he spyde, When now he saw himselfe so freshly reare,

As if late fight had nought him damnifyde, He woxe dismaid, and gan his fate to feare: Nathlesse with wonted rage he him advaunced neare.

L

And in his first encounter, gaping wyde, He thought attonce him to have swallowd quight, And rusht upon him with outragious pryde;

Who him rencountring fierce, as hauke in flight,
Perforce rebutted backe. The weapon bright,
Taking advantage of his open jaw, [might,
Ran through his mouth with so importune
That deepe emperst his darksom hollow maw,
And, back retyrd, his life blood forth with all

LIV

did draw.

lay.

So downe he fell, and forth his life did breath, That vanisht into smoke and cloudes swift; So downe he fell, that th' earth him underneath Did grone, as feeble so great load to lift; So downe he fell, as an huge rocky clift, [away, Whose false foundacion waves have washt With dreadfull poyse is from the mayneland rift, And rolling downe great Neptune doth dismay: So downe he fell, and like an heaped mountaine

LV

The knight him selfe even trembled at his fall, So huge and horrible a masse it seemd; And his deare Lady, that beheld it all, Durst not approach for dread which she misdeemd;

But yet at last, whenas the direfull feend She saw not stirre, off-shaking vaine affright She nigher drew, and saw that joyous end: Then God she praysd, and thankt her faithfull knight,

That had atchievde so great a conquest by his might.

BEHOLD! I see the haven nigh at hand To which I meane my wearie course to bend; Vere the maine shete, and beare up with the land,

The which afore is fayrly to be kend, And seemeth safe from storms that may offend; There this fayre virgin wearie of her way Must landed bee, now at her journeyes end; There eke my feeble barke a while may stay, Till mery wynd and weather call her thence away.

XX Scarsely had Phoebus in the glooming East Yett harnessed his fyrie-footed teeme, Ne reard above the earth his flaming creast, When the last deadly smoke aloft did steeme, That signe of last outbreathed life did seeme Unto the watchman on the castle-wall; Who thereby dead that balefull Beast did deeme, And to his Lord and Lady lowd gan call, To tell how he had seene the Dragons fatall fall.

III

Uprose with hasty joy, and feeble speed, That aged Syre, the Lord of all that land, And looked forth, to weet if trew indeed Those tydinges were, as he did understand: Which whenas trew by tryall he out fond, He badd to open wyde his brasen gate, Which long time had beene shut, and out of hond Proclaymed joy and peace through all his state; For dead now was their foe, which them forrayed late.

Then gan triumphant Trompets sownd on hye, That sent to heven the ecchoed report Of their new joy, and happie victory Gainst him, that had them long opprest with And fast imprisoned in sieged fort. [tort, Then all the people, as in solemne feast, To him assembled with one full consort, Rejoycing at the fall of that great beast, From whose eternall bondage now they were And her ador'd by honorable name, releast,

Forth came that anneient Lord, an Queene,

Arayd in antique robes downe to the g And sad habiliments right well beseen A noble crew about them waited round Of sage and sober peres, all gravely go Whom far before did march a goodly b Of tall young men, all hable armes to a But now they laurell braunches bore in Glad signe of victory and peace in al land.

Unto that doughtie Conquerour they And him before themselves prostrating Their Lord and Patrone loud did hi clame,

And at his feet their lawrell boughes did Soone after them, all danneing on a roo The comely virgins came, with girlands As fresh as flowres in medow greene do When morning deaw upon their leave light:

And in their handes sweet Timbrels all

And them before the fry of children y Their wanton sportes and childish mi play, And to the Maydens sownding tymbre

In well attuned notes a joyous lay. And made delightfull musick all the w Untill they came where that faire virgin As fayre Diana in fresh sommers day Beholdes her nymphes enraung'd in shad Some wrestle, some do run, some bi christall flood.

So she beheld those maydens merimen With chearefull vew; who, when to he came,

Themselves to ground with gracious hur

ing to heven her everlasting fame: n on her head they sett a girlond greene, crowned her twixt earnest and twixt

game: in her self-resemblance well beseene, seeme, such as she was, a goodly maiden And with their garments strowes the paved

Queene.

ıx

cl after all the raskall many ran, ped together in rude rablement, ee the face of that victorious man, em all admired as from heaven sent,

gazd upon with gaping wonderment; when they came where that dead Dragon lay, **Echt** on the ground in monstrous large ex-

sight with ydle feare did them dismay, durst approch him nigh to touch, or once ASSAY.

feard, and fledd; some feard, and well it faynd ; that would wiser seeme then all the rest and him not touch, for yet perhaps remaynd e lingring life within his hollow brest,

his wombe might lurke some hidden nest many Dragonettes, his fruitfull seede: Cher saide, that in his eyes did rest sparckling fyre, and badd thereof take

heed; ther said, he saw him move his eyes indeed.

nother, whenas her foolehardy chyld

come too neare, and with his talants play, e dead through feare, her litle babe revyld, to her gossibs gan in counsell say; we can I tell, but that his talants may heratch my sonne, or rend his tender hand?'
liversly them selves in vaine they fray;

iles some more bold to measure him nigh stand. prove how many acres he did spred of land.

XII

us flocked all the folke him rownd about; whiles that hoarie king, with all his traine, ag arrived where that champion stout er his foes defeasaunce did remaine, a goodly greetes, and fayre does entertayne is princely gifts of yvory and gold, [paine.] Then sayd that royall Pere in sober wise; beare Sonne, great beene the evils which ye thousand thankes him yeeldes for all his bore when his daughter deare he does behold, dearnly doth imbrace, and kisseth manifold. That I note whether praise or pitty more;

XIII

And after to his Pallace he them bringes, With shaumes, and trompets, and with Clarious sweet: And all the way the joyous people singes,

street: meet Whence mounting up, they fynd purveyaunce Of all, that royall Princes court became; And all the floore was underneath their feet Bespredd with costly scarlott of great name, On which they lowly sitt, and fitting purpose

XIV What needes me tell their feast and goodly guize, In which was nothing riotous nor vaine? What needes of dainty dishes to devize,

Of comely services, or courtly trayne? My narrow leaves cannot in them contayne

The large discourse of roiall Princes state. Yet was their manner then but bare and playne; For th' antique world excesse and pryde did hate: [late.

Such proud luxurious pompe is swollen up but

Then, when with meates and drinkes of every kinde Their fervent appetites they quenched had, That auncient Lord gan fit occasion finde,

Of straunge adventures, and of perils sad Which in his travell him befallen had, For to demaund of his renowmed guest: [sad, Who then with utt'rance grave, and count'nance From poynt to poynt, as is before exprest, Discourst his voyage long, according his re-

XVI

quest.

Great pleasure, mixt with pittiful regard, That godly King and Queene did passionate, Whyles they his pittifull adventures heard; That oft they did lament his lucklesse state, And often blame the too importune fate That heapd on him so many wrathfull wreakes; For never gentle knight, as he of late, So tossed was in fortunes cruell freakes: And all the while salt teares bedeawd the hearers cheaks.

Deare Sonne, great beene the evils which ye

For never living man, I weene, so sore In sea of deadly daungers was distrest: But since now safe ye seised have the shore, And well arrived are, (high God be blest!) Let us devize of ease and everlasting rest.

'Ah dearest Lord!' said then that doughty knight,

Of ease or rest I may not yet devize; For by the faith which I to armes have plight, I bownden am streight after this emprize, As that your daughter can ye well advize, Backe to retourne to that great Faery Queene. And her to serve sixe yeares in warlike wize, Gainst that proud Paynim king that works her

teene : Therefore I ought crave pardon, till I there have

XIX

'Unhappy falls that hard necessity,' (Quoth he) 'the troubler of my happy peace, And vowed foe of my felicity; Ne I against the same can justly preace: But since that band ye cannot now release, Nor doen undo, (for vowes may not be vayne) Soone as the terme of those six yeares shall A Messenger with letters, which his me cease

Ye then shall hither backe retourne agayne, The marriage to accomplish vowd betwixt you

$\mathbf{x}\mathbf{x}$

'Which, for my part, I covet to performe In sort as through the world I did proclame, That who-so kild that monster most deforme. And him in hardy battayle overcame, Should have mine onely daughter to his Dame, And of my kingdome heyre apparaunt bee: Therefore, since now to thee perteynes the same By dew desert of noble chevalree, [to thee.] Both daughter and eke kingdome lo? I yield

XXI

His onely daughter and his only havre: Who forth proceeding with sad sober cheare, As bright as doth the morning starre appeare For he already plighted his right hand. Out of the East, with flaming lockes bedight, Unto another love, and to another land. To tell that dawning day is drawing neare. And to the world does bring long-wished light: So faire and fresh that Lady shewd herselfe in sight.

So faire and fresh, as freshest flowre in May; For she had lavd her mournefull stole aside, And widow-like sad wimple throwne away

Whiles on her wearie journey she did ride; And on her now a garment she did weare All lilly white, withoutten spot or pride, That seemd like silke and silver woven a But neither silke nor silver therein did appear

The blazing brightnesse of her beauties be And glorious light of her sunshyny face, To tell were as to strive against the stre My ragged rimes are all too rude and bace Her heavenly lineaments for to enchace. Ne wonder; for her own deare loved knight, All were she daily with himselfe in place Did wonder much at her celestial sight: [d Oft had he seene her faire, but never so fa

xxiv

So fairely dight when she in presence on She to her Syre made humble reverence And bowed low, that her right well becau And added grace unto her excellence: Who with great wisedome and grave el Thus gan to say-But, eare he thus had a With flying speede, and seeming great pret Came running in, much like a man dismay sayd.

All in the open hall amazed stood At suddeinnesse of that unwary sight, And wondred at his breathlesse hasty mor But he for nought would stay his passage if Till fast before the king he did alight: Where falling flat great humblesse he did me And kist the ground whereon his foot was pig Then to his handes that writt he did betak Which he disclosing read thus, as the pa spake:

'To thee, most mighty king of Eden fayst Her greeting sends in these sad lines add The wofull daughter and forsaken heyre Then forth he called that his daughter fayre, Of that great Emperour of all the West:
The fairest Un', his onely daughter deare, And bids thee be advized for the best, Ere thou thy daughter linck, in holy ben Of wedlocke, to that new unknowen guest:

· To me, sad mayd, or rather widow sad. , He was affyaunced long time before, And sacred pledges he both gave, and had False erraunt knight, infamous, and forst Witnesse the burning Altars, which he s And guilty heavens of his bold perjury; Wherewith her heavenly beautic she did hide, Which though he bath polluted oft of re

em for judgement just doe fly, conjure t' avenge this shamefull ry.

XXVIII

e, since mine he is, or free or bond, trew, or living or else dead, Dsoversyne Prince! your hasty hond ting league with him, I you aread; ny right with strength adowne to d, eaknesse of my widowhed or woe; s strong her rightfull cause to plead, finde friends, if need requireth soe, ee well to fare, Thy neither friend foe. Fidessa.

these bitter byting wordes had red, s straunge did him abashed make, ie sate long time astonished,

muse, ne word to creature spake, solemn silence thus he brake, tfull eyes fast fixed on his guest: 1 knight, that for myne only sake d honor late adventurest, prest.

be hid from me that ought to be ex-

cane these bloody vowes and idle ats, at from womanish impatient mynd? ens? what altars? what enraged es,

es, at up with termes of love unkynd, nee cleare with guilty bands would d? be witnesse that I guiltlesse ame;

selfe, Sir knight, ye faulty fynd, I be in loves of former Dame,

ie doe not it cover, but disclose the

XXXI

the Redcrosse knight this answere:
my king, be nought hereat dismayd,
e wote by grave intendiment,
an, and wherefore, doth me upbrayd
h of love and loialty betrayd,
ay mishaps, as hitherward
veild, that unwares I strayd
way, through perils straunge and
thould faile me ere I had them all

XXXII

d I find, or rather I was fownd we woman that Fidessa hight, ght the falsest Dame on grownd, Duessa, royall richly dight, That easy was t' inveigle weaker sight:
Who by her wicked arts and wylie skill,
Too false and strong for earthly skill or might,
Unwares me wrought unto her wicked will,
And to my foe betrayd when least I feared ill.'

ınxxx

Then stepped forth the goodly royall Mayd, of And on the ground herselfe prostrating low, With sober countenance thus to him sayd: 'O'! pardon me, my soveraine Lord, to sheow it, The secret treasons, which of late I know. To have bene wrought by that false sorceresse: d Shee, onely she, it is, that earst did throw This gentle knight into so great distresse, That death him did awaite in daily wretched-

*And now it seemes, that she suborned hath

This crafty messenger with letters vaine, To worke new woe and improvided scath, By breaking of the band betwixt us twaine; Wherein she used hath the practicke paine Of this false footman, clokt with simplenesse, Whome if ye please for to discover plaine, Ye shall him Archimago find, I ghesse, [lesse.' The falsest man alive: who tries, shall find no

XXXV

The king was greatly moved at her speach; And, all with suddein indignation fraight, Bad on that Messenger rude hands to reach. Eftsoones the Gard, which on his state did wait, Attacht that faytor false, and bound him strait, Who seeming sorely chauffed at his band, As chained beare whom cruell dogs doe bait, With ydle force did faine them to withstand, And often semblaunce made to scape out of

XXXVI

their hand.

But they him layd full low in dungeon deepe, And bound him hand and foote with yron chains; And with continual watch did warely keepe. Who then would thinke that by his subtile trains

He could escape fowle death or deadly pains? Thus, when that Princes wrath was pacifide, He gan renew the late forbidden bains. And to the knight his daughter deare he tyde

With sacred rites and vowes for ever to abyde,

His owne two hands the holy knotts did knitt, That none but death for ever can divide; His owne two hands, for such a turne most fitt, The housling fire did kindle and provide,



THE FAERIE OUEENE.

And holy water thereon sprinckled wide; At which the bushy Teade a groome did light, And sacred lamp in secret chamber hide, Where it should not be quenched day nor night, For feare of evil fates, but burnen ever bright.

78

XXXVIII

Then gan they sprinckle all the posts with wine,

And made great feast to solemnize that day: They all perfumde with frankincense divine, And precious odours fetcht from far away, That all the house did sweat with great aray: And all the while sweete Musicke did apply Her curious skill the warbling notes to play, To drive away the dull Melancholy; The whiles one sung a song of love and jollity.

XXXIX

During the which there was an heavenly noise Heard sownd through all the Pallace pleasantly, The which he shortly did, and I Like as it had bene many an Angels voice Singing before th' eternall majesty, In their trinall triplicities on hye: Yett wist no creature whence that hevenly Proceeded, yet each one felt secretly sweet Himselfe thereby refte of his sences meet, And ravished with rare impression in his sprite.

Great joy was made that day of young and

And solemne feast proclaymd throughout the land.

That their exceeding merth may no Suffice it heare by signes to underst The usuall joyes at knitting of love Thrise happy man the knight hi hold. Possessed of his Ladies hart and h And ever, when his eie did her beho

His heart did seeme to melt in pleas

fold.

XI.I

Her joyous presence, and sweet co In full content he there did long en Ne wicked envy, ne vile gealosy, His deare delights were hable to at Yet, swimming in that sea of blisft He nought forgott how he whilome! In case he could that monstrous stroy,

Unto his Faery Queene backe to re mourne.

XLII

Now, strike your sailes, yee jolly For we be come unto a quiet rode, Where we must land some of our p And light this weary vessell of her Here she a while may make her sa Till she repaired have her tackles s And wants supplide; And then ag On the long voiage whereto she is Well may she speede, and fairely intent!

THE SECOND BOOK

OF

THE FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF SIR GUYON, OR OF TEMPERAUNCE.

ell I wote, most mighty Soveraine, is famous antique history aboundance of an yelle braine d be, and painted forgery, m matter of just memory; hat breatheth living aire does know hat happy land of Faery, nuch doe vaunt, yet no where

at man with better sence advize, world least part to us is red; E. w through hardy enterprize t Regions are discovered. ate age were never mentioned. heard of th' Indian Peru? venturous vessell measured en huge river, now found trew? C: Virginia who did ever vew?

111

[:P.

were, when no man did them num wisest ages hidden beene:

That nothing is but that which he hath seene? What if within the Moones fayre shining spheare, What if in every other starre unseene Of other worldes he happily should heare, He wonder would much more; yet such to some appeare.

ıv

Of facry lond yet if he more inquyre, antiquities, which no body can By cerrein signes, here sett in sondrie place, He may it fynd; ne let him then admyre, But yield his sence to bee too blunt and bace, That no'te without an hound fine footing trace. And thou, () fayrest Princesse under sky! In this favre mirrhour maist behold thy face, And thine owne realmes in lond of Faery, And in this antique ymage thy great auncestry.

The which O! pardon me thus to enfold In covert vele, and wrap in shadowes light, That feeble eyes your glory may behold, Which ells could not endure those beames bright,

But would bee dazled with exceeding light. O! pardon, and vouchsafe with patient eare imes thinges more unknowne shall The brave adventures of this faery knight, The good Sir Guyon, gratiously to heare; should witlesse man so much mis- In whom great rule of Temp'raunce goodly doth appeare.

CANTO L.

Guyon, by Archimage abusd, The Redcrosse knight awaytes; yndes Mordant and Amavia slaine With pleasures poisoned baytes.

THAT conning Architect of cancred guyle, Whom Princes late displeasure left in bands, For falsed letters, and suborned wyle, Soone as the Rederosse knight he understands To beene departed out of Eden landes, To serve againe his soveraine Elfin Queene, His artes he moves, and out of caytives handes Himselfe he frees by secret meanes unseene; His shackles emptie lefte, himselfe escaped

And forth he fares, full of malicious mynd, To worken mischiefe, and avenging woe, Where ever he that godly knight may fynd His onely bart-sore, and his onely foe; Sith Una now he algates must forgoe, Whom his victorious handes did earst restore To native crowne and kingdom late ygoe; Where she enjoyes sure peace for evermore, As wetherbeaten ship arryv'd on happie shore.

Him therefore now the object of his spight And deadly food he makes: him to offend, By forged treason or by open fight, He seekes, of all his drifte the aymed end: Thereto his subtile engins he does bend, His practick witt and his fayre fyled tonge, With thousand other sleightes; for well he kend His credit now in doubtfull ballaunce hong : For hardly could bee hurt who was already stong.

IV

Still as he went he craftie stales did lay, With cunning traynes him to entrap unwares, And privy spyals plast in all his way, fares, To weete what course he takes, and how he To ketch him at a vauntage in his snares. But now so wise and wary was the knight By tryall of his former harmes and cares, That he descryde and shonned still his slight: And great atchiev'ments, great y. The fish that once was caught new bait wil Vouchsafe to stay your steed for hu

hardly byte.

Nath'lesse th' Enchaunter wo In hope to win occasion to his will Which when he long awaited ha He chaungd his mynd from one For to all good he enimy was stil Upon the way him fortuned to m Fayre marching underneath a she A goodly knight, all armd in har That from his head no place app feete.

His carriage was full comely and His countenance demure and tem But yett so sterne and terrible in That cheard his friendes, and did hi He was an Elfin borne of noble st And mickle worship in his native Well could be tourney, and in lis And knighthood tooke of good Sir When with king Oberon he came b

Him als accompanyd upon the y A comely Palmer, clad in black Of rypest yeares, and heares all h That with a staffe his feeble steps Least his long way his aged limber And, if by lookes one may the mi He seemd to be a sage and sober And ever with slow pace the knig Who taught his trampling steed steps to tread.

Such whenas Archimago them d He weened well to worke some un Eftsoones untwisting his deceiptfu fares, He gan to weave a web of wicked how he And, with faire countenance and fla To them approching, thus the knig ' Fayre sonne of Mars, that seeke spovle,

sake.

ıx

rd his steed for humble misers sake, d tell on the tenor of his playnt:

ming then in every limb to quake
inward feare, and seeming pale and

Her swollen eyes were much disfigured,

[paynt: teous mone his percing speach gan ady! how shall I declare thy cace, ste I left in languorous constraynt God! thy selfe now present were in ace [thee grace. his ruefull tale: thy sight could win

per would, O! would it so had chaunst, 1, most noble Sir, had present beene hat lewd rybauld, with vyle lust ivaunst, t his tilthie hands on virgin cleene,

e her dainty corps, so faire and sheene e earth, great mother of us all, ing eye more fayre was never seene ity and honour virginall: [did call. re heavens, whom she in vaine to help

nay it be,' sayd then the knight halfe roth. shent? night should knighthood ever so have it that saw,' (quoth he) 'would weene r troth,

mefully that Mayd he did torment: r golden lockes he rudely rent, [sword w her on the ground; and his sharpe

her snowy brest he fiercely bent, eatned death with many a bloodie ord: [abhord.] hates to tell the rest that eye to see

ith amoved from his sober mood, es he yet,' (said he) 'that wrought is act? a the heavens afford him vitall food? (quoth he) 'and boasteth of the fact, ath any knight his courage crackt. nay that treachour then,' (sayd he) e found, nat meanes may I his footing tract?

rall I shew,' (sayd he) 'as sure as und [ing wound.' ken Deure doth chalenge by the bleed-

d not leager talke, but with fierce yre ous haste away is quickly gone that kright, where him that crafty to be. They do arrive anone

Where sate a gentle Lady all alone, With garments rent, and heare discheveled, Wringing her handes, and making piteous

And her faire face with teares was fowly blubbered.

XIV

The knight, approching nigh, thus to her said: Fayre Lady, through fowle sorrow ill bedight, Great pitty is to see you thus dismayd

And marre the blossom of your beauty bright: For-thy appease your griefe and heavy plight, And tell the cause of your conceived payne; For, if he live that hath you doen despight, He shall you do dew recompence agayne, Or els his wrong with greater puissance main-

Which when she heard, as in despightfull wise

taine.

She wilfully her sorrow did augment, And offred hope of comfort did despise: Her golden lockes most cruelly she rent, And scratcht her face with ghastly dreriment; Ne would she speake, ne see, ne et be seene, But hid her visage, and her head downe bent, Either for grievous shame, or for great teene, As if her hart with sorrow had transfixed beene:

xvi Till her that Squyre bespake: 'Madame, my

liefe. For Gods deare love be not so wilfull bent, But doe vouchsafe now to receive reliefe, The which good fortune doth to you present. For what bootes it to weepe and to wayment When ill is chaunst, but doth the ill increase,

And the weake minde with double woe torment?' [appease When she her Squyre heard speake, she gan Her voluntarie paine, and feele some secret ease.

XVII

Estsoone she said; 'Ah! gentle trustie Squyre,

What comfort can I, wofull wretch, conceave? Or why should ever I henceforth desyre To see faire heavens face, and life not leave, Sith that false Traytour did my honour reave?' 'False traytour certes,' (saide the Faerie knight)

'I read the man, that ever would deceave A gentle Lady, or her wrong through might: \
Death were too litle pains for such a fowle despight.

' But now, fayre Lady, comfort to you make, And read who hath ye wrought this shamefull plight,

That short revenge the man may overtake, Where-so he be, and soone upon him light.' 'Certes,' (saide she) 'I wote not bow he hight, But under him a gray steede he did wield, Whose sides with dapled circles weren dight; Upright he rode, and in his silver shield [field. He bore a bloodie Crosse that quartred all the

'Now by my head,' (saide Guyon) 'much I muse. [amis,

How that same knight should doe so fowle Or ever gentle Damzell so abuse: For, may I boldly say, he surely is

A right good knight, and trew of word ywis: I present was, and can it witnesse well, [pris When armes he swore, and streight did enter-Th' adventure of the Errant damozell; In which he hath great glory wonne, as I

heare tell.

'Nathlesse he shortly shall againe be tryde, And fairely quit him of th' imputed blame; Els, be ye sure, he dearely shall abyde, Or make you good amendment for the same: All wrongs have mendes, but no amendes of shame.

Now therefore, Lady, rise out of your paine, And see the salving of your blotted name.' Full loth she seemd thereto, but yet did faine, For she was inly glad her purpose so to gaine.

Her purpose was not such as she did faine, Ne yet her person such as it was seene; But under simple shew, and semblant plaine, Lurkt false Duessa secretly unseene, As a chaste Virgin that had wronged beene: So had false Archimago her disguysd, To cloke her guile with sorrow and sad teene; And eke himselfe had craftily devisd To be her Squire, and do her service well aguisd.

XXII

Her, late forlorne and naked, he had found Where she did wander in waste wildernesse, Lurking in rockes and caves far under ground, And with greene mosse cov'ring her nakednesse To hide her shame and loathly filthinesse, Sith her Prince Arthur of proud ornaments And borrowd beauty spoyld. Her nathelesse Th' enchaunter finding fit for his intents Did thus revest, and deckt with dew habiliments,

For all he did was to deceive g And draw them from pursuit farms

To slug in slouth and sensuall d And end their daies with irrenov And now exceeding griefe him of To see the Rederosse thus advan Therefore this craftie engine he d Against his praise to stirre up e Of such, as vertues like mote un

So now he Guyon guydes an un Through woods and mountaines, at last

Into a pleasant dale that lowly is Betwixt two hils, whose high her The valley did with coole shade o Through midst thereof a little riv By which there sate a knight unlaste,

Himselfe refreshing with the liqu After his travell long and labours

'Lo! yonder he,' cryde Archima 'That wrought the shamefull fact shew;

And now he doth himselfe in secre To fly the vengeaunce for his outr But vaine; for ye shall dearely do So God ye speed and send you go Which we far off will here abide t So they him left inflam'd with wr That streight against that knigh he did addresse.

XXVI

Who, seeing him from far so fier His warlike armes about him gan And in the rest his ready speare Tho, when as still he saw him toy He gan rencounter him in equall r They bene ymett, both ready to af When suddeinly that warriour gar His threatned speare, as if some no Had him betide, or hidden danger

XXVII

And cryde, 'Mercie, Sir knight! Lord,

For mine offence and heedelesse ha That had almost committed crime And with reprochfull shame m shent,

Whiles cursed steele against that b

my Redeemers death, s set for ornament l' s steed could stay uneath, courage kene, did cruell

KXVIII

I him speake, streight way

meelfe inclyning, sayd; on, well becommeth you, ther to upbrayd, so far from reason strayd, aynous violence e of that heavenly Mayd. ses your shield with faire

offence. s on you anothers daw

XXIX

at one, and doen upreare each other for to greet; e each to other beare, selves with court sies meet. rosse knight; 'Now mote

h so fierce saliaunce, id at earst me meet; ir goodly governaunce, , you guided, or some un-

XXX

' well mote I shame to tell that me hither led. tour late befell seemed ill bested, ous outrage, which he red tht against a Ladie gent; to this place me led, the marke of his intent, ule shame him follow wher

XXXI

· caruest unto game, andling and wise tem-

ide in presence came; that knight his eye did

d perfect cognizaunce, ourt he late avize;

XXXII

'Joy may you have, and everlasting fume, Of late most hard atchiev ment by you dome, For which enrolled is your glorious name In heavenly Regesters above the Sunne, Where you a Saint with Saints your seat have wonne:

But wretched we, where ye have left your marke, Must now anew begin like race to rouse. God guide thee, Guyon, well to end thy warke, And to the wished haven bring thy weary barke!

XXXIII

' Palmer,' him answered the Redercese knight, 'His be the praise that this atchiev'ment wrought,
Who made my hand the organ of his might:

More then goodwill to me attribute nought; For all I did, I did but as I ought. But you, faire Sir, whose pageaut next ensewes, Well mote yee thee, as well can wish your thought,

That home ye may report thrise happy newes; For well ye worthy bene for worth and gentle thewes.

XXXIV

So courteous conge both did give and take, With right hands plighted, pledges of good Then Guyon forward gan his voyage make

With his blacke Palmer, that him guided still: Still he him guided over dale and hill, And with his steedy staffe did point his way His race with reason, and with words his will, From fowle intemperaunce he ofte did stay, And suffred not in wrath his hasty steps to stray.

XXXV

In this faire wize they traveild long yfere Through many hard assayes which did betide; Of which he honour still away did beare, And spred his glory through all countryes wide. At last, as chaunst them by a forest side To passe, for succour from the scorching ray They heard a ruefull voice, that dearnly cride With percing shrickes and many a dolefull lay; Which to attend awhile their forward steps they stay.

XXXVI

'But if that carelesse hevens,' (quoth she) despise onne, God give you happy The doome of just revenge, and take delight To see sad pageaunts of mens misories. e uppon your shield devized. As bowned by them to live in lives despight; I knights ye goodly seeme, Yet can they not warne death from wreach wight.

Come, then; come soone; come sweetest

death, to me, And take away this long lent loathed light: Sharpe be thy wounds, but sweete the medi-

cines be. That long captived soules from weary thral- Didpainthis chearefull cheekes, yett being de

XXXVII

But thou, sweete Babe, whom frowning froward fate Hath made sad witnesse of thy fathers fall.

Sith heven thee deignes to hold in living state Long maist thou live, and better thrive withall Then to thy lucklesse parents did betall. Live thou: and to thy mother dead attest That cleare she dide from blemish criminall: Thy litle hands embrewd in bleeding brest Loe! I for pledges leave. So give me leave

to rest.

XXXVIII

With that a deadly shricke she forth did throw That through the wood re-echoed againe; And after gave a grone so deepe and low That seemd her tender heart was rent in twaine. Or thrild with point of thorough-piercing paine :

As gentle Hynd, whose sides with cruell steele. He lightly snatcht, and did the floodgate st Through launched, forth her bleeding life does

Braies out her latest breath, and up her eies Which when he felt to move, he hoped faire doth seele.

XXXIX

straict

From his tall steed, he rusht into the thick. And soone arrived where that sad pourtraict And soone arrived where that sad pourtraiet Which he perceiving greatly gan rejoice,
Of death and dolour lay, halfe dead, halfe And goodly counsell, that for wounded hart quick:

In whose white alabaster brest did stick A cruell knife that made a griesly wound, From which forth gusht a stream of gore blood What direfull chaunce, armd with aven ging w thick,

That all her goodly garments staind around, And into a deepe sanguine dide the grassy Speake, O dear Lady, speake! help never com grownd.

XL

Pitifull spectacle of deadly smart. Beside a bubling fountaine low she lay, Which shee increased with her bleeding hart, And the cleane waves with purple gore did But when as him, all in bright armour class,

ray Als in her lap a lovely babe did play His cruell sport, in stead of sorrow dew; For in her streaming blood he did embay His litle hands, and tender joints embrew : Pitifull spectacle, us ever eio did vew!

XI.T

Besides them both, upon the soiled gras The dead corse of an armed knight wa Whose armour all with blood besprincled wi i dome free. His ruddy lips did smyle, and rosy red Seemd to have beene a goodly personage, Now in his freshest flowre of lusty-bed, Fitt to inflame faire Lady with loves rag But that tiers fate did crop the blossome of !

XLII

Whom when the good Sir Guyon did belo His hart gan wexe as starke as marble stor And his fresh blood did frieze with fearer cold.

That all his sences seemd berefte attone: At last his mighty ghost gan deepe to ground. As Lion, gradging in his great disdains, Mournes inwardly, and makes to him se mone;

Til ruth and fraile affection did constraine His stout courage to stoupe, and shew his i ward paine.

Out of her gored wound the cruell steel With his faire garment; then gan softly for raine. [feele, Her teeble pulse, to prove if any drop
Whiles the sad pang approching shee does Of living blood yet in her veynes did hop: To call backe life to her forsaken shop. So well he did her deadly wounds repaire, Which when that warriour heard, dismounting. That at the last shee gan to breath out living aire.

XIIV

Is meetest med cine, tempred with sweete vok Av me! deare Lady, which the ymage at Of ruefull pitty and impatient smart, Or cursed hand, hath plaid this cruell part, Thus fowle to hasten your untimely date? too late.'

XLV

Therewith her dim eie-lids she up gan res On which the drery death did sitt as sad As lump of lead, and made darke clouds appear Before her standing she espied had, As one out of a deadly dreame affright, She weakely started, yet she nothing drad: Streight downe againe herselfe, in great d pight. and lig She groveling threw to ground, as hating 1

TI.VI

tle knight her some with carefull paine light, and softly did uphold: er reard, and thrise she sunck againe, is armes about her sides gan fold, er said; 'Yet, if the stony cold all seized on your frozen hart, vord fall that may your grief unfold, part.

XI.VII

sating up a deadly looke, full low it from bottome of her wounded brest; r, many bitter throbs did throw, · full pale and foltring tong opprest, ris she breathed forth from riven chest: re to me.

XLVIII

ar leit," (said he . Dearedame, fromee. r soule from her desired rest. sad life in long captivitee; - ke is but to have redrest er panes that doth your heart infest. i, () Lady! tell what fatall priefe thiso huge misfortune you opprest:

a accusing guilty of her death, h dry drops congealed in her eye. -ad wordes she spent her utmost breath: z can tell, so far all sence they pas. :-dead corpee, that lies here underneath. *lest knight, that ever on greene gras-M ridant was:

. 'Av the while, that he is not so now!) "I my love, my deare Lord, my deare 1.18 4 : as hevens just with equall brow and to behold us from above. v. when him high corage did emmove, tye knightes to seeke adventures wilde, "he! forth his puissant force to prove. 2 be left enwombed of this childe,

LI

'Him fortuned (hard fortune ye may ghesse) To come, where vile Acrasia does wonne; Acrasia, a false enchaunteresse That many errant knightes hath fowle fordonne; Within a wandring Island, that doth ronne And stray in perilous gulfe, her dwelling is. Favre Sir, if ever there ye travell, shonne the secrete of your mortall smart: The cursed land where many wend amis, and present helps who does his griefe And know it by the name: it hight the Boarse of blis.

LII

'Her blis is all in pleasure, and delight, Wherewith she makes her lovers dronken mad; And then with words, and weedes, of wondrous might, On them she workes her will to uses bad: ht! leave off, whatever wight thou bee, My liefest Lord she thus beguiled had; weary wretch from her dew rest, ble dying soules tranquilitee; Whom when I heard to beene so ill bestad, t away, now got, which none would Weake wretch, I wrapt myselfe in Palmers week And cast to seek him forth through danger and great dreed.

'Now had favre Cynthia by even tournes Full measured three quarters of her yeare, And thrise three tymes had fild her crooked hornes, Whenas my wombe her burdein would forbeare,

And bad me call Lucina to me neare. the o huge misfortune you oppress:
And but me can Lucina to me neare,
as cast to compasyour reliefe. grice. Lucina came; a manchild forth I brought
ath you in sorrow, and partake your The woods, the nymphes, my bowres, my midwives, weare:

Hard help at need! So deare thee, babe, I bought; *Lie hands then stretched forth on hye. Yet nought too dear I deemd, while so my deare I sought.

'Him so I sought; and so at last I found, then, O man! the sorrowes that uneath Where him that witch had thralled to her will, In chaines of lust and lewde desyres ybownd, And so transformed from his former skill, That me he knew not, nether his owne ill; ed with spurs did pricke, the good Sir Till, through wise handling and faire governf aunce. I him recured to a better will, Purged from drugs of fowle intemperaunce: Then meanes I gan devise for his deliveraunce.

'Which when the vile Enchaunteresse percciv'd. How that my Lord from her I would reprive With cup thus charmd him parting she deceived; "Sad verse, give death to him that death does "And losse of love to her that loves to live, | give, scales childe, whom thus ye see with "So soone as Bacchus with the Nymphe does blood defild. | So parted we, and on our journey drive; | lineke! Till, coming to this well, he stoupt to drincke: Reserve her cause to her eternall door The charme fulfild, dead suddeinly he downe And, in the meane, vouchasse her he did sincke.

LVI

'Which when I. wretch'-Not one word more she savd.

But breaking off the end for want of breath. And slyding soft, as downe to sleepe her layd. And ended all her woe in quiet death. That seeing, good Sir Guyon could uneath

From teares abstavne; for griefe his hart did grate.

And from so heavie sight his head did wreath, Accusing fortune, and too cruell fate, Which plonged had faire Lady in so wretched atate.

1.711

Then turning to his Palmer said; 'Old syre, Behold the ymage of mortalitie And feeble nature cloth'd with fleshly tyre. When raging passion with fierce tyranny Robs reason of her dew regalitie. And makes it servaunt to her basest part. The strong it weakens with infirmitie, And with bold furie armes the weakest hart: The strong through pleasure soonest falles, the weake through smart.'

'But temperaunce' (said he) 'with golden squire Betwixt them both can measure out a meane; Nether to melt in pleasures whott desyre, Nor frye in hartlesse griefe and dolefull tene: Thrise happy man, atweene!

But sith this wretched woman overcome Of anguish, rather then of crime, hath bene, toombe.

LIX

'Palmer,' quoth he, 'death is an equal door To good and bad, the common in of rest; But after death the tryall is to come, When best shall bee to them that hved best But both alike, when death hath both suss Religious reverence doth buriall teene Which whose wants, wants so much of his res For all so great shame after death I wee As selfe to dyen bad, unburied bad to beese.

So both agree their bodies to engrave: The great earthes wombe they open to the And with sad Cypresse seemely it embave; Then, covering with a clod their closed eye, They lay therein their corses tenderly, And bid them sleepe in everlasting peace. But, ere they did their utmost obsequy, Sir Guyon, more affection to increace, Bynempt a sacred vow, which none should at

LXI

The dead knights sword out of his sheeth drew. With which he cutt a lock of all their heat Which medling with their blood and earth h

threw Into the grave, and gan devoutly sweare; Such and such evil God on Guyon reare, And worse and worse, young Orphane, be the

payne, who fares them both If I, or thou, dew vengeaunce doe forbeare, Till guiltie blood her guerdon doe obtayne! So shedding many teares they closed the earl agavne.

CANTO II.

Bubes bloody handes may not be clensd: The face of golden Meane: Her sisters, two Extremities, Strive her to banish cleane.

THUS when Sir Guyon with his faithful guyde Had with dew rites and dolorous lament The end of their sad Tragedie uptyde, The litle babe up in his armes he hent Who with sweet pleasaunce, and bold blandishment.

Gan smyle on them, that rather ought to weepe, As budding braunch rent from the nativ As carelesse of his woe, or innocent Of that was doen; that ruth emperced deepe

teares did steepe :

11 'Ah! lucklesse babe, borne under crus starre, And in dead parents balefull ashes bred, Full little weenest thou what sorrowes are Left thee for porcion of thy livelyhed; Poore Orphane! in the wild world scattered

tree, Of that was doen; that ruth emperced deepe And throwen forth, till it be withered. In that knightes hart, and wordes with bitter Such is the state of men: Thus enter we Into this life with woe, and end with miseres

of himselfe inclyning on his knee that well, did in the water weene es losth disdainefull nicites) ie handes from bloody gore to cleene s them oft and oft, yet nought they is washing cleaner. Still he stroy the little hands were bloody seene: Still he strove à him into great amas ment drove diverse doubt his wavering wonder

not whether blott of fowle offence t be purgd with water nor with bath ; igh God, in lieu of innocence, righ God, in lieu of innocence, d had that token of his wrath, how sore bloodguiltinesse he hat'th ; the charme and veneme which they ed with secret filth infected hath. fused through the senceless tronch ough the great contagion direful adly stonck.

hus at gaze the Palmer gan to bord dly reason, and thus fayre bespake; right hard amated, gratious Lord, our i morance great merveill make, use not well conceived ve mistake: . that secret vertues are infusd fountaine, and in everie lake, [chusd, he hath skill them rightly to have

e, some were so from their sourse in-

heads spring, and are with moisture And be for all chaste Dames an endlesse monisic- each living plant with liquid sap, with flowres fayre Floraes painted of prayers or by other hap, se pourd into their waters bace, reforth were renownd, and sought m place to place.

is this well, wrought by occasion Bunge her Nymph befell. Upon a day, ange, esse Hvnd and Robucke to dismay,

Dan Faunus chaunst to meet her by the way, And, kindling fire at her faire-burning eye, Inflamed was to follow beauties pray, And chaced her that fast from him did fly; As hynd from her, so she fied from her enimy.

VIII 'At last, when fayling breath began to faint,

And saw no meanes to scape, of shame affrayd, She set her downe to weepe for sore constraint; And to Diana calling lowd for ayde, Her deare besought to let her die a mayd. The goddesse heard; and suddeine, where she sate Welling out streames of teares, and quite dis-With stony feare of that rude rustick mate, Transformd her to a stone from stedfast virgins state.

'Lo! now she is that stone; from whose two heads. [flow, As from two weeping eyes, fresh streames do Yet colde through feare and old conceived dreads; And yet the stone her semblance seemes to show,

Shapt like a maide, that such ye may her know: And yet her vertues in her water byde, For it is chaste and pure as purest snow, Ne lets her waves with any filth be dyde; [tryde.

But ever, like herselfe, unstayned hath beene 'From thence it comes, that this babes bloody hand

of passing wonders hath full often May not be clensd with water of this well: Ne certes, Sir, strive you it to withstand, But let them still be bloody, as befell, F. some were so from their sourse in- As she bequeathd in her last testament;

[pap] That, as a sacred Symbole, it may dwell Inhersonnesses to mind you heads storing and are with That they his mothers innocence may tell, In her sonnes flesh, to mind revengement. [ment.

He hearkned to his reason, and the childe orne, by guifte of later grace, [lap: Uptaking, to the Palmer gave to beare; But his sad fathers armes with blood defilde, An heavie load, himselfe did lightly reare; And turning to that place, in which whyleare He left his loftie steed with golden sell [theare: And goodly gorgeous barbe, him found not By other accident, that earst befell, | not tell. He is convaide; but how, or where, here fits

Which when Sir Guyon saw, all were he wroth, se woodes with bow and shaftes did Yet algates mote he soft himselfe appease, And fairely fare on foot, how ever loth: His double burden did him sore disease.

Solution traveled with life ease. The transaction they to a Cartie name. Deut C. & Toke Blogming to the season to was an out both Worke of Antoque fame. And we can be strong to nature and to said. And was for terrour more, all arms in :--: :: a :.

x:::

Therein three sisters included of surity and. The children if the series by mothers three: Who lives while see I is lively this tot. I them to see a label and increase, alice. It is series and an increase, alice. I sewither than a same and lady usagrees. It is light to strive and lady usagrees. It is light to a same the business of the series and the series and the series of the series and the series and the series of the series and the series of And to a against the malifest meant to w. fact. He, now this Ladies Champion, chose

X:V

Where when the knight arrival he was right well Revivid, as knight of so much worth because the other does envy with deadly has the other two: Medica was her name. A solver sail and comely courted as Dame; And this others pleasing service to about the other does on the other does on the other does on the other does not all the other does on the other does not all the other does not make the other does not all the other does not make the other does not all t Who rich ar .yd. and yet in modest guize, In goodly garments that her well became, Favre mae hing forth in honorable wize. Him at the threshold mett, and well did enterprize.

XV

She led him up into a goodly bowre, And comely courted with meet modestie: Ne in her speach, ne in her haviour, Was lightnesse seene or looser vanitie, But grations womanhood, and gravitie, Above the reason of her youthly yeares. Her golden lockes she roundly did uptye In breaded tramels, that no looser heares Did out of order stray about her daintie cares.

XVI

Whilest she her selfe thus busily did frame Seemely to entertaine her new-come guest, Newes hereof to her other sisters came, Who all this while were at their wanton rest. Accourting each her frend with lavish fest: They were two knights of perclesse puissaunce, And famous far abroad for warlike gest, Which to these Ladies love did countenaunce, And to his mistresse each himselfe strove to advaunce.

XVII

He that made love unto the eldest Dame, Was hight Sir Huddibras, an hardy man; Yet not so good of deedes as great of name, Which he by many rash adventures wan,

Since errant armes to sew he first ber M re buge in strength then wise in w And reason with foole-hardize over ra-Sterne melancholy did his courage pa tera-

XVIII

But Le that lov'd the youngest was He, that faire Una late fowle outrage The most unruly and the boldest boy That ever warlike weapons menaged. And all to lawlesse lust encouraged Through strong opinion of his m Ne ought be car'd whom he endamage W " By tertious wrong, or whom bereav'd t. night.

XIX

These two gay knights, vowd to so loves.

In horse to win more favour with his And th' others pleasing service to als Lo magnific his owne. But when the How in that place straunge knight arr Both knightes and ladies forth right an And fercely unto battell sterne th prepar'd.

ХX

But ere they could proceede unto the Where he abode, themselves at discor And cruell combat joynd in middle sp With horrible assault, and fury fell, They heapt huge strokes the scorne quell.

That all on uprore from her settled set The house was rayed, and all that in d Seemd that lowde thunder with an [fouldr great

Did rend the rathing skyes with t

The noyse thereof cald forth that s knight, To weet what dreadfull thing was there Where whenas two brave knightes in

fight With deadly rancour he enraunged fo His sunbroad shield about his wrest 1 And shyning blade unsheathd, with a

ran Unto that stead, their strife to und And at his first arrivall them began With goodly meanes to pacific, well a

him spying, both with greedy forse on him ran, and him beset so of mortall steele without remorse, shield like yron sledges bet: Beare and Tygre, being met tht on Lybicke Ocean wide, weiler with feet surbet. y in equall pray hope to divide, their strife and him assayle on

ie side.

XXIII ot like a weary traveilere, p assault right boldly did rebut, i not their blowes to byte him nere, edoubled buffes them backe did put: ved mindes, which choler did englut, iemselves turning their wrathfull new rage their shieldes to hew and rhen Guyon came to part their fight, ie load on him they freshly gan to

XXIV ship tossed in troublous seas

ing windes, threatning to make the th rockes, doe diversly disease, contrarie billowes by the way, n either side doe sore assay, to swallow her in greedy grave; ing both their spights, does make a way, her brest breaking the fomy wave, on both their backs, and faire her doth save.

XXV

he him beares, and rusheth forth them both by conduct of his blade. reat prowesse and heroick worth that day, and rare ensample made, so mighty warriours he dismade. wards and strikes; he takes and to yield, now forcing to invade; and, and round about him laies;

sort of fight, three valiaunt knights bates joine in one, and to darraine arre with triple enmitee, ir Ladies froward love to gaine,

was his paines, so double be his

Which gotten was but hate. So love does raine In stoutest minds, and maketh monstrous warre;

He maketh warre, he maketh peace againe, And yett his peace is but continual jarre: O miserable men that to him subject arre!

xxvII

Whilst thus they mingled were in furious armes. The faire Medina, with her tresses torne And naked brest, in pitty of their harmes, Emongst them ran; and, falling them beforne.

Besought them by the womb which them had born, [deare, And by the loves which were to them most And by the knighthood which they sure had sworn,

Their deadly cruell discord to forbeare, And to her just conditions of faire peace to heare.

xxviii But her two other sisters, standing by, Her lowd gainsaid, and both their champions

Pursew the end of their strong enmity, As ever of their loves they would be glad: Yet she with pitthy words, and counsell sad, Still strove their stubborne rages to revoke; That at the last, suppressing fury mad They gan abstaine from dint of direfull stroke, And hearken to the sober speaches which she

XXIX

spoke.

jarre.

'Ah, puissaunt Lords! what cursed evil Or fell Erinnys, in your noble harts [Spright, Her hellish brond hath kindled with despight, And stird you up to worke your wilfull smarts? Is this the joy of armes? be these the parts Of glorious knighthood, after blood to thrust, And not regard dew right and just desarts? Vaine is the vaunt, and victory unjust,

That more to mighty hands then rightfull cause doth trust. xxx 'And were there rightfull cause of difference,

Yet were not better fayre it to accord Then with bloodguiltinesse to heape offence, And mortal vengeaunce joyne to crime abhord? O! fly from wrath; fly, O my liefest Lord! Sad be the sights, and bitter fruites of warre, And thousand furies wait on wrathfull sword;

Ne ought the praise of prowesse more doth Then fowle revenging rage, and base contentious

*But lovely concord, and most sacred peace Doth nourish vertue, and fast friendship breeds, Weakeshe makes strong, and strong thing does

Till it the pitch of highest praise exceeds . Brave be her warres, and honorable deeds, By which she triumphes over yre and pride, And winnes an Olive girlond for her meeds, Be, therefore, O my deare Lords ! pacifide, And this misseeming discord meekely lay aside.'

XXXII

Her gracious words their rancour did appall, And suncke so deepe into their boyling brests That downe they lett their cruell weapons fall, And lowly did abase their lofty crests To her faire presence and discrete behests. Then she began a treaty to procure, And stablish terms betwixt both their requests, That as a law for ever should endure Which to observe in word of knights they did assure.

Which to confirme, and fast to bind their league, After their weary sweat and bloody toile She them besought, during their quiet treague, Into her lodging to repaire awhile,

To rest themselves, and grace to reconcile. They soone consent : so forth with her they fare ; Where they are well received, and made to spoile Themselves of soiled armes, and to prepare Their minds to pleasure, and their mouths to dainty fare.

XXXIV

And those two froward sisters, their faire loves. [loth. Came with them eke, all were they wondrous And fained cheare, as for the time behoves, But could not colour yet so well the troth, But that their natures bad appeard in both; For both did at their second sister grutch

And inly grieve, as doth an hidden moth The inner garment frett, not th' utter touch: One thought her cheare too litle, th' other thought too mutch.

XXXV

Elissa (so the eldest hight) did deeme Such entertainment base, ne ought would eat, Ne ought would speake, but evermore did seeme As discontent for want of merth or meat : No solace could her Paramour intreat Her once to show, ne court, nor dalliannee: All Faery lond does peaceably sustem.

But with bent lowring browes, as she would In widest Ocean she her throne does rea threat.

She scould, and frownd with froward on

Unworthy of faire Ladies comely govern

But young Perissa was of other mynd Full of disport, still laughing, loosely light And quite contrary to her sisters kynd: No measure in her mood, no rule of right But poured out in pleasure and delig In wine and meats she flowd above the And in excesse exceeded her owne might In sumptuous tire she joyd her selfe to pur But of her love too lavish: (litle have thanek!)

XXXVII

Fast by her side did sitt the bold Sande Fitt mate for such a mincing mineon, Who in her loosenesse tooke exceeding in Might not be found a francker france, Of her leawd parts to make companion: But Huddibras, more like a Malecontent, Did see and grieve at his bold fashion; Hardly could be endure his hardimert Yett still he satt, and inly did him sale ment.

XXXVIII

Betwixt them both the faire Medina still With sober grace and goodly carriage: With equall measure she did moderate The strong extremities of their outrage That forward paire she ever would assua When they would strive dew reason to exo But that same froward twaine would acc And of her plenty adde unto their need So kept she them in order, and her selfe in

XXXXIX

Thus fairely shee attempered her feast, And pleasd them all with meete satiety. At last, when lust of meat and drinks She Guyon deare besought of curtesie [8 To tell from whence he came through jeep And whither now on new adventure bot Who with bold grace, and comely gravity Drawing to him the eies of all arownd. From lofty siege began these words also sownd.

XL

'This thy demaund, O Lady! doth reviv Fresh memory in me of that great Queen Great and most glorious virgin Queene That with her soveraine power, and so That over all the earth it may be seene,

. faire peace and mercy doth

ease of all heavenly grace are heaped up on hye: this worlds enclosure bace orious in mortall eye, son of her Majestye; ding so great excellence ion in mortalitye, ith sacred reverence, er makers great magnificence.

XLII

ght + of worth and courage bold of straunge adventures to be

XLIII

thty Princesse did complaine chiefes which a wicked Fay and many whelmd in deadly

"I redresse. My Soveraine, in gracious deeds, and joyes

mne her beames dispredden Eftsoones devisd redresse for such annoyes: [appeare. Me, all unfitt for so great purpose, she employes.

XI.IV

'Now hath faire Phebe with her silver face Thrise seeme the shadowes of the neather Sith last I left that honorable place, [world, In which her roiall presence is enrold; Ne ever shall I rest in house nor hold. Till I that false Acrasia have wonne: Of whose fowle deedes, too hideous to bee told, I witnesse am, and this their wretched sonne, Whose wofull parents she hath wickedly fordonne.

XLV

'Tell on, fayre Sir,' said she, 'that dolefull ige and my service owe, a molest knightes on ground; an me she deigned to bestowe nhead, the most renownd lay in all the world be found, mme feast she wontes to hold, and feast she wontes to hold, which sad ruth does seems you to end the sad ruth does seems you to a many pitty such unhappie bale, and learne from pleasures poyson to abstaine: Ill by ensample good doth often gayne. Then forward he his purpose gan pursew, and told the story of the mortall payne, which Mordant and Amavia did rew, [restraine, As with lamenting eyes him selfe did lately vew.

XLVI

Night was far spent; and now in Ocean deep ! Palmer shewd himselfe that Orion, flying fast from hissing snake, His flaming head did hasten for to steen When of his pitteous tale he end did make: Whilst with delight of that he wisely spake Those guestes, beguyled, did beguyle their eyes Of kindly sleepe that did them overtake. At last, when they had markt the chaunged [to rest him hyes. skves. world her mercy to maintaine, They wist their houre was spent; then each

CANTO III.

Vaine Braggadocchio, getting Guyons horse, is made the scorne Of knighthood trew; and is of fayre Belphæbe fowle forlorne.

fayre with purple beames dowes of the misty night. ing on the eastern streames. ifull of his vow yplight,
weie couch, and him addrest
which he had behight: mes about his noble brest,

Then, taking Congé of that virgin pure, The bloody-handed babe unto her truth Did earnestly committ, and her conjure awy ayre with springing light. In vertuous lore to traine his tender youth, And all that gentle noriture ensu'th; And that, so soone as ryper yeares he raught, He might, for memory of that dayes ruth, Be called Ruddymane; and thereby taught ed shield be bound about his T'avenge his Parents death on them that had it wrought.

So from the far il as to wheeled, for from the far il as to wheeled, for from the far il as to wheeled, for from the far is and the far in the many we desire to allowe among whooles I give thee life; therefore prostrate 4 - 14

Rear of teen that four July smooth He would store with their steam beyon. Screent at his foot in base humilite, And then it is foot appropriately he And cheered him his liege, to hold of

The minima of the profession of making American in the street of the time. Note that the street of the street And when he felt the folly of his Lord.

And when he felt the folly of his Lord.

It has whe kind he gan him selfe with

For he was wylle witted, and growse of

It canning sieightes and practick howe

He could be a selfent of the country of the first day forth he cast for to while

He country stress of the country of the first day of the him our with fine flattery.

For you are stress of the country of a way And the wholes to his swelling with

N which is the control to the control of the contro n. Thee: For such as he him thought, or faine would But for in court gay portained he perceived. And gailant shew to be in greatest gree. Eft-cones to court he cast t'advaunce his first degree.

And by the way he channeld to espy One sixting valle on a unny banck, To him availating in great bravery, spranck, As Peacocke that his painted plumes doth He smote his courser in the trembling flanck, And to him threatned his hart thrilling speare: The seely man, seeing him ryde so ranck, And ayme at him, fell flatt to ground for feare. Effsoones supposed him a person meet. And crying, 'Mercy!' loud, his pitious handes. Of his revenge to make the instrument. gan rearc.

V11 Therent the Scarcrow wexed wondrous prowd, Through fortune of his first adventure fayre, And with big thundring voice revyld him lowd: Vile Caytive, vassall of dread and despayre, (Unworthic of the commune breathed ayre, Why livest thou, dead dog, a lenger day, And doest not unto death thyselfe prepayre? Dy, or thyselfe my captive yield for ny. tireat favour I thee graunt for aunswere thus 'That hath his sword through hard's

An: above my stirrup; that thy hou The Mises threw him selfe, as an Of

in fee.

Statem peace they made and faire ## Efficience this liegeman gan to were ! . . .

In his light winges, is lifted up to skyt: The soome of knighthood and trew d To thinke, without desert of gentle ded And noble worth, to be advaunced bye: Such prayse is shame; but honour, to meed. Doth beare the favrest flowre in he

So forth they pas, a well consorted page Till that at length with Archimage they Who seeing one, that shone in armour for On goodly courser thondring with his ! For since the Rederosse knight he ent

To been with Guyon knitt in one con The ill, which earst to him, he now to 6 ment. XII

And coming close to Trompart gan in Of him, what mightie warriour that most That rode in golden sell with single spe But wanted sword to wreake his enmit. He is a great adventurer, (said he) And now bath vowd, till he avenged be never to wearen none:

a ter greatly joyed in the vaunt, ; well ere long his will to win. is nor with equall foyle to daunt. leating lowly did begin wronges, which had committed bin in it by that false Rederosse knight : in the that have received kinght; once, once, it is also need to your hond; there are hard deceiptfull gin. That shall I shortly purchase to your hond; our Marchant and his Lady bright: For now the best and noblest kinght alive

AIV

وأملي

all sublishing he seemd enragd, : -: eath with dreadfull counten-

-- had in his hand beene gagd: the torce shaking his mortall launce. weet his doughtie valiaunce. color in in great sure shall be thy

and or results to mee areed.

. 1.71 , see great helpe to their decay. costly, you advise to doon. the ir fact but doe purvay · . . - si is tore that bloody day: are a prowest knights on grownd. ٠, - many hard assay;

so if against that day, them to

no other by thy desperadytses. the many yeares thy wits bath left thee nothing wise . i, "in collement be so frayle with a dive the sword or mayle. to wrom, carters of a man.

e the right-hand can: ave bench! the battailes 1. 4.25.

83.11

was each abashed at his boast; e - e e at whose would contend . f .t. - knightes on even court. armes bim to defend,

Yet feared least his boldnesse should offend. 1- him enough to doen a thousand When Braggadocchio saide; 'Once I did aweure. sweare, [to end, When with one sword seven knightes I brought

Thenceforth in battaile never sword to beare, But it were that which noblest knight on earth doth weare.

xvIII

'Perdy, Sir knight,' saide then th' enchaunter blive.

that Isonour win to wreak so foule Prince Arthur is, that wonnes in Faerie lond: He hath a sword that flames like burning brond. The same by my device I undertake Shall by to morrow by thy side be fond,'

At which hold word that boaster gan to quake, And wondred in his minde what mote that Monster make.

He stayd not for more bidding, but away [geaunce Was suddein vanished out of his sight: [play 1. - 501_445] for feare of dew ven- The Northerne winde his wings did broad dis-At his commaund, and reared him up light wiscone on them their hainous From off the earth to take his aerie flight. They lookt about, but nowhere could espye Tract of his foot: then dead through great altright

said her that shall I They both high were, and each bad other flye; Both fled attonce, he ever backe retourned eve;

1 Till that they come unto a forrest greene, In which they shrowd themselves from causeles feare; [beene. Yet feare them followes still where so they Each trembling leafe and whistling wind they

heare. As ghastly bug, does greatly them affeare: Yet both doe strive their fearefulnesse to faine. At last they heard a horne that shrilled cleare Throughout the wood that ecchoed agains, And made the forcest ring, as it would rive in twaine.

1//

Lft through the thicke they heard one rudely rush.

With novse whereof he from his lottic steed Downe fell to ground, and crept into a bush, To hide his coward head from dying dreed: But Trompart stoutly stayd to taken heed Of what might hap. Eftsoone there a A goodly Ladie clad in hunters weed, Eff-come there stepped That seemd to be a woman of great worth. And by her stately portance borne of heavenly birth.

XXII

Her face so faire as flesh it seemed not, But hevenly pourtraict of bright Angels hew, Clears as the skye, withouten blame or blot, Through goodly mixture of complexions dew; And in her cheekes the vermeill red did shew Like roses in a bed of lillies shest, The which ambrosiall odours from them threw, And gazers sence with double pleasure fed.

Hable to heale the sicke, and to revive the ded. XXIII

In her faire eyes two living lamps did tlame, Kindled above at th' hevenly makers light, And darted fyrie beames out of the same, So passing persant, and so wondrous bright, That quite bereav'd the rash beholders sight: In them the blinded god his lustfull fyre To kindle oft assayd, but had no might; For, with dredd Majestie and awfull yre, She broke his wanton darts, and quenched bace desyre.

XXIV

Her yvorie forhead, full of bountie brave, Like a broad table did it selfe dispred, For Love his loftie triumphes to engrave And write the battailes of his great godhed: All good and honour might therein be red, For there their dwelling was. And, when she spake, Shed :

Sweete wordes like dropping honny she did And twixt the perles and rubins softly brake A silver sound, that heavenly musicke seemd to make.

Upon her eyelids many Graces sate, Under the shadow of her even browes, Working belgardes and amorous retrate; And everie one her with a grace endowes. And everie one with meekenesse to her bowes, So glorious mirrhour of celestiall grace, And soveraine moniment of mortall vowes How shall frayle pen descrive her heavenly face, For feare, through want of skill, her beauty to disgrace?

So faire, and thousand thousand times more faire, She seemd, when she presented was to sight; And was yelad, for heat of scorching aire, All in a silken Camus lilly whight,

Which all above besprinckled was throughout
With golden aygulets, that glistred bright
Like twinckling starres; and all the skirt
Was hemd with golden fringe.

XXXI
Such as Diana by the sandy shore
Of swift Eurotas, or on Cynthus gree
Where all the Nymphes have her my
Was hemd with golden fringe.

[about Wandreth alone with bow and arrow

XXVII

Below her ham her weed did somewh And her streight logs most bravely In gilden buskins of costly Cordways All bard with golden bendes, wh entayld

With curious antickes, and full fayre Before, they fastned were under her In a rich jewell, and therein entrayle The ends of all the knots, that none How they within their fouldings wrapped bee:

XXVIII

Like two faire marble pillours they w Which doe the temple of the Gods a Whom all the people decke with And honour in their festivall resort: Those same with stately grace and port

She taught to tread, when she herse But with the woody Nymphes when play, Or when the flying Libbard she did

She could them nimbly move, and apace.

And in her hand a sharpe bore-sp held, And at her backe a bow and quiver

Stuft with steele-headed dartes, where queld

The salvage beastes in her victoriou Knit with a golden bauldricke, which Athwart her snowy brest, and did d Her daintie paps; which, like youn Now little gan to swell, and being the Through her thin weed their places nifide.

XXX

Her yellow lockes, crisped like gold About her shoulders weren loosely al And, when the winde emongst ther They waved like a penon wyde dispre And low behinde her backe were sca And, whether art it were or heedless As through the flouring forrest rash In her rude heares sweet flowres th did lap, And flourishing fresh leaves and

game: Or as that famous Queene whom Pyrrhus did destroy, first of Priame she was seene, selfe in great triumphant joy, weake state of sad afflicted Troy.

as hartlesse Trompart her did aved in his coward minde thether he himselfe should shew, or bide alone behinde; d hope he in her face did finde : last him spying thus bespake: [strake?

haunch earst my stedfast arrow, tell me, that I may her over-

reviv'd, this answere forth he for such I thee take to bee) th thy face terrestriall shew.

and mortall: I avow to thee, i lea-t as that I did not see, this forrest wild I came. · gradiched forgive it mee. hee dew worship I may rightly

XXXIV

e thus_but ere her words ensewd. h ber eye did suddein glaunce, ne Braggadorchio was mewd. tirre : she lefte her percing launce. an a deadly shafte advaunce, marke the beast. At which sad stept to stay the mortall;

· () : what ever hevenly powre : thou be, withhold this deadly

XXXV

25 hand: for yonder is no game arrive es, them to exercize : [name Lard, my liege, whose warlike ni through many bold emprize; . ade he shrowded vonder lies. the that he crauld out of his nest. Does waste his dayes in darke obscuritee, 12 . n his caitive hands and thies: z courtly up, his lofty crest

XXXVI

As fearfull fowle, that long in secret cave For dread of soring hauke her selfe hath hid, Nor caring how, her silly life to save, She her gay painted plumes disorderid; Seeing at last her selfe from daunger rid, Peepes forth, and some renews her native She gins her feathers fowle disfigured [pride: Prowdly to prune, and sett on every side; She shakes off shame, ne thinks how erst she did her hide.

So when her goodly visage he beheld. He gan himselfe to vaunt: but, when he vewd Those deadly tooles which in her hand she last him spying thus see a bleeding. Those deadly tooles which in the lidest not thou see a bleeding. Soone into other fitts he was transmewd, [held, Till she to him her gracious speach renewd:
'All haile, Sir knight! and well may thee be-

fall, As all the like, which honor have pursewd Through deeds of armes and prowesse martiall. All vertue merits praise, but such the most of

XXXVIII

all.

To whom he thus: 'O fairest under skie! Trew be thy words, and worthy of thy praise, That warlike feats doest highest glorifie. Therein I have spent all my youthly daics, And many battailes fought and many fraies ch of the gods I shall thee name, Throughout the world, wher-so they might be dew worship I may rightly Endevoring my dreaded name to raise [found, Above the Moone, that fame may it resound In her eternall tromp, with laurell girlond cround.

XXXXX

'But what art thou, O Lady! which doest! raunge In this wilde forest, where no pleasure is, And doest not it for joyous court exchaunge Emongst thine equall peres, where happy blis And all delight does raigne, much more then this?

There thou maist love, and dearly loved be, And swim in pleasure, which thou here doest mis:

There maist thou best be seene, and best maist The wood is fit for beasts, the court is fitt for thee.

XL

'Who-so in pompe of prowdestate' (quoth she) Does swim, and bathes him selfe in courtly blia,

And in oblivion ever buried is; Where ease abownds yt's eath to doe amis: hake, and rowze as comming late, But who his limbs with labours, and his mynd Behaves with cares, cannot so easy mis.

THE FAERIE OUEENE.

[BOOK!

Abroad in armes, at home in studious kynd, Who seekes with painfull toile shall honor Depart to woods untoucht, and leave so per soonest fynd:

96

Is this to knight, that Lady should agayse disdayne.

. In woods, in waves, in warres, she wonts to dwell.

And wil be found with perill and with paine; Ne can the man that moulds in yelle cell Unto her happy mansion attaine:

Before her gate high God did Sweate ordaine, And wakefull watches ever to abide; But easy is the way and passage plaine To pleasures pallace : it may soone be spide, And day and night her dores to all stand open

wide.

XLII

'In Princes court'-The rest she would have savd. But that the foolish man, fild with delight

Of her sweete words that all his sence dismayd, And with her wondrous beauty ravisht quight, Gan burne in tilthy lust; and, leaping light, Thought in his bastard armes her to embrace. With that she, swarving backe, her Javelin

bright Against him bent, and fiercely did menace: So turned her about, and fled away apace,

XLIII

Which when the Pesaunt saw, amazd he stood, And grieved at her flight; yet durst he nott Pursewher steps through wild unknowen wood: Besides he feard her wrath, and threatned shott, Whiles in the bush he lay, not yett forgott: Ne car'd he greatly for her presence vayne, But turning said to Trompart; What fowle blott

XLIV

'Perdy,' (said Trompart) 'lett her pes stwl Least by her presence daunger mots ben For who can tell (and sure I feare it ill) But that shee is some powre celestiall? For whiles she spake her great words did My feeble corage, and my heart oppress, That yet i quake and tremble over-all. 'And I,' (said Braggadocchio) 'thought sel When first I heard her horn sound with a ghastlinesse.

XI.V

'For from my mothers wombe this gr Me given by eternall destiny, That earthly thing may not my corage Dismay with feare, or cause one foot to tyl But either hellish feends, or powres on hy Which was the cause, when carst that h heard, Weening it had beene thunder in the sky,

I hid my selfe from it, as one affeard; But, when I other knew, my self I boldly!

XLVI

'But now, for feare of worse that may be et us soone hence depart.' They some are Let us soone hencedepart." So to his steed he gott, and gan to ride As one untitt therefore, that all might see He had not travned bene in chevalree Which well that valiaunt courser did discs For he despise to tread in dew degree, But chaufd and fom'd with corage fies sterne, And to be easd of that base burden still

CANTO IV.

Guyon does Furor bind in chaines. And stops occasion: Delivers Phaon, and therefore By strife is rayld uppon.

In brave poursuitt of honorable deed, There is I know not (what) great difference Betweene the vulgar and the noble seed, Which unto things of valorous pretence Seemes to be borne by native influence; As feates of armes, and love to entertaine: But chiefly skill to ride scemes a science Proper to gentle blood : some others faine

Who suffred not his wandring feete to it But when strong passion, or weaks and

But he, the rightfull owner of that steed

Who well could menage and subdew his The whiles on foot was forced for to ye

With that blacke Palmer, his most to

gu de,

To menage steeds, as did this vaunter, but in Would from the right way seeke to draw vaine.

prough temperaunce and stedfast-; suppresse.

111 forth faring on his way, far, or seemed for to see, uprore or contentious fray, drew in hast it to agree. or that feigned mad to bee, heare along upon the grownd tripling with great crueltee, he bett, and gord with many a with teares, and sydes with blood, l abownd.

hvnd a wicked Hag did stalke, and filthy disaray; z was lame, that she no'te walke, He her feeble steps did stay: hat I athly were and hoarie gray, re. and lovely hong unrold; ide was bald, and worne away, erest sould ever taken hold; fare ill-favourd, full of wrinckles

s -be went her toung did walke

nigh, and termes of vile despight, per by her outrageous talke, re vend ance on that wretched Le raught him stones, wherwith to her -taffe, though it her one leg to are she did forbeare,

VI

erst the Hag did thrust away; 2ding more impetuous forse, tand- did on the madman lay,

. : 171. ng all his fell intent,

And sure he was a man of mickle might, he weak to strengthen, and the Had he had governaunce it well to guyde; But, when the frantick fitt inflamd his spright, His force was vaine, and strooke more often wyde,
Then at the aymed marke which he had eyde:

And oft himselfe he chaunst to hurt unwares, Whylest reason, blent through passion, nought descryde;
But, as a blindfold Bull, at randon fares, And where he hits nought knowes, and whom he hurts nought cares.

VIII

His rude assault and rugged handeling Straunge seemed to the knight, that aye with fne In fayre defence and goodly menaging Of armes was wont to fight; yet nathemoe Was he abashed now, not fighting so; But more enfierced through his currish play, Him sternly grypt, and hailing to and fro, To overthrow him strongly did assay,

But overthrew him selfe unwares, and lower lay:

And being downe the villein sore did beate

And bruze with clownish fistes his manly face; And eke the Hag, with many a bitter threat, Still cald upon to kill him in the place. With whose reproch, and odious menace, The knight emboyling in his haughtie hart Knitt all his forces, and gan soone unbrace His grasping hold : so lightly did upstart, And drew his deadly weapon to maintaine his

part.

Which when the Palmer saw, he loudly is she could not goe upright; cryde, Not so, O Guyon! never thinke that so move to wrath, and indigna. That Monster can be maistred or de troyd: He is not, ah! he is not such a foc. As steele can wound, or strength can everthroe.

Fig. von. mov'd with great remorse, That same is Furor, cursed cruel wight, First the Hag did thrust away; That unto knighthood workes much shame. and woe;

And that same Hag, his aged mother, hight and backe; who, all on fire streight Occasion; the roote of all wrath and despight.

With her, whose will raging Furer tame, a : bet, and kickt, and scratcht, Must first begin, and well her avenage: First her restraine from her reprochfull blame was not what in his avengement. And evill meanes, with which she doth enrage

Her frantick sonne, and kindles his corage : Then, when she is withdrawne or strong withstood,

It's eath his ydle fury to aswage, And calme the tempest of his passion wood:

The bankes are overflowne when stopped is the flood.

Therewith Sir Guyon left his first emprise, And, turning to that woman, fast her hent By the hoare lockes that hong before her eyes, And to the ground her threw: yet n'ould she stent

Her bitter rayling and foule revilement, But still provokt her sonne to wreake her

wrong;
But nathelesse he did her still torment,
And, catching hold of her ungratious tonge
Thereon an yron lock did fasten firme and

strong.

XIII

Then, whenas use of speach was from her reft, With her two crooked handes she signes did

make,
And beckned him, the last help she had left;
But he that last left helpe away did take, And both her handes fast bound unto a stake, That she note stirre. Then gan her sonne to five

Full fast away, and did her quite forsake; But Guyon after him in hast did hye, And soone him overtooke in sad perplexitye.

In his strong armes he stifly him embraste, Who him gainstriving nought at all prevaild; For all his power was utterly defaste, Off he reinforst, and off his forces fayld,
Yet yield he would not, nor his rancor slack.
Then him to ground he cast, and rudely hayld,
And both his hands fast bound behind his
To love a Lady fayre of great degree,
The which was borne of noble parentages

With hundred yron chaines he did him bind, And hundred knots, that did him sore constraine;

Yet his great yron teeth he still did grind And grimly gnash, threatning revenge in vaine: His burning eyen, whom bloody strakes did

Shakt his long locks colourd like coper-and bitt his tawny beard to shew his n yre.

Thus when as Guyon Furor had captive. Turning about he saw that wretched Set Whom that mad man of life nigh late on Lying on ground, all soild with blood myre:

Whom whenas he perceived to respyre, He gan to comfort, and his woundes to Being at last recured, he gan inquyre [What hard mishap him brought to an And made that caytives thrall, the thr wretchednesse.

With hart then throbbing, and with " eyes,
'Fayre Sir' (quoth he) 'what man can
That hidden lyes unwares him to surph
Misfortune waites advantage to enti-The man most wary in her whelming So me weake wretch, of many weaker Unweeting and unware of such mist She brought to mischiefe through Uo Where this same wicked villein did me upon.

XVIII

'It was a faithlesse Squire, that was the Of all my sorrow and of these sad teares. With whom from tender dug of community Attonce I was upbrought; and eft, when More rype us reason lent to chose our P Our selves in league of vowed love wee In which we long time, without genous Or faultie thoughts, contynewd as was fil And for my part, I vow, dissembled not a

' It was my fortune, commune to that Yet seemd no lesse to love then lov'd to Long I her serv'd, and found her faithfull Ne ever thing could cause us disagree Love, that two harts makes one, makes e will: Each strove to please, and others please

'My friend, hight Philemon, I did parts Stared full wide, and threw forth sparkes of Of all my love and all my privitie;
And more for ranck despight then for great

Who greatly joyous seemed for my sake,
And gratious to that Lady as to mee;

note so welcome bee en blott or blame; ie could think or see, uld impart the same. it would abuse so gentle

: I found, and meanes I

my spouse had wonne: insent of Parents sought, happinesse begonne. but few rites to be donne. e: that day too farre did

v selte I did esteeme, riend did no less joyous

I day his beame disclosd, iv toward good. deen all disposal. ie in friendly mood, whe understood and to me assynd, r henorable blood, ich she to me did bynd; ne stay till I more truth

ALD.

ish, and sharp gelosy, intexed in my brest, restred inwardly. in I could find no rest. not I did out wrest; y that same sacred band alisell me the best ath and plighted hand ath to let me understand,

and he boarded mee. and all the floure. age of base degree, s ; atomer Paramoune : · n.e mmer bowre ash better to approve. the at that howre. at wealth me mearer move,

and of my Lady dearc, ne his affection vile. re pleasing to appeare.

One day, to worke her to his will more neare, He woo'd her thus: Pryene, (so she hight,) What great despight doth fortune to thee beare, Thus lowly to abase thy beautie bright, That it should not deface all others lesser light?

· But if she had her least helpe to thee lent, T' adorne thy forme according thy desart, Their blazing pride thou wouldest soone have blent, [part; And staynd their prayses with thy least good Ne should faire Claribell with all her art, Tho' she thy Lady be, approch thee neare: For proofe thereof, this evening, as thou art, whom the shining Sunne Aray thyselfe in her most gorgeous geare, that I may more delight in thy embracement

XXVII

deare.

*The Mayden, proud through praise and mad through love. Him hearkned to, and some her selfe arayd, The whiles to me the treachour did remove His craftic engin, and, as he had sayd, Me leading, in a secret corner layd,

The sad spectatour of my Tragedie: [playd, Where left, he went, and his owne false part Disguised like that groome of base degree, Whom he had feignd th' abuser of my love to bee.

AAVIII

*Eftsoones he came unto th' appointed place. And with him brought Pryene, rich arayd, In Claribellaes clothes. Her proper face I not descerned in that darkesome shade, But weend it was my love with whom he playd. Ah God! what horrour and tormenting griefe My hart, my handes, mine cies, and all assayd! Me liefer were ten thousand deathes priefe Then wounde of gealous worme, and shame of such repriefe.

XXIX

home retourning, fraught with fowle despight. And chawing vengeaunce all the way I went, Scone as my loathed love appeard in sight. With wrathfull hand I slow her innocent, That after soone I dearely did lament: For, when the cause of that outrageous deede Demanded, I made plaine and evident, raw my bland abused love. Her faultie Handmayd, which that bale did her weede. breede. no. for tartherance of his Confest how Philemon her wrought to channel

$X \times X$

· Which when I heard, with horrible affright and hellish fury all enragd, I sought Upon my selfe that vengeable despight

To punish: yet it better first I thought To wreake my wrath on him that first it wrought :

To Philemon, false faytour Philemon, I cast to pay that I so dearely bought. Of deadly drugs I gave him drinke anon. And washt away his guilt with guilty potion.

XXXI

griefe

To losse of love adjoyning losse of frend, I meant to purge both with a third mischiefe, And in my woes beginner it to end: That was Pryene; she did first offend, She last should smart: with which cruell intent,

When I at her my murdrous blade did bend, She fled away with ghastly dreriment, And I, poursewing my fell purpose, after went.

' Feare gave her winges, and rage enforst my flight; chace. Through woods and plaines so long I did her Till this mad man, whom your victorious might Hath now fast bound, me met in middle space.

As I her, so he me poursewd apace, And shortly overtooke: I, breathing yre, Sore chauffed at my stay in such a cace, And with my heat kindled his cruell fyre; Which kindled once, his mother did more rage inspyre.

XXXIII

Betwixt them both they have me doen to dye, Through wounds, and strokes, and stubborne handeling, That death were better then such agony

As griefe and fury unto me did bring Of which in me yet stickes the mortall sting, That during life will never be appeared! When he thus ended had his sorrowing, Said Guyon; 'Squyre, sore have ye beene rance be easd.' diseasd, But all your hurts may soone through tempe-

XXXIV

Then gan the Palmer thus; 'Most wretched man,

That to affections does the bridle lend! In their beginning they are weake and wan, But soone through suff rance growe to fearefull [tend:

Whiles they are weake, betimes with them con-For, when they once to perfect strength do grow, Strong warres they make, and cruell battry bend

Gainst fort of Reason, it to overthrow: Wrath, gelosy, griefe, love, this Squyre la

Wrath, gealosie, griefe, love, do thus exp Wrath is a fire; and gealosie a weede; Griefe is a flood; and love a monster fell The fire of sparkes, the weeds of little -The flood of drops, the Monster filth did los *Thus heaping crime on crime, and griefe on But sparks, seed, drops, and filth, do thus de The sparks soone quench, the springing outweed.

The drops dry up, and filth wipe cleane ass So shall wrath, gealosy, griefe, love, in decay:

XXXXI

'Unlucky Squire,' (saide Guyon) 'sith

Falne into mischiefe through intempera-Henceforth take heede of that thou now a past, And guyde thy waies with warie governs

Least worse betide thee by some later cha But read how art thou nam'd, and of what his 'Phaon I hight,' (quoth he) ' and do adva Mine auncestry from famous Coradia, Who first to rayse our house to honou

begin.'

Thus as he spake, lo! far away they spy A variet ronning towardes hastily, Whose flying feet so fast their way at That round about a cloud of dust did fig Which, mingled all with sweate, did dim his He soone approched, panting, breathlesse, And all so soyld that none could him de His countenaunce was bold, and bashed a For Guyons lookes, but scornefull eyegla at him shot.

XXXVIII

Behind his backe he bore a brasen shield On which was drawen faire, in colours fit.
A flaming fire in midst of bloody field. And round about the wreath this word

writ,
Burnt I doe burne. Right well beseemed
To be the shield of some redoubted knight And in his hand two dartes, exceeding this And deadly sharp, he held, whose heads dight In poyson and in blood of malice and despi-

XXXXIX

When he in presence came, to Guyon first He boldly spake; 'Sir knight, if knight' Abandon this forestalled place at erst, For feare of further harme, I counsell the

haunce at thine owne jeopardee.' it his great boldnesse wondered; he scornd his ydle vanitee, im to purpose answered; row of nought he it conjectured.

is place most dew to me I deeme, im that held it forcibly : should come that harme, which lost seeme o him that mindes his chaunce

yd he) 'here comes, and is hard by,

wondrous powre and great assay, ret encountred enemy deadly daunt, or fowle dismay; better hope, if thou his presence

hast sought,' [brought.' it he then,' (sayd Guyon) 'and Said Guyon: 'let that message to thy Lord be whence?' s his name, renowmed farre feates and hardy confidence,

ovd in many a cruell warre; of Cymochles, both which arre of old Acrates and Despight: ne of Phlegeton and Jarre : on is sonne of Herebus and Night; sonne of Aeternitie is hight.

nmortall race he does proceede, I hands may not withstand his

derring doe and bloody deed; nod and spoile is his delight. in, his in wrong and right, make for him to worke upon im up to strife and cruell fight. e, fly this fearefull stead anon, inardize worke thy sad confusion.

rut whither with such hasty flight

Art thou now bownd? for well mote I discerne Great cause, that carries thee so swifte and light.

'My Lord, (quoth he) 'me sent, and streight To seeke Occasion, where so she bee: [behight For he is all disposd to bloody fight, And breathes out wrath and hainous crueltee: Hard is his hap that first fals in his jeopardee.'

XLIV

'Mad man,' (said then the Palmer) 'that does seeke

Occasion to wrath, and cause of strife: Shee comes unsought, and shonned followes eke. Happy! who can abstaine, when Rancor rife Kindles Revenge, and threats his rusty knife. Woe never wants where every cause is caught; And rash Occasion makes unquiet life! 'Then loe! wher bound she sits, whom thou

XLV

That when the varlett heard and saw, streight way [knight, He wexed wondrous wroth, and said; 'Vile That knights and knighthood doest with shame

upbray, And shewst th'ensample of thy childishe might,

With silly weake old woman that did fight! Great glory and gay spoile, sure hast thou gott, And stoutly prov'd thy puissaunce here in sight. That shall Pyrochles well requite, I wott, And with thy blood abolish so reprochfull blott.'

With that one of his thrillant darts he threw, Headed with yre and vengeable despight. The quivering steele his aymed end wel knew, And to his brest it selfe intended right: But he was wary, and, ere it empight In the meant marke, advaunst his shield atweene, On which it seizing no way enter might, But backe rebownding left the forckhead keene: : care, whom most it doth concerne, Eftsoones he fled away, and might no where be seene.

CANTO V.

Pyrochles does with Guyon fight, And Furors chayns untyes, Who him sore wounds : whiles Atin to Cymochles for ayd flyes.

Who ever doth to temperaunce apply His stedfast life, and all his actions frame, Trust me, shal find no greater enimy Then stubborne perturbation to the same; To which right wel the wise doe give that name, For it the goodly peace of staied mindes Does overthrow, and troublous warre proclame: His owne woes author, who so bound it findes, As did Pyrochles, and it wilfully unbindes.

After that variets flight, it was not long Ere on the plaine fast pricking Guyon spide One in bright armes embatteiled full strong That, as the Sunny beames do glaunce and glide Upon the trembling wave, so shined bright, And round about him threw forth sparkling fire, That seemd him to enflame on every side: His steed was bloody red, and fomed yre, When with the maistring spur he did him roughly stire.

Approching nigh, he never staid to greete, Ne chaffar words, prowd corage to provoke, But prickt so fiers, that underneath his feete The smouldring dust did round about him smoke,

Both horse and man nigh able for to choke; And favrly couching his steeleheaded speare, Him first saluted with a sturdy stroke: It booted nought Sir Guyon, comming neare, To thincke such hideous puissaunce on foot to beare;

But lightly shunned it; and, passing by, With his bright blade did smite at him so fell, That the sharpe steele, arriving forcibly On his broad shield, bitt not, but glauncing fell On his horse necke before the quilted sell, And from the head the body sundred quight. So him dismounted low he did compell On foot with him to matchen equall fight: The truncked beast fast bleeding did him fowly dight.

Sore bruzed with the fall be al And all enraged thus him loud Disleall Knight, whose cowar To wreake it selfe on beast all And shund the marke at which meut;

Therby thine armes seem strong So hast thou oft with guile thir But litle may such guile thee nor If wonted force and fortune do-

With that he drew his flamin strooke At him so fiercely, that the upp Of his sevenfolded shield away And, glauncing on his helmet, a And open gash therein: were no That broke the violence of his int The weary sowle from thence Nathelesse so sore a buff to him That made him reele, and to his !

Exceeding wroth was Guyon a And much ashamd that stroke o Should him dismay, and make his Though otherwise it did him lit Tho, hurling high his yron brac He smote so manly on his shoul That all his left side it did quite Yet there the steel stayd not, In Deepe in his flesh, and opene floodgate.

Deadly dismayd with horror of Pyrochles was, and grieved eke Yet nathemore did it his fury st But added flame unto his forme That wel nigh molt his hart in r Ne thenceforth his approved ski Or strike, or hurtle round in wa Remembred he, ne car'd for his But rudely rag'd, and like a crue

at, and foynd, and thondred

e, could ward so mighty to his cruell knife. heat of all his strife,

those imperiall powre Unicorn defyes, smult and wrathful stowre onning in full course he whiles that furious beast , sought of his enimyes, ke, ne thence can be releast, victor yields a bounteous

sleight him Guyon often

breathlesse, weary, faint, fresh onsett he asaayld, his corage seeming queint, rely, that through great con-

p perferce unto his knee, worship to the Saint, depainted he did see: [hee,

eing stoup, poursewed fast of faire victory, adfull blade about he cast, ste his haughty crest so hye,

his victor foote he thrust: e; 'Mercy ! doe me not dye, e by fortunes doome unjust, re her spight) thus low me

d hand Sir Guyon stayd, ion with advizement slow, the on enimy dismayd; warre he well did know: Live, and alleagaunce owe thee life and liberty; this daies ensample trow,

That hasty wroth, and heedlesse hazardry, Doe breede repentaunce late, and lasting in-

So up he let him rise; who, with grim looke And count'naunce sterne, upstanding, gan to grind

heat of all his strite,
and closely did awayt
this grated teeth for great disdeigne, and shooke
this grated teeth for great disdeigne, and shooke
His grated teeth for great disdeigne, and shooke
His sandy lockes, long hanging downe behind,
Knotted in blood and dust, for grief of mind
That he in ods of armes was conquered:
Yet in himselfe some comfort he did find,
That him so noble knight had maystered;
When he was then might yet both he Whose bounty more then might, yet both, he wondered.

Which Guyon marking said; 'Be nought

agriev'd, Sir knight, that thus ye now subdewed arre: Was never man, who most conquestes atchiev'd, Yet shortly gaynd that losse exceeded farre.

Losse is no shame, nor to bee lesse then foe;
But to bee lesser then himselfe doth marre Both loosers lott, and victours prayse alsoe: Vaine others overthrowes who selfe doth overthrow

'Fly, O Pyrochles! fly the dreadfull warre That in thy selfe thy lesser partes do move; Outrageous anger, and woe-working jarre, Direfull impatience, and hart-murdring love: Those, those thy foes, those warriours far remove,

Which thee to endlesse bale captived lead. But sith in might thou didst my mercy prove, Of courtesie to mee the cause aread That thee against me drew with so impetuous

XVII

'Dreadlesse,' (said he) 'that shall I soone declare. Ttort It was complaind that thou hadst done great Unto an aged woman, poore and bare, And thralled her in chaines with strong effort, Voide of all succour and needful comfort; That ill beseemes thee, such as I thee see, To worke such shame. Therefore, I thee exhort To chaunge thy will, and set Occasion free, And to her captive sonne yield his first libertee.'

Thereat Sir Guyon smylde; 'And is that all,' (Said he) 'that thee so sore displeased hath?' Great mercy, sure, for to enlarge a thrall, Whose freedom shall thee turne to greatest scath!

Nath'lesse now quench thy whott emboyling wrath:

Loe! there they bee; to thee I yield them free.' Thereat be, wondrous glash, out of the path Did lightly leape, where he them bound did see, Andgan to breake the bands of their captivitee.

XIX

Soone as Occasion felt her selfe untyde, Before her sonne could well assoyled bee, She to her use returnd, and streight defyde Both Guyon and Pyrochles; th' one (said shee)

Bycause he wonne; the other, because hee Was wonne. So matter did she make of

nought,

To stirre up strife, and garre them disagree: But, soone as Furor was enlargd, she sought To kindle his quencht fyre, and thousand causes wrought.

XX

It was not long ere she inflam'd him so,
That he would algates with Pyrochles fight,
And his redeemer chalengd for his foe,
Because he had not well mainteind his right,
But yielded had to that same straunger knight,
Now gan Pyrochles wex as wood as hee,
And him affronted with impatient might:
So both together fiers engrasped bee,
Whyles Guyon standing by their uncouth strife
does see.

XXI

Him all that while Occasion did provoke Against Pyrochles, and new matter fram'd Upon the old, him stirring to bee wroke Of his late wronges, in which she oft him blam'd

For suffering such abuse as knighthood sham'd, And him dishabled quyte. But he was wise, Ne would with vaine occasions be inflam'd; Yet others she more urgent did devise; Yet nothing could him to impatience entise.

XXII

Their fell contention still increased more,
And more thereby increased Furors might,
That he his foe has hurt and wounded sore,
And him in blood and durt deformed quight.
His mother eke, more to augment his spight,
Now brought to him a flaming fyer brond,
Which she in Stygian lake, ay burning
bright,

Had kindled: that she gave into his hond, That armd with fire more hardly he mote him withstond.

XXIII

The gan that villein wex so fiers and That nothing might sustaine his furion He cast him downe to ground, and all Drew him through dust and mynremorse.

And fowly battered his comely corse, That Guyon much disdeigned so leath At last he was compeld to cry perfors 'Help, O Sir Guyon! helpe, most noble To ridd a wretched man from handes o wight!'

XXIV

The knight was greatly moved at his And gan him dight to succour his dis Till that the Palmer, by his grave rest Him stayd from yielding pitifull redre And said; 'Deare sonne, thy causele represse,

Ne let thy stout hart melt in pitty van He that his sorrow sought through will And his foe fettred would release agay Deserves to taste his follies fruit, a payne."

XXV

Guyon obayd: So him away he drew From needlesse trouble of renewing in Already fought, his voyage to pourses But rash Pyrochles variett, Atin high When late he saw his Lord in heavie; Under Sir Guyons puissaunt stroke to Him deeming dead, as then he seemd in Fledd fast away to tell his funerall Unto his brother, whom Cymochles

XXVI

He was a man of rare redoubted mig Famous throughout the world for prayse,

And glorious spoiles, purchast in perilor Full many doughtie knightes he in his Had doen to death, subdewde in equal Whose carkases, for terrour of his nan Of fowles and beastes he made the prayes,

And hong their conquerd armes, for a fame,

On gallow trees, in honour of his deares

XXVII

His dearest Dame is that Enchaunte The vyle Acrasia, that with vaine deli And ydle pleasures in her Bowre of Bl Does charme her lovers, and the feeble s t of the bodies of fraile wightes ; a she does transforme to monstrous ly misshapes with ugly sightes, ernally in yron mewes [shewes. om dens, where Titan his face never

XXVIII

n fownd Cymochles sojourning, is Lemans love: for he by kynd all to lust and loose living, his fiers handes he free mote fynd: e has pourd out his ydle mynd delices, and lavish joyes, warlike weapons cast behynd, s in pleasures and vaine pleasing з, nongst loose Ladies and lascivious

XXIX

him art, stryving to compayre re, did an Arber greene dispred, wanton Yvie, flouring favre, rhich the fragrant Eglantine did ng armes, entrayld with roses red, ntie odours round about them threws thin with flowres was garnished, myld Zephyrus emongst them blew,

Colors shew. out bounteous smels, and painted

XXX

beside there trickled softly downe treame, whose murmuring wave did

he pumy stones, and made a sowne, 1 soft asleepe that by it lay : Traveiler, wandring that way, d often quench his thristy heat, by it his wearie limbes display. eping slomber made him to forget r payne, and wypt away his toilsom

XXXI

he other syde a pleasaunt grove up high, full of the stately tree ated is t' Olympick Jove, sonne Alcides, whenas hee gayned goodly victoree: e mery birdes of every sorte slowd their chearefull harmonee, There he him found all carelesly displaid,

In secrete shadow from the sunny ray, On a sweet bed of lillies softly laid, Amidst a flock of Damzelles fresh and gay, That rownd about him dissolute did play Their wanton follies and light meriments: Every of which did loosely disaray Her upper partes of meet habiliments, And shewd them naked, deckt with many

XXXIII And every of them strove with most delights

ornaments.

strips.

Him to aggrate, and greatest pleasures shew: Some framd faire lookes, glancing like evening lights; Others sweet wordes, dropping like honny dew; Some bathed kisses, and did soft embrew The sugred licour through his melting lips: One boastes her beautie, and does yield to vew

Another her out boastes, and all for tryall XXXIV

Her dainty limbes above her tender hips;

He, like an Adder lurking in the weedes, His wandring thought in deepe desire does steepe, And his frayle eye with spoyle of beauty feedes:

Sometimes he falsely faines himselfe to sleepe, Whiles through their lids his wanton cies do peepe To steale a snatch of amorous conceipt,

Whereby close fire into his heart does creepe: So he them deceives, deceived in his deceipt, Made dronke with drugs of deare voluptuous receipt.

XXXV

Atin, arriving there, when him he spyde Thus in still waves of deepe delight to wade, Fiercely approching to him lowdly cryde, 'Cymochles; oh! no, but Cymochles shade, In which that manly person late did fade. What is become of great Acrates sonne? Or where hath he hong up his mortall blade, That hath so many haughty conquests wonne? Is all his force forlorne, and all his glory donne?

XXXVI

Then, pricking him with his sharp-pointed dart, [knight, He saide; 'Up, up! thou womanish weake That here in Ladies lap entombed art, Upperior and State of the S e emongst them selves a sweete con- Unmindfull of thy praise and prowest might,
And weetlesse eke of lately wrought despight,
kned the dull spright with musicall Whiles sad Pyrochles lies on sencelesse ground

And groneth out his utmost grudging spright

Calling thy help in vaine that here in joyes art

XXXVII

Suddeinly out of his delightfull dreame The man awoke, and would have questiond more:

But he would not endure that wofull theame For to dilate at large, but urged sore, With percing wordes and pittifull implore, Him hasty to arise. As one affright With hellish feends, or Furies made uprore,

Through many a stroke and many a streaming He then uprose, inflamd with fell despin wound, fight:

XXXVIII

They bene ybrought; he quicklydoes hime And lightly mounted passeth on his way Ne Ladies loves, he sweets entreaties, mi Appease his heat, or hastie passage stay For he has vowd to beene avengd that d (That day it selfe him seemed all too los On him, that did Pyrochles deare dismay So proudly pricketh on his courser str. And Atin ay him pricks with spurs of and wrong.

CANTO VI.

Guyon is of immodest Merth Led into loose desyre; Fights with Cymochles, whiles his bro ther burns in furious fyre.

A HARDER lesson to learne Continence In joyous pleasure then in grievous paine; For sweetnesse doth allure the weaker sence So strongly, that uneathes it can refraine From that which feeble nature covets faine: But griefe and wrath, that be her enemies And foes of life, she better can abstaine: Yet vertue vauntes in both her victories, And Guyon in them all shewes goodly maysteries.

11

Whom bold Cymochles traveiling to finde, With cruell purpose bent to wreake on him The wrath which Atin kindled in his mind, Came to a river, by whose utmost brim Wayting to passe, he saw whereas did swim Along the shore, as swift as glaunce of eye, A litle Gondelay, bedecked trim With boughes and arbours woven cunningly, That like a litle forrest seemed outwardly.

And therein sate a Lady fresh and fayre, Making sweet solace to herselfe alone: Sometimes she song as lowd as larke in ayre, Sometimes she laught, as merry as Pope Jone; Yet was there not with her else any one, That to her might move cause of meriment: Yet seemed, nothing well they her becam Matter of merth enough, though there were For all her wordes she drownd with las

She could devise; and thousand waies invent To feede her foolish humour and vaine jolliment.

Which when far off Cymochles heardands He lowdly cald to such as were abord The little barke unto the shore to draw, And him to ferry over that deepe ford. The merry mariner unto his word Soone hearkned, and her painted bote st Turnd to the shore, where that same She in receiv'd; but Atin by no way She would admit, albe the knight her did pray.

Eftsoones her shallow ship away did all More swift then swallow sheres the liquid Withouten care or Pilot it to guide, Or winged canvas with the wind to by: Onely she turnd a pin, and by and by It cut away upon the yielding wave. Ne cared she her course for to apply: For it was taught the way which she And both from rocks and flats it selfe wisely save.

And all the way the wanton Damsell for New merth her passenger to entertaine For she in pleasaunt purpose did abound And greatly joyed merry tales to faine. Of which a store-house did with her ren vaine,

And wanted grace in utt'ring of the sam That turned all her pleasaunce to a soo

whiles vaine toyes she would devize, tasticke wit did most delight: her head she fondly would aguize ly girlonds, or fresh flowrets dight necke, or rings of rushes plight: t shaking of the leaves light dd the water worke and play little frigot, therein making way.

behaviour and loose dalliaunce ndrous great contentment to the s way he had no sovenaunce of vow'd revenge and cruell fight, :ht: as to quench his flamed minde sweete drop of sensuall delight. t'appease the stormy winde [kind. in the calme of pleasaunt woman-

iscourses in their way they spent; hich Cymochles of her questioned she was, and what that usage ment, her cott she daily practized? an,' (saide she) 'that wouldest be coned er in thy home, and ignoraunt a, (for so my name is red) a, thine owne fellow servaunt : serve Acrasia thy selfe doest vaunt.

vide Inland sea, that hight by name ake, my wandring ship I row res her port, and thither sayles by e feare I how the wind do blow, r swift I wend, or whether slow: and swift alike do serve my tourne; g Neptune ne lowd thundring Jove age my cheare, or make me ever bourne.' ırne: boat can safely passe this perilous

hus she talked, and whiles thus she far past the passage which he spake, unto an Island waste and voyd, i in the midst of that great lake; small Gondelsy her port did make,

And that gay payre, issewing on the shore, Disburded her. Their way they forward take Into the land that lay them faire before, Whose pleasaunce she him shewd, and plentifull great store.

XII

It was a chosen plott of fertile land,

Emongst wide waves sett, like a litle nest, As if it had by Natures cunning hand Bene choycely picked out from all the rest, And laid forth for ensample of the best: No daintie flowre or herbe that growes on grownd

No arborett with painted blossomes drest And smelling sweete, but there it might be [al around. fownd To bud out faire, and throwe her sweete smels

No tree whose braunches did not bravely

spring; No braunch whereon a fine bird did not sitt; No bird but did her shrill notes sweetely sing; No song but did containe a lovely ditt.

Trees, braunches, birds, and songs, were framed For to allure fraile mind to carelesse ease: [fitt Carelesse the man soone woxe, and his weake witt

Was overcome of thing that did him please; So pleased did his wrathfull purpose faire appease.

Thus when shee had his eyes and sences fed

With false delights, and fild with pleasures Into a shady dale she soft him led, [vayn, And layd him downe upon a grassy playn; And her sweete selfe without dread or disdayn She sett beside, laying his head disarmd In her loose lap, it softly to sustayn, Where soone he slumbred fearing not be harmd:

charmd.

The whiles with a love lay she thus him sweetly TV

'Behold, O man! that toilesome paines doest take, [growes,
The flowrs, the fields, and all that pleasaunt How they them selves doe thine ensample make. Whiles nothing envious nature them forth throwes

Out of her fruitfull lap; how no man knowes.
They spring, they bud, they blossome fresh
and faire, [showes; And decke the world with their rich pompous
Yet no man for them taketh paines or care.
Yet no man to them can his carefull paines

compare.

XVI

'The lilly, Lady of the flowring field, The flowre-deluce, her lovely Paramoure, Bid thee to them thy fruitlesse labors yield,

With silkin curtens and gold coverletts,

XVII

'Why then doest thou, O man! that of them Art Lord, and eke of nature Soveraine, Wilfully make thyselfe a wretched thrall, And waste thy joyous howres in needelesse

paine,

Seeking for daunger and adventures vaine? What bootes it al to have, and nothing use? Who shall him rew that swimming in the maine

Will die for thrist, and water doth refuse? Refuse such fruitlesse toile, and present pleasures chuse."

XVIII

By this she had him lulled fast asleepe, That of no worldly thing he care did take: Then she with liquors strong his eies did steepe, That nothing should him hastily awake, So she him lefte, and did her selfe betake Unto her boat again, with which she clefte The slouthfull wave of that great griesy lake: Soone shee that Island far behind her lefte, And now is come to that same place where first she wefte.

By this time was the worthy Guyon brought Unto the other side of that wide strond Where she was rowing, and for passage sought. Him needed not long call: shee some to hond Her ferry brought, where him she byding fond With his sad guide: him selfe she tooke aboord, But the Blacke Palmer suffred still to stond, Ne would for price or prayers once affoord To ferry that old man over the perlous foord.

XX

Guyon was loath to leave his guide behind, Yet being entred might not backe retyre; For the flitt barke, obaying to her mind, Forth launched quickly as she did desire, Ne gave him leave to bid that aged sire Adieu; but nimbly ran her wonted course Through the dull billowes thicke as troubled

Whom nether wind out of their seat could be Nor timely tides did drive out of their slage

XXI

And soone leave off this toylsome weary stoure:

Loe, loe how brave she decks her bounteous boure,

And by the way, as was her wonted gaint. Her mery fitt shee freshly gan to rease, And did of joy and jollity devize, Her selfe to cherish, and her guest to ch Therein to shrowd her sumptuous Belamoure: The knight was courteous, and did not forbet the there is a special to the spinnes nor cards, ne cares nor Her honest merth and pleasaunce to para fretts,
But to her mother Nature all her care she
And passe the bonds of modest merimals,
Her dalliaunce he despis'd, and follies did 8 sake.

Yet she still followed her former style And said and did all that mote him ddirk Till they arrived in that pleasaunt lle, Where sleeping late she lefte her other in But whenas Guyon of that land had sight He wist him selfe amisse, and angre said Ah, Dame! perdy ye have not doen ment. Thus to mislead mee, whiles I you obaid Me litle needed from my right way to ha straid.

'Faire Sir,' (quoth she) 'be not displease at a Who fares on sea may not commaund his wi Ne wind and weather at his pleasure call: The sea is wide, and easy for to stray; The wind unstable, and doth never stay. But here a while ye may in safety rest, Till season serve new passage to assay: Better safe port then be in seas distrest. Therewith she laught, and did her carnests in jest.

But he, halfe discontent, mote nathelesse Himselfe appease, and issewd forth on short The joyes whereof and happy fruitfulness. Such as he saw she gan him lay before, And all, though pleasaunt, yet she made m more :

The fields did laugh, the flowres did free The trees did bud, and early blossomes bor And all the quire of birds did sweetly sing And told that gardins pleasures in I caroling.

XXV

And she, more sweete then any bird bough,

Would oftentimes emongst them beare a po And strive to passe (as she could well enou Their native musicke by her skilful art: So did she all that might his constant har Withdraw from thought of warlike enterpland drowne in dissolute delights apart,

ht not revive desire of knightly exercize.

XXVI

t he was wise, and wary of her will, I ever held his hand upon his hart; would not seeme so rude, and thewed ill, to despise so curteous seeming part

t gentle Lady did to him impart: , fairly tempring, fond desire subdewd, l ever her desired to depart.

list not heare, but her disports poursewd, I ever bad him stay till time the tide renewd.

XXVII

ad now by this Cymochles howre was spent, it he awoke out of his ydle dreme; I, shaking off his drowsy dreriment him avize, howe ill did him beseme shouthfull sleepe his molten hart to steme, quench the brond of his conceived yre:

· up he started, stird with shame extreme, staied for his Damsell to inquire, marched to the Strond there passage to require.

XXVIII

ad in the way he with Sir Guyon mett, ompanyde with Phædria the faire: soones he gan to rage, and inly frett, ing; 'Let be that Lady debonaire, ou recreaunt knight, and soone thyselfe

prepaire batteile, if thou meane her love to gayn. , loe! already how the fowles in aire flocke, awaiting shortly to obtayn

carcas for their pray, the guerdon of thy payn.

XXIX

ad therewithall he fiersly at him flew with importune outrage him assayld; o, soone prepard to field, his sword forth drew

I him with equall valew countervayld: ar mightie strokes their haberjeons dis-

mayld, I naked made each others manly spalles; mortall steele despiteously entayld

pe in their flesh, quite through the yron walles,

mochles, that had never mett before Puissant foe, with envious despight prowd presumed force inc: eased more, deigning to bee held so long in fight.

re noise of armes, or vew of martiall guize, ht not revive desire of knightly exercize. As those unknightly raylinges which he spoke, With wrathfull fire his corage kindled bright, Thereof devising shortly to be wroke, And doubling all his powres redoubled every

stroke.

XXXI

Both of them high attonce their handes enhaunst, swav. And both attonce their huge blowes down did Cymochles sword on Guyons shield yglaunst,

But Guyons angry blade so fiers did play On th' others helmett, which as Titan shone, That quite it clove his plumed crest in tway, And bared all his head unto the bone; Wherewith astonisht, still he stood as sence-

And thereof nigh one quarter sheard away;

lesse stone. XXXII Still as he stood, fayre Phædria, that beheld

That deadly daunger, soone atweene them ran; And at their feet her selfe most humbly feld, Crying with pitteous voyce, and count'nance wan,

Ah, well away! most noble Lords, how can Your cruell eyes endure so pitteous sight, To shed your lives on ground? Wo worth the

man, That first did teach the cursed steele to bight In his owne flesh, and make way to the living spright!

XXXIII

'If ever love of Lady did empierce Your yron brestes, or pittie could find place, Withhold your bloody handes from battaill fierce;

And, sith for me ye fight, to me this grace Both yield, to stay your deadly stryfe a space.' They stayd a while, and forth she gan proceede:

'Most wretched woman and of wicked race, That am the authour of this hainous deed, And cause of death betweene two doughtie knights do breed!

XXXIV

'But, if for me ye fight, or me will serve, Not this rude kynd of battaill, nor these armes at a large purple streame adowne their Are meet, the which doe men in bale to sterve, giambeux falles.

And doolefull sorrow heape with deadly harmes: Such cruell game my scarmoges disarmes. Another warre, and other weapons, I Doe love, where love does give his sweet

Alarmes Without bloodshed, and where the enimy Does yield unto his foe a pleasaunt victory.

XXXV

Debatefull strife, and cruell enmity, The famous name of knighthood fowly shend : But lovely peace, and gentle amity, And in Amours the passing howres to spend, The mightic martiall handes doe most com-

Of love they ever greater glory bore [mend: Then of their armes; Mars is Cupidoes frend, And is for Venus loves renowmed more

Then all his wars and spoiles, the which he did of yore,

XXXVI

Therewith she sweetly smyld. They, though full bent To prove extremities of bloody fight, Yet at her speach their rages gan relent, And calme the sea of their tempestuous spight, Such powre have pleasing wordes: such is the Of courteous clemency in gentle hart. [might Now after all was ceast, the Faery knight Besought that Damzell suffer him depart,

And yield him ready passage to that other part.

XXXVII She no lesse glad then he desirous was Of his departure thence; for of her joy And vaine delight she saw he light did pas, A foe of folly and immodest toy, Still solemne sad, or still disdainfull coy; Delighting all in armes and cruell warre, That her sweet peace and pleasures did annoy, Troubled with terrour and unquiet jarre, That she well pleased was thence to amove him farre.

XXVIII

The him she brought abord, and her swift bote Forthwith directed to that further strand; The which on the dull waves did lightly flote, And soone arrived on the shallow sand, Where gladsome Guyon salied forth to land, And to that Damsell thankes gave for reward Upon that shore he spyed Atin stand, There by his maister left, when late he far'd In Phadrias flitt barck over that perlous shard.

Well could he him remember, sith of late He with Pyrochles sharp debatement made: Streight gan he him revyle, and bitter rate, As Shepheardes curre, that in darke eveninges shade

Hath tracted forth some salvage beastes trade: Vile Miscreaunt,' (said he) whither dost thou Yet nought can quench mine inly flaming? [invade ?

XL

With that he stifly shooke his steelhead But sober Guyon, hearing him so rayle, Though somewhat moved in his mightin Yet with strong reason maistred p

fraile. And passed fayrely forth, He, turning t Back to the strond retyrd, and there still Awaiting passage which him late did fai The whiles Cymochles with that wanton

The hasty heat of his avowd revenge dele

XLI

Whylest there the variet stood, he saw h farre An armed knight that towardes him fast s He ran on foot, as if in lucklesse warre His forlorne steed from him the victour He seemed breathlesse, hartlesse, faint and And all his armour sprinckled was with b And soyld with durtie gore, that no must Discerne the hew thereof. He naver store

But bent his hastie course towardes the

flood.

XLII

The variett saw, when to the flood he man How without stop or stay he fiersly lept. And deepe him selfe beducked in the same That in the lake his loftie crest was step-Ne of his safetie seemed care he kept; But with his raging armes he rudely fast The waves about, and all his armour and That all the blood and filth away was was Yet still he bet the water, and the bill dasht.

XLIII

Atin drew nigh to weet what it mote be Whom should he but his owne deare L there see, His owne deare Lord Pyrochles in sad pa

Ready to drowne him selfe for fell desp

'Harrow now out, and well away!' hes What dismall day bath lent this cursed a To see my Lord so deadly damnifyde? Pyrochles, O Pyrochles! what is thee bety

XLIV

'I burne, I burne, I burne!" then lowd cryde,

O! how I burne with implacable fyre; Nor sea of licour cold, nor lake of myre! The shame and death, which will thee soone Nothing but death can doe me to responsible to the coward hand shall doe thee next to dye, 'Ah! be it,' (said he) 'from Pyrochles for That art thus fowly fledd from famous enimy?' After pursewing death once to requyre.

that ought those puissant hands Weake handes, but counsell is most strong in starre. marre: or wretches borne under unhappy

then is it fitt for me,' (said he)
I weene, most wretched man alive; I weene, most wretched man arve; is fames, yet no fames can I see, ; dayly, dayly yet revive.

eipe to me last death to give.'

at his plaint was grieved so sore,

supe wounded hart in two did rive;

rus health remembring now no more,

there means he which he blank de fore that encample which he blam'd afore.

XLVI

ike he lept his Lord to ayd the dread of daunger doth despise)
a catching hold him strongly stayd
ming. But more happy he then wise, as nature did him not avise: thereof so slow and sluggish were, th mud which did them fowle agrise, weighty thing they did upbeare, mote ever sinck downe to the tom there.

rus they strugled in that ydle wave, re in vaine, the one him selfe to both from drowning for to save, at shore one in an anncient gowne, ary locks great gravitie did crowne, a hand a goodly arming sword, came, ledd with the troublous sowne: mched deepe he fownd in that dull [Lord. Il servannt stryving with his raging

Lord in wretched plight forlore; thy hand, or with thy counsell sage:

age.

Him when the old man saw, he wondred sore To see Pyrochies there so rudely rage; Yet sithens helps, he saw, he needed more Then pitty, he in hast approched to the shore,

And cald; 'Pyrochles! what is this I see? What hellish fury hath at earst thee hent? Furious ever I thee knew to bee. Yet never in this straunge astonishment.'

'These flames, these flames' (he cryde) 'doe me torment. See 'Wha flames,' (quoth he), when I thee present In daunger rather to be drent then brent?' 'Harrow! the flames which me consume,

(said hee) Ne can be quencht, within my secret bowelles

'That cursed man, that cruel feend of hell, Furor, oh! Furor hath me thus bedight: His deadly woundes within my liver swell And his whott fyre burnes in mine entralles

bright, Kindled through his infernall brond of spight, Sith late with him I batteill vaine would boste; That now, I weene, Joves dreaded thunder light Does scorch not halfe so sore, nor damned ghoste

In flaming Phlegeton does not so felly roste.'

Which when as Archimago heard, his griefe He knew right well, and him attonce disarm'd; Then searcht his secret woundes, and made a priefe

Of every place that was with bruzing harmd, or with the hidden fire too inly warmd. Which doen, he balmes and herbes thereto apply de,

a spying knew right well of yore, y cald: 'Help, helpe! O Archimage! That in short space he has them qualifyde, And evermore with mightie spels them charmd; And him restor'd to helth that would have algates dyde.

CANTO VII.

Guyon findes Mamon in a delve Sunning his threasure hore; Is by him tempted, and led downe

As Pilot well expert in perilous wave, That to a stedfast starre his course hath bent. When foggy mistes or cloudy tempests have The faithfull light of that faire lampe yblent, And cover'd heaven with hideous dreriment, Upon his card and compas firmes his eye, The maysters of his long experiment, And to them does the steddy helme apply, Bidding his winged vessell fairely forward fly:

So Guyon having lost his trustie guyde, Late left beyond that Ydle lake, proceedes Yet on his way, of none accompanyde; And evermore himselfe with comfort feedes Of his own vertues and praise-worthie deedes, So, long he yode, yet no adventure found, Which fame of her shrill trompet worthy reedes For still he traveild through wide wastfull

[around. ground, That nought but desert wildernesse shewed all

At last he came unto a gloomy glade, Cover'd with boughes and shrubs from heavens light,

Whereas he sitting found in secret shade An uncouth, salvage, and uncivile wight, Of griesly hew and fowle ill favour'd sight; His face with smoke was tand, and eies were bleard,

His head and beard with sout were ill bedight, His cole-blacke hands did seeme to have ben [clawes appeard.

In smythes fire-spitting forge, and nayles like

His yron cote, all overgrowne with rust, Was underneath enveloped with gold; [dust, Whose glistring glosse, darkned with filthy Well yet appeared to have beene of old A worke of rich entayle and curious mould, Woven with antickes and wyld ymagery; And in his lap a masse of coyne he told, And turned upside downe, to feede his eye

And covetous desire with his huge threasury. And in the hollow earth have their eter

And round about him lay on every Great heapes of gold that never cou Of which some were rude owre, not Of Mulcibers devouring element; Some others were new driven, and d Into great Ingowes and to wedges Some in round plates withouten mo But most were stampt, and in their The antique shapes of kings

straunge and rare.

Soone as he Guyon saw, in great a And haste he rose for to remove asi Those pretious hils from straunge And downe them poured through at Into the hollow earth, them there to ! But Guyon, lightly to him leaping. His hand that trembled as one terri And though himselfe were at the sigh Yet him perforce restrayed, and tol full sayd :

What art thou, man, (if man at a That here in desert hast thine habit And these rich hils of welth doest h From the worldes eye, and from usaunce?'

Thereat, with staring eyes fixed a In great disdaine he answerd : + H That darest view my direfull counted I read thee rash and heedlesse of the To trouble my still seate, and hear tious pelfe.

'God of the world and worldlings Great Mammon, greatest god below That of my plenty poure out unto a And unto none my graces do envye Riches, renowme, and principality, Honour, estate, and all this worldes For which men swinck and sweat in IX

mannd lo! all these mountaines bee: great mind, or greedy vew, ay not suffise, there shall to these so much be nombred francks and [vaine, (said he) 'thy godheads vaunt is ers of thy golden fae; ut covet such eye-glutting gaine giftes, and fitter servaunts enter-

e, if me thou deigne to serve and sew,

its, that in der-doing armes s suit my vowed daies do spend bounteous baytes and pleasing ake men thou witchest, to attend; rorldly mucke doth fowly blend, ase the high heroicke spright, or crownes and kingdomes to con-[delight;

s, gay steedes, bright armes be my riches fit for an advent'rous knight.

rious Elfe,' (saide he) 'doest not thou · can thy wantes at will supply? eds, and armes, and all things for meet, sy in twinckling of an eye; s and kingdomes to thee multiply. ngs create, and throw the crowne to him that low in dust doth ly,

hat raignd into his rowme thrust [renowne?'

XII

wise' (saide he) 'I riches read, them roote of all disquietnesse; ith guile, and then preserv'd with sent with pride and lavishnesse, aind them griefe and heavinesse: chiefes of them doe arize, lebate, bloodshed and bitternesse, wrong, and hellish covetize, neart as great dishonour doth despize.

be kingdomes, ne the scepters thine; and rulers thou doest both con-

truth to treason doest incline:
Then avarice gan through his veines inspire
the guiltlesse blood pourd oft on His greedy flames, and kindled life-devouring md,

The crowned often slaine, the slaver cround; The sacred Diademe in peeces rent, And purple rose gored with many a wound, Castles surprizd, great cities sackt and brent: So mak'st thou kings, and gaynest wrongfull government.

XIV

'Long were to tell the troublous stormes that tnase The private state, and make the life unsweet: Who swelling sayles in Caspian sea doth

crosec,
And in frayle wood on Adrian gulf doth fleet,
Doth not, I weene, so many evils meet.' Then Mammon wexing wroth; 'And why then,'

sayd 'Are mortall men so fond and undiscreet So evill thing to seeke unto their ayd, And having not complaine, and having it upbrayd?

XV

'Indeede,' (quoth he) 'through fowle intemperaunce. Frayle men are oft captiv'd to covetise; But would they thinke with how small allow-

aunce Untroubled Nature doth her selfe suffise, Such superfluities they would despise

Which with sad cares empeach our native joyes. At the well-head the purest streames arise; But mucky filth his braunching armes annoyes, And with uncomely weedes the gentle wave accloyes.

XVI 'The antique world, in his first flowring youth,

I lust do heape with glory and Fownd no defect in his Creators grace; But with glad thankes, and unreproved truth, The guifts of soversine bounty did embrace: Like Angels life was then mens happy cace; But later ages pride, like corn-fed steed, Abusd her plenty and fat swolne encreace To all licentious lust, and gan exceed The measure of her meane and naturall first need.

XVII

'Then gan a cursed hand the quiet wombe Of his great Grandmother with steele to wound, And the hid treasures in her sacred tombe With Sacriledge to dig. Therein he fown Fountaines of gold and silver to abownd, Therein he fownd Of which the matter of his huge desire And pompous pride effsoones he did compownd:

fire.

XVIII

'Sonne,' (said he then) 'lett be thy bitter scorne, And leave the rudenesse of that antique age To them that liv'd therin in state forlorne: Thou, that doest live in later times, must wage Thy workes for wealth, and life for gold engage. If then thee list my offred grace to use, Take what thou please of all this surplusage; If thee list not, leave have thou to refuse: But thing refused doe not afterward accuse."

'Me list not' (said the Elfin knight) 'receave Thing offred, till I know it well be gott; Ne wote I but thou didst these goods bereave From rightfull owner by unrighteous lott, Or that bloodguiltinesse or guile them blott.'
'Perdy,' (quoth he) 'yet never eie did vew,
Ne tong did tell, ne hand these handled not; But safe I have them kept in secret mew From hevens sight, and powre of al which them poursew.'

'What secret place' (quoth he) 'can safely hold So huge a masse, and hide from heavens eie? Or where hast thou thy wonne, that so much

Thou canst preserve from wrong and robbery?' 'Come thou,' (quoth he) 'and see.' So by and by Through that thick covert he him led, and fownd

A darkesome way, which no man could descry, deep descended through the hollow That grownd, Tarownd.

And was with dread and horror compassed

At length they came into a larger space, That stretcht itselfe into an ample playne; Through which a beaten broad high way did

That streight did lead to Plutoes griesly rayne. By that wayes side there sate internall Payne, And fast beside him sat tumultuous Strife; The one in hand an yron whip did strayne, The other brandished a bloody knife; And both did guash their teeth, and both did threten life.

XXII

On thother side in one consort there sate Cruell Revenge, and rancorous Despight, Disloyall Treason, and hart-burning Hate; But gnawing Gealosy, out of their sight Sitting alone, his bitter lips did bight;
And trembling Feare still to and fro did fly,
And found no place wher safe he shroud him He over him did hold his cruell clawes, Sitting alone, his bitter lips did bight; might:

Lamenting Sorrow did in darknes lye. And shame his ugly face did hide from

And over them sad horror with grim be Did alwaies sore, beating his yron wing. And after him Owles and Night-ravens The hatefull messengers of heavy thing Of death and dolor telling sad tidings; Whiles sad Celeno, sitting on a clifte, A song of bale and bitter sorrow sing That hart of flint asonder could have rifte Which having ended after him she! swifte.

All these before the gates of Pluto lay, By whom they passing spake unto nought : But th' Elfin knight with wonder all the

Did feed his eyes, and fild his inner thou At last him to a litle dore he brought, That to the gate of Hell, which gaped w Was next adjoyning, ne them parted and Betwixt them both was but a litle strice That did the house of Richesse from hell-t divide.

XXV

Before the dore sat selfe-consuming Ca Day and night keeping wary watch and For feare least Force or Fraud should un Breake in, and spoile the treasure therein. Ne would be suffer Sleepe once thither w Approch, albe his drowsy den were next For next to death is Sleepe to be compar Therefore his house is unto his annext! Here Sleep, ther Richesse, and Hel-gate both betwext.

So soon as Mammon there arrive, the d To him did open and affoorded way: Him followed eke Sir Guyon evermore Ne darkenesse him, ne daunger might d Soone as he entred was, the dore streight Did shutt, and from behind it forth there An ugly feend, more fowle then dismall The which with monstrous stalke behin stept,

And ever as he went dew watch upon

Well hoped hee, ere long that hardy gu If ever covetous hand, or lustfull ever Or lips he layd on thing that likte him! Threatning with greedy gripe to doe hit

THE FAERIE QUEENE.

eces with his ravenous pawes, sgrest the fatall Stygian lawes.

XXVIII

cave hewne out of rocky clifte, ough vaut the ragged breaches

massy gold of glorious guifte, metall loaded every rifte, tine they did seeme to threatt;
n Arachne high did lifte web, and spred her subtile nett, 1 fowle smoke and clouds more hen Jett.

nd floore, and walls, were all of

ne with dust and old decay, rkenes, that none could behold of: for vew of cherefull day that house it selfe display, nadow of uncertein light: ip, whose life does fade away, one, cloathed with clowdy night, him that walkes in feare and sad

XXX

wme was nothing to be seene at yron chests, and coffers strong double bends, that none could ce by violence or wrong : [weene they placed were along; ownd with sculs was scattered, ns bones, which round about were

t seemed, whilome there were shed, e carcases now left unburied.

XXXI

rd passe; ne Guyon yet spoke came unto an yron dore, [word, m opened of his owne accord, f richesse such exceeding store, did never see before, within one place be found, ne wealth which is, or was of yore, d be through all the world around ove were added to that under

thereof unto a covetous Spright was, who thereby did attend, waited day and night, ovetous feends it to defend,

Who it to rob and ransacke did intend. Then Mammon, turning to that warriour, said; Loe! here the worldes blis: loe! here the end, To which al men doe ayme, rich to be made: forme within was rude and Such grace now to be happy is before thee laid.

115

XXXIII

'Certes,' (sayd he) 'I n'ill thine offred grace, Ne to be made so happy doe intend: Another blis before mine eyes I place, Another happines, another end. To them that list these base regardes I lend; But I in armes, and in atchievements brave, Do rather choose my flitting houres to spend, And to be Lord of those that riches have Then them to have my selfe, and be their ser-vile sclave.'

XXXIV

Thereat the feend his gnashing teeth did grate, And griev'd so long to lacke his greedie pray; For well he weened that so glorious bayte Would tempt his guest to take thereof assay; Had he so doen, he had him snatcht away, More light then Culver in the Faulcons fist. Eternall (fod thee save from such decay! But, whenas Mammon saw his purpose mist, Him to entrap unwares another way he wist.

Thence forward he him ledd, and shortly brought Unto another rowme, whose dore forthright To him did open, as it had beene taught. Therein an hundred raunges weren pight And hundred fournaces all burning bright: By every fournace many feendes did byde, Deformed creatures, horrible in sight; And every feend his busic paines applyde To melt the golden metall, ready to be tryde.

XXXVI

One with great bellowes gathered filling ayre, And with forst wind the fewell did inflame; Another did the dying bronds repayre With yron tongs, and sprinckled ofte the same With liquid waves, fiers Vulcans rage to tame, Who, may string them, renewd his former heat Some scumd the drosse that from the metall came

Some stird the molten owre with ladles great; And every one did swincke, and every one did sweat.

But, when an earthly wight they present saw Glistring in armes and battailous arav.

THE FAERIE QUEENE.

BOOK I

From their whot work they did themselves withdraw

To wonder at the sight; for till that day They never creature saw that cam that way : Their staring eyes sparckling with fervent fyre His harmefull club he gan to hurtle hy And ugly shapes did nigh the man dismay,

116

Lord and syre; XXXVIII

Behold, thou Faeries sonne, with mortall That living eye before did never see. [eye, The thing, that thou didst crave so earnestly, To weet whence all the wealth late shewd by Proceeded, lo! now is reveald to thee. Here is the fountaine of the worldes good:

Now, therefore, if thou wilt enriched bee, Avise thee well, and chaunge thy wilfull mood,

withstood.

abuse:

XXXXX 'Suffise it then, thou Money God,' (quoth hee) 'That all thine velle offers I refuse.
All that I need I have: what needeth mee To covet more then I have cause to use? With such vaine shewes thy worldlinges vyle

But give me leave to follow mine emprise,' Mammonwas much displeased, yet no'te he chuse But beare the rigour of his bold mesprise;

And thence him forward ledd him further to entise.

stravt. To a broad gate all built of beaten gold:

The gate was open; but therein did wavt A sturdie villein, stryding stiffe and bold, As if the highest God defy he would: In his right hand an yron club he held,

But he himselfe was all of golden mould, Yet had both life and sence, and well could Yet was not that same her owne native be weld

That cursed weapon, when his cruell foes he

XLI

Disdayne he called was, and did disdayne To be so cald, and who so did him call: Sterne was his looke, and full of stomacke

vavne; His portaunce terrible, and stature tall Far passing th' hight of men terrestriall,

Like an huge Gyant of the Titans race : [small, That made him scorne all creatures great and And lower part did reach to lowest Hell

And with his pride all others powre deface: More titt emongst black fiendes then men to have his place.

Soone as those glitterand armes he did esp. That with their brightnesse made that dark nes light.

And threaten batteill to the Facry knight; That, were it not for shame, he would retyre: Who likewise gan himselfe to batteill dight Till that him thus bespake their soveraine Till Mammon did his hasty hand withhold And counseld him abstaine from perilous fg For nothing might abash the villein bold,

Ne mortall steele emperce his miscreated mor XI.III

So having him with reason pacifyde, wd by And that fiers Carle commaunding to forbest mee He brought him in. The rowne was lat and wyde, As it some Gyeld or solemne Temple weat Avise thee well, and chaunge thy wilfull mood, Many great golden pillours did upbeare Least thou perhaps hereafter wish, and be The massy roofe, and riches huge custavi And every pillour decked was full deare With crownes, and Diademes, and titles vi Which mortall Princes wore whiles they

earth did rayne.

A route of people there assembled were, Of every sort and nation under skye, Which with great uprore preaced to draws To th' upper part, where was advaunced by A stately siege of soveraine majestye; And thereon satt a woman, gorgeous gay And richly cladd in robes of royaltye, That never earthly Prince in such army He brought him, through a darksom narrow His glory did enhaunce, and pompous per display.

XLV

Her face right wondrous faire did see That her broad beauties beam great brig Through the dim shade, that all men u it see: queld. But wrought by art and counterfetted sl Thereby more lovers unto her to call: Nath lesse most hevenly faire in deed a She by creation was, till she did fall; Thenceforth she sought for helps to clo

XLVI

There, as in glistring glory she did sitt. She held a great gold chaine ylincked we Whose upper end to highest heven was h And all that preace did rownd about he To catchen hold of that long chaine, tl To climbe aloft, and others to excell:

crime withall,

THE FAERIE QUEENE.

XLVII

11.]

nought to raise themselves to high and unrighteous reward; [degree close shouldring; some by flattere; rough friendes; others for base regard, by wrong waies for themselves prerd: t were up themselves kept others low; at were low themselves held others rd, d them to ryse or greater grow; r one did strive his fellow downe to row.

XLVIII

whenas Guyon saw, he gan inquire, eant that preace about that Ladies rone, t she was that did so high aspyre? nmon answered; 'That goodly one, I that folke with such contention about, my deare, my daughter is: nd dignitie from her alone rre, and all this worldes blis, h ye men doe strive; few gett, but my mis:

XLIX

yre Philotime she rightly hight, st wight that wonneth under skie, this darksom neather world her light i with horror and deformity; of heven and hye felicitie, hence the gods have her for envy rust: thou hast found favour in mine eye,

thou hast found favour in mine eye, se I will her make, if that thou lust, may thee advance for works and arits just.'

rcy, Mammon,' (said the 'gentle ight)
reat grace and offred high estate; at am fraile flesh and earthly wight, y match for such immortall mate well wote, and mine unequall fate:
I not, yet is my trouth yplight, avowd to other Lady late, emove the same I have no might: gelove causelesse is reproch to warlike ight'

LI

n emmoved was with inward wrath; ng it to fayne, him forth thence ledd, griesly shadowes by a beaten path, adin goodly garnished

With hearbs and fruits, whose kinds mote not be redd:

Not such as earth out of her fruitfull woomb Throwes forth to men, sweet and well savored, But direfull deadly black, both leafe and bloom, Fitt to adorne the dead, and deck the drery toombe.

LI

There mournfull Cypresse grew in greatest store,
And trees of bitter Gall, and Heben sad;
Dead sleeping Poppy, and black Hellebore;
Cold Coloquintida, and Tetra mad;
Mortall Samnitis, and Cicuta bad,
With which th' unjust Atheniens made to dy
Wise Socrates; who, thereof quaffing glad,
Pourd out his life and last Philosophy
To the fayre Critias, his dearest Belamy!

LIII

The Gardin of Proserpina this hight; And in the midst thereof a silver seat, With a thick Arber goodly over-dight, In which she often usd from open heat Her selfe to shroud, and pleasures to entreat: Next thereunto did grow a goodly tree, With braunches broad dispredd and body great, Clothed with leaves, that none the wood mote

And loaden all with fruit as thick as it might bee.

LIV

Their fruit were golden apples glistring bright,
That goodly was their glory to behold:
On earth like never grew, ne living wight
Like ever saw, but they from hence were sold;
For those which Hercules, with conquest bold
Got from great Atlas daughters, hence began,
And planted there did bring forth fruit of gold;
And those with which th' Eubœan young man

wan Swift Atalanta, when through craft he her out ran.

LV

Here also sprong that goodly golden fruit, With which Acontius got his lover trew, Whom he had long time sought with fruitlesse suit:

Here eke that famous golden Apple grew,
The which emongst the gods false Ate threw;
For which th' Idean Ladies disagreed,
Till partiall Paris dempt it Venus dew,
And had of her fayre Helen for his meed,
That many noble Greekes and Trojans made
to bleed,

LVI

And his broad braunches, laden with rich fee, Did stretch themselves without the utmost bound

Of this great gardin, compast with a mound; Which over-hanging, they themselves did

steepe In a blacke flood, which flow'd about it round. That is the river of Cocytus deepe

In which full many soules do endlesse wayle and weepe.

LVII

Which to behold he clomb up to the bancke, And looking downe saw many damned wightes In those sad waves, which direfull deadly stancke,

Plonged continually of cruell Sprightes,

shrightes They made the further shore resounden wide, Emongst the rest of those same ruefull sightes, One cursed creature he by chaunce espide, [side.

That drenched lay full deepe under the Garden

Deepe was he drenched to the upmost chin, Yet gaped still as coveting to drinke Of the cold liquor which he waded in;

To reach the fruit which grew upon the In which the damned soules he did be mouth, brincke;

But both the fruit from hand, and flood from Did fly abacke, and made him vainely swincke; The whiles he sterv'd with hunger, and with To rest thy weary person in the shadow coo drouth,

He daily dyde, yet never throughly dyen couth.

The knight, him seeing labour so in vaine, Askt who he was, and what he ment thereby? Who, groning deepe, thus answerd him againe; 'Most cursed of all creatures under skye,

Lo! Tantalus, I here tormented lye: Of whom high Jove wont whylome feasted bee;

Lo! here I now for want of food doe dye: But, if that thou be such as I thee see, [mee !' Of grace I pray thee, give to eat and drinke to

'Nay, nay, thou greedy Tantalus,' (quoth he)
'Abide the fortune of thy present fate;
And unto all that live in high degree, Ensample be of mind intemperate,

To teach them how to use their present state. Since he this hardy enterprize began :

Then gan the cursed wretch alowd to cre, The warlike Elfe much wondred at this tree, Accusing highest Jove and gods ingrate. So fayre and great that shadowed all the And eke blaspheming heaven bitterly. As author of unjustice, there to let him &

He lookt a litle further, and espyde Another wretch, whose carcas deepe wa Within the river, which the same did hyd But both his handes, most filthy feculent, Above the water were on high extent, And faynd to wash themselves incessantly Yet nothing cleaner were for such intent, But rather fowler seemed to the eye: So lost his labour vaine and ydle industry,

The knight him calling asked who he was Who, lifting up his head, him answerd the 'I Pilate am, the falsest Judge, alas I with their piteous cryes, and yelling And most unjust; that, by unrighteous shrightes.

And wicked doome, to Jewes despiteous Delivered up the Lord of life to dye, And did acquite a murdrer felonous; The whiles my handes I washt in purity. The whiles my soule was soyld with fowler iquity.

LXIII Infinite moe tormented in like paine He there beheld, too long here to be told: Ne Mammon would there let him long rem And stretching forth his hand did often thinke For terrour of the tortures manifold But roughly him bespake: 'Thou fearefull a Why takest not of that same fruite of go Ne sittest downe on that same silver stool

LXIV

All which he did to do him deadly fall In frayle intemperaunce through sinfull To which if he inclyned had at all, That dreadfull feend, which did behind Would him have rent in thousand peeces But he was wary wise in all his way And well perceived his deceiptfull sleight. Ne suffred lust his safety to betray. So goodly did beguile the Guyler of his pro

And now he has so long remained thear That vitall powres gan wexe both weake and For want of food and sleepe, which two upbo Like mightie pillours, this frayle life of p That none without the same enduren can For now three dayes of men were full wrought,

rthy great Mammon fayrely he besought to the world to guyde him backe, as he him brought.

LYVI

he God, though loth, yet was constrayed t' obay; r lenger time then that no living wight

Below the earth might suffred be to stay : So backe againe him brought to living light. But all so soone as his enfeebled spright Gan sucke this vitall ayre into his brest,

As overcome with too exceeding might,

The life did flit away out of her nest, And all his sences were with deadly fit opprest.

CANTO VIII.

Sir Guyon, layd in swowne, is by Acrates sonnes despoyld; Whom Arthure soone hath reskewed, And Paynim brethren foyld.

heavenly spirits to these creatures bace. at may compassion of their evilles move? ere is: else much more wretched were the

cace grace But O! th' exceeding men then beasts. highest God that loves his creatures so, al all his workes with mercy doth embrace, at blessed Angels he sends to and fro, [foe. serve to wicked man, to serve his wicked

low oft do they their silver bowers leave, come to succour us that succour want! w oft do they with golden pineons cleave flitting skyes, like flying Pursuivant, minst fowle feendes to ayd us militant! ey for us fight, they watch and dewly ward, id their bright Squadrons round about us plant;
ad all for love, and nothing for reward.

regard?

why should hevenly God to men have such

turing the while that Guyon did abide Mamons house, the Palmer, whom why leare at wanton Mayd of passage had denide, further search had passage found elsewhere; d, being on his way, approched neare here Guyon lay in traunce; when suddeinly heard a voyce that called lowd and cleare, ome hither! hither! O, come hastily!' at all the fields resounded with the ruefull cry.

he Palmer lent his eare unto the noyce, west who called so importunely: at bad him come in haste. He by and by

My is there care in heaven? And is there Which to that shady delve him brought at last, Where Mammon earst did sunne his threasury; His feeble feet directed to the cry; There the good Guyon he found slumbring fast

In senceles dreame; which sight at first him sore aghast. Beside his head there satt a faire young man,

Of wondrous beauty and of freshest yeares, Whose tender bud to blossome new began, And florish faire above his equall peares:

His snowy front, curled with golden heares, Like Pheebus face adornd with sunny rayes, Divinely shone; and two sharpe winged sheare Decked with diverse plumes, like painted Jayes,

Were fixed at his backe to cut his ayery wa, es.

Like as Cupido on Idean hill, When having laid his cruell bow away And mortall arrowes, wherewith he doth fill The world with murdrous spoiles and bloody pray, With his faire mother he him dights to play,

And with his goodly sisters, Graces three: The Goddesse, plea ed with his wanton play, Suffers her selfe through sleepe beguild to bee, The whiles the other Ladies mind theyr mery glee.

Whom when the Palmer saw, abasht he was Through fear and wonder that he nought could

say, Till him the childe bespoke; 'Long lackt, alas! Hath bene thy faithfull aide in hard assay, Whiles deadly fitt thy pupill doth dismay. Behold this heavy sight, thou reverend Sire! But dread of death and dolor doe away For life ere long shall to her home retire, And he that breathlesse seems shal corage be

respire.

The charge, which God doth unto me arrett, To proove he lived il that did thus Of his deare safety, I to thee commend; Yet will I not forgoe, ne yet forgett The care thereof my selfe unto the end, But evermore him succour, and defend Against his foe aud mine : watch thou, I pray; For evill is at hand him to offend. So having said, eftsoones he gan display His painted nimble wings, and vanisht quite away.

IX

The Palmer seeing his lefte empty place, And his slow eies beguiled of their sight, Woxe sore affraid, and standing still a space Gaz'd after him, as fowle escapt by flight. At last, him turning to his charge behight, With trembling hand his troubled pulse gan try

Where finding life not yet dislodged quight, He much rejoyst, and courd it tenderly, As chicken newly hatcht, from dreaded destiny.

At last he spide where towards him did pace Two Paynim knights al armd as bright as skie.

And them beside an aged Sire did trace, And far before a light-foote Page did flie That breathed strife and troublous enmitie. Those were the two sonnes of Acrates old, Who, meeting earst with Archimago slie Foreby that idle strond, of him were told That he which earst them combatted was Guyon

Which to avenge on him they dearly vowd, Where ever that on ground they mote him find:

False Archimage provokte their corage prowd, And stryful Atin in their stubborne mind Coles of contention and whot vengeaunce tind. Now bene they come whereas the Palmer sate, Keeping that slombred corse to him assind: Well knew they both his person, sith of late With him in bloody armes they rashly did debate.

XII

Whom when Pyrochles saw, inflam'd with rage That sire he fowl bespake: Thou dotard vile. That with thy brutenesse shendst thy comely Abandon soone, I read, the caytive spoile [age. Of that same outcast carcas, that erewhile Made it selfe famous through false trechery, And crownd his coward crest with knightly stile ;

Loe! where he now inglorious dot

To whom the Palmer fearlesse a 'Certes, Sir knight, ye bene too mi Thus for to blott the honor of the And with fowle cowardize his car Whose living handes immortalize Vile is the vengeaunce on the ash And envy base to barke at sleeping. Was never wight that treason of Your self his prowesse prov'd, and fiers and bold,'

Then sayd Cymochles: 'Palmer dote,

Ne canst of prowesse ne of knight Save as thou seest or hearst. But That of his puissaunce tryall mad Yet gold al is not that doth golden Ne all good knights that shake we shield.

The worth of all men by their end And then dew praise or dew reproch Bad therefore I him deeme that the on field.'

'Good or bad,' gan his brother fie 'What doe I recke, sith that he di Or what doth his bad death now s The greedy hunger of revenging y Sith wrathfull hand wrought not I Yet since no way is lefte to wreak I will him reave of armes, the vic And of that shield, more worthy of For why should a dead dog be dec bright?

'Fayr Sir,' said then the Palmer 'For knighthoods love doe not so i Ne blame your honor with so sham Of vile revenge. To spoile the de Is sacrilege, and doth all sinnes ex But leave these relicks of his livin To decke his herce, and trap his steed.'

'What herce or steed' (said he) But be entombed in the raven or t

With that, rude hand upon his sh And th' other brother gan his heln Both fiercely bent to have him disa Till that they spyde where toward pace

right, of bold and bounteous grace e bore after him an heben launce shield. Well kend him so far space ter by his armes and amenaunce, him he saw his Lybian steed to

XVIII e brethren sayd; 'Rise, rise bylive, tteil doe your selves addresse; omes the prowest knight alive ur, flowre of grace and nobilesse, o Paynim knights wrought gret id Sar'zins fowly donne to dye.' deepe did in their harts impresse,

tsoones upstarted furiously, nselves prepare to batteill greedily.

XIX

rrochles, lacking his owne sword, ereof now greatly gan to plaine, age besought, him that afford d brought for Braggadochio vaine ' (said th' enchaunter) 'glad and

rou this sword, you to defend, at els your honour might mains weapons powre I well have kend

ry to the worke which ye intend:

XX

same knights owne sword this is, in made by his almightie art

noursling, when he knighthood doen his foes eternall smart. irst he mixt with Medswart, hauntment from his dint might

ames of Aetna wrought apart, imes dipped in the bitter wave yx, which hidden vertue to it gave.

s is, that nether steele nor stone

pereof from entraunce may defend;

XXI

be used by his fone it breake, ne ever bend:
fordere it rightfully is hight,
refore, Pyrochles, should I lend
thee, against his lord to fight;
would dessive thy labor and thy
" rightful owner to offend;

'Foolish old man,' said then the Pagan wroth, 'That weenest words or charms may force withstond: Soone shalt thou see, and then believe for troth, That I can carre with this inchaunted brond His Lords owne flesh.' Therewith out of his hond

That vertuous steele he rudely snatcht away, And Guyons shield about his wrest he bond: So ready dight fierce battaile to assay, And match his brother proud in battailous aray.

XXIII

By this, that straunger knight in presence And goodly salued them; who nought againe

Him answered, as courtesie became; [daine, But with sterne lookes, and stomachous dis-Gave signes of grudge and discontentment vaine

Then, turning to the Palmer, he gan spy Where at his feet, with sorrowfull demayne And deadly hew, an armed corse did lye, In whose dead face he redd great magnanimity.

XXIV

Sayd he then to the Palmer: 'Reverend Syre, What great misfortune hath betidd this knight? Or did his life her fatall date expyre, Or did his hie her fatan date expyre,
Or did he fall by treason, or by fight?
How ever, sure I rew his pitteous plight,
'Not one, nor other,' sayd the Palmer grave,
'Hath him befalne; but cloudes of deadly night A while his heavy eylids cover'd have, [wave: And all his sences drowned in deep sencelesse

'Which those his cruell foes, that stand here-

by, Making advauntage, to revenge their spight, Would him disarme and treaten shamefully; Unworthie usage of redoubted knight. But you, falre Sir, whose honourable sight

Doth promise hope of helpe and timely grace, Mote I beseech to succour his sad plight, And by your powre protect his feeble cace? First prayse of knighthood is fowle outrage to deface.

XXVI

'Palmer, (said he) 'no knight so rude, I weene, As to doen outrage to a sleeping ghost; Ne was there ever noble corage seene, That in advauntage would his puissaunce boot Honour is least where oddes appeareth most.

May bee, that better reason will sawage
The rask revengers beat. Words, well dispost Have secrete powre t' appease inflamed rage: If not, leave unto me thy knights last patronage.'

XXVII

Tho, turning to those brethren, thus bespoke:

Ye warlike payre, whose valorous great might,
It seemes, just wronges to vengeaunce doe
provoke, [knight,

To wreake your wrath on this dead seeming Mote ought allay the storme of your despight, And settle patience in so furious heat? Not to debate the chalenge of your right, But for his carkas pardon I entreat, Whom fortune hath already haid in lowest seat.

XXVIII

To whom Cymochles said; 'For what art thou, That mak'st thy selfe his dayes-man, to prolong The vengeaunce prest? Or who shall let me now

On this vile body from to wreak my wrong, And made his carkas as the outcast dong? Why should not that dead carrion satisfye The guilt which, if he lived had thus long, His life for dew revenge should deare abye? The trespass still doth live, albee the person dyc.

XXIX

'Indeed,' then said the Prince, 'the evill donne Dyes not, when breath the body first doth leave; But from the grandsyre to the Nephewes sonne, And all his seede the curse doth often cleave, Till vengeaunce utterly the guilt bereave; So streightly God doth judge. But gentle Knight,

That doth against the dead his hand upheave, His honour staines with rancour and despight, And great disparagment makes to his former might.

XXX

Pyrochles gan reply the second tyme, And to him said: 'Now, felon, sure I read, How that thou art partaker of his cryme; Therefore, by Termagaunt thou shalt be dead, With that his hand, more sad then lomp of lead,

Uplifting high, he weened with Morddure, His owne good sword Morddure, to cleave hihead.

The faithfull steele such treason no'uld endure, But, swarving from the marke, his Lordes life did assure.

XXXI

Yet was the force so furious and so fell, That horse and man it made to recle asyde: Nath'lesse the Prince would not forsake his sell, For well of yore he learned had to ryde,

But full of anger fiersly to him cryde;
'False traitour! miscreannt! thou has
The law of armes to strike for undefine
But thou thy treasons fruit, I hops, sh
Right sowre, and feele the law the wh
hast defast.'

XXXII

With that his balefull speare he fier Against the Pagans brest, and thought

His cursed life out of her lodge have But ere the point arrived where it ou That seven fold shield, which he from brought,

He cast between to ward the bitters: Through all those foldes the steelehead wrought,

wrought,
And through his shoulder perst;
He groveling fell, all gored in his
wound.

XXXIII

Which when his brother saw, frau, great griefe

And wrath, he to him leaped furious!
And fowly saide: 'By Mahoune, curso
That direfull stroke thou dearely shal
Then, hurling up his harmefull blade
Smote him so hugely on his haughtle
That from his saddle forced him to fi
Els mote it needes downe to his mand
Have cleft his head in twaine, and li
dispossest.

XXXIV

Now was the Prince in daungerous Wanting his sword when he on for fight:

His single speare could doe him small Against two foes of so exceeding mig The least of which was match for any And now the other, whom he earst di Had reard him selfe againe to cruel fi Three times more furious and more p Unmindfull of his wound, of his fate p

XXXV

So both attonce him charge on eith With hideous strokes and importable That forced him his ground to traver And wisely watch to ward that dead For in his shield, as thicke as storm Their strokes did raine: yet did quaile,

Ne backward shrinke, but as a stedfa Whom foe with double battry doth a Them on her bulwarke beares, and b nought availe.

he withstood their strong assay; last, when he advantage spyde, it speare he thrust with puissant [wyde, lymochles, whiles his shield was th his thigh the mortall steele did ig with the force, within his flesh the launce, and let the head abyde. wound the red blood flowed fresh,

neath his feet soone made a purple

XXXVII hen he gan to rage and rayle, Gods, and him selfe damning deepe: is brother saw the red blood rayle fast, and all his armour steepe, lnesse lowd he gan to weepe 'Caytive, curse on thy cruell hond, hath spedd; yet shall it not thee hird brunt of this my fatall brond: the dreadfull Death behynd thy

XXXVIII

e doth stond.

t he strooke, and thother strooke all, [might: ng seemd mote beare so monstrous on his covered shield did fall, [byte; cing downe would not his owner r did upon his troncheon smyte, ring quite asunder, further way id on his hacqueton did lyte, dividing with importune sway, his right side, and there the dint stay.

the wound, and a large lukewarme Rose, thence gushed grievously; But him henceforth the same ca the Paynym spyde the streaming For now arrived is his fatall howre, reat hart and hope of victory. r side, in huge perplexity now stood, having his weapon broke; ld he hurt, but still at warde did ly: is troncheon he so rudely stroke twise, that twise him forst his foot ke.

s sword he lightly to him raught,
Fayre Sonne, great God thy right
blesse,

That quite disparted all the linked frame,
And pierced to the skin, but bit no more:
Yet made him twice to account to more: en the Palmer saw in such distresse, sword so well as he it ought!'

Glad was the knight, and with fresh courage fraught

When as againe he armed felt his hond: Then like a Lyon, which hath long time saught His robbed whelpes, and at the last them fond Emongst the shepeheard swaynes, then wexeth

wood and yond:

So fierce he laid about him, and dealt blowes On either side, that neither mayle could hold, Ne shield defend the thunder of his throwes: Now to Pyrochles many strokes he told; Eft to Cymochles twise so many fold; Then, backe againe turning his busic hond, Them both atonce compeld with courage bold To yield wide way to his hart-thrilling brond; And though they both stood stiffe, yet could not both withstond.

As salvage Bull, whom two fierce mastives bayt, When rancour doth with rage him once engore, Forgets with wary warde them to awayt, But with his dreadfull hornes them drives afore, Or flings aloft, or treades downe in the flore, Beathing out wrath, and bellowing disdaine,

That all the forest quakes to heare him rore: So rag'd Prince Arthur twixt his foemen twaine, [sustaine. That neither could his mightie puissaunce

But ever at Pyrochles when he smitt,

Who Guyons shield cast ever him before, Whereon the Faery Queenes pourtract was writt,) His hand relented and the stroke forbore, And his deare hart the picture gan adore; Which oft the Paynim sav'd from deadly stowre: [more; But him henceforth the same can save no

For now arrived is his fatall howre, [powre. That no'te avoyded be by earthly skill or

For when Cymochles saw the fowle reproch, Which them appeached, prickt with guiltie And inward griefe, he fiercely gan approch, Resolv'd to put away that loathly blame, Or dye with honour and desert of fame; And on the haubergh stroke the Prince so sore,

Yet made him twise to reele, that never moov'd

afore.

Whereas renfierst with wrath and sharp regret. He stroke so hugely with his borrowd blade, That it emplerst the Pagans burganet : And cleaving the bard steele, did deepe invade Into his head, and cruell passage made Quite through his brayne.

He, downe on ground, Shade Breathd out his ghost, which, to th' infernall Fast tlying, there eternall torment found For all the sinnes wherewith his lewd life did

abound.

XLVI Which when his german saw, the stony feare Ran to his hart, and all his sence dismayd, Ne thenceforth life ne corage did appeare: But as a man whom hellish feendes have frayd, Long trembling still he stoode: at last thus sayd, Traytour, what hast thou doen? How ever may

Thy cursed hand so cruelly have swayd Against that knight! Harrow and well away! After so wicked deede why liv'st thou lenger day?

XLVII

With that all desperate, as loathing light, And with revenge desyring soone to dye, Assembling all his force and utmost might, With his owne swerd he fierce at him did flye, And strooke, and foynd, and lasht outrageously, Withouten reason or regard. Well knew The Prince, with pacience and sufferaunce sly So hasty heat soone cooled to subdew: Tho, when this breathlesse woxe, that batteil gan renew. XLVIII

As when a windy tempest bloweth hye, That nothing may withstand his stormy stowre, fflye; The clowdes, as thinges affrayd, before him But all so soone as his outrageous powre

Is layd, they fiercely then begin to showre; And, as in scorne of his spent stormy spight, Now all attonce their malice forth do poure: So did Prince Arthur beare himselfe in fight, And suffred rash Pyrochles waste his ydle might.

At last, when as the Sarazin perceiv'd How that straunge sword refusd to serve his [deceiv'd. ncede. But when he stroke most strong the dint He flong it from him; and, devoyd of dreed, Upon him lightly leaping without heed Twixt his two mighty armes engrasped fast, Thinking to overthrowe and downe him

But him in strength and skill the Princes And through his nimble sleight did and

Nought booted it the Paynim then tist For as a Bittur in the Eagles clave, That may not hope by flight to see

I hat may not hope by light to scape he Still waytes for death with dread and the bling aw; So he, now subject to the victours is. Did not once move, nor upward cast he For vile disdaine and rancout, which

His hart in twaine with sad melancholt As one that loathed life, and yet dept dye.

But full of princely bounty and great at The Conquerour nought cared him to sh But casting wronges and all revenge but More glory thought to give life then dea And sayd; 'Paynim, this is thy dismall Yet if thou wilt renounce thy miscresum And my trew liegeman yield thy self for Life will I graunt thee for thy valiance And all thy wronges will wipe out of sovenaunce.

' Foole !' (sayd the Pagan) ' I thy gift a But use thy fortune as it doth befall; And say, that I not overcome doe dw But in despight of life for death doe call Wroth was the Prince, and sory yet will That he so wilfully refused gra Yet sith his fate so cruelly did fall, His shining Helmet he gan soone unla And left his headlesse body bleeding

By this Sir Guyon from his traunce and Life having maystered her senceless for And looking up, whenas his shield he la But when the Palmer, whom he long Had lost, he by him spyde, right glad be And saide; 'Deare sir, whom wandring fro I long have lackt, I joy thy face to ver-

But read, what wicked hand hath robb Of my good sword and shield? The Pa

me drew.

With so fresh hew uprysing him to see Him answered: 'Fayre sonne, be no whi

! weapons; they shall soone be had.' o discourse the whole debate, t straunge knight for him sustained

two Sarazins confounded late, ases on ground were horribly pros-

LV

hen he heard, and saw the tokens ith great affection was embayd Prince, bowing with reverence deday, and see my foes subdewd,

What may suffice to be for meede repayd Of so great graces as ye have me shewd, But to be ever bound

LVI

To whom the Infant thus; 'Fayre Sir, what need Good turnes be counted as a servile bond

To bind their doors to receive their meed? Are not all knightes by oath bound to withstond Oppressours powre by armes and puissant hond?

Suffise that I have done my dew in place.' satrone of his life, thus sayd; and So goodly purpose they together fond my liege, by whose most gratious of kindnesse and of courteous aggrace The whiles false Archimage and Atin fled apace

CANTO IX.

The house of Temperance, in which Doth sober Alma dwell, Besiegd of many fees, whom straung-er knightes to flight compell.

one more faire and excellent ans body, both for powre and forme, is kept in sober government; hen it more fowle and indecent, d through misrule and passions

a Monster, and incontinent his dignity and native grace: 10 list, both one and other in this

11

Paynim brethren conquer'd were, rince recoving his stoine sword, n his lost shield, they both yfere acd on their way in fayre accord, ie Prince with gentle court did bord: it, mote I of you this court'sy read, hy on your shield, so goodly scord, he picture of that Ladies head? is the semblaunt, though the sub-

HI

ir.' (sayd he) 'if in that picture dead re read, and vertue in vaine shew; e ye weene, if the trew lively-head ost glorious visage ye did vew : beauty of her mind ye knew, or bounty, and imperial powre,

: Thousand times fairer than her mortall hew, ods workes which doe this worlde O! how great wonder would your thoughts devoure, And infinite desire into your spirite poure.

'Shee is the mighty Queene of Faery, Whose faire retraitt I in my shield doe beare; Shee is the flowre of grace and chastity Throughout the world, renowmed far and neare, My liefe, my liege, my Soveraine, my deare, Whose glory shineth as the morning starre, And with her light the earth enlumines cleare:

Far reach her mercies, and her praises farre, As well in state of peace, as puissaunce in warre.

'Thrise happy man,' (said then the Briton knight)

'Whom gracious lott and thy great valiaunce Have made thee soldier of that Princesse bright,

Which with her bounty and glad countenaunce Doth blesse her servaunts, and them high advaunce. How may straunge knight hope ever to aspire,

By faithfull service and meete amenaunce. Unto such blisse? sufficient were that hire For losse of thousand lives, to die at her desire.

177

Sald Geron, * Noble Lord, what most so De grace of earthly Prince so sovernine, I go But he your woodress worth and warlike feat Ye will may hope, and easely attains? But were your will her sold to entertain And numbered be manget knights of Mayden

Great guerdon, well I wete, should you remain And in her favor high bee reckened, As Artherall and Sophy now beene bonored,"

"Certes," (then said the Prince) "I God arow, That sith I armes and knighthood first did

My whole desire hath beene, and yet is now, To serve that Queene with al my powre and [light,

Seven times the Sunne, with his lamp-burning Hath walkte about the world, and I no lesse, Sith of that Goddesse I have sought the sight, Yet no where can her find : such happinesse Heven doth to me envy, and fortune favour

*Fortune, the foe of famous chevisaunce, "Seldom" (said Guyon) 'yields to vertue [channes aide, But in her way throwes mischiefe and mis Whereby her course is stopt and passage staid: But you, faire Sir, be not herewith dismaid, But constant keepe the way in which ye stand; Out of the rockes and caves adjorn Which, were it not that I am els delaid Vile caitive wretches, ragged, rude, With hard adventure which I have in hand, I labour would to guide you through al Faery

land.

' Gramercy Sir,' said he ; 'but mote I weete What straunge adventure doe ye now pursew? Perhaps my succour or advizement meete Mote stead you much your purpose to subdew. Then gan Sir Guyon all the story shew Of false Acrasia, and her wicked wiles: Which to avenge the Palmer him forth drew From Facry court. So talked they, the whiles They wasted had much way, and measurd many miles.

And now faire Phoebus gan decline in haste His weary wagon to the Westerne vale, Whenas they spide a goodly castle, plaste Foreby a river in a pleasannt dale; Which choosing for that evenings hospitale, They thither marcht : but when they came in And from their sweaty Coursers did avale,

They found the gates fast barred be And every loop fast looks, as fearly

Which when they saw, they we

repositi Was to them does, their entramera Till that the Squire gan nigher to a And wind his home under the castle That with the noise it shooks as it. Effsones forth looked from the hig The watch, and lowd unto the knig To weete what they so radely did no Who gently answered, They entr thesire.

'Fly fly, good knights,' (said he

away. If that your lives ye love, as meete Fly fast, and save your selves from

Here may ye not have entraunce, We would and would againe, it But thousand enemies about us ray And with long siege us in the castle Seven yeares this wize they us besi And many good knights slaine the sought to save.

Thus as he spoke, loc! with outras A thousand villeins round about the All threatning death, all in straung armd;

Some with unweldy clubs, some Some rusty knifes, some staves in fi Sterne was their looke; like wil steares

Staring with hollow eies, and stiffe a heares.

Fiersly at first those knights they d And drove them to recoile ; but who They gave fresh charge, their for Unhable their encounter to sustaine For with such paissaunce and impeter Those Champions broke on them, them fly.

Like scattered Sheepe, whenas the A Lyon and a Tigre doth capve. With greedy pace forth rushing

A while they fied, but soone retour With greater fury then before was for

ir cruell Capitaine [rownd, sakall routs t'enclose them tread them to the grownd: this with their bright burnfound, troupes, and orders did conng at their idle shades; odies seem, yet substaunce fades.

XVI se of Gnats at eventide of Allan doe arise, [wide, small trompetts sownden their clustring army tiles, the seeme to dim the skies;

XVII w had that troublous rout

ate they come againe, av'd which was denied erst. of that their perlous paine, stict which they did sustaine, es care which there did dwell, d with a goodly traine adies equipaged well, them right fairely, as befell.

was; a virgin bright, felt Cupides wanton rage; d of many a gentle knight, of noble parentage, her to lincke in marriage: as faire mote ever bee, now of her freshest age; and goodly modestee.

XIX white she was aravd

n and in tresses wrought, on her head did weare, 1 a garland of sweete Rosiere.

Goodly shee entertaind those noble knights. And brought them up into her castle hall; Where gentle court and gracious delight Shee to them made, with mildnesse virginall, Shewing her selfe both wise and liberall. Then, when they rested had a season dew. They her besought of favour speciall Of that faire Castle to affoord them yew: Shee graunted; and, them leading forth, the same did shew.

First she them led up to the Castle wall. That was so high as foe might not it clime, And all so faire and fensible withall; Not built of bricke, ne yet of stone and lime, may rest, or take repast rounds and noyous injuries, rtherne wind with blustring cast.

[cast. mite away, and in the Ocean cast. mite away, and in the Ocean cast. cast Soone it must turne to earth; no earthly thing is sure.

XXII

The frame thereof seemd partly circulare, And part triangulare; O worke divine! Those two the first and last proportions are; The one imperfect, mortall, feminine, Th' other immortall, perfect, masculine; And twixt them both a quadrate was the base, Proportiond equally by seven and nine; Nine was the circle sett in heavens place: All which compacted made a goodly Diapase.

Therein two gates were placed seemly well: The one before, by which all in did pas Did th' other far in workmanship excell; For not of wood, nor of enduring bras, But of more worthy substance fram'd it was: Doubly disparted, it did locke and close, That when it locked none might thorough pas, see. And when it opened, no man might it close. rejoyced her sweete face to Still open to their friendes, and closed to their focs.

XXIV

Of hewen stone the porch was fayrely wrought, roulder to her heele downe Stone more of valew, and more smooth and tine, of loose far behind her strayd. Then Jett or Marble far from Ireland brought:
gold and perle most richly Over the which was cast a wandring vine,
[taught Enchaced with a wanton yyie twine;

to faire Damsels which were And over it a fayre Portcullis hong, Her yellow golden heare. Which to the gate directly did incline With comely compasse and compacture strong, Nether unseemly short, nor yet exceeding long.

XXV

Within the Barbican a Porter sate. Day and night duely keeping watch and ward; Nor wight nor word mote passe out of the gate, But in good order, and with dew regard; Utterers of secrets he from thence debard, Bablers of folly, and blazers of cryme

His larumbell might lowd and wyde be hard When cause requyrd, but never out of time; Early and late it rong, at evening and at prime.

XXVI

And rownd about the porch on every syde Twise sixteene warders satt, all armed bright In glistring steels, and strongly fortifyde: Tall yeomen seemed they and of great might, And were enraunged ready still for fight. By them as Alma passed with her guestes, They did obeysaunce, as beseemed right, And then againe retourned to their restes: The Porter eke to her did lout with humble

XXVII

gestes.

Thence she them brought into a stately Hall, Wherein were many tables fayre dispred, And ready dight with drapets festivall, Against the viaundes should be ministred. At th' upper end there sate, yelad in red Downe to the ground, a comely personage, That in his hand a white rod menaged: He Steward was, hight Diet; rype of age And in demeanure sober, and in counsell sage.

XXVIII

And through the Hall there walked to and A jolly yeoman, Marshall of the same, Whose name was Appetite: he did bestow Both guestes and meate, when ever in they

Did dewty to their Lady, as became; Who, passing by, forth ledd her guestes anone Into the kitchin rowme, ne spard for nicenesse none.

XXIX

It was a vaut ybuilt for great dispence, With many raunges reard along the wall, And one great chimney, whose long tonnell thence

The smoke forth threw. And in the midst of all There placed was a caudron wide and tall Upon a mightie fornace, burning whott, More whott then Aetn', or flaming Mongiball For day and night it brent, ne ceased not, So long as any thing it in the caudron gott.

But to delay the heat, least by misch It might breake out and set the whole There added was by goodly ordinaunce.

An huge great payre of bellows, win

Continually, and cooling breath inspyre

About the Caudron many Cooks accor-With hookes and ladles, as need did re The whyles the viaundes in the vessell b They did about their businesse sweet, sorely toyld.

XXXI

The maister Cooke was cald Concection; A carefull man, and full of comely guyas. The kitchin clerke, that hight Digastics, Did order all th' Achates in seemely wise, And set them forth, as well he could de The rest had severall offices assynd; Some to remove the scum as it did rices Others to beare the same away did mys And others it to use according to his ky

But all the liquour, which was fowle 4

waste, Not good nor serviceable elles for ough They in another great rownd vessell pin Till by a conduit pipe it thence were by And all the rest, that noyous was and a By secret wayes, that none might it er Was close convaid, and to the backgate b That cleped was Port Esquiline, whe

XXXIII

It was avoided quite, and throwns out ;

Which goodly order and great workman Whenas those knightes beheld, with rare And gazing wonder they their mindes of For never had they seene so straunge a l'hence backe againe faire Alma led ti And knew them how to order without blame, And soone into a goodly Parlour brough As him the Steward badd. They both attone That was with royall arras richly digits, In which was nothing pourtrahed nor w Not wrought nor pourtrahed, but a thought

XXXIV

And in the midst thereof upon the fig A lovely beyy of faire Ladies sate, Courted of many a jolly Paramours, The which them did in modest wise as And each one sought his Lady to aggre. And eke emongst them litle Cupid play. His wanton sportes, being retourned late. From his fierce warres, and having for layd

His cruel bow, wherewith be thousand dismayd.

* * * *

delights they found them selves to --with strawes; some yelly satt at ease; since was to them griefe and annoy: The whyles the Faery knight did entertayne ad, that faund, the third for shame blash.

semed envious or coy, n her teeth did gnaw a rush; ere straungers presence every one hush.

XXXVI

the gracious Alma came in place, atonce out of their seates arose. r homage made with humble grace: en the knights beheld, they gan diswarm, and each a damzell chose r by channee did on a Lady light, that sad and solemne eke in sight,

as pensive thought constraind her

the pright. XXXVII

g purple pall, whose skirt with gold ei ali about, she was arayd; न्द्र के बहुत a Poplar braunch did hold : the Prince in courteous maner sayd; dar and, why beene ye thus dismayd. fare beautie doe with sadnes spill? that you hath thus ill apayd? a love; or doen you lack your will? The the cause, it sure bescemes you

sir, said she, halfe in disdaineful wise. · that this mood in me ye blame. our wife doe not the same advise? see ness anothers fault to name, - .. le 1 am. and sad in mind. 25 it desire of glory and of fame; I weene, are ye therein behynd, three years sought one, yet no

11117

ter was inly moved at her speach. ting to w what she had rashly told; taire somblaunt sought to hyde the ·= 11. whose of colour did perforce unfold. ning during whott, now stony cold: and soft aside, he did inquere

What wight she was that Poplar braunch did hold? see: [joy; It answered was, her name was Prays-desire, g in sweet consort; some laught for That by well doing sought to honour to aspyre.

Another Damsell of that gentle crew That was right fayre and modest of demayne, But that too oft she chaung'd her native hew Straunge was her tyre, and all her garment

blew. Close round about her tuckt with many a plight: Upon her fist the bird, which shonneth vew, And keepes in coverts close from living wight, Did sitt, as yet a hamd how rude Pan did her dight.

XLI

So long as Guyon with her commoned, Unto the grownd she cast her modest eye, And ever and anone with rosy red right faire and fresh as morning The bashfull blood her snowy cheekes did dye, That her became, as polisht yvory Which cunning Craftesman hand hath overlayd With favre vermilion or pure Castory. Great wonder had the knight to see the mayd So straungely passioned, and to her gently said:

XLII

*Fayre Damzell, seemeth by your troubled cheare. That either me too bold ye weene, this wise You to molest, or other ill to feare That in the secret of your hart close lyes, From whence it doth, as cloud from sea, aryse. If it be I. of pardon I you pray; But if ought else that I more not devyse, I will, if please you it discure, assay To ease you of that ill, so wisely as I may.

XLIII

She answerd nought, but more abasht for shame gray tres less blotted with the same: Held downe her head, the whiles her lovely face The flashing blood with blushing did inflame, And the strong passion mard her modest grace, That Guyon mervayld at her uncouth cace; Till Alma him bespake: Why wonder yee, Faire Sir. at that which ye so much embrace? She is the fountaine of your modestee: You shamefast are, but Shamefastnes it elfe is slice.

VLIV

Thereat the Elfe did blush in privitee, And turnd his face away, but she the same Dissembled faire, and faynd to oversee. Thus they awhile with court and goodly game 130

Themselves did solace each one with his Dame, Till that great Lady thence away them sought To vew her Castles other wondrous frame: Up to a stately Turret she them brought, Ascending by ten steps of Alabaster wrought.

XLV

That Turrets frame most admirable was, Like highest heaven compassed around, And lifted high above this earthly masse, Which it survewd as hils doen lower ground; But not on ground mote like to this be found: Not that, which antique Cadmus whylome built In Thebes, which Alexander did confound;

Nor that proud towre of Troy, though richly guilt, [Greekes was spilt, From which young Hectors blood by cruell

XLVI

The roofe hereof was arched over head, And deckt with flowers and herbars daintily: Two goodly Beacons, set in watches stead, Therein gave light, and flamd continually; For they of living fire most subtilly Were made, and set in silver sockets bright, Cover'd with lids deviz'd of substance sly, That readily they shut and open might.

O! who can tell the prayees of that makers might?

XLVII

Ne can I tell, ne can I stay to tell, [powre, This parts great workemanship and wondrous [powre, That all this other worldes worke doth excell, And likest is unto that heavenly towre That God hath built for his owne blessed bowre. Therein were divers rownes, and divers stages; But three the chiefest and of greatest powre, In which there dwelt three honorable sages, The wisest men, I weene, that lived in their

XLVIII

Not he, whom Greece, the Nourse of all good arts,

By Phœbus doome the wisest thought alive, Might be compar'd to these by many parts:
Nor that sage Pylian syre, which did survive
Three ages, such as mortall men contrive,
By whose advise old Priams cittle fell,
With these in praise of pollicies mote strive. These three in these three rowmes did sondry dwell

And counselled faire Alma how to governe well.

The next could of thinges present best advize; That through continuall practise and us

The third things past could keep in mer So that no time nor reason could arise. But that the same could one of themes For-thy the first did in the forepart all That nought mote hinder his quicke pro He had a sharpe foresight and working That never idle was, ne once would rest a

His chamber was dispainted all within With sondry colours, in the which wen Infinite shapes of thinges dispersed this. Some such as in the world were never Ne can devized be of mortall wit; Some daily seene and knowen by th Such as in idle fantasies do flit; Infernall Hags, Centaurs, feendes, Hippo Apes, Lyons, Aegles, Owles, fooles, children, Dames.

And all the chamber filled was with firm Which buzzed all about, and made such a That they encombred all mens cares and Like many swarmes of Bees assembled of After their hives with honny do abound All those were idle thoughtes and fantas Devices, dreames, opinions unsound, Shewes, visions, sooth-sayes, and prophe And all that fained is, as leasings, tales, and

Emongst them all sate he which wonnell That hight Phantastes by his nature in A man of yeares yet fresh, as mote apper Of swarth complexion, and of crabbed be That him full of melancholy did shew Bent hollow beetle browes, sharpe staring That mad or foolish seemd : one by his Mote deeme him borne with ill-disposed When oblique Saturne sate in th' hou agonyes.

Whom Alma having shewed to her gues Thence brought them to the second ro whose wals Were painted faire with memorable gester

Of famous Wisards, and with picturals Of Magistrates, of courts, of tribunals Of commen-wealthes, of states, of pollic Of lawes, of judgementes, and of decreta All artes, all science, all Philosophy. [w And all that in the world was ay the

LIV

Of those that rowme was full; and them a The first of them could things to come foresee; Who did them meditate all his life long.

s growne right wise and wondrous re had those straunger knightes to reson and grave personage, spice both desyrd to bee; sence them led to th' hindmost ne of three.

sher seemed ruinous and old, se was removed far behind, e wals, that did the same uphold, and strong, though somwhat they nd : sat an old old man, halfe blind, repit in his feeble corse, igour rested in his mind senst them with a better scorse: r wel is chang'd for minds redoub-Mac.

of infinite remembraunce was, foregone through many ages held, ecorded still as they did pas, them to perish through long eld. gs els the which this world doth

can up in his immortall scrine, · for ever incorrupted dweld: he well remembred of king Nine. racus, and Inachus divine.

of Nestor nothing were to his, husalem, though longest livid; subred both their infancis; r all was hangel about with rolls ords from auncient times derivd.

Some made in books, some in long parchment

scrolls That were all worm-eaten and full of canker holes.

LVIII

Amidst them all he in a chaire was sett, Tossing and turning them withouten end; But for he was unhable them to fett, A litle boy did on him still attend To reach, when ever he for ought did send; And oft when thinges were lost, or laid amis, That boy them sought and unto him did lend: Therefore he Anamnestes cleped is; And that old man Eumnestes, by their propertis.

LIX

The knightes there entring did him reverence dew, And wondred at his endlesse exercise: Then as they gan his Library to vew, And antique Regesters for to avise, There chaunced to the Princes hand to rize An auncient booke, hight Briton moniments, That of this lands first conquest did devize, And old division into Regiments, Till it reduced was to one mans governements.

Sir Guvon chaunst eke on another booke, That hight Antiquitee of Facry loud: In which whenas he greedily did looke, Th' ofspring of Elves and Faervesthere he fond, As it delivered was from hond to hond: Whereat they, burning both with fervent fire then, if that he were deprived. Their countreys auncestry to understond, rength now that he them survived. Craved leave of Alma and that aged sire To read those bookes; who gladly graunted their desire.

CANTO X.

A chronicle of Briton kings, From Brute to Uthers rayne; And rolls of Elfin Emperours. Till time of Gloriane.

this baughty enterprise? [ground ll lend me wings, with which from er may loftily arise, relife unto the highest skyes? spirit than hitherto was wount me, whiles the famous auncestry es Which though from earth it be derived right

Of my most dreaded Soveraigne I recount, shall give unto me words and sound By which all earthly Princes she doth far surmount.

Ne under Sunne that shines so wide and faire, Whence all that lives does borrow life and light, Lives ought that to her linage may compaire

Yet doth it selfe stretch forth to bevens hight, And flying fast as Roebucke through the And all the world with wonder overspred; A labor huge, exceeding far my might. How shall frails pen, with feare disparaged Conceive such soveraine glory and great bountyhed?

Argument worthy of Maconian quill; Or rather worthy of great Phoebus rote, Wherean the ruines of great Ossa hill, And triumplies of Phlegrean Jove, he wrote, That all the Gods admird his lofty note. But if some relish of that hevenly lav His learned daughters would to me report To decke my song withall, I would assay Thy name, O soveraine Queene! to blazou far away.

Thy name, O soveraine Queene! thy realme, and race,

From this renowmed Prince derived arre, Who mightily upheld that royall mace [farre Which now thou bear'st, to thee descended From mighty kings and conquerours in warre, Thy fathers and great Grandfathers of old, Whose noble deeds above the Northern starre Immortall fame for over hath enrold : [told, As in that old mans booke they were in order Until that Brutus, anciently derived

The land which warlike Britons now possesse, And therein have their mighty empire raysd, In antique times was salvage wiblernesse, Unpeopled, unmannurd, unprovd, unprayed; Ne was it Island then, ne was it payed Amid the ocean waves, ne was it sought Of merchants farre for profits therein prayed; But was all desolate, and of some thought. By sea to have bene from the Celticke maynland brought.

Ne did it then deserve a name to have, Till that the venturous Mariner that way Learning his ship from those white rocks to

Which all along the Southerne sea-coast lay Threatning unbeedy wrecke and rash decay, For safety that same his sea-marke made, And namd it ALBION : But later day, Finding in it fit ports for fishers trade, Gan more the same frequent, and further to

invade.

But far in land a salvage nation dwelt. Of hideous Giaunts, and halfe beastly men. That never tasted grace, nor goodnes felt;

All naked without shame or care of cold By hunting and by spoiling liveden; Of stature huge, and eke of corage bold That sonnes of men amand their sterm behold.

But whence they sprong, or how they w begott, Uneath is to assure; uneath to wen-That monstrous error, which doth some That Dioclesians fifty daughters shere Into this land by chaunce have driven by Where, companing with feends and I

Sprights Through vaine illusion of their lust unch They brought forth Geannts, and such & ful wights

As far exceeded men in their immeasure of

They held this land, and with their filther Polluted this same gentle soyle long in That their owne mother loathd their be And gan abhorre her broods unkindly co

All were they borne of her owne native s From roiall stocke of old Assaraes line Driven by fatall error here arriv'd, And them of their unjust possession de

But ere he had established his throne, And spred his empire to the utmost sho He fought great batteils with his salvage for In which he them defeated evermore, And many Giaunts left on groning flore That well can witnes yet unto this day. The westerne Hogh, besprincled with the Of mighty Goemot, whome in stout fray Corineus conquered, and cruelly did slay-

And eke that ample Pitt, yet far resown For the large leape which Debon did con Coulin to make, being eight lugs of gnan Into the which retourning backe he fell! But those three monstrous stones don't excell,

Which that buge sonne of hideous Albion Whose father Hercules in France and op Great Godmer threw, in fierce contention At bold Canutus; but of him was slained

In meed of these great conquests by But wild like beastes lurking in loathsome den. Corincus had that Province utmost west

signed for his worthy lott. s name and memorable gest Cornwaile, yet so called test; te had his portion from the rest, h he cald Canutium, for his hyre;

mm. which Kent we comenly inquire

ute this Realme unto his rule sub-3 d. sed long in great felicity, us freends, and of his foes eschewd: ine sonnes, his famous progeny, favre inogene of Italy: from he parted his imperial state, ine left chiefe Lord of Britany. per ager tead him surrender late P.

XIV

was left the soveraine Lord of all: mact had all the Northerne part, himselfe Albania he did call; ther did possesse the Westerne quart. everne now from Logris doth depart : : bis portion peaceably enjoyd, * their quiet government annoyd;

-1,- +.

akr.

cration straunge, with visage swart, : to ree that all men did affray, through the world then swarmd in ery part. rriowd all countries far away.

his paynes to others, profit still em-

ves great flood, with their importune themselves through all the North dis-43

in: Lerine for his Realmes defence,

r encountred, a confused rout, b. River that whylome was hight wat Abus, where with courage stout . detented in victorious fight, ste so tiercely after fearefull flight.

· mighty streame him to betake,

XVII

And insolent wox through unwonted ease, That shortly he forgot the jeopardy, Which in his land he lately did appeare, And fell to vaine voluptuous disease: He lov'd faire Ladie Estrild, leudly lov'd. Whose wanton pleasures him too much did

The king retourned proud of victory,

please That quite his hart from Guendolene remov'd, From Guendolene his wife, though alwaies faithful prov'd.

The noble daughter of Corineus

Would not endure to bee so vile disdaind. But, gathering force and corage valorous, Encountred him in batteill well ordaind, In which him vanquisht she to fly constraind: and long good fortune, unto finall But she so fast pursewd, that him she tooke And threw in bands, where he till death re-

maind; Als his faire Leman flying through a brooke She overhent, nought moved with her piteous looke. XIX

But both her selfe, and eke her daughter deare, Begotten by her kingly Paramoure. here outward breach, nor grudge in The faire Sabrina, almost dead with feare, She there attached, far from all succoure; The one she slew upon the present floure;

But the sad virgin, innocent of all, Adowne the rolling river she did poure, Which of her name now Severne men do call: Such was the end that to disloyall love did fall,

 $\mathbf{x}\mathbf{x}$ Then for her sonne, which she to Locrin bore, Madan was young, unmeet the rule to sway, In her owne hand the crowne she kept in store, Till ryper years he raught and stronger stay; ; invaded with like violence. [sway. During which time her powre she did display Through all this Realme, the glory of her sex, And first taught men a woman to obay: But, when her sonne to mans estate did wex, Lagarest them make and strong muni- She it surrendred, ne her selfe would lenger vex.

XXI

Tho Madan raignd, unworthic of his race, For with all shame that sacred throne he fild. Next Memprise, as unworthy of that place; In which being consorted with Manild, For thirst of single kingdom him he kild. or their chiefetain, for his safeties sake, But Ebranck salved both their infamnes ineferam Humber named was aright.) With noble deedes, and warreyd on Brunchild In Henault, where yet of his victories m an end of batteill and of life did Brave moniments remaine, which yet that land envies.

11..

An eating man in the fire day or he was find saming father of face to menty

For a many works to the year last so many control to an monthly (F vill i ver ivelie « chel villa ili spriy The manager of these and the amonomy of the germany are shown as the manager as the manager and the manager are manager. What has replied from France was forest to

X T :::

or --- or

When he will be a no surveying in his ear. The entry Brief instead has in name. And earlies in semilative of his pulsations great Right well retard and his away that blame.

With repungance of everlasting fame : He with his vict or sword first special. The lowels of wide Francis, a follower Dame.

And taught her first how to be a niquered; Since which, with windresp. Its she hath been ran-alone la

XXIV

Let Cal ir tell, and let tell Haria. And let the march of Lethambrages tell. And all the moore twixt Elversham and Isell. And thether to the king of Cambria, [In Most of Henalois which therein fell. And twixt them should be a fine of Cambria and Iself. And twixt them should be compared to the compa How oft that day did sad Brunchildis see

The greene shield dyde in dolorous vermell? That not Souith guiridh it mote seeme to bee, But rather y south gogh, signe of sad crueltee.

His some, king Leill, by fathers labour long. Enjoyd an heritage of lasting peace, And built Cairleill, and built Cairleon strong. Next Huddibras his realme did not encrease, But taught the land from wearie wars to cease: Whose footsteps Bladud following, in artes Exceld at Athens all the learned preace,

parts. And with sweet science mollifide their stub- Who him at first well used every way; borne harts.

XXVI

Ensample of his wondrous faculty, Behold the boyling bathes at Cairbadon. Which seeth with secret fire eternally, And in their entrailles, full of quick Brimston, Nourish the flames which they are warmd

ment That to their people wealth they forth do well, And health to every forrevne nation:

Yet he at last, confending to excell

And after all an army strong she leav'd.

The reach of men, through flight into fond much if tell.

And after all an army strong she leav'd.

Next has king Leyr in happing nysi.

er tal so w But three faire designations, which we w:Cracad

all that seemed for for kingly seed: In all that eccenced but me amply security.

M. care which has realize he equally due

I have divisied. They when feeble age

Many in sect. I no, when recote up Nant : his utmost date he saw process, He said his daughters, and with speeches Injury L which of them most did lets

paremage :

XXXIII

The eliest. Generall, gam to protest [Mar. she much more than her owne like And Regan greater love to him profest The all the world, when ever it were Bit Cordeill said she lov'd him as be

Whose simple answere, wanting colo To paint it forth, him to displeas annce I I nat in his crown he counted her no let

But twixt the other twain his kingdom vi did shayre.

But without dowre the wise Cordeha Was sent to Aggannip of Celtica Their aged Syre, thus eased of his crown. A private life ledd in Albania

With Gonorill, long had in great renown That nought him griev'd to beene from

deposed downe.

XXX

But true it is that, when the oyle is 📭 The light goes out, and weeke is throwner So, when he had resignd his regiment, His daughter gan despise his drouping From whence he brought them to these salvage And wearie wax of his continual stay.

Tho to his daughter Regan he repayed, But when of his departure she despayed Her bountie she abated, and his cheare cope

XXXI

The wretched man gan then avise too That love is not where most it is profest; Too truely tryde in his extremest state. At last, resolv'd likewise to prove the res. He to Cordelia him selfe addrest, Who with entyre affection him receav'd. As for her Syre and king her seemed best:

XXXII

rewne she him restord againe; e dyde, made ripe for death by eld, wild it should to her remaine, ably the same long time did weld, as harts in dew obedience held; isters children, woxen stron roud ambition against her rebeld, common kept in prison long, [hong. of that wretched life her selfe she

XXXIII

the bloody brethren both to raine; Cundah gan shortly to envy r Morgan, prickt with proud disdaine pere in part of soverainty; ng coles of cruell enmity, e, and him in batteill overthrew. he to those woody hilles did fly, that of him Glamorgan, there him te raigne alone, when he none equal!

Rivall' his dead rowne did supply; ad time blood did from heaven rayne. : Gurgustus, then faire Cæcily, t reace their kingdomes did contayne. m Lago, and Kinmarke did rayne, gud, till far in years he grew: imbitious sonnes unto them twavne he rule, and from their father drew; .

XXXV

he greedy thirst of royall crowne. res no kinred, nor regardes no right, ex up to put his brother downe; him assembling forreigne might, re on him, and fell him selfe in fight: th t'avenge, his mother mercilesse, ilesee of women, Wyden hight, ile-ee.

XXXVI

ed Brutus sacred progeny, **f**borne A seven hundred yeares this scepter
I renowme and great felicity: [torne In rule succeede, and eke in fathers praise;
braunch from th' antique stocke was He Easterland subdewd, and Denmarke wonne, ach of Brutus boasted to be borne, e end was left no moniment , nor of Britons glorie auncient.

XXXVII

Then up arose a man of matchlesse might, And wondrous wit to menage high affayres, Who, stird with pitty of the stressed plight Of this sad realme, cut into sondry shayres By such as claymd themselves Brutes rightfull hayres Gathered the Princes of the people loose To taken counsell of their common cares;

Who, with his wisedom won, him streight did choose Tloose. Their king, and swore him fealty to win or

XXXVIII

Then made he head against his enimies, And Ymner slew of Logris miscreate; Then Ruddoc and proud Stater, both allyes, This of Albany newly nominate, And that of Cambry king confirmed late, He overthrew through his owne valiannce; Whose countries he redus'd to quiet state, And shortly brought to civile governaunce, Now one, which earst were many made through variaunce.

XXXIX

Then made he sacred lawes, which some men Were unto him reveald in vision; [say [say By which he freed the Traveilers high-way, The Churches part, and Ploughmans portion, Restraining stealth and strong extortion, The gratious Numa of great Britany; For till his dayes, the chiefe dominion he rule, and from their father drew; By strength was wielded without pollicy: ex and sterne Porrex him in prison Therefore he first wore crowne of gold for dignity.

Donwallo dyde, (for what may live for ay?) And left two sonnes, of pearelesse prowesse both. That sacked Rome too dearely did assay,

The recompence of their perjured oth; And ransackt Greece wel tryde, when they were wroth

Besides subjected France and Germany, some fast eleeping did oppresse, Besides subjected France and Germany, most cruell hand him murdred Which yet their praises speake, all be they [loth, And inly tremble at the memory Of Brennus and Belinus, kinges of Britany.

histord, and the roiall throne forlorne. And of them both did foy and tribute raise, th this Realme was into factions rent, The which was dew in his dead fathers daies. He also gave to fugitives of Spayne, Whom he at sea found wandring from their waies.

A seate in Ireland safely to remayne,
Which they should hold of him, as subject to Androgeus and Tenantius, pictures of his Britayne.

XLIL

After him raigned Guitheline his havre, The justest man and trewest in his daies, Who had to wife Dame Mertia the fayre A woman worthy of immortall praise, [layes, Which for this Realme found many goodly And wholesome Statutes to her husband brought.

Her many deemd to have beene of the Fayes, As was Aegerie that Numa tought: Those yet of her be Mertian lawes both nam'd

and thought.

Her sonne Sisillus after her did rayne; And then Kimarus; and then Danius: Next whom Morindus did the crowne sustayne; Who, had he not with wrath outrageous And cruell rancour dim'd his valorous And mightie deedes, should matched have the best:

As well in that same field victorious Against the forreine Morands he exprest; Yet lives his memorie, though carcas sleepe in rest.

Five sonnes he left, begotten of one wife, All which successively by turnes did rayne: First Gorboman, a man of vertuous life, Next Archigald, who for his proud disdayne Deposed was from princedome soverayne, And pitteous Elidure put in his sted; Who shortly it to him restord agayne, Till by his death he it recovered: But Peridure and Vigent him disthronized.

XLV

In wretched prison long he did remaine, Till they outraigned had their utmost date, And then therein reseized was againe, And ruled long with honorable state, Till he surrendered Realme and life to fate. Then all the sonnes of these five brethren raynd By dew successe, and all their Nephewes late; Even thrise eleven descents the crowne retaynd, Till aged Hely by dew heritage it gaynd.

He had two sonnes, whose eldest, called Lud, Left of his life most famous memory, And endlesse moniments of his great good: The ruin'd wals he did reædifye And endlesse moniments of his great good:
The ruin'd wals he did readifye
Of Troynovant, gainst force of enimy,
And built that gate which of his name is hight,
Both in his armes and crowne, and by By which he lyes entombed solemnly.

Whilst they were young, Camihalant, 5 Was by the people chosen in their sted. If Who on him tooke the roial! Diadens. And goodly well long time it governed, Till the prowde Romanes him disquised And warlike Casar, tempted with the and Of this sweet Island never conquered, And envying the Britons blazed fame, (O hideous hunger of dominion!) luthere

XLVIII

Yet twise they were repulsed backe again And twise renforst backe to their ships to The whiles with blood they all the slow staine,

And the gray Ocean into purple dy: Ne had they footing found at last, perlin Had not Androgeus, false to native soyle, And envious of Uncles soveraintie. Betrayd his countrey unto forreine sports. Nought els but treason from the first this did foyle.

So by him Casar got the victory, Through great bloodshed and many a sada In which himselfe was charged heavily Of hardy Nennius, whom he yet did sar. But lost his sword, yet to be seene this at Thenceforth this land was tributarie male T'ambitions Rome, and did their rule obs Till Arthur all that reckoning defrayd: Yet oft the Briton kings against them str swayd.

Next him Tenantius raignd; then Kimbs What time th' eternall Lord in fleshly di Enwombed was, from wretched Adam in To purge away the guilt of sinfull crime. O joyous memorie of happy time, (O too high ditty for my simple rime!) Soone after this the Romanes him warray For that their tribute he refusd to let be p

Good Claudius, that next was Emperour, An army brought, and with him batteile for In which the king was by a Treachetour draught

king more highly magnifide, of Romanes, then was Arvirage; he Emperour to him allide ir Genuise in marriage: he renounst the vassallage mine, who hither hastly sent that with great spoile and rage ill, till Genuissa gent
im to cease, and her lord to relent.

nd him succeeded Marius is dayes in great tranquillity.

and after him good Lucius, eceived Christianity, pledge of Christes Evangely.

s. that long before that day a Juseph of Arimathy, the with him the holy, would [say, it with him the holy grayle, they t the truth; but since it greatly. WAY.

king shortly without issew dide, at trouble in the kingdome grew, r selfe in sondry parts divide, r powre her owne selfe overthrew, nanes daily did the weake subdew : g, stout Bunduca up arose. armes the Britons to her drew; she marched streight against her Close.

awares besides the Severne did en-

with them a cruell batteill tryde, good successe as shee deserv'd: at the Captaines on her syde, y Paulinus, from her swerv'd were through former flight pre-

gaine, her Host she did renew, -h corage on the victor servd il defeated, save a few, [slew.

dy, or be captiv'd, her selfe she So settled he his kingdome, and confirmd

noniment of womens prayse!

ither to Semiramis. que history so high doth rayse, phil', or to Thomiris, re hundred thousand numbred is;

oft against her enemis;

e Romanes to the weaker syde, And yet, though overcome in haplesse fight, peace agreed. So all was paci-; Shee triumphed on death, in enemies despight.

Her reliques Fulgent having gathered, Fought with Severus, and him overthrew Yet in the chace was slame of them that fled, So made them victors whome he did subdew. Then gan Carausius tirannize anew,
And gainst the Romanes bent their proper powre; But him Allectus treacherously slew, And tooke on him the robe of Emperoure:

Nath lesse the same enjoyed but short happy

howre:

For Asclepiodate him overcame. And left inglorious on the vanquisht playne, Without or robe or rag to hide his shame: Then afterwards he in his stead did raigne, But shortly was by Coyll in batteill slaine: Who after long debate, since Lucies tyme, Was of the Britons first crownd Soveraine. Then gan this Realme renew her passed prime: He of his name Coylchester built of stone and

LIX

Which when the Romanes heard, they hither sent 'onstantius, a man of mickle might. With whome king Coyll made an agreement, And to him gave for wife his daughter bright. Favre Helena, the fairest living wight; Who in all godly thewes and goodly praise Did far excell, but was most famous hight For skil in Musicke of all in her daies, As well in curious instruments as cunning laies.

1.X

Of whom he did great Constantine begett, Who afterward was Emperour of Rome To which whiles absent he his mind did sett, Octavius here lept into his roome, And it usurped by unrighteous doome: But he his title justifide by might, Slaying Traherne, and having overcome The Romane legion in dreadfull fight.

> his right: LXI

But wanting yesew male, his daughter deare He gave in wellocke to Maximian, And him with her made of his kingdome heyre, Who soone by meanes thereof the Empire wan, Till murdred by the freends of Gratian. [land, good fortune favoured her might. Then gan the Hunnes and Picts invade this During the raigne of Maximinian;

Who dying left none heire them to withstand, But that they overran all parts with easy hand.

LXII

The weary Britons, whose war-hable youth Was by Maximian lately ledd away. With wretched miseryes and woefull ruth, Were to those Pagans made an open pray, And daily spectacle of sad decay:

Whome Romane warres, which hundred yeares

And more had wasted, could no whit dismay; Til, by consent of Commons and of Peares, They crownd the second Constantine with Joyous teares.

LXIII

Who having oft in batteill vanquished Those spoylefull Picts, and swarming Easter-lings,

Long time in peace his realme established, Yet oft annoyd with sondry bordragings, Of neighbour Scots, and forrein Scatterlings With which the world did in those dayes abound:

Which to outbarre, with painefull pyonings From sea to sea he heapt a mighty mound, Which from Alchid to Panwelt did that border bownd.

LXIV

Three sones he dying left, all under age; By meanes whereof their uncle Vortigere Usurpt the crowne during their pupillage; Which th' Infants tutors gathering to feare, Them closely into Armorick did beare: For dread of whom, and for those Picts aunoyes

He sent to Germany straunge aid to reare; From whence eftsoones arrived here three hoyes

Of Saxons, whom he for his safety imployes.

LXV

Two brethren were their Capitayns, which That gave unto as all what ever good hight

Hengist and Horsus, well approv'd in warre, And both of them men of renowmed might; Who making vantage of their civile jarre, And of those forreyners which came from

Grew great, and got large portions of land, That in the Realme ere long they stronger A man, of many parts from beasts d

Then they which sought at first their helping His worke, for which he was by Jove And Vortiger have forst the kingdome to Of life him self, and hart-strings of aband.

LXVI

But by the helpe of Vortimere his so He is againe unto his rule restord; And Hengist, seeming sad for that wa Received is to grace and new accord. Through his faire daughters face and Soone after which three hundred Lord Of British blood, all sitting at his bo Whose dolefull moniments who list to Th' eternall marks of treason may at S vew.

LXVII

By this the sonnes of Constantine, wi Ambrose and Uther, did ripe yeares And, here arriving, strongly challeng The crowne which Vortiger did long Who, flying from his guilt, by t slayne;

And Hengist eke soon brought to Thenceforth Aurelius peaceably did Till that through poyson stopped was heath.

LXVIII

After him Uther, which Pendragon Succeeding-There abruptly it did e Without full point, or other Cesure As if the rest some wicked hand did Or th' Author selfe could not at least To finish it : that so untimely breach The Prince him selfe halfe seemed to Yet secret pleasure did offence empe And wonder of antiquity long stopt h

At last, quite ravisht with delight The royall Ofspring of his native lan Cryde out ; 'Deare countrey! O! how deare

Ought thy remembraunce and perpet Be to thy foster Childe, that from th Did commun breath and nouriture r How brutish is it not to understand How much to her we owe, that all us

But Guyon all this while his booke Ne yet has ended; for it was a great And ample volume, that doth far ex My leasure so long leaves here to re It told how first Prometheus did cre hand, And then stole fire from heven to an

LXXI

made he called Elfe, to weet author of all Elfin kynd; og through the world with wearie

rdine of Adonis fynd sture, whom he deemd in mynd hly wight, but either Spright, anthour of all woman kynd; 'ay he her according hight, Facryes spring, and fetch their

e right.

LXXII

eldest, which that scepter swayd, im all India obayd, now America men call: is noble Elfinan, who laid ndation first of all: enclosed it with a golden wall.

LXXIII

:as Elfinell, who overcame inbbelines in bloody field; ras of most renowmed fame, hristall did Panthea build : the two brethren gyauntes kild, which had two heades, th' other

, who was in magick skild; art upon the glassy See to bee.

wonnes, the which in order raynd, Ofspring, in their dew descents; And favrely feasted as so noble knightes she

Even seven hundred Princes, which maintaynd With mightie deedes their sondry governments;

That were too long their infinite contents Here to record, ne much materiall: Yet should they be most famous moniments, And brave ensample, both of martiall And civil rule, to kinges and states imperiall.

After all these Elficleos did rayne The wise Elficleos, in great Majestie, Who mightily that scepter did sustayne, And with rich spoyles and famous victorie aighty people shortly grew,
t kinges which all the world The eldest brother, did untimely dy;
The eldest brother, did untimely dy;
Whose emptie place the mightic Oberon
Whose emptie place the mightic Oberon Doubly supplide, in spousall and dominion.

Great was his power and glorie over all Which, him before, that sacred seate did fill, That yet remaines his wide memoriall. He dying left the fairest Tanaquill, Him to succeede therein, by his last will: Fairer and nobler liveth none this howre. Ne like in grace, ne like in learned skill; Therefore they Glorian call that glorious flowre: Long mayst thou, Glorian, live in glory and great powre!

LXXVII

Beguyld thus with delight of novelties, And naturall desire of countryes state, So long they redd in those antiquities, That how the time was fled they quite forgate; ras, whose sound hevens thunder Till gentle Alma, seeing it so late, to bee. Perforce their studies broke, and them besought To thinke how supper did them long awaite: So halfe unwilling from their bookes them brought, fought.

CANTO XI.

The enimies of Temperaunce Besiege her dwelling place : Prince Arthure them repelles, and fowle Maleger doth deface.

. so cruel, or what siege so sore, h strong affections doe apply orte of reason evermore, powle into captivity?

Their force is flercer through infirmity Of the fraile flesh, relenting to their rage, And exercise most bitter tyranny Upon the partes brought into their bondage 1 No wretchednesse is like to sinfull vellenage.

But in a body which doth freely yeeld His partes to reasons rule obedient,

And letteth her that ought the scepter weeld. All happy peace and goodly government. Is setled there in sure establishment.

There Alma, like a virgin Queene most bright, Doth florish in all beautic excellent ; And to her guestes doth bounteous banket dight,

Attempred goodly well for health and for delight.

Early, before the Morne with cremosin ray The windowes of bright heaven opened had, Through which into the world the dawning day

Might looke, that maketh every creature glad, Uprose Sir Guyon, in bright armour clad

And to his purposed journey him prepar'd: With him the Palmer eke in habit sad Him selfe addrest to that adventure hard: So to the rivers syde they both together far'd:

Where them awaited ready at the ford

The Ferriman, as Alma had behight, With his well rigged bote: They goe abord, And he eftsoones gan launch his barke forth-

right. Ere long they rowed were quite out of sight,

And fast the land behynd them fled away, But let them pas, whiles wind and wether right Doeserve their turnes: here I a while must stay,

To see a cruell fight doen by the prince this day.

For all so soone as Guyon thence was gon Upon his voyage with his trustic guyde, That wicked band of villeins fresh begon That eastle to assaile on every side,

And lay strong siege about it far and wyde. So huge and infinite their numbers were, That all the land they under them did hyde; So fowle and ugly, that exceeding feare

neare.

Them in twelve troupes their Captein did dispart,

And round about in fittest steades did place,

Where each might best offend his proper part, And his contrary object most deface,

As every one seem'd meetest in that cace, Seven of the same against the Castle gate

Which with incessaunt force and endler They battred day and night, and entr

did awate. VII The other five five sondry wayes he

Against the five great Bulwarkes of that And unto each a Bulwarke did arrett. I' assayle with open force or hidden guy They all that charge did fervently apply

With greedie malice and importune toyl And planted there their huge artillery, With which they dayly made most dr battery.

VIII The first troupe was a monstrous rable Of fowle misshapen wightes, of which

Were Headed like Owles, with beckes uncomely Others like Dogs; others like Gryphons of And some had wings, and some had class

teare: And every one of them had Lynces eyes; And every one did bow and arrowes be

All those were lawlesse lustes, current ext And covetous aspects, all cruell enunyes.

Those same against the bulwarke of the Did lay strong siege and battailous as Ne once did yield it respitt day nor ni But soone as Titan gan his head exault, And soone againe as he his light withhan Their wicked engins they against it best: That is, each thing by which the eyes

fault: But two then all more huge and violent, Beautie and Money, they that Bulwarke set

The second Bulwarke was the Hearings Gainst which the second troupe assigns makes:

Deformed creatures, in straunge difference Some having heads like Harts, some like [brs] Snakes Their visages imprest when they approched Some like wilde Bores late rouzd out of Slaunderous reproches, and fowle infamics, Leasinges, backbytinges, and vain-glori

crakes. Bad counsels, prayses, and false flatteries: All those against that fort did bend th batteries

Likewise that same third Fort, that is i

In strong cutrenchments he did closely place, Of that third troupe was cruelly assayd;

Smell,

s shapes were like to feendes of [dismayd,

Puttockes, all in plumes arayd; coording their conditions: agly formes weren pourtrayd that, and fond abusions, sence besiege with light that

murth band which cruell battry burth Bulwarke, that is the Taste.

rest. a grysic rablement; [faste d like greedy Oystriges; some Tondes, some fashioned in the for me deformed is luxury, [waste tiet, and unthriftie waste, s, and ydle superfluity: is sences Fort assayle incessantly.

XIII

troupe, most horrible of hew force, is dreadfull to report; ie Snailes, some did like spyders

ke ugly Urchins thick and short: assayed that fift Fort dartes of sensuall Delight, s of carnall lust, and strong effort ensures, with which day and night same fift bulwarke they continued

· twelve troopes with dreadfull BUTHE t Cartle restlesse siege did lay, re their hideous Ordinaunce ulwarkes cruelly did play, gan to threaten neare decay: re their wicked Capitavn em the breaches to assay. rith threats, sometimes with hope rith threats, sometimes with hope increase.

[attayn. Which field asonder, and him fell before; erausack of that peece they should stockes. [locks:

XV r -yde, th' assieged Castles ward

at Lands did mightily maintaine. old repulse and many hard

frame from ruine to sustaine: re brethren Gyauntes did defend secutly with their sturdle mayne, prraunce any durst pretend, od.

The noble Virgin, Ladie of the Place houndes, some like to Apes, Was much dismayed with that dreadful sight, For never was she in so evill cace, Till that the Prince, seeing her wofull plight, Gan her recomfort from so sad affright, Offring his service, and his dearest life For her defence against that Carle to fight, Which was their chiefe and th' authour of that

strife: She him remercied as the Patrone of her life.

Estsoones himselfe in glitterand armes he dight, And his well proved weapons to him hent; So, taking courteous congé, he behight Those gates to be unbard, and forth he went. Fayre mote he thee, the prowest and most

gent. That ever brandished bright steele on hye! Whome soone as that unruly rablement With his gay Squyre issewing did espye, [cry: They reard a most outrageous dreadfull yelling

XVIII

And therewithall attonce at him let fly [snow, Their fluttring arrowes, thicke as flakes of And round about him flocke impetuously, Like a great water flood, that tombling low From the high mountaines, threates to overflow

With suddein fury all the fertile playne, And the sad husbandmans long hope doth throw vayne; Adowne the streame, and all his vowes make

Nor bounds nor banks his headlong ruine may sustayne.

XIX

Upon his shield their heaped hayle he bore. And with his sword disperst the raskall flockes.

When the wroth Western wind does reave their And underneath him his courageous steed. The fierce Spumador, trode them downe like

docks ; at wrought, with perill and with The fierce Spumador, borne of heavenly seed, Such as Laomedon of Phoebus race did breed.

Which suddeine horrour and confused cry When as their Capteine heard, in haste he vode brefull death their groning ghosts The cause to weet, and fault to remedy : | Upon a Tygre swift and fierce he rode,

That as the winde ran underneath his lode, Whiles his long legs nigh raught unto the ground.

Full large he was of limbe, and shoulders brode, But of such subtile substance and unsound, That like a ghost he seem'd whose graveclothes were unbound:

And in his hand a bended bow was seene, And many arrowes under his right side, All deadly daungerous, all cruell keene, Headed with flint, and fethers bloody dide; Such as the Indians in their quivers hide: Those could be well direct and streight as line, And bid them strike the marke which he had eyde;

Ne was there salve, ne was there medicine That mote recure their wounds; so inly they did tine.

XXII

As pale and wan as ashes was his looke, His body leane and meagre as a rake, And skin all withered like a dryed rooke ; Thereto as cold and drery as a snake, That seemd to tremble evermore and quake: All in a canvas thin he was bedight, And girded with a belt of twisted brake: Upon his head he wore an Helmet light, Made of a dead mans skull, that seemd a ghastly sight.

XXIII

Maleger was his name; and after him There follow'd fast at hand two wicked Hags, With hoary lockes all loose, and visage grim; Their feet unshod, their bodies wrapt in rags, And both as swift on foot as chased Stags; And yet the one her other legge had lame, Which with a staffe, all full of little snags, She did support, and Impotence her name. But th' other was Impatience, arm'd with raging flame

Soone as the Carle from far the Prince espyde Glistring in armes and warlike ornament, His Beast he felly prickt on either syde, And his mischievous bow full readie bent, With which at him a cruell shaft he sent: But he was warie, and it warded well Upon his shield, that it no further went, But to the ground the idle quarrell fell: Then he another and another did expell.

Which to prevent the Prince his mortall speare Which to prevent the Prince his mortall speare Had not his gentle Squire beheld his Soone to him raught, and fierce at him did And commen to his reskew, ere hi ride.

To be avenged of that shot whyleare But he was not so hardy to abide

That bitter stownd, but turning quiel His light-foot beast, fled fast away for Whom to poursue the Infant after hid So fast as his good Courser could him But labour lost it was to weene appro neare.

XXVI

For as the winged wind his Tigre flet That vew of eye could scarse him over Ne scarse his feet on ground were seene Through hils and dales he speedy t make,

Ne hedge ne ditch his readie passure And in his flight the villein turn'd his (As wonts the Tartar by the Caspian! Whenas the Russian him in fight does Unto his Tygres taile, and shot at him

XXVII

Apace he shot, and yet he fled apace Still as the greedy knight nigh to him And oftentimes he would relent his pe That him his foe more fiercely should

sew: But when his uncouth manner be did He gan avize to follow him no more But keepe his standing, and his shafter Untill he quite had spent his perlous And then assayle him fresh, ere he con for more.

XXVIII

But that lame Hag, still as abroad h His wicked arrowes, gathered them as And to him brought, fresh batteill to Which he espying cast her to restrain From yielding succour to that cursed And her attaching thought her hamls But soone as him dismounted on the p That other Hag did far away cspye Binding her sister, she to him ran has

And catching hold of him, as downe Him backeward overthrew, and down stayd With their rude handes and gryesly

ment;

Till that the villein, comming to their Upon him fell, and lode upon him laye Full litle wanted but he had him slain And of the battell balefull end had ma bane.

xxx

and most glorious thing on and the helpe of weaker hand; s mans state, and life unsound, surrance it may never stand, sivel be from earthly band. ten Prince, the prowest man alyve, st berne of all in Britayne land; ere Fortune did so nearely drive,

survive.

re arriving fiercely in his armes t the one and then the other Jade, t letts and authors of his harmes, perferce withheld with threatned us Lord they should behinde invade; ikte out of long slombring shade, thought of glory and of fame, his powres to purge him selfe from

fire, the which in hollow cave bene underkept and down supprest, orans disdayne doth inly rave, in so streight prison to be prest, acce forth with furious unrest, : - mount unto his native seat; ! . art :: hinder and molest, [heat, y ares with flames and scorehing gater smeake with rage and horror

XXXIII

ly the Briton Prince him rouza 1. and broke his caytive bands; ure, whom angry curres have touzd, n and overthrowes. Now had the

m his Tigre, and his hands of his bow and deadly quarle. Lie foe flatt lying on the marle.

XXXIV

se him, turnd to disavantage deare; . are he fly, nor other harme, and his strength and manhood

e 1- far from his monstrous swarme. weapons did himselfe disarme. vet wrothfull for his late disgrace, Ivaunst his valorous right arme,

And him so sore smott with his yron mace That groveling to the ground he fell, and fild his place.

XXXV

Wel weened hee that field was then his owne, And all his labor brought to happy end; When suddein up the villeine overthrowne Out of his swowne arose, fresh to contend. And gan him selfe to second battaill bend, As burt he had not beene. Thereby there lay art grace thee blest, thou shouldest An huge great stone, which stood upon one end.

And had not bene removed many a day; Some land-marke seemd to bee, or signe of sundry way: XXXVI

The same he snatcht, and with exceeding

Threw at his foe, whe was right well aware the Prince, prickt with reprochful To shonne the engin of his meant decay; It booted not to thinke that throw to beare, But grownd he gave, and lightly lept areare:

Eft fierce retourning, as a faulcon fayre, That once hath failed of her souse full neare, Remounts againe into the open ayre, And unto better fortune doth her selfe prepayre.

XXXXII

So brave retourning, with his brandisht blade He to the Carle him selfe agayn addrest, And strooke at him so sternely, that he made An open passage through his riven brest, That halfe the steele behind his backe did rest; Which drawing backe, he looked evermore When the hart blood should gush out of his chest,

Or his dead corse should fall upon the flore; But his dead corse upon the flore fell nathemore.

XXXVIII

Ne drop of blood appeared shed to bee, -hakt them and escapt their hands, No drop of blood appeared shed to bee, That through his careas one might playuly rec.

Halfe in amaze with horror hideous, And halfe in rage to be deluded thus, Again through both the sides he strooke him quight,

That made his spright to grone full piteous; Yet nathemore forth fled his groning spright. But freshly, as at first, prepard himselfe to fight.

XXXIX

Thereat he smitten was with great affright, And trembling terror did his hart apall; No wist he what to thinke of that same sight, Ne what to say, ne what to doe at all:

He doubted least it were some magicall Illusion that did beguile his sense. Or wandring ghost that wanted funerall, Or acry spirite under false pretence, Or hellish feend rayed up through divelish science.

His wonder far exceeded reasons reach, That he began to doubt his dazeled sight, And oft of error did himselfe appeach: Flesh without blood, a person without spright. Wounds without hurt, a body without might. That could doe harme, yet could not harmed bee

That could not die, yet seemd a mortall wight, That was most strong in most infirmitee; Like did he never heare, like did he never see,

XLL

Awhile he stood in this astonishment, Yet would be not for all his great dismay Give over to effect his first intent, And th' utmost meanes of victory assay, Or th' utmost yssew of his owne decay. His owne good sword Mordure, that never fayld

At need till now, he lightly threw away, And his bright shield that nought him now avayld .

And with his naked hands him forcibly assayld.

Twixt his two mighty armes him up he snatcht. And crusht his carcas so against his brest, That the disdainfull sowle he thence dispatcht,

And th' ydle breath all utterly exprest. Tho, when he felt him dead, adowne he kest The lumpish corse unto the sencelesse grownd; Adowne he kest it with so pussant wrest, That backe agains it did alofte rebownd, And gave against his mother earth a grone-

XLIII

full sownd.

As when Joves harnesse-bearing Bird from hye

Stoupes at a flying heron with proud disdayne, The stone-dead quarrey falls so forciblye, That yt rebownds against the lowly playne, A second fall redoubling backe agayne. Then thought the Prince all peril sure was

And that he victor onely did remayne; No sooner thought, then that the Carle as fast Gan heap huge strokes on him, as ere he down was cast.

XLIV

Nigh his wits end then woxe thi

knight, And thought his labor lost, and travel Against this lifelesse shadow so to fig Yet life he saw, and felt his mighty That, whiles he marveild still, did st payne;

Forthy he gan some other wayes advia How to take life from that deal

Whom still he marked freshly to arm From th' earth, and from her womb new to reprize.

He then remembred well, that had bes How th' Earth his mother was, and fir bore, She eke, so often as his life decayd.

Did life with usury to him restore. And reysd him up much stronger then So soone as he unto her wombe did fall. Therefore to grownd he would have more.

Ne him committ to grave terrestrial! But beare him farre from hope of usuall.

XLVI

Tho up he caught him twixt his p

And having scruzd out of his carrier of The lothfull life, now loosd from sinful Upon his shoulders carried him perfer Above three furlongs, taking his full Until he came unto a standing lake; Him thereinto he threw without reme Ne stird, till hope of life did him forsak So end of that Carles dayes and hi paynes did make.

XLVII

Which when those wicked Hags from Like two mad dogs they ran about the

And th' one of them with dreadfull crye,

Throwing away her broken chaines and And having quencht her burning fier-Hedlong her selfe did cast into that lab But Impotence with her owne wilfull I One of Malegers cursed darts did take So ryv'd her trembling hart, and wirk did make.

Thus now alone he conquerour remain Tho, comming to his Squyre that kept his

to have mounted; but his feeble thereto, and served not his need, see of blood which from his wounds bleed, men to faint, and life decay: hat hand upon his borse did stay,

145

Where many Groomes and Squyres ready were To take him from his steed full tenderly; And eke the fayrest Alma mett him there With balme, and wine, and costly spicery, To comfort him in his infirmity, d Squyre, him belping up with Estesoones shee caused him up to be convayd. And of his armes despoyled easily In sumptuous bed shee made him to be layd; im to the Castle by the beaten And al the while his wounds were dressing by him stayd.

CANTO XII.

Guyon, by Palmers governaunce.
Passing through perilles great.
Doth overthrow the Bowre of blis. And Acrasy defeat.

ses that goodly frame of Temperrise, and her adorned hed grounded and fast setteled nundation of true bountyhed: brave knight, that for this vertue 104 s to point of that same perilous sted. menre dwelles in sensuall delights, sousand dangers, and ten thousand gick mights.

m now in that sea he sayled has, nd beheld, ne living wight, save perill still as he did pas: appeared the third Morrow bright waves to spred her trembling light, s roring far away they heard, reir sences filled with affright; ht they saw the raging surges reard skyes, that them of drowning made erd.

the Boteman, 'Palmer, stere aright, r an even course; for yonder way must pas (God doe us well acquight!) e Gulfe of Greedinesse, they say, e engorgeth all this worldes pray; ving swallowd up excessively, in vomit up againe doth lay, eth forth his superfluity, he seas for feare doe seeme away to fly.

'On thother syde an hideous Rocke is pight Of mightie Magnes stone, whose craggie clift Depending from on high, dreadfull to sight, of highest prayse forth to advaunce, Over the waves his rugged armes doth lift, And threatneth downe to throw his ragged rift On whose cometh nigh; yet nigh it drawes All passengers, that none from it can shift: For, whiles they fly that Gulfes devouring jawes, They on this rock are rent, and sunck in helples Wawes.

> Forward they passe, and strongly he them rowes, Untill they nigh unto that Gulfe arryve, Where streame more violent and greedy growes: Then he with all his puisaunce doth stryve To strike his oares, and mightily doth drive The hollow vessell through the threatfull wave; Which, gaping wide to swallow them alvve In th' huge abysse of his engulting grave, Doth rore at them in vaine, and with great terrour rave.

> They, passing by, that grisely mouth did see Sucking the seas into his entralles deepe, That seemd more horrible then hell to bee, Or that darke dreadfull hole of Tartare steepe Through which the damned ghosts doen often creepe

Backe to the world, bad livers to torment: But nought that falles into this direfull deepe Ne that approcheth migh the wyde descent, May backe retourne, but is condemned to be drent.

VII

On thother side they saw that perilous Rocke, Threatning it selfe on them to ruinate, On whose sharp cliftes the ribs of vessels broke; And shryered ships, which had beene wrecked Yet stuck with carkases exanimate Of such, as having all their substance spent In wanton joyes and lustes intemperate, Did afterwards make shipwrack violent Both of their life and fame, for ever fowly blent.

Forthy this hight The Rocke of vile Reproch, A daungerous and detestable place, To which nor fish nor fowle did once approch, But yelling Meawes, with Seagulles hoars and bace, And Cormoyraunts, with birds of ravenous race Which still sat waiting on that wastfull clift For spoile of wretches, whose unhappy cace,

After lost credit and consumed thrift At last them driven hath to this despairefull

drift.

TX

The Palmer, seeing them in safetic past, Thus saide; 'Behold th' ensamples in our sights Of lustfull luxurie and thriftlesse wast. What now is left of miserable wightes Which spent their looser daies in leud delightes, But shame and sad reproch, here to be red By these rent reliques, speaking their ill Let all that live hereby be counselled [plightes? To shunne Rocke of Reproch, and it as death to dred!

So forth they rowed; and that Ferryman With his stiffe oares did brush the sea so strong,

That the hoare waters from his frigot ran, And the light bubles daunced all along, Whiles the salt brine out of the billowes sprong. At last far off they many Islandes apy On every side floting the floodes emong Then said the knight; 'Lo! I the land descry; Therefore, old Syre, thy course doe thereunto apply.

'That may not bee,' said then the Ferryman, ' Least wee unweeting hap to be fordonne; For those same Islands, seeming now and than, Are not firme land, nor any certein wonne, But stragling plots which to and fro doe roune In the wide waters: therefore are they hight The Wandring Islands. Therefore doe them shonne;

XII

'Yet well they seeme to him, that time Both faire and fruitfull, and the grownd With grassy greene of delectable hew; And the tall trees with leaves apparels Are deckt with blossoms dyde in white-That mote the passengers thereto allow; But whosoever once hath fastened His foot thereon, may never it recurs, But wandreth evermore uncertain and

'As th' Isle of Delos whylome, men men Amid th' Aegean sea long time did stry. Ne made for shipping any certeine pert Till that Latona traveiling that way, Flying from Junoes wrath and hard a Of her favre twins was there delivered Which afterwards did rule the night sale Thenceforth it firmely was established. And for Apolloes temple highly herried

They to him hearken, as bescemeth met And passe on forward : so their way do. That one of those same Islands, which fleet

In the wide sea, they needes must par-Which seemd so sweet and pleasann to

eye, That it would tempt a man to touchen Upon the banck they sitting did espy A daintie damsell dressing of her hears. By whom a little skippet floting did appe

She, them espying, loud to them can call Bidding them nigher draw unto the shore For she had cause to busic them withall And therewith lowdly laught : But nath Would they once turne, but kept on as a Which when she saw, she left her lock dight,

And running to her boat withouten ore From the departing land it launched lis And after them did drive with all her F and might.

Whom overtaking, she in merry sort Them gan to bord, and purpose diversly: Now faining dalliaunce and wanton spot Now throwing forth lewd wordes immed [wight Till that the Palmer gan full bitterly For they have ofte drawne many a wandring Her to rebuke for being loose and light into most deadly daunger and distressed plight. Which not abiding, but more scornfully

it him that did her justly wite. i her bote about, and from them red quite.

s the wanton Phædria, which late him over the Idle lake: ought regarding they kept on their er vaine allurements did forsake; m the wary Boteman thus bespake: v behoveth us well to avyse, ir safety good heede to take;

the way there is a great Quicksand, irlepoole of hidden jeopardy; , Sir Palmer, keepe an even hand. them both the narrow way doth ly. d he saide, when hard at hand they ksand nigh with water covered; ie checked wave they did descry and by the sea discoloured:

vas the quickesand of Unthriftyhed.

XIX

ssing by, a goodly Ship did see m far with precious merchandize, ely furnished as ship might bee, rough great disaventure, or mesprize had ronne into that hazardize; pariners and merchants with much ·le in vaine to have recur'd their prize, ich wares to save from pitteous spoyle; er toyle nor traveill might her backe oyle. хx

ther side they see that perilous Poole, d was the Whirlepoole of decay; full many had with haplesse doole cke, of whom no memorie did stay: cled waters rapt with whirling sway, restlesse wheele, still ronning round, , as they passed by that way, heir bote within the utmost bound le Labyrinth, and then to have them

XXI

und.

heedful Boteman strongly forth did Which seem'd to fly for feare them to behold. etch nie armes, and all his bodie straine ch, e dredd daunger does behind remaine.

Suddeine they see from midst of all the Maine The surging waters like a mountaine rise, And the great sea, puft up with proud dis-

To swell above the measure of his guise, As threatning to devoure all that his powre despise.

XXII

The waves come rolling, and the billowes rore Outragiously, as they enraged were, Or wrathfull Neptune did them drive before His whirling charet for exceeding feare; refore a perious passage lyes, any Mermayds haunt making false That all the three thereat woxe much afrayd, Unweeting what such horrour straunge did

> reare. Eftsoones they saw an hideous hoast arrayd Of huge Sea monsters, such as living sence dismayd:

XXIII

Most ugly shapes and horrible aspecta, Such as Dame Nature selfe mote feare to see, Or shame that ever should so fowle defects From her most cunning hand escaped bee; All dreadfull pourtraicts of deformitee:
Spring-headed Hydres; and sea-shouldring
Whales;

Great whirlpooles which all fishes make to flee; Bright Scolopendraes arm'd with silver scales; Mighty Monoceroses with immeasured tayles.

XXIV The dreadful Fish that hath deserv'd the name

Of Death, and like him lookes in dreadfull hew; The griesly Wasserman, that makes his game The flying ships with swiftnes to pursew: The horrible Sea-satyre, that doth shew His fearefull face in time of greatest storme; Huge Ziffius, whom Mariners eschew No lesse then rockes, (as travellers informe) And greedy Rosmarines with visages deforme.

All these, and thousand thousands many more, And more deformed Monsters thousand fold, With dreadfull noise and hollow rombling TOTE Came rushing, in the fomy waves enrold,

Ne wonder, if these did the knight appall; For all that here on earth we dreadfull hold, utmost sandy breach they shortly Be but as bugs to fearen babes withall, compared to the creatures in the seas ex-

trall.

aviz'd,

' For these same Monsters are not these in deed, But are into these fearefull shapes disguiz'd By that same wicked witch, to worke us dreed, And draw from on this journey to proceed. The lifting up his vertuous staffe on hye. He smote the sea, which calmed was with speed,

And all that dreadfull Armie fast gan flye Into great Tethys bosome, where they hidden lve.

XXVII

Quit from that danger forth their course they kept: And as they went they heard a ruefull cry Of one that wayld and pittifully wept, That through the sea resounding plaints did fly : At last they in an Island did espy A seemely Maiden sitting by the shore. That with great sorrow and sad agony Seemed some great misfortune to deplore,

And lowd to them for succour called evermore. XXVIII

Which Guyon hearing streight his Palmer bad To stere the bote towards that dolefull Mayd, That he might know and ease her sorrow sad; Who, him avizing better, to him sayd: Faire Sir, be not displeasd if disobayd : For ill it were to hearken to her cry, For she is inly nothing ill apayd; But onely womanish fine forgery, [mity. Your stubborne hart t'affect with fraile infir-

"To which when she your courage hath inclind

Through foolish pitty, then her guilefull bayt She will embosome deeper in your mind, And for your ruine at the last awayt.'
The Knight was ruled, and the Boteman strayt Held on his course with stayed stedfastnesse, Ne ever shroncke, ne ever sought to bayt His tyred armes for toylesome wearinesse But with his oares did sweepe the watry wilderпевае.

XXX

And now they nigh approched to the sted Whereas those Mermayds dwelt: it was a still And calmy bay, on th' one side sheltered With the brode shadow of an hoarie hill; On th' other side an high rocke toured still,

That twixt them both a pleasaunt port they

And did like an halfe Theatre fulfill: [made, Of harmefull fowles about them

Feare nought, then saide the Palmer well And usd to bath themselves in the full shade.

They were faire Ladies, till th

With th' Heliconian maides for ma Of whom they, over-comen, were of Of their prond beautie, and th' one Transformd to fish for their bold st But th' upper halfe their hew retay And their sweet skill in wonted m Which ever after they abusd to ill. T' allure weake traveillers, whom

So now to Guyon, as he passed by Their pleasaunt tunes they swi O thou fayre sonne of gentle Fact That art in mightie armes most m Above all knights that ever batteil O! turne thy rudder hitherward av Here may thy storme-bett vessell s This is the Port of rest from trouble The worldes sweet In from paine some turmovle."

With that the rolling sea, resound In his big base them fitly answered And on the rocke the waves breaking A solemne Meane unto them meas The whiles sweet Zephyrus lowd w His treble, a straunge kinde of ha Which Guyons senses softly tickel That he the boteman bad row easily And let him heare some part of the

But him the Palmer from that va With temperate advice discounselle That they it past, and shortly gan The land to which their course they When suddeinly a grosse fog over-With his dull vapour all that des And heavens chearefull face envelope That all things one, and one as not And this great Universe seemd or mas.

XXXV

Thereat they greatly were dismay How to direct theyr way in darken But feard to wander in that wastefu For tombling into mischiefe unespitheir wicked wings them ofte did And high advaunced crests downe meekely

he nation of unfortunate birds about them flocked were, nature men abhorre and hate; e Owle, deaths dreadfull messengere; Night-raven, trump of dolefull drere; Of which Caduceus whilome was made winged Batt, dayes enimy; Strich, still waiting on the bere; er shrill, that whose heares doth dy; Harpyes, prophets of sad destiny.

XXXVII and all that els does horror breed m flew, and fild their sayles with they not, but forward did proceed one did row, and th' other stifly last the weather gan to cleare, ire land it selfe did playnly sheow. ir knight, your ready arms about throw

XXXVIII

1ed, and his armes about him tooke, ge Palmer that him governed; er by his bote behind did stay. hed fayrly forth, of nought ydred. y armd for every hard assay, ancy and care, gainst daunger and ay. XXXIX

hey heard an hideous bellowing easts, that roard outrageously, ungers poynt or Venus sting mraged with fell surquedry: they feard, but past on hardily, came in vew of those wilde beasts, once, gaping full greedily, g fercely their upstaring crests, ds to devoure those unexpected

is they approcht with deadly threat, over them his staffe upheld, [feat. staffe, that could all charmes de-

this inoyed, groping in that griesly night. Instead of fraying, they them selves did feare,

And trembled as them passing they beheld: Such wondrous powre did in that staffe appeare All monsters to subdew to him that did it beare.

Of that same wood it fram'd was cunningly,

Caduceus, the rod of Mercury, invade With which he wonts the Stygian realmes Through ghastly horror and eternall shade: Th' infernall feends with it he can asswage And Orcus tame, whome nothing can persuade,

And rule the Furyes when they most doe rage. Such vertue in his staffe had eke this Palmer sage.

XLII

Thence passing forth, they shortly doe arryve Whereas the Bowre of Blisse was situate; A place pickt out by choyce of best alyve, That natures worke by art can imitate: In which whatever in this worldly state he Palmer; 'Lo! where does appeare Is sweete and pleasing unto living sense, soile where all our perills grow. Or that may dayntest fantasy aggrate, ir knight, your ready arms about | Was poured forth with plentifull dispence, And made there to abound with lavish affluence.

XLIII

Goodly it was enclosed round about,

light,

the nimble bote so well her sped. As well their entred guestes to keep within, her crooked keele the land she As those unruly beasts to hold without; the noble Guyon sallied, [strooke: Yet was the fence thereof but weake and thin: As well their entred guestes to keep within, Nought feard theyr force that fortilage to win, wisedomes powre, and temperaunces might, By which the mightiest things efforced bin: And eke the gate was wrought of substaunce

Rather for pleasure then for battery or fight. XLIV

Yt framed was of precious yvory, That seemd a worke of admirable witt; And therein all the famous history Of Jason and Medæa was ywritt; Her mighty charmes, her furious loving fitt;

His goodly conquest of the golden fleece. His falsed fayth, and love too lightly flitt: The wondred Argo, which in venturous peece First through the Euxine seas bore all the flowr of Greece.

Ye might have seene the frothy billowes try their stubborne corages were queld, Under the ship as thorough them she went, 1 40

That seem I the wayes were any years, Or sweet rate the waves were unity

A pite us see table of I represent :

And stream is with a life prinaried. Did decke her, and too lavishly adome it send that handed rame which did When forth from virgin hours also Creasa well.

All this and more might in that goodly gate Be red, that ever even stood to all sate Which thirther came that in the Porch there A comply personally of star me tall, And semidannee pleasing, more then naturall, That travellers to him seemd to entize: His losser garment to the ground did talk. And flew about his hosles in wanton wize. Not fitt for speedy pace, or manly exercize,

XIVII They in that place him Genius did call:

Not that exhibitall pown, to whom the care Of life, and generation of all That lives, perteines in charge particulare, Who wondrous things concerning our welfare, And straunge phantomes doth lett us one foresee.

And ofte of secret ill bids us beware: That is our Selfe, whom though we do not see. Or Ida, where the Gods lov'd to repays

XIVIII

Therefore a God him sage Antiquity Did wisely make, and good Agdistes call; But this same was to that quite contrary. The foe of life, that good envyes to all, That secretly doth us procure to fall [us see: Through guilefull semblants which he makes He of this Gardin had the governall, And Pleasures porter was devized to bee. Holding a staffe in hand for mere formalitee.

XLIX

With diverse flowres he daintily was deckt, And strowed round about ; and by his side A mighty Mazer bowle of wine was sett. As if it had to him bene sacrifide, Wherewith all new-come guests he gratyfide: So did he cke Sir Guyon passing by; But he his ydle curtesie defide. And overthrew his bowle disdainfully, And broke his staffe with which he charmed semblants sly.

Thus being entred, they behold around A large and spacious plaine, on evey side trowed with pleasures; whose fayre go grownd

And otherwhen the showy a retaining sprent. Mantled with greene, and goodly bes. With permits like the toyes blood therein With all the ornaments of Floress pr With all the ornaments of Florans prids, Wherewith her mother Art, as halfe in at of niggard Nature, like a pompous bride Did decke her, and too lavishly adome, When forth from wineful. th' early morne,

Therewith the Heavens alwayes joying Lookte on them lovely, still in stedfast Ne suffred storme nor frost on them to is Their tender buds or leaves to violate; Nor scorching heat, nor cold intemperate I afflict the creatures which therein did & But the milde ayre with season moderate tiently attempted, and disposed so well. That still it breathed forth sweet with holesom smell:

More sweet and holesome then the please hill Of Rhodope, on which the Nimphe that he

A gyaunt babe herselfe for griefe did kill; Or the Thessalian Tempe, where of you Fayre Daphne Phobus hart with love

Yet each doth in him selfe it well perceive to bee. When ever they their heavenly bourse feet Or sweet Parnasse, the haunt of Muses had Or Eden selfe, if ought with Eden more of payre.

Much wondred Guyon at the fayre asp Of that sweet place, yet suffred no delig To sincke into his sence, nor mind affect, But passed forth, and lookt still forward in Brydling his will and maystering his me Till that he came unto another gate; No gate, but like one, being goodly dight! With bowes and braunches, which did bear Their clasping armes in wanton wa intricate:

LIV

So fashioned a Porch with rare device. Archt over head with an embracing vim Whose bounches hanging downe seemd to tice

All passers by to taste their lushious wise And did them selves into their hands in As freely offering to be gathered; Some deepe empurpled as the Hyacina Some as the Rubine laughing sweetely Some like faire Emeraudes, not ye

ripened.

THE FAERIE QUEENE. Ev So striving each th' other to undermine, Kach did the others worke more beautify; Raca and the others works more peasure. So diffring both in willes agreed in fast So all agreed, through sweets diversity. This Gardin to adorne with all variety. aives emongst the leaves e he vew of covetous guest, boughes, with so rich load And in the midst of all a fountaine stood s overburdened. And in the mans, or an a positione stood, Of richest substance that on earth might bea, So pure and shiny that the silver food a comely dame did rest a but lowle disordered, Through every channell running one might se that seemd unmeet for Most goodly it with curious ymagures
Was overwrought, and shapes of naked boyes,
Of which some seemd with lively jollites
Whylest others did them selves embay in liquid LV Cup of gold she held, the riper fruit did reach that with fulnesse sweld, ad with daintie breach ithout fowle empeach, see made the wine more And over all of purest gold was spred A trayle of yvie in his native hew; For the rich metall was so coloured, re to drinke to each, happened to meet : That wight who did not well avis'd it vew Straungers goodly so to Would surely deeme it to bee yvie trew: Low his lascivious armes adown did creepe, That themselves dipping in the silver dew 'II' Their fleery flowres they fearefully did steepe, Which drops of Christall seemd for wantones d it to tast, er tender hond, riolently cast, s broken fond, Infinit streames continually did well ned all the lond: Out of this fountaine, sweet and faire to see, lingly was wroth, The which into an ample laver fell, d, ne yet withstond, all were she loth; And shortly grew into so great quantitie,
That like a litle lake it seemd to bee; r displeasure, forward Whose depth exceeded not three cubits hight, That through the waves one might the bottom aradise on ground All pav'd beneath with Jaspar shining bright, ber eve, That seemd the fountaine in that sea did sayle teously abownd, inerce envye; neese envye;
es upshooting hye,
With shady Laurell trees, thence to defend
illes for breathing The sunny beames which on the billows bett, ristall running by. And those which therein bathed mote offer orkes doth most As Guyon hapned by the same to wend, [place, Two naked Damzelles he therein espyde, it appeared in no And wrestle wantonly, ne car'd to hyde and those which therein bathed mote offend. Their dainty partes from vew of any which o cunningly the Sometimes the one would lift the other quight nd with the fine) Above the waters, and then downe agains e en ude lier plong, as over-maystered by might, repine; Where both awhile would covered remain

And each the other from to rise restraine ; The whiles their snowy limbes, as through a

vele, So through the christall waves appeared plaine: Then suddeinly both would themselves unhele, And th' amarous sweet spoiles to greedy eyes revele.

LXV

As that faire Starre, the messenger of morne, His deawy face out of the sea doth reare; Or as the Cyprian goddesse, newly borne Of th' Ocean's fruitfull froth, did first appeare: Such seemed they, and so their yellow heare Christalline humor dropped downe apace. Whom such when Guyon saw, he drew him

And somewhat gan relent his earnest pace; His stubborne brest gan secret pleasaunce to

LXVI

The wanton Maidens, him espying, stood Gazing awhile at his unwonted guise; Then th' one her selfe low ducked in the flood, Abasht that her a straunger did avise; But thother rather higher did arise, And her two lilly paps aloft displayd, And all that might his melting hart entyse To her delights she unto him bewrayd; The rest hidd underneath him more desirous

LXVII

made.

With that the other likewise up arose, And her faire lockes, which formerly were bownd

Up in one knott, she low adowne did lose, Which flowing low and thick her cloth'd around, And th' yvorie in golden mantle gownd; So that faire spectacle from him was reft, Yet that which reft it no lesse faire was found. o hidd in lockes and waves from lookers theft, Nought but her lovely face she for his looking

LXVIII

Withall she laughed, and she blusht withall, That blushing to her laughter gave more grace, And laughter to her blushing, as did fall.

Now when they spyde the knight to slacke his
Them to behold, and in his sparkling face [pace
The secrete signes of kindled lust appeare, Their wanton meriments they did encreace,
And to him beckned to approch more neare,
And shewd him many sights that corage cold
And through his humid eyes did such could reare.

On which when gazing him the Palmer saw, He much rebukt those wandring eyes of his,

And counseld well him forward the draw.

Now are they come night a the Bown of b Of her fond favorites so nam'd amis, When thus the Palmer: 'Now, Sir, well ar For here the end of all our traveill is: Here wonnes Acrasia, whom we must sur Els she will slip away, and all our drift de

Eftsoones they heard a most meledious Of all that mote delight a daintie eare, Such as attonce might not on living g Save in this Paradise, be heard elser Right hard it was for wight which did at To read what manner musicke that mo For all that pleasing is to living ears.
Was there consorted in one harmones: Birdes, voices, instruments, windes, all agree:

LXXI

The joyous birdes, shrouded in cheareful a Their notes unto the voice attempred ave Angelicall soft trembling voyers made Th' To th' instruments divine respondence me The silver sounding Instruments did men With the base murmure of the waters fall The waters fall with difference discret-Now soft, now loud, unto the wind did a The gentle warbling wind low answered to

There, whence that Musick seemed best Was the faire Witch her selfe now solace

With a new Lover, whom, through sores And witchcraft, she from farre did the bring: There she had him now laid aslombering

In secret shade after long wanton joyed. Whilst round about them pleasauntly did Many faire Ladies and lascivious boye That ever mixt their song with light lie toyes.

And all that while right over him she ha With her false eyes fast fixed in his sight As seeking medicine whence she was stor. Or greedily depasturing delight; spright,

Quite molten into lust and pleasure level. Wherewith she sighed soft, as if his rerewd.

LXXIV iles some one did chaunt this lovely

whose fayre thing doest faine to see, ging flowre the image of thy day.

the Virgin Rose, how sweetly shee st peepe foorth with bashfull modestee, rer seemes the lesse ye see her may. soone after how more bold and free ed bosome she doth broad display; soone after how she fades and falls

way. LXXV eth, in the passing of a day,

all life the leafe, the bud, the flowre; doth florish after first decay, [bowre a lady', and many a Paramowre. herefore the Rose whilest yet is prime, ne comes age that will her pride dethe Rose of love whilest yet is time, loving thou mayst loved be with equall

LXXVI

rime.

hrild

st; and then gan all the quire of birdes verse notes t'attune unto his lay provaunce of his pleasing wordes. stant payre heard all that he did say, rved not, but kept their forward way many covert groves and thickets close, h they creeping did at last display inton Lady with her lover lose, [pose.

sleepie head she in her lap did soft dis-LXXVII

a bed of Roses she was layd, sin; t through heat, or dight to pleasant s arayd, or rather disarayd, vele of silke and silver thin, d no whit her alablaster skin, Thee:

her shewd more white, if more might ibtile web Arachne cannot spin; fine nets, which oft we woven see rhed deaw, do not in th' ayre more ightly flee.

LXXVIII

lowy brest was bare to ready spoyle gry eies, which n'ote therewith be fild;

t, through languour of her late sweet ops, more cleare then Nectar, forth diste pure Orient perles adowne it trild; r faire eyes, sweet smyling in delight, ned their fierie beames, with which she

seeme more bright. The young man, sleeping by her, seemd to be Some goodly swayne of honorable place,

Fraile harts, yet quenched not; like starry light,

Which, sparckling on the silent waves, does

That certes it great pitty was to see Him his nobility so fowle deface: A sweet regard and amiable grace, Mixed with manly sternesse, did appeare,

Yet sleeping, in his well proportiond face; And on his tender lips the downy heare Did now but freshly spring, and silken blossoms beare, LXXX His warlike Armes, the ydle instruments

Of sleeping praise, were hong upon a tree; And his brave shield, full of old moniments, Was fowly ras't, that none the signes might Ne for them ne for honour cared hee, see: Ne ought that did to his advauncement tend; But in lewd loves, and wastfull luxuree, His dayes, his goods, his bodie, he did spend: O horrible enchantment, that him so did blend!

LXXXI

The noble Elfe and carefull Palmer drew So nigh them, minding nought but lustfull game That suddein forth they on them rusht, and A subtile net, which only for that same The skilfull Palmer formally did frame:

So held them under fast; the whiles the rest Fled all away for feare of fowler shame. The faire Enchauntresse, so unwares opprest, Tryde all her arts and all her sleights thence out to wrest.

And eke her lover strove, but all in vaine; For that same net so cunningly was wound, That neither guile nor force might it distraine. They tooke them both, and both them strongly bound

In captive bandes, which there they readie But her in chaines of adamant he tyde; For nothing else might keepe her safe and sound: But Verdant (so he hight) he soone untyde, And counsell sage in steed thereof to him applyde. LXXXIII

[found:

But all those pleasaunt bowres, and Pallace brave, Guvon broke downe with rigour pittilesse:

Ne ought their goodly workmanship might save, Them from the tempest of his wrathfulnesse,

But that their blisse he turn'd to balefulnesse. And mourneful meed of joyes delicious!
Their groves he feld; their gardins did deface; But, Palmer, if it mote thee so aggrate,
Their arbers spoyle; their Cabinets suppresse;
Let them returned be unto their former
Their banket houses burne; their buildings race; And, of the fayrest late, now made the fowlest place.

Then led they her away, and eke that knight They with them led, both sorrowfull and sad. The way they came, the same retourn'd they right,

Till they arrived where they lately had Charm'd those wild-beasts that rag'd with furie mad;

Which, now awaking, fierce at them gan fly, As in their mistresse reskew whom they lad; But them the Palmer soone did pacify.

Then Guyon askt, what meant those beastes

which there did ly?

LXXXV

Sayd he; 'These seeming beasts are men indeed, [thus; To be a beast, and lacke intelligence!'
Whom this Enchauntresse hath transformed To whom the Palmer thus: 'The de Whylome her lovers, which her lustes did feed, Now turned into figures hideous, According to their mindes like monstruous.' Sad end,' (quoth he) 'of life intemperate,

Let them returned be unto their former sta

LXXXVI

Streight way he with his vertuous staffe th strooke,

And streight of beastes they comely mea!
Yet being men they did unmanly looke, [can
And stared ghastly; some for inward sham
And some for wrath to see their captive Dan But one above the rest in speciall That had an hog beene late, hight Grylle Repyned greatly, and did him miscall That had from hoggish forme him brought naturall.

I.XXXVII

Saide Guyon; 'See the mind of beastly a That hath so soone forgot the excellent Of his creation, when he life began, Delightes in filth and fowle incontinence: Let Gryll be Gryll, and have his hoggish mi But let us hence depart whilest wether and winde.

THE THIRDE BOOKE

OF

THE FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF BRITOMARTIS, OR OF CHASTITY.

ne here to write of Chastity, st vertue, far above the rest: 1 what needes me fetch from Faery ensamples it to have exprest? shrined in my Soveraines brest, d so lively in each perfect part, Il Ladies, which have it profest, behold the pourtraict of her hart; vd it might bee by any living art.

ng art may not least part expresse, esembling pencill it can paynt: t Zeuxis or Praxiteles. perfections with his error t ynt: witt, that passeth Painter farre ng the parts of beauty daynt, workemanship adventure darre, through want of words, her excelce to marre.

n shall I, Apprentice to the skill lome in divinest wits did rayne, so high to stretch mine humble quill? Or in Belphæbe fashioned to bee;

Hereto perforce. But, O dredd Soverayne! Thus far-forth pardon, sith that choicest witt Cannot your glorious pourtraict figure playne, That I in colourd showes may shadow itt, And antique praises unto present persons fitt.

But if in living colours, and right hew, Thy selfe thou covet to see pictured, Who can it doe more lively, or more trew, Then that sweete verse, with Nectar sprinck-His Cynthia, his heavens fayrest light? In which a gracious servaunt pictured That with his melting sweetnes ravished, And with the wonder of her beames bright, le hand would faile and greatly faynt, My sences lulled are in slomber of delight.

But let that same delitious Poet lend A little leave unto a rusticke Muse mend. To sing his mistresse prayse; and let him If ought amis her liking may abuse: Ne let his fayrest Cynthia refuse In mirrours more then one her selfe to see; But either Gloriana let her chuse, Chastitee. ny luckelesse lott doth me constrayne In th' one her rule, in th' other her rare

CANTO I.

Guyon encountreth Britomart: Fayre Florimell is chaced : Duessaes traines and Malecas taes champions are defaced.

heir weary limbes to perfect plight :'d,

Of the faire Alma greatly were procur'd ous Briton Prince and Facry knight, To make there lenger sojourne and abode; wayes and perilous paines endur'd, But when thereto they might not be allur'd. From seeking praise and deeds of armes abrod and sory wounds right well re- They courteous conge tooke, and forth together yode.

But the captiv'd Acrasia he sent, Because of traveill long, a nigher way, With a strong gard, all reskew to prevent, And her to Faery court safe to convay; That her for witnes of his hard assay Unto his Faery Queene he might present: But he him selfe betooke another way, To make more triall of his hardiment, [went. And seek adventures as he with Prince Arthure

Long so they traveiled through wastefull wayes, [wonne,

Where daungers dwelt, and perils most did To hunt for glory and renowmed prayse. Full many Countreyes they did overronne, From the uprising to the setting Sunne, And many hard adventures did atchieve; Of all the which they honour ever wonne, Seeking the weake oppressed to relieve, [grieve. And to recover right for such as wrong did

At last, as through an open plaine they yode, They spide a knight that towards pricked fayre; And him beside an aged Squire there rode, That seemd to couch under his shield threesquare,

As if that age badd him that burden spare, And yield it those that stouter could it wield. He them espying gan him selfe prepare, And on his arme addresse his goodly shield That bore a Lion passant in a golden field.

Which seeing, good Sir Guyon deare besought The Prince of grace to let him ronne that turne. He graunted: then the Faery quickly raught His poynant speare, and sharply gan to spurne His fomy steed, whose fiery feete did burne The verdant gras as he thereon did tread; Ne did the other backe his foote returne, But fiercely forward came withouten dread, And bent his dreadful speare against the others head.

arriv'd:

But Guyon drove so furious and fell, [have riv'd; That seemd both shield and plate it would Nathelesse it bore his foe not from his sell, But made him stagger, as he were not well: But Guyon selfe, ere well he was aware, Nigh a speares length behind his crouper fell; Yet in his fall so well him selfe he bare, That mischievous mischaunce his life and But to his starting steed that swarr'd as limbs did spare.

Great shame and sorrow of that fall be total For never yet, sith warlike armes be but And shivering speare in bloody field first the He found him selfe dishonored so sur. Ah! gentlest knight, that ever armor ban Let not thee grieve dismounted to have be And brought to grownd that never wast be For not thy fault, but secret powre un That speare enchannted was which lard i on the greene.

But weenedst thou what wight the threw,

Much greater griefe and shamefuller reg renew.

That of a single damzell thou wert met On equall plaine, and there so hard less: Even the famous Britomart it was Whom straunge adventure did from Brill sett

To seeke her lover (love far sought alse) Whose image shee had seene in Venus look glas,

Full of disdainefull wrath he fierce up For to revenge that fowle reprocheful shan And snatching his bright sword began close

With her on foot, and stoutly forward Dye rather would be then endure that sa Which when his Palmer saw, he gan to a His toward perill, and untoward blame. Which by that new rencounter he should " For death sate on the point of that enchan speare;

And hasting towards him gan favre swade

Not to provoke misfortune, nor to ween His speares default to mend with cruell bla For by his mightie Science he had seene The secrete vertue of that weapon keens, That mortall puissaunce mote not with Nothing on earth mote alwaies happy ber They beene ymett, and both theyr points Great hazard were it, and adventure food arriv'd:

To loose long gotten honour with one hond.

XI

By such good meanes he him discounsel From prosecuting his revenging rag And eke the Prince like treaty handeled. His wrathfull will with reason to aswage And laid the blame, not to his carriage, And to the ill purveyaunce of his page,

us furnitures not firmely tyde, ngry corage favrly pacifyde.

ncilement was betweene them knitt, goodly temperaunce and affection That it importunes death and dolefull drery-hedd. ite: vowd with all their power and witt others honour be defaste r foe, who ever it embaste; to beare against the others syde: secord the Prince was also plaste, that golden chaine of concord tyde.

all agreed they forth yfere did ryde.

XIII

r usage of those antique tymes, the sword was servaunt unto right; for malice and contentious crymes prayse, and proofe of manly might, all brood accustomed to fight: our was the meed of victory he vanquished had no despight. ige that noble use envy, or to avoid and cruel surquedry.

XIV

y thus traveiled in friendly wise, countreves waste, and eke well fyde, iventures hard, to exercise saunce, whylome full dernly tryde. they came into a forest wyde, leous horror and sad trembling sownd ily seemd: Therein they long did of living creature none they found, res. Lyons, and Buls, which romed m arownd.

enly out of the thickest brush, ilkwhite Palfrey all alone, Lady did foreby them rush, ce did seeme as cleare as Christall hrough feare, as white as whales bone: e them leasure gave her passing to ıold.

he fledd her eye she backward threw, r evill that poursewd her fast; aire yellow locks behind her flew, isperst with puff of every blast:

All as a blazing starre doth farre outcast His hearie beames, and flaming lockes dispredd, At sight whereof the people stand aghast: But the sage wisard telles, as he has redd,

XVII

So as they gazed after her a whyle, Lo! where a griesly foster forth did rush, Breathing out beastly lust her to defyle: His tyreling Jade he fiersly forth did push
Through thicke and thin, both over banck and
bush,

In hope her to attaine by hooke or crooke, That from his gory sydes the blood did gush. Large were his limbes, and terrible his looke, And in his clownish hand a sharp bore speare

XVIII

he shooke.

Which outrage when those gentle knights did see, Full of great envy and fell gealosy They stayd not to avise who first should bee, But all spurd after, fast as they mote fly, To reskew her from shamefull villany. The Prince and Guyon equally bylive Her selfe pursewd, in hope to win thereby Most goodly meede, the fairest Dame alive: But after the foule foster Timias did strive,

XIX

The whiles faire Britomart, whose constant mind Would not so lightly follow beauties chace, Ne reckt of Ladies Love, did stay behynd, And them awayted there a certaine space, To weet if they would turne backe to that place; But when she saw them gone she forward went,

As lay her journey, through that perlous Pace, With stedfast corage and stout hardiment: Ne evil thing she feard, ne evill thing she ment.

hrough feare, as white as whales bone: At last, as nigh out of the wood she came, ents all were wrought of beaten gold, A stately Castle far away she spyde, er steed with tinsell trappings shone, To which her steps directly she did frame. id so fast that nothing mote him hold, That Castle was most goodly edifyde, And plaste for pleasure nigh that forrest syde. But faire before the gate a spatious playne, Mantled with greene, it selfedid spredden wyde, On which she saw six knights, that did daxrayne

Fiers battaill against one with cruell might and mayne.

XXI

Mainely they all attonce upon him laid, And sore beset on every side around, [maid, That nigh he breathlesse grow, yet nought dis-Ne ever to them yielded foot of grownd, All had he lost much blood through many a

wownd, But stoutly dealt his blowes, and every way, To which he turned in his wrathfull stownd Made them recoile, and fly from dredd decay, That none of all the six before him durst assay.

XXII

Like dastard Curres that, having at a bay The salvage beast embost in wearie chace, Dare not adventure on the stubborne pray, No byte before, but rome from place to place To get a snatch when turned is his face. In such distresse and doubtfull jeopardy When Britomart him saw, she ran apace Unto his reskew, and with earnest cry Badd those same six forbeare that single enimy.

XXIII

But to her cry they list not lenden eare, Ne ought the more their mightie strokes surceases.

But gathering him round about more neare, Their direfull rancour rather did encreasse ; Till that she rushing through the thickest preasse

Perforce disparted their compacted gyre, And soone compeld to hearken unto peace. Tho gan she myldly of them to inquyre The cause of their dissention and outrageous yre.

XXIV

Whereto that single knight did answere frame: . These six would me enforce by oddes of might To chaunge my liefe, and love another Dame; That death me liefer were then such despight, So unto wrong to yield my wrested right:
For I love one, the truest one on grownd,
Ne list me chaunge; she th' Errant Damzell
That now there do but two of six re hight;

For whose deare sake full many a bitter stownd I have endurd, and tasted many a bloody wownd.

XXV

'Certes,' (said she) 'then beene ye sixe to blame, To weene your wrong by force to justify; For knight to leave his Lady were great shame That faithfull is, and better were to dy. All losse is lesse, and lesse the infamy, Then losse of love to him that loves but one: Ne may love be compeld by maistery;

For soone as maistery comes eveet Low Taketh his nimble winges, and soone gone.

Then spake one of those six; "There Within this castle wall a Lady favre Whose soveraine beautie hath no livi Thereto so bounteous and so debonay That never any mote with her campa She hath ordaind this law, which we That every knight which doth this way In case he have no Lady nor no love, Shall doe unto her service, never to :

But if he have a Lady or a Love, Then must he her forgoe with fowle Or els with us by dint of sword app That she is fairer then our fairest D As did this knight, before ye hither 'Perdy,' (said Britomart) 'the choise But what reward had he that overc He should advanced bee to high r (Said they) 'and have our Ladies lo reward.

XXVIII

'Therefore aread, Sir, if thou have 'Love hath I sure,' (quoth she) 'but La Yet will I not fro mine own love per Ne to your Lady will I service done But wreake your wronges wrong! knight alone,

And prove his cause.' With that, b

She mightily aventred towards one, And downe him smot ere well aware Then to the next she rode, and down did beare.

XXIX

Ne did she stay till three on ground That none of them himselfe could rea All were he wearie of his former pair Which two did yield before she did the Ah!' (said she then) ' now may plaine,

That truth is strong, and trew love That for his trusty servaunts doth so fight.

XXX

'Too well we see,' (saide they) 'and well

Our faulty weakenes, and your n Forthy, faire Sir, yours be the Dame Our Which by her owne law to your lot a

r, her besought, well as they might, in and reape the dew reward. nted; and then in they all together

XXXI

re it to describe the goodly frame, ly port of Castle Joycous ast Castle hight by commun name) ey were entertaynd with courteous ly glee of many gratious lies, and of many a gentle knight, ough a Chamber long and spacious them brought unto their Ladies

ht,

XXXII

to tell the sumptuous aray reat chamber should be labour lost; z wit, I weene, cannot display i riches and exceeding cost pillour and of every post, of purest bullion framed were, [bost; great perles and pretious stones em-bright glister of their beames cleare kle forth great light, and glorious did Deare.

XXXIII

stranger knights, through passing, th were led nner rowme, whose royaltee purveyance might uneath be red; nces place be seeme so deckt to bee. ately manner whenas they did see, e of superfluous riotize, g much the state of meane degree, atly wondred whence so sumptuous devize. 120 maintaynd, and each gan diversely

XXXIV

s were round about appareiled tly clothes of Arras and of Toure; with cunning hand was pourtrahed of Venus and her Paramoure, · Adonis, turned to a flowre; of rare device and wondrous wit. it shew the bitter balefull stowre, r essayd with many a fervent fit, t her tender hart was with his beautie iŁ

XXXV

ith what sleights and sweet alluremts sbe e Boy, as well that art she knew.

our liegemen faith unto you plight.' And wooed him her Paramoure to bee, seath her feet their awords they mard, Now making girlonds of each flowre that grew, To crowne his golden lockes with honour dew; Now leading him into a secret shade [vew, From his Beauperes, and from bright heavens Where him to sleepe she gently would perswade,

Or bathe him in a fountaine by some covert glade:

XXXVI

And whilst he slept she over him would spred Her mantle, colour'd like the starry skyes, And her soft arme lay underneath his hed, And with ambrosiall kisses bathe his eyes; And whilst he bath'd with her two crafty spyes She secretly would search each daintie lim, hem cleeped was the Lady of Delight. And throw into the well sweet Rosemaryes, And fragrant violets, and Paunces trim; And ever with sweet Nectar she did sprinkle him.

XXXVII

So did she steale his heedelesse hart away, And joyd his love in secret unespyde: But for she saw him bent to cruell play, To hunt the salvage beast in forrest wyde, Dreadfull of daunger that mote him betyde, She oft and oft adviz'd him to refraine From chase of greater beastes, whose brutish pryde

Mote breede him scath unwares but all in [doth ordaine? vaine: For who can shun the chance that dest'ny

XXXVIII

Lo! where beyond he lyeth languishing, Deadly engored of a great wilde Bore; And by his side the Goddesse groveling Makes for him endlesse mone, and evermore With her soft garment wipes away the gore Which staynes his snowy skin with hatefull hew:

But, when she saw no helpe might him restore, Him to a dainty flowre she did transmew, Which in that cloth was wrought as if it lively grew.

XXXIX

So was that chamber clad in goodly wize: And rownd about it many beds were dight, As whylome was the antique worldes guize, Some for untimely case, some for delight, As pleased them to use that use it might; And all was full of Damzels and of Squyres, Dauncing and reveling both day and night.,
And swimming deepe in sensuall desyres;
And Cupid still emongest them kindled lustfull fyres.

And all the while sweet Musicke did divide Her looser notes with Lydian harmony; And all the while sweet birdes thereto applide Their daintie layes and dulcet melody, Ay caroling of love and jollity, That wonder was to heare their trim consort.

Which when those knights beheld, with scornefull eye

They sdeigned such lascivious disport, And loath'd the loose demeanure of that wanton sort.

XLI

Thence they were brought to that great

Ladies vew,
Whom they found sitting on a sumptuous bed
That glistred all with gold and glorious shew, As the proud Persian Queenes accustomed, She seemd a woman of great bountihed, And of rare beautic, saving that askaunce Her wanton eyes, ill signes of womanhed, Did roll too lightly, and too often glaunce, Without regard of grace or comely amenaunce.

Long worke it were, and needlesse, to devize Their goodly entertainement and great glee. She caused them be led in courteous wize Into a bowre, disarmed for to be, And cheared well with wine and spiceree: The Redcrosse Knight was soon disarmed

there: But the brave Mayd would not disarmed bee,

But onely vented up her umbriere, And so did let her goodly visage to appere.

As when fayre Cynthia, in darkesome night, Is in a noyous cloud enveloped, Where she may finde the substance thin and Breakes forth her silver beames, and her bright hed

Discovers to the world discomfited: Of the poore traveiler that went astray With thousand blessings she is heried. Such was the beautie and the shining ray, With which fayre Britomart gave light unto And meet respect of honor putt to the day.

XLIV

And eke those six, which lately with her fought, Now were disarmd, and did them selves present Unto her vew, and company unsought; For they all seemed courteous and gent.

And all sixe brethren, borne of one parent, Which had them traynd in all civilitee, And goodly taught to tilt and turnament:

Now were they liegmen to this Lad And her knights service ought, in h in fee.

The first of them by name Gardan A jolly person, and of comely vev; The second was Parlante, a bold kn And next to him Jocante did ensew Basciante did him selfe most cour But fierce Bacchantè seemd too fell And yett in armes Noctante greate All were faire knights, and goodly But to faire Britomart they all but

XLVI

For shee was full of amiable grace And manly terror mixed therewith That as the one stird up affections So th' other did mens rash desires And hold them backe that would i As hee that hath espide a vermeill To which sharp thornes and bren forstall

Dare not for dread his hardy hand But wishing it far off his vdle wish

XLVII

Whom when the Lady saw so fair All ignorant of her contrary sex, (For shee her weend a fresh and lu Shee greatly gan enamoured to we And with vaine thoughts her false Her fickle hart conceived hasty fy Like sparkes of fire which fall in s That shortly brent into extreme d And ransackt all her veines with par

Eftsoones shee grew to great imp And into termes of open outrage b That plaine discovered her inconti Ne reckt shee who her meaning di For she was given all to fleshly lu And poured forth in sensuall deligi That all regard of shame she had o So shamelesse beauty soone become sight.

Faire Ladies, that to love captive And chaste desires doe nourish in Let not her fault your sweete affect Ne blott the bounty of all womank Mongst thousands good one wants Emongst the Roses grow some wice For this was not to love, but lust,

Awaies bring forth bounteous The bird that knowes not the false fowlers C mitle hart desire of honor breeds. so of love this looser Dame did skill, to kindle fleshly flame bridle to her wanton will, under foote her honest name : hate, and such desire is shame. e rove at her with crafty glaunce eies, that at her hart did ayme, r meaning in her countenaunce;

art dissembled it with ignoraunce. horrily dight, and downe they satt;
Till she mote winne fit time for her desire.
But yet her wound with all supports from the control of the

daked had the fervent heat

meates of every sort, re Britomart entreat nd with delightfull sport ke limbs and strong effort; ste not thereunto be wonne,

nd her short reliefe he mote algates dye: that had never priefe fine forgerye. strong extremitye.

have beliefe, r feeble sexe, inward griefe her hart did vexe,

Faire Malecasta, whose engriced spright Could find no rest in such perplexed plight, s doe loving harts Lightly arose out of her weare bed uiled soonest shall. Her with a scarlott mantle covered And, under the blacke vele of guilty Night, uiled soonest shall. Her with a scarlott maintle covered light faith annexe:, That was with gold and Ermines faire covered

A ne our mas knowes not me mise rowier.
Into his hidden nett full easely doth fall. Forthy she would not in discourteise wise Scome the faire offer of good will profest; For great rebuke it is love to despise, For great reduce it is love to despise, Or rudely sdeigne a gentle barts request, But with faire countenaunce, as beseemed best, But with same countenance, as pesseemen nesser the entertaynd: nath lesse shee inly deemd Her love too light, to wooe a wandring guest. Which she misconstruing, thereby esteemd
That from like inward fire that outward smoke

and through her bonne the false institled and and Lyzeus fatt

r plent y without spight or spare.

d there that damy was and rare,
plent that damy was and rare,
plent banch y was and rare,
plent the cups she did overflow;
c, and secret darts did throw;
c, and secret darts did throw;
could not such guilful messages

And through her bones the false instilled fire
Tho were the tables taken all away;
And every knight, and every gentle Squire,
Gan choose his Daewey gentle Squire,
With whom he ment to make his sport and
countly play. And through her bones the false instilled fire

Some fell to daunce, some fel to hazardry, Some to make love, some to make meryment, As diverse witts to diverse things apply; And all the while faire Malecasta bent Her crafty engins to her close intent. the not thereunto be wome, Doth light the lower world, were halle yspent, and the moist daughters of huge Atlas strove that the Ocean dama to drive their waves. By this the eternal lampes, where with high Jove plaine apparaunce shoune) Into the Ocean deepe to drive their weary Doth light the lower world, were halfe yspent,

covered her desire griefe. Them to betake unto their kindly rest: covered her desire griefe, them to betake unto their kindly rest:

a, and plaints, and pitcous Effescones long waxen torches weren light High time it seemed then for everie wight

Unto their bowres to guyden every guest Tho, when the Britonesse saw all the rest Avoided quite, she gan her selfe despoile, And safe committ to her soft fethered nest Wher through long watch, and late daies She soundly slept, and carefull thoughts did

Now whenas all the world in silence deepe Yshrowded was, and every mortall wight Was drowned in the depth of deadly sleepe;

Then panting softe, and trembling every joynt, Her fearfull feete towards the bowre she mov'd, Where she for secret purpose did appoynt To lodge the warlike maide, unwisely loov'd; And, to her bed approching, first she proov'd Whether she slept or wakte: with her softe hand She softely felt if any member moov'd, And lent her wary eare to understand If any puffe of breath or signe of sence shee fond.

LXI

Which whenas none she fond, with casy shifte, For feare least her unwares she should abrayd, Th' embroder'd quilt she lightly up did lifte, And by her side her selfe she softly layd, Of every finest fingers touch affrayd; Ne any noise she made, ne word she spake, But inly sigh'd. At last the royall Mayd Out of her quiet slomber did awake, Ttake. And chaunged her weary side the better ease to

Where feeling one close couched by her side, She lightly lept out of her filed bedd, And to her weapon ran, in minde to gride The loathed leachour. But the Dame, halfe The loathed leachour.

Through suddein feare and ghastly drerihedd, Did shricke alowd, that through the hous it rong

And the whole family, therewith adredd, Rashly out of their rouzed couches sprong, And to the troubled chamber all in armes did throng.

LXIII

And those sixe knights, that ladies Champions And eke the Redcrosse knight ran to the stownd, Halfe armd and halfe unarmd, with them attons:

Where when confusedly they came, they found Their lady lying on the sencelesse grownd: On thother side they saw the warlike Mayd Al in her snow-white smocke, with locks unbownd,

Threatning the point of her avenging blaed; That with so troublous terror they were all They tooke their steeds, and forth dismayd.

LXIV

About their Ladye first they flock Whom having laid in comfortable Shortly they reard out of her from And afterwardes they gan with fow To stirre up strife, and troubles broch :

But by ensample of the last dayes None of them rashly durst to her a Ne in so glorious spoile themselves Her succourd eke the Champion of Crosse.

But one of those sixe knights, Gam Drew out a deadly bow and arrow Which forth he sent, with felonous And fell intent, against the virgin The mortall steele stayd not till it To gore her side; yet was the wonn But lightly rased her soft silken si That drops of purple blood thereout Which did her lilly smock with sta meil steep.

LXVI

Wherewith enrag'd she fiercely at And with her flaming sword about That none of them foule mischiefe to But with her dreadfull strokes we mayd:

Here, there, and every where, about Her wrathfull steele, that none mo And eke the Rederosse knight gav avd.

Ay joyning foot to foot, and syde t That in short space their foes they terrifyde.

LXVII

The noble Britomartis her arayd, And her bright armes about her be For nothing would she lenger there Where so loose life, and so ungentle Was usd of knightes and Ladies son So earely, ere the grosse Earthes gr Was all disperst out of the firmans journey went,

CANTO II.

The Redcrosse knight to Britomart Describeth Artegall: The wondrous myrrhour, by which she In love with him did fall.

have I cause in men just blame to find, their proper praise too partiall bee, indifferent to woman kind, n no share in armes and chevalree e impart, ne maken memoree brave gestes and prowesse martiall: lo they spare to one, or two, or three, in their writtes; yet the same writing mall [glories all] their deedes deface, and dims their

11.1

record of antique times I finde men wont in warres to beare most sway, all great exploites them selves inclind, h they still the girlond bore away; ious Men, fearing their rules decay, ne streight lawes to curb their liberty: they warlike armes have laide away, we exceld in artes and pollicy, we we foolish men that prayse gin eke 'envy.

rlike puissaunce in ages spent,
,faire Britomart, whose prayse I wryte;
ill wisedom bee thou precedent,
raine Queene! whose prayse I would
adyte,
I would as dewtie doth excyte;
! my rymes too rude and rugged arre,
n so high an object they do lyte,
riving fit to make, I feare, doe marre:
lfe thy prayses tell, and make them
knowen farre.

raveiling with Guyon, by the way lry thinges faire purpose gan to find, g their journey long, and lingring day; which it fell into that Fairies mind this Briton Maid, what uncouth wind ther into those partes, and what inquest ler dissemble her disguised kind?

ady she him seemd, like Lady drest.

rest knight alive, when armed was her brest.

Thereat she sighing softly had no powre
To speake a while, ne ready answere make;
But with hart-thrilling throbs and bitter stowre,
As if she had a fever fitt, did quake,
And every daintie limbe with horrour shake;
And ever and anone the rosy red
Flasht through her face, as it had beene a flake
(of lightning through bright heven fulmined:
At last, the passion past, she thus him answered.

VI

'Faire Sir, I let you weete, that from the howre I taken was from nourses tender pap, I have been trained up in warlike stowre, To tossen speare and shield, and to affrap The warlike ryder to his most mishap: Sithence I loathed have my life to lead, As Ladies wont, in pleasures wanton lap, To finger the fine needle and nyce thread, Me lever were with point of foemans speare be dead.

VII

'All my delight on deedes of armes is sett,
To hunt out perilles and adventures hard,
By sea, by land, where so they may be mett,
Onely for honour and for high regard,
Without respect of richesse or reward:
For such intent into these partes I came,
Withouten compasse or withouten card,
Far fro my native soyle, that is by name
The greater Brytayne, here to seek for praise
and fame.

VIII

'Fame blazed hath, that here in Faery lond Doe many famous knightes and Ladies wonne, And many straunge adventures to bee fond, Of which great worth and worship may be wonne;

Which to prove, I this voyage have begonne.
But mote I weet of you, right courteous
knight,

Tydings of one that hath unto me donne
Late foule dishonour and reprochfull spight,
The which I seeke to wreake, and Arthegal
he hight.

N J

IX

The worde gone out she backe againe would As her repenting so to have missayd, But that he, it uptaking ere the fall, Her shortly answered: Faire martiall Mayd, Certes ye misavised beene t' upbrayd A gentle knight with so unknightly blame ;

For, weet ye well, of all that ever playd At tilt or tourney, or like warlike game, The noble Arthegall hath ever borne the name.

'Forthy great wonder were it, if such shame Should ever enter in his bounteous thought, Or ever doe that mote deserven blame: The noble corage never weeneth ought That may unworthy of it selfe be thought. Therefore, faire Damzell, be ye well aware, Least that too farre ye have your sorrow sought : You and your countrey both I wish welfare, And honour both; for each of other worthy

The royall Maid woxe inly wondrons glad, To heare her Love so highly magnifyde; And joyd that ever she affixed bad Her hart on knight so goodly glorifyde, How ever finely she it faind to hyde. The loving mother, that nine monethes did beare

In the deare closett of her paincfull syde Her tender babe, it seeing safe appeare, Doth not so much rejoyce as she rejoyced theare.

But to occasion him to further talke, To feed her humor with his pleasing style, Her list in stryfull termes with him to balke, And thus replyde: 1 How ever, Sir, ye fyle Your courteous tongue his prayses to compyle, It ill beseemes a knight of gentle sort, Such as ye have him boasted, to beguyle A simple maide, and worke so bainous tort, In shame of knighthood, as I largely can report.

'Let bee therefore my vengeaunce to disswade, And read where I that faytour false may find,' 'Ah! but if reason faire might you perswade To slake your wrath, and mollify your mind' (Said he) 'perhaps ye should it better find: For hardie thing it is, to weene by might That man to hard conditions to bind, Or ever hope to match in equall fight, Whose prowesse paragone saw never living The great Magitien Merlin had deviced. wight By his deepe science and hell-dreaded m

ATT

" Ne soothlich is it easie for to read Where now on earth, or how, he may be for For he ne wonneth in one certeine stead But restlesse walketh all the world arown Ay doing thinges that to his fame reloved Defending Ladies cause and Orphan is Whereso he heares that any doth confidence in the confidence of the confidenc Them comfortlesse through tyrancy or a So is his soveraine honour raisde to be hight.'

His feeling wordes her feeble sence of And softly sunck into her molten hart: |pi Hart that is inly hurt is greatly cased With hope of thing that may allege smart;

For pleasing wordes are like to Magick at That doth the charmed Snake in slounter Such secrete ease felt gentle Britomart. Yet list the same efforce with faind gain So dischord ofte in Musick makes the lay :-

And sayd; 'Sir knight, these ydle is forbeare ; And, sith it is uneath to finde his haunt, Tell me some markes by which he may If chaunce I him encounter paravaunt; For perdy one shall other slay, or danni What shape, what shield, what arms, steed, what stedd, And what so else his person most may

All which the Redcrosse knight to point a

XVII

Yet him in everie part before she knee. However list her now her knowledge fays Sith him whylome in Britayne she did v To her revealed in a mirrhour playme; Whereof did grow her first engraffed pay Whose root and stalke so bitter yet did to That but the fruit more sweetnes did cont Her wretched dayes in dolour she mote And yield the pray of love to lothsome at last.

By straunge occasion she did him behal And much more strangely gan to lo sight, As it in bookes hath written beene of o

In Deheubarth, that now South-wales is What time king Ryence raign'd and

asse, right wondrously aguiz'd, s through the wyde worlde soone olemniz'd.

TIT

ad to shew in perfect sight ing was in the world contaynd, lowest earth and hevens hight, the looker appertaynd: e had wrought, or frend had faynd,

overed was, ne ought mote pas, secret from the same remaynd; und and hollow shaped was, world itselfe, and seemd a world

ers not, that reades so wonderous 37 es wonder, that has red the Towre Aegyptian Phao long did lurke ns vew, that none might her dis-

ht all men vew out of her bowre? mæe it for his lemans sake l of glasse, by Magicke powre, impregnable did make; [brake.

he glassy globe that Merlin made, nto king Ryence for his gard, foes his kingdome might invade, 1ew at home before he hard ereof, and so them still debar'd. nous Present for a Prince. worke of infinite reward,

fortuned fayre Britomarı hers closet to repayre; he from her reserv'd apart. selv daughter and his havre; n she had espyde that mirrhour

as could bewray, and foes convince: Realme, had it remayned ever

rhile therein she vewd in vaine: izing of the vertues rare eof spoken were, she gan againe inke of that mote to her selfe per-

alleth, in the gentlest harts ove hath highest set his throne, izeth in the bitter smarts

So thought this Mayd (as maydens use to done)

Whom fortune for her husband would allot: Not that she lusted after any one, For she was pure from blame of sinfull blott: Yet wist her life at last must lincke in that same knot.

Eftsoones there was presented to her eye

A comely knight, all arm'd in complete wize, Through whose bright ventayle, lifted up on His manly face, that did his foes agrize, [hye, And frends to termes of gentle truce entize, Lookt foorth, as Phœbus face out of the east Betwixt two shady mountaynes doth arize: Portly his person was, and much increast Through his Heroicke grace and honorable

XXV His crest was covered with a couchant Hownd, And all his armour seemd of antique mould, But wondrous massy and assured sownd, And round about yfretted all with gold, In which there written was, with cyphres old, Achilles armes, which Arthegall did win: And on his shield enveloped sevenfold s love was false he with a peaze it He bore a crowned little Ermelin, That deckt the azure field with her fayre pouldred skin.

The Damzell well did vew his Personage And liked well, ne further fastned not, But went her way; ne her unguilty age Did weene, unwares, that her unlucky lot Lay hidden in the bottome of the pot. Of hurt unwist most daunger doth redound; But the false Archer, which that arrow shot So slyly that she did not feele the wound, Did smyle full smoothly at her weetlesse wofull stound.

XXVII

Thenceforth the fether in her lofty crest, Ruffed of love, gan lowly to availe; And her prowd portaunce and her princely gest With which she earst tryumphed, now did quaile: Sad, solemne, sowre, and full of fancies fraile, She woxe; yet wist she nether how, nor why.

She wist not, silly Mayd, what she did aile, Yet wist she was not well at ease perdy; Yet thought it was not love, but some melancholy.

XXVIII

So soone as Night had with her pallid hew Defaste the beautie of the shyning akye, And refte from men the worldes desired at to him buxome are and prone: She with her Nourse adowne to sleepe did lye Hat sleepe full far away from her did fly: In stead thereof sad sighes and sorrowes deepe Kept watch and ward about her warily, That amoght she did but wayle, and offset

steepe [she did worse, Her dainty couch with tours which closely

XXIX

And if that any drop of slombring rest.
Did channes to still into her weary spright.
When feelds nature felt her selfs opposest,
Streight-way with dreames, and with fantas
tick sight.

Of dreadfull things, the same was put to flight; That oft out of her bed she did astart, As one with vew of ghastly feends affright: The gan she to renew her former smart, [hart, And thinke of that fayre visage written in her

XXX

One night, when she was tost with such unrest, [hight,
Her aged Nourse, whose name was Glauce
Feeling her leape out of her loathed nest,
Betwixt her feeble armes her quickly keight,
And downe againe her in her warme bed dight:
Ah! my deare daughter, ah! my dearest
dread,

What uncouth fit,' (sayd she) 'what evill plight Hath thee opprest, and with sad drearyhead Chaunged thy lively cheare, and living made thee dead?

XXXI

'For not of nought these suddein ghastly All night afflict thy naturall repose; | feares And all the day, when as thine equall peares Their fit disports with faire delight doc chose, Thou in dull corners doest thy selfe inclose; Ne tastest Princes pleasures, ne doest spred Abroad thy fresh youths fayrest flowre, but lose

Both leafe and fruite, both too untimely shed, As one in wilfull bale for ever buried.

XXXII

'The time that mortall men their weary cares Do lay away, and all wilde beastes do rest, And every river eke his course forbeares, Then doth this wicked evill thee infest, And rive with thousand throbs thy thrilled

brest:
Like an huge Actn' of deepe engulfed gryefe,
Sorrow is heaped in thy hollow chest, [ryfe,
Whence foorth it breakes in sighes and anguish
As smoke and sulphure mingled with confused
stryfe,

XXXIII

Ay me? how much I feare least leve it But if that leve it be, as sure I real By knowen signes and passions which I be it worthy of thy race and ovall seal. Then I avow, by this most sared best Of my deare foster childe, to ease thy gre

And win thy will! Therefore away on the For death nor damnger from the des relations Shall me delaure: tell me therefore, my leliefe!

XXXIV

So having says, her twixt her arms to Shee streightly strayed, and colled tested And every trembling joynt and every use Shee softly felt, and rubbed busily. To doe the frosen cold away to fly; And her faire deawy eies with kines den Shee ofte did hathe, and ofte againe didd And ever her importund not to feare. To let the secret of her hart to her appears

XXXV

The Damzell pauzed; and then thus fearle 'Ah! Nurse, what neelecth thee to eka Is not enough that I alone doe dye, [augh But it must doubled bee with death of twa Fornought for me but death there doth remain 'O daughter deare!' (said she) 'despense whit;

For never sore but might, a salve obtaine That blinded God, which hath ye blindly a

Another arrow hath your lovers hart to

'But mine is not' (quoth she) 'like o wownd;

For which no reason can finde remedy.

'Was never such, but mote the like be few
(Said she) 'and though no reason may an
Salve to your sore, yet love can higher st
Then reasons reach, and oft hath was
donne.'

'But neither God of love nor God of skyr Can doe ' (said she) 'that which came donne,' [ere bege 'Things ofte impossible ' (quoth she) 's

XXXVII

These idle wordes' (said she) doe no aswage
My stubborne smart, but more annoise For no, no usuall fire, no usuall rage
Yt is, O Nourse! which on my life doth & And sucks the blood which from my hart

bleed:
But since thy faithful zele lets me not by
My crime, (if crime it be) I will it rest.

wyde,

XXXVIII

is, nor other living wight, hope I might unto me draw: hade and semblant of a knight. or person yet I never saw, ected to loves cruell law: day, as me misfortune led. rs wondrous mirrhour saw, with that seeming goodly-hed, hidden hooke with baite I swal-

XXXIX

ath infixed faster hold leeding bowells, and so sore h in this same fraile fleshly mould, ntrailes flow with poisnous gore, groweth daily more and more; nning sore finde remedee, y hard fortune to deplore, , as the leafe faln from the tree. nake one end of my daies and e !'

(said she) 'what need ye be disye such Monster of your minde? e uncouth thing I was affrayd, , contrary unto kinde ; tion nothing straunge I finde; reason can you aye reprove semblaunt pleasing most your [move?

our heart whence ye cannot reou, but in the tyranny of love.

trabian Myrrhe did set her mynd. iblis spend her pining hart; ir native flesh against al kynd, purpose used wicked art: siphaë a more monstrous part, Bul, and learnd a beast to bee. ull lustes who loaths not, which

of nature and of modestee? uch lewdnes bands from his faire nee.

XLII

my Deare, (welfare thy heart, my inge beginning had, yet fixed is worthy may perhaps appeare; emes bestowed not amis:

r pere it is, whose love hath gryde Joy thereof have thou and eternall blis!' est of late, and launched this With that, upleaning on her elbow weake, Her alablaster brest she soft did kis, [quake Which all that while shee felt to pant and As it an Earth-quake were: at last she thus bespake.

'Beldame, your words doe worke me litle ease; For though my love be not so lewdly bent As those ye blame, yet may it nought appease My raging smart, ne ought my flame relent, But rather doth my helpelesse griefe augment; For they, how ever shamefull and unkinde, Yet did possesse their horrible intent; Short end of sorrowes they therby did finde; So was their fortune good, though wicked were their minde.

XLIV

'But wicked fortune mine, though minde be good, Can have no ende nor hope of my desire, But feed on shadowes whiles I die for food And like a shadowe wexe, whiles with entire Affection I doe languish and expire, I, fonder then Cephisus foolish chyld, Who, having vewed in a fountaine shere His face, was with the love thereof beguyld; I, fonder, love a shade, the body far exyld.

XLV

'Nought like,' (quoth shee) 'for that same wretched boy Was of him selfe the ydle Paramoure Both love and lover, without hope of joy, For which he faded to a watry flowre: But better fortune thine, and better howre Which lov'st the shadow of a warlike knight; No shadow but a body hath in powre:
That body, wheresoever that it light, [might, May learned be by cyphers, or by Magicke

XLVI

' But if thou may with reason yet represse The growing evill, ere it strength have gott, And thee abandond wholy do possesse Against it strongly strive, and yield thee nott Til thou in open fielde adowne be smott: But if the passion mayster thy fraile might, So that needs love or death must bee thy lott, Then, I avow to thee, by wrong or right To compas thy desire, and find that loved knight.

XLVII

Her chearefull words much cheard the feeble spright Of the sicke virgin, that her downe she layd In her warms last to storps, if that she might; And the old-woman curvisely displayed. The distinct about her sound with hony upd; So that at last a little cropping storps. Summid her some: Non, therewith well appeal. The decades formy down in the syl did storps. And act her by to watch, and sett her by to

NEWS PAR

ELVIN

Earsly, the morrow next, before that day flix beyons face did to the world revels. They both uprose and tooks their ready way. Unto the Church, their praiers to appele With great devotion, and with little sele: For the faire Dumed from the body herse. Her love-sides hart to other thoughts did stealer, And that old Dume said many an idle verse, Out of her daughters hart foul fancies to re-

XLLX

Betourned home, the royall Infant fell Into her former fitt; for-why no powre Nor guidannee of herselfe in her did dwell: But th' aged Nourse, her calling to her bowre, Had guthered Rew, and Savine, and the flower Of Camphora, and Calomint, and Dill; All which she in a earthen Pot did poure, And to the brim with Coltwood did it fill, And many drops of milk and blood through it did spill.

L

Then, taking thrise three heares from off her head, Them trebly breaded in a threefold lace, And round about the Pete month be closed;

And, after having whispered a spec Certain and wards with hallow voice a Slace in the virgin taysh, thrice says is 1 Come daughter, come; come, splt a face;

Spitt thrise upon me, thrise upon me Th' uneven number for this basines for."

1.2

That sayd, her round about she from a Sae turned her contrary to the Same Thrise she her turned contrary, and ne All contrary; for she the right did it And ever what she did was straight a So thought she to under her daughte But how, that is in gentle brest begy No yelle charmes so lightly may rem That well can witnesse who by tryal prove.

LIT

Ne ought it mote the noble Mayd's Ne slake the fury of her cruell flame, But that shee still did waste, and That, through long languour and har brame.

She shortly like a pyned ghost becam Which long hath waited by the Stygic That when old Glauce saw, for fears in Of her miscarriage should in her be f She wist not how t'amend, nor how it stond.

CANTO III.

Merlin bewrayes to Britomart
The state of Arthegall;
And shews the famous Progeny,
Which from them springen shall,

в

Mosr sacred fyre, that burnest mightily
In living brests, ykindled first above
Emongst th'eternall spheres and lamping sky,
And thence pourd into men, which men call
Love! [move
Not that same, which doth base affections

Not that same, which doth base affections. In brutish mindes, and filthy lust inflame,
But that sweete fit that doth true beautic love,
And choseth vertue for his dearest Dame,
Whence apring all noble deedes and never
dying fame:

II

Well did Antiquity a God thee deer That over mortall mindes hast so gre To order them as best to thee doth as And all their actions to direct aright. The fatall purpose of divine foresight Thou doest effect in destined descents Through deepe impression of the might,

And stirredst up th' Heroës high inte Which the late world admyres for moniments. TIT

d dartes in none doe triumph When so he coun

ofe in any of thy powre then in this royall Maid of yore, eke an unknowne Paramoure. lds end, through many a bitter rayse

wo loynes thou afterwardes did ruites of matrimoniall bowre, th the earth have spredd their ravse. romp of gold eternally displayes.

) my dearest sacred Dame! heebus and of Memorye, noble with immortall name Forthies, from antiquitye, olume of Eternitye: ! and recount from hence overaines goodly auncestrye, ew degrees, and long protense, istly brought unto her Excellence.

aves within her troubled mind st to cure this Ladies griefe; es she sought, but none could find, or charmes, nor counsel, that is

med'cine for sick harts reliefe: are she tooke, and greater feare should her turne to fowle repriefe sch, when so her father deare earest daughters hard misfortune

er avisde, that he which made r, wherein the sicke Damosell vewed her straunge lovers shade earned Merlin, well could tell ast of heaven the man did dwell, means his love might best be it:

eyond the Africk Ismael Peru he were, she thought ough infinite endevour to have

e, that none might them bewray, m, that is now by chaunge [way: r-Merdin cald, they tooke their .ve, farre from the vew of day,

That of no living wight he mote be found, eld with his sprights encompast round.

And, if thou ever happen that same way To traveill, go to see that dreadful place. It is an hideous hollow cave (they say) Under a Rock that lyes a litle space From the swift Barry, tombling downe apace Emongst the woody hilles of Dynevowre: But dare thou not, I charge, in any cace To enter into that same balefull Bowre, For feare the cruell Feendes should thee unwares devowre:

But standing high aloft low lay thine eare, And there such ghastly noyse of yron chaines And brasen Caudrons thou shalt rombling heare, [paines Which thousand sprights with long enduring Doe tosse, that it will stonn thy feeble braines; And oftentimes great grones, and grievous stownds. straines, When too huge toile and labour them con-And oftentimes loud strokes and ringing sowndes [rebowndes. From under that deepe Rock most horribly

The cause, some say, is this: A litle whyle Before that Merlin dyde, he did intend A brasen wall in compas to compyle About Cairmardin, and did it commend Unto these Sprights to bring to perfect end: During which worke the Lady of the Lake, Whom long he lov'd, for him in hast did send; Who, thereby forst his workemen to forsake, Them bownd till his retourne their labour not to slake.

ХI

In the meane time, through that false Ladies traine He was surprisd, and buried under beare. Ne ever to his worke returned againe : Nath'lesse those feends may not their work

forbeare, So greatly his commandement they feare, But there doe toyle and traveile day and night, hem selves disguising both in Untill that brasen wall they up doe reare; For Merlin had in Magick more insight Then ever him before, or after, living wight:

Merlin whylome wont (they say) For he by wordes could call out of the sky ronne, low underneath the ground, Both Sunne and Moone, and make them him obay;

The Land to sea, and sea to maineland dry, And darksom night he eke could turne to day: Huge hostes of men he could alone dismay, And hostes of men of meanest thinges could When so him list his enimies to fray; [frame, That to this day, for terror of his fame,

The feends do quake when any him to them does name.

XIII

And, sooth, men say that he was not the sonne Of mortall Syre or other living wight, But wondrously begotten, and begonne By false illusion of a guilefull Spright On a faire Lady Nonne, that whilome hight Matilda, daughter to Pubidius, Who was the lord of Mathraval by right, And coosen unto king Ambrosius;

Whence he indued was with skill so merveilous.

They, here arriving, staid awhile without, Ne durst adventure rashly in to wend, For dread of daunger which it might portend; Untill the hardy Mayd (with love to frend) First entering, the dreadfull Mage there found Deepe busied bout worke of wondrous end, And writing straunge characters in the grownd, With which the stubborne feendes he to his service bownd.

He nought was moved at their entraunce bold,

For of their comming well he wist afore: Yet list them bid their businesse to unfold, As if ought in this world in secrete store Were from him hidden, or unknowne of yore. Then Glauce thus: 'Let not it thee offend, That we thus rashly through thy darksom dore

Unwares have prest; for either fatall end, Or other mightie cause, us two did hither send.

XVI

He bad tell on; And then she thus began. Now have three Moones with borrowd browan. thers light Thrise shined faire, and thrise seemd dim and Sith a sore evill, which this virgin bright

Tormenteth and doth plonge in dolefull plight, First rooting tooke; but what thing it mote

Or whence it sprong, I can not read aright: With that the Prophet still awhile did a But this I read, that, but if remedee

Thou her afford, full shortly I her dead shall Most noble Virgin, that by fatall lore

XXII

Therewith th' Enchaunter softly gantes Therewith the Lachander and At her smooth speeches, weeting inly with that she to him dissembled womanish as the lack at the l And to her said: 'Beldame, by that ye' More neede of leach-crafte hath your Dan Then of my skill: who helpe may have where,

In vaine seekes wonders out of Magick op Th' old woman wox half blanck those we And yet was loth to let her purpose in

appeare;

XVIII

And to him said : 'Yf any leaches skill Or other learned meanes, could have m This my deare daughters deepe engrand Certes I should be loth thee to molest; But this sad evill, which doth her infest Doth course of naturall cause farre excess And housed is within her hollow brot. That either seemes some cursed witched Or evill spright, that in her doth such ton

The wisard could no lenger beare her but But, brusting forth in laughter, to her so Glauce, what needes this colourable were To cloke the cause that hath it selfe been Ne ye, fayre Britomartis, thus arayd, More hidden are then Sunne in cloudy Whom thy good fortune, having fate old Hath hither brought for succour to appear The which the powres to thee are please revele.

The doubtfull Mayd, seeing her selfe Was all abasht, and her pure yvory Into a cleare Carnation suddeine dyde; As fayre Aurora, rysing hastily, Doth by her blushing tell that she did by All night in old Tithonus frozen bed. Whereof she seemes ashamed inwardly But her olde Nourse was nought dish But vauntage made of that which Media ared;

And sayd; 'Sith then thou knowest all griefe, (For what doest not thou knowe?) of gr

pray. Pitty our playnt, and yield us meet relief With that the Prophet still awhile did st Hast learn'd to love, let no whit thee de

me that meetes thee in the dore, pe fits thy tender hart oppres-

all things excellent begin; ed deepe must be that Tree bodied braunches shall not lin vens hight forth stretched bee: rombe a famous Progenee

it of the auncient Trojan blood, vive the sleeping memoree intique Peres, the hevens brood and Asian rivers stayned with юd.

XXIII

ings, and sacred Emperours, fspring, shall from thee descend; es, and most mighty warriours, ir conquests through all lands

yed kingdomes shall amend: ons, broken with long warre, eare, and mightily defend forren foe that commes from

peace compound all civill jarre.

XXIV

Britomart, thy wandring eye rares in charmed looking glas, it course of hevenly destiny, all providence, that has aunce, to bring his will to pas: ne is thy fortune ill,

owest knight that ever was. nit thy wayes unto his will, dew meanes thy destiny fulfill.

aide Glauce) 'thou Magitian, shall she out seeke, or what ıke? [man? know, how shall she finde the

es her to toyle, sith fates can

elves their purpose to pertake?'

Britomart, is Arthegall: [bee And, if he then with victorie can line the land of Fayeree,

borne, ne sib at all

To Elfes, but sprong of seed terrestriall, And whylome by false Faries stolne away, Whyles yet in infant cradle he did crall; Ne other to himselfe is knowne this day,

But that he by an Elfe was gotten of a Fay:

XXVII ' But sooth he is the sonne of Gorloïs, And brother unto Cador, Cornish king;

And for his warlike feates renowmed is, From where the day out of the sea doth Untill the closure of the Evening: [spring, From thence him, firmely bound with faithfull band, [bring To this his native soyle thou backe shalt Strongly to ayde his countrey to withstand The powre of forreine Paynims which invade thy land.

XXVIII

'Great and thereto his mighty puissaunce
And dreaded name shall give in that sad day; Where also proofe of thy prow valiaunce Thou then shalt make, t increase thy lover's pray.
Long time ye both in armes shall beare great Till thy wombes burden thee from them do call, And his last fate him from thee take away; Too rathe cut off by practise criminall
Of secrete foes, that him shall make in mischiefe fall.

XXIX 'With thee yet shall he leave, for memory

Of his late puissaunce, his ymage dead, That living him in all activity To thee shall represent. He, from the head Of his coosen Constantius, without dread Shall take the crowne that was his fathers right, [stead: And therewith crowne himselfe in th' others Then shall he issew forth with dreadfull might Against his Saxon foes in bloody field to fight.

'Like as a Lyon that in drowsie cave thus: 'Indeede the fates are Hath long time slept, himselfe so shall he smake; [brave]
Specifically all the world do specifically all the

hom heavens have ordaynd to But the third time shall fayre accordance

He shall his dayes with peace bring to his earthly In.

'His sonne, hight Vortipore, shall him suc-In kingdome, but not in felicity; Ceede Yet shall he long time warre with happy speed, And with great honour many batteills try; But at the last to th' importunity Of froward fortune shall be forst to yield : But his sonne Malgo shall full mightily Avenge his fathers losse with speare and shield, And his proud foes discomfit in victorious

XXXII

'Behold the man! and tell me, Britomart, If ay more goodly creature thou didst see? How like a Gyaunt in each manly part Beares he himselfe with portly majestee, That one of th' old Heroës seemes to bee! He the six Islands, comprovinciall In auncient times unto great Britainee, Shall to the same reduce, and to him call Their sondry kings to do their homage severall.

XXXIII

'All which his sonne Careticus awhile Shall well defend, and Saxons powre suppresse; Untill a straunger king, from unknowne soyle Arriving, him with multitude oppresse; Great Gormond, having with huge mightinesse Ireland subdewd, and therein fixt his throne, Like a swift Otter, fell through emptinesse, Shall overswim the sea, with many one Of his Norveyses, to assist the Britons fone.

XXXIV

'He in his furie all shall overronne, And holy Church with faithlesse handes deface, That thy sad people, utterly fordonne, Shall to the utmost mountaines fly apace, Was never so great waste in any place, Nor so fowle outrage doen by living men; For all thy Citties they shall sacke and race, And the greene grasse that groweth they shall

That even the wilde beast shall dy in starved

XXXV

"Whiles thus thy Britons doe in languour pine, Proud Etheldred shall from the North arise, Serving th' ambitious will of Augustine, Serving th' ambitious win of Augustian And, passing Dee, with hardy enterprise
And, passing Dee, with hardy enterprise
And them with plagues and murrins per Consume, till all their warlike puissu

twise, And Bangor with massacred Martyrs fill, But the third time shall rew his foolhardise: For Cadwan, pittying his peoples ill, [kill.] Yet after all these sorrowes, and have Shall stoutly him defeat, and thousand Saxons Of dying people, during eight years.

XXXX

But after him, Cadwallin mightily On his sonne Edwin all those win Ne shall availe the wicked soroer Of false Pellite his purposes to break But him shall slay, and on a gallown Shall give th' enchaunter his unhappy Then shall the Britons, late dismaydands From their long vassalage gin to respond Andon their Paynim foes avenge than me

'Ne shall he yet his wrath so mitigate Till both the sonnes of Edwin be have a Offricke and Osricke, twinnes unfortan Both slaine in battaile upon Laybune Together with the king of Louthisne, Hight Adin, and the king of Orkery, Both joynt partakers of their fatall pays But Penda, fearefull of like desteny, I Shall yield him selfe his liegeman, and

XXXVIII

' Him shall he make his fatall Instrum T' afflict the other Saxons unsubdewd; He marching forth with fury insolent Against the good king Oswald, who into With heavenly powre, and by Angels re-Al holding crosses in their hands on by Shall him defeate withouten blood imbro Of which that field, for endlesse memor Shall Hevenfield be cald to all posterity.

XXXXIX

Whereat Cadwallin wroth shall forth is And an huge hoste into Northumberla With which he godly Oswald shall sub White which he gonly cowain and and crowne with martiredome his sacred Whose brother Oswin, daunted with like With price of silver shall his kingdom And Penda, seeking him adowne to be the company of t Shall tread adowne, and doe him fowly But shall with guifts his Lord Cadwallin

Then shall Cadwallin die; and then the Of Britons eke with him attonce shall de Ne shall the good Cadwallader, with pa Or powre, be hable it to remedy, When the full time, prefixt by desting, Shal be expired of Britons regiment: spent.

XLL

Yet after all these sorrowes, and hage



THE FAERIE QUEENE.

t yielding to his ills, , where long in wretched cace ning to his native place, n staide from his intent: have decreed to displace their sinnes dew punishment ns over-give their government.

d woe, and everlasting woe, i babe that shal be borne dome of his fathers foe! aptive; late lord, now forlorne; och; the cruell victors scorne; incely bowre to wastefull wood! lpe me to lament and mourne the antique Trojan blood, nger here then ever any stood?

XLIII

vas full deepe empassioned efe, and for her peoples sake, roes so plaine he fashioned: re, at length him thus bespake: hevens fury never slake, : huge relent it selfe at last? nisery late mercy make, name for ever be defaste, off the earth their memory be

terme' (savd he) 'is limited, raldome Britons shall abide; volution measured raungers shal be notifide: [plide, re hundreth yeares shalbe supmer rule restor'd shal bee, rtune fates all satisfide: s their most obscuritee, hall ofte breake forth, that men re may see.

XLV

alfe a brave ensample shew, nges his friendship shall intreat; ha shall goodly well indew inds with skill of just and trew: Conan also shall upreare ead, and the old sparkes renew ge, that his foes shall feare, aine the kingdom he from them beare.

First ill, and after ruled wickedly; For, ere two hundred yeares be full outronne, There shall a Raven, far from rising Sunne, With his wide wings upon them fiercely fly, And bid his faithlesse chickens overronne The fruitfull plaines, and with fell cruelty In their avenge tread downs the victors surquedry.

XI.VII

'Yet shall a third both these and thine subdew

There shall a Lion from the sea-bord wood Of Neustria come roring, with a crew Of hungry whelpes, his battailous bold brood, Whose clawes were newly dipt in cruddy blood,

That from the Daniske Tyrants head shall rend Th' usurped crowne, as if that he were wood, And the spoile of the countrey conquered Emongst his young ones shall divide with bounty hed.

XLVIII

'Tho, when the terme is full accomplished, There shall a sparke of fire, which hath longwhile

Bene in his ashes raked up and hid Bee freshly kindled in the fruitfull Ile Of Mona, where it lurked in exile; Which shall breake forth into bright burning flame,

And reach into the house that beares the stile Of roiall majesty and soveraine name: So shall the Briton blood their crowne agayn reclame.

XLIX

'Thenceforth eternall union shall be made Betweene the nations different afore, And sacred Peace shall lovingly persuade The warlike minds to learne her goodly lore, And civile armes to exercise no more: Then shall a royall Virgin raine, which shall Stretch her white rod over the Belgicke shore, icke, whose surname shal be And the great Castle smite so sore withall,

That it shall make him shake, and shortly learn to fall.

'But yet the end is not.'-There Merlin stayd,

As overcomen of the spirites powre, Or other ghastly spectacle dismayd, That secretly he saw, yet note discoure: Which suddein fitt, and halfe extatick stoure, When the two fearefull wemen saw, they grew Saxons selves all peaceably wae, which they from Britons Hee turnd againe, and chearfull looks as earst

did shew.

2.2

Then, when them selves they well instructed Of all that needed them to be inquird, They both, conceiving hope of comfort glad

With lighter hearts unto their home retird; Where they in secret counsell close conspirit, How to effect so hard an enterprize, And to possesse the purpose they desird: Now this, now that, twixt them they did devize, And diverse plots did frame to maske in strange

LII

At last the Nourse in her foolhardy wit Conceiv'd a bold devise, and thus bespake: 'Daughter, I deeme that counsel aye most fit, That of the time doth dew advauntage take. Ye see that good king Uther now doth make Strong warre upon the Paynim brethren, hight

Octa and Oza, whome hee lately brake Beside Cayr Verolame in victorious fight, That now all Britany doth burne in armes

bright.

disguise.

LIN

'That, therefore, uought our passage may empeach,

Let us in feigned armes our selves disguize, And our weake hands (need makes good schollers) teach

The dreadful speare and shield to exercize: Ne certes, daughter, that same warlike wize, I weene, would you misseeme; for ye beene tall,

And large of limbe t'atchieve an hard emprize: Ne ought ye want but skil, which practize small Wil bring, and shortly make you a mayd Martiall.

And, sooth, it ought your corage much inflame

To heare so often, in that royall hous, From whence, to none inferior, ye came, Bards tell of many wemen valorous, Which have full many feats adventurous Performd, in paragone of proudest men: The bold Bunduca, whose victorious [dolen; Exployts made Rome to quake; stout Guen-Renowmed Martia; and redoubted Emmilen.

"And, that which more then all the rest may sway,

Late dayes ensample, which these eyes beheld : In the last field before Menevia,

I saw a Saxon Virgin, the which Great Ulfin thrise upon the bloo And, had not Carados her hand t From rash revenge, she had him a Yet Carados himselfe from her DATES.

LVI 'Ah! read,' (quoth Britomart)

* Fayre Angela (quoth she) * me No whit lesse fayre then terrible She hath the leading of a Martia And mightie people, dreaded mor The other Saxons, which doe, for And love, themselves of her nan Therefore, faire Infant, ber ensar Unto thy selfe, and equall corage

Her harty wordes so deepe into Of the yong Damzell sunke, that Of warlike armes in her forthwith And generous stout courage did That she resolv'd, unweeting to l Advent'rous knighthood on her s And counseld with her Nourse To turne into a massy habergeen And bad her all things put in res

Th' old woman nought that nee But all thinges did conveniently It fortuned (so time their turne of A band of Britons, ryding on for Few dayes before, had gotten a g Of Saxon goods; emongst the wh A goodly Armour, and full rich a Which long'd to Angela, the Sax All fretted round with gold, an beseene.

The same, with all the other orn King Ryence caused to be hange In his chiefe Church, for endlesse Of his successe and gladfull vice Of which her selfe avising readil In th' evening late old Glauce th Faire Britomart, and, that same Downe taking, her therein appare Well as she might, and with bra garnished.

Beside those armes there stoo

speare, Which Bladud made by Magick And usd the same in battell aye Which Uther with those forrein Pagans held, Sith which it had beene here press

it virtues proved long afore: ight so fast in sell could sit, rforce unto the ground it bore, she tooke and shield which hong purpose fit and shield of great powre, for her

T.YI

she had the virgin all arayd, rnesse which did hang thereby n equall armes accompany, Squyre attend her carefully them espy, The Redcrosse Knight diverst, but forth rode the back waies, that none might Britomart.

Covered with secret cloud of silent night, Themselves they forth convaid, and passed forward right.

T.XII

Ne rested they, till that to Facry lond They came, as Merlin them directed late: Where, meeting with this Redcrosse Knight, she fond Of diverse thinges discourses to dilate, elfe she dight, that the yong Mayd But most of Arthegall and his estate. At last their wayes so fell, that they mote part: Squyre attend her carefully.

Then each to other, well affectionate, ir ready Steedes they clombe full Friendship professed with unfained bart.

CANTO IV.

Bold Marinell of Britomart Is throwne on the Rich strond: Faire Florimell of Arthure is Long followed, but not fond.

the Antique glory now become, me wont in wemen to appeare? :he brave atchievements doen by speare. he batteilles, where the shield and conquests which them high did

r made for famous Poets verse, ill men so oft abasht to heare? all dead, and laide in dolefull herse, ey onely sleepe, and shall againe

dead, then woe is me therefore; sleepe, O let them soone awake! ong I burne with envy sore warlike feates which Homere spake thesilee, which made a lake blood so ofte in Trojan plaine; reade, how stout Debora strake a, and how Camill' hath slaine

rsilochus, I swell with great dis-

HI and all that els had puissaunce, i noble Britomart compare, glorie of great valiaunce, chastitee and vertue rare, goodly deedes doe well declare.
ie stock, from which the branches yeares so faire a blossome bare,

As thee, O Queene! the matter of my song, Whose lignage from this Lady I derive along.

Who when, through speaches with the Red-

crosse Knight, She learned had th' estate of Arthegall, And in each point her selfe informd aright, A friendly league of love perpetuall She with him bound, and Congé tooke withall Then he forth on his journey did proceede To seeke adventures which mote him befall, And win him worship through his warlike deed, Which alwaies of his paines he made the chiefest meed.

But Britomart kept on her former course, Ne ever dofte her armes, but all the way Grew pensive through that amarous discourse, By which the Redcrosse knight did earst display Her lovers shape and chevalrous aray: A thousand thoughts she fashiond in her mind,

And in her feigning fancie did pourtray Him such as fittest she for love could find, Wise, warlike, personable, courteous, and kind.

With such selfe-pleasing thoughts her wound she fedd, And thought so to beguile her grievous smart; But so her smart was much more grievous bredd And the deepe wound more deep engord her

hart,

ar bought of lead a ber hour note <mark>new Liver. For her greek-medice w</mark>i n Sens de note de monte de monte en mest. Neuropau el labor abli den montes com ear thing his mayor and the a term term interest. The winds his time continues of their simulated interest. The rings his time seasonable an length wing their 400.75

3.7

There are all traces from the algorithms beauti-And the out of the rest to the mean steel.
Best ter at many and there are being make. seed, or in the promitted for a first term of the comment of the c Therear we supper Lernel and after than over-

7-4, 7-2

in III (Lin Hesi in Francis est seud terroriem normagraelle. Milleren (in in Hesile) autre sein Hereld Leug Zannt et nie in hereld hag ein ill heldele. iy beriş imel Officer and an attention and the second

The article of the second of t eller ere.

"Figures on Solite vessell, mazd and crackt Turnum hop strong duffets and cutrametes of term.

tions are fore, but needed it must be wrankt igh re-ke, or on the emply shall oves. 1 P. St. . . The whiles that love it steres, and fortune

Love, my lewd Pilott, bath a restlence minde: And fortune, Bote-waine, no assurance knowes : But saile withouten starres gainst tyde and I read thee soone retyre, whiles thou hast winde: [blinde? Least afterwards it be too late to take thy

How can they other doe, sith both are hold and

'Thou God of windes, that raignest in the seas,

That raignest also in the Continent. At last blow up some gentle gale of ease,

The which may bring my ship, ere it be rent, Unto the gladsome port of her intent. Then, when I shall my selfe in safety see,

A table, for eternall moniment Of thy great grace and my great jeopardee, Great Neptune, I avow to hallow unto thee!

XI

Then alghing softly sore, and inly deepe, Sho shut up all her plaint in privy griefe

Till time and the e gas vich d Her to restracte, and give her good reinb Through hope of these, which Media held

Should of her name and nation be d a the morel And here their being from the more were the more and the second works to be in house

337

Thus as she har recomfuted, sh Where far away one, all is an With heavy gadop towards he that habour seems she count, an Her Heimet, to her Cours Her former socrow into said Both mosen passions of distroubled to converting first she beates the dar Love and despitcht attonce her cours h uzh

XIII

As, when a foggy mist hath overcast. The face of bevon, and the cleare averes The world in darkenes dwels; till that # The watry Southwinde, from the seabord Utilization, doth disperse the vapour loss And to ares it selfe forth in a stormy he favre Britomart, having discoss. Her clowdy care into a wrathfull stown. The mist of griefe dissolv'd did intove LayWTE.

XIV

Eftscones, her goodly shield addressi That mortall speare she in her hand did And unto battaill did her selfe prepayre. The knight, approching, sternely her been Sir knight, that doest thy voyage rashy! By this forbidden way in my despite, Ne doest by others death ensample talks. I read thee soone retyre, whiles thou hast

XV

Ythrild with deepe disdaine of his threat.

She shortly thus: 'Fly they, that need ! Wordes fearen babes. I meane not thee To passe, but maugre thee will passe or Ne lenger stayd for th' other to reply, [had But with sharpe speare the rest made d Strongly the straunge knight ran, and st Strooke her full on the brest, that me downe

ber 6 Decline her head, and touch her croups

XVI

But she againe him in the shield did s With so flerce furie and great puissaunce,

his three-square scuchin percing

ixed she before her bore supe, the length of all her launce;

XVII

acred Oxe that carelesse stands ornes and flowry girlonds crownd, lying honor and deare bandes, dtars fume with frankincense

; fall, and with his streaming gore pillours and the holy grownd, flowres that decked him afore: Marinell upon the pretious shore.

with mortall stroke astownd.

XVIII

Mayd stavd not him to lament, ode, and kept her ready way and; which, as she over-went, owed all with rich aray pretious stones of great assay, avell mixt with golden owre: wondred much, but would not

rles, or pretious stones, an howre, ised all; for all was in her powre.

XIX he lay in deadly stonishment,

f came to his mothers eare: as the blacke-browd Cymoënt. of great Nereus, which did beare sonne unto an earthly peare, umarin; who, on a day lymph asleepe in secret wheare, ince did wander that same way, h her love, and by her closely lay,

XX knight of her begot, whom borne

her, Marinell did name; cave, as wight forlorne, s fostred up, till he became n at armes, and mickle fame th great adventures by him donne: a be suffred by that same travell, whereas he did wonne, must do battail with the Seaes sonne.

XXI

An hundred knights of honorable name his mayled hauberque, by mis- He had subdew'd, and them his vassals made glaunce. That through all Faerie lond his noble fame teele through his left side did Now blazed was, and feare did all invade, That none durst passen through that perilous glade:

cing on the sandy shore, [gore. And to advance his name and glory more, and heape, and wallowd in his Her Sea-god syre she dearely did perswade T'endow her sonne with threasure and rich store Bove all the sonnes that were of earthly wombes ybore.

XXII

them did keepe.

The God did graunt his daughters deare demaund, To doen his Nephew in all riches flow; Eftsoones his heaped waves he did commaund Out of their hollow bosome forth to throw All the huge threasure, which the sea below Had in his greedy gulfe devoured deepe, And him enriched through the overthrow And wreckes of many wretches, which did weepe And often wayle their wealth, which he from

XXIII

Shortly upon that shore there heaped was Exceeding riches and all pretious things, The spoyle of all the world; that it did pas The wealth of th' East, and pompe of Persian kings: Gold, amber, yvorie, perles, owches, rings, And all that els was pretious and deare, The sea unto him voluntary brings;

As was in all the lond of Facry, or else wheare, XXIV

That shortly he a great Lord did appeare,

Thereto he was a doughty dreaded knight, Tryde often to the scath of many Deare, That none in equall armes him matchen might: The which his mother seeing gan to feare Least his too haughtie hardines might reare Some hard mishap in hazard of his life. Forthy she oft him counseld to forbeare The bloody batteill and to stirre up strife, But after all his warre to rest his wearie knife.

And, for his more assuraunce, she inquir'd One day of Proteus by his mighty spell (For Proteus was with prophecy inspir'd) Her deare sonnes destiny to her to tell, And the sad end of her sweet Marinell: Who, through foresight of his eternall skill Bad her from womankind to keepe him well For of a woman he should have much ill: A virgin straunge and stout him should dismay or kill.

REVI

Furthy she gave him warning every day The love of women not to entertaine; A leasur too too hard for living clay From love in course of nature to refrain Yet he his mothers lore did well retains, And ever from fayre Ladies love did fly ; Yet many Ladies fayre did oft complaine, That they for love of him would algates dy:

Dy, who so list for him, he was loves enimy.

But ah I who can deceive his destiny, Or weene by warning to avoyd his fate? That, when he sleepes in most security And safest seemes, him soonest doth amate, And findeth dew effect or soone or late; So feeble is the powre of fleshly arme, His mother had him wemens love to hate. For she of womans force did feare no harme; So, weening to have arm'd him, she did quite Eftesoones the roaring billowes still and And all the griesly Monsters of the Sec disarme. Stood gaping at their gate, and would

This was that woman, this that deadly wownd, That Proteus prophecide should him dismay;

The which his mother vainely did expound To be hart-wownding love, which should assay To bring her sonne unto his last decay. So ticle be the termes of mortall state, And full of subtile sophismes, which doe play With double sences, and with false debate, T approve the unknowen purpose of eternall fate.

XXIX

Too trew the famous Marinell it found, Who, through late triall, on that wealthy Strond Inglorious now lies in sencelesse swownd,

Through heavy stroke of Britomartis hond. Which when his mother deare did understond, And heavy tidings heard, whereas she playd Amongst her watry sisters by a pond, Gathering sweete daffadillyes, to have made Gay girlonds from the Sun their forheads fayr to shade;

Eftesoones both flowres and girlonds far away Shee flong, and her faire deawy lockes yrent; To sorrow huge she turnd her former play, And gamesom merth to grievous dreriment: Shee threw her selfe downe on the Continent, Ne word did speake, but lay as in a swowne, Whiles all her sisters did for her lament With yelling outcries, and with shricking crowne. And every one did teare her girlend from her

XXXI Some as shee up out of her deadly \$40 Arose, shee had her charett to be broad And all her sisters that with her did sit Bad eke attoone their charetts to be see The, full of bitter griefe and pensife the She to her wagon clombe; clombs all 00 And forth together went with some free The waves, obedient to they beleast Them yielded ready passage, and thir

XXXII

Great Neptune stoode amazed at the Whiles on his broad rownd backe they And eke him selfe mournd at their mi plight, Yet wist not what their wailing ment; !!! For great compassion of their sorow, lill His mighty waters to them buxons be

A teme of Dolphins raunged in aray Drew the smooth charett of sad Cymos They were all taught by Triton to obsy To the long raynes at her commanden As swifte as swallowes on the warm went, That their brode flaggy finnes no for Ne bubling rowndell they behinds them? The rest, of other fishes drawen wears. Which with their finny oars the swelling

XXXIV

Soone as they bene arriv'd upon the brin Of the Rich Strond, their charets they for And let their temed fishes softly swim Along the margent of the formy shore. Least they their finnes should brook surbate sore

did sheare.

Their tender feete upon the stony gre And comming to the place, where all #1
And cruddy blood enwallowed they for
The lucklesse Marinell lying in deadly

XXXV

His mother swowned thrise, and the third Could scarce recovered bee out of her put Had she not beene devoide of mortall six Shee should not then have bene relyv'd at But, soone as life recovered had the raise Shee made so piteous mone and deare wa That the hard rocks could scarse from refraine :

sister Nymphes with one consent sobbing breaches with sad comnt.

XXXVI

ige of my selfe, (she sayd) 'that is d sonne of wretched mother borne, : high advauncement? O! is this all name, with which thee, yet ъe,

ire Nereus promist to adorne? hou of life and honor refte; hou a lumpe of earth forlorne; te life memory is lefte, irrevocable desteny bee wefte.

XXXVII

teus, father of false prophecis! ore fond that credit to thee give! worke of womans hand ywis, epe wound through these deare bers drive.

; but they that love doe live at dye doe nether love nor hate: o thee thy folly I forgive; selfe, and to accursed fate, loe ascribe: deare wisedom bought

XXXVIII

te!

ivailes it of immortall seed redd and never borne to dye? I it deeme to die with speed in woe and waylfull miserye: he utmost dolor doth abye it lives is lefte to waile his losse: se, and death felicity: rse then glad death; and greater [to engrosse

s grave, then dead the grave self

XXXIX

heavens did his dayes envie, t blis maligne, yet mote they well afford me, ere that he did die, a eies of my deare Marinell closed, and him bed farewell, fices for mother meet

not grauntre them, farewell, my sweetest shall meet!

sweetest sonne, sith we no more

they all had sorowed their fill. gan to search his griesly wownd: ey might him handle more at will, ď

Their watchet mantles frinded with silver rownd, They softly wipt away the gelly blood From th' orifice; which having well upbownd, They pourd in soveraine balme and Nectar good, [food. Good both for erthly med'cine and for hevenly

Tho when the lilly handed Liagore

(This Liagore whilome had learned skill

In leaches craft, by great Apolloes lore, Sith her whilome upon high Pindus hill He loved, and at last her wombe did fill With hevenly seed, whereof wise Pæon sprong) Did feele his pulse, shee knew there staied still Some little life his feeble sprites emong; Which to his mother told, despeyre she from her flong.

XLII

Tho, up him taking in their tender hands, They easely unto her charett beare: Her teme at her commaundement quiet stands. Whiles they the corse into her wagon reare, And strowe with flowres the lamentable beare. Then all the rest into their coches clim, And through the brackish waves their passage sheare:

And to her watry chamber swiftly carry him. XLILL

Upon great Neptunes necke they softly swim,

Deepe in the bottome of the sea her bowre Is built of hollow billowes heaped hye, Like to thicke clouds that threat a stormy shown And vauted all within, like to the Skye, In which the Gods doe dwell eternally;

There they him laide in easy couch well dight, And sent in haste for Tryphon, to apply Salves to his wounds, and medicines of might; For Tryphon of sea gods the soveraine leach is hight.

XLIV

The whiles the Nymphes sitt all about him rownd.

Lamenting his mishap and heavy plight; And ofte his mother, vewing his wide wownd, Cursed the hand that did so deadly smight Her dearest sonne, her dearest harts delight: But none of all those curses overtooke

The warlike Maide, th' ensample of that might;

But fairely well shee thryvd, and well did brooke sarmd; and, spredding on the Her noble deeds, ne her right course for ought forsooke.

XLV

Yet did false Archimage her still pursew, To bring to passe his mischievous intent, Now that he had her singled from the crew Ofcourteous knights, the Prince and Farry gent Whom late in chace of beauty excellent Shee lefte, pursewing that same foster strong; Of whose fowle outrage they impatient,

And full of firy zele, him followed long, To reskew her from shame, and to revenge her

wrong.

XLVI

Through thick and thin, through mountains and through playns,

Those two great champions did attonce pursew The fearefull damzell with incessant payns; Who from them fled, as light-foot hare from

Of hunter swifte and sent of howndes trew. At last they came unto a double way; Where, doubtfull which to take, her to reske Themselves they did dispart, each to assay Whether more happy were to win so goodly

pray.

XLVII

But Timias, the Princes gentle Squyre, That Ladies love unto his Lord forlent, And with proud envy and indignant yre After that wicked foster fiercely went: So beene they three three sondry wayes ybent; But fayrest fortune to the Prince befell, [pent, Whose chaunce it was, that soone he did re-To take that way in which that Damozell Was fledd afore, affraid of him as feend of hell.

XLVIII

At last of her far off he gained vew. Then gan he freshly pricke his fomy steed, And ever as he nigher to her drew, So evermore he did increase his speed, And of each turning still kept wary heed: Alowd to her he oftentimes did call,

To doe away vaine doubt and needlesse dreed :

Full myld to her he spake, and oft let fall Many meeke wordes to stay and comfort her withall.

XLIX

But nothing might relent her hasty flight, So deepe the deadly feare of that foule swaine Was earst impressed in her gentle spright, Like as a fearefull Dove, which through the raine

Of the wide ayre her way does cut amaine, Having farre off espyde a Tassell gent, Which after her his nimble winges doth straine,

Doubleth ber hast for feare to bee f And with her pireons cleaves the

With no lesse hast, and eke with no! That fearefull Ladie fledd from To her no evill thought nor evill de-

Yet former feare of being fowly she Carried her forward with her first it And though, oft looking backward Her selfe freed from that foster inso

And that it was a knight which no Yet she no lesse the knight feard villein rude.

His uncouth shield and strange dismayd,

Whose like in Faery lond were selde That fast she from him fledd, no les Then of wilde beastes if she had che Yet he her followd still with corage So long, that now the golden Hear Was mounted high in top of heaver And warnd his other brethren joye To light their blessed lamps in Joy hous,

LIE

All suddeinly dim wox the dampis And griesly shadowes covered heavy That now with thousand starres w fayre:

Which when the Prince beheld, a lotl And that perforce, for want of lenge He mote surceasse his suit, and loss Of his long labour, he gan fowly wy His wicked fortune that had turnd And cursed night that reft from him scope.

Tho, when her wayes he could descry, But to and fro at disaventure strayed

Like as a ship, whose Lodestar sude Covered with cloudes her Pilott mayd;

His wearisome pursuit perforce he s And from his loftic steed dismounti Did let him forage. Downe himself Upon the grassy ground to sleepe a t The cold earth was his couch, the h his pillow.

But gentle Sleepe envyde him any i In stead thereof sad sorow and disda

ap did vexe his noble brest, I Fancies bett his ydle brayne th wings, the sights of semblants

ish that Lady faire mote bee lueene, for whom he did com-

'aery Queene were such as shee; ty Night he blamed bitterlie.

I.V

ou foule Mother of annoyaunce

ie death, and nourse of woe, begot in heaven, but for thy bad shape thrust downe to hell

e grim floud of Cocytus slow,
; is in Herebus black hous,
us, thy husband, is the foe
ds,) where thou ungratious
r dayes doest lead in horrour
s.

LVI

th' eternall Maker need of thee his continuall course to keepe, I thinges deface, ne lettest see of his worke? Indeed, in sleepe I body that doth love to steepe imbes, and drowne his baser mind, thee oft, and oft from Stygian

is goddesse, in his errour blind, ume Natures handmaide chearing kind.

LVII

wote, that to an heavy hart roote and nourse of bitter cares, w, renewer of old smarts: t thou lendest rayling teares; epe thou sendest troublous feares l visions, in the which alive nage of sad death appeares: vearie spirit thou doest drive and men of happinesse deprive.

LVIII

'Under thy mantle black there hidden lye Light-shonning thefte, and traiterous intent, Abhorred bloodshed, and vile felony, Shamefull deceipt, and daunger imminent, Fowle horror, and eke hellish dreriment: All these, I wote, in thy protection bee, And light doe shonne for feare of being shent; For light ylike is loth'd of them and thee; And all that lewdnesse love doe hate the light to see.

LIX

'For day discovers all dishonest wayes,
And sheweth each thing as it is in deed:
The prayses of high God he faire displayes,
And his large bountie rightly doth areed:
Daves dearest children be the blessed seed
Which darknesse shall subdue and heaven win:
Truth is his daughter; he her first did breed
Most sacred virgin without spot of sinne.
Our life is day, but death with darknesse doth
begin.

LX

O! when will day then turne to me againe, And bring with him his long expected light? O Titan! hast to reare thy joyous waine; Speed thee to spred abroad thy beames bright, And chace away this too long lingring night; Chace her away, from whence she came, to hell: She, she it is, that hath me done despight: There let her with the damned spirits dwell, And yield her rowme to day that can it governe well.'

LXI

Thus did the Prince that wearie night outweare

In restlesse anguish and unquiet paine;
And earely, ere the morrow did upreare
His deawy head out of the Ocean maine,
He up arose, as halfe in great disclaine,
And clombe unto his steed. So forth he went
With heavy look and lumpish pace, that plaine
In him bewraid great grudge and maltalent:
His steed eke seemd t'apply his steps to his
intent.

CANTO V.

rioce Arthur beares of Florimell:

Woypen it is to see in diverse mindes How diversly love doth his pageaunts play, And shewes his powre in variable kindes: The baser wit, whose yelle thoughts alway Are wont to cleave unto the lowly clay, It stirreth up to sensuall desire, And in lewd slouth to wast his carelesse day; But in brave sprite it kindles goodly fire, That to all high desert and honour doth aspire.

Ne suffereth it uncomely idlenesse In his free thought to build her sluggish nest, Ne suffereth it thought of ungentlenesse Ever to creepe into his noble brest; But to the highest and the worthiest Lifteth it up that els would lowly fall: It lettes not fall, it lettes it not to rest; It lettes not scarse this Prince to breath at all, But to his first poursuit him forward still doth call.

Who long time wandred through the forest wyde To finde some issue thence; till that at last He met a Dwarfe that seemed terrifyde With some late perill which he hardly past, Or other accident which him aghast ; Of whom he asked, whence he lately came, And whither now he traveiled so fast? For sore he swat, and, ronning through that same [nigh lame. Thicke forest, was bescracht and both his feet

Panting for breath, and almost out of hart, The Dwarfe him answerd; 'Sir, ill mote I stay To tell the same: I lately did depart From Facry court, where I have many a day Served a gentle Lady of great sway And high accompt through out all Elfin land, Who lately left the same, and tooke this way. Her now I seeke; and if ye understand Which way she fared hath, good Sir, tell out of hand.

. What mister wight,' (said arayd?

Royally clad' (quoth he) 'in As meetest may beseeme a no Her faire lockes in rich circlet A fayrer wight did never Sum And on a Palfrey rydes more w Yet she her selfe is whiter mar The surest signe, whereby Is that she is the fairest wigh

'Now certes, swaine,' (saide l

Fast flying through this forest A foule ill-favoured foster, I h Her selfe, well as I might, I re But could not stay, so fast she Carried away with wings of sp 'Ah, dearest God!' (quoth he woe.

And wondrous ruth to all that But can ye read, Sir, how I m

'Perdy, me lever were to wee (Saide he) 'then ransome of the Or all the good that ever yet 1 But froward fortune, and too fo Such happinesse did, maulgre, And fro me reft both life and But, Dwarfe, aread what is the That through this forrest wands For of her errour straunge I h and mone.

'That Ladie is,' (quoth he) 'w The bountiest virgin and most That ever living eye, I weene, Lives none this day that may wi In stedfast chastitie and vertue The goodly ornaments of beant And is yeleped Florimell the fi Yet she loves none but one, the hight.

n-nymphes sonne, that Marinell is hight, deare Dame is loved dearely well: er none, but him, she sets delight; r delight is set on Marinell, e ets nought at all by Florimell; wher leve his mother long vgoe im, they say, forwarne through sacred

erell : me now flies, that of a forreine foe y-laine, which is the ground of all our

e daies there be since he (they say) was alaine. owre since Florimell the Court forwent, pwed never to returne againe, im alive or dead she did invent. fore, faire Sir, for love of knighthood sonour of trew Ladies, if ye may [gent, sur good counsell, or bold hardiment, gent, occur her, or me direct the way georother good, I you most humbly pray.

may ye gaine to you full great renowme goad Ladies through the worlde so wide, saply in her hart finde highest rowme iom ve seeke to be most magnifide; Let eternall meede shall you abide. born the Prince: Dwarfe, comfort to thee take. ill thou tidings learne what her betide, s arow thee never to forsake. Ladi - - ake.

XII r.th the Dwarfe he back retourn'd againe. Out of that forest should escape their might:
eke his Lady where he mote her finde: Vile rancour their rude harts had fild with is the way he greatly gan complaine Far.: of his good Squire late lefte behinde, wondrous pensive grew in whom he minte.

um be leved above all mankinde, ar him trew and faithfull ever tride. fold, as ever Squyre that waited by anights side:

e all this while full hardly was assayd attly daunger, which to him betidd; er avenged of the shame he did hat faire Damzell: Him he chaced long agn the thicke woods wherein he would Lave bid

Hischamefull head from his avengement strong, And oft him threatned death for his outrageous wrong.

XIV

Nathlesse the villein sped himselfe so well, Whether through swiftnesse of his speedie dwell. beast Or knowledge of those woods where he did

That shortly he from daunger was releast, And out of sight escaped at the least: Yet not escaped from the dew reward Of his bad deedes, which daily he increast, Ne ceased not, till him oppressed hard

The heavie plague that for such leachours is prepard. For soone as he was vanisht out of sight, His coward courage gan emboldned bee,

And cast t' avenge him of that fowle despight Which he had borne of his bold enimee: Tho to his brethren came, for they were three Ungrations children of one gracelesse syre, And unto them complaymed how that he Had used beene of that foolehardie Squyre: So them with bitter words he stird to bloodie

yre.

XVI

Forthwith themselves with their sad instru-Of spoyle and murder they gan arme bylive,

And with him foorth into the forrest went To wreake the wrath, which he did earst drive revive are he armes, that nill them use for in their sterne brests, on him which late did Their brother to reproch and shamefull flight; For they had vow'd that never he alive

such despight.

Within that wood there was a covert glade, bubt of daunger which mote him betide; Foreby a narrow foord, to them well knowned Through which it was uneath for wight to And now by fortune it was overflowne. | wade; By that same way they knew that Squyre unknowne

Mote algates passe: forthy themselves they There in await with thicke woods overgrowne, And all the while their malice they did whet whiles his Lord pursewd that noble Mayd, With cruell threats his passage through the raint fester fowle he fiercely ridd ford to let.

XVIII

It fortuned, as they devised had: The gentle Squyre came ryding that same way Unwesting of their wile and treason bad, And through the ford to passen did assay; But that fierce foster, which late fied away, Stoutly foorth stepping on the further shore, Him beidly bad his passage them to stay, Till ise had made amends, and full restore For all the damage which be had him does

XIX

With that at him a quiv'ring dart he threw, With se fell force, and villeinous despite, That through his haberjeon the forkehead flew, And through the linked mayles empieroed

quite,

But had no powre in his soft flesh to hite.

That stroke the hardy Squire did sore displease,
But more that him he could not come to smite;
For by no meanes the high banke he could
sease.

[vaine disease.
But labour'd long in that deepe ford with

XX

And still the foster with his long bore-speare
Him kept from landing at his wished will.
Anone one sent out of the thicket neare
A cruell shaft, headed with deadly ill,
And fethered with an unlacky quill:
The wicked steele stayd not till it did light
In his left thigh, and deepely did it thrill:
Exceeding griefe that wound in him empight,
But more that with his foes he could not come
to fight.

IXX

At last, through wrath and vengeaunce making way. He on the bancke arryvd with mickle payne, Where the third brother him did sore assay.

And drove at him with all his might and mayne

A forest-bill, which both his hands did strayne;

But warily he did avoide the blow,
And with his speare requited him againe,
That both his sides were thrilled with the
throw, [did flow.]

And a large streame of blood out of the wound

XXII

He, tombling downe, with gnashing teeth did
The bitter earth, and bad to lett him in [bite
Lato the balefull house of endlesse night, [sin.
Where wicked ghosts doe waile their former
Tho gan the battaile freshly to begin;
For nathemore for that spectacle bad
Did th' other two their cruell vengeaunce blin,
But both attoned on both sides him bestad,
And load upon him layd his life for to have had.

HEXT

The when that villays he avir'd, which Affrighted had the fairest Florinal, Full of fiers fory and indignant hate To him he turned, and with right fell Smote him so radely on the Pamikel.

That to the chin he cleft his head in this Downe on the ground his carkas graving! His sinfull sowie with desperate distain Out of her fieshly ferme field to the parane.

XXIV

That seeing, now the only last of the Who with that wicked shafts him worshill Trembling with borror, as that did force. The fearefull end of his avengement said. Through which he follow should his bottlesse bow in feeble hand upon And therewith short an arrow at the latter which, favntly fluttering, scarce his latter aught,

And glauncing fel to ground, but him and

XXV

With that he would have fled into the wo But Timias him lightly overhent, Right as he entring was into the flood. And strooke at him with force so violent. That headlesse him into the foord he sent. The carcas with the streame was carried he But th' head fell backeward on the Comm-So mischief fel upon the meaners crown. They three be dead with shame, the Spilives with renowne.

XXVI

He lives, but takes small joy of his moderate for of that cruell wound he bled so one. That from his steed he fell in deadly see Yet still the blood forth gusht in so great. That he lay wallowd all in his owne great. Now God thee keepe, thou gentlest square Els shall thy loving Lord thee see no me But both of comfort him thou shall deput atchive.

XXVII

Providence hevenly passeth living these And doth for wretched mens reliefe make to For loe! great grace or fortune thither base to comfort to him that comfortlesse now lay In those same woods ye well remember in How that a noble hunteresse did wonne. Shee, that base Braggadochio did affray, And make him fast out of the forest round Belphoebe was her name, as faire as Phasume.

y, as shee pursewd the chace le beast, which with her arrowes

I had, the same along did trace plood, which she had freshly seene persue which she there perceav'd, hee the beast engor'd had beene,

came whereas that wofull Squire, deformed, lay in deadly swownd; e eyes, like lamps of quenched fire, I humor stood congealed rownd; te faded leaves fallen to grownd, h blood in bounches rudely ran;

eete lips, on which before that d outh to blossome faire began, [wan. ir rosy red were woxen pale and

XXX

living eie more heavy sight, ave made a rocke of stone to rew, tine: which when that Lady bright, ope, with melting eies did vew, y abasht shee chaunged hew, rne horror backward gan to start; ee better him beheld shee grew assion and unwonted smart: [bart. pitty perced through her tender

XXXI

ee bowed downe, to weete if life rosen members did remaine; by his pulses beating rife ake sowle her seat did yett retaine, comfort him with busie paine. olded necke she reard upright, temples and each trembling vaine; haberjeon she did undight, bead his heavy burganet did light.

XXXII

neare.

ods thenceforth in haste shee went, hearbes that mote him remedy; erbes had great intendiment, e Nymphe which from her infancy had in trew Nobility: her yt divine Tobacco were, a, or Polygony, and brought it to her patient deare,

XXXIII

The soveraine weede betwixt two marbles plaine Shee pownded small, and did in peeces bruze; And then atweene her lilly handes twaine Into his wound the juice thereof did scruze; And round about, as she could well it use, The flesh therewith shee suppled and did steeps, T' abate all spasme, and soke the swelling bruze; ore haste the life to have bereav'd; And, after having searcht the intuse deepe, expectation greatly was deceav'd. She with her scarf did bind the wound from cold to keepe.

XXXIV

By this he had sweet life recur'd agayne, And, groning inly deepe, at last his eies, His watry eies drizling like deawy rayne, He up gan lifte toward the azure skies, From whence descend all hopelesse remedies: Therewith he sigh'd; and, turning him aside, The goodly Maide, ful of divinities And gifts of heavenly grace, he by him spide, Her bow and gilden quiver lying him beside.

XXXV 'Mercy, deare Lord!' (said he) 'what grace

is this That thou hast shewed to me sinfull wight, To send thine Angell from her bowre of blis To comfort me in my distressed plight. Angell, or Goddesse doe I call thee right? What service may I doe unto thee meete That hast from darkenes me returnd to light, And with thy hevenly salves and med'cines [blessed feete,'
I kisse thy sweete Hast drest my sinfull wounds?

XXXVI Thereat she blushing said; 'Ah! gentle

Squire, Nor Goddesse I, nor Angell; but the Mayd And daughter of a woody Nymphe, desire No service but thy safety and ayd; Which if thou gaine, I shal be well apayd. Wee mortall wights, whose lives and fortunes To commun accidents stil open layd, [bee Are bownd with commun bond of frailtee, To succor wretched wights whom we captived see.'

XXXVII

By this her Damzells, which the former chace Had undertaken after her, arryv'd, As did Belphæbe, in the bloody place, And thereby deemd the beast had bene deprived and brought it to her patient deare, Of life, whom late their ladies arrow ryv'd: while lay bleding out his hart- Forthy the bloody tract they followd last, And every one to ronne the swiftest stryv'd; But two of them the rest far overpast, And where their Lady was arrived at the last.

XXXVIII

Where when they saw that goodly boy with blood

Defowled, and their Lady dresse his wownd, They wondred much; and shortly understood How him in deadly case theyr Lady found, And reskewed out of the heavy stownd.

Eftsooneshis warlike courser, which was strayd Farre in the woodes whiles that he lay in swowad,

They did him set theron, and forth with them convayd.

XXXXIX

Into that forest farre they thence him led, Where was their dwelling, in a pleasant glade With mountaines round about environed, And mightie woodes which did the valley shade And like a stately Theatre it made, Spreading it selfe into a spatious plaine: And in the midst a little river plaide Emongst the pumy stones, which seemd to plaine [restraine.

Beside the same a dainty place there lay, Planted with mirtle trees and laurells greene, In which the birds song many a lovely lay Of Gods high praise, and of their loves sweet teene.

As it an earthly Paradize had beene: In whose enclosed shadow there was pight A faire Pavilion, scarcely to bee seene, The which was al within most richly dight, That greatest Princes liking it mote well de-light.

XLI

Thither they brought that wounded Squyre, and layd

In easie couch his feeble limbes to rest. He rested him awhile; and then the Mayd His readie wound with better salves new drest: Daily she dressed him, and did the best His grievous hurt to guarish, that she might; That shortly she his dolour hath redrest, And his foule sore reduced to faire plight : It she reduced, but himselfe destroyed quight.

O foolish physick, and unfruitfull paine, That heales up one, and makes another wound ! To her to whom the hevens doe serve and She his hurt thigh to him recurd againe, But hurt his hart, the which before was sound, She, hevenly borne and of celestiall he

Through an unwary dart, which did to From her fairs eyes and gratious count What bootes it him from death to be un To be captived in endlesse duraunos Of sorrow and despeyre without aleg

XLIII

Still as his wound did gather, and gove So still his hart woxe sore, and health is Madnesse to save a part, and lose the win Still whenas he beheld the heavenly Mayd lay in Whiles dayly playsters to his wownd shell stayd, So still his Malady the more increast. She made those Damzels search; which being The whiles her matchlesse beautie his

mayd. Ah God! what other could be do at less, But love so fayre a Lady that his life nin

XLIV

Long while he strove in his corageout in With reason dew the passion to subles, And love for to dislodge out of his net! Still when her excellencies he did vew, Her soveraine bountie and celestiall her The same to love he strongly was comb With gentle murmure that his cours they did He from such hardy boldnesse was I And of his lucklesse lott and cruell lott playnd:

'Unthankfull wretch,' (said he) 'is this With which her soverain mercy th Thy life she saved by her grations della But thou doest weene with villeinous To blott her honour, and her heavenly! Dye rather, dye, then so disloyally Deeme of her high desert, or seeme w Favre death it is, to shonne more sham Dye rather, dy, then ever love disloyals

But if to love disloyalty it bee Shall I then hate her that from deather & Me brought? ah, farre be such reproch in What can I lesse doe then her love the Sith I her dew reward cannot restore? Dye rather, dye, and dying doe her ser Dying her serve, and hving her adore. Thy life she gave, thy life she doth de Dye rather, dye, then ever from her s swerve.

But, foolish boy, what bootes thy serving Thou, a meane Squyre of meeke and lowly

? of all love taketh equal vew; not highest God vouchsafe to take and service of the basest crew? l not, dye meekly for her sake: e!'

XLVIII

rreid he long time against his will; hrough weaknesse he was forst at last imselfe unto the mightie ill, a victour proud, gan ransack fast d partes, and all his entrayles wast, er blood in face nor life in hart : both did quite drye up and blast; r levin, which the inner part hing consumes, and calcineth by art.

XLIX

eing fayre Belphæbe gan to feare his wound were inly well not heald, e wicked steele empoysned were: weend that love he close conceald. e wasted, as the snow congeald bright sunne his beams theron h beat:

he his hart to her reveald; · chose to dye for sorow great, dishonorable termes her to entreat.

ious Lady, yet no paines did spare n ease, or doe him remedy. toratives of vertues rare r Cordialles she did apply. te his stubborne malady: weet Cordiall, which can restore k hart, she did to him envy;
id to all th' unworthy world forlore ivy that soveraine salve in secret

itie Rose, the daughter of her Morne, then life she tendered, whose flowre d of her honour did adorne: she the Middayes scorching powre, p Northerne wind thereon to showre; l'up her silken leaves most chayre, he froward skye began to lowre;

But, soone as calmed was the christall ayre. She did it fayre dispred and let to florish fayre.

LII

Eternall God, in his almightie powre, To make ensample of his heavenly grace, In Paradize whylome did plant this flowre; Whence he it fetcht out of her native place, And did in stocke of earthly flesh enrace, That mortall men her glory should admyre. In gentle Ladies breste and bounteous race Of woman kind it fayrest Flowre doth spyre And beareth fruit of honour and all chast desyre.

Fayre ympes of beautie, whose bright shining beames

Adorne the world with like to heavenly light, And to your willes both royalties and Reames Subdew, through conquest of your wondrous might,

With this fayre flowre your goodly girlonds Of chastity and vertue virginall, [dight [dight That shall embellish more your beautie bright, And crowne your heades with heavenly coronall,

Such as the Angels weare before Gods tribunall!

To your faire selves a faire ensample frame Of this faire virgin, this Belphebe fayre; To whom, in perfect love and spotlesse fame Of chastitie, none living may compayre: Ne povenous Envy justly can empayre The prayec of her fresh flowring Maydenhead; Forthy she standeth on the highest stayre Of th' honorable stage of womanhead, That Ladies all may follow her ensample dead.

In so great prayse of stedfast chastity Nathlesse she was so courteous and kynde, Tempred with grace and goodly modesty, That seemed those two vertues strove to fynd The higher place in her Heroick mynd: So striving each did other more augment And both encreast the prayse of woman kynde, And both encreast her beautie excellent: So all did make in her a perfect complement,

CANTO VI.

The birth of fayre Belphæbe and Of Amorett is told: The Gardins of Adonis fraught With pleasures manifold.

WELL may I weens, faire Ladies, all this while It were a goodly storie to declare Ye wonder how this noble Damozell So great perfections did in her compile, Sith that in salvage forests she did dwell, So farre from court and royall Citadell, The great schoolmaistresse of all courtesy: Seemeth that such wilde woodes should far expell

All civile usage and gentility, And gentle sprite deforme with rude rusticity.

But to this faire Belphœbe in her berth The hevens so favorable were and free, Looking with myld aspect upon the earth In th' Horoscope of her nativitee, That all the gifts of grace and chastitee On her they poured forth of plenteous horne: Jove laught on Venus from his soverayne see, And Phoebus with faire beames did her adorne, [borne, And all the Graces rockt her cradle being

Her berth was of the wombe of Morning dew, And her conception of the joyous Prime; And all her whole creation did her shew Pure and unspotted from all loathly crime That is ingenerate in fleshly slime, So was this virgin borne, so was she bred; So was she trayned up from time to time In all chaste vertue and true bounti-bed. Till to her dew perfection she were ripened.

Her mother was the faire Chrysogonee, The daughter of Amphisa, who by race A Facrie was, yborne of high degree. She bore Belphæbe; she bore in like cace Fayre Amoretta in the second place: These two were twinnes, and twixt them two did share

The heritage of all celestiall grace; That all the rest it seemd they robbed bare Of bounty, and of beautie, and all vertues rare

By what straunge accident faire Chr. Conceiv'd these infants, and how them In this wilde forrest wandring all ale After she had nine moneths fulfild at For not as other wemens commune to They were enwombed in the sacred th Of her chaste bodie; nor with commu blood:

But wondrously they were begot an Through influence of th' hevens fruit As it in antique bookes is mentioned It was upon a Sommers shinie day, When Titan faire his beames did dis In a fresh fountaine, far from all me She bath'd her brest the boyling heat She bath'd with roses red and violets And all the sweetest flowers that int

Till faint through yrkesome wearing Upon the grassy ground her selfe she To sleepe, the whiles a gentle s swowne

Upon her fell, all naked bare display The sunbeames bright upon her body Being through former bathing mollis And pierst into her wombe, wh embayd

With so sweet sence and secret powr That in her pregnant flesh they sho tifide.

VIII

Miraculous may seeme to him that So straunge ensample of conception But reason teacheth that the fruitfu Of all things living, through impres Of the sunbeames in moyst complex Doe life conceive and quickned are b So, after Nilus inundation, Infinite shapes of creatures men doe Informed in the mud on which the S. shynd.

THE FAERIE OUEENE.

ir he of generation dd, th' authour of life and light; e sister for creation natter fit, which, tempred right a nought thereof, but sore affright, see her belly so upblone, increast till she her terme had full

nceiving shame and foule disgrace, iltlesse conscience her cleard,) the wildernesse a space, weeldy burden she had reard dishonor which as death she feard: rie of long traveill, downe to rest e set, and comfortably cheard: cloud of sleepe her overkest, every sence with sorrow sore est.

l, faire Venus having lost onne, the winged god of love, ome light displeasure which him

er fled as flit as ayery Dove, r blisfull bowre of joy above: r often he had fled away, or ought him sharpely did reprove, ed in the world in straunge aray, thousand shapes, that none might bewray.)

seeke, she left her heavenly hous, f goodly formes and faire aspect, the world derives the glorious beautie, and all shapes select, t high God his workmanship hath wings ed everie way through which his him, or his tract she mote detect: kisses sweet, and sweeter things, nan that of him tydings to her (8.

XIII

iim sought in Court, where most he not; to haunt, but there she found him here she found which sore accus'd d, and with fowle infamous blot

Their wofull harts he wounded had whylears And so had left them languishing twixt hope and feare.

She then the Cities sought from gate to gate, and humour, breedes the living And everie one did aske, did he him see? t. [gone; And everie one her answerd, that too late hese twinnes in womb of Chryso-He had him seene, and felt the cruelteo Of his sharpe dartes and whot artilleree: And every one threw forth reproches rife Of his mischievous deedes, and sayd that hee Was the disturber of all civill life. The enimy of peace, and authour of all strife.

XV

Then in the countrey she abroad him sought, And in the rurall cottages inquir'd; Where also many plaintes to her were brought, How he their heedelesse harts with love had fir'd, And his false venim through their veines inspir'd: sat.

And eke the gentle Shepheard swaynes, which Keeping their fleecy flockes as they were hyr'd, She sweetly heard complaine, both how and Her sonne had to them doen; yet she did smile

XVI

But when in none of all these she him got, She gan avize where els he mote him hyde: At last she her bethought that she had not Yet sought the salvage woods and forests wyde, In which full many lovely Nymphes abyde; Mongst whom might be that he did closely lye, Or that the love of some of them him tyde: Forthy she thither cast her course t' apply, To search the secret haunts of Dianes company,

XVII

Shortly unto the wastefull woods she came, Whereas she found the Goddesse with her crew. After late chace of their embrewed game, Sitting beside a fountaine in a rew; Some of them washing with the liquid dew From off their dainty limbs the dusty sweat And soyle, which did deforme their lively hew; Others lay shaded from the scorching heat, The rest upon her person gave attendance great.

She, having hong upon a bough on high Her bow and painted quiver, had unlaste Her silver buskins from her numble thigh, And her lanck loynes ungirt, and brests unbraste,

keedes and wicked wyles did spot: After her heat the breathing cold to taste: Lordes she everywhere mote heare Her golden lockes, that late in treases bright ig, how with his empoyened shot | Embreaded were for hindring of her haste,

Now loose about her doublers hong unlight. As any Nimphe; (let not it be and And were with sweet Androsia all besprinchled, Se saying, every Nimph fall narrow) Right.

TIGO

Soons as she Venus saw behinds her backs, She was subam'd to be so loose surprix'd; And wone halfe wroth against her damp That had not berthered before svin'd, [slacks, But suffred her so carelesly disguiz'd Be overtaken. Soone her garments loose Upgath'ring, in her bosome she compris'd Well as she might, and to the Goddesse rose Whiles all her Nymphes did like a girlond her provious.

Goodly she gan faire Cytherea greet, And shortly asked her, what cause her brought Into that wildernesse for her unmeet, From her sweete bowres, and beds with plea sures fraught? Tshought. That suddein chaunge she straunge adventure To whom halfe weeping she thus answered; That she her dearest some Cupido sought, Who in his frowardnes from her was fled,

That she repented sore to have him angered.

Thereat Diana gan to smile, in scorne Of her vaine playnt, and to her scoffing savd: Great pitty sure that ye be so forlorne Of your gay sonne, that gives ye so good ayd To your disports: ill mote ye bene apayd.' But she was more engrieved, and replide; Faire sister, ill beseemes it to upbrayd A dolefull heart with so disdainfull pride: The like that mine may be your paine another

'As you in woods and wanton wildernesse Your glory sett to chace the salvage beasts, So my delight is all in joyfulnesse, In beds, in bowres, in banckets, and in feasts : And ill becomes you, with your lofty creasts, To scorne the joy that Jove is glad to seeke: We both are bownd to follow heavens beheasts, And tend our charges with obeisaunce meeke. Spare, gentle sister, with reproch my paine to

'And tell me, if that ye my sonne have heard To lurke emongst your Nimphes in secret Or keeps their cabins : much I am affeard Least he like one of them him selfe disguize,

And turne his arrowes to their exercize. So may be long him selfe full easie hide; For he is faire and fresh in face and guize

But Phebe therewith sure was an And sharply saids: "Goe, Door:

Where you him lately lefts, in Mar-He comes not here; we some his \$ Ne lend we leisure to his fille ter: But if I catch him in this company By Stygian lake I vow, whose sail The Gods doe dread, he dearly sha the clip his wanton wings, that he shall five."

Whom whenas Venus saw so som Shee inly sory was, and gan relent What shee had said; so her she so With sugred words and gentle blan Which as a fountaine from her

went. And welled goodly forth, that in sh She was well pleasd, and forth he

Through all the woods, to search to If any tract of him or tidings they

To search the God of love her Ni

Throughout the wandring forest ev And after them her selfe eke with h To seeke the fugitive both farre an So long they sought, till they arriv In that same shady covert whereas Faire Crysogone in slombry traunc Who in her sleepe (a wondrous this Unwares had borne two babes, springing day.

XXVII

Unwares she them conceivd, un bore:

She bore withouten paine, that she Withouten pleasure; ne her need in Lucinaes aide: which when they both They were through wonder nigh of rev'd.

And gazing each on other nought l At last they both agreed her seeming Out of her heavie swowne not to as But from her loving side the tend

Up they them tooke; each one a

e to a Nymphe her babe betooke ught in perfect Maydenhed, selfe, her name Belphœbe red: iers thence far away convayd, ught in goodly womanhed; litle loves stead, which was strayd, ta cald, to comfort her dismayd.

XXIX

ht her to her joyous Paradize, she wonnes when she on earth does ace as Nature can devize: [dwell; Paphos, or Cytheron hill, dus bee, I wote not well; vote by triall, that this same easaunt places doth excell,

is by her lost lovers name, of Adonis, far renowmd by fame,

ne Gardin all the goodly flowres, dame Nature doth her beautify, he girlonds of her Paramoures, there is the first seminary s that are borne to live and dye, o their kynds. Long worke it were ount the endlesse progeny eeds that bud and blossome there; ch as doth need must needs be teel here.

XXXI

is in fruitfull soyle of old, with two walls on either side; rron, the other of bright gold, might thorough breake, nor overegates it had which opened wide, oth in and out men moten pas: and fresh, the other old and dride.

XXXII

the porter of them was, the which a double nature has.

in, he letteth out to wend come into the world desire: thousand naked babes attend day and night, which doe require h fieshly weeds would them attire: 1 list, such as eternall fate atth, he clothes with sinful mire, 1 forth to live in mortall state, gayn returne backe by the hinder

XXXIII

they againe retourned beene, it Gardin planted bee agayne,

And grow afresh, as they had never seene Fleshly corruption, nor mortall payne. [mayne, Some thousand yeares so doen they there re-And then of him are clad with other hew, Or sent into the chaungefull world agayne, Till thither they retourne where first they grew:

[to new. So, like a wheele, arownd they ronne from old

XXXIV

Ne needs there Gardiner to sett or sow,
To plant or prune; for of their owne accord
All things, as they created were, doe grow,
And yet remember well the mighty word
Which first was spoken by th' Almighty Lord,
That bad them to increase and multiply:
Ne doe they need with water of the ford,
Or of the clouds, to moyaten their roots dry;
For in themselves eternall moisture they imply.

XXXV

Infinite shapes of creatures there are bred,
And uncouth formes, which none yet ever
And every sort is in a sondry bed [knew:
Sett by it selfe, and rancht in comely rew;
Some fitt for reasonable sowles t' indew;
Some made for beasts, some made for birds to
weare;

And all the fruitfull spawne of fishes hew
In endlesse rancks along enraunged were,
That seemd the Ocean could not containe
them there.

Daily they grow, and daily forth are sent Into the world, it to replenish more; Yet is the stocke not lessened nor spent, But still remaines in everlasting store, As it at first created was of yore: For in the wide wombe of the world there lyes, In hatefull darknes and in deepe horrore, An huge eternall Chaos, which supplyes The substaunces of natures fruitfull progenyes.

XXXVII

All things from thence doe their first being fetch,
And borrow matter whereof they are made;
Which, whenas forme and feature it does ketch,
Becomes a body, and doth then invade
The state of life out of the griesly shade.
That substaunce is eternic, and bideth so;
Ne when the life decayes and forme does fade,
Doth it consume and into nothing goe,
But chaunged is, and often altred to and froe.

XXXVIII

The substaunce is not chaungd nor altered, But th' only forme and outward fashion;

nutabilitie. n made perpetuall, and chaunged diverslie er of all formes they call: ote he live, that living gives

XLVIII

eth in eternall blis, se, and of her enjoyd; ore, the which him once anemprisoned for ay, I novd, ve his malice mote avoyd. · Cave, which is, they say.

res in everlasting joy, e Gods in company unt, and with the winged boy, e in safe felicity: h with spoiles and cruelty ld, and in the wofull hart's s set his triumphes hye, and, laying his sad dartes · Adonis plaves his wanton

ove faire Psyche with him

him lately reconcyld, es and unmeet upbrayes nother Venus her revyld, her cruelly exyld: ist love and happy state s, and hath him borne a chyld, ' h both gods and men aggrate, ther of Cupid and Psyche late.;

hter of Chrysogonee,

CANTO VII.

The witches sonne loves Florimell: She flyes; he faines to dy. Satyrane saves the Squyre of Dames

From Gyaunts tyranny.

1 from a ravenous beast, her owne feete afeard that shaketh with the least e, her terror bath encreast;

And unto Psyche with great trust and care Committed her, yfostered to bee And trained up in trew feminitee: Who no lesse carefully her tendered Then her ownedaughter Pleasure, to whom shee Made her companion, and her lessoned In all the lore of love, and goodly womanhead.

ceforth that foe of his, ruell tuske him deadly cloyd: Of grace and beautie noble Paragone, She brought her forth into the worldes vew, To be th' ensample of true love alone, And Lodestarre of all chaste affection To all fayre Ladies that doe live on grownd. h that Mount, that none him To Faery court she came; where many one Admyrd her goodly haveour, and fownd His feeble hart wide launched with loves cruel wownd.

> 1.111 But she to none of them her love did cast,

Save to the noble knight Sir Scudamore, To whom her loving hart she linked fast In faithfull love, t' abide for evermore; And for his dearest sake endured sore Sore trouble of an hainous enimy, Who her would forced have to have forlore Her former love and stedfast loialty As ye may elswhere reade that ruefull history.

LIV But well I weene, ye first desire to learne

Which field so fast from that same foster

What end unto that fearefull Damozell,

stearne Whom with his brethren Timias slew, befell: That was, to weet, the goodly Florimell; Who wandring for to seeke her lover deare, Her lover deare, her dearest Marinell, Into misfortune fell, as ye did heare ius brought this infant fayre, And from Prince Arthure fled with wings of idle feare.

So field fayre Florimell from her vaine feare, forth singled from the heard. Long after she from perill was releast: Each shade she saw, and each noyse she did heare,

Did seeme to be the same which she escapt whileare.

11

All that same evening she in flying spent,
And all that night her course continewed.
Ne did she let dull sleepe once to relent,
Nor wearinesse to slack her hast, but fled
Ever alike, as if her former dred
Were hard behind, her ready to arrest;
And her white Palfrey, having conquered
The maistring raines out of her weary wrest,
Perforce her carried where ever he thought
best.

III

So long as breath and hable puissaunce
Did native corage unto him supply,
His pace he freshly forward did advaunce,
And carried her beyond all jeopardy;
But nought that wanteth rest can long aby:
He, having through incessant traveill spent
His force, at last perforce adowne did ly,
Ne foot could further move. The Lady gent
Thereat was suddein strook with great astonishment;

IV

And, forst t' alight, on foot mote algates fare
A traveller unwonted to such way:
Need teacheth her this lesson hard and rare,
That fortune all in equall lannee doth sway,
And mortall miseries doth make her play,
So long she traveild, till at length she came
To an hilles side, which did to her bewray
A litle valley subject to the same,
All coverd with thick woodes that quite it
overcame.

V

Through the tops of the high trees she did descry A litle smoke, whose vapour thin and light

Make snows, whose vapour tinn and light Recking aloft uprolled to the sky: Which chearefull signe did send unto her sight That in the same did wonne some living wight.

Eftsoones her steps she thereunto applyd,
And came at last in weary wretched plight
Unto the place, to which her hope did guyde,
To find some refuge there, and rest her wearie
syde,

There in a gloomy hollow glen she found A little cottage, built of stickes and reedes In homely wize, and wald with sods around; In which a witch did dwell, in loathly weedes And wilfull want, all carelesse of her needes; So choosing solitarie to abide

Far from all neighbours, that her divelish deedes

And hellish arts from people she mig And hart far off unknowns when envide.

VII

The Damzell there arriving entred. Where sitting on the flore the Hag s Busie (as seem'd) about some wicker. Who, some as she beheld that sudde Lightly upstarted from the dustic grand with fell looke and hollow dead Stared on her awhile, as one asteud. Ne had one word to speake for great But shewd by outward signes that

sence did daze.

VIII

At last, turning her feare to foolish She askt, what devill had her thithe And who she was, and what unword Had guided her, unwelcomed, unsoa To which the Damzell, full of thought,

Her mildly answer'd: 'Beldame, be With silly Virgin, by adventure bro Unto your dwelling, ignorant and be That crave but rowme to rest while overblo'th.'

IX

With that adowne out of her christ Few trickling teares she softly forth That like to orient perles did purely Upon her snowy cheeke; and there She sighed soft, that none so bestial Nor salvage hart, but ruth of her sa Would make to melt, or pitteously a And that vile Hag, all were her who In mischiefe, was much moved at a sight;

And gan recomfort her in her rude With womanish compassion of her I Wiping the teares from her suffused And bidding her sit downe, to rest I And wearie limbes awhile, Sha

quaint
Nor 'sdeignfull of so homely fashior
Sith brought she was now to so
straint.

Sate downe upon the dusty ground As glad of that small rest as Bird gon.

XI

The gan she gather up her garmen And her loose lockes to dight in ord With golden wreath and gorgeons Whom such whenas the wicked Ha

isht at her heavenly hew, er to deeme an earthly wight, ioddesse, or of Dianes crew,

XII

woman had a wicked sonne, f her age and weary dayes, for nothing good to donne, forth in vdlenesse alwayes, is mind to covet prayse. fe to any honest trade, v before the sunny raves g, or sleepe in slothfull shade: both lewd and poore attonce

ıde.

eature that he ever saw his mother on the ground; reof did greatly him adaw. thought with terrour and with

that as one, which hath gaz'd it Sunne unwares, doth soone aw

XIV

he gan his mother aske, wight that was, and whence [maske, raunge disguizement there did accident she there arriv'd? e nigh of her wits depriv'd,

ut ghastly lookes him answered; t, that lately is reviv'd shores where late it wandered: ; and each at other wondered.

· Virgin was so meeke and myld, em youchsafed to embace rt, and to their senses vyld each applyde, that in short space liare in that desert place. time the Chorle, through her so

use, conceiv'd affection bace, we her in his brutish mind: rutish lust, that was so beastly

icked flame his bowels brent, rew into outrageous fire;

Yet had he not the hart, nor hardiment, As unto her to utter his desire; His caytive thought durst not so high aspire: ner to adore with humble spright: But with soft sighes and lovely semblaunces to divine as beauty were but He ween'd that his affection entire She should aread; many resemblaunces To her he made, and many kinde remem-

braunces.

XVII

Oft from the forrest wildings he did bring, Whose sides empurpled were with smyling red; And oft young birds, which he had taught to sing, His maistresse praises sweetly caroled: Girlonds of flowres sometimes for her faire hed He fine would dight; sometimes the squirrell wild

He brought to her in bands, as conquered home at undertime, there found To be her thrall, his fellow-servant vild:
All which she of him tooke with countenance meeke and mild.

But, past a while, when she fit season saw To leave that desert mansion, she cast In secret wize herselfe thence to withdraw For feare of mischiefe, which she did forecast e, with too much brightnes daz'd, Might by the witch or by her sonne compast. on her, and stood long while Her wearie Palfrey, closely as she might,
Now well recovered after long repast, In his proud furnitures she freshly dight, His late miswandred wayes now to remeasure right.

And earely, ere the dawning day appear'd, She forth issewed, and on her journey went: She went in perill, of each nove affeard, And of each shade that did it selfe present; For still she feared to be overhent Of that vile hag, or her uncivile sonne; Who when, too late awaking, well they kent That their fayre guest was gone, they both begonne undonne. To make exceeding mone, as they had been

But that lewd lover did the most lament For her depart, that ever man did heare: He knockt his brest with desperate intent, And scratcht his face, and with his teeth did teare His rugged flesh, and rent his ragged heare; That his sad mother, seeing his sore plight, Was greatly woe begon, and gan to feare Least his fraile senses were emperialit quigi

And love to frenzy turnd, sith love is frentice hight.

All wayes shee sought him to restore to plight, With herbs, with charms, with counsel, and with teares; But tears, nor charms, nor herbs, nor counsell, Asswage the forv which his entrails teares t So strong is passion that no reason heares. The when all other helpes she saw to faile,

She turnd her selfe backe to her wicked leares; And by her divelish arts thought to prevaile To bringe her backe againe, or worke her finall

bale.

XXII Eftesoones out of her hidden cave she cald An hideous beast of horrible aspect, That could the stoutest corage have appald; Monstrous, mishapt, and all his backe was

spect With thousand spots of colours queint elect, Thereto so swifte that it all beasts did pas: Like never yet did living eie detect ; But likest it to an Hyena was, gras. That feeds on wemens flesh as others feede on

XXIII

It forth she cald, and gave it streight in charge Through thicke and thin her to poursew apace, Ne once to stay to rest, or breath at large, Till her he had attaind and brought in place, Or quite devourd her beauties scorneful grace. The Monster, swifte as word that from her

Went forth in haste, and did her footing trace So sure and swiftly, through his perfect sent And passing speede, that shortly he her overhent.

XXIV

Whom when the fearefull Damzell nigh espide.

No need to bid her fast away to flie: That ugly shape so sore her terrifide, That it she shund no lesse then dread to die; And her flitt palfrey did so well apply His nimble feet to her conceived feare, That whilest his breath did strength to him supply,

From peril free he away her did beare ; But when his force gan faile his pace gan wex areare,

Which whenas she perceiv'd, she was dismayd At that same last extremity ful sore, And of her safety greatly grew afrayd. And now she gan approch to the sea shore, As it befell, that she could flie no more, But yield herselfe to spoile of greedinesse: Lightly she leaped, as a wight forlore,

From her dull horse, in desperate disti And to her feet betooke her don'tful in

Not halfe so fast the wicked Myrda be From dread of her revenging father la Nor halfe so fast to save her maylenbel Fled fearfull Daphne on th' Egwas sta As Florimell fled from that Monster you To reach the sea ere she of him were me For in the sea to drowne herselfe she in Rather then of the tyrant to be can't Thereto fear gave her wings, and not corage taught.

It fortuned (high God did so ordain) As shee arrived on the roring show. In minde to leape into the mighty w A little bote lay hoving her before In which there slept a fisher old and The whiles his nets were drying on the Into the same shee lept, and with the Did thrust the shallop from the flotings So safety found at sea which she found a land,

XXVIII

The Monster, ready on the pray to Was of his forward hope deceived quiet Ne durst assay to wade the perlous sent But greedily long gaping at the sight, At last in vaine was forst to turns he fi And tell the idle tidings to his Dame! Yet, to avenge his divelish despight, He sett upon her Palfrey tired lame And slew him cruelly ere any reskew

XXIX

And, after having him embowelled To fill his hellish gorge, it chaunst a kni To passe that way, as forth he travellely t was a goodly Swaine, and of great has ever man that bloody field did fight. But in vain sheows, that wont you bewitch, And courtly services, tooke no delight; But rather joyd to bee then seemen si For both to be and seeme to him was labor

It was to weete the good Sir Satyrana That raungd abrode to seeke adventure As was his wont, in forest and in plans He was all armd in rugged steele unfild As in the smoky forge it was compiled And in his Scutchin bore a Satyres led He comming present, where the Monnet ke-white Palfreyes carcas fedd, Sith dint of steele his carcas could not quell; w ran, and greedily him spedd. His maker with her charmes had framed him

receive he that it was the horse Florimell was wont to ride, e least ought did ill betide aide, the flowre of wemens pride; rely loved, and in all nquests highly magnifide:

olden girdle, which did fall ight, he fownd, that did him sore

XXXII

are and doubtfull agony w upon that wicked feend. e strokes and cruell battery save his pray, for to attend i deadly daunger to defend: unds in his corrupted flesh
e, and muchell blood did spend, doe him die : but aie more fresh till appeard, the more he did him

XXXIII

now him to despoile of life, the wished victory, iw still stronger grow through

weaker through infirmity. w enrag'd, and furiously vord away he lightly lept t, that with great cruelty [hept. ed to be underkept; e him held, and strokes upon him

XXXIV

rives to stop a suddein flood, bancks his violence enclose, Il above his wonted mood, erflow the fruitfull plaine, untrey seemes to be a Maine, urrowes flote, all quite fordonne: bandman doth lowd complaine ole yeares labor lost so soone rod he made so many an idle

d. and did through might amate. d him, and him bett so long, it his fiercenes gan abate, stoup unto the victor strong e the implacable wrong posed donne to Florimell, meanes his dolor to prolong,

so well.

XXXVI

The golden ribband, which that virgin wore About her sciender waste, he tooke in hand, end was rent without remorse: And with it bownd the beast, that lowd did rore

For great despight of that unwonted band, Yet dared not his victor to withstand, But trembled like a lambe fled from the pray; And all the way him followd on the strand, As he had long bene learned to obay; Yet never learned he such service till that day.

Thus as he led the Beast along the way, He spide far off a mighty Giauntesse Fast flying, on a Courser dapled gray, From a bold knight that with great hardinesse Her hard pursewd, and sought for to suppresse She bore before her lap a dolefull Squire, Lying athwart her horse in great distresse,

Fast bounden hand and foote with cords of wire, [her desire. Whom she did meane to make the thrall of

Which whenas Satyrane beheld, in haste

He lefte his captive Beast at liberty, And crost the nearest way, by which he cast Her to encounter ere she passed by; But she the way shund nathemore forthy, But forward gallopt fast; which when he spyde, His mighty speare he couched warily,

And at her ran: she, having him descryde, Her selfe to fight addrest, and threw her lode aside.

XXXXIX

Like as a Goshauke, that in foote doth beare A trembling Culver, having spide on hight An Eagle that with plumy wings doth sheare The subtile avre stouping with all his might, The quarry throwes to ground with fell despight, And to the batteill doth her selfe prepare: So ran the Geauntesse unto the fight Her fyrie eyes with furious sparkes did stare,

And with blasphemous bannes high God in

peeces tare.

She caught in hand an huge great yron mace. Wherewith she many had of life deprived: But, ere the stroke could seize his aymed place. His speare amids her sun-brode shield ar Yet nathemore the steele asonder riv'd, All were the beame in bignes like a mast, Ne her out of the stedfast sadle driv'd; But, glauncing on the tempred metall, brast In thousand shivers, and so forth beside her past.

TIT

Her Steed did stagger with that pulssaunt strooke:

But she no more was moved with that might.
Then it had lighted on an aged Oke,
Or on the marble Pillour that is pight.
Upon the top of Mount Olympus hight,
For the brave youthly Champions to assay.
With burning charet wheeles it nigh to smite;
But who that smites it mars his joyous play,
And is the spectacle of ruinous decay.

XLII

Yet, therewith sore entag'd, with sterne regard

Her dreadfull weapon she to him addrest,
Which on his belinet martielled so hard
That made him low incline his lofty crest,
And bowd his battred visour to his brest:
Wherewith he was so stund that he n'ote ryde,
But recled to and fro from east to west.
Which when his cruell entiny espyde,
She lightly unto him adjoyned syde to syde;

XLIII

And, on his collar laying puissaunt hand, Out of his wavering seat him pluckt perforse, Perforse him pluckt, unable to withstand Or helpe himselfe; and laying thwart her horse,

In loathly wise like to a carrion corse, She bore him fast away. Which when the knight

That her pursewed saw, with great remorse He nere was touched in his noble spright, And gan encrease his speed as she encreast her flight.

XLIV

Whom when as nigh approching she espyde,
She threw away her burden angrily;
For she list not the batteill to abide,
But made her selfe more light away to fly:
Yet her the hardy knight pursewd so nye
That almost in the backe he off her strake;
But still, when him at hand she did cspy,
She turnd, and semblaunce of faire fight did
make,

[her take.

But, when he stayd, to flight againe she did

XLV

By this the good Sir Satyrane gan awake Out of his dreame that did him long entraunce,

And, seeing none in place, he gan to Exceeding mone, and ourst that crue! Which reft from him so faire a cher At length he spyde whereas that work Whom he had reskewed from captive Of his strong foe, lay tombled in the Unable to arise, or foote or hand to

CLAY

To whom approching, well he mate in that fowle plight a comely person and lovely face, made fit for to dece Fraile Ladies hart with loves common Now in the blossome of his freshest. He reard him up and loosd his you and after gan inquire his parentage, and how he fell into the Gyaunts he had who that was which chaced her lands.

XLVII

Then trembling yet through feary bespake:

'That Geauntesse Argante is behich A daughter of the Titans which sid Warre against beven, and heaped hi To scale the skyes and put Jore right:

right: Her syre Typhoeus was; who, mad merth,

And dronke with blood of men slai Through incest her of his owne mot Whylome begot, being but halfe twi berth:

XLVIII

For at that berth another Babe sh To weet, the mightie Ollyphant, the Great wreake to many errant knight And many hath to foule confusion in These twinnes, men say, (a thing in thought)

While in their mothers wombe em Ere they into the lightsom world we In fleshly lust were mingled both ri And in that monstrous wise did to appere.

NLIX

'So liv'd they ever after in like sin Gainst natures law and good behave But greatest shame was to that ma Who, not content so fowly to devoa Her native flesh and staine her broth Did wallow in all other fleshly myre And suffred beastes her body to del So whot she burned in that lustfull Yet all that might not slake her sensor

1 ver all the countrie she did raunge

e voung men to quench her flaming brust. ler fancy with delightfull chaunge: at findes to serve her lust, · she fitte her maine strength, in which she at doth trust,

her bringes into a secret Ile, eternali bendage dye he must, vassail of her pleasures vile, I shamefull sort him selfe with her

long in waite for me did lve. t unto her prison to have brought, m pleasure there to satisfye; and deathes me lever were to dye ke the vow that to faire Columbell have, and yet keepe stedfastly. name, it mistreth not to tell:

emeth well. 1.11 fuld knight, whom ye pursuing saw

nter-e is not such as she seemd, virgin that in martiall law - of armes above all Dames is n.L

many knightes is eke esteemd at worth : She Palladine is hight. m death. you me from dread, reid: r that Monster match in fight,

such as she, that is so chaste a

1.111

deal Squyre of Dames, what you upon thy selfe hast lately ta'ne?

I you recount, (quoth he) 'ywis, a-d to pardon all amis Lady whom I love and serve, ait and wearie servicis,

. how I could her love deserve. might be sure that I would never

1.15 any meaties her grace to gaine

minaund my life to save or spill. a barld me. with incessaunt paine trough the world abroad at will, | 'The third a Damzell was of low degree, rhere, where with my power or Whom I incountrey cottage found by channels there, where surface panels [akill Fall little weened I that chastitee me should faithfully fulfill;

And at the twelve monethes end should bring their names And pledges, as the spoiles of my victorious

L.V

'So well I to faire Ladies service did. And found such favour in their loving hartes, That ere the yeare his course had compassid, Thre hundred pledges for my good desartes, And thrice three hundred thanks for my good

partes, I with me brought, and did to her present: Which when she saw, more bent to eke my smart er

wretch, she so at vauntage caught, Then to reward my trusty true intent; She gan for me devise a grievous punishment;

LVI

'To weet, that I my traveill should resume, And with like labour walke the world around, Ne ever to her presence should presume, Till I so many other Dames had found, he squyre of Dames; that me The which, for all the suit I could propownd,

Would me refuse their pledges to afford, But did abide for ever chaste and sownd." 'Ah! gentle Squyre,' (quoth he) 'tell at one

record? word. How many found'st thou such to put in thy

LVII 'Indeed, Sir knight,' (said he) 'one word

may tell All that I ever found so wisely stayd,

For onely three they were disposd so well; And yet three yeares I now abrode have strayd, To fynd them out.' 'Mote I,' (then laughing sayd [three.

The knight) 'inquire of thee what were those The which thy proffred curtesic denayd? ine which thy profired curtesic dena [is this, Or brutishly brought up, that nev'r did fashions

*The first which then refused me," (said nee)

*Certes was but a common Courtisane: Yet flat refuse to have adoe with mee. Because I could not give her many a Jane. (Thereat full hartely laughed Satyrane.) 'The second was an holy Nume to chose. Which would not let me be her Chappellane. Because she knew, she said, I would disclose

Her counsell, if she should her trust in me repose. LIX

/Had lodging in so meane a maintennunce;

Yet was she fayre, and in her countenaunce Dwelt simple truth in seemely fashion. Long thus I woo'd her with due observnunce.

In hope unto my pleasure to have won; But was as far at last, as when I first begon.

'Safe her, I never any woman found That chastity did for it selfe embrace, But were for other causes firme and sound; Either for want of handsome time and place, Or else for feare of shame and fowle disgrace, Thus am I hopelesse ever to attaine My Ladies love in such a desperate case,

But all my dayes am like to Seeking to match the chaste Ladies traine.

Perdy ' (sayd Satyrane) Dames

Great labour fondly hast thou To get small thankes, and blames,

That may emongst Alcides la Thence backe returning to the Where late he left the Beast He found him not; for he ha And was returned agains unto To tell what tydings of fayre I

CANTO VIII.

The Witch creates a snowy Lady like to Florimell; Who wrong d by Carle, by Protens sav'd, Is sought by Paridell.

So oft as I this history record. My heart doth melt with meere compassion, To thinke how causelesse, of her owne accord, This gentle Damzell, whom I write upon, Should plonged be in such affliction Without all hope of comfort or reliefe; That sure, I weene, the hardest hart of stone Would hardly finde to aggravate her griefe; For misery craves rather mercy then repriefe.

But that accursed Hag, her hostesse late, Had so enranckled her malitious hart, That she desyrd th' abridgement of her fate, Or long colargement of her painefull smart. Now when the Beast, which by her wicked art Late foorth she sent, she backe retourning spyde Tyde with her golden girdle; it a part Of her rich spoyles whom he had carst destroyd She weend, and wondrous gladnes to her hart applyde.

And, with it ronning hast'ly to her sonne, Thought with that sight him much to have reliv'd

Who, thereby deeming sure the thing as donne, His former griefe with furie fresh reviv'd Much more then earst, and would have algates riv'd

The hart out of his brest: for sith her dedd He surely dempt, himselfe he thought depriv'd Of the Riphoan hils, to her re

Quite of all hope wherewith h His foolish malady, and long t

With thought whereof exceed And in his rage his mother w Had she not fled into a secret Where she was wont her Spi taine.

The maisters of her art: there To call them all in order to be And them conjure, upon etern To counsell her, so carefully d How she might heale her son were decayd.

By their advice, and her own She there deviz'd a wondrous Whose like on earth was neve That even Nature selfe envide And grudg'd to see the counterf The thing it selfe: In hand sl To make another like the form Another Florimell, in shape at So lively and so like, that man

The substance, whereof she i Was purest snow in massy mo Which she had gathered in a s

e she tempred with fine Mercury in wex that never yet was seald, gled them with perfect vermily; sa lively sanguine it seemd to the eye

of eyes two burning lampes she set sockets, shyning like the skyes, ticke moving Spirit did arret and roll them like to womens eyes: of ye low lockes she did devyse

den wvre to weave her curied head : en wyre was not so yellow thryse mells fayre heare: and, in the stead he put a Spright to rule the carcas ad;

ed Spright, yfraught with fawning ıyle e resemblance above all the rest, ith the Prince of Darkenes fell some-

hyle avens blis and everlasting rest: ded not instruct which way were best! e to fashion likest Florimell, to speake, ne how to use his gest;

i counterfesaunce did excell, he wyles of wemens wits knew passg well.

aped thus she deckt in garments gay, lorimell had left behind her late; o so then her saw would surely say er selfe whom it did imitate, then her selfe, if ought algate

ought the Lady selfe whom he so long had

: her clipping twixt his armes twayne,

butted his embracement light; with gentle countenaunce, retain'd to hold a foole in vaine delight. ; she so with shadowes entertain'd, reatresse had in charge to her ordain'd.

1 day, as he disposed was

him.

it Sprights, but from all men con- Her to disport and idle time to pas In th' open freshnes of the gentle aire, A knight that way there chaunced to repaire;

feare

Yet knight he was not, but a boastfull swaine That deedes of armes had ever in despaire, Proud Braggadocchio, that in vaunting vaine His glory did repose, and credit did maintaine.

He, seeing with that Chorle so faire a wight, Decked with many a costly ornament,

Much merveiled thereat, as well he might, And thought that match a fowle disparagement: His bloody speare eftesoones he boldly bent Against the silly clowne, who dead through

Fell streight to ground in great astonishment. 'Villein,' (sayd he) 'this Lady is my deare; Dy, if thou it gainesay : I will away her beare.'

The fearefull Chorle durst not gainesay nor But trembling stood, and yielded him the pray; Who, finding litle leasure her to wooe

On Tromparts steed her mounted without stay,

And without reskew led her quite away. Proud man himselfe then Braggadochio deem'd, And next to none after that happy day, Being possessed of that spoyle, which seem'd

The fairest wight on ground, and most of men esteemid. XIV But, when hee saw him selfe free from poursute,

He gan make gentle purpose to his Dame With termes of love and lewdnesse dissolute; For he could well his glozing speaches frame ayrer be. And then she forth her But she thereto would lend but light regard, sonnethat lay in feeble state; [brought] As seeming sory that she ever came ing her gan streight upstart, and Into his powre, that used her so hard [sought: To reave her honor, which she more then life

Thus as they two of kindnes treated long, There them by chaunce encountred on the way ly joyed in so happy sight,
le forgot his former sickely payne:
Whose trampling feete upon the hollow lay
the more to seeme such as she hight.
Seemed to thunder, and did nigh affray That Capons corage: yet he looked grim, And faynd to cheare his lady in dismay Who seemd for feare to quake in every lim.

And her to save from outrage meekely prayed XVI

Fiercely that straunger forward came: and the woodes with that his Idole faire, Approching, with hold words and bitter threat Bad that same boaster, as he mote, on high, To leave to him that lady for excheat,

Or bide him batteill without further treat. That challenge did too peremptory seeme, And fild his senses with abashment great;

esteeme

XVII

And brought through points of many perilous

Saving, 'Thou feolish knight, that weenst with words

swords: But if thee list to see thy Courser ronne, Or prove thy selfe, this sad encounter shonne. And seeke els without hazard of thy hedd.'

At those prowd words that other knight begonne To wex exceeding wroth, and him aredd To turne his steede about, or sure he should

XVIII

be dedd.

apace.

was in hell.

'Sith then,' (said Braggadochio) 'needes thou Thy daies abridge through proofe of puissaunce. Turne we our steeds; that both in equall tilt

May meete againe, and each take happy! chaunce. This said, they both a furloags mountenaunce

Retird their steeds, to ronne in even race; But Braggadochio, with his bloody launce, Once having turnd, no more returnd his face But lefte his love to losse, and fled him selfe

The knight, him seeing flie, had no regard Him to poursew, but to the lady rode;

And having her from Trompart lightly reard. Upon his Courser sett the lovely lode, And with her fled away without abode, Well weened he, that fairest Florimell It was with whom in company he yode, And so her selfe did alwaies to him tell;

So made him thinke him selfe in heven that,

But Floringell her selfe was far away, Driven to great distresse by fortune straunge, And taught the carefull Mariner to play.

Sith late mischaunce had her compeld to chaunge

The land for sea, at randon there to raunge : Fett there that cruell Queene avengeresse, Not satisfy de so far her to estraunge

From courtly blis and wonted happinesse Did heape on her new waves of weary wrete Desse. XXI

For being fled into the fishers bote Yet seeing nigh him jeopardy extreme,
Le it dissembled well, and light seemd to Long so she on the mighty maine did tota, And with the tide drove forward carelesly For th' ayre was milde and cleared was the skie,

And all his windes Dan Aeolus did keepe To steale away that I with blowes have wonne. From stirring up their stormy enmity, As pittying to see her waile and weepe: But all the while the fisher did securely sleep

> XXII At last when droncke with drowsinesse 1

woke, And saw his drover drive along the stream He was dismayd; and thrise his brest ! stroke.

For marveill of that accident extreame: But when he saw that blazing beauties be Which with rare light his bote did beauth

He marveild more, and thought he yet dreame Not well awakte; or that some extage

Assotted had his sence, or dazed was his 🛊 XXIII But when her well avizing hee perceiv'd To be no vision nor fantasticke sight. Great comfort of her presence he conceiv'd

And felt in his old corage new delight To gin awake, and stir his fresen spright: The rudely askte her, how she thither can Ah! (sayd she) 'father, I note read ar What hard misfortune brought me to this Yet am I glad that here I now in safety a

XXIV 'But thou, good man, sith far in sea we be And the great waters gin apace to swell, That now no more we can the mayn-land a Have care, I pray, to guide the cock-bote

Least worse on sea then us on land befell." Thereat th'old man did nought but fondly And saide his boat the way could wisely But his deceiptfull eyes did never lin To looke on her faire face and marke her s

XXV

The sight whereof in his congealed flesh Infixt such secrete sting of greedy last, That the drie withered stocke it gan refr And kindled heat that soone in flame brust:

The driest wood is soonest burnt to dust. ludely to her he lept, and his rough hond where ill became him rashly would have thrust;

but she with angry scorne did him withstond,

XXVI

But he, that never good nor maners knew, er sharpe rebuke full litle did esteeme :

ard is to teach an old horse amble trew : le inward smoke, that did before but steeme, wke into open fire and rage extreme;

ad now he strength gan adde unto his will, reyng to doe that did him fowle misseeme matly he threwe her downe, ne car'd to spill

r garments gay with scales of fish that all did till. XXVII he silly virgin strove him to withstand

that she might, and him in vaine revild : strugled strongly both with foote and hand

save her honor from that villaine vilde. d cride to heven, from humane help exild, ye brave knights, that boast this Ladies

love,

Pere be ye now, when she is nigh detild filthy wretch? well may she you reprove falsehood or of slouth, when most it may behove.

XXVIII ut if that thou, Sir Satyran, didst weete, thou, Sir Peridure, her sory state,

we soone would yee assemble many a fleete. fetch from sea that ye at land lost late! wres, citties, kingdomes, ye would ruinate Four avengement and despiteous rage,

• ought your burning fury mote abate; at if Sir Calidore could it presage,

o living creature could his cruelty asswage.

But sith that none of all her knights is nye, bow the heavens, of voluntary grace and soveraine favor towards chastity, be succor send to her distressed cace;

much high God doth innocence embrace.

rove long the formy waves driving his finny drove.

Proteus is Shepheard of the seas of yore, nd hath the charge of Neptunes mightr And all her sences with abashment quite we

beard;

An aged sire with head all frory hore, And sprinckled frost upon his deawy beard: Who when those pittifull outcries he heard Through all the seas so ruefully resownd,

His charett swifte in hast he thither steam, and shamefully reproved for his rudenes fond. Which with a teeme of scaly Phocas bound

Was drawne upon the waves that fomed him arownd. XXXI

And comming to that Fishers wandring bote, That went at will withouten card or sayle, He therein saw that vrkesome sight, which smote

Deepe indignation and compassion frayle Into his hart attonce: streight did he havle The greedy villein from his hoped pray, Of which he now did very litle fayle, And with his staffe, that drives his heard astray, dismay

Him bett so sore, that life and sence did much XXXII The whiles the pitteous Lady up did ryse,

Ruffled and fowly raid with filthy soyle, And blubbred face with teares of her faire eves: Her heart nigh broken was with weary toyle, To save her selfe from that outrageous spoyle; But when she looked up, to weet what wight Had her from so infamous fact assoyld, For shame, but more for feare of his grim sight,

Downe in her lap she hid her face, and lowdly shright. XXXIII Her selfe not saved yet from daunger dredd She thought, but chaung'd from one to other

feare: Like as a fearefull partridge, that is fledd From the sharpe hauke which her attached neare. And fals to ground to seeke for succor theare, Whereas the hungry Spaniells she does spye

With greedy jawes her ready for to teare: In such distresse and sad perplexity Was Florimell, when Proteus she did see her

XXXIV

Nor doubt himselfe; and who he was her told; Yet all that could not from affright her hold, Ne to recomfort her at all prevayld; For her faint hart was with the frosen cold Benumbd so inly, that her wits nigh fayld

quayld.

YXXY

Her up betwixt his rugged hands he reard, And with his frory lips full softly ki t, [beard Whiles the cold ysickles from his rough Dropped adowne upon her yvory brest: Yet he him selfe so busily addrest, That her out of astonishment he wrought; And out of that same fishers filthy nest Removing her, into his charet brought, And there with many gentle termes her faire besought.

XXXVI

But that old leachour, which with bold assault That beautie durst presume to violate, He cast to punish for his hainous fault: Then tooke he him, yet trembling sith of late, And tyde behind his charet, to aggrate The virgin whom be had abusde so sore; So drag'd him through the waves in scornfull And after cast him up upon the shore : [state, But Florimell with him unto his bowre he bore.

XXXVII

His bowre is in the bottom of the maine, Under a mightie rocke, gainst which doe rave The roring billowes in their proud disdaine, That with the angry working of the wave [keene Therein is eaten out an hollow cave, That seemes rough Masons hand with engines Had long while laboured it to engrave There was his wonne; ne living wight was (it cleane. Save one old Nymph, hight Panope, to keepe

XXXVIII

Thither he brought the sory Florimell, And entertained her the best he might, And Panopè ber entertaind eke well, As an immortall mote a mortall wight, To winne her liking unto his delight: With flattering wordes he sweetly wood her. And offered faire guiftes t'allure her sight; But she both offers and the offerer Despysde, and all the fawning of the flatterer

XXXXIX Dayly he tempted her with this or that, And never suffred her to be at rest; But evermore she him refused flat, And all his fained kindnes did detest, So firmely she had sealed up her brest, Sometimes he boasted that a God he hight, But she a mortall creature loved best:
Then he would make him selfe a mortall wight;
They spyde a knight fayre pricking on But then she said she lov'd none, but a Faery
As if he were on some adventure bent, play knight.

Then like a Facric knight him selfe be de For every shape on him he could endew: Then like a king he was to her exprest, And offred kingdoms unto her in yes, To be his Leman and his Lady tree! But when all this he nothing saw prevails With harder meanes he cast her to suble And with sharpe threates her often did as So thinking for to make her stubborns on quayle.

XI.T To dreadfull shapes he did him selfe true forme Now like a Gyaunt; now like to a feenl Then like a Centaure; then like to a stor Raging within the waves: thereby he Her will to win unto his wished cend; But when with feare, nor favour, nor w He els could doc, he saw him selfe usters Downe in a Dongcon deepe he let her fall And threatned there to make her his com thrall.

Eternall thraldome was to her more her Then losse of chastitie, or change of love Dye had she rather in tormenting griefe Then any should of falsenesse her reprove Or loosenes, that she lightly did remove. Most vertuous virgin! glory be thy mand And crowne of heavenly prayse with Sil above, Where most sweet hymmes of this thy be Are still emongst them song, that far t rymes exceed.

Fit song of Angels caroled to bee! But yet whatso my feeble Muse can frame Shal be t' advance thy goodly chastites And to enroll thy memorable name In th' heart of every honourable Dame, That they thy vertuous deedes may imita And be partakers of thy endlesse fame. Yt yrkes me leave thee in this wofull state To tell of Satyrane where I him left of late

XLIV

Who having ended with that Squyre of Date A long discourse of his adventures vayne, The which himselfe then Ladies more defant And finding not th' Hyena to be slavne. With that same Squyre retourned back a And in his port appeared manly hardines

rane him towardes did addresse. what wight he was, and what his

nest,
aming nigh, estsoones he gan to gesse, The Palfrey whereon she which on his brest And of his bowels made his bloody seast: idell it was. Tho to him yode, saluting as beseemed best,

ereto answering said: 'The tydinges ow in Faery court all men doe tell, urned hath great mirth to mourning d, te ruine of proud Marinell, lein parture of faire Florimell im forth: and after her are gone brave knightes that doen in armes My labour adde, and be partaker of their speed.' ard her ywandred all alone: [excell the rest my lott (unworthy') is to be e.

XLVII

entle knight,' (said then Sir Satyrane) our all is lost, I greatly dread, t a thanklesse service on thee ta'ne, st sacrifice unto the dead: I surely doubt, thou maist aread th for ever Florimell to bee; the noble knights of Maydenhead, er ador'd, may sore repent with mee, aire Ladies may for ever sory bee.

XLVIII

wordes when Paridell had heard, his e ye of report, or did ye see se of dread, that makes ye doubt so ie, elles how mote it ever bee, r hand should dare for to engore hore.

XLIX

'These eyes did see that they will ever rew T' have seene,' (quoth he) 'when as a monstrous beast The Palfrey whereon she did travell slew,

Which speaking token sheweth at the least Her certeine losse, if not her sure decay: Besides, that more suspicion encreast, inquire of tydinges farre abrode, [rode. I found her golden girdle cast astray, rwardes on what adventure now he Distaynd with durt and blood, as relique of the pray.'

> 'Ay me!' (said Paridell) 'the signes be sadd; And, but God turne the same to good sooth-say, That Ladies safetie is sore to be dradd.

> Yet will I not forsake my forward way, Till triall doe more certeine truth bewray.'
> 'Faire Sir,' (quoth he) 'well may it you succeed! Ne long shall Satyrane behind you stay, But to the rest, which in this Quest proceed,

'Ye noble knights,' (said then the Squyre of Dames) 'Well may yee speede in so praiseworthy payne! But sith the Sunne now ginnes to slake his

beames In deawy vapours of the westerne mayne, And lose the teme out of his weary wayne, Mote not mislike you also to abate Your zealous hast, till morrow next againe Both light of heven and strength of men relate: Which if ye please, to yonder castle turne your gate.

That counsell pleased well: so all yfere Forth marched to a Castle them before; tly chaunge and seemd dismaid to bee: Where soone arryving they restrained were d: 'Fayre Sir, how may I weene it Of ready entraunce, which ought evermore doe tell in such uncerteintee? [trew, To errant knights be commune: wondrous sore doe tell in such uncerteintee? [trew, To errant knights be commune: wondrous sore e ve of report, or did ye see [sore? Thereat displeased they were, till that young Squyre dore

Gan them informe the cause, why that same Was shut to all which lodging did desyre: e blood? The hevens such crueltie The which to let you weet will further time requyre.

CANTO IX.

Mallecco will no straunge knights host, For peevish gealesy.
Paridell giusts with Britomart:
Both show their auncestry.

REDOUBTED knights, and honorable Dames, To whom I levell all my labours end, Right sore I feare, least with unworthic blames This odious argument my rymes should shend, Whiles of a wanton Lady I doe write,
Which with her loose incontinence doth blend Depriv d of kindly joy and naturall delight The shyning glory of your soveraine light; And knighthood fowle defaced by a faithlesse knight.

But never let th' ensample of the bad Offend the good; for good, by parazone Of evill, may more notably be rad. As white seemes favrer mucht with blacke at - Increat Sir Sarytane gain any required As white seemes favrer mucht with blacke at - Extremely mad the man I surely deems. Ne all are shamed by the fault of one: For lo! in heven, whereas all goodnes is, Emongst the Angels, a whole legione Of wicked Sprightes did fall from happy blis; What wonder then if one, of women all, did mis?

More not be entertayed, as seemed meet, Into that Castle, (as that Squyre does tell.) Therein a cancred crabbed Carle does dwell, That has no skill of Court nor courtesie,

Ne cares what men say of him, ill or well; For all his dayes he drownes in privitie, Yet has full large to live and spend at libertie.

11

Then listen, Lordings, if ye list to weet

The cause why Satyrane and Paridell

'But all his minde is set on mucky pelfe, To hoord up heapes of evill gotten masse, For which he others wrongs, and wreckes him-Y t is he lincked to a lovely lasse. Whose beauty doth her bounty far surpasse;

The which to him both far unequall yeares. And also far unlike conditions has: For she does joy to play emongst her peares. To keepe us out in scorne, of his owne was And to be free from hard restraynt and genlous. And rather do not ransack all, and him feares.

'But he is old, and withered like hav, **Unit tare Ladies service to supply**;

Suspect her truth, and keepe continual sp. Upon her with his other blincked eye. Ne suffreth he resort of living wight Approch to her, he keepe her company

The privic guilt whereof makes him alway

· Malbecco he, and Hellenore she hight; Unfitly yokt together in one teeme. That is the cause why never any knight Is suffred here to enter, but he seeme Such as no doubt of him he neede misleen tone; Thereat Sir Satyrane gan smyle, and say; That weenes with watch and hard restrain to stay A womans will, which is disposd to go astr

1.11 'In vaine he feares that which he cam shoune; For who wotes not, that womans subtiltys Can guylen Argus, when she list misder It is not yron bandes, nor hundred eyes, Nor brasen walls, nor many wakefull spyt That can withhold her wilfull wandring But fast goodwill, with gentle courtesyes, And timely service to her pleasures meet, May her perhaps containe, that else well algates fleet.

'Then is he not more mad,' (sayd Paridell 'That hath himselfe unto such service sol In dolefull thraldome all his daves to dw For sure a foole I doe him firmely hold, [selfe: That loves his fetters, though they we gold. But why doe wee devise of others ill. Whyles thus we suffer this same dotard of

Nay, let us first' (sayd Satyrane) 'est The man by gentle meanes to let us in,

THE FAERIE OUEENE.

rardes affray with cruell threat, e to efforce it doe begin : I fayle, we will by force it win, ward the wretch for his mesprise, worthy of his haynous sin.' sell pleasd: then Paridell did rise Castle gate approcht in quiet wise

soft knocking entrance he desyrd. man selfe, which then the Porter ered, that all were now retyrd re-t, and all the keyes convayd maister, who in bed was layd, him durst awake out of his dreme; fore them of patience gently prayd lell began to chaunge his theme, tned him with force and punishment reme :

1 vaine, for nought mote him relent so long before the wicket fast ed, that the night was forward spent, tire welkin fowly overcast n up a bitter stormy blast, vre and havle so horrible and dred, faire many were compeld at last succour to a little shed, h beside the gate for swyne was ered.

ed, soone after they were gone, night, whom tempest thither brought, hat Castle, and with earnest mone, e rest, late entrance deare besought: so as the rest, he prayd for nought; he of entrance was refusd. reat he was displeased, and thought enge himselfe so sore abusd, nore the Carle of courtesie accusd.

XIII

vovde th' intollerable stowre, mpeld to seeke some refuge neare, hat shed, to shrowd him from the which full of guests he found whyas not let to enter there: Tleare. ie gan to wex exceeding wroth, lislodge, all were they liefe or loth;

XIV

Both were full loth to leave that needfull tent, And both full loth in darkenesse to debate; Yet both full liefe him lodging to have lent, And both full liefe his boasting to abate: But chiefely Paridell his hart did grate To heare him threaten so despightfully, As if he did a dogge in kenell rate That durst not barke; and rather had he dy Then, when he was defyde, in coward corner ly.

The hastily remounting to his steed He forth issew'd: like as a boystrous winde, Which in th' earthes hollow caves hath long ben hid And shut up fust within her prisons blind, Makes the huge element, against her kinde, To move and tremble as it were aghast, Untill that it an issew forth may finde: [blast Then forth it breakes, and with his furious

Confounds both land and seas, and skyes doth XVI

overcast.

Their steel-hed speares they strongly coucht, and met Together with impetuous rage and forse, That with the terrour of their fierce affret

They rudely drove to ground both man and That each awhile lay like a sencelesse corse.

But Paridell sore brused with the blow Could not arise the counterchaunge to scorse, Till that young Squyre him reared from below; Then drew he his bright sword, and gan about him throw.

But Satyrane forth stepping did them stay, And with faire treaty pacifide their yre. Then, when they were accorded from the fray, Against that Castles Lord they gan conspire, To heape on him dew vengeaunce for his hire. They beene agreed; and to the gates they goe To burn the same with unquenchable fire, And that uncurteous Carle, their commune foe, To doe fowle death to die, or wrap in grievous woe.

XVIII

Malbecco, seeing them resolvd indeed To flame the gates, and hearing them to call e that he would lodge with them For fire in earnest, ran with fearfull speed, And to them calling from the castle wall Besought them humbly him to beare withall, fyde them each, and so defyde them As ignorant of servants bad abuse And slacke attendaunce unto straungers and The knights were willing all things to excuse, Had them surpried. At last, a Though nought belev'd, and entraunce late did Her goodly personage and glass not refuse.

Which they so much mistosic

They beene ybrought into a comely bowre, And serve of all things that more needfull bee; Yet secretly their hoste did on them lowre, And welcomde more for feare then charitee; But they dissembled what they did not see, And welcomed themselves, Each gan undight Their garments wett, and weary armour free, To dry them selves by Vulcanes flaming light, To dry them selves by Vulcanes flaming light, In contemplation of divinites:
And eke their lately bruzed parts to bring in But most they mervaild at her plight.

And eke that straunger knight emongst the Was for like need enforst to disaray: Tho, whenas vailed was her lofty crest Her golden locks, that were in trammells gay Upbounden, did them selves adowne display And raught unto her beeles; like sunny beames,

That in a cloud their light did long time stay, shewe their golden [their azure streames, Their vapour vaded, gleames, And through the persant aire shoote forth

Shee also dofte her heavy haberjeon, Which the faire feature of her limbs did hyde ; And her well-plighted frock, which she did won To tucke about her short when she did ryde, Shee low let fall, that flowd from her lanck syde

Downe to her foot with carelesse modestee, Then of them all she plainly was espyde To be a woman-wight, unwist to bee, The fairest woman-wight that ever eie did see,

Like as Bellona (being late returnd From slanghter of the Giaunts conquered ; Where proud Encelade, whose wide nosethrils burnd

With breathed flames, like to a furnace redd. Transfixed with her speare downe tombled dedd From top of Hemus by him heaped hyc;) Hath loosd her helmet from her lofty hedd, And her Gorgonian shield gins to untye From her lefte arme, to rest in glorious victorye.

XXIII

Which whenas they beheld, they smitten were With great amazement of so wondrous sight; And each on other, and they all on her, Stood gazing, as if suddein great affright

delight

In their first error, and yett still With wonder of her beauty for

Yet note their hongry vew be But seeing still the more desir? And ever firmely fixed did abid And noble prowesse, which they That much they faynd to know Yet none of all them her thereo Yet every one her likte, and lov'd,

XXV

And Paridell, though partly di With his late fall and fowle ind Yet was soone wonne his malic Through gratious regard of her And knightly worth which he to Yet tried did adore. Supper w Then they Malbecco prayd of ex That of his lady they might hav And company at meat, to doe t light.

XXYI

But he, to shifte their curious Gan causen why she could not e Her crased helth, her late recour And humid evening ill for sicke But none of those excuses could Ne would they eate till she in p Shee came in presence with right And fairely them saluted, as be And shewd her selfe in all a ger

They sate to meat; and Satyrar Was her before, and Paridell bes But he him selfe sate looking sti Gainst Britomart, and ever clos Sir Satyrane, that glaunces migl But his blinde eie, that sided Par All his demeasnure from his sigh On her faire face so did he feede And sent close messages of love

And ever and anone, when none With speaking lookes, that clos bore.

He rov'd at her, and told his som For all that art be learned had of edd.

he ignoraunt of that leud lore s eye his meaning wisely redd, a the like him aunswerd evermore. t at him one fyrie dart, whose hedd ed was with privy lust and gealous

that deadly throw made no defence, the wound his weake heart opened rde: ed engine through false influence

mgh his eles, and secretly did glyde heart, which it did sorely gryde. ing new to him was that same paine, at all; for he so ofte had tryde re thereof, and lov'd so oft in vaine,

ig of course he counted love to enterine. orth to her he sought to intimate

ard griefe, by meanes to him well chus fruit out of the silver plate e table dasht, as overthrowne, fruitfull liquor overflowne;

he danneing bubbles did divine, n write to lett his love be showne ; ell she redd out of the learned line: ent prophane in mistery of wine.

XXXI

en so of his hand the pledge she raught, y cup she fained to mistake, er lap did shed her idle draught, desire her inward flame to slake. close signes they secret way did make

ir wils, and one eies watch escape: him needeth, for to watch and wake, ers will deceive. Thus was the apo, ers will deceive. faire handling, put into Malbeccoes pe.

XXXII ben of meats and drinks they had

ell eide.

eir fill, was moved by that gentle Dame se knights adventurous, to tell of armes which unto them became, w one his kindred and his name.

ridell, in whom a kindly pride us speach and skill his words to frame d, being glad of so fitte tide My native soile have lefte, my dayes to spend commend to her, thus spake, of al In seewing deeds of armes, my lives and labors

Upon thee heapt a direfull destinie; What boots it boast thy glorious descent, And fetch from heven thy great genealogic, Sith all thy worthie prayses being blent Their ofspring hath embaste, and later glory shent?

Before that angry Gods and cruell skie

XXXIV

'Most famous Worthy of the world, by whome That warre was kindled which did Troy inflame, And stately towres of Ilion whilome Brought unto balefull ruine, was by name Sir Paris far renowmd through noble fame; Who, through great prowesse and bold hardi-

nesse, From Lacedæmon fetcht the fayrest Dame That ever Greece did boast, or knight possesse, Whom Venus to him gave for meed of worthinesse;

XXXV

'Fayre Helene, flowre of beautie excellent, And girlond of the mighty Conquerours, That madest many Ladies deare lament The heavie losse of their brave Paramours, Which they far off beheld from Trojan toures, And saw the fieldes of faire Scamander strowne With carcases of noble warrioures

Whose fruitlesse lives were under furrow sowne And Xanthus sandy bankes with blood all overflowne.

XXXVI · From him my linage I derive aright,

Who long before the ten yeares siege of Troy, Whiles yet on Ida he a shepeheard hight, On faire Oenone got a lovely boy, Whom, for remembrance of her passed joy, She, of his Father, Parius did name; Who, after Greekes did Priams realme destroy, Gathred the Trojan reliques sav'd from flame, And with them sayling thence to th' isle of Paros came.

HVXXX 'That was by him cald Paros, which before

end.

Hight Nausa: there he many yeares did raine, And built Nausicle by the Pontick shore; The which he dying lefte next in remaine To Paridas his sonne, From whom I Paridell by kin descend: But, for faire ladies love and glories gaine, My native soile have lefte, my dayes to spend

XXXVIII

that art now nought but an idle name, Whenas the noble Britomart heard tell hine ashes buried low dost lie. [fame, Of Trojan warres and Priams citie sackt. whileme far much greater then thy The ruefull story of Sir Paridell,

She was empassiond at that piteous act, With zelous envy of Greekes cruell fact Against that nation, from whose race of old She heard that she was lineally extract; For noble Britons sprong from Trojans bold, And Troynovant was built of old Troyes ashes cold.

Then, sighing soft awhile, at last she thus: O lamentable fall of famous towne! Which raignd so many yeares victorious, And of all Asie bore the soveraine crowne, And of all Asie bore the soveraine crowne, In one sad night consumd and throwen downe: And Troy againe out of her dust What stony hart, that heares thy haplesse fate, To sitt in second seat of soverain Is not empierst with deepe compassiowne, And makes ensample of mans wretched state, That floures so fresh at morne, and fades at Out of the Trojans scattered ofspr evening late?

Behold, Sir, how your pitifull complaint Hath found another partner of your payne; For nothing may impresse so deare constraint

As countries cause, and commune foes disdayne. But if it should not grieve you backe agayne To turne your course, I would to heare desyre What to Aeneas fell; sith that men sayne He was not in the cities wofull fyre Consum'd, but did him selfe to safety retyre."

XLI

'Anchyses sonne, begott of Venus fayre,' Said he, 'out of the flames for safegard fled, And with a remnant did to sea repayre; Where he through fatall errour long was led Full many yeares, and weetlesse wandered From shore to shore emongst the Lybick sandes, Ere rest he fownd. Much there he suffered, And many perilles past in forreine landes, To save his people sad from victours vengefull handes.

XLII

'At last in Latium he did arryve, Where he with cruell warre was entertaind Of th' inland folke, which sought him backe to drive

Till he with old Latinus was constraind To contract wedlock, (so the fates ordaind) Wedlocke contract in blood, and eke in blood Accomplished, that many deare complaind: The rivall slaine, the victour, through the flood Escaped hardly, hardly praisd his wedlock good.

XLIII

'Yet, after all, he victour did survive, And with Latinus did the kingdom part; But after, when both nations gas Into their names the title to con-His sonne Iulus did from thence With all the warlike youth of Tr And in long Alba plast his thron Where faire it florished and long Till Romulus, renewing it, to Ro

'There; there,' (said Britomart peard

Of all the world, under her gover But a third kingdom yet is to are That in all glory and great entery Both first and second Troy shalld

XLV

'It Troynovant is hight, that wi Upon whose stubborne neck, (whe With roring rage, and sore him selfe That all men feare to tempt his bil She fastned hath her foot; which That it a wonder of the world is s In forreine landes; and all which Beholding it from farre, doe think the skye.

XLVI

'The Trojan Brute did first that And Hygate made the meare ther And Overt gate by North: that is Toward the land; two rivers bown So huge a scope at first him seem To be the compasse of his kingdo So huge a mind could not in lesse Ne in small meares containe his s That Albion had conquered first feat.'

'Ah! fairest Lady knight,' (said 'Pardon, I pray, my heedlesse ove Who had forgot that whylome I b From aged Mnemon; for my wits Indeed he said, (if I remember rig That of the antique Trojan stocke Another plant, that raught to won And far abroad his mightie braund Into the utmost Angle of the worl

XLVIII

· For that same Brute, whom muc vaunce In all his speach, was Sylvius his

dell.

ring slain through luckles arrowes nce. feare of that he had misdonne, hame, so fowle reproch to shonne, im ledd to sea an youthly trayne; trie wandring they long time did fortunes prov'd in th' Ocean mayne, adventures found, that now were to sayne.

y fatall course they driven were ind spatious and brode, t North that did to them appeare: r rest, they, seeking farre abrode, ie fittest soyle for their abode, all thinges fitt for living foode, waste and void of peoples trode, ge nation of the Geaunts broade l blood.

ith losse of many Britons bold: ie great Goemagot of strong nd Coulin of Debon old, [cold, hrowne and laide on th' earth full ked under their so hideous masse; istory to bee enrold ng moniments of brasse.

'His worke great Troynovant, his worke is Faire Lincolne, both renowmed far away; [eke That who from East to West will endlong Cannot two fairer Cities find this day, [seeke, Except Cleopolis: so heard I say Old Mnemon. Therefore, Sir, I greet you well Your countrey kin; and you entyrely pray
Of pardon for the strife, which late befell Betwixt us both unknowne,' So ended Pari-

But all the while that he these speeches spent, Upon his lips hong faire Dame Hellenore
With vigilant regard and dew attent,
Fashioning worldes of fancies evermore
In her fraile witt, that now her quite forlore: The whiles unwares away her wondring eye waste and void of peoples trode, ge nation of the Geaunts broode in living flesh, and dronck mens living flesh mens living fle fly.

LIII

, through wearie wars and labours So long these knights discoursed diversly Of straunge affaires, and noble hardiment, Which they had past with mickle jeopardy, That now the humid night was farforth spent, And hevenly lampes were halfendeale y-brent: Which th' old man seeing wel, who too long thought Every discourse, and every argument, Which by the houres he measured, besought e antique Worthies merits far did Them go to rest. So all unto their bowres were brought.

CANTO X.

Paridell rapeth Hellenore: Malbecco her poursewes;
Fynds emongst Satyres, whence with him
To turne she doth refuse.

and the world with early light, Aurora had the shady damp goodly heven amoved quight, mart and that same Faery knight th on their journey for to wend: il complayed, that his late fight mart so sore did him offend, nd.

11

w next, so soone as Phoebus Lamp So foorth they far'd; but he behind them stayd, Maulgre his host, who grudged grievously To house a guest that would be needes obayd, And of his owne him lefte not liberty: Might wanting measure moveth surquedry. Two things he feared, but the third was death; Il complayed, that his late fight mart so sore did him offend, he could not, till his hurts he did And his faire wife, whom honest long he keep uneath P 2

But patience perforce, he must abie What fortune and his fate on him will lay ; Fond is the feare that findes no remedie: Yet warily he watcheth every way, By which he feareth evill happen may; So th' evill thinkes by watching to prevent: Ne doth he suffer her, nor night nor day, Out of his sight her selfe once to absent: So doth he punish her, and eke him selfe torment.

But Paridell kept better watch then hee, A fit occasion for his turne to finde. False love! why do men say thou canst not see, And in their foolish fancy feigne thee blinde, That with thy charmes the sharpest sight doest binde,

And to thy will abuse? Thou walkest free, And seest every secret of the minde; Thou seest all, yet none at all sees thee: All that is by the working of thy Deitee.

So perfect in that art was Paridell, That he Malbeccoes halfen eye did wyle ; His halfen eye he wiled wondrous well, And Hellenors both eyes did eke beguvle. Both eyes and hart attonce, during the whyle That he there sojourned his woundes to heale; That Cupid selfe, it seeing, close did smyle To weet how he her love away did steale, And bad that none their joyous treason should reveale.

The learned lover lost no time nor tyde That least avantage mote to him afford, Yet bore so faire a sayle, that none espyde His secret drift, till he her layd abord. When so in open place and commune bord He fortun'd her to meet, with commune speach He courted her; yet bayted every word, That his ungentle hoste n'ote him appeach Of vile ungentlenesse, or hospitages breach.

But when apart (if ever her apart) He found, then his false engins fast he plyde, And all the sleights unbosomd in his hart: He sigh'd, he sobd, he swownd, he perdy dyde, The which she meant away with her fast besyde:
Tho, when againe he him bethought to live,
He wept, and wayld, and false laments belyde,
Saying, but if she Mercie would him give,
That he mote algates dye, yet did his death

The which she meant away with her!
The rest she fyr'd, for sport, or for destance.

As Hellene, when she saw aloft appearing the terminal of the same and reach to hever the formula. forgive.

And otherwhyles with amorous del And pleasing toyes he would be est Now singing sweefly to surprise ber Now making layes of love and leven Bransles, Ballads, virelayes, and ven Off purposes, oft riddles, he devyst, And thousands like which flowed in With which he fed her fancy, and my To take to his new love, and leave despysd.

And every where he might, and ever He did her service dewtifull, and sew At hand with humble pride and please So closely yet, that none but she it w Who well perceived all, and all indee Thus finely did he his false nets disp With which he many weake harts hads Of yore, and many had ylike misled: What wonder then, if she were likewise

No fort so fensible, no wals so strong But that continuall battery will rive, Or daily siege, through dispurvayaus And lacke of reskewes, will to parley And Peece, that unto parley eare will Will shortly yield it selfe, and will be The vassall of the victors will bylive: That stratageme had oftentimes assay This crafty Paramoure, and now it play'd:

For through his traines he her intrap That she her love and hart hath who To him, without regard of gaine or so Or care of credite, or of husband old Whom she hath vow'd to dub a fayre C Nought wants but time and place shortly shee

Devized hath, and to her lover told. It pleased well: So well they both a So readie rype to ill ill wemens couns

Darke was the Evening, fit for lovers When chaunst Malbecco busie be else She to his closet went, where all his t Lay hid; thereof she countlesse sun

ond Helene, fayre Dame Hellenore, les her husband ran with sory haste ch the flames which she had tyn'd fore

it his foolish labour spent in waste, into her lovers armes right fast; reight embraced she to him did cry alowd for helpe, ere helpe were past; that Guest did beare her forcibly. ant to ravish her, that rather had to

etched man hearing her call for ayd, ly seeing him with her to fly, squiet mind was much dismayd: n againe he backeward cast his eye, · the wicked fire so furiously : his hart, and scorch his Idoles face, therewith distressed diversely, he how to turne, nor to what place: er wretched man in such a wofull cace.

n to him she cryde, to her he turnd, the fire; love money overcame: en he marked how his money burnd, nis wife; money did love disclame: s he loth to loose his loved Dame, i to leave his liefest pelfe behinde; he n'ote save both, he sav'd that same vas the dearest to his dounghill minde, of his desire, the joy of misers blinde.

XVI

thilest all things in troublous uprore men busie to suppresse the flame, ng couple neede no reskew feare, ure had and liberty to frame rpost flight, free from all mens reclame; ht, the patronesse of love-stealth favre, m safe conduct, till to end they came. they gone yfere, a wanton payre s loosely knit, where list them to re ayre.

is the cruell flames yslaked were, , seeing how his losse did lye, [lere, he flames which he had quencht whyre waves of griefe and gealosye pe emplonged was, and drowned nye award doole and felonous despight: I, he wept, he stampt, he lowd did cry, the passions that in man may light attonce oppresse, and vex his caytive pright.

XVIII

Long thus he chawd the cud of inward griefe, And did consume his gall with anguish sore: Still when he mused on his late mischiefe. Then still the smart thereof increased more. And seemd more grievous then it was before, At last when sorrow he saw booted nought, Ne griefe might not his love to him restore, He gan devise how her he reskew mought: Ten thousand wayes he cast in his confused

XIX

thought.

At last resolving, like a Pilgrim pore, To search her forth where so she might be fond, And bearing with him treasure in close store The rest he leaves in ground: So takes in hond To seeke her endlong both by sea and lond. Long he her sought, he sought her far and nere, And every where that he mote understond Of knights and ladies any meetings were;

And of each one he mett he tidings did inquere.

But all in vaine: his woman was too wise Ever to come into his clouch againe, And hee too simple ever to surprise The jolly Paridell, for all his paine. One day, as hee forpassed by the plaine With weary pace, he far away espide A couple, seeming well to be his twaine, Which hoved close under a forest side, ſ hide. As if they lay in wait, or els them selves did

Well weened hee that those the same mote bee,

And as he better did their shape avize, Him seemed more their maner did agree; For th' one was armed all in warlike wize, Whom to be Paridell he did devize : And th' other, al yelad in garments light Discolourd like to womanish disguise, He did resemble to his lady bright; [sight: And ever his faint hart much carned at the

XXII

And ever faine he towards them would goe. But yet durst not for dread approchen nie, But stood aloofe, unweeting what to doe; Till that prickt forth with loves extremity That is the father of fowle gealosy, He closely nearer crept the truth to week: But, as he nigher drew, he easily Might scerne that it was not his sweetest aw Ne yet her Belamour, the partner of his sheet

But it was scornefull Braggadochio, That with his servant Trompart boverd there, Sith late he fled from his too earnest foe: Whom such whenas Malbecco spyed clere, He turned backe, and would have fled arere, Till Trompart, ronning hastely, him did stay,

The Boaster at him sternely bent his browe, As if he could have kild him with his looke, That to the ground him meekely made to

bowe And awfull terror deepe into him strooke, That every member of his body quooke. Said he, 'Thou man of nought, what doest

thou here Unfitly furnisht with thy bag and booke, Where I expected one with shield and spere To prove some deeds of armes upon an equall pere?

The wretched man at his imperious speach Was all abasht, and low prostrating said: Good Sir, let not my rudenes be no breach Unto your patience, ne be ill ypaid; For I unwares this way by fortune straid, A silly Pilgrim driven to distresse,

That seeke a Lady '—There he suddein staid, And did the rest with grievous sighes sup-presse, [bitternesse. While teares stood in his eies, few drops of

XXVI

'What Lady, man?' (said Trompart) 'take good hart.

And tell thy griefe, if any hidden lye: Was never better time to shew thy smart Then now that noble succor is thee by, That is the whole worlds commune remedy.'

cheare.

And with vaine hope his spirits faint supply, That bold he sayd; O most redoubted Pere! Vouchsafe with mild regard a wretches cace to heare.

XXVII

Then sighing sore, 'It is not long,' (saide hee) Sith I enjoyd the gentlest Dame alive:
Of whom a knight, no knight at all perdee,
But shame of all that doe for honor strive, By treacherous deceipt did me deprive: Through open outrage he her bore away And with fowle force unto his will did drive;

Which al good knights, that arms doe this day, Are bownd for to revenge, and punish if

XXVIII

'And you, most noble Lord, that can and Redresse the wrong of miserable wight, Till Trompart, ronning hastely, him did stay, Redresse the wrong of miserance sign.

And bad before his soveraine Lord appere.
That was him loth, yet durst he not gainesay, And comming him before low louted on the lay.

XXIV

The Boaster at him sternely bent his browe,

And all faire Ladies magnify your might.

And eke my selfe, albee I simple such. Your worthy paine shall wel reward guerdon rich,'

With that out of his bouget forth he dres Great store of treasure, therewith him to be But he on it lookt scornefully askew As much disdeigning to be so misdempt, Or a war-monger to be basely nempt; And sayd; 'Thy offers base I greatly lath And eke thy words uncourteous and unks I tread in dust thee and thy money both. That, were it not for shame "-So turned ! him wroth

XXX

But Trompart, that his maistres hume to Was inly tickled with that golden yew. And in his eare him rownded close behin Yet stoupt he not, but lay still in the wi Waiting advauntage on the pray to sea Till Trompart, lowly to the grownd incli Besought him his great corage to appear. And pardon simple man that rash did him please.

XXXI

Big looking like a doughty Doncepere, At last he thus; 'Thou clod of vilest cla I pardon yield, and with thy rudenes be But weete henceforth, that all that golden And all that els the vaine world vauntes That chearful word his weak heart much did I loath as doung, ne deeme my dew rev Fame is my meed, and glory vertues par But minds of mortall men are muchell And mov'd amisse with massy mucks at regard.

'And more: I graunt to thy great mist; Gratious respect; thy wife shall backe be And that vile knight, who ever that he be Which hath thy lady reft and knighth shent,

By Sanglamort my sword, whose deadly The blood hath of so many thousands are I sweare, ere long shall dearely it repent:

۲.]

lish man thereat woxe wondrous blith, word so spoken were halfe donne. ibly thanked him a thousand sith I from death to life him newly wonne. the Boaster marching brave begonne n steed to thunder furiously, heaven and hell would over-ronne, he world confound with cruelty; ch Malbecco joyed in his jollity.

XXXIV

ng they three together traveiled, many a wood and many an uncouth his wife that was far wandered : [way, e two sought nought but the present , the treasure which he did bewray, 1 their eies and harts were wholly sett, rpose how they might it best betray; the howre that first he did them lett behold, therwith their keene desires re whett.

XXXV

ned, as they together far'd, de where Paridell came pricking fast plaine; the which him selfe prepar'd with that brave straunger knight a venture by the way he past. rode without his Paragone; [cast, ng filcht her bells, her up he cast ide world, and lett her fly alone: I be clogd. So had he served many

XXXVI

itle Lady, loose at randon lefte, ne-wood long did walke, and wander adventure, like a forlorne wefte; day the Satyres her espide alone withouten groome or guide: hey tooke, and with them home her ld, m as housewife ever to abide. :heir gotes, and make them cheese and y one as commune good her handeled

XXXVII

orthy she Malbecco has forgott, Sir Paridell, all were he deare; her went to seeke another lott, by fortune was arrived here,

wixt heven and earth shall hide his Where those two guilers with Malbecco were, sidd, [be dedd.] Soone as the old man saw Sir Paridell, e he shal be fownd, and shortly doen He fainted, and was almost dead with feare, Ne word he had to speake his griefe to tell, But to him louted low, and greeted goodly well;

XXXVIII

And, after, asked him for Hellenore: 'I take no keepe of her,' (sayd Paridell) 'She wonneth in the forrest there before.' So forth he rode as his adventure fell: The whiles the Boaster from his loftic sell Faynd to alight, something amisse to mend; But the fresh Swayne would not his leasure dwell.

But went his way: whom when he passed kend, He up remounted light, and after faind to wend.

XXXXX

'Perdy, nay,' (said Malbecco) 'shall ye not; But let him passe as lightly as he came: For litle good of him is to be got, And mickle perill to bee put to shame. But let us goe to seeke my dearest Dame, Whom he hath left in yonder forest wyld; For of her safety in great doubt I ame, Least salvage beastes her person have despoyld: Then all the world is lost, and we in vaine have toyld.'

They all agree, and forward them addresse: 'Ah! but,' (said crafty Trompart) 'weete ye well,

That yonder in that wastefull wildernesse Huge monsters haunt, and many dangers dwell;

Dragons, and Minotaures, and feendes of hell, And many wilde woodmen which robbe and rend

All traveilers: therefore advise ye well Before ye enterprise that way to wend: One may his journey bring too soone to evill end.

Malbecco stopt in great astonishment, And with pale eyes fast fixed on the rest, Their counsell crav'd in daunger imminent. Said Trompart; 'You, that are the most opprest With burdein of great treasure, I thinke best Here for to stay in safetie behynd: My Lord and I will search the wide forest. That counsell pleased not Malbeccoes mynd For he was much afraid him selfe alone to

fynd.

XLII

'Then is it best,' (said he) 'that ye doe leave Your treasure here in some security,

Either fast closed in some hollow greave, Or buried in the ground from jeopardy, Till we returne againe in safety: As for us two, least doubt of us ye have, Hence farre away we will blyndfolded ly, Ne privy bee unto your treasures grave. It pleased; so he did, Then they march for-

ward brave.

XLIII

Now, when amid the thickest woodes they were,

They heard a noyse of many bagpipes shrill, And shricking Hububs them approching

Which all the forest did with horrour fill, That dreadfull sound the bosters hart did thrill

With such amazment, that in hast he fledd, Ne ever looked back for good or ill; And after him eke fearefull Trompart spedd: The old man could not fly, but fell to ground half dedd.

XLIV

Yet afterwardes, close creeping as he might, He in a bush did hyde his fearefull hedd. The johy Satyres, full of fresh delight, Came dauncing forth, and with them nimbly

Faire Helenore with girlonds all bespredd, Whom their May-lady they had newly made: She, proude of that new honour which they And of their lovely fellowship full glade, Daunst lively, and her face did with a Lawrell

XLV

The silly man that in the thickett lay Saw all this goodly sport, and grieved sore; Yet durst he not against it doe or say, But did his hart with bitter thoughts engore, To see th' unkindnes of his Hellenore. All day they daunced with great lusty-hedd, And with their horned feet the greene gras

The whiles their Gotes upon the brouzes fedd, Till drouping Phœbus gan to hyde his golden hedd.

XLVI

Tho up they gan their mery pypes to trusse, and all their goodly heardes did gather And all their rownd;

But every Satyre first did give a busse To Hellenore; so busses did abound.

Now gan the humid vapour shed the gra With perly deaw, and th' Earths a

Did dim the brightnesse of the wellin no That every bird and beast awarned male To shrowd themselves, while slope sences did invade.

XLVII

Which when Malbecco aaw, out of the li Upon his handes and feete he crept full life And like a Gote emongst the Gotes did re That, through the helpe of his faire har hight

And misty dampe of misconceyving And eke through likenesse of his grant He did the better counterfeite aright So home he marcht emongst the bernet la

That none of all the Satyres him open heard.

XLVIII

At night, when all they went to dep Whereas his lovely wife emongst them by Embraced of a Satyre rough and rade, Who all the night did minde his joyous Nine times he heard him come aloft en

That all his hart with gealosy did swell: But yet that nights ensample did bewro That not for nought his wife them loss well,

When one so oft a night did ring his a

So closely as he could he to them cre When wearie of their sport to sleepe the And to his wife, that now full soundly He whispered in her care, and did her many that it was he which by her side did and therefore prayd her wake to hear plaine.

As one out of a dreame not waked well She turnd her, and returned backs aga Yet her for to awake he did the more straine.

At last with irkesom trouble she ahrays And then perceiving that it was indeed Her old Malbecco, which did her uples With loosenesse of her love and lostful She was astonisht with exceeding dry And would have wakt the Satyre by her But he her prayd, for mercy or for mee To save his life, ne let him be descryde. But hearken to his lore, and all his er hyde.

T.I

he her perswade to leave that lewd som life, of God and man abhord. returne, where all should be renewd ect peace and bandes of fresh accord, Over the sea suspended dreadfully xeivd againe to bed and bord, espas ever had beene donne: all refused at one word

LH

her till day-spring he espyde, vaine; and then turnd to the heard, d him with hornes on every syde, downe in the durt, where his hore dight, and he of death afeard. re the heavens fairest light ruddy East was fully reard, es out of their foldes were loosed [plight. ongst the rest crept forth in sory

LIII

as he the Prison-dore did pas, fast as both his feet could beare, looked who behind him was, r who before: like as a Beare, ing close amongst the hives to reare ombe, the wakefull dogs espy, ssayling sore his carkas teare,

1.13

he, till he came unto the place his treasure he entombed had; en he found it not, (for Trompart loyned for his maister bad) bace eme fury he became quite mad, way, ran with him selfe away; o straungely had him seene bestadd,

r hilles and over gales he fledd,

vind him on his winges had borne;

nor bush could stay him, when he : feet, as treading still on thorne : l despight, and gealosy, and scorne, way him follow hard behynd; mselfe himselfe loath'd so forlorne, ally forlorne of womankynd,

LVI

Still fled he forward, looking backward still; Ne stayd his flight nor fearefull agony, Till that he came unto a rocky hill That living creature it would terrify
To looke adowne, or upward to the hight: From thence he threw him selfe despiteously, meanes would to his will be wonne, and the seemed no help for him was left in living sight.

LVII But through long anguish and selfe-murdring

thought, He was so wasted and forpined quight, That all his substance was consum'd to nought, And nothing left but like an aery Spright, That on the rockes he fell so flit and light, That he thereby receiv'd no hurt at all; But chaunced on a craggy cliff to light, Whence he with crooked clawes so long did crall. Ismall.

That at the last he found a cave with entrance LVIII

Into the same he creepes, and thenceforth Resolv'd to build his balefull mansion [there In drery darkenes and continuall feare Of that rocks fall, which ever and anon Threates with huge ruine him to fall upon, That he dare never sleepe, but that one eye Still ope he keepes for that occasion; r he with life away does fly, [pardy.] Ne ever rests he in tranquillity, till safe him selfe he see from jeo- The roring billowes beat his bowre so boystrously.

Ne ever is he wont on ought to feed But todes and frogs, his pasture poysonous, Which in his cold complexion doe breed A filthy blood, or humour rancorous, Matter of doubt and dread suspitious, That doth with curelesse care consume the hart, art haire and staring eves dismay, Corrupts the stomacke with gall vitious bo lake him late escaped sure would Cros cuts the liver with internal smart, Corrupts the stomacke with gall vitious, And doth transfixe the soule with deathes eternall dart.

Yet can he never dye, but dying lives, And doth himselfe with sorrow new sustaine, That death and life attonce unto him gives And painefull pleasure turnes to pleasing paine. There dwels he ever, miserable swaine, Hatefull both to him selfe and every wight; Where he, through privy griefe and horrour vaine,

Snake, still lurked in his wounded Is woxen so deform'd that he has quight Forgot he was a man, and Gelosy is hight.

CANTO XI.

Britomart chaceth Ollyphant : Findes Scudamour distrest: Assayes the house of Busyrane, Where loves spoyles are exprest.

O HATEFULL hellish Snake! what furie furst Brought thee from balefull house of Proserpine, Where in her bosome she thee long had nurst, And fostred up with bitter milke of tine, Fowle Gealosy! that turnest love divine To joylesse dread, and mak'st the loving hart With hatefull thoughts to languish and to pine, And feed it selfe with selfe-consuming smart? Of all the passions in the mind thou vilest art !

O! let him far be banished away, And in his stead let Love for ever dwell; Sweete Love, that doth his golden wings embay

In blessed Nectar and pure Pleasures well, Untroubled of vile feare or bitter fell. And ye, faire Ladies, that your kingdomes make In th' harts of men, them governe wisely well, And of faire Britomart ensample take, That was as trew in love as Turtle to her make,

Who with Sir Satyrane, as earst ye red, Forth ryding from Malbeccoes hostlesse hous, Far off aspyde a young man, the which fled From an huge Geaunt, that with hideous And hatefull outrage long him chaced thus; It was that Ollyphant, the brother deare Of that Argante vile and vitious, From whom the Squyre of Dames was reft whylere; [ought were. This all as bad as she, and worse, if worse

For as the sister did in feminine And filthy lust exceede all womankinde, So he surpassed his sex masculine, In beastly use, all that I ever finde: Whom when as Britomart beheld behinde The fearefull boy so greedily poursew, She was ammoved in her noble minde, T' employ her puissaunce to his reskew, And pricked fiercely forward where she did him vew.

Ne was Sir Satyrane her far behind But with like fiercenesse did cuses to Whom when the Gyaunt saw, he soon His former suit, and from them field They after both, and boldly bad bim And each did strive the other to out But he them both outran a wondrons For he was long, and swift as any Re And now made better speed t'escape b

It was not Satyrane, whom he did is But Britomart the flowre of chastity; For he the powre of chaste hands u But alwayes did their dread encount And now so fast his feet he did apply That he has gotten to a forrest near. Where he is shrowded in security. The wood they enter, and search ever They searched diversely, so both divid

Fayre Britomart so long him follows That she at last came to a fountaine By which there lay a knight all walk Upon the grassy ground, and by him His haberjeon, his helmet, and his sp A little off his shield was rudely thro On which the winged boy in colours Depended was, full easie to be know And he thereby, where ever it in I showne,

His face upon the grownd did grove As if he had beene slombring in the s That the brave Mayd would not for c Out of his quiet slomber him abrade, Nor seeme too suddeinly him to invade Still as she stood, she heard with Him grone, as if his hart were peeces And with most painefull pangs to sigh That pitty did the Virgins hart of pari

At last forth breaking into bitter pli He sayd; 'O soverayne Lord! that sit'

ist in blis emongst thy blessed Saintes, rest thou such shamefull cruelty nwreaked of thine enimy?

iou, Lord, of good mens cause no heed?
hy justice sleepe and silent ly? oteth then the good and righteous [no meed? esse find no grace, nor righteousnes

1.]

find grace, and righteousnes reward, n is Amoret in caytive band, more bounteous creature never far'd pon the face of living land? hevenly justice may withstand igfull outrage of unrighteous men, n is Busirane with wicked hand hese seven monethes day, in secret den

and my love so cruelly to pen!

dy and my love is cruelly pend ll darkenes from the vew of day leadly torments doe her chast brest ıd, [tway, sharpe steele doth rive her hart in e Scudamore will not denay. vile man, vile Scudamore, art sound. her ayde, ne canst her foe dismay; v wretch to tread upon the ground, n so faire a Lady feeles so sore a and!'

1 huge heape of singults did oppresse

gling soule, and swelling throbs ng toung with pangs of drerinesse, the remnant of his plaintife speach, dayes were come to their last reach: ng into his life to make a breach, great ruth and terrour she was smit, ruld flit.

artesly ;-

iping downe she him amoved light; rewith somewhat starting, up gan ke,
ig him behind a stranger knight, no living creature he mistooke, at indignaunce he that sight forsooke, ne againe himselfe disdainfully earth with his faire forhead th' e bold Virgin seeing gan apply

XIV

'Ah gentle knight! whose deepe conceived griefe Well seemes t' exceede the powre of patience, Yet, if that hevenly grace some goode reliefe You send, submit you to high providence; And ever in your noble hart prepense,

That all the sorrow in the world is lesse Then vertues might and values confidence: For who nill bide the burden of distresse, Must not here thinke to live; for life is wretch-

ednesse.

lett fiv.

'Therefore, faire Sir, doe comfort to you take, And freely read what wicked felon so [make. Hath outrag'd you, and thrald your gentle Perhaps this hand may helpe to ease your woe, And wreake your sorrow on your cruell foe; At least it faire endevour will apply.' Those feeling words so neare the quicke did That up his head he reared easily, [goe,

And, leaning on his elbowe, these few words

'What boots it plaine that cannot be redrest, And sow vaine sorrow in a fruitlesse eare, Sith powre of hand, nor skill of learned brest, Ne worldly price, cannot redeeme my deare Out of her thraldome and continual feare: For he, the tyrant, which her hath in ward By strong euchauntments and blacke Magicke

leare. Hath in a dungeon deepe her close embard And many dreadfull feends hath pointed to her gard.

'There he tormenteth her most terribly

And day and night afflicts with mortall paine, hen she heard, and saw the ghastly fit Because to yield him love she doth deny, Once to me yold, not to be yolde againe: But yet by torture he would her constraine least from her cage the wearie soule Love to conceive in her disdainfull brest; Till so she doe, she must in doole remaine, Ne may by living meanes be thence relest: What boots it then to plaine that cannot be redrest?

XVIII

With this sad hersall of his heavy stresse The warlike Damzell was empassiond sore, And sayd; 'Sir knight, your cause is nothing Then is your sorrow certes, if not more; [lesse For nothing so much pitty doth implore oke:

bold Virgin seeing gan apply

me to his griefe, and spake thus

I will, with proofe of last extremity,

Deliver her fro thence, or with her for you dy

XIX

'Ah! gentlest knight alive,' (sayd Scudamore) What huge heroicke magnanimity Dwells in thy bounteous brest! what couldst

thou more,

If shee were thine, and thou as now am I? O! spare thy happy daies, and them apply To better boot; but let me die that ought;

More is more losse; one is enough to dy. 'Life is not lost,' (said she) 'for whi bought Endlesse renowm, that, more then death, is to

XX

Thus shee at length persuaded him to rise, And with her wend to see what new successe Mote him befall upon new enterprise. His armes, which he had vowed to disprofes She gathered up and did about him dresse, And his forwandred steed unto him gott : So forth they forth yfere make their progresse. And march not past the mountenaunce of a shott, [did plott. Till they arriv'd whereas their purpose they

There they dismounting drew their weapons And stoutly came unto the Castle gate, [bold, Whereas no gate they found them to withhold, Nor ward to waite at morne and evening late; But in the Porch, that did them sore amate, A flaming fire, ymixt with smouldry smoke And stinking sulphure, that with griesly hate And dreadfull horror did all entraunce choke, Enforced them their forward footing to revoke.

XXII

Greatly thereat was Britomart dismayd, Ne in that stownd wist how her selfe to beare; For daunger vaine it were to have assayd That cruell element, which all things feare, Ne none can suffer to approchen neare: And, turning backe to Scudamour, thus sayd:

Batteill against the Gods, so we a God invade.

'Daunger without discretion to attempt Inglorious, beastlike is: therefore, Sir knight, Aread what course of you is safest dempt,
And how he with our foe may come to fight,
'This is' (quoth he) 'the dolorous despight,
Which carst to you I played; for neither may This fire be quencht by any witt or might,

Ne yet by any meanes remov'd aw. So mighty be th' enchauntments same do stay.

XXIV

What is there ells but cease these paines

And leave me to my former languis Faire Amorett must dwell in wicker for which is be sought, 'Perdy not so,' (saide shee) 'for Yt were t' abandon noble chevisant For shewe of perill, without venture Rather let try extremities of cham Then enterprised praise for dread and

Therewith, resolv'd to prove her um Her ample shield she threw before And her swords point directing for Assayld the flame; the which effes

place, And did it selfe divide with equall That through she passed, as a thou Perceth the yielding ayre, and doth The soring clouds into sad showres So to her yold the flames, and did revolt,

XXVI

Whom whenas Scudsmour saw po Safe and unrought, he likewise gan With greedy will and envious desir And bad the stubborne flames to But cruell Mulciber would not obay His threatfull pride, but did the mor His mighty rage, and with imperior Him forst, (maulgre) his fercenes to And backe retire, all scorcht and brent,

With huge impatience he inly sw More for great sorrow that he could And, turning backe to Scudamour, thus say.

'What monstrous enmity provoke we heare?

Foolhardy as th' Earthes children, the which
Did beat and bounse his head and

The whiles the Championesse now The utmost rowme, and past the for The utmost rowne abounding with store:

XXVIII

For round about the walls yelothe With goodly arras of great majesty Woven with gold and silke, so close That the rich metall lurked privily

to be hidd from envious eye; ad there, and every where, unwares selfe and shone unwillingly; plourd Snake, whose hidden snares the greene gras his long bright bur-t back declares.

XXIX

ose Tapets weren fashioned pourtraicts, and many a faire feate; love, and al of lusty-hed, by their semblaunt, did entreat : l Cupids warres they did repeate, battailes, which he whilome fought he Gods to make his empire great; kings and kesars into thraldome Trembling through feare least down he fallen ght.

as writt how often thondring Jove e point of his hart-percing dart, g heavens kingdome, here did rove e disguize, to slake his scalding Ram, faire Helle to pervart, Bull, Europa to withdraw:

he fearefull Ladies tender hart

seeme to tremble, when she saw eas under her t' obay her servaunts

XXXI

r that, into a golden showre ne chaung'd, faire Danae to vew; gh the roofe of her strong brasen nto her lap an hony dew; [towre her foolish garde, that litle knew eipt, kept th' yron dore fast bard, : that none should enter nor issew : sfard.

XXXII

he turnd into a snowy Swan, e Leda to his lovely trade: s skill! and sweet wit of the man, daffadillies sleeping made ning heat her daintie limbes to shade; proud Bird, ruffing his fethers wyde ng his faire brest, did her invade: yet twixt her eielids closely spyde ds her he rusht, and smiled at his

XXXIII

rd it how the Thebane Semelee, gealous Juno, did require in his soverayne majestee his thunderbolts and lightning fire,

Whens dearely she with death bought her desire. But faire Alcmena better match did make,

Joying his love in likenes more entire: Three nights in one, they say, that for her sake He then did put, her pleasures lenger to partake.

XXXIV

Twise was he seene in soaring Eagles shape, And with wide winges to beat the buxome avre:

Once, when he with Asterie did scape; Againe, when as the Trojane boy so fayre He snatcht from Ida hill, and with him bare: Wondrous delight it was there to behould huge massacres, which he wrought How the rude Shepheards after him did stare,

> should, And often to him calling to take surer hould.

XXXV

In Satyres shape Antiopa he snatcht; And like a fire, when he Aegin' assayd: A shepeheard, when Mnemosyne he catcht; And like a Serpent to the Thracian mayd. Whyles thus on earth great Jove these pageaunts playd, The winged boy did thrust into his throne, And scoffing thus unto his mother sayd: Lo! now the hevens obey to me alone,

XXXVI

earth is gone.

thy smart.

And take me for their Jove, whiles Jove to

And thou, faire Phœbus, in thy colours bright Wast there enwoven, and the sad distresse In which that boy thee plonged, for despight he watch, and bootlesse all the ward, le God to golden hew him selfe the watch, and bootlesse all the ward, le God to golden hew him selfe the watch was many dath is mothers wantonnesse; le God to golden hew him selfe the watch had a was meynt in joy fulnesse: Forthy he thrild thee with a leaden dart To love faire Daphne, which thee loved lesse; Lesse she thee lov'd then was thy just desart, Yet was thy love her death, and her death was

XXXVII

So lovedst thou the lusty Hyacinct; So lovedst thou the faire Coronis deare; Yet both are of thy haplesse hand extinct, Yet both in flowres doe live, and love thee beare

The one a Paunce, the other a sweet-breare:
For griefe whereof, ye mote have lively seeme The God himselfe rending his golden heare,
And breaking quite his garlond ever greene,
With other signes of sorrow and impatient teene.

XXXXIII

Both for those two, and for his owne deare

The sonne of Climene, be did repent; Who, bold to guide the charet of the Sunne, Himselfe in thousand peeces fondly rent, And all the world with flashing fire brent; So like, that all the walles did seeme to flame: Yet cruell Cupid, not herewith content, Forst bim eftsoones to follow other game, And love a Shephards daughter for his dearest Dame.

He loved Isse for his dearest Dame, And for her sake her cattell fedd awhile, And for her sake a cowheard vile became The servant of Admetus, cowheard vile, Whiles that from heaven he suffered exile. Long were to tell each other lovely fitt; Now, like a Lyon hunting after spoile; Now, like a stag; now, like a faulcon flit: All which in that faire arras was most lively writ.

Next unto him was Neptune pictured, In his divine resemblance wondrous lyke: His face was rugged, and his hoarie bed Dropped with brackish deaw; his threeforkt Pyke stryke

He stearnly shooke, and therewith flerce did The raging billowes, that on every syde They trembling stood, and made a long broad dyke,

That his swift charet might have passage wyde Which foure great Hippodames did draw in But, to declare the mournfull I'm temewise tyde.

His seahorses did seeme to snort amayne, And from their nosethrilles blow the brynie streame,

That made the sparckling waves to smoke agayne, [creame

And flame with gold; but the white fomy Did shine with silver, and shoot forth his beame. The God himselfe did pensive seeme and sad, And hong adowne his head as he did dreame; For privy love his brest empierced had, Ne ought but deare Bisaltis ay could make him glad.

He loved eke Iphimedia deare. And Acolus faire daughter, Arnè hight, For whom he turnd him selfe into a Steare, And fedd on fodder to beguile her sight. Also to win Deucalions daughter bright, He turnd him selfe into a Dolphin fayre; And like a winged horse he tooke his flight To snaky-lorke Medina to repays On whom he got faire Pegasus in the ayre.

Next Saturne was, (but who was That sullein Saturne ever weer Yet love is sullein, and Saturnlik As he did for Erigone it prove) That to a Centaure did him sel o proov'd it eke that gratious G When for to compasse Phillims he He turnd himselfe into a fruitfull And into her faire bosome mad decline.

XLIV

Long were to tell the amorous as And gentle pangues, with which meeke

The mightie Mars, to learne his wa How oft for Venus, and how often For many other Nymphes, he son With womanish teares, and with Privily moystening his horrid che There was he painted full of burn And many wide woundes laund his inner partes.

XLV

Ne did be spare (so cruell was th His owne deare mother, (ah! wh 50 ?)

Ne did he spare sometime to prick That he might taste the sweet om Which he had wrought to many And spoiles wherewith he all the

strow, More eath to number with how m High heven beholdes sad lovers n verves.

XLVI

Kings, Queenes, Lords, Ladies, 1 Damsels gent,

Were heap'd together with the vi And mingled with the raskall rabl Without respect of person or of po To shew Dan Cupids powre and g And round about a border was ent Of broken bowes and arrowes shive And a long bloody river through t So lively and so like that living se

XLVII

And at the upper end of that fair There was an Altar built of pretion Of passing valew and of great reno On which there stood an Image al

it had with sondry colours dight, r colours then the proud Pavone s boasted fan, or Iris bright, liscolourd bow she spreds through

XLVIII

is hight.

he was; and in his cruell fist ow and arrowes keene did hold he shot at randon, when him list, d with sad lead, some with pure

[hold.) eware how thou those dartes be-Dragon under him did ly ous tayle his lefte foot did enfold, shaft was shot through either eye, 1 forth might draw, ne no man re-

TIIT

neath his feet was written thus, tor of the Gods this bee: people in that ample hous image bowe their humble knee, mitted fowle Idolatree. ous sight faire Britomart amazd, uld her wonder satisfie, re and more upon it gazd, the passing brightnes her fraile ı dazd.

backward cast her busie eye ch secrete of that goodly sted, e thus written she did spye, e oft and oft it over-red. it find what sence it figured: were therein or writ or ment, whit thereby discouraged uting of her first intent, with bold steps into the next . went.

r then the former was that roome, by many partes arayd; arras made in painefull loome, re gold it all was overlayd, ı playd monstrous formes therein were

rold, which with his owne light Such as false love doth oft upon him weare; For love in thousand monstrous formes doth oft appeare.

And all about the glistring walles were hong With warlike spoiles and with victorious prayes Of mightie Conquerours and Captaines strong, Which were whilome captived in their dayes To cruell love, and wrought their owne decayes. Their swerds and speres were broke, and hauberques rent,

And their proud girlonds of tryumphant bayes Troden in dust with fury insolent, [tent. To shew the victors might and mercilesse in-

The warlike Mayd, beholding earnestly The goodly ordinaunce of this rich Place, Did greatly wonder; ne could satisfy Her greedy eyes with gazing a long space: But more she mervaild that no footings trace Nor wight appeard, but wastefull emptinesse And solemne silence over all that place: Straunge thing it seem'd, that none was to possesse [fulnesse. So rich purveyaunce, ne them keepe with care-

And, as she lookt about, she did behold How over that same dore was likewise writ Be bolde, be bolde, and every where, Be bold; That much she muz'd, yet could not construe it By any ridling skill, or commune wit. At last she spyde at that rowmes upper end Another yron dore, on which was writ, Be not too bold; whereto though she did bend Her earnest minde, yet wist not what it might intend.

Thus she there wayted untill eventyde, Yet living creature none she saw appeare. And now sad shadowes gan the world to hyde From mortall vew, and wrap in darkenes dreare; Yet nould she d'off her weary armes, for feare Of secret daunger, ne let sleepe oppresse ith wilde Antickes, which their Her heavy eyes with natures burdein deare, But drew her selfe aside in sickernesse, netall as they living were. [made, And her wel-pointed wepons did about her dresse.

CANTO XII.

The maske of Cupid, and th' enchant-ed Chamber are displayd; Whence Britomart redeemes faire Amoret through charmes decayd.

THO, whenas chearclesse Night yeovered had The noble Mayd still standing all t That every wight dismayd with darkenes sad In silence and in sleepe themselves did shrowd, She heard a shrilling Trompet sound alowd,

Signe of nigh battaill, or got victory : Nought therewith dannted was her courage

But rather stird to cruell enmity, [prowd, Expecting ever when some foe she might descry.

With that an hideous storme of winde arose, With dreadfull thunder and lightning atwixt, And an earthquake, as if it streight would lose The worlds foundations from his centre fixt: A direfull steuch of smoke and sulphure mixt Ensewd, whose novaunce fild the fearefull sted From the fourth howre of night untill the sixt; Yet the bold Britonesse was nought ydred, Though much emmov'd, but stedfast still persevered.

All suddeinly a stormy whirlwind blew Throughout the house, that clapped every dore, With which that yron wicket open flew, As it with mighty levers had bene tore; And forth yssewd, as on the readic flore Of some Theatre, a grave personage That in his hand a braunch of laurell bore, With comely haveour and count'nance sage. Yelad in costly garments fit for tragicke Stage

IV

Proceeding to the midst he stil did stand, As if in minde he somewhat had to say; And to the vulgare beckning with his hand, In signe of silence, as to heare a play, By lively actions he gan bewray Some argument of matter passioned : Which doen, he backe retyred soft away, And, passing by, his name discovered, Ease, on his robe in golden letters cyphered. And merveild at his straunge inter With that a joyous fellowship isse Of Minstrales making goodly mer With wanton Bardes, and Rymers All which together song full chem A lay of loves delight with sweet of After whom marcht a jolly compan In manner of a maske, enranged or

The whiles a most delitious harmon In full straunge notes was sweetly That the rare sweetnesse of the mele The feeble sences wholy did confor And the frayle soule in deepe de drownd:

And, when it ceast, shrill trompets That their report did far away rebon And, when they ceast, it gan again The whiles the maskers marched for aray.

VII

The first was Fansy, like a lovely B Of rare aspect, and beautic without p Matchable ether to that ympe of Tr Whom Jove did love and chose hiscur Or that same daintic lad, which was To great Alcides, that, when as he d He wailed womanlike with many at And every wood and every valley w He filld with Hylas name; the Nys Hylas cryde.

His garment nether was of silke not But paynted plumes in goodly order Like as the sunburnt Indians do ara Their tawney bodies in their proude As those same plumes so seemd he That by his gate might easily appeared for still he far'd as dauncing in del

s hand a windy fan did beare, he ydle ayre he mov'd still here and

i beside marcht amorous Desvre. nd of ryper yeares then th' other hat other swavne this elders syre. him being, commune to them twayne: ent was disguysed very vayne, mbrodered Bonet sat awry: [strayne, th his hands few sparks he close did ill he blew and kindled busily, ne they life conceiv'd, and forth in nes did fly.

er him went Doubt, who was yelad lour'd cote of straunge disguyse. is backe a brode Capuccio had, es dependaunt Albanesè-wyse: askew with his mistrustfull eyes, ly trode, as thornes lay in his way, ne flore to shrinke he did avyse; broken reed he still did stav e steps, which shrunck when hard reon he lay.

ed Beares skin, that him more dreadfull rne face was dreadfull, ne did need h' one hand, and a rusty blade er was; this Mischiefe, that Mishap: one his foes he threatned to invade, other he his friends ment to enwrap; i he could not kill he practize to en-

n was Feare, all arm'd from top to toe, th himselfe not safe enough thereby, each shadow moving too or free; wne armes when glittering he did spy ig heard, he fast away did fly, pale of hew, and winged heeld, nore on Daunger fixt his eye, iom he alwayes bent a brasen shield, s right hand unarmed fearefully did eld.

full looke and lovely to behold: samite she was light arayd,

She alway smyld, and in her hand did hold An holy-water-sprinckle, dipt in deowe, With which she sprinckled favours manifold On whom she list, and did great liking sheowe, Great liking unto many, but true love to feowe.

And after them Dissemblaunce and Suspect Marcht in one rancke, yet an unequall paire; For she was gentle and of milde aspect, Courteous to all and seeming debonaire, Goodly adorned and exceeding faire: Yet was that all but paynted and pourloynd, And her bright browes were deckt with bor-rowed haire; [coynd, coynd, Her deeds were forged, and her words false And alwaies in her hand two clewes of silke

χv

she twynd.

But he was fowle, ill favoured, and grim, Under his eiebrowes looking still askaunce; And ever, as Dissemblaunce laught on him, He lowrd on her with daungerous eyeglaunce, Shewing his nature in his countenaunce: His rolling eies did never rest in place But walkte each where for feare of hid mischaunce,

Holding a lattis still before his face n went Daunger, cloth'd in ragged Through which he stil did peep as forward he did pace.

horrour to deforme his griesly shade: Griefe all in sable sorrowfully clad, Downe hanging his dull head with heavy chere, Yet inly being more then seeming sad: A paire of Pincers in his hand he had, With which he pinched people to the hart, That from thenceforth a wretched life they ladd, In wilfull languor and consuming smart,

Dying each day with inward wounds of dolours dart.

XVII

But Fury was full ill appareiled In rags, that naked nigh she did appeare, With ghastly looks and dreadfull drerihed; And from her backe her garments she did teare, And from her head ofte rente her snarled heare: In her right hand a firebrand shee did tosse About her head, still roming here and there; m went Hope in rancke, a handsome Forgetfull of his safety, hath his right way lost.

After them went Displeasure and Pleasaunce, syre lockes were woven up in gold : He looking lompish and full sullein sad,

And hanging downe his heavy countenannes; She chearfull, fresh, and full of joyaunce glad, As if no sorrow she ne felt ne drad;
That evill matched paire they seemd to bee:
An angry Waspe th' one in a viall had,
Th' other in hers an hony-laden Bee,
Thus marched these six couples forth in faire

degree.

XIX

After all these there marcht a most faire Dame, Led of two grysic Villeins, th' one Despight, The other cleped Cruelty by name: She, dolefull Lady, like a dreary Spright Cald by strong charmes out of eternall night, Had Deathes owne ymage figurd in her face, Full of sad signes, fearfull to living sight; Yet in that horror shewd a seemely grace, And with her feeble feete did move a comely pace.

Her brest all naked, as nett yvory Without adorne of gold or silver bright, Wherewith the Craftesman wonts it beautify, Of her dew honour was despoyled quight; And a wide wound therein (O ruefull sight!) Entrenched deep with knyfe accursed keene, Yet freshly bleeding forth her fainting spright, The worke of cruell hand) was to be seene, That dyde in sanguine red her skin all snowy cleene.

At that wide orifice her trembling hart Was drawne forth, and in silver basin layd, Quite through transfixed with a deadly dart, And in her blood yet steeming fresh embayd: And those two villeins, which her steps upstayd, When her weake feete could scarcely her sustaine

And fading vitall powres gan to fade, Her forward still with torture did constraine, And evermore encreased her consuming paine.

XXII

Next after her, the winged God him selfe Came riding on a Lion ravenous Taught to obay the menage of that Elfe That man and beast with powre imperious Subdeweth to his kingdome tyrannous. His blindfold cies he bad awhile unbinde, That his proud spoile of that same dolorous Faire Dame he might behold in perfect kinde; Which seene, he much rejoyced in his cruell minde.

XXIII

Of which ful prowd, him selfe up rearing hye He looked round about with sterne disdayne,

And did survay his goodly comp And, marshalling the evill-order With that the darts which his ri straine

Full dreadfully he shooke, that a And clapt on hye his conlourd w That all his many it affraide did Tho, blinding him againe, his did take.

XXIV

Behinde him was Reproch, Shame : Reproch the first, Shame

Repentannee feeble, sorrowfull, a Reproch despightfull, carelesse, a Shame most ill-favourd, bestiall, Shame lowrd, Repentaunce sight scould;

Reproch sharpe stings, Repents Shame burning brond-yrons in l hold:

All three to each unlike, yet all

XXV

And after them a rude confused Of persons flockt, whose names is Emongst them was sterne Strife stout;

Unquiet Care, and fond Unthrifty Lewd Losse of Time, and Sorrowse Inconstant Channge, and false Di Consuming Riotise, and guilty De Of heavenly vengeaunce; faint Is Vile Poverty; and, lastly, Death v

There were full many moe like m Whose names and natures I note So many moe, as there be phantas In wavering wemens witt, that no Or paines in love, or punishments All which disguized marcht in ma About the chamber by the Damos And then returned, having march Into the inner rowne from whene did rise.

XXVII

So soone as they were in, the dore Fast locked, driven with that store Which first it opened, and bore all Then the brave Maid, which al thi plast

In secret shade, and saw both first Issewed forth, and went unto the To enter in, but found it locked fa It vaine she thought with rigorous For to efforce, when charmes had ele

xxviii

rce might not availe, there sleights use, both fitt for hard emprize: m that same rowme not to depart w next shee did her selfe avize same Maske againe should forth ve next appeard with joyous cheare, n to their daily exercize: as morrow fresh, her selfe did reare secret stand that day for to outweare.

XXIX

lay she outwore in wandering z on that Chambers ornament, gaine the second evening d with her sable vestiment, [blent: the worlds faire beautie she hath 1 the second watch was almost past, n dore flew open, and in went mart, as she had late forecast, ydle showes, nor of false charmes ast.

XXX

as she was entred, rownd about ier eies to see what was become e persons which she saw without: y streight were vanisht all and some; wight she saw in all that roome, ame woefull Lady, both whose hands iden fast, that did her ill become,

XXXI

pefore the vile Enchaunter sate, traunge characters of his art: g blood he those characters wrate, dropping from her dying hart, ansfixed with a cruell dart; rforce to make her him to love. an love the worker of her smart? I charmes he formerly did prove nd charmes could not her stedfast : remove.

that virgin knight he saw in place, I bookes in hast he overthrew, his long labours to deface; ly running to that Lady trew, is knife out of his pocket drew, he thought, for villeinous despight, nented bodie to embrew:

XXXIII

From her, to whom his fury first he ment, The wicked weapon rashly he did wrest, And, turning to herselfe, his fell intent, Unwares it strooke into her snowie chest, That litle drops empurpled her faire brest. R::ceeding wroth therewith the virgin grew, Albe the wound were nothing deepe imprest, And fiercely forth her mortall blade she drew, To give him the reward for such vile outrage dew.

XXXIV

So mightily she smote him, that to ground He fell halfe dead: next stroke him should have slaine, Had not the Lady, which by him stood bound, Dernly unto her called to abstaine From doing him to dy. For else her paine

Should be remedilesse; sith none but hee Which wrought it could the same recure againe. Therewith she stayd her hand, loth stayd to bee;

For life she him envyde, and long'd revenge to

XXXV

And to him said: 'Thou wicked man, whose For so huge mischiefe and vile villany [meed Is death, or if that ought doe death exceed; Be sure that nought may save thee from to dy But if that thou this Dame do presently Restore unto her health and former state: sall waste girt round with yron bands This doe, and live, els dye undoubtedly. sen pillour, by the which she stands. He, glad of life, that lookt for death but late. Did yield him selfe right willing to prolong

XXXVI

his date:

And, rising up, gan streight to over-looke Those cursed leaves, his charmes back to reverse. Full dreadfull thinges out of that balefull booke

He red, and measur'd many a sad verse, That horrour gan the virgins hart to perse, And her faire locks up stared stiffe on end, Hearing him those same bloody lynes reherse; And, all the while he red, she did extend Her sword high over him, if ought he did offend.

XXXVII

Anon she gan perceive the house to quake, And all the dores to rattle round about: Yet all that did not her dismaied make, [dout: Nor slack her threatfull hand for daungers out Damzell, to him leaping light, But still with stedfast eye and courage stout hand withheld, and maistered his Abode, to weet what end would come of all. At last that mightie chaine, which round about Her tender waste was wound, adowne gan fall, And that great brasen pillour broke in peeces small.

XXXVIII

The cruell steele, which thrild her dying hart, fell softly forth, as of his owne accord, And the wyde wound, which lately did dispart Her bleeding brest, and riven bowels gor'd, Was closed up, as it had not beene bor'd; And every part to safety full sownd, As she were never hurt, was soone restord. Tho, when she felt her selfe to be unbownd And perfect hole, prostrate she fell unto the grownd.

XXXIX

Before faire Britomart she fell prostrate,
Saying; 'Ah noble knight! what worthy meede
Can wretched Lady, quitt from wofull state,
Yield you in lieu of this your gracious deed?
Your vertue selfe her owne reward shall breed,
Even immortal prayse and glory wyde,
Which I your vassall, by your prowesse freed,
Shall through the world make to be notifyde,
And goodly well advaunce that goodly well
was tryde,'

XL

But Britomart, uprearing her from grownd, Said: 'Gentle Dame, reward enough I weene, For many labours more then I have found, This, that in safetie now I have you seene, And meane of your deliverance have beene. Henceforth, faire Lady, comfort to you take, And put away remembrance of late teene; Insted thereof, know that your loving Make Hath no lesse griefe endured for your gentle sake,'

XLI

She much was cheard to heare him mentiond, Whom of all living wightes she loved best. Then laid the noble Championesse strong hond Upon th' enchaunter which had her distrest So sore, and with foule outrages opprest, With that great chaine, wherewith not long ygoe [relest.

He bound that pitteous Lady prisoner, now Himselfe she bound, more worthy to be so, And captive with her led to wretchednesse and wo.

XIII

Returning back, those goodly rowned She saw so rich and royally arrayd. Now vanisht utterly and cleane salve She found, and all their glory quite de That sight of such a channge her much Thence forth descending to that period Those dreadfull flames she also found And quenched quite like a consumed That erst all enters wont so cruelly in

XLIII

More easie issew now then entrance! She found; for now that fained dreadfa Which chokt the porch of that enchann And passage bard to all that thither o Was vanisht quite, as it were not the And gave her leave at pleasure forth! Th' Enchaunter selfe, which all that fi

frame
To have efforst the love of that faire I
Seeing his worke now wasted, deeps a

XLIV

But when the Victoresse arrived thet Where late she left the pensife Scudan With her own trusty Squire, both full Neither of them she found where she the Thereat her noble hart was stonish so But most fuire Amoret, whose gentle Now gan to feede on hope, which she Conceived had, to see her own deare k Being thereof beguyld, was fild with fright.

XLY

But he, sad man, when he had long Awayted there for Britomarts returns Yet saw her not, nor signe of her good His expectation to despaire did turne, Misdeeming sure that her those flat burne;

And therefore gan advize with her old Who her deare nourslings losse no mourne,

Thence to depart for further aide t'enq Where let them wend at will, whiles doe respire.

THE FOURTH BOOKE

OF

FAERIE THEQUEENE

INTAINING THE LEGEND OF CAMBEL AND TRIAMOND, OR OF FRIENDSHIP.

gged forhead, that with grave foresight Witnesse the father of Philosophie, gged forhead, that with grant of state, Which to his Critias, shaded of from ingdomes causes and affaires of state, Of love full manie lessons did apply, sing love as I have done of late, mifying lovers deare debate; h fraile youth is oft to follie led, false allurement of that pleasing baite, ter were in vertues discipled, th vaine poemes weeds to have their incies fed.

٠1

п ies ill judge of love that cannot love, eir frosen hearts feele kindly flame they ought not thing unknowne prove. rall affection faultlesse blame t of few that have abusd the same; honor and all vertue is fof fan of fame, misse.

111 id that all the workes of those wise

In love were either ended or begunne: Which to his Critias, shaded oft from sunne, The which these Stoicke censours cannot well

To such therefore I do not sing at all; But to that sacred Saint my soveraigne Queene, In whose chast brest all bountie naturall And treasures of true love enlocked beene, Bove all her sexe that ever yet was seene . To her I sing of love, that loveth best, And best is lov'd of all alive, I weene, To her this song most fitly is addrest, The Queene of love, and Prince of peace from heaven blest.

Which that she may the better deigne to te, and brings forth glorious flowres heare, when true lovers with immortall blis, Do thou, dred infant, Venus dearling dove, d of them that love, and do not live From her high spirit chase imperious feare, And use of awfull Majestie remove. Insted thereof with drops of melting love, who so list looke backe to former ages, Deawd with ambrosiall kisses, by thee gotten I to count the things that then were From thy sweete smyling mother from above, one, [sages, Sprinckle her heart, and haughtie courage soften, lesson often ve exploits which great Heroës wonne, That she may hearke to love, and reade this

CANTO I.

Fayre Britomart saves Amoret : Duessa discord breedes Twixt Scudamour and Blandamour: Their fight and warlike deedes.

ers sad calamities of old ny piteous stories doe remaine, e more piteous ever was ytold at of Amorets hart-binding chaine, And this of Florimels unworthic paine The deare compassion of whose bitter fit My softened heart so sorely doth constraine.
That I with teares full oft doe pittie it, And oftentimes doe wish it never had bene wr

For from the time that Scudamour her bought In perflous fight she never joyed day;
A perflous fight, when he with force her brought

From twentie Knights that did him all assay ; Yet fairely well he did them all dismay And with great glorie both the shield of love And eke the Ladie selfe he brought away . Whom having wedded, as did him believe,

A new unknowen mischiefe did from him remove.

For that same vile Enchauntour Busyran, The very selfe same day that she was wedded, That much she feard his mind a Amidst the bridale feast, whilest every man Surcharg'd with wine, were heedlesse and illhedded,

All bent to mirth before the bride was bedded, Brought in that mask of love which late was showen

And there the Ladie, ill of friends bestedded, By way of sport, as oft in maskes is knowen, Conveyed quite away to living wight unknowen.

Seven moneths he so her kept in bitter smart, Because his sinfull lust she would not serve, Untill such time as noble Britomart Released her, that else was like to sterve Through cruell knife that her deare heart did

kerve : And now she is with her upon the way Marching in lovely wise, that could deserve No spot of blame, though spite did oft assay To blot her with dishonor of so faire a pray,

Yet should it be a pleasant tale, to tell The diverse usage, and demeanure daint, That each to other made, as oft befell : For Amoret right fearefull was and faint Lest she with blame her honor should attaint, That everie word did tremble as she spake, And everie looke was coy and wondrous quaint, And everie limbe that touched her did quake ; Yet could she not but curteous countenance to her make.

For well she wist, as true it was indeed, That her lives Lord and patrone of her health Right well deserved, as his duefull meed, Her love, her service, and her utmost wealth: All is his justly that all freely dealth. Nathlesse her honor, dearer then her life, She sought to save, as thing reserv'd from But that same younker soone stealth.

Die had she lever with Enchants Then to be false in love, profest a

Thereto her feare was made greater

Through fine abusion of that Bu Who, for to hide her fained sex And maske her wounded mind savil

Full many things so doubtfull to That well she wist not what by t For other-whiles to her she pury Of love, and other-whiles of lust some excesse.

His will she feard; for him shes To be a man, such as indeed he And much the more by that he la When her from deadly thraldom For which no service she too mu Yet dread of shame and doubt honor

Made her not yeeld so much as di Yet Britomart attended duly on As well became a knight, and honor.

It so befell one evening, that th Unto a Castell, lodged there to b Where many a knight, and m Dame,

Was then assembled deeds of arm Amongst all which was none us shee,

That many of them mov'd to eye The custome of that place was su Which had no love nor lemman t Should either winne him one, or ly dore.

Amongst the rest there was a je Who, being asked for his love, av That fairest Amoret was his by And offred that to justifie alowd. The warlike virgine, seeing his s And boastfull chalenge, wexed in But for the present did her anger And sayd, her love to lose she was But either he should neither of the both.

So foorth they went, and both toge throwne,



THE FAERIE OUEENE.

repent that he had rashly lusted infawfull, that was not his owne: he seemed valiant, though unme o lesse was courteous then stout, to salve, that both the custome 'ne

d full hard t' accord two things so

XII

n dout

fitted.

chall was cal'd to deeme the right: requir'd, that first fayre Amoret her allow'd, as to a Knight ar win and free from chalenge set: ight to her was yeelded without let. that strange Knights love from was quitted, that to her selfe, as Ladies det, night might justly be admitted; ould be out shut, sith all of loves

, her glistring helmet she unlaced; , her golden lockes, that were upid not, unto her heeles downe traced, silken veile in compasse round backe and all her bodie wound: shining skie in summers night, e the dayes with scorching heat ınd, all with lines of firie light, odigious seemes in common peoples

n those Knights and Ladies all all were with amazement smit, one gan grow in secret dout that, according to each wit: [it; that some enchantment faygned Bellona in that warlike wise pear'd, with shield and armour fit; it was a maske of strange disguise: y each one did sundrie doubts de-

voung Knight, which through her le deed t goodly fellowship restor'd, nd thankes did yeeld her for her y overcommen, her ador'd.
all their former strife accord; yre Amoret, now freed from feare, e affection did to her afford,

And to her bed, which she was wont forbeare. Now freely drew, and found right safe assurance theare.

XVI

Where all that night they of their loves did treat And hard adventures, twixt themselves alone,

and yet that Knight not locked out; That each the other gan with passion great And griefull pittie privately bemone. The morow next, so soone as Titan shone, They both uprose and to their waies them dight:

Long wandred they, yet never met with none That to their willes could them direct aright, Or to them tydings tell that mote their harts delight.

Lo! thus they rode, till at the last they spide Two armed Knights that toward them did

And ech of them had ryding by his side A Ladie, seeming in so farre a space: But Ladies none they were, albee in face And outward shew faire semblance they did beare;

For under maske of beautie and good grace Vile treason and fowle falshood hidden were, That mote to none but to the warie wise appeare.

The one of them the false Duessa hight, That now had chang'd her former wonted hew:

For she could d'on so manie shapes in sight, As ever could Cameleon colours new So could she forge all colours, save the trew. The other no whit better was then shee But that such as she was she plaine did shew; Yet otherwise much worse, if worse might bee, And dayly more offensive unto each degree.

XIX

Her name was Ate, mother of debate And all dissention which doth dayly grow Amongst fraile men, that many a publike state,

And many a private oft doth overthrow. Her false Duessa, who full well did know To be most fit to trouble noble knights Which hunt for honor, raised from below Out of the dwellings of the damned sprights, Where she in darknes wastes her cursed dates and nights.

Hard by the gates of hell her dwelling is; \tag{harmes} there whereas all the Diagues and harmes There, whereas all the plagues and abound

Which punish wicked men that walke amisse: It is a darksome delve farre under ground, With thornes and barren brakes environd round, That none the same may easily out-win:

Yet many waies to enter may be found, But none to issue forth when one is in ; For discord harder is to end then to begin.

XXI

And all within, the riven walls were hung With ragged monuments of times forepast, All which the sad effects of discord sung: There were rent robes and broken scepters Altars defyld, and holy things defast; [plast; Disshivered speares, and shields ytorne in twaine;

Great cities ransackt, and strong castles rast; Nations captived, and huge armics slaine: Of all which ruines there some relicks did remaine,

XXII

There was the signe of antique Babylon; Of fatall Thebes; of Rome that raigned long; Of sacred Salem; and sad Ilion, For memorie of which on high there hong The golden Apple, cause of all their wrong, For which the three faire Goddesses did strive: There also was the name of Nimrod strong; Of Alexander, and his Princes five Which shar'd to them the spoiles that he had Her lying tongue was in two parts got alive.

XXIII

And there the relicks of the drunken fray, The which amongst the Lapithees befell; And of the bloodie feast, which sent away So many Centaures drunken soules to hell, That under great Alcides furie fell; And of the dreadfull discord, which did drive The noble Argonauts to outrage fell; That each of life sought others to deprive, All mindlesse of the Golden fleece, which made them strive.

XXIV

And eke of private persons many moe, That were too long a worke to count them all; Some, of sworne friends that did their faith forgoe;

Some, of borne brethren prov'd unnaturall; Some, of deare lovers foes perpetuall: Witnesse their broken bandes there to be seene, Their girlonds rent, their bowres despoyled all;
The moniments whereof there byding beene,
As plaine as at the first when they were fresh
and greene,

And their passessore.

Such was her house within; but a The barren ground was full of wich Which she her selfe had some all a Now growen great, at first of little. The seedes of evill wordes and facti Which, when to ripenesse due the

Bring foorth an infinite increase, the Tumultuous trouble, and contenti The which most often end in blouds WHITE.

And those same cursed seedes doe To her for bread, and yeeld her livin For life it is to her, when others ste Through mischievous debate and de That she may sucke their life, and d blood,

With which she from her childhood For she at first was borne of hellish And by infernall furles nourished; That by her monstrous shape might

XXVII

Her face most fowle and filthy was With squinted eyes contrarie waves And loathly mouth, unmeete a mou That nought but gall and venim com And wicked wordes that God and ma And both the parts did speake, and tended;

And as her tongue so was her hart That never thought one thing, but was guided.

XXVIII

Als as she double spake, so heard With matchlesse cares deformed an Fild with false rumors and sedition Bred in assemblies of the vulgar so That still are led with every light e And as her eares, so eke her feet we And much unlike; th' one long, the And both misplast; that, when th'o youle,

The other backe retired and contrar

Likewise unequall were her hander That one did reach the other pusht That one did make the other mard r studie was and all her thought might overthrow the things that scord wrought.

XXX

her malice did her might surpas, th' Almightie selfe she did maligne,) man so mercifull he was, all his creatures so benigne, er selfe was of his grace indigne; s worlds faire workmanship she tride ast confusion to bring, great golden chaine quite to divide, ch it blessed Concord hath together

XXXI

that hag which with Duessa roade; ing her in her malitious use good knights, was, as it were, her r borrowed beautie to abuse: [baude gb, like withered tree that wanteth ce, and crooked were, yet now of late and fragrant as the floure-deluce eccome, by chaunge of her estate, e full goodly joyance to her new-

XXXII

ind mate.

e, he was a jollie youthfull knight; great sway in armes and chivalrie, indeed a man of mickle might; was Blandamour, that did descrie mind full of inconstancie: himselfe he fitted had right well > companions of like qualitie, e Duessa, and false Paridell, [tell. ther were more false full hard it is to

XXXIII

en this gallant with his goodly crew re espide the famous Britomart, tht adventurous in outward vew, faire paragon, his conquests part, ng nigh, eftaoones his wanton hart led with delight, and jesting sayd; re, Sir Paridel, for your desart ee presents you with yond lovely mayd, that ye want a fellow for your ayd.'

XXXIV

the lovely paire drew nigh to hond: hen as Paridel more plaine beheld, heart he like affection fond, ifull how he late by one was feld those armes and that same scutchion ald, mail lust to buy his love so deare, resud; 'Sir, him wise I never held,

That, having once escaped perill neare, Would afterwards afresh the sleeping evill reare.

XXXV

'This knight too late his manhood and his might
I did assay, that me right dearely cost;
Ne list I for revenge provoke new fight,
Ne for light Ladies love that soone is lost.'
The hot-spurre youth so scorning to be crost,
'Take then to you this Dame of mine,' (quoth

hee)
'And I, without your perill or your cost,
Will chalenge yond same other for my fee,'
So forth he ficroely prickt that one him scarce
could see.

XXXVI

The warlike Britonesse her soone addrest, And with such uncouth welcome did receave Her fayned Paramour, her forced guest, That being forst his saddle soone to leave, Him selfe he did of his new love deceave; And made him selfe thensample of his follie. Which done, she passed forth, not taking leave, And left him now as sad, as whilome jollie, Well warned to beware with whom he dar'd to dallie.

XXXVII

Which when his other companie beheld,
They to his succour ran with readie ayd;
And, finding him unable once to weld,
They reared him on horsebacke and upstayd,
Till on his way they had him forth convayd:
And all the way, with wondrous griefe of mynd
And shame, he shewd him selfe to be dismayd
More for the love which he had left behynd,
Then that which he had to Sir Paridel resynd.

XXXVIII

Nathlesse he forth did march, well as he might, And made good semblance to his companie, Dissembling his disease and evill plight; Till that ere long they chaunced to espie Two other knights, that towards them did ply With speedie course, as bent to charge them new:

Whom when as Blandamour approching nie Perceiv'd to be such as they seemd in vew, He was full wo, and gan his former griefe renew.

XXXIX

For th' one of them he perfectly descride
To be Sir Scudamour, by that he bore
The God of love with wings displayed wide
Whom mortally he hated evermore,

Both for his worth, that all men did adore, And eke because his love he wonne by right: Which when he thought, it grieved him full

That, through the bruses of his former fight, He now unable was to wreake his old despight.

Forthy he thus to Paridel bespake : · Faire Sir, of friendship let me now you pray, That as I late adventured for your sake, The hurts whereof me now from battell stay, Ye will me now with like good turne repay, And justifie my cause on yonder knight."

"Ah! Sir," (said Paridell) "do not dismay Your selfe for this; my selfe will for you fight, As ye have done for me: the left hand rubs the right.'

XLI

With that he put his spurres unto his steed, With speare in rest, and toward him did fare, Like shaft out of a bow preventing speed: But Soudamour was shortly well aware Of his approch, and gan him selfe prepare Him to receive with entertainment meete. So furiously they met, that either bare The other downe under their horses feete, That what of them became themselves did scarsly weete.

XLII

As when two billowes in the Irish sowndes, Forcibly driven with contrarie tydes, Do meete together, each abacke rebowndes With roaring rage; and dashing on all sides, That filleth all the sea with fome, divydes The doubtfull current into divers waves. So fell those two in spight of both their prydes; But Scudamour himselfe did soone uprayse, And, mounting light, his foe for lying long upbrayes:

XLIII

Who, rolled on an heape, lay still in swound All carelesse of his taunt and bitter rayle; Till that the rest him seeing lie on ground Ran hastily, to weete what did him ayle. Where finding that the breath gan him to fayle, With busic care they strove him to awake, And doft his helmet, and undid his mayle: So much they did, that at the last they brake His slomber, yet so mazed that he nothing spake, XLIV

Which when as Blandamour beheld, he sayd; False faitour Scudamour, that hast by slight I wote not well, but in his shield he And foule advantage this good Knight dismayd, (That well I wote) the heads of man A Knight much better then thy selfe behight,

Well falles it thee that I am not in I This day to wreake the dammage by th Such is thy wont, that still when any Is weakned, then thou does him over So hast thou to thy selfe false hu wonne.'

He little answer'd, but in manly he His mightie indignation did forbern Which was not yet so secret, but we Thereof did in his frouring face app Like as a gloomie cloud, the which An hideous storme, is by the North Quite overblowne, yet doth not pas But that it all the skie doth overe With darknes dred, and threatens all to wast.

XLVI

Ah gentle knight!" then false Due Why do ye strive for Ladies love w Whose chiefe desire is love and frient Mongst gentle Knights to nourish No be ye wroth, Sir Sendamour, the That she, your love, list love another No do your selfe dislike a whit the m For Love is free, and led with selfe d

XLVII

So false Duessa; but vile Ate thus Both foolish knights! I can but That strive and storme with stirre or For her, that each of you alike doth he And loves another, with whom now In lovely wise, and sleepes, and sp playes :

Whilest both you here with many ac Sweare she is yours, and stirre up blood To win a willow bough, whilest other the bayes.

XLVIII

'Vile hag!' (sayd Scudamour) w thou lye,

And falsly seekst a vertuous wight to 'Fond knight,' (sayd she) ' the thing to this eye

I saw, why should I doubt to tell the 'Then tell,' (quoth Blandamour) 'and blame :

Tell what thou saw'st, manlgre who sol' I saw' (quoth she) 'a stranger knigh name

speares ;

XIIX

im have your Amoret at will; ı kisse; I saw him her embrace sleepe with her all night his fill; nights; and manie by in place ent were to testifie the case en as Scudamour did heare, his heart d with inward griefe: as when in ce ian strikes a stag with shivering dart, astonisht stands in middest of his art.

Sir Scudamour when this he heard, ad he to speake for great dismay, on Glauce grim; who woxe afeard e for the words which she heard say, rue she wist them by assay. lamour, whenas he did espie [wray, age of cheere that anguish did befull blithe, as he had got thereby, hereat to triumph without victorie.

reant,' (sayd he) 'the fruitlesse end ine boast, and spoile of love misgotthe name of knight-hood thou dost ue lovers with dishonor blotten: where ever thou do go or ryde, e!

LH

But Scudamour, for passing great despight, Staid not to answer; scarcely did refraine
But that in all those knights and ladies sight
He for revenge had guiltlesse Glauce slaine:
But, being past, he thus began amaine: ' False traitour squire! false squire of falsest knight! [abstaine, Why doth mine hand from thine avenge Whose Lord hath done my love this foule despight? [might? Why do I not it wreake on thee, now in my

LIII

Discourteous, disloyall Britomart, Untrue to God, and unto man unjust! What vengeance due can equall thy desart, That hast with shamefull spot of sinfull lust Defil'd the pledge committed to thy trust? Let ugly shame and endlesse infamy Colour thy name with foule reproaches rust! Yet thou, false Squire, his fault shalt deare aby, And with thy punishment his penance shalt supply.'

LIV

The aged Dame, him seeing so enraged, [shend, Was dead with feare; nathlesse, as neede required, His flaming furie sought to have assuaged not rooted well will soone be rotten. With sober words, that sufferance desired, false knight, then false Duessa Till time the tryall of her truth expyred; de)

[gotten; y life, that love with guile hast But he the more with furious rage was fyred, And thrise his hand to kill her did upreare, of ladies all, and of all knights de- And thrise he drew it backe; so did at last forbeare.

CANTO II.

Blandamour winnes false Florimell; Paridell for her strives: They are accorded: Agapè Doth lengthen her sonnes lives.

ND of hell, first tynd in Phlegeton, world to worke confusion, all on fire by force unknowen, discord; whose small sparkes once a God or godlike man can slake;

Amongst those famous ympes of Greece, did take and furies, and from thence out His silver Harpe in hand and shortly friends them make:

> Or such as that celestiall Psalmist was, That, when the wicked feend his Lord tor-

mented, ras Orpheus, that, when strife was With heavenly notes, that did all other pass wen Such Musicke is wise words, with time concented.

To moderate stiffe mindes disposd to strive: Such as that prudent Romane well invented, What time his people into partes did rive, Them reconcyld againe, and to their homes did drive.

Such us'd wise Glauce to that wrathfull knight,

To calme the tempest of his troubled thought: Yet Blandamour with termes of foule despight, And Paridell her scornd, and set at nought, As old and crooked and not good for ought, Both they unwise, and warelesse of the evill That by themselves unto themselves is wrought Through that false witch, and that foule aged drevill

The one a feend, the other an incarnate devill,

With whom as they thus rode accompanide, They were encountred of a lustic Knight That had a goodly Ladie by his side, To whom he made great dalliance and delight: It was to weete the bold Sir Ferraugh hight, He that from Braggadocchio whilome reft The snowy Florimell, whose beautie bright Made him seeme happie for so glorious theft; Yet was it in due triall but a wandring weft.

Which when as Blandamour, whose fancie light

Was alwaies flitting as the wavering wind After each beautie that appeard in sight, Beheld, eftsoones it prickt his wanton mind With sting of lust that reasons eye did blind, That to Sir Paridell these words he sent : 'Sir knight, why ride ye dumpish thus behind, Since so good fortune doth to you present So fayre a spoyle, to make you joyous meri-ment?"

But Paridell, that had too late a tryall Of the bad issue of his counsell vaine, List not to hearke, but made this faire deny-'Last turne was mine, well proved to my paine: paine:

This now be yours; God send you better Whose scoffed words he taking halfe in scorne, Fiercely forth prickt his steed as in disdaine So blind is lust false colours to de Against that Knight, ere he him well could But Ate soone discovering his de-

borne.

Who, with the smiden strake asim Upon the ground awhile in slomber The whiles his love away the other And, shewing her, did Paridell upbr 'Lo! sluggish Knight, the victors by So fortune friends the bold :' Seeing so faire indeede, as he did sa His hart with secret envis gan w And inly grudge at him that be "
well.

VIII

Nathlesse proud man himselfe Having so peerelesse paragon ygot: For sure the favrest Florimell him To him was fallen for his happie los Whose like alive on earth he ween Therefore he her did court, did serv With humblest suit that he imag And all things did devise, and all that might her love prepare, and theretoo.

She, in regard thereof, him recom With golden words and goodly coo And such fond favours sparingly d Sometimes him blessing with a glance,

And coy lookes tempring with loos Sometimes estranging him in ster That having east him in a foolish He seemed brought to bed in Pan And prov'd bimselfe most fools seem'd most wise.

So great a mistresse of her art sh And perfectly practiz'd in woman That though therein himselfe he th And by his false allurements wyl Had thousand women of their lov Yet now he was surpriz'd: for that ! Which that same witch had in th Was so expert in every subtile sl That it could overreach the wi wight.

Yet he to her did dayly service n And dayly more deceived was the Yet Paridell him envied therefore As seeming plast in sole felicity: So blind is lust false colours to de torne;
By meanes whereof he hath him lightly overTo stirre up strife twixt love an Did privily put coles unto his suc

XII

th:

·d;

lry meanes thereto she prickt him [speaches, 1 remembrance of those spightfull

opinion of his owne more worth, recounting of like former breaches their friendship, as that Hag him when his passion is allayd, [teaches: ives, and new occasion reaches; time, as they together wav'd, him open chalenge, and thus boldly

stfull Blandamoure! too long I beare wrongs thou doest me day by day: w'st thou, when we friendship first sweare, ant was, that every spoyle or pray ually be shard betwixt us tway my part then of this Ladie bright. thy selfe thou takest quite away? erefore therein to me my right, re for thy wrong as shall fall out in

XIV

ng wroth thereat was Blandamour, this bitter answere to him make: sh Paridell! that fayrest floure gather faine, and yet no paines uldst take: o easie will I her forsake; her wonne, this hand shall her defend.

t they gan their shivering speares to ıke, ly points at eithers breast to bend, l each to have bene ever others frend.

ie steedes with so untamed forse them both to fell avenges end, 1 their speares with pitilesse remorse shield and mayle and haberjeon did nd, eir flesh a griesly passage rend, the furie of their owne affret r horse and man to ground did send; ing still awhile, both did forget ous present stownd in which their

as were set.

two warlike Brigandines at sea rdrous weapons arm'd to cruell fight, together on the watry lea,

Drew nigh, to weete the cause of their debate:

And first laide on those Ladies thousand blames.

That with the shocke of their owne heedlesse might

Their wooden ribs are shaken nigh asonder. They which from shore behold the dreadfull sight ſder, Of flashing fire, and heare the ordenance thon-Do greatly stand amaz'd at such unwonted wonder.

At length they both upstarted in amaze, As men awaked rashly out of dreme, And round about themselves awhile did gaze; Till seeing her, that Florimell did seme, In doubt to whom she victorie should deeme, Therewith their dulled sprights they edgd anew, And, drawing both their swords, with rage ex-

Like two mad mastiffes, each on other flew, And shields did share, and mailes did rash, and helmes did hew.

treme,

So furiously each other did assayle. As if their soules they would attonce have rent Out of their brests, that streames of bloud did

rayle Adowne, as if their springs of life were spent; That all the ground with purple bloud was sprent, [gore; And all their armours stayed with bloudie

Yet scarcely once to breath would they relent, So mortall was their malice, and so sore Become, of fayned friendship which they vow'd afore.

XIX

And that which is for Ladies most besitting, To stint all strife and foster friendly peace, Was from those Dames so farre and so unfitting, As that, instead of praying them surcease, They did much more their cruelty encrease;

Bidding them fight for honour of their love, And rather die then Ladies cause release: With which vaine termes so much they did

them move, That both resolv'd the last extremities to prove.

$\mathbf{x}\mathbf{x}$

There they, I weene, would fight untill this day, Had not a Squire, even he the Squire of Dames, By great adventure travelled that way; Who seeing both bent to so bloudy games. And both of old well knowing by their names, that did not seeke t'appears their deadly hate, 'Not one,' (quoth he) 'but many do But gazed on their harmes, not pittying their Herein; as thus: It lately so befell. estate.

XXI

And then those Knights he humbly did beseech

To stay their hands, till he awhile had spoken; Who lookt a little up at that his speech, Yet would not let their battell so be broken, Both greedie fiers on other to be wroken: Yet he to them so earnestly did call, And them conjur'd by some well knowen token, That they at last their wrothfull hands let fall,

Content to heare him speake, and glad to rest withall.

First he desir'd their cause of strife to see: They said, it was for love of Florimell. 'Ah gentle Knights!' (quoth he) 'how may that bee,

And she so farre astray, as none can tell?'
'Fond Squire,' full angry then sayd Paridell,
'Seest not the Ladie there before thy face?' He looked backe, and, her avizing well, Weend, as he said, by that her outward grace That fayrest Florimell was present there in place.

XXIII

Glad man was he to see that joyous sight, For none alive but joy'd in Florimell, And lowly to her lowting thus behight: Fayrest of faire, that fairenesse doest excell, This happie day I have to greete you well, In which you safe I see, whom thousand late Misdoubted lost through mischiefe that befell Long may you live in health and happie state! She litle answer'd him, but lightly did aggrate.

XXIV

Then, turning to those Knights, be gan anew: 'And you, Sir Blandamour, and Paridell, That for this Ladie, present in your vew, Have rays'd this cruell warre and outrage fell, Certes, me seemes, bene not advised well; But rather ought in friendship for her sake To joyne your force, their forces to repell That seeke perforce her from you both to take, And of your gotten spoyle their owne triumph to make,

XXX

Thereat Sir Blandamour, with countenance sterne

All full of wrath, thus fiercely him bespake: Aread, thou Squire, that I the man may learne, That dare fro me thinke Florimell to take!

That Satyran a girdle did aptake Well knowne to appertaine to Floring Which for her sake be were, as him

But, when as she her selfe was lost Full many knights, that loved her li Therent did greatly grudge, that he That lost faire Ladies ornament a And gan therefore close spight to him Which he to shun, and stop vile env Hath lately caus'd to be proclaim'd wa To which all knights with them the are to bring :

'And of them all she, that is fayne Shall have that golden girdle for re-And of those Knights, who is most Shall to that fairest Ladie be prefar Since therefore she her selfe is now To you that ornament of hers perta Against all those that chalenge it to And save her honour with your vents That shall you win more glory tha find gaines,

XXVIII

When they the reason of his words They gan abate the rancour of their And with their bonours and their le The furious flames of malice to as Tho each to other did his faith and Like faithfull friends thenceforth to With all their force, and battell stra Gainst all those knights, as their pro That chaleng'd ought in Florimell, alone.

XXIX

So, well accorded, forth they rode In friendly sort that lasted but a wl And of all old dislikes they made fair Yet all was forg'd and spred with ge That under it hidde hate and holle Ne certes can that friendship long e However gay and goodly be the sty That doth ill cause or evill end enn For vertue is the band that bindeth

Thus as they marched all in close Of fayned love, they chaunst to ove Two knights that lincked rode in lo As if they secret counsels did partal And each not farre behinde him had To weete, two Ladies of most good! That twixt themselves did gentle pur both of that discordfull crew,

XXXI

ey now approched nigh at hand, em doughtie, as they did appeare, hat Squire afore, to understand they be: who, viewing them more

adie newes, that those same weare prowest Knights in Faery lond, wo Ladies their two lovers deare; Cambell, and stout Triamond, ee and Cambine linckt in lovely

XXXII

as antique stories tellen us, rere foes the fellonest on ground, made the dreddest daungerous hrilling trumpet did resound; their acts be no where to be found.

ternall beadroll worthic to be fyled.

wmed Poet them compyled e numbers and Heroicke sound, r, well of English undefyled.

MXXXIII 1 Time that all good thoughts doth weare, of noblest wits to nought outs moniment bath quite defaste, ie world of threasure endlesse deare,

mote have enriched all us heare. d! the cankerworme of writs, hese rimes, so rude as doth appeare, lure, sith workes of heavenly wits evourd, and brought to nought by

XXXIV

bits?

B.

on, O most sacred happie spirit! labours lost may thus revive, from thee the meede of thy due

urst ever whilest thou wast alive, lead in vaine yet many strive: ke; but, through infusion sweete ne spirit which doth in me survive,

hy meaning so I may the rather

e the footing of thy feete,

XXXV

sister was fayre Canacce, e learnedst Ladie in her dayes, in everie science that mote bee,

ecret worke of natures wayes;

In wittie riddles, and in wise soothsayes; with speedie pace did after them In power of herbes, and tunes of beasts and

burds ; And, that augmented all her other prayse, She modest was in all her deedes and words,

And wondrous chast of life, yet lov'd of Knights and Lords. Full many Lords and many Knights her loved,

Yet she to none of them her liking lent, Ne ever was with fond affection moved, But rul'd her thoughts with goodly government, For dread of blame and honours blemishment;

And eke unto her lookes a law she made, That none of them once out of order went, But like to warie Centonels well stayd,

Still watcht on every side, of secret foes affrayd,

XXXVII So much the more as she refusd to love, So much the more she loved was and sought,

That oftentimes unquiet strife did move Amongst her lovers, and great quarrels wrought, That oft for her in bloudic armes they fought. Which whenas Cambell, that was stout and wise, Perceiv'd would breede great mischiefe, he bethought

How to prevent the perill that mote rise, And turne both him and her to honour, in this wise. XXXVIII One day, when all that troupe of warlike

wooers Assembled were to weet whose she should bee, All mightie men and dreadfull derring-dooers, (The harder it to make them well agree) Amongst them all this end he did decree : That, of them all which love to her did make,

They by consent should chose the stoutest three sake. That with himselfe should combat for her And of them all the victour should his sister

XXXXX Bold was the chalenge, as himselfe was bold, And courage full of haughtie hardiment,

Approved oft in perils manifold, Which he atchiev'd to his great ornament But yet his sisters skill unto him lent Most confidence and hope of happie speed, Conceived by a ring which she him sent, That, mongst the manie vertues which we reed, Had power to staunch al wounds that mortally

did bleed.

Well was that rings great vertue knowen to all That dread thereof and his redoubted might Did all that youthly rout so much appall, That none of them durst unlertake the fight -More wise they weend to make of love delight Combing her golden lockes, as seems Then life to hazard for faire Ladies looke ; And yet uncertaine by such outward sight, Though for her sake they all that perill tooke, Whether she would them love, or in her liking Oppressed her, and there (as it is to brooke,

Amongst those knights there were three brethren bold,

Three bolder brethren never were yborne, Borne of one mother in one happie mold, Borne at one burden in one happie morne; Thrise happie mother, and thrise happie morne, That bore three such, three such not to be fond! Her name was Agape, whose children werne All three as one; the first hight Priamond, The second Dyamond, the youngest Triamond.

XLII

Stout Priamond, but not so strong to strike; Strong Diamond, but not so stout a knight; But Triamond was stout and strong alike: On horsebacke used Triamond to fight, And Priamond on foote had more delight; But horse and foote knew Diamond to wield: With curtaxe used Diamond to smite, And Triamond to handle speare and shield But speare and curtaxe both usd Priamond in field.

These three did love each other dearely well, And with so firme affection were allyde, As if but one soule in them all did dwell, Which did her powre into three parts divyde; Like three faire branches budding farre and

That from one roote deriv'd their vitall sap : And like that roote that doth her life divide, Their mother was; and had full blessed hap These three so noble babes to bring forth at one clap.

XLIV

Their mother was a Fay, and had the skill Of secret things, and all the powres of nature, Which she by art could use unto her will, And to her service bind each living creature, Through secret understanding of their feature. Thereto she was right faire, whenso her face She list discover, and of goodly stature : But she, as Fayes are wont, in privie place Did spend her dayes, and lov'd in forests wyld to space.

There on a day a noble youthly knight, Seeking adventures in the salvage wood, Did by great fortune get of her the s As she sate carelesse by a cristall for And unawares upon her laying hole That strove in vaine him long to l stood.

Got these three lovely babes, that pr champions bold.

Which she with her long fostred int Till that to ripenesse of mans state th Then shewing forth signes of the

They loved armes, and knighthood Seeking adventures where they anic Which when their mother saw, sheg Their safetie; least by searchingdam And rash provoking perils all about Their days mote be abridged that corage stout.

XLVII

Therefore desirous th' end of all the To know, and them t' enlarge with tent,

By wondrous skill and many hidden To the three fatall sisters house she Farre under ground from tract of liv Downe in the bottome of the deepe-Where Demogorgon, in dull darkner Farre from the view of gods and hea The hideous Chaos keepes, their dwelling is.

There she them found all sitting round The direfull distaffe standing in the And with unwearied fingers drawing The lines of life, from living knowle Sad Clotho held the rocke, the while By griesly Lachesis was spun with That cruell Atropos eftsoones undid. With cursed knife cutting the twist Most wretched men, whose dayes thrids so vaine!

She, them saluting, there by them Beholding how the thrids of life the And when at last she had beheld be Trembling in heart, and looking I Her cause of comming she to tell be To whom fierce Atropos: 'Bold Fay, Come see the secret of the life of ma Well worthie thou to be of Jove ac And eke thy childrens thrids to b 6

the sore affrayd, yet her besought her boone, and rigour to abate, ight see her childrens thrids forth ght, the measure of their utmost date dained by eternall fate: he graunting shewed her the same, she saw, it did her much amate thrids so thin as spiders frame, short, that seemd their ends out by came.

egan them humbly to intreate em longer out, and better twine, ir lives might be prolonged late: is thereat gan to repine,
' Fond dame, that deem'st of things ie ne, that they may altred bee, 'd at pleasure for those impes of i! what the Fates do once decree, gods can chaunge, nor Jove him an free!'

LII

e' (quoth she) 'the terme of each life may lessened nor enlarged bee,

Graunt this; that when ye shred with fatail knife

His line, which is the eldest of the three, Which is of them the shortest, as I see, Eftsoones his life may passe into the next: And, when the next shall likewise ended bee, That both their lives may likewise be annext Unto the third, that his may so be trebly wext.

LIII

They graunted it; and then that carefull Fay Departed thence with full contented mynd; And, comming home, in warlike fresh aray Them found all three according to their kynd: But unto them what destinie was assynd, Or how their lives were eekt, she did not tell; But evermore, when she fit time could fynd, She warned them to tend their safeties well, And love each other deare, what ever them befell.

LIV

So did they surely during all their dayes, And never discord did amongst them fall, Which much augmented all their other praise; And now, t'increase affection naturall, In love of Canacee they joyned all: Upon which ground this same great battell grew,

Great matter growing of beginning small, The which, for length, I will not here pursew, But rather will reserve it for a Canto new.

CANTO III.

The battell twixt three brethren with Cambell for Canacce: Cambins with true friendships bond Doth their long strife agree.

e wretched men so much desire ir dayes unto the utmost date, rather wish them soone expire, a miserie of their estate, a d perills which them still awate, a like a boate amid the mayne, oure they knocke at deathes gate? happie seemes, and least in payne.; h his end as he that most doth

11

nis Fay I hold but fond and vaine, a seeking for her children three

Long life, thereby did more prolong their paine:
Yet whilest they lived none did ever see
More happie creatures then they seem'd to bee;
Nor more ennobled for their courtesie,

Nor more emoded for their courses, That made them dearely lov'd of each degree; Ne more renowmed for their chevalrie, That made them dreaded much of all men farre and nie.

Ш

These three that hardie chalenge tooke in hand, For Canacce with Cambell for to fight.
The day was set, that all might understand, And pledges pawnd the same to keepe aright:

That day, the dreddest day that living wight Did ever see upon this world to shine So soone as heavens window shewed light, These warlike Champions, all in armour shine Assembled were in field the chalenge to define,

The field with listes was all about enclos'd, To barre the prease of people farre away ; And at th' one side sixe judges were dispos'd, To view and deeme the deedes of armes that [day: And on the other side, in fresh aray, Fayre Canacce upon a stately stage Was set, to see the fortune of that fray, And to be seene, as his most worthic wage That could her purchase with his lives adventur'd gage.

Then entred Cambell first into the list, With stately steps and fearelesse countenance, As if the conquest his he surely wist, Soone after did the brethren three advance In brave aray and goodly amenance, With scutchins gilt and banners broad displayd; And, marching thrise in warlike ordinance, Thrise lowted lowly to the noble Mayd, The whiles shril trompets and loud clarions sweetly playd.

Which doen, the doughty chalenger came All arm'd to point, his chalenge to abet: Gainst whom Sir Priamond, with equall worth And equall armes, himselfe did forward set. A trompet blew; they both together met With dreadfull force and furious intent, Carelesse of perill in their fiers affret, As if that life to losse they had forelent, And cared not to spare that should be shortly

spent.

Right practicke was Sir Priamond in fight, And throughly skild in use of shield and speare; Ne lesse approved was Cambelloes might, Ne lesse his skill in weapons did appeare; That hard it was to weene which harder were. Full many mightle strokes on either side Were sent, that seemed death in them to beare; But they were both so watchfull and well eyde. That they avoyded were, and vainely by did Out of his headpeece Cambell flere slyde.

VIII

Yet one, of many, was so strongly bent By Priamond, that with unluckie glaunce Through Cambels shoulder it unwarely went, That forced him his shield to disadvannce.

Much was he grieved with that s chaunce;

Yet from the wound no drop of bloud wondrous paine, that did the

His haughtie courage to avenue Smart daunts not mighty harts, but m more to swell.

With that, his poynant speare he fin

With doubled force close underneath That through the mayles into his th tred,

And, there arresting, readie way did For bloud to gush forth on the gran That he for paine himselfe n'ore righ But too and fro in great amazement Like an old Oke, whose pith and say At puffe of every storme doth sta and theare.

Whom so dismayd when Cambell b Againe he drove at him with double That nought mote stay the steele, The mortall point most cruelly emp Where fast infixed, whilest he sough It forth to wrest, the staffe asunder And left the head behinde; with pight

He all enrag'd his shivering speare And charging him afresh thus fell spake.

'Lo! faitour, there thy meede unto Not for thine owne, but for thy sist Have I thus long thy life unto the But to forbeare doth not forgive th The wicked weapon heard his wrat And, passing forth with furious affi Pierst through his bever quite into That with the force it backward for bow.

Therewith asunder in the midst it And in his hand nought but the tro The other halfe, behind yet sticking And with such furie backe at him That making way unto his dearest His weasand-pipe it through his g Thence streames of purple bloud is Let forth his wearie ghost, and m of strife.

XIII

ghost assoyld from fleshly band thers wont, directly fly it in Plutoes griesly land; e did vanish presently, d was into a starre in sky; i traduction was eftsoones derived, mother prayd the Destinie, er brethren that survived. liv'd anew, of former life deprived.

en on ground his brother next be-

and sorie for so heavy sight, nto his sorrow did not yeeld, stir'd to vengeance and despight, ret feeling of his generous spright, ly forth the battell to renew, ion of his brothers right; ging the Virgin as his dew, soone addrest: the trompets fresh-

PW.

they both together fiercely met, ich ment other to devoure heir axes both so sorely bet, er plate nor mayle, where as their Stowre, could once sustaine the hideous rere like rotten wood asunder; I flash, like lightning after thunder,

and fortune found some beasts fresh Till, feeling life to fayle, it fell, and deadly ·le. hey weene their famine to asswage a feastfull guerdon of their toyle, g out doe stirre up strifefull broyle, sileignes with other to partake :

nd. disdeigning long delay 11 fortune wavering to and fro,

y strokes, that mortally were ment, s were enterchaunged twixt them rere all with so good wariment, or avoyded and let goe, he life stood fearelesse of her foe;

Resolv'd to end it one or other way, And heav'd his murdrous axe at him with mighty sway.

XVIII

The dreadfull stroke, in case it had arrived Where it was ment, (so deadly it was ment) The soule had sure out of his bodie rived. And stinted all the strife incontinent: But Cambels fate that fortune did prevent; For, seeing it at hand, he swarv'd asy de, And so gave way unto his fell intent; Who, missing of the marke which he had eyde, Was with the force nigh feld, whilst his right

foot did slyde.

As when a Vulture greedie of his pray, Through hunger long that hart to him doth lend,

Strikes at an Heron with all his bodies sway. That from his force seemes nought may it defend; The warie fowle, that spies him toward bend His dreadfull souse, avoydes it, shunning light, And maketh him his wing in vaine to spend;

That with the weight of his owne weeldlesse might [ereth flight. He falleth nigh to ground, and scarse recov-

Which faire adventure when Cambello spide,

Full lightly, ere himselfe he could recower rough their rifts the ruddie bloud From daungers dread to ward his naked side, He can let drive at him with all his power, flash, like lightning after thunder. And with his axe him smote in evill hower, is lookers on attonce with ruth and That from his shoulders quite his head he reft: The headlesse tronke, as heedlesse of that stower, wo Tygers prickt with hungers rage Stood still awhile, and his fast footing kept,

slept.

They which that piteous spectacle beheld Were much amaz'd the headlesse tronke to see battell twixt themselves doe make, Stand up so long, and weapon vaine to weld, ther lets the other touch the soyle, Unweeting of the Fates divine decree For lifes succession in those brethren three. these Knights strove for that Ladies For notwithstanding that one soule was reft, Yet had the bodie not dismembred bee, It would have lived, and revived eft; But, finding no fit seat, the lifelesse corse it left,

It left; but that same soule which therein dwelt Streight entring into Triamond him fild With double life and griefe; which when he fel!
As one whose inner parts had bene ythrild With point of steele that close his hartbloud And over-ruling him in his or

He lightly lept out of his place of rest, And rushing forth into the emptie field, Against Cambello fiercely him addrest; [prest. Who, him affronting scone, to fight was readie

Well mote ye wonder how that noble Knight, After he had so often wounded beene, Could stand on foot now to renew the fight: But had ye then him forth advauncing seene, Some newborne wight ye would him surely weene;

So fresh he seemed and so fierce in sight: Like as a Snake, whom wearie winters teene Hath worne to nought, now feeling sommers might, [dight. Casts off his ragged skin and freshly doth him

All was through vertue of the ring he wore; The which not onely did not from him let One drop of bloud to fall, but did restore His weakned powers, and dulled spirits whet, Through working of the stone therein yset. Else how could one of equall might with most, Against so many no lesse mightie met, Once thinke to match three such on equall cost, Three such as able were to match a puissant host ?

XXV

Yet nought thereof was Triamond adredde, Ne desperate of glorious victorie; But sharpely him assayld, and sore bestedde With heapes of strokes, which he at him let flie As thicke as hayle forth poured from the skie : He stroke, he soust, he foynd, he hewd, he lasht, And did his yrou brond so fast applie, That from the same the fierie sparkles flasht, As fast as water-sprinkles gainst a rocke are

Much was Cambello daunted with his blowes: So thicke they fell, and forcibly were sent, That he was forst from daunger of the throwes Backe to retire, and somewhat to relent, Till th' heat of his fierce furie he had spent; Which when for want of breath gan to abate, He then afresh with new encouragement Did him assayle, and mightily amate, Did him assayle, and mightily amate, As fast as forward erst now backward to Of th' uncouth sight, as he some retrate.

XXVII

Like as the tide, that comes fro th' Ocean mayne Flowes up the Shenan with contrarie forse,

Drives backe the current of his kindly And makes it seeme to have some other But when the floud is spint, then built His borrowed waters forst to redished He sends the sea his owne with dank And tribute eke withall, as to his Sov

Thus did the battell varie to and fro, With diverse fortune doubtfull to be it Now this the better had, now hal his Then he halfe vanquisht, then the other Yet victors both them selves always a And all the while the disentrayled to Adowne their sides like little ricurs its That with the wasting of his vitall in Sir Triamond at last full faint and feel

But Cambell still more strong and

Ne felt his blood to wast, ne powre s Through that rings vertue, that will

Still when as he enfeebled was, him e And all his wounds, and all his bra risht:

Like as a withered tree, through Is often scene full freshly to have for And fruitfull apples to have borne at As fresh as when it first was plant soyle.

XXX

Through which advantage, in his he rose.

And smote the other with so wonder That through the seame, which did berk close,

Into his throate and life it pierced qualitate that downe he fell as dead in all met Yet dead he was not, yet he sure did As all men do, that lose the living s So did one soule out of his bodie file Unto her native home from mortall

XXXI

But nathelesse, whilst all the looke Him dead behight, as he to all appear All unawares be started up anon, As one that had out of a dreame be seene.

Stood still amaz'd, holding his idle s Till, having often by him stricken b He forced was to strike, and save from teene.

XXXII

thenceforth more warily he fought, eare the Stygian gods t' offend, on so fast, but rather sought o save, and daunger to defend, nd labour both in vaine to spend. amond perceiving weened sure faint toward the battels end, e should not long on foote endure,

ich did to him the victorie assure.

xxxiii

ull blith eftsoones his mightie hand on high, in mind with that same 1 end of all that did withstand: nbell seeing come was nothing slow o save from that so deadly throw; t instant reaching forth his sweard rneath his shield, that scarce did , as he his hand to strike upreard, -pit full, that through both sides

XXXIV

wound appeard.

g heavie on Cambelloes crest, n so hugely that in swowne he lay, head an hideous wound imprest: ad it not happily found rest rim of his brode-plated shield, ave cleft his braine downe to his once fell dead upon the field, o other seemd the victorie to yield.

xxxv

en as all the lookers-on beheld, ad sure the warre was at an end; rose, and Marshals of the field ic listes, their armes away to rend; e gan wavle her dearest frend. v they both upstarted light,[blend, reathing now another spright,

they then continued in that wize, en the battell had begonne: unds, wards, weapons, all they did r'd to ward, or perill shonne, h to have the battell donne;

So wearie both of fighting had their fill, That life it selfe seemd loathsome, and long safetie ill.

XXXVII Whilst thus the case in doubtfull ballance

hong, Unsure to whether side it would incline. And all mens eyes and hearts, which there among Stood gazing, filled were with rufull tine And secret feare, to see their fatall fine, All suddenly they heard a troublous noves, That seemd some perilous tumult to desine, Confusd with womens cries and shouts of boyes, noyes. Such as the troubled Theatres oftimes an-

XXXVIII Thereat the Champions both stood still a

space, To weeten what that sudden clamour ment: Lo! where they spyde with speedie whirling One in a charet of straunge furniment [pace, Towards them driving, like a storme out sent.
The charet decked was in wondrous wize With gold and many a gorgeous ornament, hat direfull stroke kept on his way. Such as the maker selfe could best by art devize.

XXXIX

And drawne it was (that wonder is to tell) Of two grim lyons, taken from the wood, In which their powre all others did excell; Now made forget their former cruell mood, T' obey their riders hest, as seemed good. And therein sate a Ladie, passing faire And bright, that seemed borne of Angels brood, And, with her beautie, bountie did compare, Whether of them in her should have the greater

Thereto she learned was in Magicke leare, And all the artes, that subtill wits discover, it of the swownd, which him did Having therein bene trained many a yeare, And well instructed by the Fay her mother, each assayling gan afresh to fight. That in the same she farre exceld all other: Who understanding by her mightie art Of th' evill plight, in which her dearest brother Now stood, came forth in hast to take his part, And pacifie the strife, which cause so deadly smart.

And as she passed through th' unruly pres Of people, thronging thicke her to behold, red life to save or spill, [wonne. Her angrie teams breaking their bonds of per them did winne, ne which were Great heapes of them, like sheeps in narrow fold For host did over-came, in dust enroully That, thorough rade confusion of the rout, Same fearing shrickt, some being harmed hould me laught für sport, some did für somder

turnel to dough And some, that would seeme wise, their wunder

33.0

In her eight hand a rod of peace shoe bore, About the which two Serpents worm wound, Entrayled mutually in levely kers, And by the tailes together femaly bound, And both were with one olive garland crownd, Like to the rad which Mains sonne doth wield, Wherewith the hellish dends he doth mafound: THILL And in her other hand a cup she hild, The which was with Nepenthe to the brim up-

MARIE

Nepenthe is a drinck of saverayne grace, Devined by the Gods, for to asswage Harts grief, and bitter gall away to chace, Which stirs up auguish and contentious rage Instead thereof sweet peace and quiet-age It doth establish in the troubled mynd. Few men, but such as sober are and sage Are by the Gods to drinck thereof assynd; But such as drinck, eternall happinesse do fynd,

Such famous men, such worthies of the earth, As Jore will have advanced to the skie, And there made gods, though borns of mortall berth.

For their high merits and great dignitie, Are wont, before they may to heaven flie, To drincke hereof, whereby all cares forepast Are washt away quite from their memorie. So did those olde Heroës hereof taste, Before that they in blisse amongst the Gods

were plaste.

XLV

Much more of price and of more gratious powre, Is this, then that same water of Ardenne, The which Rinaldo drunck in happie howre, Described by that famous Tuscane penne: For that had might to change the hearts of men Fro love to hate, a change of evill choise: But this doth hatrod make in love to brenne, and heavy heart with comfort doth rejoyce Who would not to this vertue rather yeeld his voice ?

XLVI

At last arriving by the listes side, Shee with her rod did softly smite the raile, Which straight flew ope, and gave her way to Thus when they all accorded goods Effscones out of her Coch shapen availe, [ride, The trumpets sounded, and they all

And pasing fairely Such did tid all his First to her brother, whom she loved a That so to see him made her heart to a And next to Cambell, whose sad mold. Made her to change her hew, and hild t' appeare.

XLVII They lightly her requit, (for small he They had as then her long to exterior And off them turned both agains to be Which when she saw, downe on the plaine Her selfe she threw, and tears of Amongst her teares immixing prayers And with her prayers reasons, to reft From blouddy strife, and blessed peace!

By all that unto them was deare, in

beseeke.

XLVIII

But when as all might nought will prevaile, Shee smote them lightly with her p Then suddenly, as if their hearts did it Their wrathfull blades downe fell out hand

And they, like men astonisht, still did Thus whilest their minds were doubth traught, And mighty spirites bound with mighti

Her golden cup to them for drinke also Whereof, full glad for thirst, ech d harty draught;

Of which so soone as they once taste Wonder it is that sudden change to Instead of strokes, each other kissed a And lovely haulst, from feare of treas And plighted hands for ever friends to When all men saw this sudden change So mortall foes so friendly to agree, For passing joy, which so great marvall They all gan shout aloud, that all the rings.

All which when gentle Canacee behi In hast she from her lofty chaire desc To weet what sudden tidings was bef Where when she saw that cruell war And deadly foes so faithfully affrend In lovely wise she gan that Lady gr Which had so great dismay so well a Profest to her true friendship and sweet.

Thus when they all accorded goodly

part with glee and gladsome champions both together chose

o march, themselves there to ibina, taking by her side , as fresh as morning rose h remounting, home did ride, Il the people and much glori-

Where making joyous feast theire daies they In perfect love, devoide of hatefull strife, [spent Allide with bands of mutuall couplement; For Triamond had Canacee to wife, With whom he ledd a long and happie life; And Cambel tooke Cambina to his fere, The which as life were to each other liefe So all alike did love, and loved were, [elswhere, That since their dayes such lovers were not found

CANTO IV.

Satyrane makes a Turneyment For love of Florimell:
Britomart winnes the prize from all,
And Artegall doth quell.

(as here it earst befell)

foes doe turne to faithfull frends, profest are chaungd to foemen oth, of both their minds depends, of both likewise of both their that of no ill proceeds [ends: on, with th' occasion ends p, which a faint affection breeds

ne seemes) appeares, by that of ell and Sir Triamond befell,

s, that now a new debate it Blandamour and Paridell course befals me here to tell : those two other Knights espide re, as ye remember well, zir Squire to have them both des-

[side.

returning told, as he had seene, ere doughtie knights of dreaded

2 Ladies their two loves unseene: wisht them without blot or

passe at will, for dread of shame. our full of vainglorious spright, ird by his discordfull Dame,

Yet nigh approching he them fowle bepake, Disgracing them, him selfe thereby to grace, As was his wont: so weening way to make To Ladies love, where so he came in place, And with lewd termes their lovers to deface. Whose sharpe provokement them incenst so

sore, That both were bent t' avenge his usage base, rd of good, dyes like ill grounded And gan their shields addresse them selves afore: [bore.

For evill deedes may better then bad words be

But faire Cambina with perswasions myld Did mitigate the fiercenesse of their mode, That for the present they were reconcyld, And gan to treate of deeds of armes abrode, And strange adventures, all the way they rode: Amongst the which they told, as then befell,

Of that great turney which was blazed brode, side. For that rich girdle of faire Florimell, e masked Ladies riding them be- The prize of her which did in beautie most excell.

To which folke-mote they all with one consent, Sith each of them his Ladie had him by Whose beautie each of them thought ex-

cellent, Agreed to travell, and their fortunes try. So as they passed forth they did espy

One in bright armes, with ready speare in rest, That toward them his course seem'd to apply adly would have prov'd his might, Gainst whom Sir Paridell himselfe address et was sore of his late lucklesse Him weening, ere he nigh approcht, to have represt.

Which th'other social gan his course relent, And vaunted speare offsoines to displysones. As if he naught but peace and pleasure ment, Now faine into their fellowship by chance: Whereat they showed curtoous countenaume So as he rode with them accompanide, His roving ele did on the Lady glaunce Which Blandsmoor had riding by his side; Whom sure he weend, that he some-wher to fore had side.

VIII It was to weete that snowy Florimell, Which Ferran late from Braggadochio wonne: Whom he now seeing, her remembred well, How having reft her from the witches sonne, He some her lost; wherefore he now begunne To challenge her anew, as his owne prize, Whom formerly he had in battell wonne. And proffer made by force her to reprize : Which accomefull offer Blandamour gan so despire:

TX

And said, Sir Knight, sith ye this Lady clame, Whom he that hath were loth to lose so light, (For so to lose a Lady were great shame) Yee shall her winne, as I have done, in fight : Ami lo! shee shall be placed here in sight, Together with this Hag beside her set, That who so winnes her may her have by right: But he shall have the Hag that is ybet, And with her alwaies ride, till he another get."

That offer pleased all the company : So Florimell with Ate forth was brought, At which they all gan laugh full merrily : But Braggadochio said, he never thought For such an Hag, that seemed worse then nought,

His person to emperill so in fight; But if to match that Lady they had sought Another like, that were like faire and bright, His life he then would spend to justifie his right.

At which his vaine excuse they all gan smile, As scorning his unmanly cowardize: And Florimell him fowly gan revile, That for her sake refus'd to enterprize The battell, offred in so knightly wize; And Ate eke provokt him privily With love of her, and shame of such mesprize. But nought he car'd for friend or enemy, For in base mind nor friendship dwels nor That all men threw out vowes and wish enmity.

But Cambell thus did shut up all in Brave Knights and Ladies, rests.

To stirre up strife, when must us on That we may us reserve both fresh at Against the Turneiment which is not Where who so list to fight may light h Till then your challenges ye may produced then it shall be tried, if ye will. Whether shall have the Hag, or hold

They all agreed: so, turning all togs And pleasannt bord, they past forth

And all that while, where so they role That masked Mock-knight was their play.

Till that at length, upon th' appoints Unto the place of turneyment they ca Where they before them found in free Manie a brave knight and manie a dains Assembled for to get the honour of the

There this faire crewe arriving did di Them selves asunder: Blandamour vi Of his on th' one, the rest on th' other But boastful Braggadochio rather che For glorie vaine, their tellowsnip to lo That men on him the more might ga The rest themselves in troupes did else Like as it seemed best to every one; The knights in couples marcht will linckt attone.

Then first of all forth came Sir Saty Bearing that precious relicke in an art Of gold, that bad eyes might it not pr Which drawing softly forth out of the He open shewd, that all men it mote ! A gorgeous girdle, curiously embost With pearle and precious stone, worth marke;

Yet did the workmanship farre passe It was the same which lately Florimal b

The same aloft he hung in open vew To be the prize of beautie and of migh The which eftsoones discovered, to it The eyes of all, allur'd with close dell And hearts quite robbed with so glarie Thrise happie Ladie, and thrise happie

of the perill, worthy of the paine.

XVII

e the bold Sir Satyrane in hand eat speare, such as he wont to wield, ing forth from all the other band , addrest his maiden-headed shield, im selfe all ready for the field.

m there singled from the other side enight that well in armes was skild, ı many a battell oft bene tride, ride.

ly they both together met, er could the others force sustaine; ce Buls, that strive the rule to get neard, meete with so hideous maine, rebutted tumble on the plaine: ro champions to the ground were

ı maze they both did long remaine, ir hands their idle troucheons held, ther able were to wag, or once to

XIX

nen the noble Ferramont espide, forth in ayd of Satyran; gainst Sir Blandamour did ride ie strength and stifnesse that he can. ore strong and stiffely that he ran, fore sorely to the ground he fell, heape were tumbled horse and man: e rescue forth rode Paridell; kewise with that same speare he eke quell.

XX

raggadocchio seeing had no will greatly to his parties ayd, turne were next; but stood there

t seemed doubtfull or dismayd. ond, halfe wroth to see him staid, pt forth and raught away his speare, h so sore he Ferramont assaid, and man to ground he quite did [upreare. er could in hast themselves againe

avenge Sir Devon him did dight, o better fortune then the rest : rewise he quickly downe did smight, rian Sir Douglas him addrest,

id that could so goodly riches gaine, And after him Sir Palimord forth prest: But none of them against his strokes could stand

> But, all the more, the more his praise increst: For either they were left uppon the laud, Or went away sore wounded of his haplesse

XXII

And now by this Sir Satyrane abraid Out of the swowne, in which too long he lay; And looking round about, like one dismaid, When as he saw the mercilesse affray ncheval the bold, who fiersly forth Which doughty Triamond had wrought that day Unto the noble Knights of Maidenhead, His mighty heart did almost rend in tway, For very gall, that rather wholly dead Himselfe he wisht have beene, then in so bad

XXIII

a stead.

Eftsoones he gan to gather up around His weapons which lay scattered all abrode, And, as it fell, his steed he ready found; On whom remounting fiercely forth he rode Like sparke of fire that from the andvile glode, There where he saw the valiant Triamond Chasing, and laying on them heavy lode, That none his force were able to withstond, So dreadfull were his strokes, so deadly was his hond.

With that, at him his beam-like speare he aimed. And thereto all his power and might applide:

wicked steele, for mischiefe first or-

dained, And having now misfortune got for guide. Staid not till it arrived in his side, And therein made a very griesly wound, That streames of blood his armour all bedide. Much was he daunted with that direfull stound, That scarse he him upheld from falling in a swound.

XXV

Yet, as he might, himselfe he soft withdrew Out of the field, that none perceiv'd it plaine; Then gan the part of Chalengers anew To range the field, and victorlike to raine, That none against them battell durst maintaine:

By that the gloomy evening on them fell, That forced them from fighting to refraine,
And trumpets sound to cease did them compell. So Satyrane that day was judg'd to beare the bell,

XXVI

The morrow next the Turney gan anew: And with the first the hardy Satyrane Appear'd in place, with all his noble crew: On th' other side full many a warlike swaine Assembled were, that glorious prize to gaine. But mongst them all was not Sir Triamond, Unable he new battell to darraine, Through grievaunce of his late received wound, That doubly did him grieve when so himselfe

XXVII

Which Cambell seeing, though he could not salve.

Ne done undoe, yet, for to salve his name And purchase honour in his friends behalve, This goodly counterfesaunce he did frame: The shield and armes, well knowne to be the

Which Triamond had worne, unwares to wight And to his friend unwist, for doubt of blame If he misdid, he on himselfe did dight, That none could him discerne; and so went

forth to fight,

he found.

XXVIII

There Satyrane Lord of the field he found, Triumphing in great joy and jolity, Gainst whom none able was to stand on ground;

That much he gan his glorie to envy And cast t' avenge his friends indignity. A mightie speare eftsoones at him he bent; Who, seeing him come on so furiously, Met him mid-way with equall hardiment, That forcibly to ground they both together went.

XXIX

They up agains them selves can lightly reare, And to their tryed swords them selves betake; With which they wrought such wondrous marvels there,

That all the rest it did amazed make, Ne any dar'd their perill to partake; Now cuffing close, now chacing to and fro, Now hurtling round advantage for to take : As two wild Boares together grapling go, Chaufing and foming choler each against his To let him loose to save their proper

XXX

So as they courst, and turneyd here and It channst Sir Satyrane his steed at last, Whether through foundring or through sodein

To stumble, that his rider nigh he cast;

Which vauntage Cambell did pursus so That, ere him selfe he had recovered we So sore he sowat him on the compast of That forced him to leave his loftic sell. And rudely tumbling downe under his feete fell.

XXXI Lightly Cambello leapt downe from his For to have rent his shield and armen That whylome wont to be the victors I When all unwares he felt an hideous Of many swords that lode on him did An hundred knights had him enclosed To rescue Satyrane out of his pray, All which at once huge strokes on l In hope to take him prisoner, where

XXXII

He with their multitude was nought d But with stout courage turnd upon the And with his brondiron round about his Of which he dealt large almes, as did Like as a Lion, that by chaunce doth Into the hunters toile, doth rage and ! In royall heart disdaining to be through But all in vaine: for what might one of They have him taken captive, though i him sore.

Whereof when newes to Triamond was There as he lay, his wound he soone ! And starting up streight for his armout In vaine he sought, for there he found Cambello it away before had got. Cambelloes armes therefore he on him And lightly issewd forth to take his b There he in troupe found all that warli Leading his friend away, full sorie to

Into the thickest of that knightly pro He thrust, and smote downe all that Lweene

Caried with fervent zeale: ne did he Till that he came where he had Camb Like captive thral two other Knights a There he amongst them cruell havocks That they, which lead him, soone enforce Who, being freed, from one a weapon takes.

XXXV

With that he drives at them with d might,

Both in remembrance of his friends late And in revengement of his owne despi So both together give a new allarme,

ow the battell wexed warme. o greedy Wolves doe breake by force ord, farre from the husband farme, enforce.

XXXVI

hey followd on their bolde emprize, ts sound did warne them all to rest; ith one consent did yeeld the prize id and Cambell as the best. and to Cambell it relest, ell it to Triamond transferd, ring t' advance the others gest, his praise before his owne preferd: doome was to another day differd.

XXXVII

ay came, when all those knightes were their deedes of armes to shew. leedes that day were shewed plaine: ne, bove all the other crew, us worth declared in all mens view, ie first he to the last endured: h some while Fortune from him drew. re his honour he recured, [sured. inwearied powre his party still as-

XXXVIII

nere Knight that ever thought of [knowen; his utmost prowesse there made their many wounds and carelesse [strowen, al speares, and swords all under d shields, was easie to be showen. ht ye see loose steeds at randon clesse riders late were overthrowen; make hast to helpe their Lords

XXXIX

onne.

here entered on the other side r knight, from whence no man could

e Knights of Maidenhead the better

wonne;

disguise, full hard to be descride: armour was like salvage weed y mosse bedight, and all his steed leaves attrapt, that seemed fit wight; and thereto well agreed which on his ragged shield was writ, gras finesse, shewing secret wit.

He, at his first incomming, charg'd his spere rd, farre from the husband farme, and ravine without all remorse; se two through all the field their Who well was knowen to be a valiant Knight, approved oft in many a perlous fight. Him at the first encounter downe he smote, And overbore beyond his crouper quight; And after him another Knight, that hote Sir Brianor, so sore that none him life behote.

Then, ere his hand he reard, he overthrew Seven Knights, one after other as they came: And, when his speare was brust, his sword he drew,

The instrument of wrath, and with the same Far'd like a lyon in his bloodie game, Hewing and slashing shields and helmets bright,

And beating downe what ever nigh him came, That every one gan shun his dreadfull sight, No lesse then death it selfe, in daungerous af-

XLII

Much wondred all men what or whence he

That did amongst the troupes so tyrannize, And each of other gan inquire his name. But when they could not learne it by no wize, Most answerable to his wyld disguize It seemed him to terme the Salvage Knight; But certes his right name was otherwize Though knowne to few, that Arthegall he hight, The doughtiest knight that liv'd that day, and most of might.

Thus was Sir Satyrane with all his band By his sole manhood and atchievement stout Dismay'd, that none of them in field durst stand, But beaten were and chased all about. So he continued all that day throughout, Till evening that the Sunne gan downward bend.

Then rushed forth out of the thickest rout A stranger knight, that did his glorie shend: So nought may be esteemed happie till the end.

XLIV

He at his entrance charg'd his powrefull speare

At Artegall, in middest of his pryde, And therewith smote him on his Umbriere So sore, that tombling backe he downe did Over his horses taile above a stryde; [alyd Whence litle lust he had to rise againe: Which Cambell seeing much the same envyde And ran at him with all his might and maine; But shortly was likewise seene lying on the plaine.

XLV

Whereat full inly wroth was Triamond, And cast t' avenge the shame doen to his freend:

But by his friend himselfe eke soone he foud In no lesse neede of helpe then him he weend. All which when Blandamour from end to end Beheld, he woxe therewith displeased sore, And thought in mind it shortly to amend : His speare he feutred, and at him it bore, But with no better fortune then the rest afore.

XLVI

Pull many others at him likewise ran, But all of them likewise dismounted were ; Ne certes wonder, for no powre of man Could bide the force of that enchaunted speare, The which this famous Britomart did beare; With which she wondrous deeds of arms atchieved,

And overthrew what ever came her neare, That all those stranger knights full sore agrieved, Dieved.

And that late weaker band of chalengers re-

Like as in sommers day, when rag Doth burne the earth and boyled n That all brute beasts, forst to refrain Doe hunt for shade, where shrowds lie,

And, missing it, faine from themsel All travellers tormented are with p A watry cloud doth overcast the sk And poureth forth a sudden shoure That all the wretched world re againe.

So did the warlike Britomart rest The prize to knights of Maydenher Which else was like to have been bore

The prayee of prowesse from them : Then shrilling trompets loudly gan And bad them leave their labour toyle

To joyous feast and other gentle pl Where beauties prize shold win th spoyle: Where I with sound of tromps wi

a whyle.

CANTO V.

The Ladies for the girdle strive Of famous Florimell: Scadamour, comming to Cares House, Doth sleepe from him expell.

Ir hath bene through all ages ever seene. That with the praise of armes and chevalrie The prize of beautie still hath joyned beene; And that for reasons speciall privitie, For either doth on other much relie, For he, me seemes, most fit the faire to serve, That can her best defend from villenie; And she most fit his service doth deserve. That fairest is, and from her faith will never swerve.

So fitly now here commeth next in place, After the proofe of prowesse ended well, The controverse of beauties soveraine grace; In which, to her that doth the most excell, Shall fall the girdle of faire Florimell: That many wish to win for glorie vaine And not for vertuous use, which some doc tell And wrought in Lemmo with unque

That glorious belt did in it selfe con Which Ladies ought to love, and a obtaine.

III

That girdle gave the vertue of cha And wivehood true, to all that did But whosoever contrarie doth prov Might not the same about her mid But it would loose, or else asunder Whilome it was (as Faeries wont r Dame Venus girdle, by her steemed What time she usd to live in wivel But layd aside when so she usd her le

Her husband Vulcan whylome for When first he loved her with heart This pretious ornament, they say, d



THE FAERIE OUEENE.

rds did for her loves first hire r, for ever to remaine, bind lascivious desire, ections streightly to restraine; e it for ever after did retaine.

ne day, when she her selfe disposd beloved Paramoure, warre, she from her middle loosd, ind her in her secret bowre i mount, where many an howre pleasant Graces wont to play. nell, in her first ages flowre, I by those Graces, (as they say) with her from thence that goodly way.

· belt was Cestus hight by name, ife by her esteemed deare. hen, if that to winne the same ties sought, as shall appeare; see she was thought that did it

this their feast all being ended, which thereto selected were rtian field adowne descended his doutfull case, for which they atended.

as question made, which of those turnevd had the wager wonne: judged, by those worthic wights, ne the first day best had donne: nded, having first begonne. sav'd the victour from fordonne: victour was in all mens sight, nap he in his foemens hand did

VIII

daves prize unto that straunger en term'd Knight of the Hebene t was given by good right;
h puissant stroke she downe did

Knight that victour was whileare. rest which had the best afore, ast unconquer'd did appeare; eemed best. To her therefore Ladie was adjudgd for Paramore.

t greatly grudged Arthegall,

And eke of honour she did him forestall. Yet mote he not withstand what was decreede, But inly thought of that despightfull deede Fit time t' awaite avenged for to bee. This being ended thus, and all agreed, Then next ensew'd the Paragon to see Of beauties praise, and yeeld the fayrest her due fee.

Then first Cambello brought into their view His faire Cambina, covered with a veale; Which, being once withdrawne, most perfect hew

And passing beautie did eftsoones reveale, That able was weake harts away to steale. Next did Sir Triamond unto their sight The face of his deare Canacee unheale; Whose beauties beame eftsoones did shine so bright, [light. That daz'd the eyes of all as with exceeding

And after her did Paridell produce His false Duessa, that she might be seene; Who with her forged beautic did seduce The hearts of some that fairest her did weene, As diverse wits affected divers beene. Then did Sir Ferramont unto them shew His Lucida, that was full faire and sheene: And after these an hundred Ladies moe Appear'd in place, the which each other did outgoe.

XII

All which who so dare thinke for to enchace. Him needeth sure a golden pen, I weene, To tell the feature of each goodly face: For, since the day that they created beene. So many heavenly faces were not seene Assembled in one place: ne he that thought For Chian folke to pourtraict beauties Queene, By view of all the fairest to him brought, So many faire did see as here he might have sought

XIII

At last, the most redoubted Britonesse Her levely Amoret did open shew; Whose face, discovered, plainely did expresse The heavenly pourtraict of bright Angels hew. Well weened all, which her that time did vew, That she should surely beare the bell away; Till Blandamour, who thought he had the trew And very Florimell, did her display The sight of whom once seene did all the rest dismay.

XIV

For all afore that seemed fayre and bright, spynd, that both of victors meede Now base and contemptible did appeare,

Compac'd to low that above to Photos light. Amongol she homer starves in evening clean All that her and with course ravish; were And would no mortall contervate she should be Hart mouse school all chape that there did beare yet all more glad three Florings to see Yat thought that Florisad) was not so false as sheet,

As guilefull Goldsmith that by secret skill With golden toyle doth finely over-spred Unto the valuer for good gold instell, the much more goodly glosse therein dich shot To note his fatchesel, then if it were trew: no hard this Idole was to be ared, I has Photocol her mife in all mosts were

like stem'd to passe t so forged things do fairant show.

Then was that guiden belt by dooms of all Hraunited in bor, as to the fayrest Dame. Which being brought, shout her middle small thus thought to gird, as best it her became, but he no meanes they could it thereto frame; For ever as they fastned it, it loos'd and rell away, as feeling secret blame. United alout her wast she it reader'd, And it as oft was from about her wast disclor'd;

That all men wondred at the uncouth sight, And each one thought as to their funcies came. that she has selfe did thinks it doen for spight, and musical was with scorpt wrath and shame Thorowith, as thing devis'd her to defame, Alami their tender beenes to kult the same; the it would not on some of them abide, Hui when they thought it fast, oftomnes it was milida

Which when that scornefull Squire of Dames did very He lovelly gon to laugh, and thus to Jest; Alas for pittle that so faire a crew,

As like can not be seems from East to West, Cannot flust one this girdle to invest, Fig on the man that did it first invent Let uses had with this Ungirt unblest!
That hath this day so many so unmanly shout.

Thereat all Knights gan laugh, and Ladies Till that at last the gentle Amoret

But Floring II And enthology by The bell again

Not nativeness would be be-Ver milicione to lor, as but It yacties was by show that And she her will adjusted to That have the Renew or Schi.

But Britomart would not the Ne her owne Amore, forgot For that strange Dame, who She less esteen d then th government

Whom when the rest did so They were full glad, in hope ber.t

Yet at her choice they all die But, after that, the judges of Unto the second best that he That was the Salvage Kni gone,

In great displeasure that be Then was she judged Trian

The unto Satyran she was a Who was right glad to gain But Blandsmour therest ful And litle prays'd his labour That for to winne the said! Ne lesse therent did Paridel And thought t'appeale fru decreed

To single combat with Sir S Thereta him Atè stint, new taine. XXIII

And eke, with three, Knights

She through her wicked wor Her to demaind and chaleng Deserved for their perils rec Amongst the rest, with box Stept Braggadochio forth, ar Her claym'd, by him in by

Whereto her selfe he did to Who, being askt, accordingly

mell.

XXIV

exceeding wroth was Satyran; with Satyran was Blandamour; with Blandamour was Erivan: em both Sir Paridell did loure. ether stird up strifull stoure, e were new battell to darraine. rofest to be her paramoure. [taine; For soone as she them saw to discord i with speare and shield it to mainHer list no longer in that place about. traine.

XXV

roublous stirre when Satyrane aviz'd, cast how to appease the same, cord them all this meanes deviz'd: ie midst to set that favrest Dame, each one his chalenge should disme, mselfe his right would eke releasse: te to whom she voluntarie came, without disturbance her possesse: the love that comes alone with

XXVI

lingnesse.

agreed: and then that snowy Mayd e middest plast among them all; ner gazing wisht, and vowd, and ıyd, e Queene of beautie close did call, unto their portion might befall. en she long had lookt upon each one, she wished to have pleasd them all, Braggadochio selfe alone of her accord, in spight of all his

XXVII

rhen they all beheld they chaft, and nigh mad for very harts despight, n revenge their willes they scarce might: wag'd: aght from him her to have reft by ffer made with him for her to fight. ought car'd for all that they could eir words as wind esteemed light.

t place he thought it there to stay,

tly from thence that night her bore

XXVIII

ay.

nich remaynd, so soone as they perwas gone, departed thence with speed. them, in mind her to that unworthie of so noble meed.

In which poursuit how each one did succeede, Shall else be told in order, as it fell. But now of Britomart it here doth neede The hard adventures and strange haps to tell, Since with the rest she went not after Flori-

For soone as she them saw to discord set,

But, taking with her lovely Amoret, Upon her first adventure forth did ride To seeke her lov'd, making blind love her guide. Unluckie Mayd, to seeke her enimie! Unluckie Mayd, to seeke him farre and wide, Whom, when he was unto her selfe most nie, She through his late disguizement could him not descrie!

XXX

So much the more her griefe, the more her Yet neither toyle nor griefe she once did spare, In seeking him that should her paine assoyle; Whereto great comfort in her sad misfare Was Amoret, companion of her care: Who likewise sought her lover long miswent, The gentle Scudamour, whose heart whileare That stryfull hag with gealous discontent Had fild, that he to fell reveng was fully bent :

XXXI Bent to revenge on blamelesse Britomart

The crime which cursed Ate kindled carst, The which like thornes did pricke his gealous hart. And through his soule like poysned arrow perst, That by no reason it might be reverst, For ought that Glauce could or doe or say, For, aye the more that she the same reherst, The more it gauld and griev'd him night and

defray. day, That nought but dire revenge his anger mote

XXXII

So as they travelled, the drouping night, Covered with cloudie storme and bitter showre, That dreadfull seem'd to every living wight, Upon them fell, before her timely howre; That forced them to seeke some covert bowre, Where they might hide their heads in quiet Stowre. rest. speed. And shrowd their persons from that stormic have Not farre away, not meet for any guest,
They spide a little cottage, like some poore mans nest.

Under a steepe hilles side it placed was, There where the mouldred earth had cay'd the banker

And fast beside a little brooke did pas Of muddle water, that like puddle stanke, By which few crooked sallowes grew in ranke: Whereto approaching nigh they heard the sound

Of many yron bammers beating ranke, And answering their wearie turnes around, That seemed some blacksmith dwelt in that desert ground.

XXXIV

There entring in, they found the goodman selfe

Full busily unto his worke ybent;

Who was to weet a wretched wearish elfe, With hollow eyes and rawbone cheekes for-

spent, As if he had in prison long bene pent: Full blacke and griesly did his face appeare, Besmeard with smoke that nigh his eye-sight blent :

With rugged beard, and hoarie shagged heare, The which he never wont to combe, or comely sheare.

XXXV

Rude was his garment, and to rags all rent, Ne better had he, ne for better cared: With blistred hands emongst the cinders

brent, And fingers filthie with long nayles unpared, Right fit to rend the food on which he fared. His name was Care; a blacksmith by his trade, That neither day nor night from working spared,

But to small purpose yron wedges made; Those be unquiet thoughts that carefull minds invade.

XXXVI

In which his worke he had sixe servants

About the Andvile standing evermore

With huge great hammers, that did never

From heaping stroakes which thereon soused. He by no meanes could wished as All sixe strong groomes, but one then other So every place seem'd painted more;

For by degrees they all were disagreed, So likewise did the hammers which they bore,

Like belies in greatnesse orderly succeed, That he which was the last the first did farre exceede.

He like a monstrons Grant seem's Farre passing Bronteus or Pyracus The which in Lipari doe day and n Frame thunderbolts for Jores threate

So dreadfully he did the andvile bea That seem'd to dust he shortly won So huge his hammer, and so here b That seem'd a rocke of Diamond it i And rend asunder quite, if he the strive.

XXXVIII

Sir Scudamour there entring much The manner of their worke and wer And, having long beheld, at last or The cause and end thereof, but all it For they for nought would from t refraine,

Ne let his speeches come unto their And eke the breathfull bellowes bis Like to the Northern winde, that heare:

Those Pensifenesse did move; and

XXXIX

Which when that warriour saw, more,

But in his armour layd him down To rest he layd him downe upon th (Whylome for ventrous Knights th best)

And thought his wearie limbs to h And that old aged Dame, his faithful Her feeble joynts layd eke adowne That needed much her weake age t After so long a travell which then tire.

There lay Sir Scudamour long while When gentle sleepe his heavie

Oft chaunging sides, and oft new pla Where better seem'd he mote hims And oft in wrath he thence agains And oft in wrath he layd him down sore: But wheresoever he did himselfe di changing vaine,

And evermore, when he to sleepe The hammers sound his senses did And evermore, when he began to s The bellowes noyse disturb'd his op

y fortune any litle nap heavie eye-lids chaunst to fall, one of those villeins him did rap headpeece with his yron mall; as soone awaked therewithall, ly started up as one affrayd, ne him suddenly did call: mes he out of sleepe abrayd, ay musing long on that him ill spayd.

XI.III

1e muzed, and so long he lay, le last his wearie sprite, opprest ly weaknesse, which no creature may resist, gave place to kindly rest, is senses did full soone arrest: soundest sleepe his dayly feare raine gan busily molest st appeare.

red-whot yron tongs did take

sleepe to settle in his brest.
Out of the burning cinders, and therewith the night the dogs did barke and Under his side him nipt; that, forst to wake, He felt his hart for very paine to quake, And started up avenged for to be On him the which his quiet slomber brake: iking, him afflicted to the very sowle. Yet, looking round about him, none could see; Yet did the smart remaine, though he himselfe did flee.

XLV

In such disquiet and hart-fretting payne He all that night, that too long night, did passe And now the day out of the Occan mayne Began to peepe above this earthly masse, With pearly dew sprinkling the morning grasse: Then up he rose, like heavie lumps of lead, That in his face, as in a looking glasse,
The signes of anguish one mote plainely read.
Ar I ghesse the man to be dismayd with gealous dread.

Unto his lofty steede he clombe anone, And forth upon his former voiage fared, And with him eke that aged Squire attone; Who, whatsoever perill was prepared, him dreame those two disloyall were: Both equall paines and equall perill shared; s, that day most minds, at night doe The end whereof and daungerous event Shall for another canticle be spared: XLIV
But here my wearie teeme, nigh over spent,
tthe wicked carle, the maister Smith, Shall breath it selfe awhile after so long a went.

CANTO VI.

Both Scudamour and Arthegall
Doe fight with Britomart:
He sees her face; doth fall in love,
And soone from her depart.

quall torment to the griefe of mind ng anguish hid in gentle hart, feeds it selfe with thoughts unkind, isheth her owne consuming smart? dicine can any Leaches art h a sore, that doth her grievance hide to none her maladie impart? the wound that Scudamour did gride, le.

day, as he on his way did ride, elancholie and sad misfare misconceipt, all unawares espide

An armed Knight under a forrest side Sitting in shade beside his grazing steede; Who, soone as them approaching he descride, Gan towards them to pricke with eger speede, That seem'd he was full bent to some mischievous deede.

HI

Which Scudamour perceiving forth issewed To have rencountred him in equal race; 1 Dan Phebus selfe cannot a salve pro- But soone as th' other nigh approaching vewed The armes he bore, his speare he gan abase And voide his course: at which so suddain case ving left that restlesse house of Care, He wondred much. But th' other thus can say: Ah, gentle Scudamour! unto your grace I me submit, and you of pardon pray, That almost had against you trespassed this IV

Whereto thus Scudamour: 'Small harme it

For any knight upon a ventrous knight Without displeasance for to prove his spere But reade you, Sir, sith ye my name have hight, What is your owne, that I mote you requite? 'Certes,' (sayd he) 'ye mote as now excuse Me from discovering you my name aright, For time yet serves that I the same refuse;

But call ye me the Salvage Knight, as others HRC.

'Then this, Sir Salvage Knight,' (quoth he) arcede:

Or doe you here within this forrest wonne, That seemeth well to answere to your weede, Or have ye it for some occasion donne?

That rather seemes, sith knowen armes ye shonne.'

'This other day' (sayd he) 'a stranger knight Shame and dishonour hath unto me donne. On whom I waite to wreake that foule despight, When ever he this way shall passe by day or night.

'Shame be his meede,' (quoth he) 'that meaneth shame!

But what is he by whom ye shamed were?' 'A stranger knight,' sayd he, 'unknowne by name

But knowne by fame, and by an Hebene speare, With which he all that met him downe did beare.

He, in an open Turney lately held, Fro me the honour of that game did reare :

And having me, all wearie earst, downe feld, The fayrest Ladie reft, and ever since withheld.

When Scudamour heard mention of that speare,

He wist right well that it was Britomart, The which from him his fairest love did beare. Tho gan he swell in every inner part

For fell despight, and gnaw his gealous hart, That thus he sharply sayd: Now, by my head,

Yet is not this the first unknigatery part.
Which that same knight, whom by his launce
[him dread:

Hath doen to noble knights, that many makes

'For lately he my love hath fro me reft, And eke defiled with foule villanie

The sacred pledge which in his faith w In shame of knighthood and fidelite; The which ere long full deare he shall And if to that avenge by you decreal This hand may helpe, or succouragits It shall not fayle when so ye shall it so So both to wreake their wrather on Brits agreed.

Whiles thus they communed, lo! tare se A Knight soft ryding towards them they a Whom, when they nigh approcht, they pe descryde

To be the same for whom they did abyle Sayd then Sir Scudamour: Sir Sala knight,

Let me this crave, sith first I was deyd.
That first I may that wrong to him rep
And, if I hap to fayle, you shall rean
right.

Which being yeelded, he his threatfull Gan fewter, and against her fiercels ma Who scone as she him saw approching with so fell rage, her selfe she lightly of To dight, to welcome him well as see as But entertaind him in so rude a wise That to the ground she smote both he man :

Whence neither greatly hasted to ans But on their common harmes together devise.

But Artegall, beholding his mischam New matter added to his former fire: And, eft aventring his steele-headed la Against her rode, full of despiteous in. That nought but spoyle and vengence require: But to himselfe his felonous intent Returning disappointed his desire, Whiles unawares his saddle he forweal,

And found himselfe on ground in great

ment.

Lightly he started up out of that ste And snatching forth his direfull deally Did leape to her, as doth an eger hound Thrust to an Hynd within some covert s Whom without perill he cannot invade With such fell greedines he her assayle. That though she mounted were, yet h made

To give him ground, (so much hi And shun his mightie strokes, gainst w armes avayled.

XIII

ney coursed here and there, it chaunst her wheeling round, behind her crest he her strooke, that thence it glaunst her backe, the which it fairely blest le mischance; ne did it ever rest, er horses hinder parts it fell; ting deepe so deadly it imprest, e it chynd his backe behind the sell. ight on foote her algates did compell:

the lightning brond from riven skie, out by angry Jove in his vengeance, adfull force falles on some steeple hie; ınce, s it all with terrible mischance. o whit dismayd her steed forsooke, ing from her that enchaunted launce,

sword and shield her soone betooke; ewithall at him right furiously she

ooke.

asly she strooke in her first heat. ith long fight on foot he breathlesse him forced backward to retreat, l unto her weapon way to pas: ging rigour neither steele nor bras y, but to the tender flesh it went, r'd the purple bloud forth on the is mayle yriv'd, and plates yrent, I his bodie bare unto the cruell dent.

h, when as he saw her hastie heat d panting breath begin to fayle, igh long sufferance growing now re great, is strength, and gan her fresh assayle, huge strokes as thicke as showre of Throwes forth upon the rivage round about him ng dreadfully at every part, hought her soule to disentravle. hand! and thrise more cruell hart. ast such wrecke on her to whom thou

XVII

rest art!

ron courage ever could endure such outrage on so faire a creature; is madnesse thinke with hands im-: so goodly workmanship of nature.

The maker selfe resembling in her feature! Certes some hellish furie or some feend This mischiefe framd for their first loves de feature To bath their hands in bloud of dearest freend,

Thereby to make their loves beginning their lives end.

XVIII

Thus long they trac'd and traverst to and fro, Sometimes pursewing, and sometimes pursewed, Still as advantage they espyde thereto: But toward th' end Sir Arthegall renewed His strength still more, but she still more decrewed.

At last his lucklesse hand he heav'd on hie, ittring downe, it on the church doth Having his forces all in one accrewed, And therewith stroke at her so hideouslie, That seemed nought but death mote be her destinie.

The wicked stroke upon her helmet chaunst, And with the force, whiche in it selfe it bore, Her ventayle shard away, and thence forth glaunst

Adowne in vaine, ne harm'd her any more. With that her angels face, unseene afore, Like to the ruddie morne appeard in sight, Deawed with silver drops through sweating

But somewhat redder then beseem'd aright, Through toylesome heate and labour of her weary fight.

And round about the same her yellow heare, Having through stirring loosd their wonted band,

Like to a golden border did appeare, Framed in goldsmithes forge with cunning hand:

Yet goldsmithes cunning could not understand To frame such subtile wire, so shinie cleare; For it did glister like the golden sand, The which Pactolus with his waters shere

nere.

And as his hand he up againe did reare, Thinking to worke on her his utmost wracke, His powrelesse arme, benumbd with secret feare,

From his revengefull purpose shronke abacke, And cruell sword out of his fingers slacke Fell downe to ground; as if the steele had sence,

And felt some ruth or sence his hand did lacke, Or both of them did thinke obedience To doe to so divine a beauties excellence.

XXII

And he himselfe, long gazing thereupon, At last fell humbly downe upon his knee, And of his wonder made religion, Weening some heavenly goddesse he did see, Or else unweeting what it else might bee; And pardou her besought his errour frayle, That had done outrage in so high degree: Whilest trembling horrour did his sense assayle, And made ech member quake, and manly hart to quayle.

XXIII

Nathelesse she, full of wrath for that late stroke,

All that long while upheld her wrathfull hand, With fell intent on him to bene ywroke; And, looking sterne, still over him did stand Threatning to strike unlesse he would withstand:

And bad him rise, or surely he should die. But, die or live, for nought he would upstand, But her of pardon prayd more earnestlie, Or wreake on him her will for so great injurie.

XXIV

Which when as Scudamour, who now abrayd,

Beheld, whereas he stood not farre aside, He was therewith right wondrously dismayd; And drawing nigh, when as he plaine des-

That peerelesse paterne of Dame Natures pride And heavenly image of perfection, He blest himselfe as one sore terrifide: and, turning feare to faint devotion, Did worship her as some celestiall vision.

XXV

But Glauce, seeing all that chaunced there, Well weeting how their errour to assoyle, Full glad of so good end, to them drew nere, And her salewd with seemely bel-accoyle, Joyous to see her safe after long toyle. Then her besought, as she to her was deare, To graunt unto those warriours truce a whyle; Which yeelded, they their bevers up did reare, And shew'd themselves to her such as indeed they were.

XXVI

When Britomart with sharpe avizefull eye Beheld the lovely face of Artegall Tempred with sternesse and stont majestie, She gan eftsoones it to her mind to call To be the same which in her fathers hall Long since in that enchaunted glasse she saw; Therewith her wrathfull courage gan appall,

And haughtie spirits merkel That her enhaunced hand sh withdraw.

Yet she it forst to have again As fayning choier which was But ever when his visage she Her hand fell downe, and wor The wrathfull weapon gains bold:

But, when in vaine to fight sl She arm'd her tongue, and th scold :

Nathlesse her tongue not to h But brought forth speeches would have missayd.

But Scudamour, now woxen That all his gealous feare he And how that Hag his love a With breach of faith and loya The which long time his p wound,

Him thus bespake: 'Certes, ! I joy to see you lout so low or And now become to live a La That whylome in your minde them all.'

XXIX

Soone as she heard the name Her hart did leape, and all

tremble,
For sudden joy and secret fea
And all her vitall powres, wit To succour it, themselves gan That by the swift recourse of Right plaine appeard, though emble.

And fayned still her former at Thinking to hide the depth by flood.

XXX

When Glauce thus gan wise Ye gentle Knights, whom for To be spectators of this uncou Which secret fate hath in this Against the course of kind, ne Ne thenceforth feare the thing Hath troubled both your m thought,

Fearing least she your loves a Feared in vaine, sith meane wants theretoo.

'And you, Sir Artegall, the Henceforth may not disdaine th



THE FAERIE QUEENE.

ed you anew in second fight: they have conquerd sea and land, t selfe, that nought may them and,

be rebellious unto love, we of knighthood, and the band is derived from above, [move, knit with vertue, never will re-

XXXII

faire Ladie knight, my dearest

our of your wrathfull will, re better turn'd to other flame; our grace; but so that he fulfill which ye shall to him empart: ven must passe by sorrowes hell, ally blushed Britomart, close smyling joy'd in secret hart.

XXXIII

not make love so suddenly, affection of her hart to draw ther so quite contrary: odest countenance he saw tve, and full of princely aw, nging fancie did refraine, oughts to lawfull bounds with-

passion grew more fierce and oborne steede whom strong hand restraine.

XXXIV

our, whose hart twixt doubtfull

ope hung all this while suspence, is Amoret to heare I newes and sure intelligence, aske: 'But, Sir, without offence st you tydings of my love, sith you her freed fro thence ptived long, great wees did prove: e left I may her seeke, as doth 'L'

XXXV

is Britomart: 'Certes, Sir knight,
r become, or whether reft,
o you aread a right:
t time I from enchaunters theft
which ye her all hopelesse left,
d from perill and from feare,
e from villenie her kept:
there wight to me more deare
unto whom I more true love did

XXXVI

'Till on a day, as through a desert wyld
We travelled, both wearie of the way
We did alight, and sate in shadow myld,
Where fearelesse I to sleepe me downe did lay:
But when as I did out of sleepe abray,
I found her not where I her left whyleare,
But thought she wandred was, or gone astray:
I cal'd her loud, I sought her farre and neare,
But no where could her find, nor tydiags of her
heare.'

XXXVII

When Scudamour those heavie tydings heard, His hart was thrild with point of deadly feare, Ne in his face or bloud or life appeard;. But senselesse stood, like to a mazed steare. That yet of mortall stroke the stound doth beare, [mayd Till Glauce thus: 'Faire Sir, be nought dis-With needlesse dread, till certaintie ye heare; For yet she may be safe though somewhat

strayd: [affrayd.' Its best to hope the best, though of the worst

xxxviii

Nathlesse he hardly of her chearefull speech Did comfort take, or in his troubled sight Shew'd change of better cheare: so sore a breach

[fainc, That sudden newes had made into his spright, ce and Till Britomart him fairely thus behight:
'Great cause of sorrow certes, Sir, ye have;
But comfort take; for, by this heavens light,
I vow you dead or living not to leave, [reave.'
Till I her find, and wreake on him that did her

XIXXX

Therewith he rested, and well pleased was: So, peace being confirm'd amongst them all, They tooke their steeds, and forward thence did pas

Unto some resting place, which mote befall, All being guided by Sir Artegall: Where goodly solace was unto them made, And dayly feasting both in bowre and hall, Untill that they their wounds well healed had, And wearie limmes recur'd after late usage bad.

XI.

In all which time Sir Artegall made way
Unto the love of noble Britomart,
And with meeke service and much suit did lay
Continuall siege unto her gentle hart; [dart,
Which, being whylome launcht with lovely
More eath was new impression to receive;
How ever she her paynd with womanish art
To hide her wound, that none might it perceive:
Vaine is the art that seekes it selfe forto deceive

So well he woo'd her, and so well he wrought

With faire entreatie and sweet blandishment, That at the length unto a bay he brought her, So as she to his speeches was content At last, through many vowes which forth he
And many othes, she yeelded her consent
To be his love, and take him for her Lord,

Till they with mariage meet might finish that

accord.

The, when they had long time there taken rest, Sir Artegall, who all this while was bound Upon an hard adventure yet in quest, Fit time for him thence to depart it found, To follow that which he did long propound, And nato her his congee came to take; But her therewith full sore displeasd he found, And loth to leave her late betrothed make, Her dearest love full loth so shortly to forsake,

XLIII

Yet he with strong perswasions her asswaged, And wonne her will to suffer him depart ; For which his faith with her he fast engaged, And thousand vowes from bottome of his hart, That, all so soone as he by wit or art Could that atchieve whereto he did aspire, He unto her would speedily revert: No longer space thereto he did desire, [expire. But till the horned moone three courses did

XLIV

With which she for the present was appeased, And yeelded leave, how ever malcontent She inly were and in her mind displeased. So, early in the morrow next, he went

Forth on his way to which he was y Ne wight him to attend, or way to g As whylome was the custome ancie Mongat Knights when on adventure Save that she algates him a while acc

And by the way she sundry purposed of this or that, the time for to delay, And of the perils whereto he was bout The feare whereof seem'd much her to But all she did was but to weare out. Full oftentimes she leave of him did And eft againe deviz'd some what to Which she forgot, whereby excuse to So loth she was his companie for to for

At last, when all her speeches she ha And new occasion fayld her more to fi She left him to his fortunes governm And backe returned with right heavie To Scudamour, whom she had left be With whom she went to seeke faire A Her second care, though in another a For vertues onely sake, which doth b True love and faithfull friendship. did set.

XLVII

Backe to that desert forrest they rel Where sorie Britomart had lost her la There they her sought, and every quired

Where they might tydings get of her Yet found they none. But by what hap Or hard misfortune she was thence co And stolne away from her beloved to Were long to tell; therefore, I here w Untill another tyde that I it finish to

CANTO VII.

Amoret rapt by greedie lust
Belphebe saves from dread:
The Squire her loves; and, being blam'd,
His dayes in dole doth lead.

GREAT God of love, that with thy cruelldarts Doest conquer greatest conquerors on ground, And setst thy kingdome in the captive harts Of Kings and Keasars to thy service bound; What glorie, or what guerdon hast thou found In feeble Ladies tyranning so sore, And adding anguish to the bitter wound

With which their lives thou lanche afore,

By heaping stormes of trouble on the

So whylome didst thou to faire Flor And so and so to noble Britomart: o doest thou now to her of whom I The lovely Amoret, whose gentle has



THE FAERIE OUEENE.

: with sorow and with smart. sts and in deserts wide id Tygers taking heavie part, fort and withouten guide, heare the perils which she tride

ie with that brave Britonesse urneyment for beauties prise, ong; that now for wearinesse. y and warlike exercise i forest ryding did devise rest their wearie limbs awhile. leepe the eye-lids did surprise after long tedious toyle, ssed paines in quiet rest assoyle

ire Amoret, of nought affeard, 1 the wood, for pleasure or for

y behind her backe she heard rth out of the thickest weed, acke could turne to taken heed, her snatched up from ground: t heard not the shrilling sound, through weary travel she lay sound.

t a wilde and salvage man; n, but onely like in shape, ture higher by a span: e with haire, that could awhape; and his wide mouth did gape at teeth, like to a tusked Bore: l on ravin and on rap asts; and fed on fleshly gore, reof yet stain'd his bloudy lips

ip was not like man nor beast, deepe poke, downe hanging low, ont the relickes of his feast /le, which he had spard, to stow: s huge great nose did grow, empurpled all with bloud; th sides two wide long eares stood, owne to his waste when up he en th' eares of Elephants by ood.

with a wreath of yvie greene ne other garment wore, re was like a garment seene; d a tall young oake he bore,

Whose knottie snags were sharpned all afore, And beath'd in fire for steele to be in sted. But whence he was, or of what wombe ybore, Of beasts, or of the earth, I have not red, But certes was with milke of Wolves and Tygres fed.

VIII

This ugly creature in his armes her snatcht, And through the forrest bore her quite away, With briers and bushes all to-rent and scratcht; Ne care he had, ne pittie of the pray, Which many a knight had sought so many a He stayed not, but in his armes her bearing Ran, till he came to th' end of all his way Unto his cave farre from all peoples hearing, And there he threw her in, nought feeling, ne nought fearing.

For she, deare Ladie, all the way was dead, Whilest he in armes her bore; but, when she

Her selfe downe soust, she waked out of dread Streight into griefe, that her deare hart nigh And eft gan into tender teares to melt. [swelt, Then, when she lookt about, and nothing found But darknesse and dread horrour where she She almost fell againe into a swound, [dwelt, Ne wist whether above she were or under ground.

With that she heard some one close by her side Sighing and sobbing sore, as if the paine Her tender hart in peeces would divide: Which she long listning, softly askt againe What mister wight it was that so did plaine? To whom thus aunswer'd was: 'Ah, wretched wight!

That seekes to know anothers griefe in vaine, Unweeting of thine owne like haplesse plight: Selfe to forget to mind another is over-sight.

'Aye me!' (said she) 'where am I, or with whom? Emong the living, or emong the dead? What shall of me, unhappy maid, become? Shall death be th' end, or ought else worse,

aread? 'Unhappy mayd' (then answer'd she), 'whose dread

Untride is lesse then when thou shalt it try: Death is to him, that wretched life doth lead, Both grace and gaine; but he in hell doth lie, That lives a loathed life, and wishing cannot

XII

'This dismall day both thee a caytive made, And vassall to the vilest wretch alive, Whose cursed usage and ungodly trade The beavens abhorre, and into darkenesse drive; For on the spoile of women he doth live. Whose bodies chast, when ever in his powre He may them catch unable to gainestrive, He with his shamefull lust doth first deflowre, And afterwardes themselves doth cruelly devoure.

XIII

'Now twenty daies, by which the sonnes of [sheene, Divide their works, have past through beven Since I was brought into this dolefull den; During which space these sory eies have seen Seaven women by him slaine, and eaten clene: The shame of men, and plague of woman And now no more for him but I alone. Who trussing me, as Eagle doth his pre-And this old woman, here remaining beene, Till thou cam'st hither to augment our mone; And of us three to morrow he will sure cate one.

'Ah, dreadfull tidings which thou doest declare, (Quothshe) 'of all that ever hath bene knowen! But read to me, by what devise or wit Hast thou in all this time, from him unknown. Full many great calamities and rare This feeble brest endured hath, but none Equall to this, where ever I have gone. But what are you, whom like unlucky lot Hath linckt with me in the same chaine attone? I have so done, as she to me hath shows 'To tell' (quoth she) 'that what ye see, needs For, ever when he burnt in lustfull for A wofull wretched maid, of God and man for-

But what I was it irkes me to reherse; Daughter unto a Lord of high degree; That joyd in happy peace, till fates perverse With guilefull love did secretly agree To overthrow my state and dignitie. It was my lot to love a gentle swaine, Yet was he but a Squire of low degree Yet was he meet, unless mine eye did faine, By any Ladies side for Leman to have laine,

' But for his meannesse and disparagement, My Sire, who me too dearely well did love, Unto my choise by no meanes would assent, But often did my folly fowle reprove: Yet nothing could my fixed mind remove, But, whether willed or nilled friend or foe, I me resolv'd the utmost end to prove; And, rather then my love abandon so, Both sire and friends and all for ever to forgo.

XVII

'Thenceforth I sought by secret means worke Time to my will, and from his wrathful to To hide the intent which in my heart did by Till I thereto had all things ready digit. So on a day, unweeting unto wight, I with that Squire agreede away to fit, And in a privy place, betwirt us light.
Within a grove appointed him to meets.
To which I boldly came upon my feeling

'But ah! unhappy houre me thirher be-For in that place where I him thought to There was I found, contrary to my though Of this accursed t arle of hellish kind, Me hether brought with him as swift as a Where yet untouched till this present day I rest his wretched thrall, the sad Amylia

'Ah, sad Æmylia!' (then sayd Amora) Thine honor sav'd, though into the throwne ?' 'Through helpe' (quoth she) of this call She in my stead supplide his bestiall de

Thus of their evils as they did discourse. And each did other much bewaile and we Loe! where the villaine selfe, their son sourse,

Came to the cave; and rolling thence these Which wont to stop the mouth thereof,

Might issue forth, came rudely rushing it And, spredding over all the flore alone, Gan dight him selfe unto his wonted sim Which ended, then his bloudy banket st beginne.

Which when as fearefull Amoret percei But, like a ghastly Gelt whose wits arere Ran forth in hast with hideous outery, For horrour of his shamefull villany But after her full lightly he upro And her pursu'd as fast as she did flie :

she flies, and farre afore him goes,

XXII

711.]

dge, nor ditch, nor hill, nor dale she aies. leapes them all, like Robucke light, ough the thickest makes her nighest nies; more, when with regardfull sight ing backe espies that griesly wight ng nigh, she gins to mend her pace, es her feare a spur to hast her flight: ft then Myrrh' or Daphne in her race, of the Thracian Nimphes in salvage 886.

XXIII

she fled, and so he follow'd long; ; aide for her on earth appeares, heavens helpe to redresse her wrong, ith pity of her plenteous teares. d Belphebe with her peares, ly Nimphs, and with that lovely boy, ting then the Libbards and the Beares wild woods, as was her wonted joy, h sloth that oft doth noble mindes noy.

XXIV

fell, as oft it fals in chace. 1 of them from other sundred were; same gentle Squire arriv'd in place is same cursed caytive did appeare that faire Lady full of feare: he her quite overtaken had ; he her away with him did beare s arme, as seeming wondrous glad, pide
nis grenning laughter mote farre off With bow in hand and arrowes ready bent, rad.

XXV

lrery sight the gentle Squire espying t to crosse him by the nearest way, that wofull Ladies piteous crying, assailes with all the might he may; not he the lovely spoile downe lay, his craggy club in his right hand him selfe, and saves his gotten pray: it bene right hard him to withstand, he was full light and nimble on the ıd.

XXVI

the villaine used craft in fight; when the Squire his javelin shooke, the Lady forth before him right, 1 her body, as a buckler, broke sance of his intended stroke: chaunst, (as needs it must in fight) he on him was greedy to be wroke,

That any little blow on her did light, the thornes and thickets pricke her Then would be laugh aloud, and gather great delight.

XXVII Which subtill sleight did him encumber much,

And made him oft, when he would strike, forbeare: For hardly could he come the carle to touch, But that he her must hurt, or hazard neare: Yet he his hand so carefully did beare. That at the last he did himselfe attaine. And therein left the pike-head of his speare: A streame of coleblacke bloud thence gusht amaine, bestaine.

That all her silken garments did with bloud

XXVIII

With that he threw her rudely on the flore, And, laying both his hands upon his glave, With dreadfull strokes let drive at him so sore, That forst him flie abacke, himselfe to save: Yet he therewith so felly still did rave. That scarse the Squire his hand could once upreare,

But for advantage ground unto him gave, Tracing and traversing, now here, now there; For bootlesse thing it was to think such blowes to beare.

Whilest thus in battell they embusied were, Belphebe, raunging in that forrest wide, The hideous noise of their huge strokes did

heare And drew thereto, making her care her guide: Whom when that theefe approching nigh es-

He by his former combate would not bide, But fled away with ghastly dreriment, Well knowing her to be his deaths sole instrument.

Whom seeing flie she speedily poursewed With winged feete as nimble as the winde, And ever in her bow she ready shewed The arrow to his deadly marke desynde As when Latonaes daughter, cruell kynde, In vengement of her mothers great disgrace, With fell despight her cruell arrowes tynde Gainst wofull Niobes unhappy race, That all the gods did mone her miserable case.

XXXI

So well she sped her, and so far she ventred, That, ere unto his hellish den he raught. Even as he ready was there to have entred She sent an arrow forth with mighty draught That in the very dore him overcaught, And, in his nape arriving, through it thrild His greedy throte, therewith in two dis-His greedy traught,

That all his vitall spirites thereby spild, And all his hairy brest with gory bloud was

XXXII

Whom when on ground she groveling saw to rowle.

She ran in hast his life to have bereft: But, ere she could him reach, the sinfull sowle Having his carrion corse quite sencelesse left. Was fied to hell, surcharg'd with spoile and theft:

Yet over him she there long gazing stood, And oft admir'd his monstrous shape, and oft His mighty limbs, whilest all with filthy bloud The place there overflowne seemd like a sodaine flood,

XXXIII

Thence forth she past into his dreadfull den, Her mortall arrowes she at him did to Where nought but darkesome drerinesse she found,

Ne creature saw, but hearkned now and then Some litle whispering, and soft groning sound. With that she askt, what ghosts there under

ground Lay hid in horrour of eternall night?

And bad them, if so be they were not bound, To come and shew themselves before the light, Now freed from feare and danger of that dismall wight.

XXXIV

Then forth the sad Æmylia issewed, [feare; Yet trembling every joynt through former And after her the Hag, there with her mewed, A foule and lothsome creature, did appeare, A leman fit for such a lover deare: That mov'd Belphebe her no lesse to hate, Then for to rue the others heavy cheare; Of whom she gan enquire of her estate, Who all to her at large, as hapned, did relate.

XXXV

Thence she them brought toward the place where late

She left the gentle Squire with Amoret: There she him found by that new lovely mate, Who lay the whiles in swoune, full sadly set, From her faire eves wiping the deawy wet
Which softly stild, and kissing them atweene,
And handling soft the hurts which she did get;
Uncomb'd, uncurl'd, and carelesly w
For of that Carle she sorely bruz'd had beene,
That in short time his face they ove Als of his owne rash hand one wound was to And over all his shoulders did dispre be seene.

XXXVI

Which when she saw with sodairs a

Her noble heart with sight thereof w With deepe disdaine and great ind That in her wrath she thought them b

With that selfe arrow which the Carleb Yet held her wrathfull hand from we

But deawing nigh, ere he her well be But turnd her face, and fled away for a

XXXVD

He seeing her depart arose up light. Right sore agrieved at her sharpe w And follow'd fast; but, when he came He durst not nigh approach, but kept if For dread of her displeasures utmost And evermore, when he did grace at And framed speaches fit for his be And forst him backe with fowle dis retreat.

XXXVIII

At last, when long he follow'd had i Yet found no case of griefe nor hope Unto those woods he turned backe a Full of sad anguish and in heavy ca And, finding there fit solitary place For wofull wight, chose out a gloom Where hardly eye mote see bright he For mossy trees, which covered all And sad melancholy: there he his cal

His wonted warlike weapons all be And threw away, with yow to use n Ne thenceforth ever strike in battell Ne ever word to speake to woman u But in that wildernesse, of men forle And of the wicked world forgotten q His hard mishap in dolor to deplore And wast his wretched daies in woh So on him selfe to wreake his follies spight.

And eke his garment, to be thereto He wilfully did cut and shape anew And his faire lockes, that wont with That who he whilome was uneath

VII.]

ne continued in this carefull plight, dly wearing out his youthly yeares, wilfull penury consumed quight, a pined ghost he soone appeares: r food then that wilde forrest beares. : drinke there did he ever tast nning water tempred with his teares, e his weakened body so to wast, of all mens knowledge he was worne : last.

XIII

a day, by fortune as it fell, ie deare Lord Prince Arthure came adventures where he mote heare tell; espide this Cabin far away, [stray, drew, to weet who there did wonne; therein some holy Hermit lay, stray, resort of sinfull people shonne, orching sunne.

XLIII

g there he found this wretched man r his daies in dolour and despaire, rugh long fasting woxen pale and wan, growen with rude and rugged haire; eit his owne dear Squire he were, im knew not, ne aviz'd at all, strange wight, whom he had seene no bere, him gan into speach to fall y much his plight, that liv'd like out-

XIIV

st thrall.

his speach he aunawered no whit, d still mute, as if he had beene dum, of sence did shew, ne common wit, rith griefe and anguishe overcum,

And unto every thing did aunswere mum: And ever, when the Prince unto him spake, He louted lowly, as did him becum, And humble homage did unto him make, Midst sorrow shewing joyous semblance for his sake.

At which his uncouth guise and usage quaint The Prince did wonder much, yet could not

The cause of that his sorrowfull constraint; Yet weend, by secret signes of manlinesse Which close appeard in that rude brutishnesse, That he whilome some gentle swaine had beene, Traind up in feats of armes and knightlinesse; adventures where he mote heare tell; Which he observ'd, by that he him had seene he through the wandring wood did To weld his naked sword, and try the edges keene.

XLVI

And eke by that he saw on every tree, How he the name of one engraven had Which likly was his liefest love to be, From whom he now so sorely was bestad, Which was by him BELPHERE rightly rad. Yet who was that Belphebe he ne wist; Yet saw he often how he wexed glad When he it heard, and how the ground he kist Wherein it written was, and how himselfe he blist.

XLVII

Tho, when he long had marked his demeanor, And saw that all he said and did was vaine, Ne ought mote make him change his wonted tenor,

Ne ought mote ease or mitigate his paine, He left him there in languor to remaine, Till time for him should remedy provide, And him restore to former grace againe: Which, for it is too long here to abide, I will deferre the end untill another tide.

CANTO VIII.

The gentle Squire recovers grace, Sclaunder her guests doth staine : Corflambo chaseth Placidas, And is by Arthure slaine.

id the Wiseman, now prov'dtrue by this this gentle Squire did happen late, displeasure of the mighty is th it selfe more dread and desperate; the the same may calme ne mitigate, the tempest doe thereof delay

And have the sterne remembrance wypt away Of bitter thoughts, which deepe therein infixed lay.

Like as it fell to this unhappy boy, Whose tender heart the faire Belphebe had With one sterne looke so daunted, that no joy Beraunce soft, which rigour can abate, In all his life, which afterwards he lad,

He ever tasted; but with pensunce sad

And pensive sorrow pind and wore away, Ne ever laught, ne once shew'd countenance

glad, But alwaies wept and walled night and day, As blasted bloosme through heat doth languish and decay :

Till on a day, as in his wonted wise His doole he made, there chaunst a turtle Dore To come where he his dolors did devise, That likewise late had lost her dearest love, Which losse her made like passion also prove: Who, seeing his sad plight, her tender heart With deare compassion deeply did emmove, That she gan mone his undeserved smart, And with her dolefull accent beare with him a part.

Shee sitting by him, as on ground he lay, Her mournefull notes full piteously did frame, And thereof made a lamentable lay, So sensibly compyld, that in the same Him seemed oft he heard his owne right name. With that he forth would poure so plenteous teares.

And beat his breast unworthy of such blame, And knocke his head, and rend his rugged heares, [of Beares. Tigres and That could have perst the hearts of

Thus, long this gentle bird to him did use Withouten dread of perill to repaire Unto his wonne, and with her mournefull muse Him to recomfort in his greatest care, That much did ease his mourning and misfare: And every day, for guerdon of her song, He part of his small feast to her would share; That, at the last, of all his woe and wrong Companion she became, and so continued long.

Upon a day as she him sate beside, By chance he certaine miniments forth drew, Which yet with him as relickes did abide Of all the bounty which Belphebe threw On him, whilst goodly grace she him did shew:
Amongst the rest a jewell rich he found,
That was a Ruby of right perfect hew,
Shap'd like a heart yet bleeding of the wound,
And with a litle golden chaine about it bound.

The same he tooke, and with a riband new, In which his Ladies colours were, did bind About the turtles necke, that with the vew Did greatly solace his engrieved mind,

All unawares the bird, when she did fad Her salfe so deckt, her nimble wing a Which sodaine accident him much to And looking after long did mark white

But when as long he looked had in vant. Yet saw her forward still to make ber and His weary eie returnd to him agains. Full of discomfort and disquiet plight That both his juell he had lost so light And eke his deare companion of his car-But that sweet bird departing flee father Through the wide region of the wantil-Untill she came where wouned his Be-faire.

There found she her (as then it did betale Sitting in covert shade of arbors an After late wearie toile which she had tale In salvage chase, to rest as seem'd her salvage chase, to rest as seem'd her salvage that the salvage chase, to rest as seem'd her salvage chase, to rest as se And gan to her her mourofull plaint to me As was her wont, thinking to let her worth the great formenting griefe that for her the second of th Her gentle Squire through her displant pertake.

She, her beholding with attentive co. At length did marke about her purple b That precious juell, which she formed) Had knowne right well, with coloured

Therewith she rose in hast, and her address With ready hand it to have reft away; But the swift bird obayd not her behest. But swarv'd aside, and there againe did a She follow'd her, and thought agains u tos

And ever, when she nigh approcht, the D Would flit a little forward, and then stal Till she drew neare, and then agains we So tempting her still to pursue the pray. And still from her escaping soft away: Till that at length into that forrest wide She drew her far, and led with slow delay. In th' end she her unto that place did as Whereas that wofull man in languor did a

XII

Estsoones she flew unto his fearelesse hi And there a piteous ditty new devir'd, As if she would have made her underst His sorrowes cause, to be of her despired

when she saw in wretched weedes disuiz'd,

ary glib deform'd and meiger face, ost late risen from his grave agryz'd, w him not, but pittied much his case, ht it were in her to doe him any grace.

beholding at her feet downe fell,

the ground on which her sole did tread, the same with water which did well is moist eies, and like two streames rocead; se no word, whereby she might aread lister wight he was, or what he ment: one daunted with her presence dread, ew ruefull lookes unto her sent,

engers of his true meaning and intent.

XIV themore his meaning she ared,

idred much at his so selcouth case; his persons secret seemlyhed end that he had beene some man of lace, nisfortune did his hew deface; ing mov'd with ruth she thus bespake: ofull man, what heavens hard disgrace, h of cruell wight on thee ywrake,

xvven, then none may it redresse or blame,

sake?

his powre we all are subject borne: hfull wight, then fowle rebuke and hame s that have so cruell thee forlorne! brough inward griefe or wilfull scorne t be, then better doe advise: whose daies in wilfull woe are worne, ce of his Creator doth despise, Il not use his gifts for thanklesse nig-

so he heard her say, eftsoones he brake, ine silence which he long had pent, thing inly deepe, her thus bespake : iave they all themselves against me ren, first author of my languishment, my too great felicity, ely with a cruell one consent

I my daies in dolefull misery, o die.

'Ne any but your selfe, O dearest dred,

Hath done this wrong, to wreake on worthlesse wight [bred: high displesure, through misdeeming Your That, when your pleasure is to deeme aright, Be may redresse, and me restore to light! Which sory words her mightie hart did mate With mild regard to see his ruefull plight, That her inburning wrath she gan abate, And him receiv'd againe to former favours

XVIII

state.

In which he long time afterwards did lead An happie life with grace and good accord, Fearlesse of fortunes chaunge or envies dread, And eke all mindlesse of his owne deare Lord The noble Prince, who never heard one word Of tydings what did unto him betide,

Or what good fortune did to him afford;

But through the endlesse world did wander wide, scride. Him seeking evermore, yet no where him de-Till on a day, as through that wood he rode,

He chaunst to come where those two Ladies late, Æmylia and Amoret, abode, Both in full sad and sorrowfull estate: The one right feeble through the evill rate -disliked life, doth thee thus wretched Of food which in her duresse she had found; The other almost dead and desperate

Through her late hurts, and through that hap-lesse wound With which the Squire, in her defence, her sore astound.

Whom when the Prince beheld, he gan to rew

The evill case in which those Ladies lay; But most was moved at the piteous vew, Of Amoret, so neare unto decay, That her great daunger did him much dismay. Eftsoones that pretious liquour forth he drew,

Which he in store about him kept alway, And with few drops thereof did softly dew Her wounds, that unto strength restor'd her

soone anew. XXI

Tho, when they both recovered were right well, He gan of them inquire, what evill guide Them thether brought, and how their harmes befell? To whom they told all that did them betide,

And how from thraldome vile they were untide, ()f that same wicked Carle, by Virgins hand ke me loath this life, still longing for Whose bloudie corse they shew'd him there beside,

And eke his cave in which they both were bond: And breathed forth with blast THE FAERIE QUEENE And eke his cave in which they both were bond: And breathed forth with black at which he wondred much when all those Which passing through the san the hart,

And wound the soule it selfs with the witness of

And evermore me greatly and market To know what Virgin did them thence unbind, For, like the stings of aspes t And oft of them did earnestly inquire, Where was her won, and how he more her find. Her spightfull words alld pricks as

Here was her won, and now he more her hind. He could out-learne, he them from ground did And on his warlike beast them both did beare. And on his warner beast them both did beare, that neede, that answers not to all Himselfe by them on foot to succour them Bad them not looke for better energy from forms.

So when that forrest they had passed well, A litle cotage farre away they spide, To which they drew ere night upon them fell; And entring in found none therein abide, But one old woman sitting there beside Upon the ground in ragged rude attyre, With fithy lockes about her scattered wide, Gnawing her navies for felmesse and for yre-And there out sucking venime to her parts en-

A foule and loathly creature sure in sight, And in conditions to be loath'd no lesse: For she was stuft with rancour and despight Up to the throat, that oft with bitternesse It forth would breake, and gush in great exces Pouring out streames of poyson and of gall Pouring out streames of poyson and of gall Gainst all that truth or vertue doe professe; Whom she with leasings lewdly did miscall And wickedly backbite; Her name men

Her nature is all goodnesse to abuse nd causelesse crimes continually to frame, ith which she guiltlesse persons may accuse, d steale away the crowne of their good name: ever Knight so bold, ne ever Dame chast and loyall liv'd, but she would strive b forged cause them falsely to defame; she with blame would blot, and of due

And eke the Dove sate by the Faulcon

Such was that Hag, unmeet to

But neede, that answers not to all I And eke that age despysed nices Enur'd to hardnesse and to home Which them to warlike discipline And manly limbs endur'd with little Against all hard mishaps and forta

Then all that evening (welcommed will And chearelesse hunger) they together Yet found no fault, but that the Hag in And rayle at them with grudgefull dis For lodging there without her owne co Yet they endured all with patience mile And unto rest themselves all onely less Regardlesse of that queane so have and un To be unjustly blamd, and bitterly recib

Here, well I weene, when as these rine With misregard, that some rash-witid with misregard, that some rash-witid will highly be misdeeme too by the sound of the A these gentle Ladies will misde one in For thus conversing with this noble kall from the sound of dayes such temperance is referred to the sound of the sound of

But antique age, yet in the infanci-Or time, did live then like an innecess In simple truth and blamelesse chastis Ne then of guile had made experiment But, void of vile and treacherous intest Held vertue for it selfe in soversine words were not, as common words are From all forbidden things his liking to the street of the street

feared fraud or tort, ecuritie abide, of the stronger pride: [old, orld woxe old, it woxe warre 1t) and, having shortly tride it, in wickednesse woxe bold,

sinnes the secrets to unfold. XXXII shich was made to represent

ours owne resemblance bright, wlesse lust was lent, aite of bestiall delight: foule, and foule grew faire in

[man, wont to vanquish God and assall of the victors might; lorious flowre wex dead and

len downe of all that over-ran.

XXXIII

so utterly decayd, nereof doth scarse remaine, ts, preserv'd through heavenly

t doe hap to sprout againe, drops of bountie Soveraine, it goodly glorious flowre pro-

[straine, auncient stocke of Princes emnant of that royall breed, and at first was sure of heavenly

lay discovered heavens face

XXXIV

with darknes overdight,
v gan from their eye-lids chace
mour of the dampish night,
lves unto their journey dight.
de, and forward softly paced,
ew had bene an uncouth sight,
the Prince on footpace traced,
h on horse, together fast em-

thence departed were afore, Hag, the slaunder of her sexe, ast, and them reviled sore, sefe, them whores; that much

thereto she did annexe I facts, such as they never ment, adies much asham'd did wexe: he pursue her lewd intent, ag'd, till she had all her poyson

XXXVI

At last, when they were passed out of sight, Yet she did not her spightfull speach forbeare, But after them did barke, and still backbite, Though there were none her hatefull words to heare. Like as a curre doth felly bite and teare

The stone which passed straunger at him threw:
So she, them seeing past the reach of eare,
Against the stones and trees did rayle anew,
Till she had duld the sting which in her tongs end grew.

XXXVII

They passing forth kept on their readic way, With easie steps so soft as foot could stryde, Both for great feeblesse, which did off assay Faire Amoret that scarcely she could ryde, And eke through heavie armes which sore annoyd
The Prince on foot, not wonted so to fare;

Whose steadie hand was faine his steede to guyde,
And all the way from trotting hard to spare;
So was his toyle the more, the more that was his care.

XXXVIII

At length they spide where towards them with speed
A Squire came gallopping, as he would flie,
Bearing a litle Dwarfe before his steed,
That all the way full loud for aide did crie,
That seem'd his shrikes would rend the brasen

skie:
Whom after did a mightie man pursew,
Ryding upon a Dromedare on hie,
Of stature huge, and horrible of hew,
That would have maz'd a man his dreadfull
face to yew:

XXXIX

For from his fearefull eyes two fierie beames, More sharpe then points of needles, did proceede, Shooting forth farre away two flaming streames, Full of sad powre, that poysnous bale did breede

To all that on him lookt without good heed, And secretly his enemies did slay:

From powrefull eyes close venim doth convay Into the lookers hart, and killeth farre away.

Like as the Basiliske, of serpents seede,

He all the way did rage at that same Squire, And after him full many threatnings threw, With curses vaine in his avengefull ire; But none of them (so fast away he flow)

Him overtooke before he came in vew: Where when he saw the Prince in armour bright,

He cald to him aloud his case to rew, And rescue bim, through succour of his might, From that his cruell foe that him pursewd in

sight.

XII

Estsoones the Prince tooke downe those Ladies twaine

From loftic steede, and mounting in their stead Came to that Squire, yet trembling every value; Of whom he gan enquire his cause of dread: Who as he gan the same to him aread, Loe! hard behind his backe his foe was prest, With dreadfull weapon aymed at his head, That unto death had doen him unredrest, Had not the noble Prince his readic stroke represt:

Who, thrusting boldly twixt him and the blow, The burden of the deadly brunt did beare Upon his shield, which lightly he did throw Over his head before the harme came neare: Nathlesse it fell with so despiteous dreare And heavie sway, that hard unto his crowne The shield it drove, and did the covering

reare : downe Therewith both Squire and dwarfe did tomble Unto the earth, and lay long while in senselesse swowne.

XLIII

Whereat the Prince full wrath his strong right hand

In full avengement heaved up on hie, And stroke the Pagan with his steely brand So sore, that to his saddle-bow thereby He bowed low, and so a while did lie: And, sure, had not his massie yron mace Betwixt him and his hurt bene happily, It would have cleft him to the girding place; Yet, as it was, it did astonish him long space.

XLIV

But, when he to himselfe returnd againe, All full of rage he gan to curse and sweare, And vow by Mahoune that he should be slaine With that his murdrous mace be up did reare, That seemed nought the souse thereof could beare.

And therewith smote at him with all his might: But, ere that it to him approched neare, The royall child with readic quicke foresight Did shun the proofe thereof, and it avoyded Though namelesse there his bodic light.

XLV

But, ere his hand he could recur To ward his bodie from the balef He smote at him with all his migh So furiously that, ere he wist, he His head before him tombling on The whiles his balding tongue di pheme

And curse his God that did him so The whiles his life ran foorth in blo His soule descended downe into reame.

Which when that Squire beheld, glad

To see his foe breath out his sprig' But that same dwarfe right sorie

And howld aloud to see his Lord th And rent his haire and scratcht h paine.

Then gan the Prince at leasure to Of all the accident there happed pl And what he was whose eves did All which was thus to him declar Squire.

XLVII

This mightie man,' (quoth he) ' have slaine,

Of an huge Geauntesse whylome And by his strength rule to himsel Of many Nations into thraldome le And mightie kingdomes of his force Whom yet he conquer'd not by blo Ne hostes of men with banners bro But by the powre of his infectious With which he killed all that came might.

XLVIII

'Ne was he ever vanquished afore But ever vanquisht all with whom Ne was there man so strong, but bore:

Ne woman yet so faire, but he her Unto his bay, and captived her tho For most of strength and beautie h Was spoyle to make, and wast nought,

By casting secret flakes of lustfull From his false eyes into their harts entire.

he left one daughter that is hight Pœana, who seemes outwardly s ever yet saw living eie; her vertue like her beautie bright. as faire as any under skie: she given is to vaine delight, too loose of life, and eke of love too

ht t fell, there was a gentle Squire l a Ladie of high parentage; is meane degree might not aspire so high, her friends with counsell her from such a disparage : sage vhose hart to love was wholly lent. hands could not redeeme her gage, ly following her first intent, with him to wend, gainst all her ands consent.

when he according did repaire, nishap and disaventrous case nst: instead of his Æmylia faire, its sonne, that lies there on the laire se heape, him unawares there caught; smayd through mercilesse despaire hed thrall unto his dongeon brought remaines, of all unsuccour'd and ought.

ants daughter came upon a day prison, in her joyous glee, e thrals which there in bondage lay : the rest she chaunced there to see y swaine, the Squire of low degree; she did her liking lightly cast, 1 him her paramour to bee: to day she woo'd and prayd him fast, s love him promist libertie at last.

LHI igh affide unto a former love. his faith he firmely ment to hold, not how thence he mote remove it meanes which fortune did unfold, ted love, but with affection cold, r grace his libertie to get: m still detaines in captive hold, ast if she should him freely set, her shortly leave, and former love

such favour she to him hath hight

And walke about her gardens of delight, Having a keeper still with him in place; Having a Resper still with him in place;
Which keeper is this Dwarfe, her dearling base,
To whom the keyes of every prison dore
By her committed be, of speciall grace, And at his will may whom he list restore, And whom he list reserve to be afflicted more.

LV 'Whereof when tydings came unto mine eare, Full inly sorie, for the fervent zeale Which I to him as to my soule did beare I thether went; where I did long conceale My selfe, till that the Dwarfe did me reveale, And told his Dame her Squire of low degree Did secretly out of her prison steale; For me he did mistake that Squire to bee, For never two so like did living creature see.

'Then was I taken and before her brought, t themselves they pointed time and Who, through the likenesse of my outward Being likewise beguiled in her thought, [hew, Gan blame me much for being so untrew To seeke by flight her fellowship t'eschew, That lov'd me deare, as dearest thing alive. Thence she commaunded me to prison new: Whereof I glad did not gaine say nor strive, But suffred that same Dwarfe me to her dongeon drive.

'There did I finde mine onely faithfull frend In heavy plight and sad perplexitie; Whereof I sorie, yet myselfe did bend Him to recomfort with my companie, But him the more agreev'd I found thereby: For all his joy, he said, in that distresse Was mine and his Æmylias libertie. Æmylia well he lov'd, as I mote ghesse, Yet greater love to me then her he did professe.

'But I with better reason him aviz'd, And shew'd him how, through error and misthought

Of our like persons, eath to be disguiz'd, Or his exchange or freedom might be wrought. Whereto full loth was he, ne would for ought Consent that I, who stood all fearelesse free, Should wilfully be into thraldome brought, Till fortune did perforce it so decree:

Yet, over-ruld at last, he did to me agree.

'The morrow next, about the wonted howre, The Dwarfe cald at the doore of Amyas To come forthwith unto his Ladies bowre: rest, that he sometimes may space | Insteed of whom forth came I, Placidas.

And undiscerned forth with him did pas. There with great joyance and with gladsome Of faire Pounn I received was, [glee And oft imbrast, as if that I were hee, And with kind words accoyd, vowing great love to mee.

LX

'Which I, that was not bent to former love As was my friend that had her long refus'd. Did well accept, as well it did behove, And to the present neede it wisely usd. My former hardnesse first I faire excusd; And after promist large amends to make. With such smooth termes her error I abusd To my friends good more then for mine owne anke.

For whose sole libertie I love and life did stake,

'Thenceforth I found more favour at her hand, That to her Dwarfe, which had me in his charge,

She bad to lighten my too heavie band, And graunt more scope to me to walke at large. So on a day, as by the flowrie marge Of a fresh streame I with that Elfe did play, Finding no meanes how I might us enlarge, But if that Dwarfe I could with me convay, I lightly snatcht him up and with me bore away.

'Thereat he shrickt aloud, that with his cry The Tyrant selfe came forth with yelling bray,

And me pursew'd; but not Forgoe the purchase of my But have perforce him heth Thus as they talked, loe! w Those Ludies two, yet don may, In presence came, desirous t

Tydings of all which there land.

LXIII

Where soone as sad Æmyl Her captive lovers friend, y All mindlesse of her wonte She to him ran, and him wi Enfolding, said; 'And live 'He lives,' (quoth he) 'and 'Then lesse,' (said she)

With which my weaker patie But what mishap thus long removes?

Then gan he all this storie And tell the course of his ca That her deare hart full de-And sigh full sore to heare In which so long he mercile Then, after many teares an She deare besought the Pri Who thereto did with read And well perform'd; as sh

CANTO IX.

The Squire of low degree, releast, Æmylia takes to wife: Britomart fightes with many Knights; Prince Arthur stints their strife,

HARD is the doubt, and difficult to deeme, When all three kinds of love together meet And doe dispart the hart with powre extreme, Whether shall weigh the balance downe; to weet,

The deare affection unto kindred sweet, Or raging fire of love to womankind, Or zeale of friends combynd with vertues meet: But of them all the band of vertuous mind, Me seemes, the gentle hart should most as-sured bind.

For naturall affection soone doth cesse, And quenched is with Cupids greater flame: But faithfull friendship dot!

presse And them with maystring dis Through thoughts aspyring For as the soule doth rule t And all the service of the be So love of soule doth love of No lesse then perfect gold meanest brasse,

All which who list by trys Shall in this storie find appr In which these Squires true did sway Then either care of parents of ove of fairest Ladie could constraine: though Pœana were as faire as morne did this trustic squire with proud disdaine his friends sake her offred favours scorne, she her selfe her syre of whom she was

wborne.

w, after that Prince Arthur graunted had celd strong succour to that gentle swayne, now long time had lyen in prison sad; ran advise how best he mote darrayne enterprize for greatest glories gayne.
headlesse tyrants tronke he reard from

ground, , having ympt the head to it agayne, n his usuall beast it firmely bound, made it so to ride as it alive was found.

an did he take that chaced Squire, and layd me the ryder, as he captive were, [ayd, made his Dwarfe, though with unwilling raide the beast that did his maister beare, to his castle they approched neare; [ward, em when the watch, that kept continual] comming home, all voide of doubtfull feare, running downe, the gate to him unbard; en straight the Prince ensuing in together far'd.

fare did he find in her delitious boure faire Pœana playing on a Rote layning of her cruell l'aramoure, singing all her sorrow to the note, the had learned readily by rote;
twith the sweetnesse of her rare delight Prince halfe rapt began on her to dote; etter him bethinking of the right, er unwares attacht, and captive held by might.

mce being forth produc'd, when she perceived rne deare sire, she cald to him for aide; hen of him no aunswere she received, w him sencelesse by the Squire upstaide, sened well that then she was betraide: gan she loudly cry, and weepe, and waile,

t same Squire of treason to upbraide; a vaine: her plaints might not prevaile, there was to reskue her, ne none to baile.

tooke he that same Dwarfe, and him ompeld unto him the prison dore,

And forth to bring those thrals which there he held.

Thence forth were brought to him above a score Of Knights and Squires to him unknowne afore: All which he did from bitter bondage free, And unto former liberty restore,

Amongst the rest that Squire of low degree Came forth full weake and wan, not like him selfe to bee,

Whom soone as faire Æmylia beheld And Placidas, they both unto him ran And him embracing fast betwixt them held, Striving to comfort him all that they can, And kissing oft his visage pale and wan: That faire Posana, them beholding both, Gan both envy, and bitterly to ban Through jealous passion weeping inly wroth, To see the sight perforce that both her eyes

But when awhile they had together beene, And diversly conferred of their case, [see seene She though full oft she both of them had

were loth.

Asunder, yet not ever in one place, Began to doubt, when she them saw embrace, Which was the captive Squire she lov'd so deare,

Deceived through great likenesse of their face: For they so like in person did appeare, That she uneath discerned whether whether weare.

XI

And eke the Prince, when as he them avized, Their like resemblaunce much admired there. And mazd how nature had so well disguized Her worke, and counterfet her selfe so nere, As if that by one patterne, seene somewhere, She had them made a paragone to be, Or whether it through skill or errour were,

Thus gazing long at them much wondred he: So did the other Knights and Squires which them did see.

Then gan they ransacke that same Castle strong, In which he found great store of hoorded threa-The which that tyrant gathered had by wrong And tortious powre, without respect or mea-

Sure: Upon all which the Briton Prince made seasure, And afterwards continu'd there a while To rest him selfe, and solace in soft pleasure Those weaker Ladies after weary toile; To whom he did divide part of his purchast

т2

spoile.

XIII

And, for more joy, that captive Lady faire, The faire Posna, he enlarged free, And by the rest did set in sumptuous chaire To feast and frollicke; nathemore would she Shew gladsome countenaunce nor pleasaunt glee;

But grieved was for losse both of her sire, And eke of Lordship with both land and fee: But most she touched was with griefe entire. For losse of her new love, the hope of her desire.

XIV

But her the Prince, through his well wonted

To better termes of myldnesse did entreat From that fowle rudenesse which did her deface;

And that same bitter corsive, which did eat Her tender heart and made refraine from meat, He with good thewes and speaches well applyde

Did mollifie, and calme her raging heat : For though she were most faire, and goodly

dyde, Yet she it all did mar with cruelty and pride,

XV

And, for to shut up all in friendly love, Sith love was first the ground of all her griefe,

That trusty Squire he wisely well did move
Not to despise that dame which lov'd him liefe,
Till he had made of her some better priefe;
But to accept her to his wedded wife;
Thereto he offred for to make him chiefe
Of all her land and lordship during life.
He yeelded, and her tooke; so stinted all their
strife.

XVI

From that day forth in peace and joyous blis

They liv'd together long without debate;
Ne private jarre, ne spite of enemis,
Could shake the safe assuraunce of their state:
And she, whom Nature did so faire create
That she mote match the fairest of her daies,
Yet with lewd loves and lust intemperate
Had it defaste, thenceforth reformd her waies,
That all men much admyrde her change, and
spake her praise.

XVII

Thus when the Prince had perfectly compylde, [rest, These paires of friends in peace and setled Him selfe, whose minde did travell as with clivide

Of his old love conceaved in secret Resolved to pursue his former que And, taking leave of all, with him Faire Amoret, whom Fortune by Had left in his protection whilean Exchanged out of one into anothe

XVIII

Feare of her safety did her not es For well she wist now in a might Her person, late in perill, did rem Who able was all danagers to will But now in feare of shame she me Seeing her selfe all sely succourle Left in the victors powre, like va Whose will her weakenesse could

In case his burning lust should

XIX

But cause of feare, sure, had she Of him, who goodly learned had a The course of loose affection to fo Ard lawlesse lust to rule with res That all the while he by his side She was as safe as in a Sanctuary Thus many miles they two toget To seeke their loves dispersed diw Yet neither showed to other their he

XX

At length they came whereas Knights

They saw together skirmishing, a Sixe they were all, all full of fell But foure of them the battell best That which of them was best deemed,

These foure were they from whom a By Braggadochio lately was rele To weet, sterne Druon, and lewd Love-lavish Blandamour, and lust

XXI

Druons delight was all in single And unto Ladies love would lend The more was Claribell enraged i With fervent flames, and loved on So eke lov'd Blandamour, but yel Would change his liking, and prove:

prove;
But Paridell of love did make no
But lusted after all that him did
So diversly these foure disposed

XXII

But those two other, which beside Were Britomart and gentle Sendi e, very dint the ghost would rive r wretched corses, and their lives .ve.

XXIII

Dan Æolus, in great displeasure: his deare love by Neptune hent, the winds out of his hidden threase to wreake his fell intent; [sure ing forth with rude unruliment ire parts of heaven doe rage full sore, he deepes, and teare the irmament, world confound with wide uprore, d thereof they Chaos would restore.

XXIV

heir discord and so fell debate
a love of that same snowy maid,
y had lost in Turneyment of late;
ag long to weet which way she
d, [braide
ogether, where, through lewd upDuessa, they fell out;
ne taking part in others aide
conflict raised thereabout, [doubt:
agerous successe depended yet in

xxv

imes Paridell and Blandamour had, and bet the others backe; he others did the field recoure, foes did worke full cruell wracke: would their fiendlike fury slacke, ore their malice did augment; neath they forced were, for lacke their raging rigour to relent, emselves for to recover spirits spent.

XXVI

they change their sides, and new stake; Il did take to Druons side, spight which now forth newly brake ndamour, whom alwaies he envide; amour to Claribell relide: h gan former fight renew. [tide, two Barkes, this caried with the the wind, contrary courses sew, and tide doe change, their courses uge anew.

XXVII

Thenceforth they much more furiously gan As if but then the battell had begonne; [fare, Ne helmets bright ne hawberks strong did spare, [sponne, That through the clifts the vermeil bloud out And all adowne their riven sides did ronne. Such mortall malice wonder was to see In friends profest, and so great outrage donne: But sooth is said, and tride in each degree, Faint friends when they fall out most cruell fomen bee.

XXVIII

Thus they long while continued in fight;
Till Scudamour and that same Briton maide
By fortune in that place did chance to light:
Whom soone as they with wrathfull eie bewraide.

They gan remember of the fowle upbraide,
The which that Britonesse had to them donne
In that late Turney for the snowy maide;
Where she had them both shamefully fordonne,
And eke the famous prize of beauty from them
wonne.

XXIX

Eftsoones all burning with a fresh desire
Of fell revenge, in their malicious mood [ire,
They from them selves gan turne their furious
And cruell blades, yet steeming with whot
bloud,

Against those two let drive, as they were wood:
Who wondring much at that so sodaine fit,
Yet nought dismayd, them stoutly well withstood;

Ne yeelded foote, ne once abacke did flit, But being doubly smitten likewise doubly smit.

xxx

The warlike Dame was on her part assaid
Of Claribell and Blandamour attone;
And Paridell and Druon fiercely laid
At Scudamour, both his professed fone:
Foure charged two, and two surcharged one;
Yet did those two them selves so bravely beare,
That th' other litle gained by the lone,
But with their owne repayed duely weare,
And usury withall: such gaine was gotten
deare.

XXXI

pight which now forth newly brake ndamour, whom alwaies he envide; amour to Claribell relide:
h gan former fight renew. [tide, two Barkes, this caried with the

Ne lend an eare to ought that might behove.

As when an eager mastiffe once doth prove
The tast of bloud of some engored beast,
No words may rate, nor rigour him remove

From greedy hold of that his blouddy feast: So litle did they hearken to her sweet beheast.

XXXII

Whom when the Briton Prince afarre beheld With ods of so unequal match opprest, His mighty heart with indignation sweld And inward grudge fild his heroicke brest: Eftsoones him selfe he to their aide addrest, And thrusting fierce into the thickest preace Divided them, how ever loth to rest; And would them faine from battell to surceasse, With gentle words perswading them to friendly

XXXIII

But they so farre from peace or patience were, That all at once at him gan fiercely flie, And lay on load, as they him downe would

beare;

Like to a storme which hovers under skie, Long here and there and round about doth stie, At length breakes downe in raine, and haile and sleet,

First from one coast, till nought thereof be drie, And then another, till that likewise fleet; And so from side to side till all the world it weet.

XXXIV

But now their forces greatly were decayd, The Prince yet being fresh untoucht afore; Who them with speaches milde gan first dis-[bore: swade

From such foule outrage, and them long for-Till seeing them through suffrance hartned

Him selfe he bent their furies to abate, And layd at them so sharpely and so sore, That shortly them compelled to retrate, And being brought in daunger to relent too late.

XXXV

But now his courage being throughly fired, He ment to make them know their follies prise, Had not those two him instantly desired T asswage his wrath, and pardon their mesprise:

At whose request he gan him selfe advise To stay his hand, and of a truce to treat In milder tearmes, as list them to devise: Mongst which the cause of their so cruell heat Mote we entreat you, sith this ge He did them aske, who all that passed gan repeat:

XXXVI

And told at large how that same errant Knight, To weet faire Britomart, them late had foyled |

In open turney, and by wrongfull Both of their publicke praise ha

poyled, And also of their private loves be Of two full hard to read the hard But she that wrongfull challengeso And shew'd that she had not tha (As they suppos'd) but her had t

XXXVII

To whom the Prince thus goodly 'Certes, sir Knight, ye seemen m To rip up wrong that battell once Wherein the honor both of Armes And eke the love of Ladies foule To whom the world this franchise e That of their loves choise they mi clame,

And in that right should by all Gainst which, me seemes, this wa fully have wielded.

XXXVIII

'And yet' (quoth she) 'a greate maines :

For I thereby my former love have Whom seeking ever since with en Hath me much sorrow and much Aye me, to see that gentle maide But Scudamour, then sighing deep 'Certes, her losse ought me to so Whose right she is, where ever she Through many perils wonne, and tunes waide.

XXXIX

' For from the first that her I lov Unto this houre, this present luck I never joyed happinesse nor rest But thus turmoild from one to oth I wast my life, and doe my daies of In wretched anguishe and incessa Passing the measure of my feeble That living thus a wretch, and love I neither can my love ne yet my l

Then good Sir Claribell him thus 'Now were it not, sir Scudamour, Dislikefull paine so sad a taske to That as we ride together on our Ye will recount to us in order dew All that adventure which ye did a For that faire Ladies love; past apay!

YI.I rest him likewise to require, art did him importune hard nim that paine: whose great desire satisfie, him selfe prepar'd

To tell through what misfortune he had far'd In that atchievement, as to him befell And all those daungers unto them declar'd; Which sith they cannot in this Canto well Comprised be, I will them in another tell.

CANTO X.

Scudamour doth his conquest tell Of vertuous Amoret: Great Venus Temple is describ'd; And lovers life forth set.

I it said, what ever man it sayd, vith gall and hony doth abound; me be with the other wayd, iram of hony therein found gall doth over it redound: true by triall have approved; he day that first with deadly wound was launcht, and learned to have [moved. yed howre, but still with care was

uch grace is given them from above,

e cares and evill which they meet t at all their setled mindes remove, 3È : in their martyrdome unmeet. ever yet I have endured naught, and tread downe under feet,

y love at length I rest assured

loyalty she will not be allured.

re to tell the travell and long toile hich this shield of love I late have ne, ased this peerelesse beauties spoile, r may be ended, then begonne: e so desire, your will be donne, e, ye gentle knights and Ladies free, naine thereof much greater then the

ne the fame of this renowmed prise sbroad and all mens eares possest, rmes then taken, gan avise ne honour by some noble gest,

And purchase me some place amongst the best. I boldly thought, (so young mens thoughts are bold

That this same brave emprize for me did rest, And that both shield and she whom I behold Might be my lucky lot; sith all by lot we hold.

'So on that hard adventure forth I went, And to the place of perill shortly came: That was a temple faire and auncient, Which of great mother Venus bare the name, And farre renowmed through exceeding fame Much more then that which was in Paphos built, Or that in Cyprus, both long since this same,

gainst common sence, to them most Though all the pillours of the one were guilt, And all the others pavement were with yvory spilt.

'And it was seated in an Island strong. Abounding all with delices most rare, And wall'd by nature gainst invaders wrong, That none mote have accesse, nor inward fare, But by one way that passage did prepare, It was a bridge ybuilt in goodly wize [faire, With curious Corbes and pendants graven And, arched all with porches, did arize On stately pillours fram'd after the Doricke guize.

shaps that ye may learne to shonne; There reared was a castle faire and strong. That warded all which in or out did wend, And flancked both the bridges sides along, Gainst all that would it faine to force or wrong: And therein wonned twenty valiant Knights All twenty tride in warres experience long; Whose office was against all manner wights By all meanes to maintaine that castels ancien' rights.

'Before that Castle was an open plaine And in the midst thereof a piller placed; On which this shield, of many sought in vaine, The shield of Love, whose guerdon me hath graced. Was hangd on high with golden ribbands laced; And in the marble stone was written this, With golden letters goodly well enchaced;

Blessed the man that well can use his blis: Whose ever be the shield, faire Amoret be his.

IX

'Which when I red, my heart did inly earne, And pant with hope of that adventures hap: Ne staved further newes thereof to learne, But with my speare upon the shield did rap, That all the castle ringed with the clap. Streight forth issewd a Knight all arm'd to

proofe, And bravely mounted to his most mishap: Who, staying nought to question from aloofe, Ran flerce at me that fire glaunst from his horses hoofe.

'Whom boldly I encountred (as I could)

And by good fortune shortly him unseated. Eftsoones outsprung two more of equal mould; But I them both with equal hap defeated. So all the twenty I likewise entreated, And left them groning there upon the plaine: Then, preacing to the pillour, I repeated The read thereof for guerdon of my paine, And taking downe the shield with me did it

The which I found sure lockt and chained fast.

'So forth without impediment I past,

Till to the Bridges utter gate I came;

retaine.

I knockt, but no man aunswred me by name; I cald, but no man answed to my clame: Yet I persever'd still to knocke and call, Till at the last I spide within the same Where one stood peeping through a crevis small, To whom I cald aloud, halfe angry therewithall.

'That was to weet the Porter of the place,

Unto whose trust the charge thereof was lent: His name was Doubt, that had a double face, Th'one forward looking, th'other backeward Therein resembling Janus auncient Which hath in charge the ingate of the yeare: For oftentimes faint hearts, at first a

appeare.

'On th' one side he, on th' other sate Dek Behinde the gate that none her might expr Whose manner was all passengers to stay And entertaine with her occasions sly: Through which some lost great hope unhe Which never they recover might againe And others, quite excluded forth, did ly gaine ; Long languishing there in unpittied pa

And seeking often entraunce afterwards

vaine,

'Me when as he had privily espide Bearing the shield which I had conquerd is He kend it streight, and to me opened wiso in I past, and streight he cloud the gas But being in, Delay in close awaite [Caught hold on me, and thought my state.]

Feigning full many a fond excuse to pre And time to steale, the threasure of ma Whose smallest minute lost no riches r may. хv But by no meanes my way I would form For ought that ever she could doe or say; But from my lofty steede dismounting less

Past forth on foote, beholding all the way The goodly workes, and stones of rich a Cast into sundry shapes by wondrous skill That like on earth no where I recken may And underneath, the river rolling still With murmure soft, that seem'd to ser workmans will.

'Thence forth I passed to the second gall. The Gate of Good Desert, whose goody And costly frame were long here to rel The same to all stoode alwaies open wide

But in the Porch did evermore abide An hideous Giant, dreadfull to behold That stopt the entraunce with his stride, And with the terrour of his counter Full many did affray, that else fains would.

'His name was Daunger, dreaded over Who day and night did watch and ducky From fearefull cowards entrance to f And faint-heart-fooles, whom show hard [bent, Could terrifie from Fortunes faire adu

And evermore his eyes about him went,
As if some proved perill he did feare,
Or did misdoubt some ill whose cause did not Excludes from fairest hope wither Of his grim face, were from approach triall.

XVIII

ly doughty warriours, often tride perils to be stout and bold, the sternnesse of his looke abide; aint, and feele their corage cold. me other, that in hard assaies ards knowne, and litle count did hold,

XIX

hough meanest man of many moe, disdaining unto him to lout, betweene his legs, so in to goe im to assault with manhood stout, r beat him in, or drive him out. advauncing that enchaunted shield. by might I gan to lay about: sen he saw, the glaive which he did rthwith t'avale, and way unto me

entred, I did backeward looke f harme that might lie hidden there; is hindparts, whereof heed I tooke, e deformed fearefull, ugly were, is former parts did earst appere: l, murther, treason, and despight, y mce lay in ambushment there, to entrap the warelesse wight l not them prevent with vigilant sight.

ving past all perill, I was come e compasse of that Islands space; did seeme, unto my simple doome, pleasant and delightfull place troden was of footings trace: t nature by her mother-wit ie in earth, and forme of substance : and all that nature did omit, ig second natures part, supplyed it.

at Juniper to Ceder tall, [growes, in field, that daintie odour throwes, s his branch with blossomes overall, was planted, or grew naturall: of man so coy and curious nice, mote find to please it selfe withall; ould wish for any queint device, it present was, and did fraile sense ice.

XXIII

'In such luxurious plentie of all pleasure, It seem'd a second paradise to ghesse, So lavishly enricht with Natures threasure, as they his countenance did behold, That if the happie soules, which doe possesse aint, and feele their corage cold.

Th' Elysian fields and live in lasting blesse, Should happen this with living eye to see, They soone would loath their lesser happiness ough gifts, or guile, or such like waies, And wish to life return'd againe to bee, so stouping low, or stealing of the That in this joyous place they mote have joyance free.

'Fresh shadowes, fit to shroud from sunny ray; Faire lawnds, to take the sunne in season dew; Sweet springs, in which a thousand Nymphs did play;
Soft rombling brookes, that gentle slomber drew;

High reared mounts, the lands about to vew; Low looking dales, disloignd from common gaze

Delightfull bowres, to solace lovers trew; False Labyrinthes, fond runners eyes to daze; All which by nature made did nature selfe amaze

XXV

'And all without were walkes and alleyes dight

With divers trees enrang'd in even rankes; And here and there were pleasant arbors pight, And shadie seates, and sundry flowring bankes, To sit and rest the walkers wearie shankes: And therein thousand payres of lovers walkt, Praysing their god, and yeelding him great thankes,

Ne ever ought but of their true loves talkt, Ne ever for rebuke or blame of any balkt.

XXVI

'All these together by themselves did sport Their spotlesse pleasures and sweet loves content.

But, farre away from these, another sort Of lovers lincked in true harts consent, Which loved not as these for like intent XXII
But on chast vertue grounded their desire,
that is of count, in greenewood Farre from all fraud or fayned blandishment; Which, in their spirits kindling zealous fire, Brave thoughts and noble deedes did evermore aspire.

XXVII

'Such were great Hercules and Hyllus deare Trew Jonathan and David trustie tryde Stout Theseus and Pirithous his feare Pylades and Orestes by his syde;

Myid Titus and Gesippus without pryde; Danion and Pythias, whom death could not severs

All these, and all that ever had bene tyde In bands of friendship, there did live for ever; Whose lives although decay'd, yet loves decayed never.

XXVIII

Which when as I, that never tasted blis Nor happie howre, beheld with gazefull eye, I thought there was none other heaven then this:

And gan their endlesse happinesse envye, That being free from feare and gealosye Might frankely there their loves desire possesse; Whilest I, through paines and perlous jeopardie,

Was forst to seeke my lifes deare patronnesse: Much dearer be the things which come through hard distresse.

'Yet all those sights, and all that else I saw, Might not my steps withhold, but that forthright

Unto that purposd place I did me draw, Where as my love was lodged day and night, The temple of great Venus, that is hight The Queene of b-autie, and of love the mother, There worshipped of every living wight; Whose goodly workmansh p farre past all other That ever were on earth, all were they set together.

XXX

'Not that same famous Temple of Diane, Whose hight all Ephesus did oversee, And which all Asia sought with vowes prophane,

One of the worlds seven wonders sayd to bee, Might match with this by many a degree: Nor that which that wise King of Jurie framed With endlesse cost to be th' Almighties see; Nor all, that else through all the world is named To all the heathen Gods, might like to this be clamed.

XXXI

¹I, much admyring that so goodly frame, Unto the porch approcht which open stood; But therein sate an amiable Dame, That seem'd to be of very sober mood, And in her semblant shew'd great womanhood: Strange was her tyre; for on her head a crowne She wore, much like unto a Danisk hood,
Poudred with pearle and stone; and all her
gowne
[adowne. Had not the Ladie with her powrefull
Enwoven was with gold, that raught full low Him from his wicked will uneath refr

XXXII

On either side of her two young to Both strongly arm'd, as fearing Yet were they brethren bothof Begotten by two fathers of one Though of contrarie natures The one of them hight Love, the o Hate was the elder, Love the yearse Yet was the younger stronger in his Then th' elder, and him maystred st debate.

XXXIII

Nathlesse that Dame so well then both, That she them forced hand to joyne is

Albe that Hatred was thereto full left And turn'd his face away, as he did a Unwilling to behold that lovely band. Yet she was of such grace and vertuou That her commandment he could't But bit his lip for felonous desnight And gnasht his yron tuskes at that dis sight.

XXXIV

'Concord she cleeped was in common Mother of blessed Peace and Friendsh They both her twins, both borne of !

And she her selfe likewise divinely p The which right well her workes di

For strength and wealth and happ And strife and warre and anger do Of litle much, of foes she maketh frie And to afflicted minds sweet rest at sends.

XXXV By her the heaven is in his course of And all the world in state unmoved st As their Almightic maker first ordain And bound them with inviolable hand Else would the waters overflow the la And fire devoure the ayre, and hell the But that she holds them with her bles She is the nourse of pleasure and deli And unto Venus grace the gate doth op

XXXVI

'By her I entring half dismayed was But she in gentle wise me enterrayned And twixt her selfe and Love did let to But Hatred would my entrance



THE FAERIE QUEENE.

his malice did empeach, ghly past the perill of his

XXXVII

Temple thus I came, I with frankensence I found from the altars flame, marble pillors round was reared from the ground, wnes, and chaynes, and gir-

etious gifts worth many a ers for their vowes did pay; ad was strow'd with flowres May.

XXXVIII

ars round about were set, their sacrifices fire, ne thereof the Temple swet, ouds to heaven did aspire, true lovers vowes entire: ed brasen caudrons bright, 1 amorous desire, as to a damzell hight;

XXXIX

idst the Goddesse selfe did

were damzels in soft linnen

ome costly masse,
vas uneath to understand:
is stone, nor durefull brasse,
nor mouldring clay it was;
re and pretious to esteeme,
like to christall glasse,
, if one did rightly deeme;
id brickle, likest glasse did

..

nd beautie did excell nich the heathen adore, which by surpassing skill 1 Paphos Isle of yore, wretched Greeke, that life

et this much fairer shined, slender veile afore; and legs together twyned whose head and tail were ed.

XLI

he was covered with a vele

'ledge labour'd to concele: t sure for womanish shame.

Nor any blemish which the worke mote blame; But for, they say, she hath both kinds in one, Both male and female, both under one name: She syre and mother is her selfe alone, [none, Begets and eke conceives, ne needeth other

XLII

'And all about her necke and shoulders flew A flocke of litle loves, and sports, and joyes, With nimble wings of gold and purple hew; Whose shapes seem'd not like to terrestriall

boyes,
But like to Angels playing heavenly toyes,
The whilest their eldest brother was away,
Cupid their eldest brother; he enjoyes
The wide kingdome of love with lordly sway,
And to his law compels all creatures to obay.

XLIII

'And all about her altar scattered lay Great sorts of lovers piteously complayning, Some of their losse, some of their loves delay, Some of their pride, some paragons disdayning, Some fearing fraud, some fraudulently fayning, As every one had cause of good or ill. Amongst the rest some one, through Loves constrayning

Tormented sore, could not containe it still, But thus brake forth, that all the temple it did fill

XLIV

"Great Venus! Queenc of beautic and of grace,
The joy of Gods and men, that under skie
Doest fayrest shine, and most adorne thy place;
That with thy smyling looke doest pacific
The raging seas, and makes the stormes to flie;
Thee, goddesse, thee the winds, the clouds doe
feare,

And, when thou spredst thy mantle forth on hie, The waters play, and pleasant lands appeare, And heavens laugh, and al the world shews joyous cheare.

XLV

"Then doth the dædale earth throw forth to

Out of her fruitfull lap aboundant flowres;
And then all living wights, soone as they see
The spring breake forth out of his lusty bowres,
They all doe learne to play the Paramours;
First doe the merry birds, thy prety pages,
Privily pricked with thy lustfull powres,
Chirpe loud to thee out of their leavy cages,
And thee their mother call to coole their
kindly rages.

XLV

"Then doe the salvage beasts begin to play Their pleasant friskes, and losth their wonted food: The Lyons rore; the Tygres loudly bray; The raging Buls rebellow through the wood, And breaking forth dare tempt the deepest desire. flood To come where thou doest draw them with

So all things else, that nourish vitall blood, Soone as with fury thou doest them inspire In generation seeke to quench their inward fire.

XLVII

"So all the world by thee at first was made, And dayly yet thou doest the same repayre; Ne ought on earth that merry is and glad Ne ought on earth that lovely is and fayre, But thou the same for pleasure didst pre-

Thou art the root of all that joyous is: Great God of men and women, queene of th'

Mother of laughter, and welspring of blisse, O graunt that of my love at last I may not misse!"

XLVIII

'So did he say: but I with murmure soft, That none might heare the sorrow of my hart, Yet inly groning deepe and sighing oft, Besought her to graunt ease unto my smart,
And to my wound her gratious help impart.
Whilest thus I spake, behold! with happy eye
And folly seem'd to leave the thing I spyde where at the Idoles feet apart A bevie of fayre damzels close did lye Wayting when as the Antheme should be sung on bye.

XLIX

'The first of them did seeme of ryper yeares And graver countenance then all the rest; Yet all the rest were eke her equall peares, Yet unto her obayed all the best. Her name was Womanhood; that she exprest

By her sad semblant and demeanure wyse: For stedfast still her eyes did fixed rest, Ne rov'd at randon, after gazers guyse, Whose luring baytes oftimes doe heedlesse harts

entyse.

'And next to her sate goodly Shamefastnesse, Ne ever durst her eyes from ground upreare, Ne eyer once did looke up from her desse, As it some blame of evill she did feare, That in her cheekes made roses oft appeare: and her against sweet Cherefulnesse was placed. Whose eyes, like twinkling stars in evening And cruell shafts, emblazond she belse cleare, [chaced, At sight thereof she was with terror Were deckt with smyles that all sad humors

And darted forth delights the which her goodly graced.

'And next to her sate soler Modestia Holding her hand upon her gentle hart And her against sate comely Curtess, That unto every person knew ber part. And her before was seated everthwart Soft Silence, and submisse Obelience, Both linckt together never to disjuri, Both gifts of God, not gotten but from Both girlands of his Saints against the offence,

Thus sate they all around in seeming And in the midst of them a goodly may Even in the lap of Womanhood there are The which was all in lilly white araya, With silver streames amongst the stray'd; Like to the Morne, when first her shymm Hath to the gloomy world itselfe beway That same was fayrest Amoret in plan Shyning with beauties light and but

vertues grace.

Whom soone as I beheld, my hart gan And wade in doubt what best were

Which with so strong attempt I had be Tho, shaking off all doubt and shamelat Which Ladies love, I heard, had never Mongst men of worth, I to her steppel And by the lilly hand her labourd reare.

LIV Thereat that formost matrone

blame, And sharpe rebuke for being over hold; Saying, it was to Knight unseemely Upon a recluse Virgin to lay hold That unto Venus services was sold.
To whom I thus: "Nay, but it fitted be For Cupids man with Venus mayd to For ill your goddesse services are dresses."

By virgins, and her sacrifices let to rest

LV

With that my shield I forth to h show Which all that while I closely had ou On which when Cupid, with his killing

And said no more: but I, which while

The pledge of faith, her hand, engaged



THE FAERIE QUEENE.

Hynd within the weedie soyle, treatie would forgoe so glorious le.

LVI

more upon the Goddesse face vas fixt, for feare of her offence; en I saw with amiable grace t me, and favour my pretence, bldned with more confidence; tht for nicenesse nor for envying, sof them all forth led her thence; on, and like astonisht staring, hand on her not one of all them

LVII

1 prayd, and often me besought, with tender teares to let her goe,

Sometime with witching smyles; but yet, for nought
That ever she to me could say or doe,

That ever she to me could say or doe, Could she her wished freedome fro me wooe: But forth I led her through the Temple gate, By which I hardly past with much adoe: But that same Ladie, which me friended late In entrance, did me also friend in my retrate.

LVIII

'No lesse did Daunger threaten me with dread, Whenas he saw me, maugre all his powre, That glorious spoyle of beautie with me lead, Then Cerberus, when Orpheus did recoure His Leman from the Stygian Princes boure: But evermore my shield did me defend Against the storme of every dreadfull stoure: Thus safely with my love I thence did wend.' So ended he his tale, where I this Canto end.

CANTO XI.

Marinelis former wound is heald, He comes to Proteus hall, Where Thames doth the Medway wedd, And feasts the Sea-gods all.

1

or pittie! that I have thus long re Ladie languishing in payne: l-away! that I have doen such ng, e Florimell in bands remayne, of love, and in sad thraldomes yne; [free:h, unlesse some heavenly powre here, not yet appearing playne, yet is like captiv'd to bee; to thinke thereof it inly pitties mee.

H

de you to remember, how erewhile Proteus, missing to his mind ins love to win by wit or wile, into a dongeon deepe and blind, in chaynes her cruelly did bind, ereby her to his bent to draw: as neither gifts nor graces kind int mind could move at all he saw, ht her to compell by crueltie and

ш

the bottome of an huge great rocke on was, in which her bound he left, ser yron barres, nor brasen locke, to gard from force, or secret theft

Of all her lovers which would her have reft: For wall'd it was with waves, which rag'd and ror'd
As they the cliffe in peeces would have cleft; Besides ten thousand monsters foule abhor'd
Did waite about it, gaping griesly, all begor'd.

IV

And in the midst thereof did horror dwell,
And darkenesse dredd that never viewed day,
Like to the balefull house of lowest hell,
In which old Styx her aged bones alway,
Old Styx the Grandame of the Gods, doth lay.
There did this lucklesse mayd seven months
Ne ever evening saw, ne mornings ray, [abide,
Ne ever from the day the night descride,
But thought it all one night that did no houres
divide.

And all this was for love of Marinell,
Who her despysd (ah! who would her despyse?)
And wemens love did from his hart expell,
And all those joyes that weake mankind entyse.
Nathlesse his pride full dearely he did pryse;
For of a womans hand it was ywroke,
That of the wound he yet in languor lyes,
Ne can be cured of that cruell stroke
Which Britomart him gave, when he did be

Yet farre and neare the Nymph his mother

And many salves did to his sore applie.

And many herbes did use. But w

But when as She saw, could ease his rankling maladie, At last to Tryphon she for helpe did his (This Tryphon is the seagods surgeon hight,) Whom she besonght to find some remedie, And for his paines a whistle him behight,

That of a fishes shell was wrought with rare

So well that Leach did hearke to her request, And did so well employ his carefull paine, That in short space his hurts he had redrest. And him restor d to healthfull state againe: In which he long time after aid remaine
There with the Nymph his mother, like her

Who sore against his will did him retaine, For feare of perill which to him mote fall Through his too ventrous prowesse proved over

It fortun'd then, a solemne feast was there To all the Sca-gods and their fruitfull seede, In honour of the spousalls which then were Betwixt the Medway and the Thames agreed. Long had the Thames (as we in records reed) Before that day her woodd to his bed, But the proud Nymph would for no worldly

Nor no entreatie, to his love be led; Till now, at last relenting, she to him was wed.

So both agreed that this their bridale feast Should for the Gods in Proteus house be made: To which they all repayr'd, both most and

least, As well which in the mightie Ocean trade, As that in rivers swim, or brookes doe wade; All which, not if an hundred tongues to tell, And hundred monthes, and voice of brasse I

And endlesse memorie that mote excell, In order as they came could I recount them

Helpe, therefore, O! thou sacred imp of Jove Helpe, therefore, O! thou sacred imp of Jove The noursling of Dame Memorie his deare. To whom those rolles, layd up in heaven above, and records of antiquitie appeare,

To which no wit of man Helpe me to tell the na And all these Nympher

To that great banquer of And all their sundry kin

First came great Neptune That rules the Seas and ma His dewy lockes did drop w

Under his Diademe imperis And by his side his Queene Faire Amphitrite, most divi Whose yvorie shoulders were As with a robe, with her own And deckt with pearles which

for her prepaire.

These marched farre afore th And all the way before them, Triton his trompet shrill before For goodly triumph and great That made the rockes to roam

And after them the royall issue Which of them sprung by lineal First the Sea-gods, which to the

The powre to rule the billowes, a

Phoreys, the father of that fatall By whom those old Heroes wonne And Glaucus, that wise southsayes: And tragicke Inoes sonne, the white A God of seas through his mad mot A God or seasymough mesman low hight Palemon, and is saylers Great Brontes; and Astraus, that d Himselfe with incest of his kin unk And huge Orion, that doth tempests

The rich Cteatus; and Eurytus long Neleus and Pelias, lovely brethren be Mightie Chrysnor; and Calcus strong mignine chrysing, and calculated waters was Eurypulus, that calculates the waters was And Jairo Euphoemus, that upon their And taile Engineering the appropriate of the ground, without dismay ever fierce Eryx; and Alebius, that kneels and the ground and the ground are the ground and the ground are ground as a second and the ground are ground as a second are ground as a seco The waters depth, and doth their bottom And sad Asopus, comely with his home

There also some most famous founder of pulsant Nations which the world per

of Neptune, now assembled here: gyges, even th' auncientest ; ius renowmd above the rest; nd Aon, and Pelasgus old; is, Phœax, and Agenor best; tie Albion, father of the bold ke people which the Britaine Islands

XVI

m the sonne of Neptune was, he proofe of his great puissance, Albion did on dry-foot pas all, that now is cleeped France, ith Hercules, that did advance ish all the world with matchlesse ;ht; his mortall part by great mischance e: but that which is th' immortall [was dight. , and to this feast with Neptunes seed

XVII

t doe I their names seeke to reherse, the world have with their issue fild? they all in this so narrow verse 1 be, and in small compasse hild? record them that are better skild. the moniments of passed age: at needeth shall be here fulfild, e some part of that great equipage om great Neptune do derive their entage.

XVIII

ne the aged Ocean and his Dame 's, th' oldest two of all the rest; e rest of those two parents came, erward both sea and land possest; ich Nereus, th' eldest and the best, proceed, then which none more upht. incere in word and deed profest; le of guile, most free from fowle de-[right. zht, n selfe, and teaching others to doe

XIX ne was expert in prophecies,

the ledden of the gods unfold which, when Paris brought his faus prise Tindarid lasse, he him fortold all Greece with many a champion ch againe, and finally destroy ams towne. So wise is Nereus old, Il akild; nathlesse he takes great joy rt and toy.

And after him the famous rivers came. Which doe the earth enrich and beautifie: The fertile Nile, which creatures new doth ſskie; frame: Long Rhodanus, whose sourse springs from the Faire Ister, flowing from the mountaines hie: Divine Scamander, purpled yet with blood
Of Greeks and Trojans which therein did die;
Pactolus glistring with his golden flood;
And Tygris flerce, whose streames of none may
be withstood;

Great Ganges, and immortall Euphrates, Deepe Indus, and Mæander intricate, Slow Peneus, and tempestuous Phasides Swift Rhene, and Alpheus still immaculate Ooraxes, seared for great Cyrus sate, Tybris, renowmed for the Romaines same, Rich Oranochy, though but knowen late; And that huge River, which doth beare his name same. Of warlike Amazons, who doe possesse the

XXII

Joy on those warlike women, which so long Can from all men so rich a kingdome hold! And shame on you, O men! which boast your [bold, strong And valiant hearts, in thoughts lesse hard and Yet quaile in conquest of that land of gold. But this to you, O Britons! most pertaines, To whom the right hereof it selfe hath sold, The which, for sparing litle cost or paines Loose so immortall glory, and so endlesse gaines.

Then was there heard a most celestiall sound Of dainty musicke, which did next ensew Before the spouse: that was Arion crownd; Who, playing on his harpe, unto him drew The eares and hearts of all that goodly crew, That even yet the Dolphin, which him bore Through the Agean seas from Pirates vew, Stood still by him astonisht at his lore, And all the raging seas for joy forgot to rore.

So went he playing on the watery plaine; Soone after whom the lovely Bridegroome came

The noble Thamis, with all his goodly traine; But him before there went, as best became, His auncient parents, namely th' auncient

Thame. amongst the wanton Nymphs to But much more aged was his wife then he. The Ouze, whom men doe Isis rightly name

Full weake and crooked creature seemed shee, And the still Darent, in where And almost blind through eld, that scarce her Ten thousand fishes play and de way could see.

XXV

Therefore on either side she was sustained OI two smal grooms, which by their names were hight [which pained

The Churne and Charwell, two small streames, Them selves her footing to direct aright Which fayled oft through faint and feeble plight:

But Thame was stronger, and of better stay; Yet seem'd full aged by his outward sight, With head all hoary, and his beard all gray, Deawed with silver drops that trickled downe alway.

XXVI

And eke he somewhat seem'd to stoupe afore With bowed backe, by reason of the lode And auncient heavy burden which he bore Of that faire City, wherein make abode So many learned impes, that shoote abrode, And with their braunches spred all Britany, No lesse then do her elder sisters broode. Joy to you both, ye double noursery Of Arts! but, Oxford, thine doth Thame most glorify.

XXVII

But he their sonne full fresh and jolly was All decked in a robe of watchet hew, [glas, On which the waves, glittering like Christall So cunningly enwoven were, that few Could weenen whether they were false or trew: And on his head like to a Coronet He wore, that seemed strange to common vew, n which were many towres and eastels set, That it encompast round as with a golden fret,

XXVIII

Like as the mother of the Gods, they say, In her great iron charet wonts to ride When to Joves pallace she doth take her way, Old Cybele, arayd with pompous pride, Wearing a Diademe embattild wide With hundred turrets, like a Turribant; With such an one was Thamis beautifide; That was to weet the famous Troynovant, In which her kingdomes throne is chiefly resiant.

XXIX

And round about him many a pretty Page Attended duely, ready to obay; All little Rivers which owe vassallage To him, as to their Lord, and tribute pay : The chaulky Kenet, and the Thetis gray, The morish Cole, and the soft sliding Breane, land,
The wanton Lee, that oft doth loose his way to By many a city and by many a

sant streame.

Then came his neighbour fis him dwell,

And water all the English soile ! They all on him this day attends And with meet service waited hi Ne none disdained low to him to No, not the stately Severne grad Ne storming Humber, though he But both him honor'd as their pr And let their swelling waters lo full.

XXXI

There was the speedy Tamar, w The Cornish and the Devonish of Through both whose borders swii glides,

And, meeting Plim, to Plimmou And Dart, nigh chockt with sa mines.

But Avon marched in more state Proud of his Adamants with whi And glisters wide, as als' of wone And Bristow faire, which on h builded hath.

And there came Stoure with ter Bearing his sixe deformed heads That doth his course through Bla direct.

And washeth Winborne meades in Next him went Wylibourne with That of his wylinesse his name d And of him selfe doth name the a And Mole, that like a nousling Mo His way still under ground, till overtake.

Then came the Rother, decked a Like a wood God, and flowing fas And Sture, that parteth with floods

The Easterne Saxons from the Sc And Clare and Harwitch both do Him follow'd Yar, soft washing N And with him brought a present Of his owne fish unto their festive Whose like none else could she they Ruffins call.

XXXIV

Next these the plenteous Ouse of

THE FAERIE QUEENE.

289

under-hand seth downe, irant, the Sture, the f flit, don and Cambridge whom as with a

orn'd of it [wit. and many a learned

Welland went, rue (which God for-

with his excrement ough now homely hid, ore then ever did ;lands goodly beames, ie downe softly slid; at in him selfe en-

streames. i, and thirty sundry

, along whose stony

uilt a brasen wall, d Britons strongly

armed over-all, ver they doe call: wixt Logris land though but small, oud of many a band h, that typed on his

id brethren, like foritique fathers tell) one faire Nymphe

s of armes excell,

, and troublous Skell; In three great rivers ran, and many countreis , that Humber hight, iver drowned quight.

utus warlicke sonne, ind the same date. unto them had donne, n his owne pate: r, where he late rowned him againe, is wretched fate

Whose bad condition yet it doth retaine Oft to sed with his stormes which therein still remaine.

XXXIX

These after came the stony shallow Lone, That to old Loncaster his name doth lend; And following Dee, which Britons long ygone Did call divine, that doth by Chester tend; And Conway, which out of his streame doth send Plenty of pearles to decke his dames withall; And Lindus that his pikes doth most commend, Of which the auncient Lincolne men doe call: All these together marched toward Proteus hall.

XL Ne thence the Irishe Rivers absent were, Sith no lesse famous then the rest they bee, And joyne in neighbourhood of kingdome nere, Why should they not likewise in love agree, And joy likewise this solemne day to see?

They saw it all, and present were in place; Though I them all according their degree Cannot recount, nor tell their hidden race, Nor read the salvage cuntreis thorough which

they pace.

XLI There was the Liffy rolling downe the lea,

The sandy Slane, the stony Aubrian, The spacious Shenan spreading like a sea The pleasant Boyne, the fishy fruitfull Ban, Swift Awniduff, which of the English man Is cal'de Blacke-water, and the Liffar deep, Sad Trowis, that once his people over-ran, Strong Allo tombling from Slewlogher steer And Mulla mine, whose waves I whilom taught

to weep.

And there the three renowmed brethren were, Which that great Gyant Blomius begot Of the faire Nimph Rheusa wandring there. One day, as she to shunne the season whot Under Slewboome in shady grove was got, now Yorke people This Gyant found her and by force deflowr'd; might, Whereof conceiving, she in time forth brought nd Oze the most of These three faire sons, which being thenceforth powrd scowrd.

XLIII

The first the gentle Shure that, making way By sweet Clonmell, adornes rich Waterford; The next, the stubborne Newre whose waters gray By faire Kilkenny and Rossepontè boord;

The third, the goodly Barow which doth hoord Great heapes of salmons in his deepe bosome: All which, long sundred, doe at last accord

To jovne in one, tre to the sea they come; So, thowing all from one, all one at last become

XLIV

There also was the wide embayed Mayre; The pleasannt Bandon crownd with many a wood:

The spreading Lee that, like an Island fayre, Encloseth Corke with his devided flood; And balefull Oure, late staind with English blood,

With many more whose names no tongue can All which that day in order seemly good Did on the Thamis attend, and waited well To doe their dueful service, as to them befell.

Then came the Bride, the lovely Medua came, Clad in a vesture of unknowen geare And uncouth fashion, yet her well became, That seem'd like silver, sprinckled here and appeare, theare With glittering spangs that did like starres

And way'd upon, like water Chamelot, To hide the metall, which yet every where Bewrayd it selfe, to let men plainely wot It was no mortall worke, that seem'd and yet was not.

XLVI

Her goodly lockes adowne her backe did flow Unto her waste, with flowres bescattered, The which ambrosiall odours forth did throw To all about, and all her shoulders spred As a new spring; and likewise on her hed A Chapelet of sundry flowers she wore, From under which the deawy humour shed Did tricle downe her haire, like to the hore Congealed little drops which doe the morne And Nemertea learned well to rule her adore.

XLVII

On her two pretty handmaides did attend, One cald the Theise, the other cald the Crane, Which on her waited things amisse to mend, And both behind-upheld her spredding traine; Under the which her feet appeared plaine, Her silver feet, faire washt against this day : And her before there paced Pages twaine, Both clad in colours like, and like array, The Doune and eke the Frith, both which prepard her way.

XLVIII

And after these the Sea Nymphs marched all, All goodly damzels, deckt with long greene Whom of their sire Nereides men call, haire, All which the Oceans daughter to him bare,

The gray-cycle Doris; all which fifty an All which she there on her attending to Swift Proto, milde Eucrate, Thetis man, Soft Spio, sweete Endore, Sao sal Light Doto, wanton Glauce, and Galesi

XLIX

White hand Eunica, proud Dynas Joyous Thalia, goodly Amphitria. Lovely Pasithee, kinde Eulimene, [tell: Lightfoote Cymothoe, and sweete Mena Fairest Pherusa, Phao lilly white, Wondred Agave, Poris, and New With Erato that doth in love delite And Panopæ, and wise Protomeda And snowy neckd Doris, and milkewh

Speedy Hippothoë, and chaste Actes. Large Lisianassa, and Pronea say, Euagore, and light Pontoporea, And she that with her least word can a The surging seas, when they do serul Cymodocè, and stout Autonoë, And Neso, and Eionè well in age And, seeming still to smile, Glauce And she that hight of many heaster Pop

Fresh Alimeda deckt with girlord government Hyponeo with salt-bedewed wrests; Laomedia like the christall sheere; Liagore much praisd for wise bebests And Psamathe for her brode snowy b Cymo, Eupompe, and Themiste just; And, she that vertue loves and vice d

All these the daughters of old Nerma Which have the sea in charge to then To rule his tides, and surges to up To bring forth stormes, or fast them to And sailers save from wreckes of " winde.

And yet, besides, three thousand me Of th' Oceans seede, but Joves and I kinde;

The which in floods and fountaines doe And all mankinde do nourish with the clere.

LITT

The which, more eath it were for wight To tell the sands, or count the starrage



THE FAERIE QUEENE.

more hard, then thinks to reckon And there, amongst the rest, the mother was Of luckelesse Marinell, Cymodoce; Which, for my Muse her selfe now tyred has,

29 I

ht. I wote that these, which I descry, ent at this great solemnity:

1.1

CANTO XII.

Marin for love of Florimell In languor wastes his life:
The Nymph, his mother, getteth her
And gives to him for wife.

r an endlesse worke have I in hand. he seas abundant progeny, itfull seede farre passeth those in hose which wonne in th' azure sky: more eath to tell the starres on hy, endlesse seeme in estimation, count the Seas posterity: be the flouds in generation, their numbers, and so numberlesse ir nation.

the antique wisards well invented is of the fomy sea was bred, he seas by her are most augmented: th' exceeding fry which there are fed, rous sholes which may of none be red. ne me not if I have err'd in count f Nymphs, of rivers, yet unred; h their numbers do much more surcount. se same were there which erst I did re-

III

were there, and many other more, mes and nations were too long to tell, eus house they fild even to the dore; they all in order, as befell, their degrees disposed well. he rest was faire Cymodoce, r of unlucky Marinell, er with her came, to learne and see er of the Gods when they at banquet

e was halfe mortall, being bred sire, though of immortall wombe, not with immortall food be fed, eternall Gods to bancket come; abrode, and round about did rome ne building of that uncouth place, 'd unlike unto his earthly home: he to and fro by chaunce did trace, him betid a disaventrous case.

Unto an other Canto I will overpas.

Under the hanging of an hideous clieffe He heard the lamentable voice of one, That piteously complaind her carefull grieffe, Which never she before disclose to none, But to her selfe her sorrow did bemone: So feelingly her case she did complaine, That ruth it moved in the rocky stone. And made it seeme to feele her grievous paine, And oft to grone with billowes beating from the maine:

'Though vaine, I see, my sorrowes to unfold, And count my cares when none is nigh to heare,

Yet, hoping griefe may lessen being told, I will them tell though unto no man neare: For heaven, that unto all lends equall eare, Is farre from hearing of my heavy plight; And lowest hell, to which I lie most neare, Cares not what evils hap to wretched wight; And greedy seas doe in the spoile of life delight.

'Yet loe! the seas, I see, by often beating Doe pearce the rockes, and hardest marble weares : But his hard rocky hart for no entreating

Will yeeld, but when my piteous plaints he heares,

Is hardned more with my aboundant teares: Yet though he never list to me relent But let me waste in woe my wretched yeares, Yet will I never of my love repent, But joy that for his sake I suffer prisonment.

VIII

'And when my weary ghost, with griefe outworne, By timely death shall winne her wished rest, Let then this plaint unto his eares be borne, That blame it is to him, that armes profest, To let her die whom he might have redrest? There did she pause, inforced to give place Unto the passion that her heart opprest;

u 2

And, after she had wept and wail'd a space, She gan afresh thus to renew her wretched case.

'Ye Gods of seas, if any Gods at all Have care of right, or ruth of wretches wrong, By one or other way me, woefull thrall, Deliver hence out of this dungeon strong, In which I daily dying am too long: And if ye deeme me death for loving one That loves not me, then doe it not prolong, But let me die and end my daies attone, And let him live unlov'd, or love him selfe

*But if that life ye unto me decree, Then let mee live as lovers ought to do, And of my lifes deare love beloved be: And if he should through pride your doome undo,

Do you by duresse him compell thereto, And in this prison put him here with me; One prison fittest is to hold us two. So had I rather to be thrall then free; Such thraldome or such freedome let it surely be.

'But O vaine judgement, and conditions vaine, The which the prisoner points unto the free! The whiles I him condemne, and deeme his paine,

He where he list goes loose, and laughes at me. So ever loose, so ever happy be! But where so loose or happy that thou art, Know, Marinell, that all this is for thee.' With that she wept and wail'd, as if her hart Would quite have burst through great abundance of her smart.

XII

All which complaint when Marinell had heard, And understood the cause of all her care To come of him for using her so hard, His stubborne heart, that never felt misfare, Was toucht with soft remorse and pitty rare; That even for gricfe of minde he oft did grone, And inly wish that in his powre it weare Her to redresse: but since he meanes found none,

He could no more but her great misery bemone.

XIII

Thus whilst his stony heart with tender ruth Was toucht, and mighty courage mollifide, Dame Venus sonne, that tameth stubborne youth

With iron bit, and maketh him abide

Till like a victor on his backs he rids Into his mouth his may string bridle That made him stoups, till he did him Then gan he make him tread his ste And learne to love by learning lover

Now gan he in his grieved minds of How from that dungeon he might he Some while he thought, by faire an

To Proteus selfe to sue for her disch But then he fear'd his mothers form Gainst womens love, long given his Then gan he thinks, perforce with

targe Her forth to fetch, and Proteus to 0 But soone he gan such folly to forthing

Then did he cast to steale her the And with him beare where none of

know: But all in vaine, for-why he found To enter in, or issue forth below; For all about that rocke the sea dis And though unto his will she given Yet without ship or bote her thence He wist not how her thence away And daunger well he wist long there.

At last, when as no meanes he co Backe to him selfe he gan returns. That was the author of her punish And with vile curses and reprochfo To damne him selfe by every avil a And deeme unworthy or of love or That had despisde so chast and fai Which him had sought through long strife,

Yet had refusde a God that her

In this sad plight he walked her And romed round about the rocke. As he had lost him selfe he wist n Oft listening if he mote her heare And still bemoning her unworthy Like as an Hynde, whose calfe is to Into some pit, where she him heare An hundred times about the pit si Right sorrowfully mourning her be

XVIII

And now by this the feast was ended.

And every one gan homeward to r



THE FAERIE QUEENE.

l was sore offended nce should be so short, hat sea-walled fort. other disobay, ull seemly sort, e many all the way, inly mourne, like one

mothers bowre, from wight, entable stowre, I love lay day and night ill deserv'd that plight: apierst his hart so deepe, ng he tooke delight;

ťΧ is wonted chearefull hew pirits deaded quight: and eie-pits hollow grew, had lost their knowen

selfe he seem'd in sight. imbe, and sicke of love he note stand upright, ought, and layd above, nable once to stirre or

wist well what to weene; r any meanes out find nature of his teene, pply some medicine; night did him attend, er losse before her evne, re that she it could not

ll double griefe doth lend.

d the roote of his disease, r maladie it is, e meanes it to appease. but most she thought

r fatall wound of his on was not throughly

ider th' orifis: hat which he most con-:h in his hart lay unre-

XXIII

Therefore to Tryphon she againe doth hast, And him doth chyde as false and fraudulent, That fayld the trust which she in him had plast, To cure her sonne, as he his faith had lent, Who now was faine into new languishment Of his old hurt, which was not throughly cured. So backe he came unto her patient; Where searching every part, her well assured That it was no old sore which his new paine procured:

But that it was some other maladie, Or grief unknowne, which he could not discerne:

So left he her withouten remedie. s, ne nightly sleepe, So left he her withouten remedie.
1'd, and languisht, and Then gan her heart to faint, and quake, and earne,

And inly troubled was the truth to learne Unto himselfe she came, and him besought, Now with faire speches, now with threatnings sterne.

If ought lay hidden in his grieved thought, It to reveale; who still her answered, there was nought.

Nathlesse she rested not so satisfide; But leaving watry gods, as booting nought, Unto the shinie heaven in haste she hide, And thence Apollo, King of Leaches, brought. Apollo came; who, soone as he had sought Through his disease, did by and by out find her saw, she in her mind That he did languish of some inward thought, The which afflicted his engrieved mind; Which love he red to be, that leads each living kind.

Which when he had unto his mother told, She gan thereat to fret and greatly grieve; And, comming to her sonne, gan first to scold

And chyde at him that made her misbelieve: But afterwards she gan him soft to shrieve, And wooe with fair intreatie, to disclose Which of the Nymphes his heart so sore did mieve;

For sure she weend it was some one of those, Which he had lately seene, that for his love he chose.

XXVII

Now lesse she feared that same fatall read, That warned him of womens love bewaxe Which being ment of mortall creatures sead [vealed. For love of Nymphes she thought she need not care,

But promist him, what ever wight she weare, That she her love to him would shortly gaine.

So he her told: but soone as she did heare That Florimell it was which wrought his pains, She gan aftesh to chafe, and grieve in every vaine.

XXVIII

Yet since she saw the streight extremitie, In which his life unluckily was layd, It was no time to scan the prophecie, Whether old Proteus true or false had sayd, That his decay should happen by a mayd. It's late in death of daunger to advize, Or love forbid him, that is life denayd; But rather gan in troubled mind devize How she that Ladies libertie might enterprize.

XXIX

To Proteus selfe to sew she thought it vaine,

Who was the root and worker of her woe, Nor unto any meaner to complaine; But unto great king Neptune selfe did goe, And, on her knee before him falling lowe, Made humble suit unto his Majestie To graunt to her her sonnes life, which his

A cruell Tyrant, had presumpteouslie
By wicked doome condemn'd a wretched death
to die.

XXX

To whom God Neptune, softly smyling, thus: 'Daughter, me seemes of double wrong ye plaine,

Gainst one that hath both wronged you and us; For death t'adward I ween'd did appertaine To none but to the seas sole Soveraine. Read therefore who it is which this hath

wrought,
And for what cause; the truth discover plaine,
For never wight so evill did or thought,

But would some rightfull cause pretend, though rightly nought.'

XXXI

To whom she answer'd: 'Then, it is by

Proteus, that hath ordayn'd my sonne to die; For that a waift, the which by fortune came Upon your seas, he claym'd as propertie; And yet nor his, nor his in equitie, But yours the waift by high prerogative. Therefore I humbly crave your Majestie

It to replevie, and my some rep So shall you by one gift save alive."

XXXII

He graunted it: and streight made,

Under the Sca-gods scale autent Commanding Proteus straight mayd,

Which wandring on his seas in He lately tooke, and sithenes ke Which she receiving with me

Departed straight to Proteus if Who, reading it with inward lo Was grieved to restore the possesse,

XXXIII

Yet durst he not the warrant to But unto her delivered Florinel Whom she receiving by the lilly Admyr'd her beautise much, as a For she all living creatures did And was right joyous that she So faire a wife for her sonne Mis So home with her she streight and shewed her to him, then a stad.

XXXIV

Who soone as he beheld that a Aborn'd with all divine perfecti His cheared heart eftsoones awa Sad death, revived with her sw And feeble spirit inly felt refect As withered weed through crue! That feeles the warmth of sum flection,

Liftes up his head that did befo And gins to spread his leafe b sunshine,

XXXV

Right so himselfe did Marinell When he in place his dearest lo And though his limbs could beare,

Ne former strength returns so a Yet chearcfull signes he shewed Ne lesse was she in secret hart. But that she masked it with me For feare she should of lightness Which to another place I leafected.

THE FIFTH BOOKE

OF

FAERIE QUEENE THE

CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF ARTEGALL OR OF JUSTICE.

as I with state of present time image of the antique world compare, as mans age was in his freshest prime, the first blossome of faire vertue bare; oddes I finde twixt those, and these which are

at, through long continuance of his course, ernes the world is runne quite out of square Ne wonder; for the heavens revolution the first point of his appointed sourse; Is wandred farre from where it first was being once amisse growes daily wourse and wourse:

from the golden age, that first was named,

now at earst become a stonie one; men themselves, the which at first were framed

arthly mould, and form'd of flesh and bone. now transformed into hardest stone; has behind their backs (so backward bred)

throwne by Pyrrha and Deucalione: if then those may any worse be red, into that ere long will be degendered.

none then blame me, if in discipline Pertue and of civill uses lore, not forme them to the common line resent dayes, which are corrupted sore, to the antique use which was of yore, m good was onely for it selfe desyred, all men sought their owne, and none no more:

Justice was not for most meed out-hyred, simple Truth did rayne, and was of all Out of their proper places farre away, [move, admyred.

And all this world with them amisse doe

For that which all men then did vertue call, Is now cald vice; and that which vice was hight,

Is now hight vertue, and so us'd of all: Right now is wrong, and wrong that was is right;

As all things else in time are chaunged quight:

pight, And so doe make contrarie constitution Of all this lower world, toward his dissolu-

tion.

For who so list into the heavens looke, And search the courses of the rowling spheares, Shall find that from the point where they first tooke

Their setting forth, in these few thousand yeares They all are wandred much; that plaine appeares:

For that same golden fleecy Ram, which bore Phrixus and Helle from their stendames feares.

Hath now forgot where he was plast of yore, And shouldred hath the Bull which fayre Europa bore:

7. I

And eke the Bull hath with his bow-bent horne

So hardly butted those two twinnes of Jove, That they have crusht the Crab, and quite him borne

Into the great Nemean lions grove. So now all range, and doe at randon rove And all his creatures from their course astray, Till they arrive at their last ruinous decay,

VII

Ne is that same great glorious lampe of light,

That doth enlumine all these lesser fyres, In better case, ne keepes his course more right,

But is miscaried with the other Spheres: For since the terme of fourteene hundred veres

That learned Ptolomae his hight did take, He is declyned from that marke of theirs Nigh thirtie minutes to the Southerne lake ; That makes me feare in time he will us quite forsake.

And if to those Ægyptian wisards old, Which in Star-read were wont have best insight,

Faith may be given, it is by them told That since the time they first tooke the Sunnes

hight,
Fouretimes his place he shifted hath in sight,
And twice hath risen where he now doth

And wested twice where he ought rise aright: But most is Mars amisse of all the rest, And next to him old Saturne, that was wont be best.

For during Saturnes ancient raigne it's sayd As thy great justice, praysed over-Thnt all the world with goodnesse did a-The instrument whereof loe! here bound:

All loved vertue, no man was affin Of force, ne fraud in wight was to No warre was knowne, no dreadfu sound:

Peace universall rayn'd mongator And all things freely grew out of the Justice sate high ador'd with solem And to all people did divide le heasts:

Most sacred vertue she of all the Resembling God in his imperial m Whose soveraine powre is herein prest,

That both to good and had he deale And all his workes with Justice ha That powre he also doth to Princes And makes them like himselfe it sight

To sit in his own seate, his cause to And rule his people right, as he do mend.

Dread Soverayne Goddesse, that est sit

In seate of judgement in th' Almig And with magnificke might and we Doest to thy people righteous doon That furthest Nations filles with a Pardon the boldnesse of thy basest That dare discourse of so divine a n gall.

CANTO I.

Artegall trayn'd in Justice lore Irenaes quest pursewed; He doth avenge on Sanglier His Ladies bloud embrewed,

Thought vertue then were held in highest price, In those old times of which I doe entreat,

Yet then likewise the wicked seede of vice
Began to spring; which shortly grew full Which lawlesse men had formerly l

[beat : And with their boughes the gentle plants did But evermore some of the vertuous race Rose up, inspired with heroicke heat,

That cropt the branches of the sient base,
And with strong hand their fruitful rancknes The club of Justice dread with kin did deface.

Such first was Bacchus, that will might All th' East, before untam'd, did ov

There Justice first her princely rule Next Hercules his like ensample sli Who all the West with equall conqu And monstrous tyrants with his

endewed.



THE FAERIE QUEENE.

ш

ne of whom I have to tell, f true Justice, Artegall: tely mote remember well) tre, which did then befall, serill forth did call; our a distressed Dame tyrant did unjustly thrall, ritage, which she did clame, 2 hand withhold; Grantorto ame.

w

IV
Lady, which Irena hight,
Queene her way addresse,
yning her afflicted plight,
t of gratious redresse.
Queene, that mightie Em-

to aide all suppliants pore, inces to be Patronesse, o right her to restore; ne seem'd best skild in right-

v

justice was upbrought radle of his infancie, pth of rightfull doome was

with great industrie,
earth she lived mortallie:
d from his perfection fell
f foule iniquitie,
igst earthly men did dwell,
of justice them instructed

VI

the world she walked in this

found this gentle childe res playing his childish sport; , and with no crime defilde, ith gifts and speaches milde er. So thence him farre she

companie exilde. [raught, noursled him till yeares he scipline of justice there him

vii

taught to weigh both right g ce with due recompence, neasure out along e line of conscience, s with rigour to dispence: , for want there of mankind, to make experience

Upon wyld beasts, which she in woods did find With wrongfull powre oppressing others of their kind.

VIII

Thus she him trayned, and thus she him taught
In all the skill of deeming wrong and right,

In an the skill of deeming wrong and right,
Untill the ripenesse of mans yeares he raught;
That even wilde beasts did feare his awfull sight,
And men admyr'd his over-ruling might;
Ne any liv'd on ground that durst withstand
His dreadfull heast, much lesse him match in
fight.

Or bide the horror of his wreakfull hand, When so he list in wrath lift up his steely brand,

TX

Which steely brand, to make him dreaded more,

She gave unto him, gotten by her slight And earnest search, where it was kept in store In Joves eternall house, unwist of wight, Since he himselfe it us'd in that great fight Against the Titans, that whylome rebelled Gainst highest heaven: Chryasor it was high; Chryasor, that all other swords excelled, Well prov'd in that same day when Jove those

Gyants quelled:

x

For of most perfect metall it was made, Tempred with Adamant amongst the same, And garnisht all with gold upon the blade In goodly wise, whereof it tooke his name, And was of no lesse vertue then of fame; For there no substance was so firme and hard, But it would pierce or cleave, where so it came, Ne any armour could his dint out-ward; But wheresoever it did light, it throughly shard,

ХI

Now, when the world with sinne gan to abound,

Astræa loathing lenger here to space [found, Mongst wicked men, in whom no truth she Return'd to heaven, whence she deriv'd her race:

Where she hath now an everlasting place Mongst those twelve signes, which nightly we doe see

The heavens bright-shining baudricke to en-And is the Virgin, sixt in her degree, [chace; And next her selfe her righteous ballance hanging bee.

XII

But when she parted hence she left her groome. An yron man, which did on her attend Alwayes to execute her stedfast doome,
And willed him with Artegall to wend,
And doe what ever thing he did intend:
His name was Talus, made of yron mould,
Immoveable, resistlesse, without end;
Who in his hand an yron flale did hould,
With which he thresht out falshood, and did
truth unfould.

XIII

He now went with him in this new inquest, Him for to aide, if aide he chaumst to neede, Against that cruell Tyrant, which opprest The faire Irena with his foule misdeede, And kept the crowne in which she should suc-

ceed:

And now together on their way they bin,
When as they saw a Squire in squallid weed
Lamenting sore his sorrowfull sad tyne,
With many bitter teares shed from his blubbred eyne.

XIV

To whom as they approched, they espide
A sorie sight as ever seene with eye,
An headlesse Ladie lying him beside
In her owne blood all wallow'd wofully,
That her gay clothes did in discolour die,
Much was he moved at that ruefull sight;
And flam'd with zeale of vengeance inwardly,
He askt who had that Dame so fouly dight,
Or whether his owne hand, or whether other
wight?

XV

'Ah! woe is me, and well-away!' (quoth hee, Bursting forth teares like springs out of a banke),
'That ever I this dismall day did see! Full farre was I from thinking such a pranke; Yet litle losse it were, and mickle thanke, If I should graunt that I have doen the same,

That I mote drinke the cup whereof she dranke, But that I should die guiltie of the blame The which another did, who now is fled with shame.'

XVI

"Who was it then," (sayd Artegall) "that wrought?

And why? doe it declare unto me trew.'
'A knight,' (said he) 'if knight he may be thought

That did his hand in Ladies bloud embrew,
And for no cause, but as I shall you show.
This day as I in solace sate hereby
With a fayre love, whose losse I now do rew,
There came this knight, having in companie
This lucklesse Ladie which now here doth
headlesse lie,

XYII

"He, whether mine seem'd fayer in he of Or that he wexed weary of his own. Would change with me, but I did it was So did the Ladies both, as may be known. But he, whose spirit was with pride adden Would not so rest contented with his rather throwne,

Fro me reft mine away by lawless min.

And on his steed her set to bear her

XVIII

Which when his Ladie saw, she foller had and on him catching hold gan load need Not so to leave her, nor away to cast. But rather of his hand be sought to des With that his sword he drew all wanhad. And at one stroke cropt off her had a scorne,

In that same place whereas it now delt is So he my love away with him bath loss. And left me here both his and mine over to morne.

XIX

'Aread' (sayd he) 'which way then all make?

And by what markes may be be known to 'To hope' (quoth he) 'him scone to so That hence so long departed, is but was but yet he pricked over yonder plane. And, as I marked, bore upon his sheld. By which it's easie him to know was A broken sword within a bloodie salt. Expressing well his nature which the did wield.'

XX

No sooner sayd, but streight he after this yron page, who him purses it of the As that it seem a above the ground he was swift as swallow in her first had strong as Lyon in his lordly might lit was not long before he overtooke. Sir Sanglier, (so cleeped was that Kingle Whom at the first he ghessed by his the tooke, he tooke.

XXI

He bad him stay, and backe with him?
Who, full of scorne to be commanded in
The Lady to alight did eft require.
Whilest he reformed that uncivill fo.
And streight at him with all his force did
Who mov'd no more therewith, then where the street of the str



THE FAERIE QUEENE.

leaping lent him such a knocke. blocke.

XXII

e could him selfe recure againe. iron paw he seized had; he wak't out of his warelesse paine. im selfe unwist so ill bestad, e could not wag: Thence he him

a beast appointed to the stall: vhereof the Lady sore adrad to fly for feare of being thrall; quickly stayd, and forst to wend all.

XXIII

he place they came, where Artegall ne carefull Squire did then abide, ran him to demaund of all twixt him and that Squire betide: sterne countenance and indignant

re, that of all he guiltlesse stood, user thereuppon defide; he did shed that Ladies bloud, way his love, but his owne proper

XXIV

he Squire perceive him selfe too e his defiaunce in the field. chose his challenge off to breake, prove his right with speare and guilty chose himselfe to yield: il by signes perceiving plaine was not which that Lady kild, trange Knight, the fairer love to

raine;

rdele, or by blooddy fight. haps mote fall to either side; ease that I your cause decide, nay all further quarrell end, weare my judgement to abide.'
y both did franckly condiscend,
doome with listfull eares did both ĸL.

he living Lady claime your right,

Let both the dead and living equally ground he layd him like a sence- Devided be betwixt you here in sight, And each of either take his share aright : But looke, who does dissent from this my read, He for a twelve moneths day shall in despight Beare for his penaunce that same Ladies head, To witnesse to the world that she by him is dead.'

XXVII

Well pleased with that doome was Sangliere, And offred streight the Lady to be slaine; But that same Squire, to whom she was more dere,

When as he saw she should be cut in twaine, Did yield she rather should with him remaine Alive, then to him selfe be shared dead; And rather then his love should suffer paine He chose with shame to beare that Ladies head: True love despiseth shame, when life is cald in dread.

XXVIII

Whom when so willing Artegall perceaved; 'Not so, thou Squire,' (he sayd) 'but thine I deeme

The living Lady, which from thee he reaved, For worthy thou of her doest rightly seeme. And you, Sir Knight, that love so light esteeme,

As that ye would for little leave the same, Take here your owne, that doth you best beseeme

And with it beare the burden of defame, Your owne dead Ladies head, to tell abrode your shame.'

XXIX

But Sangliere disdained much his doome, And sternly gan repine at his beheast; Ne would for ought obay, as did become, To beare that Ladies head before his breast, bout by sleight the truth thereout Until that Talus had his pride represt, And forced him, maulgre, it up to reare. Who when he saw it bootelesse to resist 'Now sure this doubtfull causes He tooke it up, and thence with him did beare, but by Sacrament be tride, [right As rated Spaniell takes his burden up for feare.

xxx

Much did that Squire Sir Artegall adore For his great justice, held in high regard, And as his Squire him offred evermore To serve, for want of other meete reward. And wend with him on his adventure hard; But he thereto would by no meanes consent, But leaving him forth on his journey far'd:

1,' (sayd he) 'ye both the dead Ne wight with him but onely Talus went; They two enough t' encounter an whole Regi ment.

CANTO II.

Artegall heares of Florimeff,
Does with the Pagun fight;
Him slaies, drownes Lady Munera,
Does race her castle quight.

NOUGHT is more honorable to a knight, Ne better doth beseeme brave chevalry, Then to defend the feeble in their right, And wrong redresse in such as wend awry: Whilome those great Heroes got thereby Their greatest glory for their rightfull deedes, And place deserved with the Gods on by. Herein the noblesse of this knight exceedes Who now to perils great for justice sake proceedes.

To which as he now was uppon the way, He chaunst to meet a Dwarfe in hasty course, Whom he requir'd his forward hast to stay, Till he of tidings mote with him discourse. Loth was the Dwarfe, yet did he stay perforse,

And gan of sundry newes his store to tell, As to his memory they had recourse; But chiefly of the fairest Florimell, How she was found againe, and spousde to Marinell.

For this was Dony, Florimels owne Dwarfe, Whom having lost, (as ye have heard whyleare)

And finding in the way the scattred scarfe, The fortune of her life long time did feare: But of her health when Artegall did heare, And safe returne, he was full inly glad. And askt him where and when her bridale cheare

Should be solemniz'd; for, if time he had, He would be there, and honor to her spousall nd.

'Within three daies,' (quoth he) 'as I do here,

It will be at the Castle of the Strond; What time, if naught me let, I will be there To doe her service so as I am bond: But in my way, a little here beyond, A cursed cruell Sarazin doth wonne,

That keepes a Bridges passage by strong Into the which whom so he overti hond,

And many errant Knights bath the That makes all men for feare that to shonne.

What mister wight,' (quoth he far hence

Is he, that doth to travellers such He is' (said he) 'a man of great Expert in battell and in deedes of And more emboldned by the wick With which his daughter doth hi port:

Having great Lordships got and go Through strong oppression of his p By which he stil them holds, and strong effort.

'And dayly he his wrongs encre For never wight he lets to passe th Over his Bridge, albee he rich or I But he him makes his passage-per Else he doth hold him backe or be Thereto he hath a groome of erill. Whose scalp is bare, that bonds

wray, Which pols and pils the poore in p But he him selfe uppon the rich nize.

'His name is hight Pollente, riel For that he is so puissant and stre That with his powre he all doth or And makes them subject to his mi And some by sleight he eke doth For on a Bridge he custometh to Which is but narrow, but exceedi And in the same are many trap-fa Through which the rider downs through oversight.

' And underneath the same a rive That is both swift and dangerous all;

All destitute of helpe doth headlor

rward forthright his ready way did Such was betwixt these two the troublesome

to pas.

selfe through practise usuall, h into the floud, and there assaies fused through his sodaine fall, and man he equally dismaies, both them drownes, or travterous aies.

of her wicked threasury, with wrongs hath heaped up so hy Princes she in wealth exceedes,

th he take the spoile of them at

1-t all the countrey lying ny evenue of her plenteous meedes: is Munera, agreeing with her

she is full faire, and rich attired, n hands and silver feete beside, Lords have her to wife desired, em all despiseth for great pride. ly life,' (sayd he) 'and God to guide, way will I this day betake, t Bridge whereas he doth abide: ne thither lead.' No more he spake,

place he came within a while, he Bridge he ready armed saw n, awayting for some spoile: hey to the passage gan to draw, to them came with scull all raw, ge money did of them require, to the custome of their law: [hire;' e aunawerd wroth, 'Loe! there thy lid expire.

XII

ien the Pagan saw he wexed wroth, ht him selfe unto the fight addrest, Artegall behinde: so both an with ready speares in rest. ete, a trap was letten downe to fall ud: streight leapt the Carle unblest, ng that his foe was falne withall;

ng both together in the floud, at other tyrannously flew; he water cooled their whot bloud, in them kindled choler new:

But there the Paynim, who that use well knew To fight in water, great advantage had, That oftentimes him nigh he overthrew: And eke the courser whereuppon he rad Could swim like to a fish, whiles he his backe bestrad.

Which oddes when as Sir Artegall espide, He saw no way but close with him in hast; laughter brings, that dwels thereby; And to him driving strongly downe the tide at comes doth take, and therewith Uppon his iron coller griped fast, [fill That with the straint his wesand nigh he brast.

There they together strove and struggled long There they together strong and to cast;
Either the other from his steede to cast;
Address his griple strong [hong. Ne ever Artegall his griple strong [hong. For any thing wold slacke, but still upon him

As when a Dolphin and a Sele are met In the wide champian of the Ocean plaine With cruell chause their courages they whet, The maysterdome of each by force to gaine, And dreadfull battaile twixt them do darraine:

They snuf, they snort, they bounce, they rage, they rore, That all the sea, disturbed with their traine, Doth frie with fome above the surges hore.

uprore. XVI So Artegall at length him forst forsake His horses backe for dread of being drownd, And to his handy swimming him betake. Eftsoones him selfe he from his hold unbownd,

And then no ods at all in him he fownd; For Artegall in swimming skilfull was, And durst the depth of any water sownd So ought each Knight, that use of perill has, hat word him strooke, that streight In swimming be expert, through waters force

Then very doubtfull was the warres event, Uncertaine whether had the better side; For both were skild in that experiment, And both in armes well traind, and throughly tride: ie midst, whereas they brest to brest But Artegall was better breath'd beside, And towards th' end grew greater in his might,

That his faint foe no longer could abide ng that his foe was falne withall; His puissance, ne beare him selfe upright; s well aware, and leapt before his But from the water to the land betooke his flight.

But Artegall pursewd him still so neare With bright Chrysaor in his cruell hand, That as his head he gan a litle reare Above the brincke to tread upon the land, He smote it off, that tumbling on the strand It bit the earth for very fell despight, And gnashed with his teeth, as if he band High God, whose goodnesse he despaired quight, Or curst the hand which did that vengeance on him dight.

XIX

His corps was carried downe along the Lee, Whose waters with his filthy bloud it stayned; But his blasphemous head, that all might see, He pitcht upon a pole on high ordayned; Where many years it afterwards remayned, To be a mirrour to all mighty men, In whose right hands great power is contayned, That none of them the feeble over-ren, But alwaies doe their powre within just compasse pen.

That done, unto the Castle he did wend, In which the Paynims daughter did abide, Guarded of many which did her defend: Of whom he entrance sought, but was denide, And with reprochfull blasphemy defide, Beaten with stones downe from the battilment, That he was forced to withdraw aside, And bad his servant Talus to invent Which way he enter might without endangerment.

XXI

Eftsoones his Page drew to the Castle gate, And with his iron flale at it let flie, That all the warders it did sore amate, The which erewhile spake so reprochfully, And made them stoupe that looked earst so hie, Yet still he bet and bounst uppon the dore, And thundred strokes thereon so hideouslie, That all the peece he shaked from the flore, And filled all the house with feare and great uprore,

XXII

With noise whereof the Lady forth appeared Uppon the Castle wall; and, when she saw The daungerous state in which she stood, she feared

The sad effect of her neare overthrow; And gan entreat that iron man below To cease his outrage, and him faire besought; Sith neither force of stones which they did throw, [wrought, throw, [wrought, Nor powr of charms, which she against him

Might otherwise prevaile, or make him cease for ought.

XXIII

But, when as yet she saw him to proceede Unmov'd with praiers or with pitcous thought, And burning all to ashes powr'd it

She ment him to corrupt with go And causde great sackes with on Unto the battilment to be upbrong And powred forth over the Castle That she might win some time th bought,

Whilest he to gathering of the gol But he was nothing mov'd as therewithall:

But still continu'd his assault the And layd on load with his huge y That at the length he has yrent th And made way for his maister to a Who being entred, nought did the For wight against his powre the reare

Each one did flie; their hearts be And hid them selves in corners he And eke their dame halfe dead d self for feare.

XXV

Long they her sought, yet now they finde her. That sure they ween'd she was see

But Talus, that could like a lime-li And all things secrete wisely could At length found out wherens she h Under an heape of gold. Thence By the faire lockes, and fowly did Withouten pitty of her goodly her

That Artegall him selfe her seem

did rew.

XXVI

Yet for no pitty would he change Of Justice, which in Talus hand di Who rudely hayld her forth without Still holding up her suppliant har And kneeling at his feete submissi But he her suppliant hands, those ha And eke her feete, those feete of si Which sought unrightcourness sold,

Chopt off, and nayld on high the

Her selfe then tooke he by the sci In vaine loud crying, and into the Over the Castle wall adowne her o And there her drowned in the durt But the streame washt away her g Thereafter all that mucky pelfe he The spoile of peoples evil gotten g The which her sire had scrap't by crooke,

XXVIII

y all that Castle quite he raced. the sole of his foundation e hewen stones thereof defaced, : mote be no hope of reparation, ry thereof to any nation

when Talus throughly had perrmed.

ill undid the evill fashion, d customes of that Bridge refourmed; me, unto his former journey he re-

rned:

they measur'd mickle weary way, it length nigh to the sea they drew; as they did travell on a day before them, far as they could vew, r people gathered in a crew; eat assembly they did much admire, there the like resort they knew. es them they coasted, to enquire ng so many nations met did there ire.

xxx

ev beheld a mighty Gyant stand cke, and holding forth on hie great paire of ballance in his hand, ch he boasted, in his surquedrie he world he would weigh equallie, ie had the same to counterpoys; whereof he weighed vanity, is ballaunce full of idle toys: idmired much of fooles, women, and

that he would all the earth uptake ne sea, divided each from either: he of the fire one ballaunce make, f th'ayre, without or wind or wether: hose weight he would not misse a But if thou now shouldst weigh them new in her: what surplus did of each remaine, to his owne part restore the same aine:

IIXXX

, he sayd, they all unequall were, encroched upon others share; e sea (which plaine he shewed there) e the earth; so did the fire the aire; rest did others parts empaire, ere realmes and nations run awry. he undertooke for to repaire, they were formed aunciently nings would reduce unto equality.

XXXIII

Therefore the vulgar did about him flocke, And cluster thicke unto his leasings vaine, Like foolish flies about an hony-crocke; In hope by him great benefite to gaine, And uncontrolled freedome to obtaine. All which when Artegall did see and heare, How he mis-led the simple peoples traine, In sdeignfull wize he drew unto him near And thus unto him spake, without regard or feare.

'Thou that presum'st to weigh the world And all things to an equall to restore, [anew, Instead of right me seemes great dost shew,

And far above thy forces pitch to sore; For ere thou limit what is lesse or more In every thing, thou oughtest first to know What was the poyse of every part of yore: And looke then how much it doth overflow Or faile thereof, so much is more then just to trow.

xxxv

'For at the first they all created were In goodly measure by their Makers might; And weighed out in ballaunces so nere, That not a dram was missing of their right: The earth was in the middle centre pight, In which it doth immoveable abide, Hemd in with waters like a wall in sight, And they with aire, that not a drop can slide: Al which the heavens containe, and in their courses guide.

XXXVI

'Such heavenly justice doth among them raine.

That every one doe know their certaine bound, ald he ballaunce heaven and hell In which they doe these many yeares remaine, And mongst them al no change hath yet beene

> We are not sure they would so long remaine: All change is perillous, and all chaunce unsound. Therefore leave off to weigh them all againe, Till we may be assur'd they shall their course retaine.

XXXVII

'Thou foolishe Elfe,' (said then the Gyant

'Seest not how badly all things present bea, And each estate quite out of order goth? The sea it selfs doest thou not plaintly see Encroch uppon the land there under thee? And th' earth it selfs how daily its increast By all that dying to it turned be:

Were it not good that wrong were then succeast. In vaine therefore doest thou now take And from the most that some were given to the least ?

XXXVIII

'Therefore I will throw downe these mountaines hie,

And make them levell with the lowly plaine; These towring rocks, which reach unto the skie, I will thrust downe into the deepest maine, And, as they were, them equalize againe. Tyrants, that make men subject to their law, I will suppresse, that they no more may raine; And Lordings curbe that commons over-aw, And all the wealth of rich men to the poore will draw.

XXXXIX

'Of things unseene how canst thou deeme aright,

Then answered the righteous Artegall, [sight? 'Sith thou misdeem'st so much of things in What though the sea with waves continuall Doe eate the earth, it is no more at all; Ne is the earth the lesse, or loseth ought, For whatsoever from one place doth fall Is with the tide unto another brought : For there is nothing lost, that may be found if sought.

'Likewise the carth is not augmented more By all that dying into it doe fade; For of the earth they formed were of yore : How ever gay their blossome or their blade Doe flourish now, they into dust shall vade. What wrong then is it, if that when they die They turne to that whereof they first were made? All in the powre of their great Maker lie: All creatures must obey the voice of the Most Hie.

'They live, they die, like as he doth ordaine, Ne ever any asketh reason why. The hils doe not the lowly dales disdaine, The dales doe not the lofty hils envy. He maketh Kings to sit in soverainty; He maketh subjects to their powre obay ; He pulleth downe, he setteth up on hy; He gives to this, from that he takes away, For all we have is his; what he list doe, he 'Now take the right likewise,' sayd M' And counterpeise the same with so

XLII

What ever thing is done by him is donne, Ne any may his mighty will withstand; Ne any may his soveraine power shonne, Ne loose that he hath bound with stedfast But all the wrongs that he therein comband.

Might not it poise; yet did he labour

To call to count, or weigh his worker a Whose connscis depth thou cand not stand; Sith of things subject to thy daily ver

Thou doest not know the causes, has courses dew.

XLIII

For take thy ballaunce, if then be so And weigh the winde that under heave blow:

Or weigh the light that in the East dol Or weigh the thought that from man doth flow : But if the weight of these thou canst no Weigh but one word which from thy la

fall: For how caust thou those greater secrets That doest not know the least thing of the Ill can be rule the great that cannot re small.

XLIV

Therewith the Gyant much abashed s That he of little things made reckon Yet the least word that ever could be Within his ballaunce he could way are 'Which is' (sayd he) 'more heavy's weight,

The right or wrong, the false or else the He answered that he would try it stre So he the words into his ballaunce the But streight the winged words out of I launce flew.

XLV

Wroth wext he then, and sayd that were light, Ne would within his ballnunce well alo But he could justly weigh the wrong Well then, sayd Artegall, let it be to First in one ballance set the true ask He did so first, and then the false he la In th' other scale ; but still it downe if And by no meane could in the weight b

wrong. So first the right he put into one scale,

For by no meanes the false will with the be wayd.

And then the Gyant strove with p strong

To fill the other scale with so much w

, and chauf'd, and proved every way : e wrongs could not a litle right downe

XLVII

when he saw he greatly grew in rage, est would his balances have broken; gall him fairely gan asswage,
Be not upon thy balance wroken, doe nought but right or wrong beken e mind the doome of right must bee: kewise of words, the which be spoken, must be the ballance, to decree e, whether with truth or falshood they ree.

XLVIII the truth and set the right aside, with wrong or falshood will not fare, two wrongs together to be tride, wo falses, of each equall share, together doe them both compare; is one, and right is ever one. ; and then plaine it did appeare, of them the greater were attone; t sate in the middest of the beame me.

he right from thence did thrust away, s not the right which he did seeke. r strove extremities to way, o diminish, th' other for to eeke; meane he greatly did misleeke. hen so lewdly minded Talus found, ng nigh unto him, cheeke by cheeke, lered him from off the higher ground, n the rock him throwing, in the sea a dround.

a ship, whom cruell tempest drives cke with horrible dismay, ered ribs in thousand peeces rives, ling all her geares and goodly ray e her selfe misfortunes piteous pray. the cliffe the wretched Gyant tumed ballances in peeces lay, nbled.

That when the people, which had there about Long wayted, saw his sudden desolation, They gan to gather in tumultuous rout, And mutining to stirre up civill faction For certaine losse of so great expectation: For well they hoped to have got great good, And wondrous riches by his innovation. Therefore resolving to revenge his blood They rose in armes, and all in battell order stood.

Which lawlesse multitude him comming too In warlike wise when Artegall did vew, He much was troubled, ne wist what to doo: For loth he was his noble hands t' embrew In the base blood of such a rascall crew; And otherwise, if that he should retire He fear'd least they with shame would him pursew:

Therefore he Talus to them sent t' inquire The cause of their array, and truce for to desire.

LIII

But soone as they him nigh approching spide, They gan with all their weapons him assay, And rudely stroke at him on every side; Yet nought they could him hurt, ne ought dismay:

But when at them he with his flaile gan lay, He like a swarme of flyes them overthrew; Ne any of them durst come in his way But here and there before his presence flew And hid themselves in holes and bushes from his vew.

As when a Faulcon hath with nimble flight Flowne at a flush of Ducks foreby the brooke The trembling foule dismayd with dreadfull sight Of death, the which them almost overtooke,

Doe hide themselves from her astonying looke Amongst the flags and covert round about. When Talus saw they all the field forsooke, red bones all broken rudely rumbled: And none appear'd of all that raskall rout, he high-aspyring with huge ruine To Artegall he turn'd and went with him throughout.

CANTO III.

The spousals of faire Florimell, Where turney many knights : here Braggadochio is uncas'd In all the Ladies sights.

AFTER long stormes and tempests overblowne The sunne at length his joyous face doth cleare: So when as fortune all her spight hath showne, Some blisfull houres at last must needes appeare;

Else should afflicted wights oftimes despeire: So comes it now to Florimell by tourne, After long sorrowes suffered whyleare, In which captiv'd she many moneths did

mourne, To tast of joy, and to wont pleasures to retourne.

Who being freed from Proteus cruell band By Marinell was unto him affide, And by him brought agains to Faerie land, Where he her spous'd, and made his joyous bride.

The time and place was blazed farre and wide, And solemne feasts and giusts ordain'd therefore:

To which there did resort from every side Of Lords and Ladies infinite great store; Ne any Knight was absent that brave courage

III

To tell the glorie of the feast that day, The goodly service, the devicefull sights, The bridegromes state, the brides most rich

aray, The pride of Ladies, and the worth of knights, The royall banquets, and the rare delights, Were worke fit for an Herauld, not for me: But for so much as to my lot here lights, That with this present treatise doth agree, True vertue to advance, shall here recounted bec.

When all men had with full satietie Of meates and drinkes their appetites suffiz'd, To deedes of armes and proofe of chevalrie They gan themselves addresse, full rich aguiz'd

As each one had his furnitures deviz'd.

And first of all issu'd Sir Marinell, [terpriz'd And with him sixe knights more, which en-

To chalenge all in right of Floriscil, And to maintaine that she all other

The first of them was hight Sir One A noble Knight, and tride in hard as The second had to name Sir Bellison But second unto none in prowesse p The third was Brunell, famous in his The fourth Ecastor, of exceeding mig The fift Armeddan, skild in lovely li The sixt was Lansack, a redoubted a many a fight.

And them against came all that list From every coast and countrie under None was debard, but all had leave ! The trompets sound, then all togethe Full many deeds of armes that day we And many knights unborst, and ma ded,

As fortune fell; yet little lost or wor But all that day the greatest prays: To Marinell, whose name the Herald sounded,

VII

The second day, so soone as more Appear'd in heaven, into the field th And there all day continew'd cruell With divers fortune fit for such a ga In which all strove with perill to will Yet whether side was victor note be But at the last the trompets did pro That Marinell that day deserved bes So they disparted were, and all me rest

VIII

The third day came, that should o lend Of all the rest; and then this warlib

Together met of all to make an end. There Marinell great deeds of ar

shew,

gh the thickest like a Lyon flew, ff helmes, and ryving plates ason-

7 one his daunger did eschew: his dreadfull strokes did thonder. en stood amaz'd, and at his might Keeping there close with him in pretious store wonder.

t on earth can alwayes happie id ? r prowesse greater perils find. past amongst his enemies band, have him enclosed so behind, neanes he can himselfe outwind: perforce they have him prisoner n: pe succour had in time him over-

x 'd, whylest they were thus ill l into the Tilt-yard came, zadochio, whom he lately met ray with that his snowy Dame: n he understood by common fame hap to Marinell betid. ras mov'd at so unworthie shame, at that boaster prayd, with whom [hid. his shield with him, to be the better

e went, and soone them over-hent, were leading Marinell away; issayld with dreadlesse hardiment, he burden of their prize to stay. an hundred knights of that array, h' one halfe upon himselfe did set, tavd behind to gard the pray: long the former fiftie bet. the other fiftie soone the prisoner

XII

ie brought Sir Marinell againe; ing quickly arm'd againe anew, ogether joyned might and maine, h on all the other crew: h sore havocke soone they over-I quite out of the field, that none em durst his head to perill shew. y left Lords of the field alone:

Il by him was rescu'd from his

XIII Which when he had perform'd then backe

againe To Braggadochio did his shield restore, Who all this while behind him did remaine,

That his false Ladie, as ye heard afore. Then did the trompets sound, and Judges rose, And all these knights, which that day armour bore,

Came to the open hall to listen whose The honour of the prize should be adjudg'd by those.

XIV

And thether also came in open sight Fayre Florimell, into the common hall n;
ey doe with captive bands him bind; To greet his guerdon unto every Kuigus,
ley doe with captive bands him bind; And best to him to whom the best should fall.

And best to him to whom the best should fall. Then for that stranger knight they loud did call,

To whom that day they should the girlond yield, Who came not forth; but for Sir Artegall Came Braggadochio, and did shew his shield. Which bore the Sunne brode blazed in a gol-

XV

den field.

The sight whereof did all with gladnesse fill: So unto him they did addeeme the prise Of all that Tryumph. Then the trompets shrill Don Braggadochios name resounded thrise: So courage lent a cloke to cowardise. And then to him came favrest Florimell, And goodly gan to greet his brave emprise, And thousand thankes him yeeld, that had so

well Approv'd that day that she all others did excell.

To whom the boaster, that all knights did blot

With proud disdaine did scornefull answere make. That what he did that day, he did it not For her, but for his owne deare Ladies sake, Whom on his perill he did undertake Both her and eke all others to excell: And further did uncomely speaches crake,

Much did his words the gentle Ladie quell, And turn'd aside for shame to heare what he did tell.

XVII

Then forth he brought his snowy Florimele, Whom Trompart had in keeping there beside. Covered from peoples gazement with a vele: \
Whom when discovered they had throughly eide.

With great amazement they were stupefide; And said, that surely Florimell it was, Or if it were not Florimell so tride, That Florimell her selfe she then did pas. So feeble skill of perfect things the vulgar has.

XVIII

Which when as Marmell beheld likewise, He was therewith exceedingly dismayd, Ne wist he what to thinke, or to devise; But, like as one whom feends had made affrayd, He long astonisht stood, ne ought he sayd, Ne ought he did, but with fast fixed eies He gazed still upon that snowy mayd; Whom ever as he did the more avize, The more to be true Florimell he did surmize.

XIX

As when two sunnes appeare in the asure skye, Mounted in Phœbus charet fierie bright, Both darting forth faire beames to each mans

And both adorn'd with lampes of flaming light; All that behold so strange prodigious sight, Not knowing natures worke, nor what to weene, Are rapt with wonder and with rare affright, So stood Sir Marinell, when he had seene The semblant of this false by his faire beauties Like the true saint beside the h Queene,

All which when Artegall, who all this while Stood in the prease close covered, well advewed.

And saw that boasters pride and gracelesse

guile, He could no longer beare, but forth issewed, And unto all himselfe there open shewed, And to the boaster said; 'Thou losell base, That hast with borrowed plumes thy selfe endewed,

And others worth with leasings doest deface, When they are all restor'd thou shalt rest in disgrace.

XXI

'That shield, which thou doest beare, was it

Which this dayes honour sav'd to Marinell: But not that arme, nor thou the man, I reed, Which didst that service unto Florimell. or proofe shew forth thy sword, and let it tell What strokes, what dreadfull stoure, it stird this day;

Or shew the wounds which unto thee befell; Or shew the sweat with which thou diddest So sharpe a battell, that so many did dismay.

XXII

But this the sword which we cruell stounds,

this the arme the which th And these the signs ' (so show vounds)

By which that glorie gotten do As for this Ladie, which he show Is not (I wager) Florimell at all But some fayre Francon, fit for That by misfortune in his hand For proofe whereof he bad th forth call.

So forth the noble Ladie was 3 Adorn'd with honor and all co Whereto her hashful shamefastn A great increase in her faire blu As roses did with lilies interlace For of those words, the which threw,

She inly yet conceived great di Whom when as all the people's They shouted loud, and signes of did shew.

Then did he set her by that se Of both their beauties to make And triall, whether should the Streight-way, so soone as both Th' enchaunted Damzell vanish Her snowy substance melted a Ne of that goodly hew remays But th' emptie girdle which abou wrought.

XXX

As when the daughter of Tha Hath in a watry cloud displays Her goodly bow, which paints That all men wonder at her co All suddenly, ere one can looke The glorious picture vanisheth Ne any token doth thereof abic So did this Ladies goodly form And into nothing goe, ere one c

XXVI

Which when as all that prese They stricken were with great And their faint harts with sen queld.

To see the thing, that seem'd That what of it became none un And Braggadochio selfe with di



THE FAERIE OUEENE.

vas in his despeyring mood, lifelesse corse immoveable ne

XXVII

ll that golden belt uptooke, f all her spoyle was onely left : not hers, as many it mistooke, lls owne girdle, from her rest as flying, like a weary weft, oule monster which did her com-

eat; which he unbuckling eft the favrest Florimell, about her tender wast it fitted

XXVIII

Ladies often had assayd middles that faire belt to knit; one suppos'd to be a mayd: ne of all their lovnes would fit, ill about her fastned it. it had, that to no womans wast l or labour it would sit. ; she were continent and chast, d lose or breake, that many had ast.

XXIX

nus they busied were bout Floriill Braggadochio to defame, as by fortune then befell, the thickest prease of people Clame: ood steed, which he had stolne, to hand seizing on his golden bit, her drew his sword; for with the e thiefe there deadly to have smit: he not bene held, he nought had I of it.

XXX

eat hurly-burly moved was the hall for that same warlike dochio would not let him pas, would him algates have perforse, ve upon his carrion corse. iblous stirre when Artegall perχd. em drew to stay th' avengers forse, quire how was that steed bereaved, y might extort, or else by slight aved?

nat piteous storie, which befell worull couple which were slaine,

And their young bloodie babe to him gan tell; With whom whiles he did in the wood remaine,

His horse purloyned was by subtill traine, For which he chalenged the thiefe to fight: But he for nought could him thereto constraine;

For as the death he hated such despight, And rather had to lose then trie in armes his right.

TYYII

Which Artegall well hearing, (though no more By law of armes there neede ones right to trie, As was the wont of warlike knights of yore, Then that his foe should him the field denie,) Yet, further right by tokens to descrie, He askt what privie tokens he did beare? 'If that' (said Guyon) 'may you satisfie, Within his mouth a blacke spot doth appeare, Shapt like a horses shoe, who list to seeke it there.

XXXIII

Whereof to make due tryall, one did take The horse in hand within his mouth to looke: But with his heeles so sorely he him strake. That all his ribs he quite in peeces broke, That never word from that day forth he spoke. Another, that would seeme to have more wit, Him by the bright embrodered hed-stall tooke; But by the shoulder him so sore he bit, That he him maymed quite, and all his shoulder split.

XXXIV

Ne he his mouth would open unto wight, Untill that Guyon selfe unto him spake, And called Brigadore, (so was he hight,) Whose voice so soone as he did undertake, Eftsoones he stood as still as any stake, And suffred all his secret marke to see: And, when as he him nam'd, for joy he brake His bands, and follow'd him with gladfull glee, And friskt, and flong aloft, and louted low on knee.

XXXV

Thereby Sir Artegall did plaine areed That unto him the horse belong'd, and sayd; 'Lo there! Sir Guyon, take to you the steed, As he with golden saddle is arayd. And let that losell, plainely now displayd, Hence fare on foot, till he an horse have gayned.'

But the proud boaster gan his doome upbrayd And him revil'd, and rated, and disdayned,
That judgement so unjust against him had ordayned.

XXXVI

Much was the knight incenst with his lewd word

To have revenged that his villeny; And thrise did lay his hand upon his sword, To have him slaine, or dearely doen aby: But Guyon did his choler pacify, Saying, 'Sir knight, it would dishonour bee To you that are our judge of equity, To wreake your wrath on such a carle as hee: It's punishment enough that all his shame doe see.

XXXVII

So did he mitigate Sir Artegall; But Talus by the backe the boaster hent, And drawing him out of the open hall Upon him did inflict this punishment: First he his beard did shave, and fowly shent, Then from him reft his shield, and it renverst,

And blotted out his armes with falshood blent, And himselfe baffuld, and his armes unherst, And broke his sword in twaine, and all his armour sperst.

XXXVIII

The whiles his guilefull groome was fled away, But vaine it was to thinke from him to flie; Who overtaking him did disaray, And all his face deform'd with infamie,

And out of court him seen So ought all faveours the shame

And armes dishonour with From all brave knights be be For oft their lewdness blo with blame.

XXXIX

Now when these counterf Out of the fore-side of their And in the sight of all mer All gan to jest and gibe full At the remembrance of their Ladies can laugh at La Knights,

To thinke with how great v He them abused through hi And what a glorious shee their sights.

There leave we them in pl Spending their joyous da And taking usurie of time for With all deare delices and r Fit for such Ladies and such And turne we here to this fr Our wearie yokes, to gather That, when as time to Arter We on his first adventure send.

CANTO IV.

Artegall dealeth right betwixt Two brethren that doe strive: Saves Terpine from the gallow tree, And doth from death reprive.

Whoso upon him selfe will take the skill True Justice unto people to divide, Had neede have mightie hands for to fulfill That which he doth with righteous doome decide,

And for to maister wrong and puissant pride; For value it is to deeme of things aright, And makes wrong doers justice to deride, Unlesse it be perform'd with dreadlesse might; For powre is the right hand of Justice truely hight.

II

Therefore whylome to knights of great em-The charge of Justice given was in trust,

That they might execute

And with their might beat Which proudly did impugne Whereof no braver presiden Remaines on earth, preserve Of rude oblivion and long ti Then this of Artegall, which to say.

Who having lately left that Enlineked fast in wedlockes Bold Marinell with Florime With whom great feast and fond. Departed from the Castle of

THE FAERIE QUEENE.

w his adventures first intent, ong agoe he taken had in hond: t with him for his assistance went, t great yron groome, his gard and overnment.

hom, as he did passe by the sea shore, inst to come whereas two comely ouires thren, whom one wombe together bore, ed up with different desire r strove, and kindled wrathfull fires: m beside two seemely damzells stood, seanes seeking to asswage their ires; h faire words, but words did little good, h sharpe threats, but threats the more creast their mood.

ere before them stood a Coffer strong ind on every side with iron bands, ning to have suffred mickle wrong, y being wreckt uppon the sands, carried farre from forraine lands. that for it these Squires at ods did 11, [hands: nt against them selves their cruell more those Damzells did forestall rious encounter, and their fiercenesse all.

nely fixt they were with dint of sword tailes doubtfull proofe their rights to end their fury would afford, t to them Fortune would justify: they both in readinesse thereby the combate with cruell intent, rtegall, arriving happily, a while their greedy bickerment, had questioned the cause of their issent.

VII

m the elder did this aunswere frame: eete ye, Sir, that we two brethren be, n our sire, Milesio by name, ally bequeath his lands in fee, ids, which ye there before you see in sea; of which the one appeares a little Mount of small degree, as great and wide, ere many yeares same other Isle, that greater bredth ow beares.

TITE

s devouring Sea, that naught doth

The most part of my land hath washt away, And throwne it up unto my brothers share: So his encreased, but mine did empaire. Before which time I lov'd, as was my lot, That further mayd, hight Philtera the faire, With whom a goodly doure I should have got, And should have joyned bene to her in wedlocks knot.

'Then did my younger brother, Amidas, Love that same other Damzell, Lucy bright, To whom but little dowre allotted was: Her vertue was the dowre that did delight. What better dowre can to a dame be hight? But now, when Philtra saw my lands decay And former livelod fayle, she left me quight, And to my brother did ellope streight way Who, taking her from me, his owne love left astray.

She, seeing then her selfe forsaken so, Through dolorous despaire which she conceyved, Into the Sea her selfe did headlong throw,

Thinking to have her griefe by death bereaved:

But see how much her purpose was deceaved! Whilest thus, amidst the billowes beating of her, [weaved, Twixt life and death long to and fro she She chaunst unwares to light uppon this coffer, Which to her in that daunger hope of life did

offer.

'The wretched mayd, that earst desir'd to die, When as the paine of death she tasted had, And but halfe seene his ugly visnomie, Gan to repent that she had beene so mad For any death to chaunge life, though most

And catching hold of this Sea-beaten chest, (The lucky Pylot of her passage sad,) After long tossing in the seas distrest, Her weary barke at last uppon mine Isle did

XII

'Where I by chaunce then wandring on the shore Did her espy, and through my good endevour

From dreadfull mouth of death, which threatned sore Her to have swallow'd up, did helpe to save She then, in recompence of that great favour ract of time, that all things doth Which I on her bestowed, bestowed on me seay, [spare, The portion of that good which Fortune gave her,

Together with her selfe in dowry free; Both goodly portions, but of both the better

' Yet in this coffer which she with her brought Great threasure sithence we did finde contained.

Which as our owne we tooke, and so it thought; But this same other Damzell since hath fained That to her selfe that threasure appertained; And that she did transport the same by sea, To bring it to her husband new ordained, But suffred cruell shipwracke by the way : But whether it be so or no, I can not say.

'But, whether it indeede be so or no This doe I say, that what so good or ill Or God or Fortune unto me did throw, Not wronging any other by my will, I hold mine owne, and so will hold it still. And though my land he first did winne away, And then my love, (though now it little skill) Yet my good lucke he shall not likewise pray, But I will it defend whilst ever that I may.

So having sayd, the younger did ensew: 'Full true it is what so about our land My brother here declared hath to you: But not for it this ods twixt us doth stand, But for this threasure throwne uppon his strand;

Which well I prove, as shall appeare by triall, To be this maides with whom I fastned hand, Known by good markes and perfect good [deniall. espiall:

Therefore it ought be rendred her without

When they thus ended had, the Knight So was their discord by this doc began:

'Certes, your strife were easie to accord, Would ye remit it to some righteous man,' 'Unto yourselfe,' said they, 'we give our

To bide that judgement ye shall us afford." Then for assurance to my doome to stand, Under my foote let each lay downe his sword; And then you shall my sentence understand.' A rout of many people farre awa So each of them layd downe his sword out of To whom his course he hastily a his hand.

Then Artegall thus to the younger sayd: Now tell me, Amidas, if that ye may, Your brothers land the which the sea hath layd Unto your part, and pluckt from his away,

By what good right doe you day?'

What other right,' (quoth he) But that the sea it to my share

'Your right is good,' (sayd h deeme. That what the sea unto you

XVIII

Then turning to the elder thus Now, Bracidas, let this likewis Your brothers threasure, which strayd,

Being the dowry of his wife wall By what right doe you claim owne?

What other right, (quoth he But that the sea hath it unto me 'Your right is good,' (sayd h deeme. That what the sea unto you s

'For equall right in equal thing For what the mighty Sea hath o And plucked quite from all poss Whether by rage of waves that Or else by wracke that wretche He may dispose by his imperial As thing at randon left, to who So, Amidas, the land was yours And so the threasure yours is right,

XX

When he his sentence thus pro Both Amidas and Philtra were But Bracidas and Lucy were rig And on the threasure by the seased,

And each one had his right. When as their sharpe contention Departed on his way, as did befa To follow his old quest, the whi did call.

So as he travelled uppon the wa He chaunst to come, where happ To weete the cause of their assem To whom when he approched no (An uncouth sight) he plainely To be a troupe of women, warlik With weapons in their hands a tight.

XXII

the midst of them he saw a Knight, th his hands behinde him pinnoed hard, nd about his necke an halter tight, dy for the gallow-tree prepard: was covered, and his head was bar'd,

o he was uneath was to descry; h full heavy heart with them he far'd, to the soule, and groning inwardly, of womens hands so base a death rould dy.

y, like tyrants mercilesse, the more lat his miserable case. reviled, and reproched sore ter taunts and termes of vile disgrace. en as Artegall, arriv'd in place, a what cause brought that man to cay, and about him gan to swarme apace, on him their cruell hands to lay, save wrought unwares some villanous say.

was soone aware of their ill minde, wing backe deceived their intent: igh him selfe did shame on womaninde hty hand to shend, he Talus sent ke on them their follies hardyment: th few sowces of his yron flale d all their troupe incontinent, t them home to tell a piteous tale vaine prowesse turned to their proper ale. XXV

I behind them, glad to be so quit: lus tooke out of perplexitie, rour of fowle death for Knight unfit, re then losse of life ydreaded it; n restoring unto living light, tht unto his Lord, where he did sit ng all that womanish weake fight; oone as he beheld he knew, and thus ehight:

irpine! haplesse man, what make you tion. you lost your selfe and your discreer in this wretched case ye were? ye yeelded you to proude oppression ens powre, that boast of mens subction? what other deadly dismall day on you by heavens hard direction

That ye were runne so fondly far astray As for to lead your selfe unto your owne decay?

XXVII

Much was the man confounded in his mind, Partly with shame, and partly with dismay, That all astonisht he him selfe did find,

And little had for his excuse to say,
But onely thus: 'Most haplesse well ye may
Me justly terme, that to this shame am brought, [day: And made the scorne of Knighthod this same

But who can scape what his owne fate hath wrought? [thought.' The worke of heavens will surpasseth humaine

XXVIII

'Right true: but faulty men use oftentimes To attribute their folly unto fate, And lay on heaven the guilt of their owne But tell, Sir Terpin, ne let you amate [crimes, Your misery, how fell ye in this state?' 'Then sith ye needs' (quoth he) 'will know my shame,

And all the ill which chaunst to me of late, I shortly will to you rehearse the same, In hope ye will not turne misfortune to my blame.

XXIX

'Being desirous (as all Knights are woont) Through hard adventures deedes of armes to And after fame and honour for to hunt, [try, I heard report that farre abrode did fly, That a proud Amazon did late defy All the brave Knights that hold of Maidenhead, And unto them wrought all the villany That she could forge in her malicious head, at same wretched man, ordayned to Which some hath put to shame, and many done be dead.

XXX

'The cause, they say, of this her cruell hate Is for the sake of Bellodant the bold, To whom she bore most fervent love of late, And, wooed him by all the waies she could: But when she saw at last that he ne would For ought or nought be wonne unto her will, She turn'd her love to hatred manifold, And for his sake yow'd to doe all the ill Which she could doe to Knights; which now she doth fulfill.

'For all those Knights, the which by force or guile She doth subdue, she fowly doth entreste.

First, she doth them of warlike armes despoile And cloth in womens weedes: And then with Doth them compell to worke, to earne their A goodly citty and a mighty one, meat, To spin, to card, to sew, to wash, to wring;

Ne doth she give them other thing to eat But bread and water or like feeble thing, Them to disable from revenge adventuring.

XXXII

Knight.'

'But if through stout disdaine of manly Any her proud observaunce will withstand.

Uppon that gibbet, which is there behind, She causeth them be hang'd up out of hand; In which condition I right now did stand: For, being overcome by her in fight,

And put to that base service of her band, I rather chose to die in lives despight, Then lead that shamefull life, unworthy of a

XXXIII

'How hight that Amazon?' (sayd Artegall) 'And where and how far hence does she call, 'Her name' (quoth he) 'they Radigund doe A Princesse of great powre and greater pride, And Queene of Amazons, in armes well tride

And sundry battels, which she hath atchieved With great successe, that her hath glorifide,

And made her famous, more then is believed: Ne would I it have ween'd, had I not late it prieved.

XXXIV 'Now sure,' (said he) 'and by the faith that I

To Maydenhead and noble knighthood owe, I will not rest till I her might doe trie, And venge the shame that she to Knights doth show.

Therefore, Sir Terpin, from you lightly throw This squalid weede, the patterne of dispaire, And wend with me, that ye may see and know How Fortune will your ruin'd name repaire

And knights of Maidenhead, whose praise she would empaire.

XXXV With that, like one that hopelesse was de- Like a fell Lionesse at him she flew. prvv d

From deathes dore at which he lately lay, Those yron fetters wherewith he was gyv'd, The badges of reproch, he threw away And nimbly did him dight to guide the way

I'nto the dwelling of that Amazone: Which was from thence not past a mile or tway,

The which, of her owne name, she cal Radegone.

Where they arriving by the watchman w Descried streight; who all the city warned How that three warlike persons did appe Of which the one him seem'd a Knight

armed. And th' other two well likely to have harm Eftsoones the people all to harnesse ran, And like a sort of Bees in clusters swarmed

Ere long their Queene her selfe, halfe like a mi Came forth into the rout, and them t' and began. XXXVII And now the Knights, being arrived zees

Did beat uppon the gates to enter in; And at the Porter, skorning them so few, Threw many threats, if they the towns d win.

To teare his flesh in peeces for his sin:
Which when as Radigund there come heard, Her heart for rage did grate, and teeth didg

She bad that streight the gates should be m And to them way to make with weapons w

prepard. Soone as the gates were open to them a They pressed forward, entraunce to I

made: But in the middle way they were ymet With a sharpe showre of arrowes, which the staid. And better had advise, ere they assaid

Unknowen perill of bold womens pride Then all that rout uppon them rudely l And heaped strokes so fast on every s And arrowes haild so thicke, that they

not abide. XXXXX

But Radigund her selfe, when she capide Sir Terpin, from her direfull doome acqui So cruell doale amongst her maides divis

T' avenge that shame they did on him of All sodainely enflam'd with furious fit And on his head-peece him so fiercely st That to the ground him quite she oversh Dismayd so with the stroke that he not knew.

Soone as she saw him on the ground to vell. She lightly to him leapt; and in his se

ng at once her wrath on him to wreake is contempt, that did her judg'ment breake. n a Beare hath seiz'd her cruell clawes

the carkasse of some beast too weake, y stands over, and a while doth pause re the piteous beast pleading her plaintiffe cause.

XLI

1 when as Artegall in that distresse unce beheld, he left the bloudy slaughh he swam, and ranne to his redresse:

ier assayling fiercely fresh, he raught ıer her; I huge stroke, that it of sence distraught d she not it warded warily, lepriv'd her mother of a daughter: se for all the powre she did apply her stagger oft, and stare with ghastly

XLII

o an Eagle, in his kingly pride through his wide Empire of the aire ther his brode sailes, by chaunce hath pide auke, which hath seized for her share some fowle that should her feast preare

readfull force he flies at her bylive, ith his souce, which none enduren ATP n the quarrey he away doth drive, Could take no rest, ne would receive reliefe: m her griping pounce the greedy prey oth rive

one as she her sence recover'd had, zely towards him her selfe gan dight, alf mad; er had she suffred such despight:

she could joyne hand with him to ght, like maides about her flockt so fast, disparted them, maugre their hey

iight, h their troupes did far asunder cast; igst the rest the fight did untill evening

ery while that mighty yron man

is strange weapon, never wont in rarre, rarre,

That if I vanquishe him, he shall obay my law, and ever to my love be bound; arre,

And so will I, if me he vanquish may,

oud foote setting, at his head did levell. That none of all the many once did darre Him to assault, nor once approach him nie; But like a sort of sheepe dispersed farre For dread of their devouring enemie,

Through all the fields and vallies did before XLV

him flie.

But when as daies faire shinie-beame, yclowded With fearefull shadowes of deformed night,

Warn'd man and beast in quiet rest be shrowded Bold Radigund with sound of trumpe on hight, Causd all her people to surcease from fight; And gathering them unto her citties gate, Made them all enter in before her sight;

And all the wounded, and the weake in state. To be convayed in, ere she would once retrate.

XLVI

When thus the field was voided all away, And all things quieted, the Elfin Knight, Weary of toile and travell of that day, Causd his pavilion to be richly pight Before the city gate, in open sight; Where he him selfe did rest in safety Together with Sir Terpin all that night: But Talus usde, in times of jeopardy, To keepe a nightly watch for dread of treachery.

XLVII

But Radigund, full of heart-gnawing griefe For the rebuke which she sustain'd that day,

But tossed in her troublous minde what way She mote revenge that blot which on her lay. There she resolv'd her selfe in single fight To try her Fortune, and his force assay Rather then see her people spoiled quight, I vengeful wrath and sdeignfull pride As she had seene that day, a disaventerous sight. XLVIII

She called forth to her a trusty mayd, Whom she thought fittest for that businesse; Her name was Clarin, and thus to her sayd: Goe, damzell, quickly, doe thy selfe addresse. To doe the message which I shall expresse. Goe thou unto that stranger Faery Knight, Who yeester day drove us to such distresse:

Tell, that to morrow I with him wil fight.

might.

And try in equall field whether hath greater XLIX

'But these conditions doe to him propound:

What ever he shall like to doe or say, Goe streight, and take with thee to witnesse Sixe of thy fellowes of the best array, [it And beare with you both wine and juncates fit, And bid him eate: henceforth he oft shall hungry sit."

The Damzell streight obayd, and putting all In readinesse, forth to the Towne-gate went; Where, sounding loud a Trumpet from the wall, Unto those warlike Knights she warning sent, Then Talus forth issuing from the tent Unto the wall his way did fearelesse take, To weeten what that trumpets sounding ment:

Where that same Danizell levelly And shew'd that with his Lo emparlaunce make.

So he them streight conducted Who, as he could, them goodly " Till they had told their message Which he accepting well, as he Them fairely entertayed with con And gave them gifts and thi delight.

So backe againe they homewar But Artegall him selfe to rest di That he mote fresher be again daies fight,

CANTO V.

Artegall fights with Radigund, And is subdewd by guile: He is by her imprisoned, But wrought by Clarius wile.

So soone as day forth dawning from the East withdrew, Nights humid curtaine from the heavens And earely calling forth both man and beast Comaunded them their daily workes renew, These noble warriors, mindefull to pursew The last daies purpose of their vowed fight, Them selves thereto preparde in order dew; The Knight, as best was seeming for a Knight, And th' Amazon, as best it likt her selfe to dight.

All in a Camis light of purple silke Woven uppon with silver, subtly wrought, And quilted uppon sattin white as milke; Trayled with ribbands diversly distraught, Like as the workeman had their courses taught;

Which was short tucked for light motion Up to her ham; but, when she list, it raught Downe to her lowest heele; and thereuppon She wore for her defence a mayled habergeon.

And on her legs she painted buskins wore, Basted with bends of gold on every side, And mailes betweene, and laced close afore; Uppon her thigh her Cemitare was tide With an embrodered belt of mickell pride:
And on her shoulder hung her shield, bedeckt
Uppon the bosse with stones that shined wide,
With bitter strokes it both began

As the faire Moone in her most fr That to the Moone it mote be respect.

So forth she came out of the cit With stately port and proud ma Guarded with many Damzels th Uppon her person for her sure de Playing on shaumes and trump hence

Their sound did reach unto the h So forth into the field she march Where was a rich Pavilion ready Her to receive, till time they the fight.

Then forth came Artegall out of All arm'd to point, and first enter:

Soone after eke came she, with I countenaunce fierce, as bent her

That battells utmost triall to ad-The Lists were closed fast, to be From rudely pressing to the mid Which in great heapes them cir Wayting how Fortune would daungerous dout.

NTO V.

e at the first encounter on him ran ith furious rage, as if she had intended it of his breast the very heart have rended:

it he, that had like tempests often tride,

om that first flaw him selfe right well defended. we more she rag'd, the more he did abide; e hewd, she foynd, she lasht, she laid on

every side. VII

et still her blowes he bore, and her forbore, sening at last to win advantage new;

L still her crueltie increased more, d, though powre faild, her courage did accrew; bich fayling, he gan fiercely her pursew.

se as a Smith that to his cunning feat e stubborne mettall seeketh to subdew. >ne as he feeles it mollifide with heat, .th his great yron sledge doth strongly on

it beat. ▶ did Sir Artegall upon her lay,

if she had an yron andvile beene, at flakes of fire, bright as the sunny ray, b of her steely armes were flashing seene, at all on fire ye would her surely weene;

the dread daunger of his weapon keene,

discarded. with his trenchant blade at the next

blow Ife of her shield he shared quite away, at halfe her side it selfe did naked show, d thenceforth unto daunger opened way.

Ich was she moved with the mightie sway that sad stroke, that halfe enrag'd she grew,

d, like a greedie Beare unto her pray, ith her sharpe Cemitare at him she flew, hat glauncing downe his thigh the purple The more that he with meeke intreatie prayd bloud forth drew.

Thereat she gan to triumph with great boast,

I to upbrayd that chaunce which him misfell,

if the prize she gotten had almost, the spightfull speaches, fitting with her well; at his great hart gan inwardly to swell Ith indignation at her vaunting vaine, ad at her strooke with puissaunce fearefull

fell: s with her shield she warded it againe, at shattered all to peeces round about the

plaine.

¥1 Having her thus disarmed of her shield,

Upon her helmet he againe her strooke, That downe she fell upon the grassie field

In sencelesse swoune, as if her life forsooke, And paugs of death her spirit overtooke. Whom when he saw before his foote prostrated, He to her lept with dead . dreadfull looke, And her sunshynie helmet soone unlaced,

Thinking at once both head and helmet to have XII

raced.

But, when as he discovered had her face, He saw, his senses straunge astonishment, A miracle of natures goodly grace In her faire visage voide of ornament, But bath'd in bloud and sweat together ment; Which in the rudenesse of that evill plight

her light. XIII At sight thereof his cruell minded hart

Bewrayd the signes of feature excellent

Like as the Moone in foggie winters night

Doth seeme to be her selfe, though darkned be

Empierced was with pittifull regard, [apart, That his sharpe sword he threw from him with her shield so well her selfe she warded Cursing his hand that had that visage mard: No hand so cruell, nor no hart so hard, at all that while her life she safely garded; But ruth of beautic will it mollifie.

be that helpe from her against her will By this, upstarting from her swoune, she star'd

A while about her with confused eye; Like one that from his dreame is waked suddenlye. Soone as the knight she there by her did spy

Standing with emptie hands all weaponlesse, With fresh assault upon him she did fly, And gan renew her former cruelnesse: And though he still retyr'd, yet nathelesse With huge redoubled strokes she on him lavd: And more increast her outrage mercilesse,

Her wrathful hand from greedy vengeance to have stayd.

Like as a Puttocke having spyde in sight [flight, A gentle Faulcon sitting on an hill, Whose other wing, now made unmeete for Was lately broken by some fortune ill;

The foolish Kyte, led with licentious will, Doth beat upon the gentle bird in vaine With many idle stoups her troubling still: Even so did Radigund with bootlesse pains Annoy this noble Knight, and sorely constraine.

Nought could be do but shun the dred despight

Of her fierce wrath, and backward still retyre; And with his single shield, well as he might, Beare off the burden of her raging yre: And evermore he gently did desyre To stay her stroks, and he himselfe would yield: Yet nould she hearke, no let him once respyre,

Till he to her delivered had his shield, And to her mercie him submitted in plaine field,

So was he overcome; not overcome, But to her yeelded of his owne accord; Yet was he justly damned by the doome Of his owne mouth, that spake so warelesse word.

To be her thrall and service her afford: For though that he first victorie obtayned, Yet after, by abandoning his sword, He wilfull lost that he before attayned : No fayrer conquest then that with goodwill is gayned.

XVIII

Tho with her sword on him she flatling strooke,

In signe of true subjection to her powre, And as her vassall him to thraldome tooke: But Terpine, borne to' a more unhappy howre, As he on whom the lucklesse stars did lowre, She caused to be attacht, and forthwith led Unto the crooke, t' abide the balefull stowre From which he lately had through reskew fled: Where he full shamefully was hanged by the hed.

XIX

But when they thought on Talus hands to lay, He with his yron flaile amongst them thondred, That they were fayne to let him scape away, Glad from his companie to be so sondred; Whose presence all their troups so much en-[and slay, combred.

That th' heapes of those which he did wound Besides the rest dismayd, might not be nombred: Yet all that while he would not once assay To reskew his owne Lord, but thought it just t' obay.

Then tooke the Amazon this noble knight, Left to her will by his owne wilfull blame, And caused him to be disarmed quight Of all the ornaments of knightly name, With which whylome he gotten had great

Instead whereof she made him to be dight In womans weedes, that is to manhood shame,

And put before his lap a napron whil Instead of Curiers and bases fit for fi

So being clad she brought him from In which he had bene traynel many Into a long large chamber, which w With moniments of many Knights of By her subdewed in victorious frat: Amongst the which she cause his

Be hang'd on high, that more his And broke his sword, for feare of furth With which he wont to stirre up alarmes.

XXII

There entred in he round about him Many brave knights, whose names t

he knew,
There bound t' obay that Amazous p
Spinning and carding all in comely t
That his bigge hart loth'd so measure But they were forst, through penurie To doe those workes to them appoin For nought was given them to sup But what their hands could earne by linnen twyne.

Amongst them all she placed him m And in his hand a distaffe to him gat That he thereon should spin both flax A sordid office for a mind so brave: So hard it is to be a womans slave. Yet he it tooke in his owne selfes d And thereto did himselfe right well i Her to obay, sith he his faith had pli Her vassall to become, if she him fight.

XXIV

Who had him scene imagine mote ! That whylome bath of Hercules bene How for Iolas sake he did apply His mightie hands the distaffe vile to For his huge club, which had subdev So many monsters which the world a His Lyons skin channed to a pall of In which, forgetting warres, he onely In combats of sweet love, and with tresse toyed.

Such is the crueltie of womenkynd, When they have shaken off the band With which wise Nature did them I' obay the heasts of mans well-rulin

and reason they withstand ntious libertie: ien wisely understand, rne to base humilitie. ns them lift to lawfull sove-

TYXX

while continu'd Artegall, digund with true subjection. oble heart did gall tyrannous direction. had of life or death election: a, now he might not chaunge. e the warlike Amazon, fancie after lust did raunge, ret liking to this captive

XXVII

ealing in her covert brest, d of lover's carefull plight; thoroughly digest, i her wounded spright, her both day and night: thereto yeeld free accord vassall of her might, t make her soverayne Lord: le that she such basenesse rd.

XXVIII

iter still her anguish grew, e handling of her love-sicke

she strove it to subdew. augmented her owne smart, the wound of th' hidden dart. ; she struggled had in vaine, , and her proud mind convert ice of loves mightie raine, for grace that had procur'd

XXIX

secret she did call

Clarinda, whom of all I thee fostred first, nat I untimely must Il in my greatest need, at the heavens unjust, pie freedome, have agreed ser life, or my last bale to

turn'd her head, as halfe And token true to old Eumenias,

which in her visage rose

And through her eyes like sudden lightning flashed,

Decking her cheeke with a vermilion rose; But soone she did her countenance compose, And to her turning thus began againe:

'This griefes deepe wound I would to thee [paine; disclose, Thereto compelled through hart-murdring But dread of shame my doubtfull lips doth still restraine.'

'Ah! my deare dread,' (said then the faithfull Mayd) withhold. 'Can dread of ought your dreadlesse hart That many hath with dread of death dismayd, And dare even deathes most dreadfull face behold?

Say on, my soverayne Ladie, and be bold: Doth not your handmayds life at your foot

Therewith much comforted she gan unfold The cause of her conceived maladie, As one that would confesse, yet faine would it denie.

XXXII

'Clarin,' (said she) 'thou seest youd Fayry Knight,

Whom not my valour, but his owne brave mind Subjected hath to my unequall might. What right is it, that he should thraldome

find For lending life to me, a wretch unkind, That for such good him recompence with ill? Therefore I cast how I may him unbind, And by his freedome get his free goodwill; Yet so, as bound to me he may continue still :

XXXIII

Bound unto me but not with such hard bands

Of strong compulsion and streight violence, As now in miserable state he stands ; mayd, whom she most did But with sweet love and sure benevolence, Voide of malitious mind or foule offence: To which if thou canst win him any way Without discoverie of my thoughts pretence, Both goodly meede of him it purchase may, And eke with gratefull service me right well apay.

XXXIV

'Which that thou mayst the better bring to pas, bee, Loe! here this ring, which shall thy warrant

From time to time, when thou it best shalt

see,

That in and out thou mayst have passage free. Goe now, Clarinda; well thy wits advise, And all thy forces gather unto thee, Armies of lovely lookes, and speeches wise,

With which thou canst even Jove himselfe to love entisc.

XXXX

The trustie Mayd, conceiving her intent, Did with sure promise of her good endevour Give her great comfort and some harts content. So, from her parting, she thenceforth did labour

By all the meanes she might to curry favour With th' Elfin Knight, her Ladies best be-

loved :

With daily shew of courteous kind behaviour, Even at the marke-white of his hart she roved, And with wide-glauncing words one day she thus him proved,

XXXVI

'Unhappie Knight! upon whose hopelesse

Fortune, envying good, hath felly frowned, And cruell heavens have heapt an heavy fate ; I rew that thus thy better dayes are drowned In sad despairs, and all thy senses swowned In stupid sorow, sith thy juster merit Might else have with felicitic bene crowned:

Looke up at last, and wake thy dulled spirit To thinke how this long death thou mightest disinherit."

XXXVII

Much did he marvell at her uncouth speach, Whose hidden drift he could not well perceive; And gan to doubt least she him sought t' appeach

Of treason, or some guilefull traine did weave, Through which she might his wretched life be-

Both which to barre he with this answere met 'Faire Damzell, that with ruth (as I perceave) Of my mishaps art mov'd to wish me better, For such your kind regard I can but rest your detter.

XXXVIII

'Yet, weet ye well, that to a courage great It is no lesse beseeming well to beare The storme of fortunes frowne or heavens threat, Then in the sunshine of her countenance cleare Timely to joy and carrie comely cheare: For though this cloud have now me overcast, Yet doe I not of better times despeyre; And though (unlike) they should for ever last, Yet in my truthes assurance I rest fixed fast.'

XXXIX

But what

But if in his owne power Would to his hope a window And to his fortunes helpe in 'Unworthy sure' (quoth he That will not take the offer And eke pursew, if he attai Which speaches she apply is Of her intent, this further shope,

Then why doest not, thou Make meanes to win thy lib And try if thou by faire ent. Move Radigund? who, thou Her dayes in warre, yet (w borne

Of Beares and Tygres, nor s As that, albe all love of men She yet forgets that she of n And sooth oft scene, that pr love bath blynded,

'Certes, Clarinda, not of ca (Sayd he) 'nor obstinate dis I have forbore this duetie to For well I may this weene b That she a Queene, and come Both worthie is for to be sew Chiefely by him whose life he And eke of powre her owne And als' of princely grace to to.

XLII

But want of meanes hath let

From seeking favour where i Which if I might by your go I to your selfe should rest for And readie to deserve what s She feeling him thus bite up Yet doubting least his hold w And not well fastened, would strayt,

But drew him on with hope fit

XLIII

But, foolish Mayd! whyles hooke

She thus oft times was beating Through slipperie footing fell And there was caught to her For, seeking thus to salve the She wounded was with her de And gan thenceforth to cast

in her beguiled hart.

ot disclose her fancies wound, or doubt of being sdayned, t of her covert brest, y her tender hart was payned; time she weened best. lissemble her sad thoughts un-

XLV

die, calling her apart, of her some tydings good, loves successe, her lingring

in at first to change her mood. ind halfe confused stood; it overpast, so soone and wypt to fresh her blood: her all that she had donne,

rs and conditions vaine; ght with any termes to lerne as to love againe: I he in penurious paine, I dayes in dolour wast, e or liking entertaine. 1s, both first and last, er thrall, his hart was freely

ie was obstinate and sterne,

e cruell Amazon perceived, e, and rage, and rend her gall, night which she conceived, of a base-borne thrall, e in her least eye-lids fall; 'd, with many a cursed threat, e would him ere long forstall.

XLVIII

oft, Clarinda? what remaines, npasse this our enterprize? use so long employed paines, me t' abide so great misprize, ares our offers thus despize: t the greater may appeare, ations mercie by this wize,

I will a while with his first folly beare, rough pittie of his causelesse Till thou have tride againe, and tempted him more neare.

'Say and do all that may thereto prevaile;

Leave nought unpromist that may him perher wight on ground, swade, stresse shold have knowledge Life, freedome, grace, and gifts of great availe, it secretly retayned [gayned; With which the Gods themselves are mylder made: Thereto adde art, even womens witty trade,

The art of mightie words that men can charme; With which in case thou canst him not invade, Let him feele hardnesse of thy heavie arme: Who will not stoupe with good shall be made stoupe with harme.

'Some of his diet doe from him withdraw, For I him find to be too proudly fed: Give him more labour, and with streighter law, That he with worke may be forwearied: Let him lodge hard, and lie in strawen bed That may pull downe the courage of his pride; her all that she had donne, es she sought his love for to Cold yron chaines with which let him be tide;

And let what ever he desires be him denide.

LI

'When thou hast all this doen, then bring me newes Of his demeane: thenceforth not like a lover. But like a rebell stout, I will him use;

For I resolve this siege not to give over, Till I the conquest of my will recover.' So she departed full of griefe and sdaine, Which inly did to great impatience move her: But the false mayden shortly turn'd againe Unto the prison, where her hart did thrall re-

maine

There all her subtill nets she did unfold, And all the engins of her wit display; In which she meant him warelesse to enfold, And of his innocence to make her pray. So cunningly she wrought her crafts assa calmed was her furious heat,
threatfull mood, and mildly
And eke the knight attonce she did betraut And eke the knight attonce she did betray But most the knight, whom she with guilefull

call Did cast for to allure into her trap to fall.

As a bad Nurse, which, fayning to receive In her owne mouth the food ment for her chyld Withholdes it to her selfe, and doeth deceive The infant, so for want of nourture spoyld; Even so Clarinda her owne Dame beguyld, And turn'd the trust which was in her affyde, To feeding of her private fire, which boyld Her inward hrest, and in her entrayles fryde, The more that she it sought to cover and to hyde.

LIV

For, comming to this knight, she purpose

How earnest suit she earst for him had made Unto her Queene, his freedome to have gayned, But by no meanes could her thereto perswade; But that instead thereof she sternely bade His misurie to be augmented more, And many yron hands on him to lade: All which nathlesse she for his love forbore; So praying him t'accept her service evermore,

And, more then that, she promist that she would. In case she might finde favour in his eye, Devize how to enlarge him out of hould. The Fayrie, glad to gaine his libertie, Can yeeld great thankes for such her curtesie; And with faire words, fit for the time and place, To feede the humour of her maladie,

Promist, if she would free him from t He wold, by all good means he might such grace.

So daily he faire semblant did her sh Yet never meant he in his noble mind To his owne absent love to be untrest Ne ever did deceiptfull Clarin and In her false hart his bondage to unbit But rather how she mote him faster ! Therefore unto her mistresse mest un She daily told her love he did derve. And him she told her Dame his free denye.

Yet thus much friendship she to him d That his scarse diet somewhat was an And his worke lessened, that his lo grow:

Yet to her Dame him still she discou That she with him mote be the more Thus he long while in thraldome mayned,

Of both beloved well, but litle frealr Untill his owne true love his freedon Which in an other Canto will be tayned.

CANTO VI.

Talus brings newes to Britomart Of Artegals mishap: She goes to seeke him, Dolon meetes, Who seekes her to entrap.

Some men, I wote, will deeme in Artegall Great weaknesse, and report of him much ill, For yeelding so himselfe a wretched thrall To th' insolent commaund of womens will; That all his former praise doth fowly spill: But he the man, that say or doe so dare, Be well adviz'd that he stand stedfast still; For never yet was wight so well aware, But he, at first or last, was trapt in womens snare.

Yet in the streightnesse of that captive state She gan to cast in her misdoubtfall a This gentle knight himselfe so well behaved, That notwithstanding all the subtill bait With which those Amazons his love still craved.

To his owne love his loialtie he saved : Whose character in th' Adamantine mould Of his true hart so firmely was engraved,

That no new loves impression ever Bereave it thence: such blot his blemish should.

Yet his owne love, the noble Briton Scarse so conceived in her jealous in What time and tydings of his baleful In womans bondage Talus to her bro Brought in untimely houre, ere it was For, after that the utmost date assy. For his returne she waited had for no A thousand feares, that love-sicke far to fynde.

Sometime she feared least some har Had him misfalne in his adventures Sometime least his false for did him In traytrous traine, or had unwares

beare.

* most she did her troubled mynd molest, d secretly afflict with jealous feare, ast some new love had him from her possest : E loth she was, since she no ill did heare, thinke of him so ill; yet could she not for

The while she blam'd her selfe; another

whyle him condemn'd as trustlesse and untrew : then, her griefe with errour to beguyle, fayn'd to count the time againe anew, If before she had not counted trew : houres, but dayes; for weekes that passed

more few; told but moneths, to make them seeme To whom he thus at length: 'The tidings sad, when she reckned them, still drawing neare, That I would hide, will needs, I see, be rad. **h bour** did seeme a moneth, and every My Lord, your love, by hard mishap doth lie moneth a yeare.

eke did spight.

at when as yet she saw him not returne, thought to send some one to seeke him out: none she found so fit to serve that turne,

ber owne selfe, to ease her selfe of dont. wshe deviz'd, amongst the warlike rout arrant Knights, to seeke her errant Knight; then againe resolv'd to hunt him out ongst loose Ladies lapped in delight: I then both Knights envide, and Ladies

te day when as she long had sought for ease every place, and every place thought best, found no place that could her liking please, to a window came that opened West, pards which coast her love his way addrest: ere looking forth, shee in her heart did find Dy vaine fancies working her unrest; 1 sent her winged thoughts, more swift then

wind, beare unto her love the message of her mind.

VIII

bere as she looked long, at last she spide to comming towards her with hasty speede. ell weend she then, ere him she plaine descride. at it was one sent from her love indeede; ho when he nigh approcht, shee mote arede hat it was Talus, Artegall his groome : hereat her heart was fild with hope and

drede. e would she stay till he in place could come, at ran to meete him forth to know his tidingsomme.

Even in the dore him meeting, she begun: 'And where is he thy Lord, and how far hence? Declare at once: and hath he lost or wun? The yron man, albe he wanted sence And sorrowes feeling, yet, with conscience

Of his ill newes, did inly chill and quake, And stood still mute, as one in great suspence; As if that by his silence he would make

Her rather reade his meaning then him selfe it spake.

Till she againe thus sayd . 'Talus, be bold, And tell what ever it be, good or bad, [hold.' That from thy tongue thy hearts intent doth

In wretched bondage, wofully bestad.'
'Ay me,' (quoth she) 'what wicked destinie! And is he vanquisht by his tyrant enemy?

'Not by that Tyrant, his intended foe, But by a Tyrannesse, (he then replide) 'That him captived hath in haplesse woe.' 'Cease, thou bad newes-man! badly doest thou hide Thy maisters shame, in harlots bondage tide:

The rest my selfe too readily can spell. With that in rage she turn'd from him aside, Forcing in vaine the rest to her to tell: And to her chamber went like solitary cell.

There she began to make her monefull plaint Against her Knight for being so untrew And him to touch with falshoods fowle attaint. That all his other honour overthrew. Oft did she blame her selfe, and often rew, For yeelding to a straungers love so light, Whose life and manners straunge she never knew; And evermore she did him sharpely twight For breach of faith to her, which he had firmely

XIII And then she in her wrathfull will did cast

plight.

How to revenge that blot of honour blent, To tight with him, and goodly die her last. And then againe she did her selfe torment, Inflicting on her selfe his punishment. [threw A while she walkt, and chauft; a while she

Her selfe uppon her bed, and did lament: Yet did she not lament with loude alew. As women wont, but with deepe sighes w singults few

XIV

Like as a wayward childe, whose sounder sleepe

Is broken with some fearefull dreames affright, With froward will doth set him selfe to weepe, Ne can be stild for all his nurses might,

But kicks, and squals, and shrickes for fell using. despight; Now scratching her, and her loose locks mis-

Now seeking darkenesse, and now seeking light, Then craving sucke, and then the sucke reaccusing. fusing Such was this Ladies fit in her loves fond

XV

But when she had with such unquiet fits Her selfe there close afflicted long in vaine, Yet found no easement in her troubled wits, She unto Talus forth return'd againe, By change of place seeking to ease her paine; And gan enquire of him with mylder mood The certaine cause of Artegals detaine, And what he did, and in what state he stood, And whether he did woo, or whether he were woo'd?

Ah wellaway!' (sayd then the yron man) *That he is not the while in state to woo; But lies in wretched thraldome, weake and wan, Or ought to heare that mote delights Not by strong hand compelled thereunto, But his owne doome, that none can now undoo,' Sayd I not then' (quoth shee), 'erwhile aright,

That this is things compacte betwixt you two, Me to deceive of faith unto me plight, Since that he was not forst, nor overcome in fight?'

With that he gan at large to her dilate The whole discourse of his captivance sad, In sort as ye have heard the same of late: All which when she with hard enduraunce had Heard to the end, she was right sore bestad, With sodaine stounds of wrath and griefe attone :

Ne would abide, till she had aunswere made, But streight her selfe did dight, and armor don, And mounting to her steede bad Talus guide her on.

So forth she rode uppon her ready way, To seeke her Knight, as Talus her did guide, Sadly she rode, and never word did say Nor good nor bad, ne ever lookt aside, But still right downe; and in her thought did The felnesse of her heart, right fully bent To fierce avengement of that womans pride,

Which had her Lord in her base prism And so great honour with so lowle app

So as she thus melancholicke did rids Chawing the cud of gricle and invania She chaunst to meete, toward the rea A Knight that softly paced on the par As if him selfe to solace he were fame Well shot in yeares he seem'd, and rail To peace then needlesse trouble to em As well by view of that his vestiment As by his modest semblant that move

He comming neare gan gently be u With curteous words, in the most con Who though desirous rather to red I Then termes to entertaine of commit Yet rather then she kindnesse would She would her selfe displease, so h Then gan the other further to devise Of things abrode, as next to hand die And many things demaund, to what answer'd light.

For little lust had she to talke of ou Her minde was whole possessed of mu That gave none other place.

By outward signes (as well he might He list no lenger to use lothfull speak But her besought to take it well in g Sith shady dampe had dimd the heave To lodge with him that night, in cause empeach.

XXII

The Championesse, now seeing nigh Was glad to yeeld unto his good to And with him went without got more.

Not farre away, but little wide by W His dwelling was, to which he him a Where soone arriving they received In seemely wise, as them beseemed b For he, their host, them goodly well d And talk't of pleasant things the mi to weare.

XXIII

Thus passing th' evening well, till rest,

Then Britomart unto a bowre was br Where groomes awayted her to have But she ne would undressed be fur a her armes, though he her much be-| Into a lower roome, and by and by ught: and vow'd, she sayd, not to forgo arlike weedes, till she revenge had ought

ele or wo.

XXIV

when their Host perceiv'd, right disntent

he grew, for feare least by that art ng leave of her he did depart.

I that night remained Britomart, recomfortlesse, with heart deepe ieved, start

ilty eyes,' (sayd she) 'the which with' uyle t at first betrayd, will ye betray now too, for which a little whyle not watch? false watches, wellaway! then ye did watch both night and day With his rude yron flaile, they gan to flie, our losse; and now needes will ye Both armed Knights and eke unarmed rout; eepe?

have made my heart to wake alway,

lid she watch, and weare the weary ight ull plaints that none was to appease; king soft, now sitting still upright, ry chaunge her seemed best to ease. did Talus suffer sleepe to seaze lids sad, but watcht continually, ithout her dore in great disease: Spaniell wayting carefully should betray his Lady treacherously.

XXVII

ime the native Belman of the night, that warned Peter of his fall, gs his silver Bell t' each sleepy wight, ald their mindes up to devotion call, d a wondrous noise below the hall: inely the bed, where she should lie, se trap was let adowne to fall

The loft was rayed againe, that no man could it spie.

XXVIII

With sight whereof she was dismayd right wrong uppon a mortall foe; sore, he would sure performe, betide her Perceiving well the treason which was ment; Yet stirred not at all for doubt of more, But kept her place with courage confident,

Wayting what would ensue of that event.

It was not long before she heard the sound Of armed men comming with close intent d his purpose misse, which close he Towards her chamber; at which dreadfull stound about her bound. She quickly caught her sword, and shield

With that there came unto her chamber dore

ering the least twinckling sleepe to Two Knights all armed ready for to fight; eye, which th' heart mote have re-sved; reprieved: A raskall rout, with weapons rudely dight to least appear'd, her eyes she streight Whom soone as Talus spide by glims of night, He started up, there where on ground he lay,

And in his hand his thresher ready keight. They seeing that let drive at him streightway, And round about him preace in riotous aray. But, soone as he began to lay about

Yet Talus after them apace did plie Where ever in the darke he could them spie, Il ye sleepe? ah! wake, and rather That here and there like scattred sheepe they eepe [yee waking keepe.] ke of your nights want, that should Then, backe returning where his Dame did lie, lay: He to her told the story of that fray,

And all that treason there intended did bewray.

Wherewith though wondrous wroth, and inly burning To be avenged for so fowle a deede,

Yet being forst to abide the daies returning, She there remain'd; but with right wary heede, Least any more such practise should proceede. Now mote ye know (that which to Britomart Unknowen was) whence all this did proceede; And for what cause so great mischievous smart Was ment to her that never evill ment in

XXXII

hart.

The goodman of this house was Dolon hight; A man of subtill wit and wicked minde. That whilome in his youth had bene a K And armes had borne, but little good could finde,

And much lesse honour by that warlike kinds
Of life: for he was nothing valorous,
But with slie shiftes and wiles did underminde
All noble Knights, which were adventurous,
And many brought to shame by treason treacherous.

XXXIII

He had three sonnes, all three like fathers

Like treacherous, like full of fraud and guilc, Of all that on this earthly compasse wonnes; The eldest of the which was slaine erewhile By Artegall, through his owne guilty wile: His name was Guizor; whose untimely fate For to avenge, full many treasons vile His father Dolon had deviz'd of late With these his wicked sons, and showd his

cankred hate.

XXXIV

For sure he weend that this his present guest Was Artegall, by many tokens plaine; But chiefly by that yron page he ghest, Which still was wont with Artegall remaine; And therefore ment him surely to have slaine: But by Gods grace, and her good heedinesse, She was preserved from their traytrous traine. Thus she all night wore out in watchfulnesse, Ne suffred slothfull sleepe her eyelids to oppresse.

XXXV

The morrow next, so soone as dawning houre Discovered had the light to living eye, She forth yssew'd out of her loathed bowre, With full intent t' avenge that villany On that vilde man and all his family; And, comming down to seeke them where

they wond,

Nor sire, nor somes, nor any could she spie: Each rowne she sought, but them all empty fond. They all were fled for feare; but whether,

XXXXI

She saw it vaine to make there lenger stay, But tooke her steede; and thereon mounting light

Gan her addresse unto her former way. She had not rid the mountenance of a flight, But that she saw there present in her sight Those two false brethren on that perillous

On which Pollente with Artegall did fight.

Streight was the passage, like ridge,

That, if two met, the one more near

XXXVII

There they did thinks them sels wreaks;

Who as she nigh unto them drws. These vile reproches gan unto ber 'Thou recreant false traytor, that' Of armes hast knighthood stelle, art none.

No more shall now the darkeness!
Defend thee from the vengance of
But with thy blond thou shall a
spright

Of Guizor by thee slaine, and mur

XXXVIII

Strange were the words in Bring Yet stayd she not for them, but its Till to the perillous Bridge she cam Talus desir'd that he might have; The way to her, and those two loss But she thereat was wroth, that for The glauncing sparkles through glared,

And from her eies did flash out fe Likes coles that through a silver kle bright.

XXXIX

She stayd not to advise which w But putting spurres unto her fery Thorough the midst of them she w The one of them, which most he creast,

Uppon her speare she bore before Till to the Bridges further end she Where falling downe his challeng The other over side the Bridge sh Into the river, where he drunke his

XI.

As when the flashing Levin haps Uppon two stubborne onkes, whi neare

That way betwixt them none appear The Engin, flercely flying forth, d Th' one from the earth, and three doth beare;

The other it with force doth over Uppon one side, and from his roote So did the Championesse those two And to their sire their carcasses le

CANTO VII.

Britomart comes to Isis Church, Where shee strange visions sees: She fights with Radigund, her slaies, And Artegall thence frees.

r is on earth more sacred or divine. is and men doe equally adore, same vertue that doth right define: evens themselves, whence mortal men their wrongs, are rul'd by righteous st Jove, who doth true justice deale feriour Gods, and evermore h containes his heavenly Commonale: reveale,

erefore did the antique world invent tice was a God of soveraine grace, s unto him and temples lent, enly honours in the highest place; im great Osyris, of the race Ægyptian Kings that whylome were, ned colours shading a true case; Osyris, whilest he lived here, st man alive and truest did appeare.

: was Isis; whom they likewise made se of great powre and soverainty, er person cunningly did shade of Justice which is Equity, I have to treat here presently: se temple when as Britomart hee with great humility in, ne would that night depart; 3 mote not be admitted to her part.

ie received was in goodly wize Priests, which duely did attend e rites and daily sacrifize, n linnen robes with silver hemd; heir heads, with long locks comely e rich Mitres shaped like the Moone, hat Isis doth the Moone portend;

Like as Osyris signifies the Sunne: For that they both like race in equal justice runne.

The Championesse them greeting, as she could, Was thence by them into the Temple led; Whose goodly building when she did behould, Borne uppon stately pillours, all dispred With shining gold, and arched over hed, She wondred at the workemans passing skill, Whose like before she never saw nor red; And thereuppon long while stood gazing still, whereof to Princes hearts he doth But thought that she thereon could never gaze her fill.

vī

Thence forth unto the Idoll they her brought; The which was framed all of silver fine, So well as could with cunning hand be wrought, And clothed all in garments made of line, Hemd all about with fringe of silver twine: Uppon her head she wore a Crowne of gold; To shew that she had powre in things divine: And at her feete a Crocodile was rold That with her wreathed taile her middle did enfold.

One foote was set uppon the Crocodile, And on the ground the other fast did stand; So meaning to suppresse both forged guile And open force: and in her other hand She stretched forth a long white sclender wand. Such was the Goddesse; whom when Britomart

Had long beheld, her selfe uppon the land She did prostrate, and with right humble hart Unto her selfe her silent prayers did impart.

To which the Idoll, as it were inclining, Her wand did move with amiable looke By outward shew her inward sence desining: Who well perceiving how her wand she shooke, It as a token of good fortune tooke.

By this the day with dampe was overcast, And joyous light the house of Jove forsooke: plaste. 1X

For other beds the Priests there used none, But on their mother Earths deare lap did lie,

And bake their sides uppon the cold hard stone, T' enure them selves to sufferaunce thereby, And proud rebellious flesh to mortify: For by the vow of their religion,

They tied were to stedfast chastity And continence of life, that, all forgon, They mote the better tend to their devotion.

Therefore they mote not taste of fleshly food, Ne feed on ought the which doth bloud con-

taine, Ne drinke of wine; for wine, they say, is blood, Even the bloud of Gyants, which were slaine By thundring Jove in the Phlegrean plaine:

For which the earth (as they the story tell) Wroth with the Gods, which to perpetuall paine Had damn'd her sonnes which gainst them did Both flames and tempest: with which grow rebell.

With inward griefe and malice did against them

And of their vitall bloud, the which was shed Into her pregnant bosome, forth she brought The fruitfull vine; whose liquor blouddy red, Having the mindes of men with fury fraught, Mote in them stirre up old rebellious thought To make new warre against the Gods againe.

swell.

nought The fell contagion may thereof restraine, containe.

There did the warlike Maide her selfe repose, Under the wings of Isis all that night; And with sweete rest her heavy eyes did close, After that long daies toile and weary plight: Where whilest her earthly parts with soft

delight Of sencelesse sleepe did deeply drowned lie.

There did appeare unto her heavenly spright A wondrous vision, which did close implie The course of all her fortune and posteritie.

Her seem'd, as she was doing sacrifize To Isis, deckt with Mitre on her hed And linnen stole after those Priestes guize, All sodainely she saw transfigured

Which when she saw her helmet she unlaste, Her linnen stole to robe of scarlet red And by the altars side her selfe to slumber And Moone-like Mitre to a Crowne of gold; That even she her selfe much wondered

At such a chaunge, and joyed to behold Her selfe adorn'd with gems and jewi manifold.

XIV

And, in the midst of her felicity, An hideous tempest seemed from below To rise through all the Temple sodainely, That from the Altar all about did blow

The holy fire, and all the embers stron Uppon the ground; which, kindled privily, Into outragious flames unwares did grow. That all the Temple put in jeopardy Of flaming, and her selfe in great perplexity

With that the Crocodile, which sleeping in Under the Idols feete in fearclesse bowre, Seem'd to awake in horrible dismay,

As being troubled with that stormy stown; And gaping greedy wide did streight devou

great, [pown And swolne with pride of his owne peerden He gan to threaten her likewise to cat, But that the Goldesse with her rod bit

backe did beat.

XVI The turning all his pride to humbles meeke

Him selfe before her feete he lowly threw, And gan for grace and love of her to seeke; Such is the powre of that same fruit, that Which she accepting, he so neare her drew

That of his game she soone enwombed green And forth did bring a Lion of great might Ne within reasons rule her madding mood That shortly did all other beasts subdet With that she waked full of fearefull fright, And doubtfully dismayd through that so un couth sight.

> So thereuppon long while she musing lay. With thousand thoughts feeding her fantasis Untill she spide the lampe of lightsome day Up-lifted in the porch of heaven hie: Then up she rose fraught with melancholy. And forth into the lower parts did pas. | Whereas the Priestes she found full busily About their holy things for morrow Mas

Whom she saluting faire, faire resaluted was XVIII

But by the change of her unchearefull los They might perceive she was not well a plight,

pensivenesse to heart she tooke: s one of them, who seem'd in itest and the gravest wight, e: 'Sir Knight, it seemes to me

h evill rest of this last night, [see. r much dismayd ye be;

vd she) 'sith ye so well have passion of my pensive mind,

te the same from you to hide; ares unfolde, in hope to find juide me out of errour blind,' th he) 'the secret of your hart ly vow which me doth bind, est counsell to impart

all require my comfort in their

to declare the whole discourse ion which to her appeard, her minde it had recourse. en he unto the end had heard, ke faint-hearted man he fared

g locks up-standing, stiffy stared

t astonishment of that strange

Virgin, that in queint disguise ies doest maske thy royall blood, perillous emprize, thou weene, through that dis-

hood. ate from being understood? immortall Gods ought hidden

linage, and thy Lordly brood, sire lamenting sore for thee, love forlorne in womens thralæ.

ereof, and all the long event,

ee in this same dreame discover; Crocodile doth represent Knight that is thy faithfull in all just endever: Crocodile Osvris is. is feete doth sleepe for ever; demence oft, in things amis, ose sterne behests and cruell of his.

XXIII

'That Knight shall all the troublous stormes asswage And raging flames, that many foes shall reare

To hinder thee from the just heritage [deare: Of thy sires Crowne, and from thy countrey Then shalt thou take him to thy loved fere, change of cheare is easie for to And joyne in equall portion of thy realme; And afterwards a sonne to him shalt beare, That Lion-like shall shew his powre extreame So blesse thee God, and give thee joyance of thy dreame!'

XXIV

All which when she unto the end had heard. She much was eased in her troublous thought, And on those Priests bestowed rich reward; And royall gifts of gold and silver wrought She for a present to their Goddesse brought. Then taking leave of them, she forward went To seeke her love, where he was to be sought; Ne rested till she came without relent Unto the land of Amazons, as she was bent.

XXV

Whereof when newes to Radigund was brought, Not with amaze, as women wonted bee, She was confused in her troublous thought; But fild with courage and with joyous glee, ed with some dreadfull spright: As glad to heare of armes, the which now she heavenly fury, thus he her be. That cheater and the beat to open bold, That she the face of her new foe might see: But when they of that yron man had told, Which late her folke had slaine, she bad them forth to hold.

XXVI

So there without the gate, (as seemed best) She caused her Pavilion be pight; In which stout Britomart her selfe did rest, Whiles Talus watched at the dore all night. All night likewise they of the towne in fright Uppon their wall good watch and ward did keepe. The morrow next, so soone as dawning light Bad doe away the dampe of drouzie sleepe,

The warlike Amazon out of her bowre did

peepe.

And caused streight a Trumpet loud to shrill To warne her foe to battell soone be prest: Who, long before awoke, (for she ful ill Could sleepe all night, that in unquiet brest Did closely harbour such a jealous guest\\ Was to the battell whilome ready dight. Estsoones that warriouresse with Pankpra crest

Did forth issue all ready for the fight: On th' other side her foe appeared soone in sight,

XXVIII

But ere they reared hand the Amazone Began the streight conditions to propound, With which she used still to tye her fone, To serve her so as she the rest had bound: Which when the other heard, she sternly frownd

For high disdains of such indignity, And would no lenger treat, but bad them sound :

For her no other termes should ever tie Then what prescribed were by lawes of chevalrie.

The Trumpets sound, and they together run With greedy rage, and with their faulchins Ne either sought the others strokes to shun, But through great fury both their skill forgot,

And practicke use in armes; ne spared not Their dainty parts, which nature had created So faire and tender without staine or spot For other uses then they them translated; Which they now hackt and hewd as if such use they hated.

As when a Tygre and a Lionesse Are met at spoyling of some hungry pray, Both challenge it with equall greedinesse: But first the Tygre clawes thereon did lay, And therefore, loth to loose her right away, Doth in defence thereof full stoutly stond: To which the Lion strongly doth gainesay, That she to hunt the beast first tooke in hond; And therefore ought it have where ever she it fond.

XXXI

Full fiercely layde the Amazon about, And dealt her blowes unmercifully sore; Which Britomart with stood with courage stout, And them repaide againe with double more. So long they fought, that all the grassie flore Was fild with bloud which from their sides did

And gushed through their armes, that all in gore They trode, and on the ground their lives did should grow

Like fruitles seede, of which untimely death

At last proud Radigund, with fell despight, Having by channe espide advantage neare, Let drive at her with all her dreadfull might, And thus upbrayding said: "This token beare

Unto the man whom thos does let And tell him for his sake thylife th Which spitefull words she, sort st

Thus answer'd: 'Lewdy than II Who shortly must repent that non bravest.

Nath'lesse that stroke so cruell pas That glauncing on her shoulder-pla Unto the bone, and made a gries; That she her shield, through racing Could scarse uphold: yet some de For, having force increase throu paine.

She her so rudely on the helmes = That it empierced to the very base And her proud person low prostn plaine,

XXXIV

Where being layd, the wrothfull I Stayd not till she came to her side But in revenge both of her loves d And her late vile reproch though van And also of her wound which sore She with one stroke both head and h Which dreadfull sight when all I Iraine

There present saw, each one of sen Fled fast into the towne, and her left,

XXXV

But yet so fast they could not hos But that swift Talus did the formo And, pressing through the press

gate, Pelmell with them attonce did ent There then a pitcous slaughter did For all that ever came within his He with his yron flale did thresh a That he no worke at all left for the Like to an hideous storme, which no empeach,

And now by this the noble Conqu Her selfe came in, her glory to par Where, though revengefull you st fesse,

Yet when she saw the heapes wh Of slaughtred carkasses, her heart For very ruth, which did it almost That she his fury willed him to als For else he sure had left not one al But all, in his revenge, of spirite prive.

XXXVII

ho, when she had his execution stavel. for that yron prison did enquire. which her wretched love was captive lavd: hich breaking open with indignant ire, entred into all the partes entire:

here when she saw that lothly uncouth sight men disguiz'd in womanishe attire r heart gan grudge for very deepe despight so unmanly maske in misery misdight.

XXXVIII

Last when as to her owne Love she came, som like disguize no lesse deformed had. sight thereof abasht with secrete shame turnd her head aside, as nothing glad have beheld a spectacle so bad; d then too well believ'd that which tofore

alous suspect as true untruely drad: sought with ruth to salve his sad misfortunes sore.

XXXIX tot so great wonder and astonishment

I the most chast Penelope possesse e her Lord, that was reported drent dead long since in dolorous distresse, me home to her in piteous wretchednesse, er long travell of full twenty yeares, at she knew not his favours likelynesse.

" many scarres and many hoary heares, t stood long staring on him mongst uncertaine feares.

th, my deare Lord! what sight is this?

quoth she,

mighty palmes, the which ye wont t' Gave unto her great comfort and reliefe; embrev bloud of Kings, and great hoastes to subdew? And tempred for the time her present heaviuld ought on earth so wondrous change have wrought,

to have robde you of that manly hew? dd so great courage stouped have to ought? Till through his want her woe did more n, farewell fleshly force! I see thy pride is nought.

X I.I

enceforth she streight into a bowre him brought,

Which had bene reft from many a noble Knight, Whom that proud Amazon subdewed had Whilest Fortune favourd her successe in fight: In which when as she him anew had clad, She was reviv'd, and joyd much in his sem-

blance glad.

XLII

So there a while they afterwards remained Him to refresh, and her late wounds to heale: During which space she there as Princess rained,

And changing all that forme of common-weale

The liberty of women did repeale, [toring Which they had long usurpt; and, them res-To mens subjection, did true Justice deale, That all they, as a Goddesse her adoring, Her wisedome did admire, and hearkned to her loring.

XLIII

For all those Knights, which long in captive shade free, Had shrowded bene, she did from thraldome And magistrates of all that city made, And gave to them great living and large fee:

And that they should for ever faithfull bee, Made them sweare fealty to Artegall; Who when him selfe now well recur'd did see, He purposd to proceed, what so befall Uppon his first adventure which him forth did call.

Full sad and sorrowfull was Britomart

For his departure, her new cause of griefe; Yet wisely moderated her owne smart, Secing his honor, which she tendred chiefe, hat May-game hath misfortune made of you? Consisted much in that adventures priefe:

were is that dreadfull manly looke? where be The care whereof, and hope of his successe, That womanish complaints she did represse,

XLV

There she continu'd for a certaine space, increase: Then hoping that the change of aire and place

Would change her paine, and sorrow somewhat case, She parted thence her anguish to appease. |causd him those uncomely weedes undight; Meane-while her noble Lord, sir Artegall, in their steede for other rayment sought, Went on his way; ne ever howre did cease,

nesse.

ereof there was great store, and armors Till he redeemed had that Lady thrall:

That for another Canto will more fitly fall.

XVIII

'Mongst many which maligne her happy state.

There is a mighty man, which wonnes hereby, That with most fell despight and deadly hate Seekes to subvert her Crowne and dignity, And all his powre doth thereunto apply:

And her good Knights, of which so brave a band Serves her as any Princesse under sky, He either spoiles, if they against him stand, Or to his part allures, and bribeth under hand.

'Ne him sufficeth all the wrong and ill, Which he unto her people does each day; But that he seekes by traytrous traines to spill Her person, and her sacred selfe to slay: That, O ye Heavens, defend! and turne away From her unto the miscreant him selfe; That neither hath religion nor fay, But makes his God of his ungodly pelfe, And Idols serves: so let his Idols serve the Elfe!

'To all which cruell tyranny, they say, He is provokt, and stird up day and night By his bad wife that hight Adicia; Who counsels him, through confidence of might, To breake all bonds of law and rules of right : For she her selfe professeth mortall foe To Justice, and against her still doth fight, Working to all that love her deadly woe, And making all her Knights and people to doe

XXI

Which my liege Lady seeing, thought it With that his wife in friendly wise to deale,

For stint of strife and stablishment of rest Both to her selfe and to her common-weale, And all forepast displeasures to repeale. So me in message unto her she sent, To treat with her, by way of enterdeale, Of finall peace and faire attonement Which might concluded be by mutuall consent.

XXII

'All times have wont safe passage to afford To messengers that come for causes just : But this proude Dame, disdayning all accord, Not onely into bitter termes forth brust, Reviling me and rayling as she lust, But lastly, to make proofe of utmost shame, Me like a dog she out of dores did thrust, Miscalling me by many a bitter name, Miscalling me by many a bitter name,

That never did her ill, ne once deserved blame. For doubt to be discovered by

And lastly, that no shame n When I was gone, soome after These two false Knights, who

To be by them dishonoured a But, thankt be God, and your They have the price of their So said this Damzell, that hi And to those knights for their Her selfe most gratefull she thanks repayd.

But they now having thro scene

Al those great wrongs, the To have bene done against he By that proud dame which I dained,

Were moved much thereat; With all their force to we

strong
Uppon the Souldan selfe, which and on his Lady, th' author and uppon all those Knights belong.

But, thinking best by counts To their deseigne to make the They did this complet twixt th First, that Sir Artegall should Like one of those two Knig there lay;

And then that Damzell, the s Should as his purchast prize tunto the Souldans court, her Unto his scornefull Lady that

So as they had deviz'd, Sir Him clad in th' armour of a And taking with him, as his That Danizell, led her to the Where soone as his proud wife Forth of her window as she lo She weened streight it was her Which brought that Damzell pray:

And sent to him a Page that

XXVII

Who bringing them to their Offred his service to disarme

l in his straunge armour he Prince arrived there,

· Souldan in despight d of him requere om he held as wrongfull

ıldan all with furie fraught, ing most blasphemously,

ight his armour to

light upon a charret hve. s and hookes arm'd dread-

:ll steedes which he had fed whom through fell tyranny So fast away that, ere his readie speare

XXIX

all in a cote of plate udie rust; whiles on the him readie did awayte,

right goodly well-beseene, right as doth the heaven Talus did attend. part, as he had beene

his Lord; to th' end to final execution bend.

XXX th together to their geare,

nds, but meanings different; ouldan, with presumpteous sublime and insolent

thter and avengement; ice for honour and for right, wre and lawlesse regiment, rronged weake did fight: s truth he trusted then in

ian Tyrant, who they say

XXXI

ive his guests for meat, as made their greedic pray, s by Alcides great; uldan, in his follies threat, in peeces to have torne reeles, in his first rages heat, horses feet have borne, ne in dust his thoughts dis 16.

XXXII

But the bold child that perill well espying, If he too rashly to his charet drew, Gave way unto his horses speedie flying, And their resistlesse rigour did eschew: Yet, as he passed by, the Pagan threw A shivering dart with so impetuous force,

That had he not it shun'd with heedfull vew, It had himselfe transfixed or his horse,

Or made them both one masse withouten more

XXXIII Oft drew the Prince unto his charret nigh, In hope some stroke to fasten on him neare, But he was mounted in his seat so high, And his wingfooted coursers him did beare

remorse.

and ere they were halfe ded He could advance, he farre was gone and past: beastes for provender did Yet still he him did follow every where And followed was of him likewise full fast So long as in his steedes the flaming breath did

last.

Againe the Pagan threw another dart, Of which he had with him abundant store On every side of his embatteld cart, And of all other weapons lesse or more, Which warlike uses had deviz'd of yore: The wicked shaft, guyded through th' ayrie wyde By some bad spirit that it to mischiefe bore,

Stayd not, till through his curat it did glyde, And made a griesly wound in his enriven side.

XXXV Much was he grieved with that haplesse throe That opened had the welspring of his blood;

But much the more, that to his hatefull foe He mote not come to wreake his wrathfull mood: That made him rave, like to a Lyon wood, Which being wounded of the huntsmans hand

Cannot come neare him in the covert wood, Where he with boughes hath built his shady stand, [brand. And fenst himselfe about with many a flaming

Still when he sought t' approch unto him ny His charret wheeles about him whirled round, And made him backe againe as fast to fly; And eke his steedes, like to an hungry hound That hunting after game hath carrion found, So cruelly did him pursew and chace, That his good steed, all were he much re-

nound

XVIII

'Mongst many which maligne her happy state,

There is a mighty man, which wonnes hereby, That with most fell despight and deadly hate Seekes to subvert her Crowne and dignity, And all his powre doth thereunto apply : And her good Knights, of which so brave a band

Serves her as any Princesse under sky, He either spoiles, if they against him stand, Or to his part allures, and bribeth under hand.

'Ne him sufficeth all the wrong and ill, Which he unto her people does each day; But that he seekes by traytrous traines to spill Her person, and her sacred selfe to slay t That, O ye Heavens, defend ! and turne away From her unto the miscreant him selfe; That neither hath religion nor fay, But makes his God of his ungodly pelfe, And Idols serves: so let his Idols serve the Elfe!

'To all which cruell tyranny, they say, He is provokt, and stird up day and night By his bad wife that hight Adicia; Who counsels him, through confidence of might, To breake all bonds of law and rules of right : For she her selfe professeth mortall foe To Justice, and against her still doth fight, Working to all that love her deadly woe, And making all her Knights and people to doe 50.

With that his wife in friendly wise to deale,

For stint of strife and stablishment of rest Both to her selfe and to her common-weale, And all forepast displeasures to repeale. So me in message unto her she sent, To treat with her, by way of enterdeale, Of finall peace and faire attonement Which might concluded be by mutuall consent.

'All times have wont safe passage to afford To messengers that come for causes just : But this proude Dame, disdayning all accord, Not onely into bitter termes forth brust, Reviling me and rayling as she lust, But lastly, to make proofe of utmost shame, Me like a dog she out of dores did thrust, Miscalling me by many a bitter name, Miscalling me by many a bitter name,

But he refusing him to let unlace,
That never did her ill, ne once deserved blame. For doubt to be discovered by his:

And lastly, that no shame might w When I was gone, soone after me sh These two false Knights, whom ther

To be by them dishonoured and sh But, thankt be God, and your good h They have the price of their own for So said this Damzell, that hight Sa And to those knights for their so not Her selfe most gratefull shew'd, at thanks repayd.

But they now having throughly Al those great wrongs, the which t To have bene done against her Lady

By that proud dame which her so dained, Were moved much thereat; and is With all their force to worke at

strong
Uppon the Souldan selfe, which it m
And on his Lady, th' author of that
And uppon all those Knights that
belong.

XXV

But, thinking best by counterfet d To their deseigne to make the easie They did this complot twixt them se First, that Sir Artegall should him Like one of those two Knights w there lay :

And then that Damzell, the sad San Which my liege Lady seeing, thought it Unto the Souldans court, her to prebest Unto his scornefull Lady that for he

So as they had deviz'd, Sir Arteg Him clad in th' armour of a Pagar And taking with him, as his vanqu That Damzell, led her to the Sould Where soone as his proud wife of he Forth of her window as she looking She weened streight it was her Payn Which brought that Damzell as h pray;

And sent to him a Page that mote

Who bringing them to their appoint Offred his service to disarme the K



VIII.] THE FAERIE QUEENE.

himselfe still in his straunge armour after whom the Prince arrived there. nding to the Souldan in despight defyance, did of him requere Damsell whom he held as wrongfull

XXVIII

prisonere.

ng and banning most blasphemously, unded straight his armour to be brought; nounting straight upon a charret hve. vron wheeles and hookes arm'd dreadfully, rawne of cruell steedes which he had fed

lesh of men, whom through fell tyranny ughtred had, and ere they were halfe ded

XXIX

rth he came, all in a cote of plate ht with bloudie rust; whiles on the greene iton Prince him readie did awayte, ering armes right goodly well-beseene, hone as bright as doth the heaven heene:

his stirrup Talus did attend, his pages part, as he had beene rected by his Lord; to th' end d his flale to final execution bend.

XXX

they both together to their geare, fierce minds, but meanings different; ire mance sublime and insolent ly slaughter and avengement; ve Prince for honour and for right, ous powre and lawlesse regiment, fe of wronged weake did fight: causes truth he trusted then in

XXXI

Thracian Tyrant, who they say es gave his guests for meat, fe was made their greedic pray, pieces by Alcides great; Souldan, in his follies threat, ice in peeces to have torne rce horses feet have borne, lowne in dust his thoughts diswrue.

XXXII

But the bold child that perill well espyin If he too rashly to his charet drew, Gave way unto his horses speedie flying, And their resistlesse rigour did eschew:
Yet, as he passed by, the Pagan threw
A shivering dart with so impetuous force,
That had he not it shun'd with heedfull ven ewith the Souldan all with furie fraught, It had himselfe transfixed or his horse, Or made them both one masse withouten mo

IIIXXX

remorse.

Oft drew the Prince unto his charret nigh. In hope some stroke to fasten on him neare, But he was mounted in his seat so high, And his wingfooted coursers him did beare So fast away that, ere his readic speare He could advance, he farre was gone and past: podies to his beastes for provender did Yet still he him did follow every where, spred,)

And followed was of him likewise full fast, So long as in his steedes the flaming breath did last.

XXXIV Againe the Pagan threw another dart,

Of which he had with him abundant store On every side of his embatteld cart, And of all other weapons lesse or more, Which warlike uses had deviz'd of yore: The wicked shaft, guyded through th' ayrie wyde By some bad spirit that it to mischiefe bore, Stayd not, till through his curat it did glyde, And made a griesly wound in his enriven side.

xxxv

Much was he grieved with that haplesse throe, roud Souldan, with presumpteous That opened had the welspring of his blood; But much the more, that to his hatefull foe He mote not come to wreake his wrathfull

mood: That made him rave, like to a Lyon wood, Which being wounded of the huntsmans hand Cannot come neare him in the covert wood, Where he with boughes hath built his shady [brand. stand,

And feast himselfe about with many a flaming

XXXVI

Still when he sought t' approch unto him ny His charret wheeles about him whirled round, And made him backe againe as fast to fly; And eke his steedes, like to an hungry hound wheeles, in his first rages heat, That hunting after game hath carrion found, So cruelly did him pursew and chace, That his good steed, all were he much repound

For noble courage and for hardie race.

Durst not endure their sight, but fled from
place to place.

XXXVII

Thus long they trust and traverst to and fro, Seeking by every way to make some breach; Yet could the Prince not night unto him goe, That one sure stroke he might unto him reach, Whereby his strengthes assay he might him teach.

At last from his victorious shield he drew The vaile, which did his powrefull light empeach,

And comming full before his horses vew, As they upon him prest, it plains to them did shew,

XXXVIII

Like lightening flash that hath the gazer Quite topside turvey, and the Pagan burned.

Amongst the yron bookes and graphs

So did the sight thereof their sense dismay, That backe againe upon themselves they turned,

And with their ryder ranne perforce away:
Ne could the Souldan them from flying stay
With raynes or wonted rule, as well he knew:
Nought feared they what he could do or say,
But th' onely feare that was before their vew,
From which like mazed deare dismayfully they
flew.

XXXXIX

Fast did they fly as them their feete could that for his sake Diana did lament beare And all the woodly Nymphes did

High over hilles, and lowly over dales, As they were follow'd of their former feare. In vaine the Pagan bannes, and sweares, and rayles,

And backe with both his bands unto him hayles The resty raynes, regarded now no more: He to them calles and speakes, yet nought

avayles;
They heare him not, they have forgot his lore,
But go which way they list, their guide they
have forlore.

XL

As when the fire-mouthed steedes, which drew

The Sunnes bright wayne to Phaetons decay, Soone as they did the monstrous Scorpion vew With ugly craples crawling in their way, The dreadfull sight did them so sore affray, That their well-knowen courses they forwent;

That their well-knowen courses they forwent; And, leading th' ever-burning lampe astray, This lower world nigh all to askes brent, And left their scorebuch path yet in the firms.

And left their scorched path yet in the firmament,

244

Such was the furie of these lendstoods,

Soone as the infants sunlike shell the That all obedience both to work and of They quite forgot, and scored all force Through woods, and rocks, and me

they did draw
The yron charet, and the wheels all
And tost the Paynim without fear of
From side to side they tost him leri alCrying to them in vaine that nould in
hears.

XTIL

Yet still the Prince pursew dhim do.
Oft making offer him to smite, but bee
No casie meanes according to his mul.
At last they have all overthrowns to
Quite topside turvey, and the Pagan ha
Amongst the yron hookes and graphs
Torne all to rags, and rent with

wound;
That no whole peece of him was to be
But scattred all about, and strowd a
greene.

XLIII

Like as the cursed son of Theseus, That following his chace in dewy near To fly his stepdames foves outrageous Of his owne steedes was all to pecce ! And his faire limbs left in the wools is That for his sake Diana did lament, And all the wooddy Nymphes did say mourne.

So was this Souldan rapt and all to-or That of his shape appear'd no litte n

XLIV

Onely his shield and armour, which the Though nothing whole, but all to-bra broken,

He up did take, and with him brought That more remaine for an eternal toke To all mougst whom this stone she spoken,

How worthily, by heavens high decree Justice that day of wrong her selfe had v That all men, which that spectacle did By like ensample mote for ever warned

ZFI

So on a tree before the Tyrants don He caused them be hing in all mens si To be a moniment for evermore. Which when his Ladic from the castle h appald her troubled spright: nen wont, in dolefull fit yd, or faynted through affright, nto her her troubled wit. nes devize to be aveng'd for it.

XLVI

d of her youngling dere, and, and fatally did vow

on that mayden messengere, causd be kept as prisonere isween'd for her owne Knight, r backe: And, comming present

with all her force and might,

XLVII

10, when with knife in hand iusbands murdred infant out; when on Colchicke strand nes she scattered all about; ling mother, mongst the rout iests, her owne deare flesh did

, nor Medea stout, nades so furious were, woman when she saw that there.

XLVIII

seing thereof aware, sell hand ere she her raught; her selfe to strike prepare, he wicked weapon caught: one enfelon'd or distraught, me whether her rage her bore, passion and with furic fraught;

CANTO IX.

Arthur and Artegall catch Guyle, Whom Talus doth dismay: They to Mercillaes pallace come, And see her rich array.

or what other salvage wight, furious and fell [might? n it hath arm'd it selfe with

And, breaking forth out at a posterne dore, Unto the wyld wood ranne, her dolours to deplore.

As a mad bytch, when as the franticke fit Her burning tongue with rage inflamed hath, Doth runne at randon, and with furious bit ie she ranne, like an enraged Snatching at every thing doth wreake her wrath

On man and beast that commeth in her path. There they doe say that she transformed was Into a Tygre, and that Tygres scath In crueltie and outrage she did pas, To prove her surname true, that she imposed

Then Artegall, himselfe discovering plaine, h revenge and furious despight. Did issue forth gainst all that warlike rout Of knights and armed men, which did maintaine

That Ladies part, and to the Souldan lout: All which he did assault with courage stout, All were they nigh an hundred knights of name, And like wyld Goates them chaced all about, Flying from place to place with cowheard

shame So that with finall force them all he overcame.

Then caused he the gates be opened wyde: And there the Prince, as victour of that day, With tryumph entertayn'd and glorifyde, Presenting him with all the rich array And roiall pompe, which there long hidden lay, Purchast through lawlesse powre and tortious wrong Of that proud Souldan whom he earst did slay. So both, for rest, there having stayd not long, Marcht with that mayd; fit matter for another song.

Are dreadded most, and feared for their powre; Fit for Adicia there to build her wicked bowre.

n it hath arm'd it sene with men that doe with reason mell, id beasts, and salvage woods, Where righteous Artegall her late exyled; Where righteous Artegall her late exyled; There let her ever keepe her damned den, stronger doth the weake de most in boldnesse doe excell

There let her wonne, farre from resource...

Where none may be with her lewed part fyled, There let her wonne, farre from resort of men, Where none may be with her lewd parts deNor none but beasts may be of her despoyled; And turne we to the noble Prince, where late We did him leave, after that he had foyled The cruell Souldan, and with dreadfull fate Had utterly subverted his unrighteous state,

III

Where having with Sir Artegall a space Well solast in that Souldans late delight, They both, resolving now to leave the place, Both it and all the wealth therein behight Unto that Damzell in her Ladies right, And so would have departed on their way; But she them woo'd, by all the meanes she might.

And earnestly besought to wend that day With her, to see her Ladie thence not farre

By whose entreatie both they overcommen Agree to goe with her; and by the way, (As often falles) of sundry things did commen : Mongst which that Damzell did to them bewray lay;

A straunge adventure, which not farre thence To weet, a wicked villaine, bold and stout, Which wonned in a rocke not farre away, That robbed all the countrie there about, And brought the pillage home, whence none could get it out.

Thereto both his owne wylie wit, (she sayd) And eke the fastnesse of his dwelling place, Both unassaylable, gave him great ayde: For he so crafty was to forge and face, So light of hand, and nymble of his pace So smooth of tongue, and subtile in his tale, That could deceive one looking in his face: Therefore by name Malengin they him call, Well knowen by his feates, and famous overall.

VI

Through these his slights he many doth confound:

And eke the rocke, in which he wonts to dwell, Is wondrous strong and hewen farre under Made of straunge stuffe, but all toground,

A dreadfull depth; how deepe no man can tell, But some doe say it goeth downe to hell: And all within it full of wyndings is [smell And hidden wayes, that scarse an hound by Can follow out those false footsteps of his, Ne none can backe returne that once are gone amis.

VII

Which when those knights had be harts gan earne

To understand that villeins dwelling And greatly it desir'd of her to lean And by which way they towards trace.

Were not '(sayd she) 'that it should Towards my Ladies presence, by you I would you guyde directly to the pl 'Then let not that '(said they)' stu tent;

For neither will one foot, till we

So forth they past, till they approch Unto the rocke where was the villar Which when the Damzell neare at

spy, She warn'd the knights thereof; * Gan to advize what best were to be So both agreed to send that mayd af Where she might sit nigh to the den Wayling, and raysing pittifull upror As if she did some great calamitie il

With noyse whereof when as the carle

Should issue forth, in hope to find son They in awayt would closely him en Ere to his den he backward could rec And so would hope him easily to for The Damzell straight went, as she was Unto the rocke; and there, upon the Having her selfe in wretched wize a Gan weepe and wayle, as if great g her affected.

The cry whereof entring the hollow Eftsoones brought forth the villaine ment,

With hope of her some wishfull boot Full dreadfull wight he was as ever Upon the earth, with hollow eyes det And long curld locks that downe his shagged;

And on his backe an uncouth restin ragged, And underneath, his breech was all to-

And in his hand an huge long stall Whose top was arm'd with many hooke

Fit to catch hold of all that he could

compasse of his clouches tooke; round about he cast his looke: backe a great wyde net he bore, th he seldome fished at the brooke,) fish for fooles on the dry shore. he in faire weather wont to take at store.

n the damzell saw fast by her side, eature, she was nigh dismayd, or helpe aloud in earnest cride: the villaine saw her so affrayd, ith guilefull words her to perswade feare; and, with Sardonian smyle on her, his false intent to shade, to lay his bayte her to beguyle,
her self unwares he might her le the whyle.

XIII

he fouler on his guilefull pype o the birds full many a pleasant lay, the whiles may take lesse heedic s nets doth for their ruine lay: villaine to her prate and play, pleasant trickes before her show, er eyes from his intent away; slights and jugling feates did flow, ierdemayne the mysteries did know.

XIV

ily his net upon her threw, prad her like a puffe of wind; hing her scone up, ere well she knew, her fast away unto his mew, helpe aloud: But when as ny anto his cave, and there did vew I knights stopping his passage by, his burden downe, and fast away did

gall him after did pursew, s the Prince there kept the entrance rocke he ran, and thereon flew ld Gote, leaping from hill to hill cing on the craggy cliffes at will; ly daunger seem d in all mens sight such steps, where footing was so ill: avayled for the armed knight avayled for the armed knight to follow him that was so swift and Or that with Diademe hath ever crowned

hen he saw, his yron man he sent him; for he was swift in chace.

He him pursewd where ever that he went; Both over rockes, and hilles, and every place Where so he fled, he followd him apace; So that he shortly forst him to forsake The hight, and downe descend unto the base: There he him courst a-fresh, and soone did make To leave his proper forme, and other shape to take.

Into a Foxe himselfe he first did tourne: But he him hunted like a Foxe full fast: Then to a bush himselfe he did transforme: But he the bush did beat, till that at last Into a bird it chaung'd, and from him past, Flying from tree to tree, from wand to wand; But he then stones at it so long did cast, That like a stone it fell upon the land: But he then tooke it up, and held fast in his

xvIII So he it brought with him unto the knights,

hand.

And to his Lord Sir Artegall it lent, Warning him hold it fast for feare of slights: Who whilest in hand it gryping hard he hent, Into a Hedgehogge all unwares it went, And prickt him so that he away it threw : Then ganne it runne away incontinent, Being returned to his former hew; But Talus soone him overtooke, and backward drew.

But, when as he would to a snake againe whilest she lent her intentive mind, Have turn'd himselfe, he with his yron flayle Gan drive at him with so huge might and maine,

That all his bones as small as sandy grayle He broke, and did his bowels disentrayle, Crying in vaine for helpe, when helpe was past: So did deceipt the selfe-deceiver fayle. There they him left a carrion outcast [repast. For beasts and foules to feede upon for their

XX Thence forth they passed with that gentle

Mayd To see her Ladie, as they did agree; To which when she approched, thus she sayd: 'Loe! now, right noble knights, arriv'd ye bee Nigh to the place which ye desir'd to see: There shall ye see my soverayne Lady Queene,

Most sacred wight, most debonayre and free, beene.'

1XX

The gentle knights rejoyced much to heare The prayees of that Prince so manifolAnd, passing litle further, commen were Where they a stately pallace did behold Of pompons show, much more then she had told;

With many towres, and tarras mounted hye, And all their tops bright glistering with gold. That seemed to outshine the dimmed skye, And with their brightnesse daz'd the straunge beholders eye.

There they alighting by that Damzell were Directed in, and shewed all the sight; Whose porch, that most magnificke did appeare.

Stood open wyde to all men day and night; Yet warded well by one of mickle might

That sate thereby, with gyantlike resemblance, To keepe out guyle, and malice, and despight, That under shew oftimes of fayned semblance Are wont in Princes courts to worke great seath and hindrance :

His name was Awe; by whom they passing

Went up the hall, that was a large wyde roome, All full of people making troublous din [some And wondrous noyse, as if that there were Which unto them was dealing righteous

doome: By whom they passing through the thickest The marshall of the hall to them did come,

His name hight Order; who, commaunding peace, clamors cease, Them guyded through the throng, that did their

XXIV

They ceast their clamors upon them to gaze; Whom seeing all in armour bright as day, Straunge there to see, it did them much amaze, And with unwonted terror halfe affray, For never saw they there the like array; Ne ever was the name of warre there spoken, But joyous peace and quietnesse alway Dealing just judgements, that more not be broken. [wroken. [wroken.

There, as they entred at the Scriene, they saw Some one whose tongue was for his trespasse vyle Nayld to a post, adjudged so by law; For that therewith he falsely did revyle

And foule blaspheme that Queene for forged

For the bold title of a post had He on himselfe had ta en, and my as t

Thus there he stood, whylest high star head There written was the purport of his im-

In cyphers strange, that few could rightly Bon Font; but Bon, that once had an bin, Was raced out, and Mal was now put in So now Malfont was plainely to be rel-Eyther for th' evill which he did there Or that he likened was to a welhed Of evill words, and wicked schunden by

XXVII

They, passing by, were guyded by dep-Unto the presence of that gratious Q-Who sate on high, that she might all And might of all men royally be seen. Upon a throne of gold full bright and Adorned all with gemmes of endless P. As either might for wealth have gotten Or could be fram'd by workmans rare. And all embost with Lyons and wah I delice.

XXVIII All over her a cloth of state was spr

Not of rich tissew, nor of cloth of gold Nor of ought else that may be richest But like a cloud, as likest may be told That her brode-spreading wings unfold; Whose skirts were bordred with bright Glistring like gold amongst the plights And here and there shooting forth !

Mongst which crept little Angels through

Seemed those litle Angels did uph ld The cloth of state, and on their purpled Did beare the pendants through their blesse bold :

Besides, a thousand more of such as sings Hymns to high God, and earols hand For any brybes, or threates of any to be things

Encompassed the throne on which she all She, Angel-like, the heyre of ancient kin And mightie Conquerors, in royall state Whylest kings and kesars at her feet did prostrate,

Thus she did sit in soverayne Majestic, guyle,

Both with bold speaches which he blazed had,
And with lewd poems which he did compyle;

With which high God had blest her bare

v foes which did withstand: her sword was likewise layde,

loes enforst, or friends sought

XXXI

out before her feet there sate 2 Virgins clad in white, em'dt' adorne her royall state; egot in loves delight

[decay, wrath he threats the worlds anger calme, and cruell ven-

tay. XXXII

, by his divine permission, ies of mortall Princes tend, : for pardon and remission Mercillaes throne attend, : Eunomie, myld Eirene; ngst, her glorie to commend. imperance in garments clene, everence yborne of heavenly

XXXIII

sit in royall rich estate, [sate, ny, honoured of all; meath her feete, there as she Lyon lay, that mote appall age, like captived thrall yron chaine and coller bound, uld not move, nor quich at all; mure with rebellious sound, yne, when salvage choler gan

XXXIV

h in dreaded soverayntie, ow before her Majestie.

d obeysance, as they ought oone that they imagine mought: ke inclyning her withall, pe of her high soaring thought, untenance on them let fall, ith some majestie imperiall.

XXXV

esterne brim begins to draw,

Gins to abate the brightnesse of his beme. And fervour of his flames somewhat adam est rusted the bright steely So did this mightie Ladie, when she saw

[ayde, Those two strange knights such homage to her make,

ernely draw, that all the world Bate somewhat of that Majestie and awe That whylonre wont to doe so many quake, And with more myld aspect those two to entertake.

XXXVI

Now at that instant, as occasion fell, there of high Jove, that hight When these two stranger knights arriv'd in She was about affaires of common-wele, [place, eous Themis; those, they say, Dealing with Justice with indifferent grace, adgement-seat wayt day and And hearing pleas of people meane and base And hearing pleas of people meane and base:

Mongst which, as then, there was for to be heard

The tryall of a great and weightie case, Which on both sides was then debating hard; But at the sight of these those were awhile debard.

XXXVII

But, after all her princely entertayne through frayltie which offend: To th' hearing of that former cause in hand Her selfe eftsoones she gan convert againe: Which that those knights likewise mote understand, And witnesse forth aright in forrain land, Taking them up unto her stately throne,

Where they mote heare the matter throughly scand On either part, she placed th' one on th' one, The other on the other side, and neare them

XXXVIII

none.

Then was there brought, as prisoner to the A Ladie of great countenance and place,[barre, But that she it with foule abuse did marre; Yet did appeare rare beautie in her face, But blotted with condition vile and base, That all her other honour did obscure,

And titles of nobilitie deface: Yet in that wretched semblant she did sure ange knights were to her pre- The peoples great compassion unto her allure.

XXXXIX

Then up arose a person of deepe reach, And rare in-sight hard matters to revele; That well could charme his tongue, and time his speach

To all assayes; his name was called Zele. He gan that Ladie strongly to appele Of many havnous crymes by her enured; And with sharp reasons rang her such a pele t sunne, what time his fierie That those, whom she to nitle had allured, He now t' abhorre and loath her person had

procured.

XI.

First gan he tell how this, that seem'd so faire And royally arayd, Duessa hight; That false Duessa, which had wrought great

care And mickle mischiefe unto many a knight,

By her beguyled and confounded quight: But not for those she now in question came Though also those mote question'd be aright, But for yyld treasons and outrageous shame, Which she against the dred Mercilla oft did

XLI For she whylome (as ye mote yet right well

Remember) had her counsels false conspyred With faithlesse Blandamour and Paridell, (Both two her paramours, both by her hyred, And both with hope of shadowes vaine in- The Briton Prince was sare emparation. And woxe inclined much unto her jam. spyred)

And with them practiz'd, how for to depryve Mercilla of her crowne, by her aspyred, That she might it unto her selfe deryve,

did dryve.

frame.

But through high heavens grace, which favour The wicked driftes of travterous desynes [not Gainst loiall Princes, all this cursed plot.

Ere proofe it tooke, discovered was betymes, And th' actours won the meede meet for their crymes. Such be the meede of all that by such mene

Unto the type of kingdomes title clymes! But false Duessa, now untitled Queenc. Was brought to her sad doome, as here was to be seene.

XLIII

And many other crimes of foule defame

Strongly did Zele her haynous fact enforce,

Against her brought, to banish all remorse, And aggravate the horror of her blame: And with him, to make part against her, came Many grave persons that against her pled.

First was a sage old Syre, that had to name The Kingdomes Care, with a white silver hed, That many high regards and reasons gainst her red.

XLIV

Then gan Authority her to appose With peremptorie powre, that made all mute: And then the Law of Nations gainst her rose. High Gods beheast, and powre of holy lawes:

Importune care of their owne publicke cau And lastly Justice charged her with bread

XLV

But then, for her, on the contrarie part, Rose many advocates for her to plead: First there came Pittie with full tender has And with her joyn'd Regard of womanhead And then came Daunger, threatning hid

Then came Nobilitie of birth, that bread Great rath through her misfortunes tragiforth new stowre:

And high alliance unto forren powre;

And lastly Griefe did plead, and many tea

XLVI

With the neare touch whereof in tender h The Briton Prince was sore empassionate, Through the sad terror of so dreadfull fate, And wretched ruine of so high estate: That for great ruth his courage gan releat And tryumph in their blood whom she to death Which when as Zele perceived to abate, He gan his earnest fervour to augment, And many fearefull objects to them to pres

XLVII

He gan t' efforce the evidence anew. And new accusements to produce in place: He brought forth that old hag of hellish h The cursed Ate. brought her face to face, Who privie was and partie in the case: She, glad of spoyle and ruinous decay. Did her appeach; and, to her more disgreen The plot of all her practise did display, And all her traynes and all her treasons for did lay. XLVIII

Then brought he forth with griesly grist

pect Abhorred Murder, who, with bloudie knys Yet dropping fresh in hand, did her detect And there with guiltie bloudshed charg ryfe: Then brought he forth Sedition, bred In troublous wits, and mutinous uprore: Then brought he forth Incontinence of by Even foule Adulterie her face before, And lewd Impietie, that her accused some

All which when as the Prince had heard And reasons brought that no man could refute: His former fancies ruth he gan repent, it was gan Religion gainst her to impute And from her partie eftsoures was an arrangement of the runce and research that he gan repent, it was a factor of the runce and research that he gan repent, it was a factor of the runce and research that he gan repent, it was a factor of the runce and research that he gan repent, it was a factor of the runce and research that he gan repent, it was a factor of the runce and research that he gan repent, it was a factor of the runce and research that he gan repent, it was a factor of the runce and research that he gan repent, it was a factor of the runce and research that he gan repent, it was a factor of the runce and research that he gan repent, it was a factor of the runce and research that he gan repent, it was a factor of the runce and research that he gan repent, it was a factor of the runce and research that he gan repent, it was a factor of the runce and research that he gan repent, it was a factor of the runce and research that he gan repent, it was a factor of the runce and research that he gan repent tha cleene: Then gan the Peoples cry and Commons sute But Artegall, with constant firme intest

seale of Justice, was against her bent: as she guiltie deemed of them all.

Zele began to urge her punishment,

piteous ruth of her so wretched plight,

Though plaine she saw, by all that she did heare

That she of death was guiltie found by right,

To their Queene for judgement loudly call, Yet would not let just vengeance on her light;

Mercilla myld, for Justice gainst the But rather let, instead thereof, to fall thrall.

Few perling drops from her faire lampes of L light;
she, whose Princely brest was touched Would have the passion hid, and up arose with-

CANTO X.

Prince Arthur takes the enterprize For Belgee for to fight: Gerioneos Seneschall He slaves in Belges right.

Clarkes doe doubt in their devicefull!

art ether this heavenly thing whereof I treat, westen Mercie, be of Justice part.

drawne forth from her by divine extreate: well I wote, that sure she is as great,

meriteth to have as high a place, in th' Almighties everlasting seat arst was bred, and borne of heavenly race, thence pour'd down on men by influence

of grace.

11

if that Vertue be of so great might ich from just verdict will for nothing start, = to preserve inviolated right spilles the principall to save the part; much more, then, is that of powre and art seekes to save the subject of her skill, never doth from doome of right depart. Lt is greater prayse to save then spill, better to reforme then to cut off the ill.

ho then can thee, Mercilla, throughly prays herein doest all earthly Princes pas? at heavenly Muse shall thy great honour Farre thence from forrein land where they did

to the skies, whence first deriv'd it was, L now on earth it selfe enlarged has th' utmost brinke of the Armericke shore Sent by their mother. who, a widow, was

the margent of the Molucas? much more.

dwell. To seeke for succour of her and her Peares. With humble prayers and intreatfull teares;

Wrapt in great dolours and in deadly feares e Nations farre thy justice doe adore; By a strong Tyrant, who invaded has thine owne people do thy mercy prayse Her land, and slaine her children ruefully alas l

Much more it praysed was of those two

knights, The noble Prince and rightcous Artegall, When they had seene and heard her doome a-rights Against Duessa, damned by them all; But by her tempred without griefe or gall,

Till strong constraint did her thereto enforce: And yet even then ruing her wilfull fall With more then needfull naturall remorse, And yeelding the last honour to her wretched corse.

During all which, those knights continu'd Both doing and receiving curtesies Of that great Ladie, who with goodly chere Them entertayn'd, fit for their dignities, Approving dayly to their noble eyes Royall examples of her mercies rare And worthie paterns of her clemencies; Which till this day mongst many living are, Who them to their posterities doe still declare.

Amongst the rest, which in that space befell, There came two Springals of full tender yeare

2511

Her name was Belgae; who in former age A Ladie of great worth and wealth had beene. And mother of a frutefull beritage, Even seventeene goodly sonnes; which who

had seene In their first flowre, before this fatall teene

Them overtooke and their faire blossomes blasted,

More happie mother would her surely weene Then famous Niobe, before she tasted Latonaes childrens wrath that all her issue

wasted.

in fight.

But this fell Tyrant, through his tortious

Had left her now but five of all that brood: For twelve of them he did by times devoure, And to his Idols sacrifice their blood, Whylest he of none was stopped nor withstood: For soothly he was one of matchlesse might, Of horrible aspect and dreadfull mood, And had three bodies in one wast empight, And th' armes and legs of three to succour him

And sooth they say that he was borne and bred

Of Gyants race, the sonne of Geryon; He that whylome in Spaine so sore was dred For his huge powre and great oppression, Which brought that land to his subjection, Through his three bodies powre in one combynd; And eke all strangers, in that region

Arryving, to his kyne for food assynd; The fayrest kyne alive, but of the fiercest

kynd:

For they were all, they say, of purple hew, Kept by a cowheard, hight Eurytion, A cruell carle, the which all strangers slew, Ne day nor night did sleepe t'attend them on, But walkt about them ever and anone With his two-headed dogge that Orthrus

hight; Orthrus begotten by great Typhaon And foule Echidna in the house of night:

But Hercules them all did overcome in fight,

His sonne was this Geryoneo hight; Who, after that his monstrous father fell Under Alcides club, streight tooke his flight From that sad land where he his syre did quell.

And came to this, where liele the oild Being then new made widow to brid After her Noble husbands hie decision Which gave beginning to her worm! relnesse.

Then this bold Tyrant, of her widered Taking advantage, and her yet fresh we Himselfe and service to her offend, Her to defend against all forrein for That should their powre against be against pose :

Whereof she glad, now needing strug Him entertayn'd and did her change Which long he used with careful diffe The better to confirme her fearing

dence.

XIII

By meanes whereof she did at last and All to his hands, and gave him will powre

To doe whatever he thought good or me Which having got, he gan forth from howre

To stirre up strife and many a tragicke of Giving her dearest children one by our Unto a dreadfull Monster to devoure And setting up an Idole of his owner The image of his monstrous parent they

So tyrannizing and oppressing all. The woefull widow had no meants an But unto gratious great Mercilla call For ayde against that cruell Tyrant to Ere all her children he from her had on Therefore these two, her eldest some

To seeke for succour of this Ladies gidli To whom their sute they humbly did point in th' hearing of full many Krist Ladies gent.

Amongst the which then fortuned to The noble Briton Prince with his branch Who when he none of all those knight Hastily bent that enterprise to hear Nor undertake the same for cowheard He stepped forth with courage bold self Admyrd of all the rest in presence the And humbly gan that mightie Question To graunt him that adventure for his feat.

She gladly graunted it : then be write Himselfe unto his journey gan prepare

all his armours readie dight that day, nought the morrow next mote stay his fare. morrow next appear'd with purple hayre

dropping fresh out of the Indian fount, bringing light into the heavens fayre, n he was readie to his steede to mount > his way, which now was all his care and

count.

taking humble leave of that great en Queene,

o gave him roiall giftes and riches rare, I leaving Artegall to his owne care, n his voyage forth he gan to fare

did guide d all his way before him still prepare.

XVIII was not long till that the Prince arrived thin the land where dwelt that Ladie sad;

recof that Tyrant had her now deprived, d into moores and marshes banisht had, t of the pleasant soyle and cities glad, which she wont to harbour happily:

t now his cruelty so sore she drad, at to those fennes for fastnesse she did fly d there her selfe did hyde from his hard

tyranny. XIX sere he her found in sorrow and dismay,

solitarie without living wight; - all her other children, through affray d hid themselves, or taken further flight: d eke her selfe, through sudden strange affright

ten one in armes she saw, began to fly; =, when her owne two sonnes she had in sight, gan take hart and looke up joyfully; well she wist this knight came succour to

supply. d, running unto them with greedy joyes,

straight about their neckes as they did boves, kneele, d bursting forth in teares, 'Ah! my sweet d she) 'yet now I gin new life to feele; feeble spirits, that gan faint and reele,

rise againe at this your joyous sight. cadie seemes that fortunes headlong wheele

cadie seemes that fortunes heathough where thins to turne, and sunne to shine more bright.

They came unto a Citic farre up land,
The which whylome that Ladies owne has n it was wont, through comfort of this noble knight.

Then turning unto him; 'And you, Sir knight,' (Said she) 'that taken have this toylesome paine

For wretched woman, miserable wight, May you in heaven immortall guerdon gaine For so great travell as you doe sustaine!

For other meede may hope for none of mee To whom nought else but bare life doth remaine; And that so wretched one, as ye do see

Is liker lingring death then loathed life to bee.'

XXII

Much was he moved with her piteous plight, And low dismounting from his loftie steede th those two gentle youthes, which him Gan to recomfort her all that he might, Seeking to drive away deepe-rooted dreede

With hope of helpe in that her greatest neede, ride. So thence he wished her with him to wend ton his first adventure forward forth did Unto some place where they mote rest and feede,

And she take comfort which God now did send:

Good hart in evils doth the evils much amend.

XXIII

'Ay me!' (sayd she) 'and whether shall I goe? Are not all places full of forraine powres?

My pallaces possessed of my foe, My cities sackt, and their sky-threating towres Raced and made smooth fields now full of flowres a Onely these marishes and myric bogs In which the fearefull ewftes do build their

bowres. Yeeld me an hostry mongst the croking frogs, And harbour here in safety from those ravenous dogs.

'Nathlesse,' (said he) 'deare Ladie, with me Some place shall us receive and harbour yield;

If not, we will it force, maugre your foe, And purchase it to us with speare and shield: And if all fayle, yet farewell open field; The earth to all her creatures lodging lends.'

With such his chearefull speaches he doth wield

Her mind so well, that to his will she bends; And, bynding up her locks and weeds, forth with him wends.

bene;

But now by force extort out of her hand By her strong foe, who had defaced cleene Her stately towres and buildings sunny sheene.

Shut up her haven, mard her marchants trade, Robbed her people that full rich had beene, And in her necke a Castle huge had made, The which did her commaund without needing perswade.

XXVI

That Castle was the strength of all that state, Untill that state by strength was pulled downe;

And that same citie, so now ruinate, Had bene the keye of all that kingdomes

crowne;
Both goodly Castle, and both goodly Towne,
Till that th' offended heavens list to lowre
Upon their blisse, and balefull fortune frowne:
When those gainst states and kingdomes do
conjure.

Who then can thinke their hedlong ruine to

XXVII

But he had brought it now in servile bond, And made it beare the yoke of Inquisition, Stryving long time in vaine it to withstond; Yet glad at last to make most base submission,

And life enjoy for any composition: So now he hath new lawes and orders new Imposd on it with many a hard condition, And forced it, the honour that is dew To God, to doe unto his Idole most untrew.

XXVIII

To him he hath before this Castle greene
Built a faire Chappell, and an Altar framed
Of costly Ivory full rich beseene,
On which that cursed Idole, farre proclamed,
He hath set up, and him his God hath
Offring to him in sinfull sacrifice [named;
The flesh of men, to Gods owne likenesse
framed.

And powring forth their blond in brutishe wize, That any yron eyes to see it would agrize.

XXIX

And, for more horror and more crueltie, Under that cursed Idols altar-stone An hideous monster doth in darknesse lie, Whose dreadfull shape was never seene of

That lives on earth; but unto those alone The which unto him sacrificed bee; Those he devoures, they say, both flesh and

What else they have is all the Tynou So that no whit of them remaying a sec.

XXX

There eke he placed a strong gunism.
And set a Seneschall of dreated wight.
That by his powre oppressed every and and vanquished all ventrous krights at
To whom he wont shew all the she
might,

After that them in battell he had well To which when now they gar 450 sight,

The Ladie counseld him the place to the Where as so many knights had folly fordonne,

XXX

Her fearefull speaches nought he his But, ryding streight under the Cash of Called aloud unto the watchfull wark Which there did wayte, willing then a call

Into the field their Tyrants Senschill: To whom when tydings thereof as streight

Cals for his armes, and arming him will Eftsoones forth pricked proudly in his And gan with courage herce addresse the fight,

XXXII

They both encounter in the middle pl And their sharpe speares doe both a smite Amid their shields, with so know as

Amid their shields, with so huge mig That seem'd their soules they will ryven quight

Out of their breasts with furious desired yet could the Seneschals no entrance into the Princes shield where it could (So pure the metall was and well rely But shivered all about, and scattered wynd;

XXXIII

Not so the Princes, but with restlements his shield it readie passage found. Both through his haberjeon and eke his Which tombling downe upon the ground

ground
Gave leave unto his ghost from thraldom
To wander in the griesly shades of us
There did the Prince him leave in
swound,

And thence unto the castle marched m To see if entrance there as yet via might.

XXXIV

or drew, three knights he

issuing forth apace, m with all their powre did right in the middle race

s attonce on him enchace. verings for battrie bent, nst one certaine place, ir thunders rage forth rent, is to stagger with astonish-

XXXV they on the Prince did

le swarved nought asyde, gave way, that was great e firmely did abyde

ur, that his mortall speare shield and pierst through uppon his mother deare, nis wretched life in deadly

ich in the midst did ryde,

other fellowes saw, they

ild carry them away; Prince as swiftly sped, heir unknightly play. y entring th' one did th' ne gate he overhent,

in, him there did slay:

XXXVII

The other which was entred laboured fast To sperre the gate; but that same lumpe of clay, past. Whose grudging ghost was thereout fled and Right in the middest of the threshold lay,

That it the Posterne did from closing stay: The whiles the Prince hard preased in betweene, And entraunce wonne: Streight th' other fled away, And ran into the Hall, where he did weene Him selfe to save; but he there slew him at

XXXVIII

the skreene.

Then all the rest which in that Castle were, Seeing that sad ensample them before, Durst not abide, but fled away for feare And them convayd out at a Posterne dore. Long sought the Prince; but when he found no more

T' oppose against his powre he forth issued Unto that Lady, where he her had lore, And her gan cheare with what she there had vewed. And what she had not seene within unto her

XXXIX

Who with right humble thankes him goodly greeting For so great prowesse as he there had proved, Much greater then was ever in her weeting, With great admiraunce inwardly was moved, And honourd him with all that her behoved. Thenceforth into that Castle he her led

With her two sonnes, right deare of her be loved, ling on the threshold, sent where all that night themselves they cherished, unto her place of punish- And from her balefull minde all care he banished.

CANTO XI.

Prince Arthure overcomes the great Gerioneo in fight:
Doth slay the Monster, and restore Belge unto her right.

ourse of common life, ae is overborne of wrong r powre, or guile, or strife, and makes her party strong; 1 her dome she doe prolong,

Yet at the last she will her owne cause right: As by sad Belge seemes; whose wrongs though long
She suffred, yet at length she did requight.
And sent redresse thereof by this brave Briton

Knight.

Whereof when newes was to that Tyrant brought,

How that the Lady Belge now had found A Champion, that bad with his Champion fought, And laid his Seneschall low on the ground,

And eke him selfe did threaten to confound ; He gan to burne in rage, and friese in feare, Doubting sad end of principle unsound: Yet, sith he heard but one that did appeare, He did him selfe encourage and take better

cheare.

Nathelesse him selfe he armed all in hast, And forth he far'd with all his many bad, Ne stayed step, till that he came at last Unto the Castle which they conquerd had: There with huge terrour, to be more ydrad, He sternely marcht before the Castle gate,

And, with bold vaunts and ydle threatning, bad Deliver him his owne, ere yet too late, To which they had no right, nor any wrong-

The Prince staid not his aunswere to devize, But, opening streight the Sparre, forth to him came,

Full nobly mounted in right warlike wize; And asked him, if that he were the same, Who all that wrong unto that wofull Dame So long had done, and from her native land Exiled her, that all the world spake shame, He boldly aunswerd him, He there did stand That would his doings justifie with his owne

hand.

full state.

With that so furiously at him he flew, As if he would have over-run him streight; And with his buge great yron axe gan hew So hideously uppon his armour bright, As he to peeces would have chopt it quight, That the bold Prince was forced foote to give To his first rage, and yeeld to his despight; The whilest at him so dreadfully he drive, That seem'd a marble rocke asunder could have rive.

Thereto a great advauntage eke he has Through his three double hands thrise multi-[was: plyde, Besides the double strength which in them For stil, when fit occasion did betyde, He could his weapon shift from side to syde, From hand to hand; and with such nimblesse Could wield about, that, ere it were espide,

The wicked stroke did wound his Behinde, beside, before, as he li li

Which uncouth use when as the ccived, He gan to watch the wishing of

Least by such slight bewere nurs And ever, ere he saw the stroke to He would it meete and warily and One time when he his weapon by As he was wont, and chang't for hand,

He met him with a counterstro That quite smit off his arme as l

Therewith all fraught with fury He brayd aloud for very fell de And sodainely, t' avenge him and Gan into one assemble all the mi Of all his hands, and heaved the Thinking to pay him with that a But the sad steele seizd not, when Uppon the childe, but somewhat And lighting on his horses head mall.

Downe streight to ground fell

And eke to th' earth his burden w But he him selfe full lightly from And gan him selfe to fight on for Whereof when as the Gyant was He wox right blyth, as he had g And laught so loud, that all hi bare

One might have seene enraung'd Like to a rancke of piles that pite

Eftsoones againe his axe be mu Ere he were throughly buckled t And can let drive at him so dress That had be chaunced not his sh Ere that huge stroke arrived on He had him surely cloven quite But th' Adamantine shield which So well was tempred, that for all It would no passage yeeld unto vaine.

Yet was the stroke so forcibly a That made him stagger with unc As if he would have tottered to Wherewith full wroth he fiercely

```
110 XI.]
                                      THE FAERIE QUEENE.
  denri'sie with like kindnesse to repay
smote at him with so importune might,
 $ two more of his armes did fall away.
 nuclesse braunches, which the hatchets
                                                          But Beige, with her sonnes, prostra
Before his feete in all that peoples sig
praned from the native tree, and cropped
                                                          Mongst joyes mixing some tears, mon
                                             [quight.
that all mad and furious he grew,
                                                         Him thus bespake: Omost redoubted 1
a fell mastiffe through enraging heat,
                                                         The which hast me, of all most wretched
censt, and band, and blasphemies forth
                                                         That earst was dead, restor'd to life aga
                                                        And these weake impes replanted by thy i
 this Gods, and fire to them did threat,
                                                       What guerdon can I give thee for thy part even that which thou savedst thine
ell unto him selfe with horrour great.
sorth he car'd no more which way he
strocke,

are it light; but gan to chaufe and Saying; 'Deare Lady, deedes ought not booke.

Saying; 'Deare Lady, deedes ought not booke.

Saying; 'Deare Lady, deedes ought not booke.

Saying; 'Deare Lady, deedes ought not booke.
ash this teeth, and his head at him seand looke, seand looke, looke, by the seand shall be seand looke. By the authors manhood, nor the doers might by their trueth and by the causes right.

That same is it which fought for you this day.
                                                  That same is it which fought for you this day
                                                 What other meed, then, need me to requight But that which yeeldeth vertues meed always.
 wexed now the more aware
m selfe from those his furious heats,
 advauntage how to worke his care,
                                                 That is, the vertue selfe, which her reward dot!
good Fortune to him offred faire;
his rage him overstrooke,
ould his weapon backe repaire,
                                                She humbly thankt him for that wondrous
bare and naked overtooke,
s mortal steel quite through the
                                              And further sayd: 'Ah! Sir, but mote ye
                                             Sith ye thus farre have tendred my poore case,
                                            As from my chiefest foe me to release,
three bodies he him strooke at-Of that vilde race, and stablished my peace.

What is there else (sayd he) left of their
thrise have needed for the nonce Declare it boldly, Dame, and doe not stand in
is owne blacke bloudy gore,
as owne blacke bloudy gore, nereby with for very deaths disdaine; There stands an Idole of great note and name, of night him covering, hore The which this fivent morad first on his
                                          'Then wote you, Sir, that in this Church
trin for very deaths disclaine; There stands an Idole of great note and n d of night him covering, bore. The which this Gyant reared first on hie, and of his discount thought
se of dole, his daies there to And of his owne vaine fancies thought did
Lady from the Castle saw, the oured up for daily sacrifize or two sonnes did looking My children and my people, burnt in flame hast her selfe did draw.

With all the tortures that he could devize, blouddy guize.
s, greedy t' understand
e victory befall,
                                   And underneath this Idoll there doth lie
it falne, they eke him
                                 An hideous monster that doth it defend,
                                And feedes on all the carkasses that die
                              /In sacrifize unto that cursed feend;
```

Whose ugly shape none ever saw, nor kend, That ever scap'd : for of a man, they say,

It has the voice, that speaches forth doth send, Even blasphemous words, which she doth bray Out of her poysnous entrails fraught with dire decay.

Which when the Prince heard tell, his heart gan earne

For great desire that Monster to assay, And prayd the place of her abode to learne; Which being shew'd, he gan him selfe streightway

Thereto addresse, and his bright shield display. So to the Church he came, where it was told The Monster underneath the Altar lay : There he that idoll saw of massy gold Most richly made, but there no Monster did behold.

XXII

Upon the Image with his naked blade Three times, as in defiance, there he strooke; And the third time out of an hidden shade There forth issewd from under th' Altars smooke A dreadfull feend with fowle deformed looke, That stretcht it selfe as it had long lyen still; And her long taile and fethers strongly shooke, That all the Temple did with terrour fill;

Yet him nought terrified that feared nothing ill.

And seem'd to be of infinite great strength: Horrible, hideous, and of hellish race, Borne of the brooding of Echidna base, Or other like infernall furies kinde; For of a Mayd she had the outward face, To hide the horrour which did lurke behinde, The better to beguile whom she so fond did finde.

XXIV

Thereto the body of a dog she had, Full of fell ravin and fierce greedinesse; A Lions clawes, with powre and rigour clad, To rend and teare what so she can oppresse; A Dragons taile, whose sting without redresse Full deadly wounds where so it is empight; And Eagles wings, for scope and speedinesse, That nothing may escape her reaching might, Whereto she ever list to make her hardy flight.

XXV

Much like in foulnesse and deformity Unto that Monster, whom the Theban Knight, The father of that fatall progeny, Made kill her selfe for very hearts despight

That he had red her Riddle, which Could ever loose but suffred deal So also did this Monster use fibe To many a one which came unta Whom she did put to death, doo foole.

She comming forth, when as she The armed Prince with shield so h Her ready to assaile, was greatly And much dismayd with that dism That backe she would have tur

affright: But he gan her with courage force That forst her turne agains in her To save her selfe, least that he di And sure he had her slaine, had s

her way.

The, when she saw that she was She flew at him like to an hellish And on his shield tooke hold with a As if that it she would in peeces? Or reave out of the hand that did Strongly he strove out of her gree To loose his shield, and long while But, when he could not quite it, w Her Lions clawes he from her fe wipe,

XXVIII

An huge great Beast it was, when it in length And fowle blasphemous speaches was stretched forth, that nigh fild all the place, And bitter curses, horrible to tell. That even the Temple, wherein so Did quake to heare, and nigh ass Tho with her huge long taile sheat That made him stagger and stand With trembling joynts, as he shooke;

Who nought was terrifide, but goe

As when the Mast of some well-ti Is with the blast of some outragic Blowne downe, it shakes the be bulke, And makes her ribs to cracke as they

Whilest still she stands, as ston lorne:

So was he stound with stroke of he But, ere that it she backe againe He with his sword it strooke, that He jointed it, and mard the swin flaile.

Then gan she cry much louder to

selfe was therewith stonied sore, ely sound thereof she feard. a not foreseene with heedfull vew, n his shield atween, she had him to rew. XXXI

e prest on him with heavy sway, vombe his fatall sword he thrust, entrailes made an open way th; the which, once being brust reat Mill-damb forth fiercely gusht, l out of her infernall sinke filth; and poyson therewith rusht, igh choked with the deadly stinke. matter were small lust to speake inke.

XXXII

ne to ground fell that deformed An aged wight wayfaring all alone, [set out clouds of sulphure fowle and puddle of contagion was, [blacke, The use of armes, and battell quite forgone: en he saw on ground, he was full On faire Irene in her affliction, [take it went forth his gladnesse to par-, who watcht all this while full sad, vhat end would be of that same iger drad. Whom by his name saluting, thus he gan: 'Haile, good Sir Sergis, truest Knight alive,

XXXIII

ien she saw so joyously come forth, oyce and shew triumphant chere, d praysing his renowmed worth names that honorable were brought her, and her shewed there t of his paines, that Monsters spoyle, at Idoll deem'd so costly dere, lid all to peeces breake, and foyle irt, and left so in the loathely soyle.

XXXIV he people which beheld that day aloud, that unto heaven it rong; damzels of that towne in ray cing forth, and joyous carrols song: y led through all their streetes along ith girlonds of immortall baies; s vulgar did about them throng man, whose everlasting praise ere bound to all posterities to raise.

with Belgse did awhile remaine eat feast and joyous merriment,

Untill he had her settled in her raine With safe assuraunce and establishment: e feend her selfe more fiercely reard. Then to his first emprize his mind he lent, wide great wings, and strongly flew Full loath to Belgss and to all the rest; r body at his head and beard, Of whom yet taking leave thence forth he went, And to his former journey him addrest; On which long way he rode, ne ever day did rest.

XXXVI But turne we now to noble Artegall; Who, having left Mercilla, streight way went On his first quest, the which him forth did call, To weet, to worke Irenaes franchisement, And eke Grantortoes worthy punishment. So forth he fared, as his manner was, With onely Talus wayting diligent, Through many perils; and much way did pas, Till nigh unto the place at length approcht he ĥas. XXXVII

There as he traveld by the way, he met

i then Lerna, or then Stygian lake, To whom as he approacht, he knew anone an would nigh awhaped make:

That it was he which whilome did attend When first to Faery court he saw her wend, Unto his soveraine Queene her suite for to commend.

XXXVIII

Well tride in all thy Ladies troubles than When her that Tyrant did of Crowne deprive; What new occasion doth thee hither drive, Whiles she alone is left, and thou here found? Or is she thrall, or doth she not survive? To whom he thus: 'She liveth sure and sound, But by that Tyrant is in wretched thraldome bound:

XXXXX 'For she presuming on th' appointed tyde,

In which ye promist, as ye were a Knight, To meete her at the salvage Ilands syde, And then and there for triall of her right With her unrighteous enemy to fight, Did thither come; where she, afrayd of nought, By guilefull treason and by subtill slight Surprized was, and to Grantorto brought, Who her imprisond hath, and her life often sought.

'And now he hath to her prefixt a day, By which if that no champion doe appeare Which will her cause in battailous array Against him justifie, and prove her cleare Of all those crimes that he gainst her doth

She death shall sure aby." Those tidings sad Did much abash Sir Artegall to heare, And grieved sore that through his fault she had Fallen into that Tyrants hand and usage bad.

XLI

Then thus replide: 'Now sure and by my life,

Too much am I too blame for that faire Maide, That have her drawne to all this troublous strife,

Through promise to afford her timely aide, Which by default I have not yet defraide: But witnesse unto me, ye heavens! that know How cleare I am from blame of this upbraide; For ye into like thraldome me did throw, And kept from complishing the faith which I did owe.

XLII

But now aread, Sir Sergis, how long space Hath he her lent a Champion to provide?' 'Ten daies,' (quoth he) 'he graunted hath of

For that he weeneth well before that tide

None can have tidings to assist her side: For all the shores, which to the sea accoste, He day and night doth ward both farre and wide,

That none can there arrive without an hoste: So her he deemes already but a damned ghoste,

XLIII

'Now turne againe,' (Sir Artegall then sayd)
'For, if I live till those ten daies have end, Assure your selfe, Sir Knight, she shall have avd,

Though I this dearest life for her doe spend," So backeward he attone with him did wend: Tho, as they rode together on their way, A rout of people they before them kend, Flocking together in confusde array ; As if that there were some tumultuous affray. Of whom Sir Arteg

XLIV

To which as they approcht the cause to know, They saw a Knight in daungerous distresse Of a rude rout him chasing to and fro, That sought with lawlesse powre him to op-

And bring in bondage of their brutishnesse: And farre away, amid their rakehell bands, They spide a Lady left all succourlesse, Crying, and holding up her wretched hands To him for aide, who long in vaine their rage withstands.

Yet still he strives, n To reskue her from th And like a Lion wood Dealing his dreadfull pence.

which the But all in vaine : their That naught may boo thence;

For soone as he their They turne afresh, an threat.

And now they doe so That they his shield b And forced him to the Fro dangers dread his Albe that it most safe And much did magni For, from the day the Amongst all Knight blame,

And counted but a re

Whom when they th They drew unto his Them also gan assai And forced them, ho They were, as well a Backe to recule; unt With his huge flaile From whose sterne Like scattred chaffe doth fan.

So when that Kni freed, He drawing neare And yeeld great th In saving him from c Of those which som The whole occasion And who he was, an The which with mo nere.

To whom he thu hight, Well knowne, and Untill late mischie That all my forme And that faire Lac Ye with those cay Is mine owne love,

her faith she first did plight d take me for her Lord : , which Grandtorto hight, s and many a guilefull word m for to accord. [tempted?] t with gifts and words be th me ever since abhord, h guilefully consented:

h this troupe of villains sent etch her quite away: selfe I long in vaine have daily meanes assay; [bent nce by no meanes I may, vith multitude oppresse, I might doe overlay, am to great distresse, oe th' attempt remedilesse.'

'e' (said Artegall) 'forborne hield in daungerous dismay? st shame and foulest scorne, might behappen may a that should his deedes dis-[shame:

surbon, blushing halfe for you' (quoth he) bewray, mote happily me blame, n of will, that through in-

t first was dubbed knight it, the knight of the Red-

[fight, in which he did endosse iers badge upon the bosse: tile I bore, and therewithall els without wound or losse; orto selfe I did appall, oftentimes in field before

LIV

ny did that shield envie, en increased more, and troublous enmitie, chin, being battered sore, have of late forbore, have my love obtayned; love have nathemore,

from me by wrongfull might, For she by force is still frome detayned. e good will, I cannot read And with corruptfull brybes is to untruth

mis-trayned.

To whom thus Artegall: 'Certes, Sir knight, Hard is the case the which ye doe complaine; Yet not so hard (for nought so hard may light That it to such a streight mote you constraine)
As to abandon that which doth containe Your honours stile, that is, your warlike shield.

All perill ought be lesse, and lesse all paine Then losse of fame in disaventrous field: uyle in wemen was invented! Dye, rather then doe ought that mote dishonour yield.'

'Not so,' (quoth he) 'for yet, when time doth serve My former shield I may resume againe :

To temporize is not from truth to swerve, Ne for advantage terme to entertaine, When as necessitie doth it constraine.'
'Fie on such forgerie!' (sayd Artegall)
'Under one hood to shadow faces twaine: Knights ought be true, and truth is one in all:

Of all things, to dissemble, fouly may befall!

'Yet let me you of courtesie request' (Said Burbon) 'to assist me now at need Against these pesants which have me opprest, And forced me to so infamous deed, That yet my love may from their hands be Sir Artegall, albe he earst did wyte [freed.] His wavering mind, yet to his aide agreed. And, buckling him eftsoones unto the fight, Did set upon those troupes with all his powre

LVIII

and might.

Who flocking round about them, as a swarme Of flyes upon a birchen bough doth cluster, Did them assault with terrible allarme; And over all the fields themselves did muster With bils and glayves making a dreadfull luster, [retyre: That forst at first those knights backe to As when the wrathfull Boreas doth bluster, Nought may abide the tempest of his yre; Both man and beast doe fly, and succour doe inquyre.

But, when as overblowen was that brunt, Those knights began afresh them to assayle, And all about the fields like Squirrels hunt; But chiefly Talus with his yron flayle, Gainst which no flight nor rescue mote avayle, Made cruell havocke of the baser crew, And chaced them both over hill and dale.

352

Of all those crimes the reare. She death shall sure aby

Did much abash Sir Art And grieved sore that the Fallen into that Tyrants

Xt. Then thus replide: '2

life,
Too much am I too blau
That have her drawne
strife,

Through promise to affi-Which by default I hav But witnesse unto me, y How cleare I am from b For ye into like thraldo And kept from complisidid owe,

But now aread, Sir S Hath he her lent a Cha Ten daies, (quoth he

'Ten daies,' (quoth he grace,
For that he weeneth w
None can have tidings
For all the shores, whi
He day and night dowide,

That none can there a So her he deemes a ghoste.'

'Now turne againe.
'For, if I live till the
Assure your selfe, S:
ayd.

Though I this dear So backeward he att Tho, as they rode to A rout of people the Flocking together in As if that there we

To which as they. They saw a Knight Of a rude rout him That sought with presse, And bring in bond

And farre away, a They spide a Lady Crying, and holdin-To him for aide, which withstands.



100

-::: 45.5 1 20

ill manie soone they overthrew; wo knights themselves their captains

d subdew. they came whereas that Ladie bode. now her keepers had forsaken quight now her keepers had forwaren quigut e themselves, and scattered were abrode. life dismayd they found in doubtfull ther glad nor sorie for their sight; ondrous faire she was, and richly clad iall robes, and many jewels dight; hat those villens through their usage bad n fouly rent, and shamefully defaced had.

it Burbon, streight dismounting from his to her ran with greedic great desyre, [steed, d catching her fast by her ranged weed ad him ayaunt, ne would unto his lore
Illured be for prayer nor for meed: [forlore]
Vhom when those knights so froward and vhome whose knights so froward and sheld, they her rebuked and upbrayded sore.

So bore her quite away, nor well sheld, they her rebuked and upbrayded sore.

Sayd Artegall: What foule disgrace is this To so faire Ladie, as ye seeme in sight.
To blot your beautie, that unblemisht is, With so foule blame as breach of faith once plight, or change of love for any worlds delight!

Is ought on earth so pretious or deare Is ought on earth so pretions or deare
As prayse and honour? Or is ought so bright
And beautiful as glories beames appeare,
Whose goodly light then Phœbus lampe doth
Blue more cleare?

Why then will ye, fond Dame, attem Unto a strangers love, so lightly placed, For guiltes of gold or any worldly glee, To leave the love that ye before embase And let your fame with falshood be deli-Fie on the pelle for which good name is I and honour with indignitie debased! د <u>. د</u> و And honour with indignitie depreced! Dearer is love then life, and fame the But dearer then them both your faith plighted hold.

Much was the Ladie in her gentle and Abasht at his rebuke, that bit her need to answere thereunto did find: But, hanging down her head with Stood long amaz'd as she amated weare:

Which Burbon seeing her againe assayd; And, clasping twixt his armes, her

Nathlesse the yron man did still pure That raskall many with unpitied spoys I nat raskin many with unpured spore Ne ceased not, till all their scattred or Into the sea he drove quite from that a The which they troubled had with gr But Artegall, seeing his cruell deed.

Commainded him from slaughter to And to his voyage gan againe proces speed.

CANTO XII.

Artegall doth Sir Burbon side,
And blames for changing shield: ,
He with the great Grantorto fights,
And slaieth him in field. No faith so firme, no trust can b No love so lasting then, that

O sacreto hunger of ambitious mindes,

And impotent desire of men to raine!
Whom neither dread of God, that devils bindes. Nor lawes of men, that common-weales con-

Nor lawes of men, that common-weales containe, that wilde beastes returned from doing wrong; Witnesse may Burbon be:

Nor bands of nature, that wilde beastes returned from doing wrong; Witnesse may Burbon be:

Nor bands of nature, that wilde beastes returned from doing wrong; Witnesse may Knight assure he was home a kingdome to obtains: Made him become most faithly whore they may home a kingdome to obtains: Can keepe from outrage and from doing wrong, Until the love of Lordship and Where they may hope a kingdome to obtaine: Made him become most faithle

long.

Witnesse may Burbon be:

sse be Gerioneo found, ike cause faire Belge did oppress and wrong most cruelly confound: now Grantorto, who no lesse he rest burst out to all outragious-

hom Sir Artegall, long having since hand th' exploit, (being theretoo by that mightic Faerie Prince, riane, that Tyrant to fordoo,) ther great adventures hethertoo alackt: But now time drawing ny synd her high beheast to doo, -shore he gan his way apply, if shipping readie he mote there CTY.

m they came to the sea coast they md . readie (as good fortune fell) sea, with whom they did compound them over where them list to tell. e and weather served them so well ne day they with the coast did fall; they readie found, them to repell, tes of men in order martiall. em forbad to land, and footing did stell.

semore would they from land refraine:
a as nigh unto the shore they drew of man might sound the bottome

) the sea did forth issew [him threw; larts from shore and stones they at ng through the waves with stedfast be might of all those troupes in vew, e shore; whence he them chast away

e to fly like doves whom the Eagle

h affray.

les Sir Artegall with that old knight descend, there being none them neare, ard marched to a towne in sight. ume tydings to the Tyrants care, which earst did fly away for feare, rrival: wherewith troubled sore forces streight to him did reare, issuing with his scouts afore, : shore :

But Talus sternely did upon them set, And brusht and battred them without remorse, That on the ground he left full many a corse : Ne any able was him to withstand, But he them overthrew both man and horse, That they lay scattred over all the land, [hand: As thicke as doth the seede after the sowers

VIII

Till Artegall him seeing so to rage Willd him to stay, and signe of truce did make: To which all harkning did a while asswage Their forces furie, and their terror slake; Till he an Herauld cald, and to him spake, Willing him wend unto the Tyrant streight, And tell him that not for such slaughters sake He thether came, but for to trie the right Of fayre Irenaes cause with him in single right:

And willed him for to reclayme with speed His scattred people, ere they all were slaine, And time and place convenient to areed, In which they two the combat might darraine, Which message when Grantorto heard, full fayne And glad he was the slaughter so to stay;

And pointed for the combat twixt them twayne The morrow next, ne gave him longer day: So sounded the retraite, and drew his folke away.

That night Sir Artegall did cause his tent There to be pitched on the open plaine; For he had given streight commaundement That none should dare him once to entertaine; Which none durst breake, though many would right faine

For faire Irena, whom they loved deare: But yet old Sergis did so well him paine, That from close friends, that dar'd not to appeare, full weare He all things did purvay which for them need-

The morrow next, that was the dismall day Appointed for Irenas death before, So soone as it did to the world display His chearefull face, and light to men restore, The heavy Mayd, to whom none tydings bore Of Artegals arryvall her to free Lookt up with eyes full sad and hart full sore, Weening her lifes last howre then neare to bee, m to have encountred ere they left Sith no redemption nigh she did nor heare nor see.

XII

he marched farre he with them met, I Then up she rose, and on her selfe did dig by charged them with all his force: Most squalid garments, fit for such a day; Then up she rose, and on her selfe did dight feare.

day.

wrong :

And with dull countenance and with doleful

She forth was brought in sorrowfull dismay For to receive the doome of her decay: But comming to the place, and finding there Sir Artegall, in battailous array Wayting his foe, it did her dead hart cheare And new life to her lent in midst of deadly

Like as a tender Rose in open plaine, That with untimely drought nigh withered was, And hung the head, soone as few drops of raine Thereon distill and deaw her daintie face, Gins to looke up, and with fresh wonted grace Dispreds the glorie of her leaves gay; Such was Irenas countenance, such her case, When Artegall she saw in that array, There wayting for the Tyrant till it was farre

Who came at length with proud presumpteous gate Into the field, as if he fearelesse were, All armed in a cote of yron plate Of great defence to ward the deadly feare; And on his head a steele-cap he did weare Of colour rustie-browne, but sure and strong; And in his hand an huge Polaxe did beare, Whose steale was yron-studded, but not long, With which he wont to fight to justifie his

Of stature huge and hideous he was Like to a Giant for his monstrous hight, And did in strength most sorts of men surpas, Ne ever any found his match in might; Thereto he had great skill in single fight: His face was ugly and his countenance sterne, That could have frayd one with the very sight, And gaped like a gulfe when he did gerne; That whether man or monster one could scarse discerne.

XVI

Soone as he did within the listes appeare, With dreadfull looke he Artegall beheld, As if he would have daunted him with feare; And, grinning griesly, did against him weld His deadly weapon which in hand he held: But th' Elfin swayne, that oft had seene like Kept on his course a sight,

with his ghastly count'nance nothing queld;

But gan him streight to buckle to the fight, And cast his shield about to be in readie plight.

The trompets sound With dreadfull term And their huge stro

stow To doe most dammag But with such force The Tyrant thundre That through the y And even to the vita Ne ought could then or brust,

Which cruell outra Did well avize, then He shund his stroke And way did give u As when a skilfull I A storme approching He will not bide the But strikes his say sheat,

And lends unto it

So did the Facrie k And stouped oft his No shame to stoupe reare :

And, much to gaine So stoutest knights But still the tyrant And did his yron az That many wounds And with his burde overlade.

Yet when as fit ady The whiles the curs His cruell hand to si Under his stroke he Right in the flanke dreare,

That the gore-bloud Did underneath him And all his armour of Thereat he brayed lo

Yet the hugestroke And with such mon cended,

That seemed noug But he it well did w And twixthim and t Which thereon seizi

deepe therein did sticke so fast i wrast.

XXII

powre applyed thereunto, erewith the knight drew all about for all that ever he could doe could not from his shield undoe; egall perceiving strooke no more, soone his shield did it forgoe; s he combred was therewith so sore, him let drive more flercely then

XXIII

e him pursew'd, that at the last nim with Chrysaor on the hed the souse thereof full sore aghast ed to and fro in doubtfull sted. iles he him raw so ill bested, m smite with all his might and ig on his mother earth he fed: en he saw prostrated on the plaine, reft his head to ease him of his

XXIV

then the people round about him ted all for joy of his successe, quit from that proud Tyrants awe, h strong powre did them long time ing all with greedie joyfulnesse ena, at her feet did fall, dored with due humblenesse ue Liege and Princesse naturall; ber champions glorie sounded over-

ight her leading with meete majestie pallace where their kings did rayne, erein establish peaceablie, r kingdomes seat restore agayne: ch persons, as did late maintayne nts part with close or open ayde, punished with heavie payne; ort space, whiles there with her he [obayd. rd. as left that durst her once have dis-

rhich time that he did there remayne, was true Justice how to deale, md night employ'd his busie paine forme that ragged common-weale:

And that same yron man, which could reveale meanes it backe againe he forth All hidden crimes, through all that realme he sent

To search out those that usd to rob and steale, s he tug'd and strove to get it out,

Or did rebell gainst lawfull government;

On whom he did inflict most grievous punishment.

XXVII

But, ere he coulde reforme it thoroughly, He through occasion called was away To Faerie Court, that of necessity His course of Justice he was forst to stay, And Talus to revoke from the right way In which he was that Realme for to redresse: But envies cloud still dimmeth vertues ray. So, having freed Irena from distresse He tooke his leave of her there left in heavinesse.

XXVIII Tho, as he backe returned from that land,

And there arriv'd againe whence forth he set, He had not passed farre upon the strand, When as two old ill favour'd Hags he met. By the way side being together set; Two griesly creatures: and, to that their faces Most foule and filthie were, their garments

Did much the more augment, and made most ugly cases. XXIX The one of them, that elder did appeare, With her dull eyes did seeme to looke askew,

Being all rag'd and tatter'd, their disgraces

heare Hung loose and loathsomely: Thereto her hew Was wan and leane, that all her teeth arew, And all her bones might through her cheekes be red:

That her mis-shape much helpt; and her foule

Her lips were, like raw lether, pale and blew: And as she spake therewith she slavered; Yet spake she seldom, but thought more the lesse she sed.

XXX Her hands were foule and durtie, never

washt In all her life, with long nayles over-raught, Like puttocks clawes; with th' one of which

she scracht Her cursed head, although it itched naught: The other held a snake with venime fraught, On which she fed and gnawed hungrily, As if that long she had not eaten ought; That round about her jawes one might descry The bloudie gore and poyson dropping loth somely.

XXXI

Her name was Envie, knowen well thereby, Whose nature is to grieve and grudge at all That ever she sees doen prays-worthily; Whose sight to her is greatest crosse may fall, And vexeth so that makes her eat hergall; For, when she wanteth other thing to eat, She feedes on her owne maw unnaturall, And of her owne foule entrayles makes her meat;

Meat fit for such a monsters monsterous dyeat:

XXXII

And if she hapt of any good to heare, That had to any happily betid, Then would she inly fret, and grieve, and teare

Her flesh for felnesse, which she inward hid: But if she heard of ill that any did, Or harme that any had, then would she make Great cheare, like one unto a banquet bid, And in anothers losse great pleasure take, As she had got thereby and gayned a great stake.

The other nothing better was then shee, Agreeing in bad will and cancred kynd ; But in bad maner they did disagree, For what so Envie good or bad did fynd She did conceale, and murder her owne mynd;

But this, what ever evill she conceived, Did spred abroad and throw in th' open wynd:

Yet this in all her words might be perceived, That all she sought was mens good name to have bereaved.

XXXIV

For, whatsoever good by any sayd Or doen she heard, she would streightwayes invent

How to deprave or slaunderously upbrayd, Or to misconstrue of a mans intent, And turne to ill the thing that well was ment.

Therefore she used often to resort To common haunts, and companies frequent, To hearke what any one did good report, To blot the same with blame, or wrest in wicked sort.

XXXV

And if that any ill she heard of any, She would it eeke, and make much worse by And at him throwe telling.

And take great joy to publish it to many That every matter worse was for her melling : But that some life

Her name was h dwelling

Was neare to Envi A wicked hag, and In mischiefe; for h But this same bot perplext.

Her face was ugly Foming with poyse In which her curse

short. Appear'd like Aspi Or cruelly does wo A distaffe in her of Upon the which sh And favnes to weave To throw amongst disprad.

These two now h one And linckt togethe

For whom they wa How they might fall. For freeing from th

Besides, unto them A monster, which call dreadfull feend,

Whom they by sli purpose lad.

Such were these drest:

Who when they ni Sir Artegall, return They both arose, a As it had bene t scryde

ravenous Wol And Envie first, as Towardes him runs, About her cares, d head knocke

Then from her n take, The which whylen Devouring, even th

The cursed Serpen Earst chawd there

e past afore withouten dread, behind, that long the marke was to read.

XI.

' other comming neare gan him rele, rayle with all she could invent; hat he had, with unmanly guile e abusion, both his honour blent, bright sword, the sword of Justice ned with reprochfull crueltie [lent, esse blood of many an innocent: randtorto, him with treacherie ynes having surpriz'd, he fouly did die.

XLI

the Blatant Beast, by them set on, began aloud to barke and bay tter rage and fell contention, the aire rebellowed againe, fully his hundred tongues did bray: d straine.

XLII

And still among most bitter wordes they spake, Most shamefull, most unrighteous, most untrew

That they the mildest man alive would make Forget his patience, and yeeld vengeaunce dew

To her, that so false sclaunders at him threw: And more, to make them pierce and wound more deepe, [grew She with the sting which in her vile tongue Did sharpen them, and in fresh poyson steepe: Yet he past on, and seem'd of them to take no keepe.

XLIII

But Talus, hearing her so lewdly raile, And speake so ill of him that well deserved Would her have chastiz'd with his yron flaile, tter rage and fell contention, [way If her Sir Artegall had not preserved, the woods and rockes nigh to that And him forbidden, who his heast observed:

So much the more at him still did she scold the sime rebull and a similar scholland. And stones did cast; yet he for nought would swerve more those hags them selves did paine From his right course, but still the way did hold sen him, and their owne cursed tongs To Facric Court; where what him fell shall else be told.

THE SIXTE BOOKE

FAERIE QUEENE

CONTAYNING THE LEGEND OF SIR CALIDORE, OR COU

THE waies, through which my weary steps I In this delightfull land of Facry, [guyde In this delightfull land of Facty,
Are so exceeding spacious and wyde,
And sprinckled with such sweet variety

The best pleasant is to care or eye, [light,

Of all that pleasant is to care or eye, [light, That I, nigh ravisht with rare thoughts de-My tedious travell doe forget thereby; And, when I gin to feele decay of might, It strength to me supplies, and chears my

dulled spright,

Such secret comfort and such heavenly

pleasures, Ye sacred imps, that on Parnasso dwell, And there the keeping have of learnings threasures

Which doe all worldly riches farre excell, Into the mindes of mortall men doe well, And goodly fury into them infuse, Guyde ye my footing, and conduct me well In these strange waies where never foote did Tthe Muse. use. Ne none can find but who was taught them by

Revele to me the sacred noursery Of vertue, which with you doth there remaine

Where it in silver bowre does hidden ly From view of men, and wicked worlds dis-

daine; Since it at first was by the Gods with paine Planted in earth, being derived at furst From heavenly seedes of bounty soveraine, And by them long with carefull labour nurst, Till it to ripenesse grew, and forth to honour burst.

Amongst them all

flowre Then is the bloosme of Which though it on a Yet brancheth forth in And spreds it selfe three

Yet, being matcht with Ye will them all but fi Which carry colours fa deeme.

But, in the triall of tr Its now so farre from t That it indeed is noug Fashion'd to please the Which see not perfect Yet is that glasse so g The wisest sight to th But vertues seat is de-And not in outward she defynd.

But where shall I in So faire a patterne fin The goodly praise of I As in your selfe, O so In whose pure minde, It showes, and with flame

The eyes of all which But meriteth indeede Yet so from low to his

Then pardon me, me That from your selfe

ur selfe doe it returne againe. e Ocean all rivers spring, te backe repay as to their King: rom you all goodly vertues well

Into the rest which round about you ring, Faire Lords and Ladies which about you dwell, And doe adorne your Court where courtesies excell.

CANTO L

Calidore saves from Maleffort A Damzell used vylde : Doth vanquish Crudor; and doth make Briana wexe more mylde.

, it seemes, men Courtesie doc call. there most useth to abound; reseemeth that in Princes hall se should be plentifully found, all goodly manners is the ground, of civill conversation: 1 Facry court it did redound, [won arth, and made a matchlesse para- In order as it did to him arize.

dore, beloved over-all, [Knight it seemes, that gentlenesse of spright] ers mylde were planted naturall; he adding comely guize withall ous speach, did steale mens hearts thereto he was full stout and tall, approv'd in batteilous affray, did much renowme, and far his fame ılay.

there Knight ne was there Lady ourt, but him did deare embrace re usage and conditions sound, in all mens liking gayned place, m an mens intrig gayner place, the greatest purchast greatest grace: could wisely use, and well apply, the best, and th' evill to embase; thd lessing and base flattery, simple truth and stedfast honesty.

he was in travell on his way, hard adventure sore bestad, y chaunce he met uppon a day gall, returning yet halfe sad ate conquest which he gotten had: uss each of other had a sight, v them selves, and both their per , md;

When Calidore thus first: 'Haile, noblest Knight Of all this day on ground that breathen living spright!

'Now tell, if please you, of the good successe Which ye have had in your late enterprize.' 1 Faery court it did redound, [won To whom Sir Artegall gan to expresse teous Knights and Ladies most did His whole exploite and valorous emprize, in sow, happy man,' (sayd then Sir Calido 'Which have, so goodly as ye can devize, them all was none more courteous Atchiev'd so hard a quest, as few before; [Knight, That shall you most renormal that goods.] 'Now, happy man,' (sayd then Sir Calidore) That shall you most renowmed make for ever-

more.

'But where ye ended have, now I begin To tread an endlesse trace, withouten guyde ()r good direction how to enter in, Or how to issue forth in waies untryde, In perils strange, in labours long and wide; In which although good Fortune me befall, Yet shall it not by none be testifyde.' 'What is that quest,' (quoth then Sir Artegall) 'That you into such perils presently doth call?'

VII

'The Blattant Beast' (quoth he) 'I doe pursew, And through the world incessantly doe chase, Till I him overtake, or else subdew: Yet know I not or how, or in what place To find him out, yet still I forward trace.' 'What is that Blattant Beast?' (then he replide.) 'It is a Monster bred of hellishe race,'

(Then answered he) 'which often hath annoyd Good Knights and Ladies true, and many else destroyd.

'Of Cerberus whilome he was begot And fell Chimera, in her darkesome den, Through fowle commixture of his filthy Where he was fostred long in Stygian len, Till he to perfect ripenesse grew; and then Into this wicked world he forth was sent To be the plague and scourge of wretched men, Whom with vile tongue and venemous intent

He sore doth wound, and bite, and cruelly tor-

'Then, since the salvage Island I did leave,' Sayd Artegall, I such a Beast did see, The which did seeme a thousand tongues to have,

That all in spight and malice did agree; With which he bayd and loudly barkt at mee, As if that he attonce would me devoure : But I, that knew my selfe from perill free, Did nought regard his malice nor his powre; But he the more his wicked poyson forth did poure.

'That surely is that Beast' (saide Calidore) 'Which I pursue, of whom I am right glad To heare these tidings, which of none afore Through all my weary travell I have had; Yet now some hope your words unto me add,'
'Now God you speed,' (quoth then Sir Artegall)

'And keepe your body from the daunger drad, For ye have much adoe to deale withall.' So both tooke goodly leave, and parted severall.

Sir Calidore thence travelled not long, When as by chaunce a comely Squire he found, That thorough some more mighty enemies wrong

Both hand and foote unto a tree was bound; Who, seeing him from farre, with piteous sound

Of his shrill cries him called to his aide: To whom approching, in that painefull stound When he him saw, for no demaunds he staide, But first him losde, and afterwards thus to him saide.

XII

'Unhappy Squire! what hard mishap thee Into this bay of perill and disgrace? [brought What cruell hand thy wretched thraldome wrought,

And thee captyved in this shamefull place?' To whom he answered thus: 'My haplesse case

Is not occasiond through my misdesert, But through misfortune, which did me abase
Unto this shame, and my young hope subvert. They saw that CarlEre that I in her guilefull traines was well Hayling that mayder expert.

'Not farre from hence,

Hard by a streight, then Which doth observe a c And it bath long ma For may no Knight nor

That way, (and yet t By reason of the streigh

But they that Ladies And that knights berd. passage pay. 'A shamefull use as c Sayd Calidore, 'and to

But by what meanes d And for what cause knowne. Sayd then that Squire; This Castle, is by nam Then which a prouder

She long time hath Knight, And sought to win his

'His name is Crudor daine

And proud despight of Refused bath to veeld Untill a Mantle she for With beards of Knig Which to provide she And therein bath a S Cald Maleffort, a man Who executes her wis spight.

He, this same day, With a faire Damzell In execution of her li Did set uppon us tlyi For little bootes agai Me first he tooke unh And whiles he her pu Till his returne unto Ne wote I surely whet Thus whiles they sp

shrieke Of one loud crying, That it was she the v

That all her garment

her head her lockes he nigh did teare, His hope of refuge used to remaine:

XVIII

aynous sight when Calidore beheld, he loosd that Squire, and so him left rts dismay and inward dolour queld, rsue that villaine, which had reft ous spoile by so injurious theft; ertaking, loude to him he cryde: aytor, quickely that misgotten weft nat hath it better justifyde, thee soone to him of whom thou art 'yde.'

XIX

arkning to that voice, him selfe upırd, ig him so fiercely towardes make, im stoutly ran, as nought afeard, or more enraged for those words sake; sterne count'naunce thus unto him ake:

I the caytive that defyest me? his Mayd, whose party thou doest take,

XX

at he fiercely at him flew, and layd is strokes with most importune might, he made him stagger as unstayd, ecuile to shunne his sharpe despight: dore, that was well skild in fight. r forbore, and still his spirite spar'd, waite how him he damadge might; he felt him shrinke, and come to [hard. ard. er grew, and gan to drive at him more

a water-streame, whose swelling sourse re a Mill, within strong bancks is pent, restrayned of his ready course, as passage is unto him lent, forth, and makes his way more violent; s the fury of Sir Calidore: ice he felt his foeman to relent, ly him pursu'd, and pressed sore; he still decayd so he encreased more.

XXII

svy burden of whose dreadfull might t gan faint, and streight he tooke his And doe instead thereof mild curt'sie showe the Castle, where, if need constraine, To all that passe: That shall you glory gaine

he spare for pitty, nor refraine for Whom Calidore perceiving fast to flie,
He him pursu'd and chaced through the plaine, That he for dread of death gan loude to crie Unto the ward to open to him hastilie.

They, from the wall him seeing so aghast, The gate soone opened to receive him in; But Calidore did follow him so fast, That even in the Porch he him did win, And cleft his head asunder to his chin. The carkasse tumbling downe within the dore Did choke the entraunce with a lumpe of sin, That it could not be shut; whilest Calidore Did enter in, and slew the Porter on the flore.

With that the rest the which the Castle kept About him flockt, and hard at him did lay; But he them all from him full lightly swept, As doth a Steare, in heat of sommers day, With his long taile the bryzes brush away. Thence passing forth into the hall he came, Where of the Lady selfe in sad dismay He was ymett, who with uncomely shame thy beard, though it but little bee? It was ymett, who with uncomery sname it not her lockes for raunsome fro me blame.

TTV 'False traytor Knight!' (said she) 'no Knight

at all. But scorne of armes, that hast with guilty hand Murdred my men, and slaine my Seneschall, Now comest thou to rob my house unmand, And spoile my selfe that can not thee withstand? Yet doubt thou not, but that some better Knight Then thou, that shall thy treason understand, will it avenge, and pay thee with thy right; And if none do, yet shame shall thee with shame requight.

XXVI Much was the Knight abashed at that word Yet answer'd thus: 'Not unto me the shame, But to the shamefull doer it afford. Bloud is no blemish, for it is no blame To punish those that doe deserve the same; But they that breake bands of civilitie, And wicked customes make, those doe defame Both noble armes and gentle curtesie. No greater shame to man then inhumanitie.

XXVII

'Then doe your selfe, for dread of shame, for-This evill manner which ye here maintaine,

More then his love, which thus ye seeke t' ob-

Wherewith all full of wrath she thus replyde:

Vile recreant! know that I doe much distaine
Thy courteous lore, that doest my love deride, Who scornes thy ydle scoffe, and bids thee be defyde.

XXVIII

'To take defiaunce at a Ladies word (Quoth he) 'I hold it no indignity But were he here, that would it with his sword Abett, perhaps he mote it deare aby."

'Cowherd!' (quoth she) 'were not that thou wouldst fly

Ere he doe come, he should be soone in place. 'If I doe so,' (sayd he) ' then liberty I leave to you for aye me to disgrace With all those shames, that erst ye spake me to deface.

With that a Dwarfe she cald to her in hast, And taking from her hand a ring of gould, A privy token which betweene them past, Bad him to flie with all the speed he could To Crudor; and desire him that he would Vouchsafe to reskue her against a Knight, Who through strong powre had now her self in hould,

Having late slaine her Seneschall in fight, And all her people murdred with outragious might:

XXX

The Dwarfe his way did hast, and went all night: But Calidore did with her there abyde The comming of that so much threatned Knight; pryde Where that discourteous Dame with scornfull And fowle entreaty him indignifyde, That yron heart it hardly could sustaine : Yet he, that could his wrath full wisely guyde, Did well endure her womanish disdaine, And did him selfe from fraile impatience refraine.

XXXI

The morrow next, before the lampe of light Above the earth upreard his flaming head, The Dwarfe, which bore that message to her knight, [brend Brought aunswere backe, that ere he tasted He would her succour, and alive or dead Her foe deliver up into her hand: Therefore he wild her doe away all dread; And, that of him she mote assured stand, He sent to her his basenet as a faithfull band.

Thereof full blyth the L And gan t' augment he Yet no whit more appalls Ne ought dismayed was

But rather did more che fore: And having soone his are Did issue forth to meete Where long he stayed no He spide come pricking and might.

XXXX

Well weend he streight same

Which tooke in hand her Ne stayd to aske if it w But coucht his speare, a They bene ymett in mid With so fell fury and di That neither could the But rudely rowld to g horse

Neither of other taking

But Calidore uprose a Whiles yet his foe lay far Yet would he not him h For shame he weend a sl But when Briana saw There where she stood She deem'd him sure ground;

And made such piteous That from the battlem to fall.

Nathlesse at length b In lustlesse wise; as if Ere he had slept his fil And gan to stretch his Of his late fall, awhile But, when he saw his He shooke off luskishn Kindling afresh, gan b To prove if better foote

There then began a fe Betwixt them two for For both were wondrou And passing well expe And both inflam'd with Which as it still encre Their cruell strokes an once for ruth their rigour they releast, once to breath awhile their angers tempest cesst.

XXXVII

has long they trac'd and traverst to and fro. All flesh is frayle and full or nekienesse, dayde all waies how each mote entrance Subject to fortunes chance, still chaunging new:

What haps to day to me to morrow may to

athe life of his malignant foe: [brake, ty hew'd their helmes, and plates asunder they had potshares bene; for nought mote alake

iir greedy vengeaunces but goary blood, it at the last like to a purple lake bloudy gore congeal'd about them stood ich from their riven sides forth gushed like a flood.

XXXVIII

length it chaunst that both their hands on [might. hie once did heave with all their powre and mking the utmost of their force to trie, Prove the final fortune of the fight;
Calidore, that was more quicke of sight
mimbler handed then his enemie,

vented him before his stroke could light, an the belmet smote him formerlie, at made him stoupe to ground with meeke

XXXXX

humilitie:

ad, ere he could recover foote againe, following that faire advantage fast, stroke redoubled with such might and maine,

thim upon the ground he groveling cast; leaping to him light would have unlast & Helme, to make unto his vengeance way: be, seeing in what daunger he was plast, rde out; 'Ah mercie, Sir! doe me not slay.

ith that his mortall hand a while he stayd; having somewhat calm'd his wrathfull beat

ath goodly patience, thus he to him sayd: menaced me from the field to beat,

learne rangers no more so rudely to entreat,

a put away proud looke and usage sterne, which shal nought to you but foule dishonor yearne.

XL

at court'sie doth as well as armes professe. Most joyfully she them did entertaine;

However strong and fortunate in fight, Then the reproch of pride and cruelnesse. In vaine he seeketh others to suppresse, Who hath not learnd him selfe first to subdew:

you.

XLII

'Who will not mercie unto others shew. How can he mercy ever hope to have? To pay each with his owne is right and dew; Yet since ye mercie now doe need to crave, I will it graunt, your hopelesse life to save, With these conditions which I will propound:

First, that we better shall your selfe behave Unto all errant knights, whereso on ground; Next, that ye Ladies ayde in every stead and stound.'

XLIII

The wretched man, that all this while did dwell In dread of death, his heasts did gladly heare,

And promist to performe his precept well, And whatsoever else he would requere. So, suffring him to rise, he made him sweare By his owne sword, and by the crosse thereon, To take Briana for his loving fere Withouten dowre or composition: But to release his former foule condition.

All which accepting, and with faithfull oth Bynding himselfe most firmely to obay, He up arose, however liefe or loth, And swore to him true fealtie for aye. Then forth he cald from sorrowfull dismay The sad Briana which all this beheld; we my life, which lot before your foot Who comming forth yet full of late affray doth lay.'

Sir Calidore upcheard, and to her teld All this accord to which he Crudor had compeld. XLV

Whereof she now more glad then sory earst, All overcome with infinite affect For his exceeding courtesie, that pearst Her stubborne hart with inward deepe effect, brought to this? By this now may ye Before his feet her selfe she did project; And him adoring as her lives deare Lord With all due thankes and dutifull respect, Her selfe acknowledg'd bound for that accord, By which he had to her both life and love restord.

XLVI

For nothing is more blamefull to a knight, So all returning to the Castle glad,

afore.

Where goodly glee and feast to them she made, But gave them streight unto that Squi To show her thankefull mind and meaning faine, By all the meanes she mote it best explaine: And, after all, unto Sir Calidore She freely gave that Castle for his paine, And her selfe bound to him for evermore;

So wondrously now chaung'd from that she was

XLVII

But Calidore himselfe would not retaine Nor land nor fee for hyre of his good deede,

againe, Whom from her Seneschall be lately freed, And to his damzell, as their rightfull meed For recompence of all their former wrong.

There he remaind with them right w agreed, Till of his wounds he wexed hole and stron And then to his first quest he passed for along.

CANTO II.

Calidore sees young Tristram slay A proud discourteous knight: He makes him Squire, and of him learnes His state and present plight.

What vertue is so fitting for a knight, Or for a Ladie whom a knight should love, As Curtesie; to beare themselves aright To all of each degree as doth behave For whether they be placed high above Or low beneath, yet ought they well to know

Their good; that none them rightly may reprove Of rudenesse for not yeelding what they owe: Great skill it is such duties timely to bestow.

Thereto great helpe dame Nature selfe doth A goodly youth of amiable grace, lend;
Yet but a slender slip, that scarse did so Yet seventeene yeares, but tall and faire of For some so goodly gratious are by kind, That every action doth them much commend, And in the eyes of men great liking find,

Which others that have greater skill in mind, Though they enforce themselves, cannot attaine For everie thing to which one is inclin'd

Doth best become and greatest grace doth gaine:

Yet praise likewise deserve good thewes enforst with paine.

That well in courteous Calidore appeares:

eares

backe ryde.

And both the eyes did steale the hart away. He now againe is on his former way To follow his first quest, when as he spyde A tall young man, from thence not farre away, Fighting on foot, as well he him descryde, Again-1 an armed knight that did on horse-

And them beside a Ladie faire he saw Standing alone on foot in foule array: To whom himselfe he hastily did draw To weet the cause of so uncomely fray, And to depart them, if so be he may: But, ere he came in place, that youth held That armed knight, that low on ground held Which when he saw, his hart was inly d With great amazement, and his thought t wonder fild.

Him stedfastly he markt, and saw to be

That sure he deem'd him borne of noble All in a woodmans jacket he was clad Of Lincolne greene, belayd with silver i And on his head an hood with aglets sp And by his side his hunters horne he h had.

Buskins he wore of costliest cordways Pinckt upon gold, and paled part per per As then the guize was for each gentle swi In his right hand he held a trembling de Whose fellow he before had sent apart; Whose every deed and word, that he did say, And in his left he held a sharpe bore-per Was like enchantment, that through both the With which he wont to launch the hart Of many a Lyon and of many a Be That first unto his hand in chase did l

Whom Calidore awhile well having ver At length bespake; 'What meanes the Aniawii

nea.e.

'knight, the which by thee is slaine, knight; which armes impugneth ne? said he) 'loth were I to have broken armes: yet breake it should againe, m let my selfe of wight be stroken,

these two armes were able to be

VIII

ore.

I him, as this his Ladie here esse well, did offer first to wrong, thus unarm'd I likely were; [strong first through pride and pulssance x knowing what to armes doth long. eat blame' (then said Sir Calidore) d knight a wight unarm'd to wrong: thou gentle chyld, wherefore ou two began this strife and sterne

all I, sooth, ' (said he) 'to you denryper yeares are yet unfit of weight or worke of greater care. my dayes and bend my carelesse wit chace, where I thereon may hit forrest and wyld wooddie raine: this day I was enraunging it, [slaine, to meete this knight, who there lyes rith this Ladie, passing on the plaine.

ght, as ye did see, on horsebacke was, is Ladie (that him ill became) re feet by his horse side did pas hicke and thin, unfit for any Dame : ntent, more to increase his shame, she lagged, as she needs mote so, is speare, that was to him great blame, impe her forward and inforce to goe, to him in vaine and making piteous

when I saw, as they me passed by, I moved in indignant mind, o blame him for such cruelty Ladie, whom with usage kind

no lesse disdayning, backe returned full taunts unto his teeth againe,

thy hand too bold it selfe embrewed That he streightway with haughtie choler burned, And with his speare strooke me one stroke or

Which I, enforst to beare though to my paine, Cast to requite; and with a slender dart,

Fellow of this I beare, throwne not in vaine, Strooke him, as seemeth, underneath the hart, That through the wound his spirit shortly did depart.

XIII

Much did Sir Calidore admyre his speach Tempred so well, but more admyr'd the stroke That through the mayles had made so strong a breach

Into his hart, and had so sternely wroke His wrath on him that first occasion broke; Yet rested not, but further gan inquire Of that same Ladie, whether what he spoke Were soothly so, and that th' unrighteous ire

Of her owne knight had given him his owne

due hire?

Of all which when as she could nought deny, But cleard that stripling of the imputed blame

Savd then Sir Calidore; 'Neither will I Him charge with guilt, but rather doe quite clame:

For what he spake, for you he spake it, Dame; And what he did, he did him selfe to save: Against both which that knight wrought

knightlesse shame; For knights and all men this by nature have, Towards all womenkind them kindly to behave.

'But, sith that he is gone irrevocable, Please it you, Ladie, to us to aread What cause could make him so dishonourable To drive you so on foot, unfit to tread And lackey by him. gainst all womanhead.' Certes, Sir knight,' (sayd she) 'full loth (sayd she) 'full loth I

To rayse a lyving blame against the dead; But since it me concernes my selfe to cler I will the truth discover as it chaunst whylere.

should have taken up behind;
a he wroth, and full of proud disdaine.
oule scorne that I such fault did find,
lieu thereof revil'd againe, [pertaine.] We chaunst to come foreby a covert glade
to chastize me, as doth t'a chyld
Within a wood, whereas a Ladie gent
Sate with a knight in joyous jolliment Of their franke loves, free from all gealous

spyes.
Faire was the Ladie, sure, that mote content

An hart not carried with too curious eyes, And unto him did shew all lovely courtesves,

XVII

Whom when my knight did see so lovely faire,

He inly gan her lover to envy, And wish that he part of his spoyle might

share: Whereto when as my presence he did spy To be a let, he bad me by and by For to alight t but when as I was loth My loves owne part to leave so suddenly, He with strong hand downe from his steed me throw'th

And with presumpteous powre against that knight streight go'th,

XVIII

'Unarm'd all was the knight, as then more meete

For Ladies service, and for loves delight, Then fearing any foeman there to meete: Whereof he taking oddes, streight bids him

Himselfe to yeeld his Love, or else to fight: Whereat the other starting up dismayd, Yet boldly answer'd, as he rightly might, To leave his love he should be ill apayd. In which he had good right gaynst all that it gainesayd.

'Yet since he was not presently in plight Her to defend, or his to justifie, He him requested, as he was a knight, To lend him day his better right to trie, Or stay till he his armes, which were thereby, Might lightly fetch: But he was fierce and whot, Ne time would give, nor any termes aby,

But at him flew, and with his speare him smot; From which to thinke to save himselfe it booted not.

Meane while his Ladie, which this outrage SILW,

Whilest they together for the quarrey strove, Into the covert did her selfe withdraw, And closely hid her selfe within the grove, My knight hers soone, as seemes, to daunger drove,

And left sore wounded: but, when her he mist, He woxe halfe mad; and in that rage gan rove [wist

And range through all the wood, where so he She hidden was, and sought her so long as him Well may I, certes, su list

' But, when as her he After long search and ch

Unto the place where m There gan he me to cur Of that faire bootie, and To wreake on me the gu Of all which I yet glad Strove to appease him, But still his passion gr strong.

'Then, as it were t' av When forward we shou To take me up (as this Upon his steed, for no it But forst to trot on foot Pounching me with the In vaine complayning t For he regarded neither But more enforst my pair to heare.

'So passed we till this And being moov'd with Spake, as was meet, for Whereof befell what no 'Now sure,' (then sai right, Me seemes, that him be

Who ever thinkes might, Or through support of

To wrong the weaker, assault.'

Then turning backe u Which had himselfe so Seeing his face so love And hearing th' answe He prayed it much, an That sure he weend hi With whom those gra-And when he long had He burst into these we good:

Faire gentleswayne, That in these woods

dost wonne, Which daily may to th As they are wont unto After his chace on woo As by thy worth thou

ly borne of some Heroicke sead, thy face appeares and gratious goodly-

XXVI

should it not displease thee it to tell, e thou in these woods thy selfe conceale e amongst the woodie Gods to dwell) I thy selfe require thee to reveale, re affection and unfayned zeale

to thy noble personage I beare, ish thee grow in worship and great veale; ce the day that armes I first did reare, saw in any greater hope appeare.

om then thus the noble Youth: 'May that, by discovering my estate, may arise unweeting unto me; sse, sith ye so courteous seemed late. I will not feare it to relate. te ve that I am a Briton borne, f a King, (how ever thorough fate ne I my countrie have forlorne, it the crowne which should my head y right adorne,)

XXVIII

fristram is my name, the onely heire king Meliogras which did ravne y dyde, before I did attaine tres of reason my right to maintaine: iose death his brother, seeing mee it, weake a kingdome to sustaine, m tooke the roiall high degree, t me, where him list, instructed for to

XXIX

ght niline, conceiving then great feare aile safetie, resting in the might hat did the kingly Scepter beare, ealous dread induring not a peare to cut off all that doubt may breed, best away me to remove somewhere e forrein land, where as no need ed dannger might his doubtfull huor feed.

XXX

ing counsell of a wise man red, by him adviz'd to send me quight Out of the countrie wherein I was bred, The which the fertile Lionesse is hight, Into the land of Faerie, where no wight Should weet of me, nor worke me any wrong: To whose wise read she hearkning sent me

streight Into this land, where I have wond thus long Since I was ten yeares old, now growen to stature strong.

'All which my daies I have not lewdly

spent, Nor spilt the blossome of my tender yeares In ydlesse; but, as was convenient Have trayned bene with many noble feres In gentle thewes and such like scemly leres: Mongst which my most delight hath alwaies

been To hunt the salvage chace, amongst my peres, Of all that raungeth in the forrest greene, Of which none is to me unknowne that ev'r wańsene.

XXXII 'Ne is there hauke which mantleth her on

pearch. Whether high towring or accoasting low, But I the measure of her flight doe search, And all her pray and all her diet know. Such be our joyes which in these forrests grow:

Onely the use of armes, which most I joy, And fitteth most for noble swayne to know, king Meliogras which did rayne wale, till that he through lives des- And being now high time these strong joynts

XXXIII 'Therefore, good Sir, sith now occasion fit

Doth fall, whose like hereafter seldome may, Let me this crave, unworthy though of it, That ye will make me Squire without delay, That from henceforth in batteilous array I may beare armes, and learne to use them right; The rather, since that fortune hath this day idow Queene my mother, which then Given to me the spoile of this dead knight, These goodly gilden armes which I have won in fight.

> XXXIV All which when well Sir Calidore had heard, Him much more now then earst he gan admire For the rare hope which in his yeares appear'd, And thus replide: 'Faire chyld, the high de-

To love of armes, which in you doth aspire, I may not, certes, without blame denie, But rather wish that some more noble hire (Though none more noble then is chevalrie)

sire

I had, you to reward with greater dignitie

XXXX

There him he cause to kneele, and made to

Faith to his knight, and truth to Ladies all, And never to be recreant for feare Of perill, or of ought that might befall: So he him dubbed, and his Squire did call. Full glad and joyous then young Tristram gre-Like as a flowre, whose silken leaves small Long shut up in the bud from heavens vew, At length breakes forth, and brode displayes his smyling hew.

XXXVI

Thus when they long had treated to and fro, And Calidore betooke him to depart, [goe Chyld Tristram prayd that he with him might On his adventure, vowing not to start, But wayt on him in every place and part: Whereat Sir Calidore did much delight, And greatly joy'd at his so noble hart, In hope he sure would prove a doughtie knight: Yet for the time this answere he to him behight,

XXXVII

*Glad would I surely be, thou courteous Squire, To have thy presence in my present quest, That mote thy kindled courage set on fire, And flame forth honour in thy noble brest; But I am bound by vow, which I profest To my dread Soveraine, when I it assayd, That in atchievement of her high behest I should no creature joyne unto mine ayde: For-thy I may not graunt that ye so greatly prayde.

XXXVIII

But since this Ladie is all desolate, And needeth safegard now upon her way, Ye may doe well, in this her needfull state, To succour her from daunger of dismay, That thankfull guerdon may to you repay.' The noble ympe, of such new service fayne, It gladly did accept, as he did say: So taking courteous leave they parted twayne, And Calidore forth passed to his former payne.

But Tristram, then despoyling that dead knight Of all those goodly implements of prayse, Long fed his greedie eyes with the faire sight Of the bright mettall shyning like Sunne rayes, Handling and turning them a thousand wayes: And, after having them upon him dight, He tooke that Ladie, and her up did rayse Upon the steed of her owne late dead knight; So with her marched forth, as she did him Which had this outrage wheelight.

There to their fortune lea And turne we backe to go Who, ere he thence had tr Came to the place whereas This knight, whom Tristras Another knight in his desp There he that knight four With many wounds full p That all his garments and t dyde.

And there beside him sat His wofull Ladie, piteousl With loud laments that m And her sad selfe with care

ing, To wype his wounds, an payning.

Which sorie sight when C With heavie eyne, from te

His mightic hart their mo And for their better com drew.

Then speaking to the La Ye dolefull Dame, let no To tell what cruell hand ! This knight unarm'd with Of armes, that, if I yet h The Ladie, hearing his so Gan reare her eyes as to And from her sory hart fe sight:

In which she shew'd, he knight, (Whom Tristram slew) 1

found

Joying together in unblan And him unarm'd, as nov Charg'd with his spear wound,

Withouten cause, but one From him to whom she v Yet when she fled into th He, her not finding, both did leave.

When Calidore this ruel Well understood, he gan What manner wight he

1

like as she best could understand, describ'd; to be of stature large, gilden armes, with azure band uthwart, and bearing in his targe prough waves row'd in a sommer ge.

XLV

is Sir Calidore to ghesse streightignes which she described had, was he whom Tristram earst did said: 'Dame, be no longer sad; thath your Knight so ill bestad, selfe in much more wretched plight: him saw upon the cold earth sprad, of his desert for that despight, your selfe he wrought and to your d knight.

e, faire Lady, lay aside this griefe, have gathered to your gentle hart ispleasure, and thinke what reliefe devise for this your lovers smart; e may him hence, and to what part, be recur'd.' She thankt him deare

at newes he did to her impart,

And for the courteous care which he did beare Both to her love and to her selfe in that sad dreare.

XLVII

Yet could she not devise by any wit, [place; Ilow thence she might convay him to some For him to trouble she it thought unfit, That was a straunger to her wretched case; And him to beare she thought it thing too base. Which when as he perceiv'd he thus bespake: 'Faire Lady, let it not you seeme disgrace To beare this burden on your dainty backe; My selfe will beare a part, coportion of your

XLVIII
So off he did his shield, and downeward layd

Upon the ground, like to an hollow beare;

packe.

And powring balme, which he had long purvayd,
Into his wounds, him up thereon did reare,
And twixt them both with parted paines did
beare,
Twixt life and death, not knowing what was
Thence they him carried to a Castle neare,
In which a worthy auncient Knight did wonne:
Where what ensu'd shall in next Canto be begonne.

CANTO III.

Calidore brings Priscilla home; Pursues the Blatant Beast: Saves Serena, whilest Calepine By Turpine is opprest.

that whilome that good Poet sayd,
I minde by gentle deeds is knowne:
by nothing is so well bewrayd
is mamers; in which plaine is
wne
egree and what race he is growne:
ne seeme a trotting Stalion get
ug Colt, that is his proper owne:
seeme that one in basenesse set
e courage shew with curteous manmet.

II

nore contrary hath bene tryde,
le bloud will gentle manners breed;
sy be in Calidore descryde,
sample of that courteous deed
hat wounded Knight in his great
i, [brought
his backe he bore, till he him
Lastle where they had decreed:

There of the Knight, the which that Castle ought, [besought.

To make abode that night he greatly was

ш

He was to weete a man of full ripe yeares,
That in his youth had beene of mickle might,
And borne great sway in armes amongst his
peares;
But now weake age had dimd his candle-light:
Yet was he courteous still to every wight,
And loved all that did to armes incline;
And was the Father of that wounded Knight,
Whom Calidore thus carried on his chine;
And Aldus was his name; and his sonnes,

IV

Aladine.

Who when he saw his sonne so ill bedight With bleeding wounds, brought home upon a beare
By a faire Lady and a straunger Knight,

BBS

Was inly touched with compassion deare, And deare affection of so dolefull dream, That he these words burst forth : "Ah, sory boyl

Is this the hope that to my hoary hears Thou brings? aie me! is this the timely joy. Which I expected long, now turnd to sad annoy?

*Such is the weakenesse of all mortall hope, So tickle is the state of earthly things That, ere they come unto their aymed scope, They fall too short of our fraile reckonings, And bring us bale and bitter sorrowings Instead of comfort which we should embrace: This is the state of Keasars and of Kings! Let none therefore, that is in meaner place, Too greatly grieve at any his unlucky case,'

So well and wisely did that good old Knight Temper his griefe, and turned it to cheare, To cheare his guests whom he had stayd that night,

And make their welcome to them well appeare, That to Sir Calidore was easie geare; But that faire Lady would be cheard

nought,

But sigh'd and sorrow'd for her lover deare, And inly did afflict her pensive thought With thinking to what case her name should now be brought:

For she was daughter to a noble Lord Which dwelt thereby, who sought her to For first, next after life affv

To a great pere; but she did disaccord, Ne could her liking to his love apply, But lov'd this fresh young Knight who dwelt

her ny,
The lusty Aladine, though meaner borne
And of lesse livelood and hability, Yet full of valour the which did adorne His meanesse much, and make her th' others riches scorne.

VIII

So, having both found fit occasion, They met together in that lucklesse glade; Where that proud Knight in his presumption The gentle Aladine did earst invade, Being unarm'd and set in secret shade, Whereof she now bethinking, gan t' advize How great a hazard she at earst had made Of her good fame; and further gan devize How she the blame might salve with coloured disguize.

But Calidore with all go Fain'd her to frolicke, and The pensive fit of her mel And that old Knight by To make them both as m So they the evening past When Calidore in seemly Unto his bowre was broug Did sleepe all night the his quest.

But faire Priscilla (so the Would to no bed, nor tal But by her wounded lov And all the night for bit And with her teares his steepe:

So well she washt the That of the deadly swoon He drenched was, she a him,

And drove away the s

The morrow next, whe He also gan uplooke w Like one that out of dea Where when he saw his He deepely sigh'd, and To thinke of this ill sta To which she for his sal Now brought her selfe, blood :

Which she perceiving tenres

His care more then her Forgetfull of her owne So both conspiring gan Each others griefe with And twixt them twai

How to save hole her I For which the onely he Seem'd to be Calidore: past.

Him they did deem seemed, A courteous Knight and Therefore to him their teemed

Whole to commit, and

soone as Titans beames forth brust the thicke clouds in which they ped lay in darkenesse, duld with yron rust, ising up as fresh as day ly him addresse unto his former way.

XIV

him seemed fit that wounded ight after this nights perillous passe, lute him, if he were in plight, hat Lady, his faire lovely lasse, him found much better then he was; ed speach to him of things of course, ish of his paine to overpasse: hich he namely did to him discourse irse,

1 occasion Aldine taking hold e to him the fortunes of his love. is disadventures to unfold, dore it dearly deepe did move: I, his kyndly courtesie to prove, y all the bands of love besought, mote a faithfull friend behove, induct his love, and not for ought till to her fathers house he had her rught.

XVI

lore his faith thereto did plight orme: so after little stay, her selfe had to the journey dight, I forth with her in faire array, y past together on their way, vize this counter-cast of slight, nire colour to that Ladies cause in

XVII

to the carkasse of that Knight he That he gainst courtesie so fowly did default, pt, of all this evill, who was slaine refore by just avengement Fristram, where it did remaine: the necke thereof did cut in twaine, ume. se passed thorough that daies paine, at Ladies fathers house he came; lde became.

XVIII

There he arriving boldly did present

The fearefull Lady to her father deare, Most perfect pure, and guiltlesse innocent Of blame, as he did on his Knighthood sweare, Since first he saw her, and did free from feare Of a discourteous Knight, who her had reft And by outragious force away did beare: Witnesse thereof he shew'd his head there left. And wretched life forlorne for vengement of

XIX Most joyfull man her sire was her to see,

his theft.

And heare th' adventure of her late mischaunce; And thousand thankes to Calidore for fee tich he namely did to him discourse Of his large paines in her deliveraunce daies mishap, his sorrowes wicked Did yeeld: Ne lesse the Lady did advance. Thus having her restored trustily, As he had vow'd, some small continuance He there did make, and then most carefully Unto his first exploite he did him selfe apply.

$\mathbf{x}\mathbf{x}$

So, as he was pursuing of his quest,

He chaunst to come whereas a jolly Knight In covert shade him selfe did safely rest, To solace with his Lady in delight: His warlike armes he had from him undight. For that him selfe he thought from daunger free, [spight; And far from envious eyes that mote him And eke the Lady was full faire to see, And courteous withall, becomming her degree.

XXI

who ought did thinke or ought did from wite: To whom Sir Calidore approaching nye, from wite: Ere they were well aware of living wight, own thought he knew most cleare Them much abasht, but more him selfe thereby, That he so rudely did uppon them light, And troubled had their quiet loves delight: Yet since it was his fortune, not his fault,

Him selfe thereof he labour'd to acquite

And pardon cray'd for his so rash default

With which his gentle words and goodly wit He soone allayd that Knights conceiv'd displeasure, s with him the head, the signe of That he besought him downe by him to sit, That they mote treat of things abrode at

leasure, And of adventures, which had in his measure sive man, through feare what of his Of so long waies to him befallen late So downe he sate, and with delightfull pleasure His long adventures gan to him relate, Which he endured had through daungerous debate:

Of which whilest they discoursed both together,

The faire Serena (so his Lady hight) Allur'd with myldnesse of the gentle wether And pleasaunce of the place, the which was

With divers flowres distinct with rare delight, Wandred about the fields, as liking led Her wavering lust after her wandring sight, To make a garland to adorne her hed, Without suspect of ill or daungers hidden dred.

XXIV

All sodainely out of the forrest nere The Blatant Beast forth rushing unaware Caught her, thus loosely wandring here and there,

And in his wide great mouth away her bare Crying aloud to shew her sad misfare Unto the Knights, and calling oft for ayde; Who with the horrour of her haplesse care Hastily starting up, like men dismayde, Ran after fast to reskue the distressed mayde.

The Beast, with their pursuit incited more, Into the wood was bearing her apace For to have spoyled her, when Calidore, Who was more light of foote and swift in chace, Him overtooke in middest of his race; And, fiercely charging him with all his might, Forst to forgoe his pray there in the place, And to betake him selfe to fearefull flight; For he durst not abide with Calidore to fight.

XXVI

Who nathelesse, when he the Lady saw There left on ground, though in full evill plight, Yet knowing that her Knight now neare did draw,

Staide not to succour her in that affright, But follow'd fast the Monster in his flight : Through woods and hils he follow'd him so fast, That he nould let him breath, nor gather spright,

But forst him gape and gaspe, with dread aghast, As if his lungs and lites were nigh asunder brast.

XXVII

And now by this Sir Calepine (so hight) Came to the place where he his Lady found In dolorous dismay and deadly plight, All in gore bloud there tumbled on the ground, So fare on foote till the

Having both sides three wound

His weapons soone from And stouping downe to I Uprear'd her from the gr And in his tender armes

So well he did his busis That the faint sprite he To her fraile mansion of Then up he tooke her tw And setting on his steed With carefull hands, soft Till to some place of res Where she in safe assure Till she recured were of th

Now when as Phœbus Unto his Inne began to The wexing weary of the Intravelling on foote so Not went on foote with Downe in a dale forby a He chaunst to spie a fai To which he meant his In hope there for his provyde.

But, comming to the r That hardly passable or Therefore there still he Ne wist which way he

pas: Thus whilest he was in Devising what to doe. An armed Knight appr With a faire Lady lines The which themselves foord to ride,

Whom Calepine salut Besought of courtesie. For safe conducting of Through that same per heede,

To take him up behind To whom that other di 'Perdy, thou peasant I Me then to be full base If I would beare behinde

But, as thou hast th shame,

thy Lady likewise doe the same, her on thy backe with pleasing payne, re thy manhood on the billowes vayne. nich rude speach his Lady much diseased

reprove, yet could him not restrayne, ld on her owne Palfrey him have eased, of his Dame whom she saw so diseased.

IIIXXX

spine her thanckt; yet, inly wroth her Knight, her gentlenesse refused, alealy into the river goth, spight to be so fowle abused le churle, whom often he accused discourtesie, unfit for Knight,

ngly wading through the waves unused, seare in th' one hand stayd him selfe [might. other staide his Lady up with steddy

Il the while that same discourteous night 1 the further bancke beholding him; e calamity, for more despight, ht, and mockt to see him like to swim: en as Calepine came to the brim, r his carriage past that perill well, at that same Carle with count nance rim, rt with vengeaunce inwardly did swell, th at last did breake in speaches sharpe

XXXV

nd fell:

ightly Knight, the blemish of that ume at of all that armes uppon them take, the badge of honour and of fame, defie thee; and here challenge make, ou for ever doe those armes forsake, for ever held a recreant Knight, thou dare, for thy deare Ladies sake thine owne defence, on foote alight ifie thy fault gainst me in equal fight.

XXXVI

astard, that did heare him selfe defyde, not to weigh his threatfull words at all, ight them out, as if his greater pryde me the challenge of so base a thrall; no courage, or else had no gall.
h the more was Calepine offended. im to no revenge he forth could call, h his challenge and him selfe contemned nd as a coward so to be condemned.

XXXVII But he, nought weighing what he sayd or did,

Turned his steede about another way, And with his Lady to the Castle rid Where was his won: ne did the other stay, But after went directly as he may, For his sicke charge some harbour there to Where he arriving with the fall of day Drew to the gate, and there with prayers meeke And myld entreaty lodging did for her beseeke.

XXXVIII But the rude Porter that no manners had

Did shut the gate against him in his face, And entraunce boldly unto him forbad: Nathelesse the Knight, now in so needy case, Gan him entreat even with submission base. And humbly praid to let them in that night; Who to him aunswer'd, that there was no place Of lodging fit for any errant Knight, Unlesse that with his Lord he formerly did fight.

XXXIX

'Full loth am I,' (quoth he) 'as now at earst When day is spent, and rest us needeth most, And that this Lady, both whose sides are pearst With wounds, is ready to forgo the ghost; Ne would I gladly combate with mine host, That should to me such curtesie afford. Unlesse that I were thereunto enforst: But yet aread to me, how hight thy Lord, That doth thus strongly ward the Castle of the Ford?'

'His name,' (quoth he) 'if that thou list to learne Is hight Sir Turpine, one of mickle might And manhood rare, but terrible and stearne In all assaies to every errant Knight, Because of one that wrought him fowle despight. 'Ill seemes,' (sayd he) 'if he so valiaunt be, That he should be so sterne to stranger wight;

XLI

For seldome yet did living creature see

That curtesie and manhood ever disagree.

'But go thy waies to him, and fro me say, That here is at his gate an errant Knight That house-rome craves; yet would be loth t' ansay

The proofe of battell now in doubtfull night, ()r curtesie with rudenesse to requite: Yet, if he needes will fight, crave leave till morne.

And tell with all the lamentable plight

In which this Ludy languisheth forlorne, That pitry craves, as he of woman was yborne,"

Whom well he wi That meant to ma

XLII

The groome went streight way in, and to his move; Declar'd the message which that Knight did

Who, sitting with his Lady then at bord, Not onely did not his demannd approve, But both himselfe revil'd and eke his love; Albe his Lady, that Blandina hight, Him of ungentle usage did reprove, And earnestly entreated, that they might

Finde favour to be lodged there for that same

night, STAIL

Yet would be not perswaded be for ought, Ne from his currish will a whit reclame, Which answer when the groome returning To Calepine, his heart did inly flame | brought With wrathfull fury for so foule a shame, That he could not thereof avenged bee; But most for pitty of his dearest Dame, Whom now in deadly damger he did see, Yet had no meanes to comfort, nor procure her glee.

XLIV

But all in vaine; for-why no remedy He saw the present mischiefe to redresse, But th' utmost end perforce for to aby, Which that nights fortune would for him addresse.

So downe he tooke his Lady in distresse, And layd her underneath a bush to sleepe, Cover'd with cold, and wrapt in wretchednesse; Whiles he him selfe all night did nought but weepe, [keepe.

And wary watch about her for her safegard

XLV

The morrow next, so soone as joyous day Did shew it selfe in sunny beames bedight, Serena full of dolorous dismay, [light, He over raught hir Twixt darkenesse dread and hope of living His violence in vai Uprear'd her head to see that chearefull sight, Then Calepine, however inly wroth, And greedy to avenge that vile despight, Yet for the feeble Ladies sake, full loth To make there lenger stay, forth on his journey goth.

XLVI

He goth on foote all armed by her side, Upstaying still her selfe uppon her steede, Being unhable else alone to ride, ore her sides, so much her wounds did bleede; Till that at length, in his extreamest neede, He chaunst far off an armed Knight to spy Pursning him apace with greedy speede;

Wherefore he sta To weet what insu Tho, whenas he ar By certaine signe To be the man the Had him abusde a Therefore, misdou guyde His former malice

He cast to keepe h

By this the other And couching close As bent to some n He bad him stand Of his sore vengean Of the lewd words With that ran at h His life attonce; w The perill of his pa

Yet he him still p With full intent hi And like a wilde g Flying the fury of But his best succou Behind his Ladies And called oft with As ever he to Lady To spare her Knis pacifyde:

But he the more t And with more eag So that at length, Having by chaune He over raught hir Strooke through his In great aboundance That forth out of appere.

Yet ceast he not f But chaste him stil Not satisfyde till o He saw his life pov The which was cer Had not a wond And saved from his Such chaunces oft e That in another Ca

CANTO IV.

Calepine by a salvage man From Turpine reskewed is; And, whylest an Infant from a Beare He saves, his love doth misse.

ship with dreadfull storme long tost, rom harbour likely to be lost

ie fisher-barke doth neare behold, essed by that faytour bold

nayned in most perilous plight, I Ladie left in pitifull affright:

11

by fortune passing all foresight, nan, which in those woods did wonne, th that Ladies loud and piteous same incessantly did ronne and what there was to be donne:

is most discourteous craven found, yet as when he first begonne, e gentle Calepine around, him the more for all his grievous

ıd.

e man, that never till this houre f pittie, neither gentlesse knew, sharpe assault and cruell stoure, emmoved at his perils vew, his ruder hart began to rew, ompassion of his evill plight, s foe that did him so pursew; n he meant to free him, if he might, venge of that so villenous despight.

ıv

or weapon had he none to fight, ie use of warlike instruments, as sudden rage him lent to smite; without needfull vestiments corpse with meete habiliments. ot for dint of sword nor speere,

He staved not t' advize which way were best nt all her mastes and her ground- His foe t' assayle, or how himselfe to gard, But with fierce fury and with force infest Upon him ran; who being well prepard His first assault full warily did ward, comfort to her courage cold: And with the push of his sharp-pointed speare sestate of this most courteous knight Full on the breast him strooke, so strong and hard That forst him backe recovle and reele areare, Yet in his bodie made no wound nor bloud

appeare.

terprize.

With that the wyld man more enraged grew, Like to a Tygre that hath mist his pray And with mad moode againe upon him flew, Regarding neither speare that mote him slay, Nor his fierce steed that mote him much dismay: The salvage nation doth all dread despize,

Tho on his shield he griple hold did lay, And held the same so hard, that by no wize He could him force to loose, or leave his en-

Long did he wrest and wring it to and fro, And every way did try, but all in vaine; For he would not his greedle grype forgoe, But hayld and puld with all his might and maine.

That from his steed him nigh he drew againe: Who having now no use of his long speare So nigh at hand, nor force his shield to straine, Both speare and shield, as things that needlesse were, feare.

He quite forsooke, and fled himselfe away for

VIII

But after him the wyld man ran apace, And him pursewed with importune speed, (For he was swift as any Bucke in chace) then for the stroke of strawes or seems of the stroke of strawes or seems of the se ulnerable made by Magicke lears. | Who, ever as he saw him nigh succeed,

Gan ery aloud with horrible affright, And shricked out, a thing uncomely for a knight,

But, when the Salvage saw his labour vaine In following of him that fled so fast, He wearie woxe, and backe return'd againe With speede unto the place, whereas he last Had left that couple nere their utmost cast: There he that knight full sorely bleeding found, And eke the Ladie fearefully aghast, Both for the perill of the present stound, And also for the sharpnesse of her rankling

wound :

For though she were right glad so rid to bee From that vile lozell which her late offended : Yet now no lesse encombrance she did see, And perill, by this salvage man pretended, Gainst whom she saw no meanes to be defended,

By reason that her knight was wounded sore: Therefore her selfe she wholy recommended To Gods sole grace, whom she did oft implore To send her succour, being of all hope forlore.

But the wyld man, contrarie to her feare, Came to her creeping like a fawning hound, And by rude tokens made to ber appeare His deepe compassion of her dolefull stound, Kissing his hands, and crouching to the ground;

For other language had he none, nor speach, But a soft murmure and confused sound Of senselesse words, which nature did him [empeach.

T' expresse his passions, which his reason did

And, comming likewise to the wounded knight,

When he beheld the streames of purple blood Yet flowing fresh, as moved with the sight, He made great mone after his salvage mood; And, running streight into the thickest wood, A certaine herbe from thence unto him brought,

Whose vertue he by use well understood; The juyce whereof into his wound he wrought, And stopt the bleeding straight, ere he it staunched thought.

XIII

Then taking up that Recreants shield and An hard adventure with A cruell Beare, the whi Which earst he left, he signes unto them made Betwixt his bloodie jawe

With him to wend unto hi To which he easily did the Farre in the forrest, by a b Covered with mossie shrul Did underneath them mak Where foot of living crest Ne scarse wyld beasts du this wights abode,

Thether he brought these To whom faire semblane shewed By signes, by lookes, and But the bare ground bestrowed

Must be their bed; their And the frutes of the form For their bad Stuard n sowed,

Ne fed on flesh, ne ever of Did taste the bloud, of beheast.

Yet, howsoever base and They tooke it well, and t Which had them freed fr And sav'd from being to Here they of force (as fo Compelled were themsel Glad of that easement, small:

That having there their They mote the abler be

During which time the His best endevour and In seeking all the woods For herbes to dresse their faine

When ought he did, that So as ere long he had th Recured well, and made But that same Ladies h Which could redresse, unsound.

Now when as Calepine Upon a day he cast abr To take the ayre and h Unarm'd, as fearing nei And without sword his There him befell, unlool

ie bebe did loudly scrike and squall the woods with piteous plaints did fill, cry did meane for helpe to call pine, whose eares those shrieches shrill, his hart, with pities point did thrill; er him he ran with zealous haste e th' infant, ere he did him kill: lough he saw now somewhat overpast, he cry he follow'd, and pursewed fast.

XIX

en him chaunst his heavy armes to speed. ourden mote empeach his needfull ler him from libertie to pant; ng long time, as his daily weed, [need, ont to weare, and wend on foot for iting them he felt himselfe so light, s and jesses which did let her flight.

n'd his feet did fly and in their speed

light.

he sped him, that the wearie Beare he overtooke and forst to stay; nout weapon him assayling neare, him soone the spoyle adowne to lay, th the beast enrag'd to loose his pray a turned, and, with greedie force e to be crossed in his way, all wyde, did thinke without remorse eng'd on him and to devoure his corse.

XXI

bold knight no whit thereat dismayd, hing up in hand a ragged stone

y thereby (so fortune him did ayde)

n ran, and thrust it all attone gaping throte, that made him grone se for breath, that he nigh choked was, able to digest that bone; it upward come, nor downward passe, he brooke the coldnesse of the stony

wre to traine.

when as he thus combred did behold, in vaine that nigh his bowels brast him closd, and, laying mightie hold throte, did gripe his gorge so fast, ating breath him downe to ground he n oppressing him with urgent paine, enforst to breath his utmost blast, z his cruell teeth at him in vaine,

atning his sharpe clawes, now wanting

XXIII

Then tooke he up betwixt his armes twaine The litle babe, sweet relickes of his pray; Whom pitying to heare so sore complaine From his soft eyes the teares he wypt away, And from his face the filth that did it ray; And every litle limbe he searcht around, And every part that under sweath-bands lay, Least that the beasts sharpe teeth had any

wound Made in his tender flesh; but whole them all he found.

So, having all his bands againe uptyde, He with him thought backe to returne againe; But when he lookt about on every syde, To weet which way were best to entertaine To bring him to the place where he would faine, s and lesses which did let her flight,

and lesses which did let her flight,

set and lesses which did let her flight,

set and lesses which did let her flight,

That all about did close the compasse of his

Much was he then encombred, ne could tell Which way to take: now West he went awhile, Then North, then neither, but as fortune fell: So up and downe he wandred many a mile

With weary travell and uncertaine toile, Yet nought the nearer to his journeys end, And evermore his lovely litle spoile Crying for food did greatly him offend: So all that day in wandring vainely he did spend.

At last, about the setting of the Sunne, Ilim selfe out of the forest he did wynd, And by good fortune the plaine champion wonne: Where, looking all about where he mote fynd

Some place of succour to content his mynd, At length he heard under the forrests syde I voice, that seemed of some woman kynd, Which to her selfe lamenting loudly cryde, And oft complayn'd of fate, and fortune oft defyde.

XXVII

To whom approching, when as she perceived A stranger wight in place, her plaint she stayd, s if she doubted to have bene deceived, ()r loth to let her sorrowes be bewrayd: Whom when as Calepine saw so dismayd, He to her drew, and with faire blandishm

Her chearing up, thus gently to her sayd:

What be you, wofull Dame, which thus la- That now the same he greent. Yet was it sayd, there also And for what cause, declare; so mote ye not Be gotten, not begotten; w

XXVIII

To whom she thus : ' What need me, Sir, to tell [right? That which your selfe have earst ared so A wofull dame ye have me termed well;

So much more wofull, as my wofull plight Cannot redressed be by living wight!"
'Nathlesse,' (quoth he) 'if need doe not you bynd,

Doe it disclose to ease your grieved spright: Oftimes it haps that sorrowes of the mynd Find remedie unsought, which seeking cannot fynd.'

Then thus began the lamentable Dame: 'Sith then ye needs will know the griefe I hoord.

I am th' unfortunate Matilde by name, The wife of bold Sir Bruin, who is Lord Of all this land, late conquer'd by his sword From a great Gyant, called Cormoraunt, Whom he did overthrow by youder foord; And in three battailes did so deadly daunt, That he dare not returne for all his daily vaunt,

XXX

'So is my Lord now seiz'd of all the land, As in his fee, with peaceable estate, And quietly doth hold it in his hand, Ne any dares with him for it debate And to these happie fortunes cruell fate Hath joyn'd one evill, which doth overthrow All these our joyes, and all our blisse abate; And like in time to further ill to grow, And all this land with endlesse losse to overflow.

XXXI

'For th' heavens, envying our prosperitie, Have not vouchsaft to graunt unto us twaine The gladfull blessing of posteritie, Which we might see after our selves remaine In th' heritage of our unhappie paine: So that for want of heires it to defend, All is in time like to returne againe To that foule feend, who dayly doth attend To leape into the same after our lives end

'But most my Lord is grieved herewithall, And makes exceeding mone, when he does thinke

That all this land unto his foe shall fall, For which he long in vaine did sweate and swinke.

In the next brooke, by v be fordonne.

'Well hop't he then, w. side,

That from his sides som The which through fame nifide,

And this proud gyant sho Quite overthrow; who n The good Sir Bruin grov Who thinkes from me hi Lo! this my cause of gri For which I thus doe me ceaselesse teares.

Which when he heard With tender ruth for he And, when he had devi-He gan in mind conceiv For all her paine, if plea And, having cheared Dame,

In evils counsell is the Which though I be not Yet, as I well it meane blame.

. If that the cause of t Be lacke of children to Lo! how good fortune of This little babe, of sweet And spotlesse spirit in Whatever formes ye lis Being now soft and fit Whether ye list him tr Or noursle up in lore of

And, certes, it hath That of the like, whose More brave and noble beene

(As their victorious des Being with fame th

Then those which hav Therefore some though were sowen

Here by the Gods, and That made them grow hap.

XXXVII

die, hearkning to his sensefull speach, nothing that he said unmeet nor oft seene it tryde as he did teach: e inclyning to his goodly reason, well both with the place and season, ly did of that same babe accept, r owne by liverey and seisin; ring over it a litle wept, it thence, and ever as her owne it pt.

XXXVIII

lad was Calepine to be so rid young charge whereof he skilled rught, isse glad; for she so wisely did, the her husband under han husband under hand rought, en that infant unto him she brought, e him think it surely was his owne; goodly thewes so well upbrought,

And did right noble deedes: the which elswhere are showne.

But Calepine, now being left alone Under the greenewoods side in sorie plight, Withouten armes or steede to ride upon, Or house to hide his head from heavens spight, Albe that Dame, by all the meanes she might, Him oft desired home with her to wend, And offred him, his courtesie to requite Both horse and armes and what so else to lend, Yet he them all refusd, though thankt her as a frend;

And, for exceeding griefe which inly grew That he his love so lucklesse now had lost, On the cold ground mangre himselfe he threw For fell despight to be so sorely crost; And there all night himselfe in anguish tost, Vowing that never he in bed againe His limbes would rest, ne lig in ease embost, Till that his Ladies sight he mote attaine, recame a famous knight well knowne, Or understand that she in safetie did remaine

CANTO V.

The salvage serves Screna well,
Till she Prince Arthure fynd;
Who her, together with his Squyre,
With th' Hermit leaves behynd.

r an easie thing is to descry tle bloud, how ever it be wrapt isfortunes foule deformity iched sorrowes, which have often hapt! soever it may grow mis-shapt, s wyld man being undisciplynd, all vertue it may seeme unapt, it shew some sparkes of gentle mynd, he last breake forth in his owne proper ynd.

lainely may in this wyld man be red,

ough he were still in this desert wood, salvage beasts both rudely borne and red, saw faire guize, ne learned good wd some token of his gentle blood le usage of that wretched Dame: es he was borne of noble blood, r by hard hap he hether came, 2000

Who, when as now long time he lacked had The good Sir Calepine, that farre was strayd, Did wexe exceeding sorrowfull and sad, As he of some misfortune were afrayd; And, leaving there this Ladie all dismayd, Went forth streightway into the forrest wyde To seeke if he perchance arleep were layd, Or what so else were unto him betyde: He sought him farre and neare, yet him no where he spyde.

Tho, backe returning to that sorie Dame, He shewed semblant of exceeding mone By speaking signes, as he them best could frame,

Now wringing both his wretched hands in one, Now beating his hard head upon a stone, That ruth it was to see him so lament: By which she well perceiving what was done, Gan teare her hayre, and all her garments rent, sy know when time shall be to tell the And beat her breast, and piteously her selfe torment.

Upon the ground her selfe she fiercely threw. Regardlesse of her wounds yet bleeding rife, That with their bloud did all the flore imbrew As if her breast, new launcht with murdrous

knife, Would streight dislodge the wretched wearie To be disordred by life.

There she long groveling and deepe groning Of this her groome as if her vitall powers were at strife reede,
With stronger death, and feared their decay: And streight his con Such were this Ladies pangs and dolorous Upon the ground wi assay. Upon the ground wi And in his homely w

VI

Whom when the Salvage saw so sore distrest, He reared her up from the bloudic ground, And sought by all the meanes that he could

Her to recure out of that stony swound, And staunch the bleeding of her dreary wound: Yet nould she be recomforted for nought, Nor cease her sorrow and impatient stound, But day and night did vexe her carefull

thought, [wrought. And ever more and more her owne affliction By straunge occasion

VII

At length, when as no hope of his retourne She saw now left, she cast to leave the place, And wend abrode, though feeble and forlorne, To seeke some comfort in that sorie case, His steede, now strong through rest so long a space,

Well as she could she got, and did bedight; And being thereon mounted forth did pace Withouten guide her to conduct aright, Or gard her to defend from bold oppressors

might.

Whom when her Host saw readie to depart, He would not suffer her alone to fare, But gan himselfe addresse to take her part, Those warlike armes which Calepine whyleare Had left behind he gan eftsoones prepare, And put them all about himselfe unfit His shield, his helmet, and his curats bare; But without sword upon his thigh to sit: Sir Calepine himselfe away had hidden it.

So forth they traveld, an uneven payre That mote to all men seeme an uncouth sight; A salvage man matcht with a Ladie fayre, That rather seem'd the conquest of his might, Gotten by spoyle then purchaced aright: But he did her attend most carefully, And faithfully did serve both day and night

Withouten thought Ne ever shewed sign

Upon a day, as on It chaunst some fur lay, Which to redresse s

T' amend what was aray.

Bout which whilest Lo! where a knight, All arm'd to point or Which seemed, by the To be two errant kni After adventures, wh Those were to weet Prince Arthur and v

After that Timias he The favour of Belphe And of her grace did To happie blisse he w Nether of envy nor o Though many foes d And with unjust detr Yet he himselfe so w That in her soveraine

But of them all whi Three mightie enemi Three mightie ones, That him not onely s To overthrow, but to The first of them by Exceeding all the res The second, not so st The third, nor strong : Defetto.

Oftimes their sundry And several deceipts For neither they by I Ne yet entrap in trea Therefore, conspiring They did their couns Where singled forces

: his utter shame, and throughly him nfound.

day, as they the time did waite, did raunge the wood for salvage game, t that Blatant Beast to be a baite him from his deare beloved dame into the daunger of defame; they wist that Squire to be so bold, one beast in forrest, wylde or tame, in chase but he it challenge would ke the pray oftimes out of their greedy uld

XVI

dy boy, as they devised had, a ugly Monster passing by, n set, of perill nought adrad, Il of the uncouth jeopardy; ged him so fierce and furiously, great force unable to endure, was to turne from him and fly: n fled he with his tooth impure llesse bit, the whiles he was thereof CHITE.

XVII

· he did after him pursew, by speed to overtake his flight; ough thicke woods and brakes and him drew,

him the more and waste his spight, e now has almost spent his spright, at length unto a woody glade whose covert stopt his further sight:

beir ambush broke, and gan him to rade.

XVIII

r they all attonce did him assaile, with inward rancour and despight ed strokes did round about him haile ruge force, that seemed nothing might their blowes from percing thorough ite: em all so warily did ward, s of them in his soft flesh did bite;

be while his backe for best safegard gainst a tree, that backeward onset

ylde Bull, that, being at a bay, of a mastiffe and a hound re-dog, that doe him sharpe assay

side, and beat about him round;

ant Beast the fittest meanes they found And threats his horns, and bellowes like the thonder: asonder. So did that Squire his foes disperse and drive

$\mathbf{x}\mathbf{x}$

Him well behoved so; for his three foes Sought to encompasse him on every side, And dangerously did round about enclose: But most of all Defetto him annoyde, Creeping behinde him still to have destroyde; So did Decetto eke him circumvent; But stout Despetto in his greater pryde Did front him, face to face against him bent: Yet he them all withstood, and often made relent.

Till that at length, nigh tyrd with former chace,

And weary now with carefull keeping ward, He gan to shrinke and somewhat to give place, Full like ere long to have escaped hard; When as unwares he in the forrest heard A trampling steede, that with his neighing fast Did warne his rider be uppon his gard; With noise whereof the Squire, now nigh

aghast, Revived was, and sad dispaire away did cast.

Estsoones he spide a Knight approching nve: Who, seeing one in so great daunger set Mongst many foes, him selfe did faster hye To reskue him, and his weake part abet, For pitty so to see him overset: three foes shrowded in guilefull shade Whom soone as his three enemies did vew, They fled, and fast into the wood did get. Him booted not to thinke them to pursew, The covert was so thicke that did no passage shew.

XXIII

Then turning to that swaine him well he knew To be his Timias, his owne true Squire; Whereof exceeding glad he to him drew And, him embracing twixt his armes entire, Him thus bespake: My liefe, my lifes desire, Why have we me alone thus long yleft? Tell me what worlds despight, or heavens yre, Hath you thus long away from me bereft? Where have ye all this while bin wandring, where bene weft?'

XXIV

With that he sighed deepe for inward tyne: To whom the Squire nought aunswered againe, that curre, barking with bitter sownd, But, shedding few soft teares from tender eyne, dag still behinde, doth him incomber, His dear affect with silence did restraine, schauffe he digs the trampled ground, And shut up all his plaint in privy paine.

There they awhile some gracious speaches spent, As to them seemed fit time to entertaine; After all which up to their steedes they went, And forth together rode, a comely couplement. Or else remained it

So now they be arrived both in sight Of this wyld man, whom they full busic found About the sad Serena things to dight, With those brave armours lying on the ground, That seem'd the spoile of some right well renownd:

Which when that Squire beheld, he to them Thinking to take them from that hylding hound: But he it seeing lightly to him lept, And sternely with strong hand it from his

handling kept.

XXVI Gnashing his grinded teeth with griesly

And sparkling fire out of his furious evne, And each sought to Him with his fist unwares on th' head he

That made him downe unto the earth encline; Whence soone upstarting much he gan repine, She on her way cas And laying hand upon his wrathfull blade And they her fort Thought therewithall forthwith him to have slaine;

Who it perceiving hand upon him layd, And greedily him griping his avengement stayd.

XXVII

With that aloude the faire Serena cryde Unto the Knight, them to dispart in twaine; Who to them stepping did them soone divide, And did from further violence restraine, Albe the wyld-man hardly would refraine, Then gan the Prince of her for to demand What and from whence she was, and by what

traine She fell into that salvage villaines hand? And whether free with him she now were, or in band?

XXVIII

To whom she thus: 'I am, as now ye see, The wretchedst Dame that lives this day on

Who both in minde, the which most grieveth And body have receiv'd a mortall wound, [me, That hath me driven to this drery stound. was crewhile the love of Calepine; Who whether he alive be to be found,

Or by some deadly channe be done to pine Since I him lately lost, uneath is to deline,

· In salvage forre Where I had surel Had not this wylde Kept and delivered In such a salvage Amongst wilde ber It is most straunge So milde humanity

Let me therefore That ye will not yo Sith he cannot exp Ne yours conceive, Small praise to pro weake.

With such faire wo And the strong e breake. That they to pitty

So having all thing might

Finde harbour fit to For now her wound And eke this Squire, Of that same Monst Now gan to faint, as Through feebleness pressed has,

So forth they rode To seeke some place some ease To these sicke tw. And all the way the The bitter anguish of By all the courteous Somewhile with me And otherwhile with

Mongst which Sere The foule discourt's Which Turpine had Without compassion Although Blandina Him otherwise persw Yet he of malice, wit

To make them to er

torment.

ely her excluded late at night, travterously did wound her weary Knight.

XXXIV

ild avenge th' abuses of that proud amefull Knight of whom she did com**slaine** ze did they each other entertaine e the tedious travell of the way, rards night they came unto a plaine, ch a little Hermitage there lay m all neighbourhood the which annoy t may.

XXXV

igh thereto a little Chappell stoode, being all with Yvy overspred ill the roofe, and, shadowing the roode, ght observaunce of religious vow, ent his howres and holy things to bed; srein he likewise was praying now, a these Knights arriv'd, they wist not where nor how.

stayd not there, but streightway in did when the Hermite present saw in place, is devotion streight he troubled was; breaking off he toward them did pace tayed steps and grave beseeming grace: Il it seem'd that whilome he had beene poodly person, and of gentle race, ould his good to all; and well did scene. reene ch to entertaine with curt'sie well be-

XXXVII

oothly it was sayd by common fame, r as age enabled him thereto, e had bene a man of mickle name med much in armes and derring doc; ing aged now, and weary to res delight and worlds contentious toyle, me of knighthood he did disavow; anging up his armes and warlike spoyle assoyle.

XXXVIII

He thence them led into his Hermitage, Letting their steedes to graze upon the greene. Small was his house, and like a little cage, with the Princesore moved there avoud For his owne turne, yet mly neate and clene, one as he returned backe againe, Deckt with greene boughes and flowers gay bescene:

Therein he them full faire did entertaine Not with such forged showes, as fitter beene For courting fooles that curtesies would faine, But with entire affection and appearaunce plaine.

XXXIX

Yet was their fare but homely, such as hee Did use his feeble body to sustaine, The which full gladly they did take in gree, Such as it was, ne did of want complaine, But being well suffiz'd them rested faine. But fair Serene all night could take no rest, like a grove faire braunched over-hed: We yet that gentle Squire, for grievous paine the Hermite, which his life here led of their late wounder, the which the Blatan Of their late woundes, the which the Blatant Beast

Had given them, whose griefe through suffraunce sore increast.

XI.

So all that night they past in great disease, Till that the morning, bringing earely light To guide mens labours, brought them also ease, And some asswagement of their painefull plight. Then up they rose, and gan them selves to dight Unto their journey; but that Squire and Dame So faint and feeble were, that they ne might Endure to travell, nor one foote to frame: Their hearts were sicke; their sides were sore; their feete were lame.

XLI

Therefore the Prince, whom great affaires in mynd Would not permit to make there lenger stay,

Was forced there to leave them both behynd In that good Hermits charge; whom he did pray

So forth he went his way, To tend them well. And with him eke the salvage, (that why leare Seeing his royall usage and array Was greatly growne in love of that brave pere,) Il this worlds incombraunce did himselfe Would needes depart; as shall declared be elsewhere.

CANTO VI.

The Hermite heales both Squire and dame Of their sore maladies : He Turpine doth defeate, and shame For his late villanies

No wound, which warlike hand of enemy Inflicts with dint of sword, so sore light.

As doth the poysnous sting, which infamy Infixeth in the name of noble wight: For by no art, nor any leaches might, It ever can recured be againe; Ne all the skill, which that immortall spright Of Podalyrius did in it retaine, Can remedy such hurts: such hurts are hellish paine.

Such were the wounds the which that Blatant Beast

Made in the bodies of that Squire and Dame; And, being such, were now much more increast For want of taking heede unto the same, That now corrupt and curelesse they became: Howbe that carefull Hermite did his best, With many kindes of medicines meete, to tame

The poysnous humour which did most infest Their ranckling wounds, and every day them duely drest.

For he right well in Leaches craft was seene; And through the long experience of his dayes, Which had in many fortunes tossed beene And past through many perillous assayes, He knew the diverse went of mortall wayes, And in the mindes of men had great insight; Which with sage counsell, when they astray

He could enforme, and them reduce aright, And all the passions heale which wound the weaker spright.

For whylome he had bene a doughty Knight, As any one that lived in his daies, And proved oft in many perillous fight, Of which he grace and glory wonne alwaies, And in all battels bore away the baies: But being now attacht with timely age, And weary of this worlds unquiet waies,

He tooke him selfe unto the In which he liv'd alone, lil cage.

One day, as he was wounds,

He found that they had fe And ranckling inward with The inner parts now gan to That quite they seem'd pur-And rather needed to be d With holesome reede of an To rule the stubborne rage Give salves to every sore. minde.

So, taking them apart int He to that point fit spench As he the art of words kno And eke could doe as well And thus he to them says Dame.

And you, faire Sonne, wh In piteons languor since y In vaine of me ye hope for And I likewise in vaine applie:

' For in your selfe your o To heale your selves, and From your owne will to e Who can him cure that w If therefore health ve see First learne your outward From things that stirre in Your cies, your cares, yo restraine

From that they most affect

For from those outward The seede of all this evill Which at the first, before Mote casie be supprest w But being growen strong Sorrow, and anguish, and In th' inner parts; and la

sustaine.

IX seding venemous and keene.

f rusty yron ranckling sore, they bite it booteth not to weene , or antidote, or other mene, imend : ne marvaile ought,

me beast was bred of hellish strene, n darksome Stygian den upbrought, foule Echidna, as in bookes is tht.

is a Monster direfull dred, is her shape, so huge her hed,

the hellish fiends affrighted bee ereof, and from her presence fice: r face and former parts professe ang Mayden, full of comely glee; hinder parts did plaine expresse is Dragon, full of fearefull uglinesse.

he Gods, for her so dreadfull face, I darkenesse, furthest from the skie the earth, appointed have her place h lie horrour and obscurity, he strength of her immortall age:

Typhaon with her company; haon, whose tempestuous rage heavens tremble oft, and him with res asswage.

commixtion they did then beget ish Dog, that hight the Blatant Monster, that his tongue doth whet , both good and bad, both most and

his poysnous gall forth to infest st wights with notable defame: inight that bore so lofty creast, adv of so honest name,

une. XIII

e therefore it were with medicine out to salve such kynd of sore,

poyson close through every vaine. That rather needes wise read and discipline, ats till it have wrought his final. Then outward salves that may augment it

swaine)

more.'
'Aye me!' (sayd then Serena, sighing sore)
'What hope of helpe doth then for us remaine, beastes teeth, which wounded you if that no salves may us to health restore?" · But sith we need good counsell,' (sayd the

Aread, good Sire, some counsell that may us

'The best' (sayd he) 'that I can you advize, Is to avoide the occasion of the ill: For when the cause, whence evill doth arize, Removed is, th' effect surceaseth still. [will; Abstaine from pleasure, and restraine your Subdue desire, and bridle loose delight;

Use scanted diet, and forbeare your fill;

ds doe hate, and heavens abhor to Shun secresie, and talke in open sight: So shall you soone repaire your present evill plight,'

Thus having sayd, his sickely patients Did gladly hearken to his grave beheast, And kept so well his wise commaundements. That in short space their malady was ceast, And eke the biting of that harmefull Beast Was throughly heal'd. Tho when they did

perceave Their wounds recur'd, and forces reincreast, Of that good Hermite both they tooke their leave. leave: icks and caves, where she enrold And went both on their way, ne ech would other

But each the other vow'd t' accompany: The Lady, for that she was much in dred, Now left alone in great extremity; The Squire, for that he courteous was indeed, Would not her leave alone in her great need. So both together traveld, till they met With a faire Mayden clad in mourning weed, Upon a mangy jade unmeetely set, And a lewd foole her leading thorough dry

and wet.

But by what meanes that shame to her befell, And how thereof her selfe she did acquite, I must awhile forbeare to you to tell; Till that, as comes by course. I doe recite What fortune to the Briton Prince did lite, em spotted with reproch, or secrete Pursuing that proud Knight, the whileare

Wrought to Sir Calepine so foule despight; And eke his Lady, though she sickely were, So lewdly had abusde, as ye did lately heare 003

The Prince, according to the former token Which faire Serene to him delivered had, Pursu'd him streight; in mynd to bene ywro Of all the vile demeane and usage bad, With which he had those two so ill bestad : Ne wight with him on that adventure went, But that wylde man; whom though he oft Upon them two they fell forbad, And on them layd so huge an

Yet for no bidding, nor for being shent, Would he restrayned be from his attendement.

XIX

Arriving there, as did by channee befall, He found the gate wyde ope, and in he rode, Ne stayd, till that he came into the hall; Where soft dismounting, like a weary lode, Upon the ground with feeble feete he trode, As he unable were for very neede To move one foote, but there must make

abode: The whiles the salvage man did take his steede, And in some stable neare did set him up to

XX

feede.

Ere long to him a homely groome there came, That in rude wise him asked, what he was That durst so boldly, without let or shame, Into his Lords forbidden hall to passe? To whom the Prince, him fayning to embase, Mylde answer made, he was an errant Knight, The which was fall'n into this feeble case Through many wounds, which lately he in fight

But he, the more outrageous and bold, Sternely did bid him quickely thence avaunt, Or deare aby; for-why his Lord of old Did hate all errant Knights which there did haunt,

Ne lodging would to any of them graunt; And therefore lightly bad him packe away, Not sparing him with bitter words to taunt, And therewithall rude hand on him did lay, To thrust him out of dore doing his worst assay,

XXII

Which when the Salvage, comming now in place,

Beheld, eftsoones he all enraged grew And, running streight upon that villaine base, Like a fell Lion at him fiercely flew, And with his teeth and nailes, in present vew, Him rudely rent and all to peeces tore; So miserably him all helpelesse slew,

that with the noise, whilest The people of the house rose rore.

XXIII

Who when on ground they slaine,

And that same Knight and As if they would have slain But the bold Prince defende And their assault withstood That, maugre all their migh And beat them back, whiles him fell.

Yet he them still so sharp That few of them he left al Those evill tidings to their Who, hearing how his peop Came forth in hast; where dead

He saw the ground all stro And salvage with their blo red,

He woxe nigh mad with And with reprochfull word on hight,

'Art thou be, traytor, the Hast slaine my men in th And now triumphest in th Of these poore folk, whose dishonor

And foule defame doe deck Received had, and prayd to pitty his ill plight, The meede whereof shall s And wretched end which st With that him selfe to bat So did his forty yeomen, came.

With dreadfull force the And round about with I presse.

That on his shield did rat In a great tempest; that He wist not to which side And evermore that craves Was at his backe with he Wayting if he unwares bi For cowardize doth still is

Whereof whenas the Pr He to him turnd with fur And him against his pow Like a fierce Bull, that be h many foes about him ment. about with fell avengement:

i he once his dreadfull strokes had e furie of his force abyde, [tasted, backe, and to retyre him hasted thick prease, there thinking him de : he Prince had once him plainely foot him followed alway, im suffer once to shrinke asyde, close huge lode at him did lay still did ward, and warding fly

his foe he still so eager saw,

eles himselfe he did betake, o some refuge to withdraw:

ne Prince him ever foot forsake

e went, but after him did make. roome to roome, from place to place, rery joynt for dread of death did after him that did him chace, him evermore increase his speedie

XXX up into the chamber came s love was sitting all alone, hat tydings of her folke became. he Prince him overtake anone. aine to her him to bemone; issword him on the head did smyte, er thwart or flatly it did lyte, d steele did not into his bravnepan

XXXI

en the Ladie saw, with great afg up began to shricke aloud; er garment covering him from sight, ler her protection him to shroud; lowly at his feet her bowd nee, intreating him for grace, nim besought, and prayd, and vowd, the ruth of her so wretched case, is second strooke, and did his hand

XXXII

she then withdrawing did him dis-Those goodly armes, he them away did give, some to himselfe yet would not rize, And onely suffred him this wretched life to live

But still did lie as dead, and quake, and quiver, e curre behinde his heeles to bite. That even the Prince his basenesse did despize; turnde the Prince upon the Knight, And eke his Dame, him seeing in such guize,

thim amaine with all his will and Gan him recomfort and from ground to reare:

Who rising up at last in ghastly wize,
Like troubled ghost, did dreadfully appeare,
he once his dreadfull strokes had As one that had no life him left through former feare.

XXXIII Whom when the Prince so deadly saw dismayd,

eyde, He for such basenesse shamefully him shent, And with sharpe words did bitterly upbrayd:
'Vile cowheard dogge! now doe! much repent, That ever I this life unto thee lent, Whereof thou, caytive, so unworthie art, That both thy love, for lacke of hardiment, And eke thy selfe, for want of manly hart, And eke all knights hast shamed with this knightlesse part.

XXXIV ' Yet further hast thou heaped shame to shame,

And crime to crime, by this thy cowheard feare: For first, it was to thee reprochfull blame To erect this wicked custome, which I heare Gainst errant Knights and Ladies thou dost

reare; spoile, Whom when thou mayst thou dost of arms dehey weare; Or of their upper garment Yet doest thou not with manhood, but with guile, Maintaine this evil use, thy foes thereby to foile. xxxv

And lastly, in approvance of thy wrong ground he fell in senselesse swone: Is greatest shame; for oft it falles, that strong And valiant Knights doe rashly enterprize Either for fame, or else for exercize, A wrongfull quarrell to maintaine by fight;

Yet have through prowesse and their brave emprize Gotten great worship in this worldes sight: For greater force there needs to maintaine wrong then right.

XXXVI

'Yet, since thy life unto this Ladie fayre I given have, live in reproch and scorne, Ne ever armes ne ever knighthood dare Hence to professe; for shame is to adorne With so brave badges one so basely borne: But onely breath, sith that I did forgive.' So having from his craven bodie torne

XXXVII

There whilest be thus was setling things above Atwene that Ladie myld and recreant knight. To whom his life he graunted for her love, He gan bethinke him in what perilous plight He had behynd him left that salvage wight Amongst so many foes, whom sure he thought By this quite slaine in so unequall fight: Therefore descending backs in haste he sought If yet he were alive, or to destruction brought.

XXXVIII

There he him found environed about [slaine, With slaughtred bodies which his hand had And laying yet afresh, with courage stout, Upon the rest that did alive remaine; Whom he likewise right sorely did constraine, Like scattred sheepe, to seeke for safetie, After he gotten had with busic paine Some of their weapons which thereby did lie, With which he layd about, and made them fast to flie.

XXXIX Whom when the Prince so felly saw to rage, Approching to him neare, his hand he stayd, And sought by making signes him to asswage; Who them perceiving streight to him obayd, As to his Lord, and downe his weapons layd, As if he long had to his heasts bene trayned, Thence he him brought away, and up convayd bands peace:
Into the chamber, where that Dame remayned Who nathelesse, not t With her unworthy knight, who ill him entertayned.

Whom when the Salvage saw from daunger Sitting beside his Ladie there at case, He well remembred that the same was hee, Which lately sought his Lord for to displease: The all in rage he on him streight did seaze, As if he would in peeces him have rent: And, were not that the Prince did him appeaze, He had not left one limbe of him unrent:

But streight he held his hand at his com-XLI

maundement.

Thus having all things well in peace ordayned. And passed forth to The Prince himselfe there all that night did rest:

Where him Blandina With all the courteou The which for him sh For well she knew the Of every wight, that And how to please the Through tempering o wondrous skill

Yet were her words : fayned,

To some hid end to m Or to allure such fond Into her trap unto the Thereto, when neede pray, And when her listed sh

Now smyling smooth! Now glooming sadly, Yet were her words bu but water.

Whether such grace

As women wont their Or learn'd the art to p This well I wote, that Her pleasing tongue, the wrathfull Prince His rancorous despigh

Ne secretly from th surceasse:

For all that night, th rest In carelesse couch, not He watcht in close aw Willing to worke his On him that had so sh Yet durst he not for v

spent. The morrow next the

Effect the same, why

CANTO VII.

Turpine is baffuld; his two knights Doe gaine their treasons meed : Fayre Mirabellaes punishment For Loves disdaine decreed.

as the gentle hart it selfe bewrayes g gentle deedes with franke delight, the baser mind it selfe displayes red malice and revengefull spight:

maligne, t' envie, t' use shifting slight, ments of a vile doughill mind, what it dare not doe by open might, ke by wicked treason waves doth find,

i discourteous deeds discovering his base rind

pursew.

blowne

rell appears in this discourteous knight, ward Turpine, whereof now I treat; otwithstanding that in former fight

he Prince his life received late, his mind, malitious and ingrate, devize to be aveng'd anew that shame, which kindled inward hate: ore, so soone as he was out of vew,

fe in hast he arm'd, and did him fast

HI

did he tract his steps as he did ryde, uld not neare approch in daungers eye, pt aloofe for dread to be descryde, fit time and place he mote espy, he mote worke him scath and villenv.

he met two knights to him unknowne, nich were armed both agreeably, th combynd, whatever channe were

t them to divide, and each to make his owne.

om false Turpine comming courteously,

e the mischiefe which he inly ment, complaine of great discourtesie, a straunge knight, that neare afore him sent.

en to him, and his deare Ladie shent: if they would afford him avde at need avenge in time convenient.

hould accomplish both a knightly deed their paines obtaine of him a goodly need.

The knights beleev'd that all he sayd was trew; And being fresh and full of youthly spright,

Were glad to heare of that adventure new In which they mote make triall of their might Which never yet they had approv'd in fight,

And eke desirous of the offred meed: Said then the one of them; 'Where is that wight, The which hath doen to thee this wrongfull deed, That we may it avenge, and punish him with speed?

vi

'He rides' (said Turpine) 'there not farre afore, With a wyld man soft footing by his syde; That, if ye list to haste a litle more

Ye may him overtake in timely tyde,' Eftsoones they pricked forth with forward pryde, And, ere that litle while they ridden had, The gentle Prince not farre away they spyde,

Ryding a softly pace with portance sad, Devizing of his love more then of daunger drad.

Then one of them aloud unto him cryde, Bidding him turne againe, false traytour knight.

Foule woman-wronger, for he him defyde. With that they both at once with equall spight Did bend their speares, and both with equall might marke, Against him ran; but th' one did misse his

And being carried with his force forthright Glaunst swiftly by; like to that heavenly sparke, Which glyding through the ayre lights all the

VIII

heavens darke.

But th' other, ayming better, did him smite Full in the shield with so impetuous powre, That all his launce in peeces shivered quite, And scattered all about fell on the flowre: But the stout Prince, with much more steddy stowre.

Full on his bever did him strike so sore,

That the cold steele, through piercing, did de-

His vitall breath, and to the ground him bore, Where still he bathed lay in his owne bloody gore,

IX

As when a cast of Faulcons make their flight At an Herneshaw, that lyes aloft on wing, The whyles they strike at him with heedles

might, The warie foule his bill doth backward wring: On which the first, whose force her first doth

bring. Her selfe quite through the bodie doth engore, And falleth downe to ground like senselesse But th' other, not so swift as she before, [thing; Fayles of her souse, and passing by doth hurt

no more,

By this the other, which was passed by Himselfe recovering was return'd to fight, Where when he saw his fellow lifelesse ly, He much was daunted with so dismall sight; Yet, nought abating of his former spight, Let drive at him with so malitious mynd, As if he would have passed through him quight; But the steele-head no stedfast hold could fynd,

But glauncing by deceiv'd him of that he desynd,

Not so the Prince; for his well-learned speare Tooke surer hould, and from his horses backe Above a launces length him forth did beare, And gainst the cold hard earth so sore him strake.

That all his bones in peeces nigh he brake. Where seeing him so lie, he left his steed, And to him leaping vengeance thought to take That cursed caytive, my s Of him for all his former follies meed, [breed. With flaming sword in hand his terror more to

The fearfull swayne beholding death so nie, Cryde out aloud for mercie, him to save; In lieu whereof he would to him descrie Great treason to him meant, his life to reave, The Prince soone hearkned, and his life forgave, Then thus said he: 'There is a straunger knight,

The which, for promise of great meed, us drave To this attempt to wreake his hid despight, For that himselfe thereto did want sufficient

might.'

XIII

The Prince much mused at such villenic, And sayd: 'Now sure ye well have earn'd your meed :

For th' one is dead, and th' oti Unlesse to me thou bether be The wretch that hyr'd you to He glad of life, and willing a breed,

Swore by his sword, that neit He would surceasse, but bin would seeke.

So up he rose, and forth at Backe to the place where Tu There he him found in great To see him so bedight with And griesly wounds that his Yet thus at length he said knight.

What meaneth this which I How fortuneth this fonle u So different from that which in sight?"

'Perdie,' (said he) ' in evi So hard a taske as life for l The which I earst adventu Witnesse the wounds, and lake,

Which ye may see yet all Therefore now yeeld, as ye My due reward, the which I yearned have, that life deeme.'

But where then is ' (quo fully)

Where is the bootie. That recreant knight, w sought?

And where is eke your fr 'He lyes' (said he) 'upon t Slayne of that errant kn fought;

Whom afterwards my selfe Did slay againe, as ye n stound.

XVII

Thereof false Turpin was And needs with him str

would ryde, Where he himselfe might s For else his feare could no So as they rode he saw th With streames of bloud; the traile,

Ere long they came, where

XVIII

id the Craven seeme to mone his is sake his deare life had forgone; bewayling with affection base, erfeit kind pittie where was none: es no courage, theres no ruth nor ne. issing forth, not farre away he found the Prince himselfe lay all alone, isplayd upon the grassic ground, of sweete sleepe that luld him soft swound.

TIX

f travell in his former fight, in shade himselfe had layd to rest, iis armes and warlike things unht. of foes that mote his peace molest; es his salvage page, that wont be ired in the wood another way ne thing that seemed to him best; es his Lord in silver slomber lay, e Evening starre adorn'd with deawy

rhen as Turpin saw so loosely layd, I well that he in deed was dead, at other knight to him had sayd; i he nigh approcht, he mote aread nes in him of life and livelihead: much griev'd against that straunger too light of credence did mislead, have backe retyred from that sight, o him on earth the deadliest despight.

XXI

. same knight would not once let ı start. ly gan to him declare the case mischiefe and late lucklesse smart; he and his fellow there in place quished, and put to foule disgrace; that he, in lieu of life him lent, I unto the victor him to trace w through the world where so he ıt, e him delivered to his punishment.

XXII

with much abashed and affrayd, tremble every limbe and vaine;

r swayne, like ashes deadly pale, And, softly whispering him, entyrely prayde lap of death, rewing his wretched T' advize him better then by such a traine Him to betray unto a straunger swaine: Yet rather counseld him contrarywize, Sith he likewise did wrong by him sustaine. To joyne with him and vengeance to devize. Whylest time did offer meanes him sleeping to surprize,

XXIII

Nathelesse, for all his speach the gentle knight Would not be tempted to such villenie, Regarding more his faith which he did plight, All were it to his mortall enemic, Then to entrap him by false treacherie: Great shame in lieges blood to be embrew'd! Thus whylest they were debating diverslic, The Salvage forth out of the wood issew'd Backe to the place, whereas his Lord he sleeping vew'd.

XXIV

There when he saw those two so neare him stand. He doubted much what mote their meaning And throwing downe his load out of his hand, (To weet, great store of forrest frute which hee Had for his food late gathered from the tree,) Himselfe unto his weapon he betooke, That was an oaken plant, which lately hee Rent by the root; which he so sternely shooke, That like an hazell wand it quivered and quooke.

XXV

Whereat the Prince awaking, when he spyde The traytour Turpin with that other knight, He started up; and snatching neare his syde His trustie sword, the servant of his might, Like a fell Lyon leaped to him light. And his left hand upon his collar layd. Therewith the cowhcard, deaded with affright, Fell tlat to ground, ne word unto him sayd, But, holding up his hands, with silence mercie prayd.

XXVI

But he so full of indignation was That to his prayer nought he would incline, But, as he lay upon the humbled gras, His foot he set on his vile necke, in signe Of servile yoke, that nobler harts repine: Then, letting him arise like abject thrall, He gan to him object his haynous crime, And to revile, and rate, and recreant call, And lastly to despoyle of knightly bannerall.

XXVII

And after all, for greater infamie, He by the heeles him hung upon a tree,

And baffuld so, that all which passed by The picture of his punishment might see, And by the like ensample warned bee, How ever they through treason doe tresp But turne we now backe to that Ladie free, Whom late we left ryding upon an Asse, Led by a Carle and foole which by her side did passe.

XXVIII

She was a Ladie of great dignitie, And lifted up to honorable place Famous through all the laud of Faerie; Though of menne parentage and kindred base, Yet deckt with wondrous giftes of natures grace, That all men did her person much admire, And praise the feature of her goodly face; The beames whereof did kindle lovely fire In th' harts of many a knight, and many a gentle squire.

XXIX

But she thereof grew proud and insolent, That none she worthie thought to be her fere, But scornd them all that love unto her ment: Yet was she lov'd of many a worthy pere: Unworthy she to be belov'd so dere, That could not weigh of worthinesse aright; For beautie is more glorious bright and clere, The more it is admir'd of many a wight, And noblest she that served is of noblest knight.

But this coy Damzell thought contrariwize, That such proud looks would make her praysed more:

And that, the more she did all love despize, The more would wretched lovers her adore. What cared she who sighed for her sore, Or who did wayle or watch the wearie night? Let them that list their lucklesse lot deplore, She was borne free, not bound to any wight, And so would ever live, and love her owne delight.

Through such her stubborne stifnesse and hard Many a wretch for want of remedie Did languish long in life-consuming smart, And at the last through dreary dolour die : Whylest she, the Ladie of her libertie, Did boast her beautie had such soveraine might, That with the onely twinckle of her eye She could or save or spill whom she would hight: She could or save or spill whom she would hight: In cases like; which w What could the Gods doe more, but doe it more Her stubborne hart, aright?

But loe! the Gods, that mortall follies vew, Did worthily revenge this maydens pride;

And, nought regarding her Did laugh at her that man Whilest she did weepe, of a For on a day, when Cupid ! As he is wont at each Saint Unto the which all lovers That of their loves success make report ;

XXXIII

It fortun'd then, that wh red In which the names of a That many there were miss Or kept in bands, or from Or by some other violence Which when as Cupid he And doubting to be wrong He bad his eyes to be unb That he might see his m by oth.

Then found he many mi Which wont doe suit and Of whom what was become Therefore a Jurie was im T' enquire of them, wheth Or their owne guilt, they To whom foule Infamie Gave evidence, that the And murdred cruelly by

Favre Mirabella was he Of all those crymes she All which when Cupid I In great displeasure wil-Should issue forth t' lasse.

The warrant straight withall

Baylieffe-errant forth Whom they by name th He which doth summer ment hall.

The damzell was attac Unto the barre whereas But she thereto nould pl Even for stubborne prid So judgement past, as dayned,

Gan stoupe; and, falling awe,

Cryde mercie, to abate

XXXVII e of Venus, who is myld by kynd he is provokt with previshnesse, prayers piteously enclynd, he rigour of his doome represse; · freely, but that nathclesse ier a penance did impose, as, that through this worlds wyde er should in companie of those ul sav'd so many loves as she did lose.

XXXVIII

she had bene wandring two whole ires ut the world in this uncomely case, her goodly hew in heavie teares, good daves in dolorous disgrace : he not in all these two yeares space t two, yet in two yeares before, her dispiteous pride, whilest love kt place. lestroyed two and twenty more. how could her love make half amends erefore?

XXXIX

r she was uppon the weary way, n such misseeming foule array; the evill termes and cruell meane r doole.

it it mote availe her to entreat or th' other better her to use; so wilfull were and obstinate ner piteous plaint they did refuse, er did the more her beate and bruse : the former villaine, which did lead ing jade, was bent her to abuse; ugh she were with wearinesse nigh иl. I not let her lite, nor rest a little stead :

XLI

vas sterne and terrible by nature, of person huge and hideous, g much the measure of mans stature. r like a Gyant monstruous: he was descended of the hous old Gyants, which did warres darraine he heaven in order battailous. And sib to great Orgolio, which was slaine By Arthure, when as Unas Knight he did maintaine.

XLII His lookes were dreadfull, and his fiery eies,

Like two great Beacons, glared bright and wyde, Glauncing askew, as if his enemies He scorned in his overweening pryde; And stalking stately, like a Crane, did stryde At every step uppon the tiptoes hie: And, all the way he went, on every syde He gaz'd about and stared horriblie, As if he with his lookes would all men terrifie.

He wore no armour, ne for none did care, As no whit dreading any living wight; But in a Jacket, quilted richly rare Upon checklaton, he was straungely dight; And on his head a roll of linnen plight, Like to the Mores of Malaber, he wore With which his locks, as blacke as pitchy night, Were bound about and voyded from before; And in his hand a mighty yron club he bore.

This was Disdaine, who led that Ladies horse the gentle Squire, with faire Serene, Through thick and thiu, through mountains and through plains, a that mighty man did her demeane Compelling her, wher she would not, by force, Haling her palfrey by the hempen raines: ould make: And eeke that angry foole. But that same foole, which most increast her low'd her, with cursed hands uncleane paines.

flow'd her, with cursed hands uncleane paines, ther horse, did with his smarting toole Was Scorne; who having in his hand a whip, her dainty selfe, and much augment Her therewith yirks; and still, when she complaines The more he laughes, and does her closely quip,

To see her sore lament and bite her tender lip.

Whose cruell handling when that Squire beheld. And saw those villaines her so vildely use, His gentle heart with indignation sweld, And could no lenger beare so great abuse As such a Lady so to beate and bruse; But, to him stepping, such a stroke him lent, That forst him the halter from his hand to loose, And maugre all his might backe to relent: Else had he surely there bene slaine, or fowly shent.

XLVI

The villaine, wroth for greeting him so sore, Gathered him selfe together soone againe, And with his yron batton which he hore Let drive at him so dreadfully amaine,

That for his safety he did him constraine
To give him ground, and shift to every side,
Rather then once his burden to sustaine;
For bootelesse thing him seemed to abide
So mighty blowes, or prove the puissaunce of
his pride.

XLVII

Like as a Mastiffe having at a bay
A salvage Bull, whose cruell hornes doe threat
Desperate daunger, if he them assay,
Traceth his ground, and round about doth beat,
To spy where he may some advauntage get,
The whiles the beast doth rage and loudly rore;
So did the Squire, the whiles the Carle did fret
And fume in his disdainefull mynd the more,
And oftentimes by Turmagant and Mahound
swore.

XLVIII

Nathelesse so sharpely still he him pursewd, That at advantage him at last he tooke, When his foote slipt, (that slip he dearely rewd)

And with his yron club to ground him strooke; And past through many Where still he lay, ne out of swoome awooke, Ere she againe to Calepir Till heavy hand the Carle upon him layd, And bound him fast: Tho, when he up did looke Till Mirabellaes fortunes

And saw him selfe captivil, Ne powre had to withstanayd.

33.03

Then up he made him riss.
Led in a rope which both his
Ne ought that foole for pitr
But with his whip, him foll
Him often scourg'd, and fon
Andother-whiles with bitte
He would him scorne, that
Was much more grievous
blowes:

Words sharpely wound, bu scorning growes.

L

The faire Serena, when a Under that villaines club, That slaine he was, or ma And fied away with all the Tosceko for safety; which And past through many | Ere she againe to Calepin The which discourse as m Till Mirabellaes fortunes

CANTO VIII.

Prince Arthure overcomes Disdaine; Quites Mirabell from dreed; Serena, found of Salvages, By Calepine is freed.

1

YE gentle Ladies, in whose sovernine powre Love hath the glory of his kingdome left, And th' hearts of men, as your eternall dowre, In yron chaines of liberty bereft, Delivered hath into your hands by gift, Be well aware how ye the same doe use, That pride doe not to tyranny you lift; Least, if men you of cruelty accuse, He from you take that chiefedome which ye doe abuse.

TI

And as ye soft and tender are by kynde,
Adornd with goodly gifts of beauties grace,
So be ye soft and tender ceke in mynde;
But cruelty and hardnesse from you chace,
That all your other praises will deface,
And from you turne the love of men to hate;
Ensample take of Mirabellaes case,
Who from the high degree of happy state
Fell into wretched woes, which she repented
late.

Who after thraldome of Which she beheld with h Was touched with compa And much lamented his That for her sake fell im Which booted nought for To hope for to release or For aye the more that s The more they him mibeat.

IV

So as they forward on t Him still reviling and a They met Prince Arthur (That was that courted before

Having subdew'd yet di To whom as they approx Their cruelty, and him t Scourging and haling hi Asifit them should griev. re him selfe, when as he saw his Lord see of his wretchednesse in place, asham'd that with an hempen cord log was led in captive case, is head for bashfulnesse abase, see or to be seene at all: uld be hid. But whenas Enias o such, of two such villaines thrall, mynde was much emmoved there-

he Prince thus sayd: 'See you, Sir ight,
sat shame that ever eye yet saw,
y and her Squire with foule despight
gainst all reason and all law,
egant of pitty or of awe?
hey doe that Squire beat and revile!
they doe the Lady hale and draw!
please to lend me leave awhile,
n soone acquite, and both of blame
sile,'

VII

nce assented; and then he, streighty
ing light, his shield about him threw,
ch approching thus he gan to say:
e caytive treachetours untrew,
with treason thralled unto you
h, unworthy of your wretched bands,
your crime with cruelty pursew!
I from them lay your loathly hands,
ide the death that hard before you
nds.'

111

ine stayd not aunswer to invent, his yron club preparing way, es sad message backe unto him sent; idescended with such dreadfull sway, ted nought the course thereof could y,

then lightening from the lofty sky:

• Knight the powre thereof assay,

ome was death; but, lightly slipping

defrauded his intended destiny:

ıx

requite him with the like againe, sharpe sword he fiercely at him flew, he so strongly, that the Carle with inc m selfe but that he there him slew; I not so, but that the bloud it drew, this foe good hope of victory: rewith flesht upon him set anew,

And with the second stroke thought certainely To have supplyde the first, and paide the usury.

x

But Fortune aunswerd not unto his call; For, as his hand was heaved up on hight, The villaine met him in the middle fall, And with his club bet backe his brondyron bright.

So forcibly, that with his owne hands might

So forcibly, that with his owne hands might, Rebeaten backe upon himselfe againe, He driven was to ground in selfe despight; From whence ere he recovery could gaine,

He in his necke had set his foote with fell dis-

ΧI

With that the foole, which did that end awayte, Came running in; and, whilest on ground he lay, Laide heavy hands on him and held so strayte,

That downe he kept him with his scornefull sway,
So as he could not weld him any way:

The whiles that other villaine went about Him to have bound and thrald without delay; The whiles the foole did him revile and flout, Threatning to yoke them two and tame their

XII

corage stout.

As when a sturdy ploughman with his hynde By strength have overthrowne a stubborne steare. [bynde, They downe him hold, and fast with cords do Till they him force the buxome yoke to beare: So did these two this Knight oft tug and teare.

Which when the Prince beheld, there standing by, He left his lofty steede to aide him neare; And, buckling soone him selfe, gan fiercely fly

And, buckling soone him selfe, gan fiercely fly Upon that Carle to save his friend from jeopardy.

XIII

The villaine, leaving him unto his mate
To be captiv'd and handled as he list,
Himselfe addrest unto this new debate,
And with his club him all about so blist,
That he which way to turne him scarcely wist:
Sometimes aloft he layd, sometimes alow,
Now here, now there, and oft him neare he
mist:

So doubtfully, that hardly one could know Whether more wary were to give or ward the blow.

XIV

But yet the Prince so well enured was With such huge strokes, approved oft in fight, moree.

That way to them he gave forth right to pas; Which durst her dreaded: Ne would endure the daunger of their might, Yet heavens them selves, But wayt advantage when they downe did

light.
At last the caytive, after long discourse, When all his strokes he saw avoyded quite Resolved in one t' assemble all his force, And make one end of him without ruth or re

His dreadfull hand he heaved up aloft, And with his dreadfull instrument of yre Thought sure have pownded him to powder soft, Or deepe emboweld in the earth entyre: But Fortune did not with his will conspire;

The noble childe, preventing his desire, Under his club with wary boldnesse went, And smote him on the knee that never yet was hent.

For, ere his stroke attayned his intent,

XVI It never yet was bent, ne bent it now, Albe the stroke so strong and puissant were, That seem'd a marble pillour it could bow;

But all that leg, which did his body beare, It crackt throughout, (yet did no bloud appeare.) So as it was unable to support

So huge a burden on such broken geare, But fell to ground, like to a lumpe of durt; Whence he assayd to rise, but could not for his hurt.

XVII

Estsoones the Prince to him full nimbly stept, And least he should recover foote againe, His head meant from his shoulders to have swept. Which when the Lady saw, she cryde amaine; And, sitting carelesse 'Stay, stay, Sir Knight! for love of God Did laugh at those

abstaine From that unwares ye weetlesse doe intend; Slay not that Carle, though worthy to be slaine. For more on him doth then him selfe depend:

My life will by his death have lamentable end. XVIII

He staide his hand according her desire, Yet nathemore him suffred to arize;

But, still suppressing, gan of her inquire, What meaning mote those uncouth words comprize. That in that villaines health her safety lies; That, were no might in man, nor heart in Knights,

rights, Would for it selfe redress

despights. XIX Then bursting forth in te faut Like many water streame Till the sharpe passion be

Her tongue to her restord. Nor heavens, nor men, ca mayd,

Deliver from the doome of The which the God of love And damned to endure th For penaunce of my proud hart.

'In prime of youthly ye flowre Of beauty gan to bud, an

And Nature me endu'd w Of all her gifts, that plea I was belov d of many a And sude and sought wit

Full many a one for m sight. And to the dore of death Complayning out on me

them rew. 'But let them love that Me list not die for any le

Ne list me leave my lov To love my selfe I learn Thus I triumphed long

And, sitting carelesse or plaine; But all is now repayd w

'For loe! the winger harts Causde me be called to And for revengement

Which I to others did i Addeem'd me to endure That in this wize, and t With these two lewd cor Disdaine and Scorne, should stray, Till I have sav'd so ma

smarts.

XXIII

myd then the Prince) 'the God is vengeaunce of his peoples spoile; blaw in love, but all that lust oppresse, and painefully turmoile. me would continue but a while. , Lady, wherefore doe you beare thus before you with such toile,

ais wallet at your backe arreare,

hese Carles to carry much more

XXIV

:ly were?'

his bottle' (sayd the sory Mayd) tears of my contrition brim I have it full defrayd: bag, which I behinde me don, taunce for things past and gon. pottle leake, and bag so torne. nich I put in fals out anon, inde me trodden downe of Scorne eth all my paine, and laughs the 2 I mourn.

XXV it hearkned wisely to her tale,

ad he Disdaine up to arise, not able up him selfe to reare his leg, through his late luckclesse t in twaine, but by his foolish feare n up, who him supported standing . XXVI

ed much at Cupids judg'ment wise.

d so meekly make proud hearts

e him selfe on them that him despise.

; up he lookt againe aloft, ver had received fall; sterne eve-browes stared at him oft. mld have daunted him withall: ing on his tiptoes, to seeme tall, his golden feete he often gazed, pride the other could apall; o far from being ought amazed, is lookes despised, and his boast raized.

XXVII

nd. to be knowne or seene at all. And every body two, and two she foure did 100e bands weend him to have unnd;

But when approaching neare he plainely found It was his owne true groome, the gentle Squire, He thereat wext exceedingly astound, And him did oft embrace, and oft admire, Ne could with seeing satisfie his great desire.

XXVIII Meane-while the Salvage man, when he be-

held That huge great foole oppressing th' other Whom with his weight unweldy downe he held, He flew upon him like a greedy kight Unto some carrion offered to his sight; And, downe him plucking, with his navles and teeth Gan him to hale, and teare, and scratch, and bite;

So sore him scourgeth that the bloud downe XXIX And sure I weene, had not the Ladies cry

followeth.

laines lose.

read.

And, from him taking his owne whip, therewith

Procur'd the Prince his cruell hand to stay, He would with whipping him have done to dye; But being checkt he did abstaine streightway, And let him rise. Then thus the Prince gan

'Now, Lady, sith your fortunes thus dispose, That if ye list have liberty ye may; Unto your selfe I freely leave to chose Whether I shall you leave, or from these vil-

$\mathbf{x}\mathbf{x}\mathbf{x}$ 'Ah! nay, Sir Knight,' (said she) 'it may

not be, But that I needes must by all meanes fulfill This penaunce, which enjoyned is to me, Least unto me betide a greater ill; Yet no lesse thankes to you for your good will.' So humbly taking leave she turnd aside; But Arthure with the rest went onward still On his first quest, in which did him betide A great adventure, which did him from them devide.

XXXI

But first it falleth me by course to tell Of faire Serena; who, as earst you heard, When first the gentle Squire at variaunce fell With those two Carles, fled fast away, afeard sing backe unto that captive thrall, Of villary to be to her inferd: is while stood there beside them So fresh the image of her former dread, Yet dwelling in her eye, to her appeard, That every foote did tremble which did tread

XXXII

Through hils and dales, through bushes and Soone as they spide her, Lord! what glade through breres

Long thus she fled, till that at last she thought They made amongst them selves; but will Her selfe now past the perill of her feares:

Then looking round about, and seeing nought Like the faire yvory shining they did see, Which doubt of daunger to her offer mought, Each gan his fellow solace and embrace She from her palfrey lighted on the plaine;

Of her long travell and turmoyling paine And often did of love, and oft of lucke complaine.

XXXIII

And evermore she blamed Calepine, The good Sir Calepine, her owne true Knight, As th' onely author of her wofull tine;

For being of his love to her so light, As her to leave in such a pitcous plight: Yet never Turtle truer to his make

take.

need.

lay.

Then he was tride unto his Lady bright; Who all this while endured for her sake Great perill of his life, and restlesse paines did

XXXIV

The when as all her plaints she had displayd, To make a common feast, and feed with And well disburdened her engrieved brest, Upon the grasse her selfe adowne she layd; Where, being tyrde with travell, and opprest With sorrow, she betooke her selfe to rest:

False Fortune did her safety betray

Unto a strange mischaunce that menac'd her decay.

XXXX In these wylde deserts where she now abode,

There dwelt a salvage nation, which did live Of stealth and spoile, and making nightly rode Into their neighbours borders; ne did give Them selves to any trade, (as for to drive

The painefull plough, or cattell for to breed, Or by adventrous marchandize to thrive,) But on the labours of poore men to feed, And serve their owne necessities with others

XXXVI Thereto they usde one most accursed order,

To cate the flesh of men whom they mote fynde, And straungers to devoure, which on their border Were brought by errour or by wreckfull wynde; A monstrous cruelty gainst course of kynde! They, towards evening wandering every way

To seeke for booty, came by fortune blynde Wherens this Lady, like a sheepe astray, Nowdrowned in the depth of sleepe all fearelesse

glee

her face

She from her palfrey lighted on the plaine; | For joy of such good hap by heavenly grac And, sitting downe, her selfe awhile bethought | Then gan they to devize what course to tall Whether to slay her there upon the place, Or suffer her out of her sleepe to wake, And then her eate attones,or many meal

make.

mandize,

xxxviii

The best advizement was, of bad, to let Sleepe out her fill without encombern For sleepe, they sayd, would make ber better: Then when she wakt they all gave one es That, since by grace of God she there was Unto their God they would her sacrifize, Whose share, her guiltlesse bloud, they

present : But of her dainty flesh they did devise

XXXIX

So round about her they them selves a With sorrow, she betooke her seen after the lay, Upon the grasse, and diversely unspection. There whilest in Morpheus bosome safe she lay, As each thought best to spend the Upon the grasse, and diversely dispose Some with their eyes the daintest monels Some praise her paps; some praise her li nose ; Some whet their knives, and strip their bare:

The Priest him selfe a garland doth of Of finest flowers, and with full busic of His bloudy vessels wash, and holy fire pr

The Damzell wakes; then all attonce u And round about her flocke, like many i Whooping and hallowing on every part, As if they would have rent the brasen of

Which when she sees with ghastly grieffel Her heart does quake, and deadly palled Benumbes her cheekes: Then out along cries. Where none is nigh to heare that will b

And rends her golden locks, and snowy

embrew.

XL:

But all bootes not; they hands apon h And first they spoile her of her jewels of And afterwards of all her rich array; The which amongst them they in peeces rove.

pray each one a part doth beare. naked, to their sordid eyes threasures of nature appeare: hey view with lustfull fantasyes, th to him selfe, and to the rest es :-

XLII

a neck; her alablaster brest; hich like white silken pillowes were soft delight thereon to rest; sides; her bellie white and clere, an Altar did itselfe uprere ritice divine thereon; thighes, whose glorie did appeare nphal Arch, and thereupon of Princes hang'd which were in d won.

ntie parts, the dearlings of delight, te not be prophan'd of common Till, being waked with these loud alarmes, ns view'd with loose lascivious sight, He lightly started up like one aghast, tempted with their craftie spyes; of them gan mongst themselves force to take their beastly pleasure: he Priest rebuking did advize

XLIV

easure.

me.

t to pollute so sacred threasure

e gods: religion held even theeves

stayd, they her from thence di-

· grove not farre asyde, n altar shortly they erected on. And now the Eventyde lack wings had through the heavens

pred, that was the tyme ordayned dismall deed, their guilt to hyde: ne turfes an altar soone they fayned, I obtayned.

XLV 1 as all things readie were aright, :ll was before the altar set, die dead with fearefull fright: he Priest with naked armes full net g nigh, and murdrous knife well r close a certaine secret charme, divelish ceremonies met

XIVI Then gan the bagpypes and the homes to

shrill And shricke aloud, that, with the peoples Confused, did the ayre with terror fill, And made the wood to tremble at the noyce: The whyles she wayld, the more they did

rejoyce. Now mote ye understand that to this grove Sir Calepine, by chaunce more then by choyce, The selfe same evening fortune bether drove As he to seeke Serena through the woods did

XLVII

Long had he sought her, and through many a soyle Had traveld still on foot in heavie armes, Ne ought was tyred with his endlesse toyle, Ne ought was feared of his certaine harmes: And now, all weetlesse of the wretched stormes, In which his love was lost, he slept full fast;

And, catching up his arms, streight to the noise forth past. XLVIII There by th' uncertaine glims of starry night, And, by the twinkling of their sacred fire,

He mote perceive a litle dawning sight Of all which there was doing in that quire: Mongst whom a woman spoyld of all attire He spyde lamenting her unluckie strife,

And groning sore from grieved hart entire Eftsoones he saw one with a naked knife Readie to launch her brest, and let out loved XLIX

With that he thrusts into the thickest throng And, even as his right hand adowne descends,

He him preventing layes on earth along, And sacrifizeth to th' infernall feends: it all with flowres which they nigh Then to the rest his wrathfull hand he bends; Of whom he makes such havocke and such hew, That swarmes of damned soules to hell he sends:

The rest, that scape his sword and death eschew, Fly like a flocke of doves before a Faulcons vew. From them returning to that Ladie backe,

Whom by the Altar he doth sitting find Yet fearing death, and next to death the lacke Of clothes to cover what they ought by kind, He first her hands beginneth to unbind, n, he gan aloft t'advance his arme. He first her hands beginneth to unbind, hey shouted all, and made a loud And then to question of her present woe.

But she, for nought that he could say or doe, One word durst speake, or answere him awhit thereto.

So inward shame of her uncomely case
She did conceive, through care of womanhood,
The end whereof He keepe

That though the night di Yet she in so unwomanly Would not bewray the stat So all that night to him : But day, that doth discov

CANTO IX.

Calidore hostes with Melibor, And loves fayre Pastorell : Coridon envies him, yet he For ill rewards him well.

Now surne agains my teme, thou jolly swayne, Backe to the furrow which I lately left. I lately left a furrow, one or twayne, Unplough'd, the which my coulter hath not cleft :

Yet seem'd the soyle both fayre and frutefull eft, As I it past: that were too great a shame, That so rich frute should be from us bereft; Besides the great dishonour and defame, Which should befall to Calidores immortall name,

Great travell hath the gentle Calidore And toyle endured, sith I left him last Sewing the Blatant Beast; which I forbore To finish then, for other present hast, Full many pathes and perils he hath past, Through hils, through dales, through forests, and through plaines,

In that same quest which fortune on him cast, Which he atchieved to his owne great gaines, Reaping eternall glorie of his restlesse paines.

So sharply he the Monster did pursew, That day nor night he suffred him to rest, Ne rested he himselfe, but natures dew, For dread of daunger not to be redrest, If he for slouth forslackt so famous quest, Him first from court he to the citties coursed, And from the citties to the townes him prest, And from the townes into the countrie forsed, Aud from the country back to private farmes he scorsed.

From thence into the open fields he fled, Whereas the Heardes were keeping of their Tho, having fed his fill neat. And shepherds singing to their flockes (that Layes of sweete love and youthes delightfull Yclad in home-made gro heat :

Him thether eke, for all h He followed fast, and cha-That to the folds, where

And to the litle cots, who In winters wrathfull time

There on a day, as he pr Hechaunst to spy a sort of Playing on pipes and car The whyles their beasts broomes

Beside them fed, and nin For other worldly wealt To whom Sir Calidore v And them to tell him co If such a beast they saw brought.

They answer'd him the Nor any wicked feend th Their happie flockes, nor But if that such there we They prayd high God th send.

Then one of them, him After his rusticke wise, Offred him drinke to qu And, if he hungry were

The knight was nothi

need And tooke their gentle They prayd him sit, an Such homely what as so That doth despise the [fed) Saw a faire damzell, w Of sundry flowres with had dyde.

VIII

le hillocke she was placed n all the rest, and round about vith a girland, goodly graced, uses; and them all without

shepheard swavnes sate in a rout, did pype and sing her prayses dew, ovce, and oft for wonder shout,

miracle of heavenly hew e to them descended in that earthly

ly sure she was full fayre of face, tly well shapt in every lim, did more augment with modest

r carriage of her count'nance trim, e rest like lesser lamps did dim : dmiring as some heavenly wight,

ir soveraine goddesse her esteeme, ng her name both day and night. . Pastorella her by name did hight.

iere heard, ne was there shepheards I honour; and cke many a one ier love, and with sweet pleasing

a night for her did sigh and grone: f all the shepheard Coridon I languish, and his deare life spend;

r she for him nor other none whit, ne any liking lend: eane her lot, yet higher did her d ascend.

es Sir Calidore there vewed well. t her rare demeanure, which him ned

e meane of shepheards to excell, in his mind her worthy deemed mees Paragone esteemed, wares surprisd in subtile bands id boy; ne thence could be redcemed ill out of his cruell hands; ke the bird which gazing still on ers stands.

he still long gazing thereupon, Il had thence to move away his quest were farre afore him gon : he had fed, yet did he stay there still, untill the flying day forth spent, discoursing diversly things as fell, to worke delay;

And evermore his speach he did apply To th' heards, but meant them to the damzels fantazy.

By this the moystic night approching fast Her deawy humour gan on th' earth to shed, That warn'd the shepheards to their homes to Their tender flocks, now being fully fed, [hast

For feare of wetting them before their bed. Then came to them a good old aged syre Whose silver lockes bedeckt his beard and hed, With shepheards hooke in hand, and fit attyre, That wild the damzell rise; the day did now expyre.

XIV He was, to weet, by common voice esteemed

The father of the fayrest Pastorell, And of her selfe in very deede so deemed;

Yet was not so; but, as old stories tell Found her by fortune, which to him befell, In th' open fields an Infant left alone;

And, taking up, brought home and noursed well As his owne chyld; for other he had none; That she in tract of time accompted was his

She at his bidding meckely did arise. And streight unto her litle flocke did fare:

Then all the rest about her rose likewise. And each his sundrie sheepe with severall care Gathered together, and them homeward bare:

Whylest everie one with helping hands did strive, share.

Amongst themselves, and did their labours To helpe faire Pastorella home to drive Her fleecie flocke; but Coridon most helpe did give.

XVI But Melibee (so hight that good old man) Now seeing Calidore left all alone, And night arrived hard at hand, began

Him to invite unto his simple home; Which though it were a cottage clad with lome, And all things therein meane, yet better so To lodge then in the salvage fields to rome.

The knight full gladly soone agreed thereto (Being his harts owne wish,) and home with him did go.

XVII There he was welcom'd of that honest syre

And of his aged Beldame homely well; Who him be sought himselfe to disattyre, And rest himselfe till supper time befell; By which home came the fayrest Pastorell, After her flocke she in their fold had tyde: And supper readie dight they to it fell s a a

With small adoe, and nature satisfyde, The which doth litle crave contented to abyde,

The when they had their hunger slaked well, And the fayre mayd the table ta'ne away, The gentle knight, as he that did excell In courtesie and well could doe and say, For so great kindnesse as he found that day Gan greatly thanke his host and his good wife; And drawing thence his speach another way, Gan highly to commend the happie life Which Shepheards lead, without debate or bitter strife.

XIX

'How much' (sayd he) 'more happie is the My limbes in every shade to state

In which ye, father, here doe dwell at ease, Leading a life so free and fortunate From all the tempests of these worldly seas, Which tosse the rest in daungerous disease; Where warres, and wreckes, and wicked enmitie

Doe them afflict, which no man can appease; That certes I your happinesse envie, And wish my lot were plast in such felicitie.'

XX

'Surely, my sonne,' (then answer'd he againe)
'If happie, then it is in this intent, That having small yet doe I not complaine Of want, ne wish for more it to augment, But doe my selfe with that I have content; So taught of nature, which doth litle need Of forreine helpes to lifes due nourishment: The fields my food, my flocke my rayment breed;

No better doe I weare, no better doe I feed,

XXI

'Therefore I doe not any one envy, Nor am envyde of any one therefore: They, that have much, feare much to loose thereby,

And store of cares doth follow riches store, The litle that I have growes dayly more Without my care, but onely to attend it; My lambes doe every yeare increase their score, And my flockes father daily doth amend it. What have I, but to praise th' Almighty that doth send it!

XXII

"To them that list the worlds gay showes I leave.

And to great ones such follies doe forgive; Which oft through pride do their owne perill drive

And through ambition downe themselves doe He lost himselfe, and like or

To sad decay, that might cont. Me no such cares nor comb offend.

Ne once my minds unmoved q But all the night in silver sle And all the day to what I list

XXIII

Sometimes I hunt the Fox. Unto my Lambes, and him di Sometime the fawne I practise Or from the Goat her kidde, h Another while I baytes and ne The hirds to entch, or fishes to And when I wearie am, I dow And drinke of every brooke

throte doth boyle.

. The time was once, in my fire When pride of youth forth pr That I disdain a amongst mit To follow sheepe and shepher For further fortune then I was And, leaving home, to miall Where I did sell my selfe for And in the Princes gardin de There I beheld such vaine thought.

With sight whereof soon deluded

With idle hopes which them After I had ten yeares my From native home, and spent I gan my follies to my selfe. And this sweet peace, who: appeare:

Tho, backe returning to my I from thenceforth bave les deare

This lowly quiet life which

XXVI

Whylest thus he talkt, the h

Hong still upon his melting Whose sensefull words can neare,

That he was rapt with doub Both of his speach, that w content,

And also of the object of his On which his hungry eye v That twixt his pleasing to hew.

XXVII

occasion meanes to worke his mind, insinuate his harts desire.

replyde: 'Now surely, syre, I find, I this worlds gay showes, which we dmire,

vaine shadowes to this safe retyre which here in lowlinesse ve lead. se of foes, or fortunes wrackfull yre

cosseth states, and under foot doth tread thtie ones, affrayd of every chaunges fread.

XXVIII even I, which daily doe behold rie of the great mongst whom I won, th great Lordship and ambition; h th' heavens so much had graced mee, nt me live in like condition; my fortunes might transposed bee tch of higher place unto this low deree.

XXIX

ine' (said then old Melibre) ' doe men vens of their fortunes fault accuse y know best what is the best for them: y to each such fortune doe diffuse, doe know each can most aptly use: that which men covet most is best, t thing worst which men do most re-st is, that all contented rest | fuse: | fuse ; at they hold: each hath his fortune in is brest.

XXX

he mynd that maketh good or ill, keth wretch or happie, rich or poore; e, that hath abundance at his will. t enough, but wants in greatest store, er, that hath litle, askes no more, hat litle is both rich and wise : :dome is most riches: fooles therefore which fortunes doe by vowes devize, h unto himselfe his life may fortunize.

XXXI

then in each mans self' (said Calidore) fashion his owne lyfes estate, re awhyle, good father, in this shore sy barcke, which hath bene beaten late ormes of fortune and tempestuous fate f troubles and of toylesome paine; ether quite from them for to retrate solve, or backe to turne againe, re with your selfe some small repos taine.

XXXII

'Not that the burden of so bold a guest Shall chargefull be, or chaunge to you at all; For your meane food shall be my daily feast, And this your cabin both my bowre and hall: Besides, for recompence hereof I shall You well reward, and golden guerdon give

That may perhaps you better much withall, And in this quiet make you safer live.

So forth he drew much gold, and toward him it drive.

But the good man, nought tempted with the

offer Of his rich mould, did thrust it farre away, w have prov'd what happinesse ye hold And thus bespake: Sir knight, your boun-small plot of your dominion, teoms proffer teous proffer Be farre fro me, to whom ye ill display That mucky masse, the cause of mens decay, That mote empaire my peace with daungers But, if ye algates covet to assay [dread; [dread;

Be it your owne : our rudenesse to your selfe

aread.'

This simple sort of life that shepheards lead,

XXXIV So there that night Sir Calidore did dwell. And long while after, whilest him list remaine, Dayly beholding the faire Pastorell, And feeding on the bayt of his owne bane:

During which time he did her entertaine With all kind courtesies he could invent; And every day, her companie to gaine, When to the field she went he with her went: So for to quench his fire he did it more augment.

XXXX

But she that never had acquainted beene With such queint usage, fit for Queenes and Kinga. Ne ever had such knightly service seene, But, being bred under base shepheards wings,

Did litle whit regard his courteous guize, But cared more for Colins carolings Then all that he could doe, or ever devize: His layes, his loves, his lookes, she did them all despize.

Had ever learn'd to love the lowly things,

XXXVI

Which Calidore perceiving, thought it best To chaunge the manner of his loftic looke; And doffing his bright armes himselfe addrest In shepheards weed; and in his hand he tooke, Instead of steele-head speare, a shepheards

hooke; [thought That who had seene him then, would have be-On Phrygian Paris by Plexippus brooke,

When he the love of fayre Oenone sought, What time the golden apple was unto him brought.

XXXVII

So being clad unto the fields he went With the faire Pastorella every day, And kept her sheepe with diligent attent, Watching to drive the ravenous Wolfe away, The whylest at pleasure she mote sport and play ;

And otherwhiles, for need, he did assay In his strong hand their rugged teats to hold, And out of them to presse the milker love so much could,

XXXVIII

Which seeing Coridon, who her likewise Long time had lov'd, and hop'd her love to gaine.

He much was troubled at that straungers guize, And many gealous thoughts conceiv d in vaine, That this of all his labour and long paine Should reap the harvest ere it ripened were: That made him scoule, and pout, and oft com-

plaine Of Pastorell to all the shepheards there, That she did love a stranger swayne then him

XXXXIX

And ever, when he came in companie

more dere.

Where Calidore was present, he would loure And byte his lip, and even for gealousie Was readie oft his owne heart to devoure, Impatient of any paramoure: Who, on the other side, did seeme so farre From malicing, or grudging his good houre, That all he could he graced him with her, Ne ever shewed signe of rancour or of jarre.

And oft, when Coridon unto her brought Or litle sparrowes stolen from their nest, Or wanton squirrels in the woods farre sought, Or other daintie thing for her addrest, He would commend his guift, and make the Could not maligne him, h Yet she no whit his presents did regard, [best; Ne him could find to fancie in her brest: This new-come shepheard had his market mard. Old love is litle worth when new is more prefard.

XLI

One day, when as the shepheard swaynes together Lglee, Were met to make their sports and merrie As they are wont in faire sunshynie weather, The whiles their flockes in shadowes shronded

bec,

They fell to dannes: then did That Colin Clout should pipe, And Calidore should lead the That must in Pastorellaes gra Thereat frown'd Coridon, and

XLII

But Calidore, of courteous inc Tooke Coridon and set him in That he should lead the dam fashion: For Coridon could daunce, and And when as Pastorella, him i Her flowry garlond tooke from And plast on his, he did it soo And did it put on Coridons in

Then Coridon woxe frollicke, t

dead.

XLIII Another time, when as they To practise games and maiste They for their Judge did Pas A garland was the meed of vi There Coridon forth stepping Did chalenge Calidore to wre For he, through long and per Therein well practisd was, as Thought sure t' avenge his g his foe great shame,

But Calidore he greatly did For he was strong and migh That with one fall his necke And had he not upon him fa His dearest joynt he sure ha Then was the oaken crowne Given to Calidore as his due But he, that did in courtesis Gave it to Coridon, and said

Thus did the gentle knight Amongst that rusticke rout That even they, the which I needs :

For courtesie amongst the 1 Good will and favour. So With this faire Mayd, and seeds

Of perfect love did sow, that The fruite of joy and blisse dearely bought,

Thus Calidore continu'd L To winne the love of the fa having got, he used without crime nefull blot; but menaged so well, voured and to her grace commended.

But what straunge fortunes unto him befell, Ere he attain'd the point by him intended, s, of all the rest which there did dwell, Shall more conveniently in other place be ended.

CANTO X.

Calidore sees the Graces daunce To Colins melody; he whiles his Pastorell is led Into captivity.

Reast. t Calidore does follow that faire Mayd, dfull of his vow, and high beheast by the Faery Queene was on him lavd, should never leave, nor be delayd hacing him, till he had it attchieved? v, entrapt of love, which him betrayd, deth more how he may be relieved race from her, whose love his heart hath ore engrieved.

now does follow the foule Blatant

H

rom henceforth he meanes no more to ner quest, so full of toile and paine: r quest, another game in vew hom he myndes for ever to remaine, his rest amongst the rusticke sort, then hunt still after shadowes vaine tly favour, fed with light report w blaste, and sayling alwaies in the iort.

tes mote he greatly blamed be > high step to stoupe unto so low;) had tasted once (as oft did he) py peace which there doth overflow, ov'd the perfect pleasures which doe dales, TOW it poore hyndes, in hils, in woods, in sever more delight in painted show false blisse, as there is set for stales unwary fooles in their eternall

IV

at hath all that goodly glorious gaze me sight which Calidore did vew? mce whereof their dimmed eies would Lze. er more they should endure the shew

Of that sunne-shine that makes them looke askew:

Ne ought, in all that world of beauties rare, (Save onely Glorianaes heavenly hew, To which what can compare?) can it compare; The which, as commeth now by course, I will declare.

One day, as he did raunge the fields abroad, Whilest his faire Pastorella was elsewhere, He chaunst to come, far from all peoples troad, Unto a place whose pleasaunce did appere To passe all others on the earth which were: For all that ever was by natures skill Devized to worke delight was gathered there, And there by her were poured forth at fill, As if, this to adorne, she all the rest did pill,

It was an hill plaste in an open plaine,

That round about was bordered with a wood Of matchlesse hight, that seem'd th' earth to disdaine; In which all trees of honour stately stood, And did all winter as in sommer bud, Spredding pavilions for the birds to bowre, Which in their lower brannches sung aloud; And in their tops the soring hanke did towre, Sitting like King of fowles in majesty and powre:

And at the foote thereof a gentle flud His silver waves did softly tumble downe, Unmard with ragged mosse or filthy mud; Ne mote wylde beastes, ne mote the ruder clowne,

Thereto approch; ne filth mote therein drownes But Nymphes and Facries by the bancks did Bit [crowne, In the woods shade which did the

Keeping all noysome things away from it, And to the waters fall tuning their accepts 11L

And on the top thereof a spacious plaine Did spred it selfe, to serve to all delight, Either to dannee, when they to dannee would faine.

Or else to course about their bases light; Ne ought there wanted which for pleasure Desired be, or thence to banish bale, So pleasauntly the hill with equall hight Did seeme to overlooke the lowly vale Therefore it rightly cleeped was mount Acidale.

They say that Venus, when she did dispose Her selfe to pleasaunce, used to resort Unto this place, and therein to repose And rest her selfe as in a gladsome port, Or with the Graces there to play and sport ; That even her owne Cytheron, though in it She used most to keepe her royall court, And in her soveraine Majesty to sit, She in regard hereof refusde and thought unfit.

Unto this place when as the Elfin Knight Approcht, him seemed that the merry sound Of a shrill pipe he playing heard on hight, And many feete fast thumping th' hol hollow ground, [bound.

That through the woods their Eccho did re-He nigher drew to weete what mote it be: There he a troupe of Ladies danneing found Full merrily, and making gladfull glee, And in the midst a Shepheard piping he did see,

He durst not enter into th' open greene, For dread of them unwares to be descryde' For breaking of their daunce, if he were seene; But in the covert of the wood did byde, Beholding all, yet of them unespyde. There he did see that pleased much his sight, That even he him selfe his eyes envyde, An hundred naked maidens lilly white All raunged in a ring and danneing in delight.

All they without were raunged in a ring And daunced round; but in the midst of them Three other Ladies did both daunce and sing, The whilest the rest them round about did Thy love is there advanhemme,

And like a girlond did in compasse stemme : And in the middest of those same three was placed

Another Damzell, as a precious gemme

Amidst a ring most richly w That with her goodly premuch graced.

Looke! how the crowne, wh Upon her yvory forehead, th That Theseus her unto his br When the bold Centaures n With the fierce Lapithes who Being now placed in the firm Through the bright heaven display,

And is unto the starres an or Which round about her mos

Such was the beauty of this Whose sundry parts were her But she that in the midst of Seem'd all the rest in beaut; Crownd with a rosie girland Did her beseeme: And ever About her daunst, sweet fl. smell

And fragrant odours they u But most of all those three endew.

Those were the Graces, da Handmaides of Venus, haunt

Uppon this hill, and dam Those three to men all gifts And all that Venus in her : Is borrowed of them. But That in the midst was plac Was she to whom that she That made him pipe so me

XVI

She was, to weete, that lasse,

Which piped there un'o th That jolly shepheard, which Poore Colin Clout, (who Clout?)

He pypt apace, whilest the Pype, jolly shepheard, pyp Unto thy love that made Thy love is present there Grace.

Much wondred Calidon sight, Whose like before his eye standing long astonished in spright. weene:

her it were the traine of beauties Queene. mphes, or Facries, or enchaunted show, which his eyes mote have deluded beene. fore, resolving what it was to know, 'the wood he rose, and toward them did

soone as he appeared to their vew, anisht all away out of his sight, [knew; e the shepheard, who, for fell despight t displeasure, broke his bag-pipe quight, ade great mone for that unhappy turne : didore, though no lesse sory wight mote learne.

jolly shepheard, which thy joyous madest in this goodly merry-make, nted of these gentle Nymphes alwayes, to thee flocke to heare thy lovely layes! , what mote these dainty Damzels be, here with thee doe make their pleasant playes?

first him greeting, thus unto him spake:

XX

I so happy,' answerd then that swaine, u unhappy, which them thence didst hace, by no meanes thou caust recall againe; ng gone, none can them bring in place, om they of them selves list so to grace, sory I, (saide then Sir Calidore)

ny ill fortune did them hence displace; re things passed none may now restore, what were they all, whose lacke thee rieves so sore?

n that shepheard thus for to dilate: ote, thou shepheard, whatsoever thou those Ladies, which thou sawest late, us Damzels, all within her fee.

ring in honour and degree: a thousand more which ready bee

Her to adorne, when so she forth doth wend rapt with pleasaunce, wist not what to But those three in the midst doe chiefe on her attend.

XXII

'They are the daughters of sky-ruling Jove, By him begot of faire Eurynome, The Oceans daughter, in this pleasant grove, As he, this way comming from feastfull glee Of Thetis wedding with Eacidee.

In sommers shade him selfe here rested weary: The first of them hight mylde Euphrosyne, Next faire Aglaia, last Thalia merry leane were gone, which way he never Sweete Goddesses all three, which me in mirth

do cherry!

'These three on men all gracious gifts bestow, at mishap, yet seeing him to mourne, teare, that he the truth of all by him

To make them lovely or well-favoured show; As comely carriage, entertainement kynde. Sweete semblaunt, friendly offices that bynde, And all the complements of curtesic:

They teach us how to each degree and kynde We should our selves demeane, to low, to hie, To friends, to foes; which skill men call Civility.

XXIV

'Therefore they alwaies smoothly seeme to smile,

That we likewise should mylde and gentle be; And also naked are, that without guile Or false dissemblaunce all them plaine may see, uappy thou that mayst them freely see! Simple and true, from covert malice free; y, when I them saw, fled they away And eeke them selves so in their daunce they from me?' bore,

That two of them still froward seem'd to bee, But one still towards shew'd her selfe afore; That good should from us goe, then come, in greater store.

XXV

'Such were those Goddesses which ye did see; But that fourth Mayd, which there amidst them traced,

Who can aread what creature mote she bee, Whether a creature, or a goldesse graced With heavenly gifts from heven first enraced? But what so sure she was, she worthy was To be the fourth with those three other placed: Yet was she certes but a countrey lasse; Yet she all other countrey lasses farre did passe:

XXVI

'So farre, as doth the daughter of the day All other lesser lights in light excell; So farre doth she in beautyfull array Above all other lasses beare the bell;

Ne lesse in vertue that beseemes her well Doth she exceeds the rest of all her race For which the Graces, that here wont to dwell, Have for more honor brought her to this place, And graced her so much to be another Grace.

XXVII

Another Grace she well deserves to be, In whom so many Graces gathered are, Excelling much the means of her degree; Divine resemblaunce, beauty soveraine rare, Firme Chastity, that spight ne blemish dare: All which she with such courtesie doth grace, That all her peres cannot with her compare, But quite are dimmed when she is in place : She made me often pipe, and now to pipe apace,

XXVIII

'Sunne of the world, great glory of the sky, That all the earth doest lighten with thy rayes, Great Gloriana, greatest Majesty! Pardon thy shepheard, mongst so many layes As he hath sung of thee in all his dayes, To make one minime of thy poore handmayd, And underneath thy feete to place her prayse; That when thy glory shall be farre displayd
To future age, of her this mention may be made!'

Whether it were to caroll, Keeping their sheepe, or go or to present her with the

XXIX

When thus that shepheard ended had his speach, Sayd Calidore: 'Now sure it yrketh mee,

That to thy blisse I made this luckelesse breach, As now the author of thy bale to be, Tthee: Thus to hereave thy loves deare sight from There chaunst to them a d But, gentle Shepheard, pardon thou my shame, Who rashly sought that which I mote not see, Thus did the courteous Knight excuse his And greedy mouth wide gr frame.

And to recomfort him all comely meanes did

In such discourses they together spent Long time, as fit occasion forth them led; With which the Knight him selfe did much content.

And with delight his greedy fancy fed Both of his words, which he with reason red, And also of the place, whose pleasures rare With such regard his sences ravished, That thence he had no will away to fare, But wisht that with that shepheard he mote dwelling share.

But that envenimd sting, the which of yore His poysnous point deepe fixed in his hart.

Had left, now gan afresh to a And to renue the rigour of h Which to recure no skill of l Mote him availe, but to retu To his wounds worker, that Dinting his brest had bred h Like as the wounded Whale the maine.

XXXII

So, taking leave of that say He backe returned to his ru Where his faire Pastorella To whome, in sort as he at He daily did apply him self All dewfull service, voide o Ne any paines ne perill did By which he might her to And liking in her yet untar

And evermore the shephe What ever thing he did he Did strive to match with s And all his paines did clos Whether it were to caroll, Through which if any grac To him, the Shepheard str did frize.

XXXIV

One day, as they all thre To the greene wood to gat A Tigre forth out of the w That with fell clawes full of Did runne at Pastorell her Whom she beholding, now Gan cry to them aloud to 1

Which Coridon first hear To reskue her; but, when Through cowherd feare be Ne durst abide the daung His life he steemed deare But Calidore soone comm When he the beast saw re His loves deare spoile, in prayde,

He ran at him enraged, ins

He had no weapon but h To serve the vengeaunce

ne ground astonished he fell; re he could recou'r, he did him quell, ing off his head, he it presented e feete of the faire Pastorell; cely yet from former feare exempted, ed times him thankt that had her ith prevented.

xxxvii

at day forth she gan him to affect, more her favour to augment; on for cowherdize reject, pe sheepe, unfit for loves content : e heart scornes base disparagement. ore did not despise him quight, him friendly for further intent, is fellowship he colour might state and love from skill of any wight.

XXXVIII

ne wood her, and so well he wrought able service, and with daily sute, he last unto his will he brought her; so wisely well did prosecute, is love he reapt the timely frute, I long in close felicity, [brute, se, fraught with malice, blinde and es lovers long prosperity bitter storme of foule adversity.

XXXIX

ed one day, when Calidore ing in the woods, (as was his trade) e people, Brigants hight of yore, er usde to live by plough nor spade, a spoile and booty, which they made ir neighbours which did nigh them der. ing of these shepheards did invade, ld their houses, and them selves did

rder. away their flocks; with other much order.

the rest, the which they then did s people captive led away; [lad, hich this lucklesse mayd away was :orella, sorrowfull and sad, wfull, most sad, that ever sight, the spoile of theeves and Brigants

ch so sternely he the monster strooke, Which was the conquest of the gentlest Knight That ever liv'd, and th' onely glory of his might.

With them also was taken Coridon. And carried captive by those theeves away; Who in the covert of the night, that none Mote them descry, nor reskue from their pray, Unto their dwelling did them close convay. Their dwelling in a little Island was, Covered with shrubby woods, in which no Appeard for people in nor out to pas, Nor any footing fynde for overgrowen gras:

XLII

For underneath the ground their way Was made [cover Through hollow caves, that no man mote dis-For the thicke shrubs, which did them alwaies shade

From view of living wight and covered over; But darkenesse dred and daily night did hover Through all the inner parts, wherein they

dwelt; Ne lightned was with window, nor with lover, But with continuall candle-light, which delt A doubtfull sense of things, not so well seene as felt.

HLIX

Hither those Brigants brought their present ward: And kept them with continuall watch and Meaning, so soone as they convenient may For slaves to sell them for no small reward To Merchants, which them kept in bondage hard.

Or sold againe. Now when faire Pastorell Into this place was brought, and kept with gard

Of griesly theeves, she thought her self in hell, Where with such damned fiends she should in darknesse dwell.

But for to tell the dolefull dreriment And pittifull complaints which there she made, Where day and night she nought did but lament

Id old Melibee of all he had, [pray, Her wretched life shut up in deadly shade And waste her goodly beauty, which did fade Like to a flowre that feeles no heate of sunne, Which may her feeble leaves with comfort

glade— And what befell her in that theevish wonne, Will in another Canto better be begonne.

CANTO XI.

The Theeres fall out for Pastorell, Whitest Melibee is slaine: Her Calidore from them redeemss, And bringeth backe agains.

THE joyes of love, if they should ever last Without affliction or disquietnesse That worldly chaunces doe amongst Would be on earth too great a blessednesse, Liker to beaven then mortall wretchednesse: Therefore the winged God, to let men weet That here on earth is no sure happinesse, A thousand sowres hath tempred with one

sweet, meet, To make it seeme more deare and dainty, as is

Like as is now befalne to this faire Mayd, Faire Pastorell, of whom is now my song: Who being now in dreadfull darknesse layd Amongst those theeves, which her in bondage strong

Detaynd, yet Fortune, not with all this wrong Contented, greater mischiefe on her threw, And sorrowes heapt on her in greater throng; That who so heares her heavinesse, would rew And pitty her sad plight, so chang'd from pleasaunt hew.

III

Whylest thus she in these hellish dens remayned, Wrapped in wretched cares and hearts unrest, It so befell, (as Fortune had ordayned) That he which was their Capitaine profest,

And had the chiefe commaund of all the rest, One day, as he did all his prisoners vew, With lustfull eyes beheld that lovely guest, Faire Pastorella, whose sad mournefull hew Like the faire Morning clad in misty fog did shew.

IV

At sight whereof his barbarous heart was fired. And inly burnt with flames most raging whot, That her alone he for his part desired Of all the other pray which they had got, And her in mynde did to him selfe allot,

With looks, with words, w wowerl

And mixed threats among vowed.

But all that ever he could Her constant mynd could Nor draw unto the lure of To graunt him favour or Yet ceast be not to sew, a By which he more account Saying and doing all that Ne day nor night he suffr But her all night did was molest.

At last, when him she so Fearing least he at leng

Unto his lust, and make Sith in his powre she wa She thought it best, for a Some shew of favour, by That she thereby mote e Or at more ease continue A little well is lent that

So from thenceforth, made,

With better tearmes she Which gave him hope, a swade,

That he in time her joya But when she saw through gaine,

That further then she w She found no meanes to A sodaine sickenesse wh And made unfit to serve behest,

By meanes whereof she From that day forth he kyndnesse to her Once to approch to her in showed, [mote; But onely mongst the re And sought her love by all the meanes he Mourning the rigour of) et.

alled.

ng all things meete for remedy; solv'd no remedy to fynde, r cheare to shew in misery, ne would her captive bonds unbynde: nesse was not of the body, but the nde.

those coastes for bondmen there to With starrie beames about her starrie beames about her those coastes for bondmen there to These marchants fixed eyes did so amaze, uch trafficke after gaines to hunt, 1 this Isle, though bare and blunt, e for slaves; where being readie met of these same theeves at the instant unt. ught unto their Captaine, who was set ire patients side with sorrowfull re-

m they shewed, how those marchants n place their bondslaves for to buy; efore prayd that those same captives them for their most commodity and mongst them shared equally. ir request the Captaine much appalled, 1 he not their just demaund deny ed streight the slaves should forth be lled,

ХI

rth the good old Melibo was brought, To make the prises of the rest more deare. ie, which did the sundry prisoners That who so hardie hand on her doth lay, quire for that faire shepherdesse, ith the rest they tooke not long agoe; her forme and feature to expresse, : t' augment her price through praise comlinesse.

n the Captaine in full angry wize

were, that the mayd of whom they But making way for death at large to walke; ake
Who, in the horror of the grie-ly night, owne purchase and his onely prize; ich none had to doe, ne ought partake, mselfe which did that conquest make: And makes huge havocke; whiles the candlethrough sicknesse now so wan and

That nothing meet in merchandise to passe: So shew'd them her, to prove how pale and weake she was.

XIII

The sight of whom, though now decayd and mard. which space that she thus sicke did And eke but hardly seene by candle-light, [wount | Yet, like a Diamond of rich regard, t a sort of merchants, which were With starrie beames about her shining bright,

> delight. A while on her they greedily did gaze, And did her greatly like, and did her greatly praize.

That what through wonder, and what through

At last when all the rest them offred were, And prises to them placed at their pleasure, They all refused in regard of her, Ne ought would buy, how ever prisd with

measure, Withouten her, whose worth above all threa-They did esteeme, and offred store of gold:

But then the Captaine, fraught with more displeasure, Bad them be still; his love should not be sold;

The rest take if they would; he her to him would hold.

Therewith some other of the chiefest theeves I for most advantage, not to be for Boldly him bad such injurie forbeare; For that same mayd, how ever it him greeves, Should with the rest be sold before him theare.

idon with many other moe. | caught; That with great rage he stoutly doth denay; hey before in diverse spoyles had howe. And, fiercely drawing forth his blade, doth sweare

> It dearely shall aby, and death for handsell pay.

XVI

Thus, as they words amongst them multiply, They fall to strokes, the frute of too much talke, And the mad steele about doth fiercely fly, Not sparing wight, ne leaving any balke,

In thousand dreadful shapes doth mongst them stalke,

him to have one silly lasse; [weake, Out quenched leaves no skill nor difference of wight.

XVII

Like a sort of hungry dogs, ymet About some carcase by the common way, Doe fall together, stryving each to get The greatest portion of the greedie pray, All on confused heapes themselves assay, And snatch, and byte, and rend, and tug, and teare :

That who them sees would wonder at their fray, And who sees not would be affrayd to heare; Such was the conflict of those cruell Brigants there.

XVIII

But first of all their captives they doe kill, Least they should joyne against the weaker side,

Or rise against the remnant at their will: Old Melibo is slaine; and him beside His aged wife, with many others wide; But Coridon, escaping craftily, [hide, Creepes forth of dores, whilst darknes him doth And flyes away as fast as he can hye, Ne stayeth leave to take before his friends doe dye.

XIX

But Pastorella, wofull wretched Elfe, Was by the Captaine all this while defended, Who, minding more her safety then himselfe, His target alwayes over her pretended; By means whereof, that mote not be amended, He at the length was slaine and layd on

ground, Yet holding fast twixt both his armes extended Fayre Pastorell, who, with the selfe same wound

Launcht through the arme, fell down with him in drerie swound.

There lay she covered with confused preasse Of carcases, which dying on her fell. [ceasse; Tho, when as he was dead, the fray gan And each to other calling did compell To stay their cruell hands from slaughter fell, Sith they that were the cause of all were gone: Thereto they all attonce agreed well; And, lighting candles new, gan search anone, How many of their friends were slaine, how

many fone,

Their Captaine there they cruelly found kild, And in his armes the dreary dying mayd, Like a sweet Angell twixt two clouds uphild; Her lovely light was dimmed and decayd plaine,

With cloud of death upon her eyes displayd; Ne wight he found of w

Yet did the cloud make

Seeme much more lovely in And twixt the twinckling To sparke out litle beamer gie night.

But when they mov'd the They found that life did y Then all their helpes they To call the soule backe to And wrought so well, wi That they to life recovered Who, sighing sore, as if h Had riven bene and all he With drearie drouping ex aghast.

There she beheld, that s Her father and her friend Her selfe sole left a secon Of those, that, having sa Renew'd her death by tin What now is left her but Wringing berhands, and Ne cared she her wound Albe with all their migh did keepe.

But when they saw her They left her so, in char Of many worst, who wit And cruell rigour her die Scarse yeelding her due And scarsely suffring he That sore her payn'd, by So leave we her in wret And turne we backe to found.

Who when he backe re And saw his shepher quight,

And his love reft away And halfe enraged at th That even his hart, for And his owne flesh he r He chauft, he griev'd And fared like a furious Whose whelpes are ste otherwhere,

Ne wight he found to

nd.

a increast the anguish of his paine: it the woods, but no man could see [heare: it the plaines, but could no tydings s did nought but ecchoes vaine re and:

ies all waste and emptie did appeare; nt the shepheards oft their pypes Whose heavy tydings now I have to tell.

[he found.] First all the captives, which they here had an hundred flocks, there now not one

XXVII

as there he romed up and downe, st one comming towards him to spy, 1'd to be some sorie simple clowne, ged weedes, and lockes upstaring lid from some late daunger fly, [hye, ais feare did follow him behynd: e unto him approched nye, perceive by signes which he did fynd,

ridon it was, the silly shepherds

XXVIII

him running fast, he did not stay him first, but askt where were the astorell?-Who full of fresh dismay, hing forth in teares, was so opprest, no word could speake, but smit his est. > heaven his eyes fast-streming threw:

the knight amaz'd vet did not rest, againe, what ment that rufull hew:

XXIX

:Il-away!' (sayd he, then sighing re) rer I did live this day to see mall day, and was not dead before, saw faire Pastorella dve. at alas!' then Calidore did cry, ould the death dare ever her to quell? I thou, shepheard, read what destiny dyrefull hap from heaven or hell rought this wicked deed: doe feare way, and tell.'

then the Shepheard breathed had a Sith otherwise he could not mend thing past; hyle.

[mence Or if it to revenge he were too weake, began: 'Where shall I then com- Then for to die with her, and his lives threed began: 'Where shall I then comfull tale? or how tho e Brigants vyle, nell rage and dreadfull violence, all our cots, and caried us from hence: faire Pastorell should have bene sold MICE;

Or how those theeves, whilest one sought her to hold, and bold. Fell all at ods, and fought through fury fierce

415

XXXI

'In that same conflict (woe is me!) befell

This fatall chaunce, this dolefull accident,

hent,

Were by them slaine by generall consent: Old Melibe and his good wife withall These eyes saw die, and dearely did lament; But, when the lot to Pastorell did fall,

Their Captaine long withstood, and did her death forstall.

XXXII

' But what could be gainst all them doe alone? It could not boot : needs more she die at last. I onely scapt through great confusions Of cryes and clamors which amongst them past, In dreadfull darknesse dreadfully aghast;

That better were with them to have bene dead, Then here to see all desolate and wast, Despoyled of those joyes and jolly-head. Which with those gentle shepherds here I wont to lead.'

XXXIII

When Calidore these ruefull newes had raught, His hart quite deaded was with anguish great, And all his wits with doole were nigh distraught, That he his face, his head, his brest did beat,

And death it selfe unto himselfe did threat : Oft cursing th' heavens, that so cruell were To her, whose name he often did repeat; And wishing oft that he were present there When she was slaine, or had bene to her succour nere.

XXXIV But after griefe awhile had had his course,

And spent it selfe in mourning, he at last Began to mitigate his swelling sourse, And in his mind with better reason cast How he might save her life, if life did last; Or, if that dead, how he her death might wreake,

to breake.

The Coridon he prayd, sith he well knew The readie way unto that theevish wonne, hants, but was sav'd with strong de- To wend with him, and be his con luct trew Unto the place, to see what should be donne; But he, whose hart through feare was late fordonne,

Would not for ought be drawne to former drede. But by all meanes the daunger knowne did shomme:

Yet Calidore so well him wrought with meed, And faire bespoke with words, that he at last agreed.

XXXVI

So forth they goe together (God before) Both clad in shepheards weeds agreeably, And both with shepheards hookes: Calidore

Had, underneath, him armed privily. Tho, to the place when they approched nye, They chaun t, upon an hill not farre away Some flockes of sheepe and shepheards to espy;

To whom they both agreed to take their way, In hope there newes to learne, how they mote best assay.

XXXVII

The selfe same flocks the which those theeves That Pastorell yet liv'd; b From Melibre and from themselves whyleare; Were dead, right so as Cor

then kept. Right well knew Coridon his owne late sheepe. And seeing them for tender pittle wept:

But when he saw the theeves which did them In dead of night, when all keepe,

XXXVIII

But Calidore recomforting his griefe, Though not his feare, for nought may feare disswade. Him hardly forward drew, whereas the thiefe

Lay sleeping soundly in the bushes shade, Whom Coridon him counseld to invade Now all unwares, and take the spoyle away; But he, that in his mind had closely made

A further purpose, would not so them slay, But gently waking them gave them the time The dores assayled, and () of day.

Tho, sitting downe by them upon the greene, Encountring him with sm. Of sundrie things he purpose gan to faine, That he by them might certaine tydings weene Was almost dead, misdou Of Pastorell, were she alive or slaine:

Mongst which the theeves them questioned againe. [were: XLIV
What mister men, and eke from whence they But when as Calidore water was a whom they aunswer'd, as did appertaine, And gan aloud for Pastore

That they were poure heardg whylere

Had from their maisters fled hyre elswhere.

Whereof right glad they made

To hyre them well if they the For they themselves were esayd, Unwont with heards to v

But to forray the land, or so Thereto they soone agreed. To keepe their flockes for hi For they for better hyre did So there all day they bode, forsooke.

Tho, when as towards dark: Unto their hellish dens th brought;

Where shortly they in great There did they find, that which they did not And all the secrets of their feare. | had reft There did they find, contrai

And certaine of the theeves there by them left, Whereof they both full glac The which, for want of heards, themselves But chiefly Calidore, who possest.

XLII At length, when they occ

[sleepe. After a late forray, and sle His hart gan fayle, albe he saw them all a- Sir Calidore him arm'd as Having of late by diligent Provided him a sword of 1 With which he streight we nest:

But Coridon durst not wit

Ne durst abide behind, for a

XLIII

When to the Cave they fast; But Calidore with huge re With novse whereof the t

Unto the entrance ran; w Encountring him with sm Some uprore were like th did vew.

his voice, although not heard long

n was revived therewithall. trous joy felt in her spirits thrall: that being long in tempest tost, sch houre into deathes mouth to fall, espyes at hand the happie cost, he safety hopes that earst feard to lost.

le hart, that now long season past . joyance felt nor chearefull thought, smacke of comfort new to tast, I heat to nummed senses brought feele that long for death had sought.

hart rejoyced Calidore,
er found; but, like to one distraught of reason, towards her him bore: d times embrast, and kist a thousand

XLVI by this, with noyse of late uprore, nd cry was raysed all about;
a Brigants flocking in great store cave gan preasse, nought having s doen, and entred in a rout : tayning them with courage stout, the formost that came first to hand I all the entry was with bodies mand.

XLVII

n no more could nigh to him approch,
'd his sword, and rested him till day;
ben he spyde upon the earth t' roch. he dead carcases he made his way, hich he found a sword of better

h he forth went into th' open light, the rest for him did readie stay,
assayling him, with all their might
Had reft from Melibæ and from his
He did them all to Coridon restore: on him lay: there gan a dreadfull So drove them all away, and his love with

XLVIII

How many flyes, in whottest sommers day, Do seize upon some beast whose flesh is bare, That all the place with swarmes do overlay, And with their litle stings right felly fare; So many theeves about him swarming are, All which do him assayle on every side, And sore oppresse, ne any him doth spare; But he doth with his raging brond divide Their thickest troups, and round about him

scattreth wide.

Like as a Lion mongst an heard of dere, Disperseth them to catch his choysest pray; So did he fly amongst them here and there, And all that nere him came did hew and slav, Till he had strowd with bodies all the way; That none his daunger daring to abide Fled from his wrath, and did themselves convay

Into their caves, their heads from death to hide, Ne any left that victorie to him envide.

Then, backe returning to his dearest deare, He her gan to recomfort all he might With gladfull speaches and with lovely cheare; And forth her bringing to the joyous light, Whereof she long had lackt the wishfull sight, Deviz'd all goodly meanes from her to drive The sad remembrance of her wretched plight: So her uneath at last he did revive That long had lyen dead, and made again alive.

This doen, into those theevish dens he went,

And thence did all the spoyles and threasures take, Which they from many long had robd and rent, But fortune now the victors meed did make: Of which the best he did his love betake: And also all those flockes, which they before Had reft from Meliboe and from his make.

him bore.

CANTO XIL

Fayre Pasterella by greet hap Her parents understands. Calidore doth the Biatant Beas Subdew, and bynd in bands.

LIKE as a ship, that through the Ocean wyde Directs her sourse unto one certaine cost,.
Is met of many a counter winde and tyde,
With which her winged speed is let and crost,

Yet, making many a borde and many a bay, Still winneth way, ne hath her compasse los Right so it fares with me in this long way, Whose course is often stayd, yet never is astray.

For all that hetherto bath long delayd

restraine.

This gentle knight from sewing his first quest,
Though out of course, yet hath not bene misTo shew the courtesie by him profest [sayd,
Even unto the lowest and the least. But now I come into my course againe, To his atchievement of the Blatant Beast: Who all this while at will did range and raine, Whilst none was him to stop, nor none him to

ш Sir Calidore, when thus he now had raught

Unto the Castle of Belgard her brought, Whereof was Lord the good Sir Bellamoure; Who whylome was, in his youthes freshest flowre, A lustie knight as ever wielded speare, And had endured many a dreadfull stoure. In bloudy battell for a Ladie deare, The fayrest Ladie then of all that living were:

Faire Pastorella from those Brigants powre,

Her name was Claribell; whose father hight The Lord of Many Ilands, farre renound For his great riches and his greater might: He, through the wealth wherein he did abound, This daughter thought in wedlocke to have

Unto the Prince of Picteland, bordering nere; But, closing it again But she, whose sides before with secret wound Bedeaw'd with teare Of love to Bellamoure empierced were, By all meanes shund to match with any forrein fere.

And Bellamour agr With dayly service That of her love he And closely did her Which when her fat In so great rage tha Without compassion Yet did so streightly That neither could стеере.

Nathlesse Sir Bel grace Or secret guifts, so v

Whereof her womb fraught, And in dew time Which she streightw syre Should know therec Delivered to her han She should it cause attyre.

She forth gan lay un The litle babe, to tal Whom whylest she behold, Upon the litle brest, She mote perceive a That like a rose he

The trustie damzell

Into the emptie field

Mote not bewray the

Well she it markt, Yet could not remedi Yet left not quite, bu Behind the bushes, v To weet what mortal

unfold.

th a Shepheard, which there by did e flock upon the playnes around, the infants cry that loud did weepe, he place; where, when he wrapped ınd iond spoyle, he softly it unbound ; ng there that did him pittie sore, it up and in his mantle wound;

unto his honest wife it bore, per owne it nurst (and named) ever-

ig continu'd Claribell a thrall, amour in bands; till that her syre life, and left unto them all: the stormes of fortunes former yre id, and they to freedome did retyre.
th they joy'd in happinesse together,
long in peace and love entyre,

tisquiet or dislike of ether, that Calidore brought Pastorella

ther.

om they goodly well did entertaine; mour knew Calidore right well, for his prowesse, sith they twaine e had fought in field: Als Claribell id tender the faire Pastorell, [long.] r weake and wan through durance r a while together thus did dwell elight, and many joyes among,

Sir Calidore him to advize quest, which he had long forlore,) thinke how he that enterprize, the Faery Queene had long afore I to him, forslacked had so sore; he feared least reprochfull blame dishonour him mote blot therefore; : losse of so much loos and fame. the world thereby should glorifie same.

XIII

resolving to returne in hast ght.

the wretched infants helpe provyde; So taking leave of his faire Pastorell, it loudly cald, and pittifully cryde. Whom to recomfort all the meanes he wrought,

With thanks to Bellamour and Claribell,

He went forth on his quest, and did that him befell.

XIV

But first, ere I doe his adventures tell In this exploite, me needeth to declare What did betide to the faire Pastorell During his absence, left in heavy care Through daily mourning and nightly misfare: Yet did that auncient matrone all she might, To cherish her with all things choice and rare; And her owne handmayd, that Melissa hight, Appointed to attend her dewly day and night.

Who in a morning, when this Maiden faire Was dighting her, having her snowy brest As yet not laced, nor her golden haire Into their comely tresses dewly drest, Chaunst to espy upon her yvory chest The rosic marke, which she remembred well That litle Infant had, which forth she kest, The daughter of her Lady Claribell. The which she bore the whiles in prison she did dwell.

XVI

Which well avizing, streight she gan to cast In her conceiptfull mynd that this faire Mayd Was that same infant, which so long sith past She in the open fields had loosely layd To fortunes spoile, unable it to ayd: So, full of joy, streight forth she ran in hast Unto her mistresse, being halfe dismayd, To tell her how the heavens had her graste Damzell gan to wex more sound and To save her chylde, which in misfortunes mouth was plaste.

XVII

The sober mother seeing such her mood, Yet knowing not what meant that sodaine thro,

Askt her, how mote her words be understood, And what the matter was that mov'd her so?
'My liefe,' (sayd she) 'ye know that long ygo,
Whilest ye in durance dwelt, ye to me gave
A little mayde, the which ye chylded tho; The same againe if now ye list to have,
The same is yonder Lady, whom high God did
save.

at atchievement, he bethought
s love, now perill being past,
edl; whylest he that monstersought And gan to question streight, how she it knew?
the world, and to destruction 'Most certaine markes' (sayd she) 'do me it teach;

For on her brest I with these eyes did view.
The litle purple rose which thereon grew,
Whereof her name ye then to her did give.
Besides, her countenaunce and her likely hew,
Matched with equall years, do surely prieve
That yond same is your daughter sure, which
yet doth live.'

XIX

The matrone stayd no lenger to enquire,
But forth in hast ran to the straunger Mayd;
Whom catching greedily, for great desire
Rent up her brest, and bosome open layd,
In which that rose she plainely saw displayd;
Then, her embracing twixt her armes twaine,
She liong sc. held, and softly weeping sayd;
'And livest thou, my daughter, now againe?
And art thou yet alive, whom dead I long did
faine?'

XX

The further asking her of sundry things, And times comparing with their accidents, She found at last, by very certaine signes And speaking markes of passed monuments, That this young Mayd, whom chance to her presents,

Is her owne daughter, her owne infant deare, Tho, wondring long at those so straunge events,

A thousand times she her embraced nere, With many a joyfull kisse and many a melting teare.

XXI

Who ever is the mother of one chylde, Which having thought long dead she fyndes alive,

Let her by proofe of that which she hath fylde In her owne breast, this mothers joy descrive; For other none such passion can contrive In perfect forme, as this good Lady felt, When she so faire a daughter saw survive, As Pastorella was, that nigh she swelt For passing joy, which did all into pitty melt.

XXII

Thence running forth unto her loved Lord,
She unto him recounted all that fell;
Who, joyning joy with her in one accord,
Acknowledg'd for his owne faire Pastorell.
There leave we them in joy, and let us tell
Of Calidore; who, seeking all this while
That monstrous Beast by finall force to quell,
Through every place with restlesse paine and
toile
Him follow'd by the tract of his outragious spoile,

XXIII

Through all estates be found that he had And some of Tygres, the Which he many massacres had left, [past, And snar at all that ex

And to the Clergy new wi In which such spoils, such

theft
He wrought, that thence al
That endlesse were to tell
Who now no place beside
At length into a Monaste
Where he him found despo

XXIV

Into their cloysters now Through which the Mono and there,

And them pursu'd into the
And searched all their ce
In which what filth and o
Were yrkesome to report;
Nought sparing them, the
teare,

And ransacke all their deni Regarding nought religi

XXV

From thence into the san And robd the Chancell, a threw,

And Altars fouled, and be And th' Images, for all t Did cast to ground, whill rew;

So all confounded and di But, seeing Calidore, aw Knowing his fatall hand But he him fast pursa neare.

XX

Him in a narrow place And fierce assailing fors Sternely he turnd ag strooke

With his sharpe steele, With open mouth, that A full good pecke withi All set with yron teeth That terrifide his foes, a Appearing like the m grim;

XX

And therein were a th Of sundry kindes and s Some were of dogs, night;

And some of cats, that And some of Beares, th And some of Tygres, th And snar at all that ev of them were tongues of mortall men, Forth budded, and in greater number grew. · when.

[stings, ues of Serpents, with three forked out poyson, and gore-bloudy gere, it came within his ravenings; ke licentious words and hatefull nd had alike, of low and hie, [things spared he a whit, nor Kings;

r blotted them with infamie, am with his banefull teeth of injury.

XXIX

idore, thereof no whit afrayd, red him with so impetuous might, outrage of his violence he stayd, sbacke, threatning in vaine to bite, ing forth the poyson of his spight ed all about his bloody jawes: ing up his former feete on hight, t upon him with his ravenous pawes would have rent him with his cruell wes:

XXX

right well aware, his rage to ward s shield atweene; and, therewithall his puissaunce forth, pursu'd so hard, keward he enforced him to fall; ig downs, ere he new helpe could call, id he on him threw, and fast downe

i bullocke, that in bloudy stall ers balefull hand to ground is feld, ly kept downe, till he be throughly said.

XXXI

elly the Beast did rage and rore owne held, and maystred so with ght, an fret and fome out bloudy gore in vaine to rere him selfe upright: the more he strove, the more the uight suppresse, and forcibly subdew, le him almost mad for fell despight: , hee bit, he scratcht, he venim threw, I like a feend right horrible in hew:

the hell-borne Hydra, which they & Alcides whileme overthrew, t he had labourd long in vaine is thousand heads, the which still new

Whilest Calidore him under him downe threw; Mho nathemore his heavy load releast, m amongst were mingled here and But aye, the more he rag'd, the more his

Tho, when the Beast saw he mote nought

powre increast.

availe

him neare.

By force, he gan his hundred tongues apply. and sharpely at him to revile and raile With bitter termes of shamefull infamy; Oft interlacing many a forged lie Whose like he never once did speake, nor heare, Nor ever thought thing so unworthily: Yet did he nought, for all that, him forbeare, But strained him so streightly that he chokt

XXXIV At last, when as he found his force to shrincke

And rage to quaile, he tooke a muzzel strong Of surest yron, made with many a lincke: Therewith he mured up his mouth along, And therein shut up his blasphemous tong, For never more defaming gentle Knight, Or unto lovely Lady doing wrong; And thereunto a great long chaine he tight, With which he drew him forth, even in his own despight.

XXXV

Like as whylome that strong Tirynthian swaine Brought forth with him the dreadfull dog of Against his will fast bound in yron chaine, And, roring horribly, did him compell To see the hatefull sunne, that he might tell To griesly Pluto what on earth was donne, And to the other damned ghosts which dwell

For aye in darkenesse, which day-light doth shonne: So led this Knight his captyve with like conquest wonne.

XXXVI

Yet greatly did the Beast repine at those Straunge bands, whose like till then he never Ne ever any durst till then impose; [bore, And chauffed inly, seeing now no more Him liberty was left aloud to rore: Yet durst he not draw backe, nor once withstand

The proved powre of noble Calidore, But trembled underneath his mighty hand, And like a fearefull dog him followed through the land.

XXXXII

Him through all Facry land be follow'd so, That all the people, where so he did go, Out of their townes did round about him Out of their terminal throng, throng;
To see him leade that Beast in bondage
And seeing it much wondred at the sight:
And all such persons as he earst did wrong
Rejoyced much to see his captive plight,
And much admyr'd the Beast, but more admyr'd
the Knight.

XXXVIII

Thus was this Monster, by the maystring might Of doughty Calidore, supprest and tamed, That never more he mote endammadge wight With his vile tongue, which many had defamed, And many causelesse caused to be blamed. So did be eeke long after this remaine, Untill that, (whether wicked fate so framed Or fault of men,) he broke his yron chaine, And got into the world at liberty agains.

XXXIX

Thenceforth more mischiefe and more scath he wrought To mortall men then he had done before;

Ne ever could, by any, more be brought Into like bands, ne maystred any more:

Albe that, long time The good Sir Peller And after him Sir And all his brethre Yet none of then bend

So now he many againe, And regeth sore in No any is that may He growen is so gr Barking and biting Albe they worthy I Ne spareth he most Ne spareth he the But rends without

Ne may this home Hope to escape his More then my for cleanest From blamefull blot With which some w bite,

And bring into a m That never so deser Therefore do you, And seeke to pleas wise mens th

TWO CANTOS OF

MUTABILITIE:

CH, BOTH FOR FORME AND MATTER, APPEARE TO BE PARCELL OF SOME FOLLOWING BOOKE OF

THE FAERIE QUEENE.

UNDER

THE LEGEND OF CONSTANCIE.

CANTO VI.

Proud Change (not pleasd in mortall things Beneath the Moone to raigne) Pretends as well of Gods as Men To be the Soveraine.

ty, therby doth find, and plainly feele, :ABILITY in them doth play I sports to many mens decay? at to all may better yet appeare, care that whylome I heard say, at first her selfe began to reare I the Gods, and th' empire sought

n them to beare.

, here falleth fittest to unfold ne race and linage ancient, found it registred of old Land mongst records permanent. to weet, a daughter by descent ld Titans that did whylome strive arnes sonne for heavens regiment; vive: rive. of their stemme long after did sur-

HIT

ly of them afterwards obtain'd rer of Jove, and high authority: all rule and principalitie,

To be by her disposed diversly an that sees the ever-whirling wheele. To Gods and men, as she them list divide; e, the which all mortall things doth And drad Bellona, that doth sound on hie Warres and allarums unto Nations wide, That makes both heaven and earth to tremble at her pride.

So likewise did this Titanesse aspire Rule and dominion to her selfe to gaine; That as a Goddesse men might her admire, And heavenly honors yield, as to them twaine: And first, on earth she sought it to obtaine; Where shee such proofe and sad examples shewed Of her great power, to many ones great paine, That not men onely (whom she soone subdewed) But eke all other creatures her bad dooings

For she the face of earthly things so changed, ough high Jove of kingdome did That all which Nature had establisht first In good estate, and in meet order ranged, She did pervert, and all their statutes burst: And all the worlds faire frame (which none

rewed.

yet durst
()f Gods or men to alter or misguide) She alter'd quite; and made them all accurst That God had blest, and did at first provide In that still happy state for ever to abide.

And now, when all the earth she thus had Her selfe of

brought To her behest, and thralled to her might,

She gan to cast in her ambitious thought T' attempt the empire of the heavens hight,

And Jove himselfe to shoulder from his right. And first, she past the region of the ayre

And of the fire, whose substance thin and slight But with ste Made no resistance, ne could her contraire. But ready passage to her pleasure did prepaire.

VIII Thence to the Circle of the Moone she clambe,

Where Cynthia raignes in everlasting glory, To whose bright shining palace straight she came, All fairely deckt with heavens goodly storie;

All largely deckt with heavens goodly solds.

Whose side gates (by which there sate an hory Old aged Sire, with hower-glasse in hand, Hight Time.) she entred, were he liefe or sory; Ne staide till she the highest stage had scand, Where Cynthia did sit, that never still did Whereat the

stand.

Her sitting on an Ivory throne shee found, Drawne of two steeds, th' one black, the other white. Environd with tenne thousand starres around

That duly her attended day and night; And by her side there ran her Page, that hight Vesper, whom we the Evening-starre intend; That with his Torche, still twinkling like Of all that che

twylight, wend, And eke the

Of her faire li condiga

But she, tha By highest Jo Nights burnir Ne yielded ou cheare, Bending her t

And, boldly b Bade her atto Or at her peri wrack.

Yet nathemo But boldly pr blazed,

And eke the stand, All beeing wi And on her u

still ga

despite.

vise.

ng at his gates full earnestly, him aloud with all their might hat meant that suddaine lacke of of the Gods, when this he heard, led much at their so strange affright, east Typhon were againe uprear'd, nis old foes that once him sorely

XVI

the some of Mais forth he sent he Circle of the Moone, to knowe of this so strange astonishment, he did her wonted course forslowe; any were on earth belowe ith charmes or Magick ber molest, sche, and downe to hell to throwe; heaven it were, then to arrest r, and him bring before his presence

TVII

1-foot God so fast his plumes did Arced, ye sonnes of God, as best as ye can dehe came where-as the Titanesse ng with faire Cynthia for her seat; strange sight and haughty hardid much, and feared her no lesse: feare aside to doe his charge, bade her (with bold stedfastnesse) polest the Moone to walke at large, fore high Jove her dooings to dis-XVIII

-with-all he on her shoulder laid wreathed Mace, whose awfull power both Gods and hellish flends affraid: he Titanesse did sternly lower, y answer'd, that in evill hower is Jove such message to her brought, leave faire Cynthia's silver hower; is Jove and him esteemed nought, nen Cynthia's selfe; but all their doms sought.

XIX

ens Herald staid not to reply, way, his doings to relate ord; who now, in th' highest sky, 1 in his principall Estate, he Gods about him congregate: when Hermes had his message told, n all exceedingly amate, ; who, changing nought his count-loe bold, [unfold; At sight of her they suddaine all arose them at length these speeches wire In great amaze, ne wist what way to choose

YY

mee awhile, yee heavenly 'Harken to Powers! Ye may remember since th' Earths cursed seed Sought to assaile the heavens eternall towers,

And to us all exceeding feare did breed. But, how we then defeated all their deed Yee all do knowe, and them destroyed quite; Yet not so quite, but that there did succeed An off-spring of their bloud, which did alite Upon the fruitfull earth, which doth us yet

XXI

'Of that bad seed is this bold woman bred, That now with bold presumption doth aspire To thrust faire Phæbe from her silver bed And eke our selves from heavens high Empire,

If that her might were match to her desire. Wherefore it now behoves us to advise What way is best to drive her to retire, Whether by open force, or counsell wise:

XXII

So having said, he ceast; and with his brow (His black eye-brow, whose doomefull dreaded is wont to wield the world unto his vow, [beck And even the highest Powers of heaven to check) Made signe to them in their degrees to speake, Who straight gan cast their counsell grave and wise. [nought did reck

and wise. [nought did reck
Mean-while th' Earths daughter, thogh she Of Hermes message, yet gan now advise What course were best to take in this hot bold emprize.

Estsoones she thus resolv'd; that whil'st the (After returne of Hermes Embassie) [Gods Were troubled, and amongst themselves at Before they could new counsels re-allie, ods, To set upon them in that extasie, [lend. To set upon them in that extasie, And take what fortune, time, and place would So forth she rose, and through the purest sky To Joves high Palace straight cast to ascend, To prosecute her plot. Good on-set boads

XXIV

good end.

Shee there arriving boldly in did pass; Where all the Gods she found in counsell close,

But Jove, all fearlesse, forc't them to aby; And in his soveraine throne gan straight dispose Himselfe, more full of grace and Majestie, That mote encheare his friends, and foes mote terrifie.

XXV That when the haughty Titanesse beheld,

All were she fraught with pride and impudence, Yet with the sight thereof was almost queld; And, inly quaking, seem'd as reft of sense

And voyd of speech in that drad audience, Until that Jove himselfe her selfe bespake:
'Speake, thou fraile woman, speake with confidence; [now make?

XXVI

She, halfe confused with his great commaund, Yet gathering spirit of her natures pride, Him boldly answer'd thus to his demaund: 'I am a daughter, by the mothers side,

Of her that is Grand-mother magnifide Of all the Gods, great Earth, great Chaos
But by the fathers, (be it not envide) [child; In which faire beames of beat I greater am in bloud (whereon I build)
Then all the Gods, though wrongfully from beater and it?

Such sway doth beauty ever

heaven exil'd.

IIVXX

'For Titan (as ye all acknowledge must) Was Saturnes elder brother by birth-right, Both sonnes of Uranus; but by unjust slight, And guilefull meanes, through Corybantes The younger thrust the elder from his right: Since which thou, Jove, injuriously hast held The Heavens rule from Titans sonnes by

might, And them to hellish dungeons downe hast feld.

XXVIII

Whil'st she thus spake, the Gods, that gave To her bold words, and marked well her grace, Mongst wretched men (d (Beeing of stature tall as any there (Beeing of stature tall as any there Of all the Gods, and beautifull of face

As any of the Goddesses in place,) Stood all astonied; like a sort of steeres, Mongst whom some beast of strange and for-raine race [peeres: 'But wote thou this, thou

Unwares is chaunc't, far straying from his That not the worth of any So did their ghastly gaze bewray their hidden May challenge ought in He feares.

TTIT

Till, having paux'd awhile, spake: Will never mortall thoughts

In this bold sort to Heaven ch And touch celestiall seats wit I would have thought that Or Typhons fall, or proud Ixi Or great Prometheus tasting Would have suffix'd the rest

But now this off-scum of the 'Speake, thou fraile woman, speake with confidence; [now make?] Dare to renew the like bold e
Whence art thou, and what doost thou here
What idle errand hast thou earths mansion to
forsake?'
Should handle as the rest of And thunder-drive to hell?'

And warn'd all men by their

fraine.

shooke His Nectar-deawed locks, wit And all the world beneath fo And eft his burning levin-b tooke.

(Such sway doth beauty ever He staid his hand; and, he He thus againe in milder wi But ah! if Gods should vfere,

Then shortly should the pro Be rooted out, if Jove shoul can.

'But thee, faire Titans chi Through some vaine errou light. Witnesse, ye Heavens, the truth of all that I To see that mortall eyes ha have teld!' Or through ensample of thy

Bellona, whose great glory Since thou hast seene her c lowe, Mongst wretched men

And sure thy worth no lea seem to showe.

Much lesse the Title of old

by conquest, of our soveraine might, eternal doome of Fates decree, rce ee.

XXXIV

erle; ke by grace and goodnesse to obtaine ace, from which by folly Titan fell:
o thou maist perhaps, if so thou faine we thy gracious Lord and Soveraine. ng said, she thus to him replide: Saturnes sonne, to seeke by proffers aine hopes t' allure me to thy side. etray my Right before I have it tride.

xxxv

hee, O Jove! no equall Judge I deeme lesert, or of my dewfull Right; thine owne behalfe maist partiall sceme: the highest him, that is behight of Gods and men by equal might, the God of Nature, I appeale. t Jove wexed wroth, and in his spright r grudge, yet did it well conceale; de Dan Phœbus scribe her Appellation

XXXVI

nes the time and place appointed were, all, both heavenly Powers and earthly rights, reat Natures presence should appeare, Il of their Titles and best Rights: to weet, upon the highest hights -hill (Who knowes not Arlo-hill?) the highest head (in all mens sights) old father Mole, whom Shepheards uill ſskill. ned hath with hymnes fit for a rurall

rere it not ill fitting for this file of hilles and woods mongst warres and Inights abate the sternenesse of my stile, these sterne stounds to mingle soft elights; I how Arlo, through Dianaes spights, of old the best and fairest Hill is in all this holy Islands hights)

XXXVIII

Whylome when IRELAND florished in fame onne the Empire of the Heavens bright; Of wealths and goodnesse, far above the rest to our selves we hold, and to whom (If all that beare the British Islands name, The gods then us'd (for pleasure and for rest) orthy deeme partakers of our blisse to Oft to resort there-to, when seem'd them best, But none of all there-in more pleasure found Then Cynthia, that is soveraine Queene profest cease thy idle claime, thou foolish Of woods and forrests which therein abound. Sprinkled with wholsom waters more then most on ground:

XXXIX

But mongst them all, as fittest for her game, Eyther for chace of beasts with hound or boawe, Or for to shrowde in shade from Phobus flame, Or bathe in fountaines that do freshly flowe Or from high hilles or from the dales belowe, She chose this Arlo; where she did resort With all her Nymphes enranged on a rowe, With whom the woody Gods did oft consort, For with the Nymphes the Satyres love to play and sport.

Amongst the which there was a Nymph that Molanna; daughter of old Father Mole, [hight And sister unto Mulla faire and bright, Unto whose bed false Bregog whylome stole, That Shepheard Colin dearely did condole, [be: And made her lucklesse loves well knowne to But this Molanna, were she not so shole, Were no lesse faire and beautifull then shee: Yet, as she is, a fayrer flood may no man see.

For, first, she springs out of two marble Rocks, On which a grove of Oakes high-mounted growes

That as a girlond seemes to deck the locks Of som faire Bride, brought forth with pom-

pous showes
Out of her bowre, that many flowers strowes:
So through the flowry Dales she tumbling downe

Through many woods and shady coverts flowes, (That on each side her silver channell crowne)
Till to the Plaine she come, whose Valleyes she doth drowne.

XLII

In her sweet streames Diana used oft (After her sweaty chace and toylesome play) To bathe her selfe; and, after, on the soft And downy grasse her dainty limbes to lay In covert shade, where none behold her may; For much she hated sight of living eye. Foolish god Faunus, though full many a day He saw her clad, yet longed foolishly [vity while, O Clio! lend Calliope thy quill. To see her naked mongst her Nymphes in pri

XLIII

No way he found to compasse his desire, But to corrupt Molanna, this her maid, Her to discover for some secret hire: So her with flattering words he first assaid; And after, pleasing gifts for her purvaid, Queene-apples, and red Cherries from the tre With which he her allured, and betrayd To tell what time he might her Lady see When she her selfe did bathe, that he might secret bee.

XLIV

There-to he promist, if shee would him [better : With this small boone, to quit her with a To weet, that where-as shee had out of measure Long lov'd the Fanchin, who by nought did set her.

That he would undertake for this to get her To be his Love, and of him liked well: Besides all which, he vow'd to be her debter For many moe good turnes then he would tell, The least of which this little pleasure should excell.

The simple mayd did yield to him anone; And eft him placed where he close might view That never any saw, save onely one, Who, for his hire to so foole-hardy dew, Was of his hounds devour'd in Hunters hew. Tho, as her manner was on sunny day Diana, with her Nymphes about her, drew To this sweet spring; where, doffing her array, She bath'd her lovely limbes, for Jove a likely pray.

There Faunus saw that pleased much his eye, And made his hart to tickle in his brest, That, for great joy of some-what he did spy, He could him not containe in silent rest; But, breaking forth in laughter, loud profest His foolish thought: A foolish Faune indeed, That couldst not hold thy selfe so hidden blest, But wouldest needs thine owne conceit areed! Babblers unworthy been of so divine a meed,

XLVII

The Goddesse, all abashed with that noise, In haste forth started from the guilty brooke; And, running straight where-as she heard his But gan examine him in stra

Enclos'd the bush about, and there him tooke, Like darred Larke, not daring up to looke On her whose sight before so much he sought, Thence forth they drew him by the hornes, and Then all attonce their hand shooke

Nigh all to poeces, that they And then into the open lig brought.

XLVIII

Like as an huswife, that w Thinks of her Dairy to mak Finding where-as some wick That breakes into her Dayr draine Her creaming pannes, and Hath, in some snare or gin

Entrapped him, and caught thinkes what punis assign'd, And thousand deathes devis full mind.

So did Diana and her mayi Use silly Faunus, now within They mocke and scorne his miscall;

Some by the nose him plu And by his goatish beard so Yet he (poore soule!) with beare ;

For nought against their wil Ne ought he said, what ever But, hanging downe his hea appeare.

At length, when they had fill, They gan to cast what pena-

Some would have gelt him would spill

The Wood-gods breed, which Others would through the riv And ducked deepe; but that light:

But most agreed, and did thi Him in Deares skin to clad; To hunt him with their hour how hee might.

But Cynthia's selfe, more an Thought not enough to puni And of her shame to make a Which of her Nymphes, or o Him thither brought, and he He, much affeard, to her con That 'twas Molanna which h laid.

(according as they had decreed) Deeres-skin they covered, and then Thence-forth abandond her delicious brooke, heir hounds that after him did speed;

nore speedy, from them fled more So much delight to bathe her limbes she tooke: Deere, so sore him dread aghast. r follow'd all with shrill out-cry,

as they the heavens would have st; the woods and dales, where he did againe, and loud re-eccho to the skie.

LHI him follow'd till they weary were; k returning to Molann' againe, commaund ment of Diana, there m'd with stones. Yet Faunus (for paine) oved Fanchin did obtaine he would receive unto his bed: er waves passe through a pleasant ine, the Fanchin she her selfe do wed 1 combin'd) themselves in one faire ar spred.

Nath'lesse Diana, full of indignation,

In whose sweet streame, before that bad occasion,

Ne onely her, but also quite forsooke All those faire forrests about Arlo hid ; And all that Mountaine, which doth over-looke The richest champain that may else be rid; And the faire Shure, in which are thousand Salmons bred.

I.V

Them all, and all that she so deare did way, Thence-forth she left; and, parting from the place, There-on an heavy haplesse curse did lay; To weet, that Wolves, where she was wont to space, Should harbour'd be and all those Woods deface. And Thieves should rob and spoile that Coast around: [Chase Since which, those Woods, and all that goodly Doth to this day with Wolves and Thieves a-

Which too-too true that lands in-dwellers

since have found.

CANTO VII.

Pealing from Jove to Nature's bar, Bold Alteration pleades arge Evidence : but Nature soone Her righteous Doome areads.

bound:

knowne?

ither doost thou now, thou greater bring, raile spirit, (that dooth oft refuse nigh flight, unfit for her weake wing) oft, to tell of heavens King graine Sire) his fortunate successe; ry in bigger notes to sing obtain'd against that Titanesse, of heavens Empire sought to dissesse?

п

I needs must follow thy behest, ny weaker wit with skill inspire, is turne; and in my feeble brest med minds inflameth with desire

Of heavenly things: for who, but thou alone That art yborne of heaven and heavenly Sire these woods and pleasing forrests Can tell things doen in heaven so long ygone, So farre past memory of man that may be

TIT

Now, at the time that was before agreed, The gods assembled all on Arlo Hill; As well those that are sprung of heavenly seed, As those that all the other world do fill And rule both sea and land unto their will: Onely th' infernall Powers might not appeare; As well for horror of their count naunce ill, As for th' unruly fiends which they

feare; Pluto and Proserpina were present

ıv And thither also came all other creatures. What-ever life or motion do retaine, w nate-ever me or motion do rectains, According to their sundry kinds of features, That Arlo scarsly could them all contains, So full they filled every hill and Plaine; And had not Natures Sergeant (that is Order) Them well disposed by his busic paine, And raunged farre abroad in every border, They would have caused much confusion and disorder.

Then forth issewed (great goldesse) great Had in his Plant of mace used Which who will read set forth With goodly port and gracious Majesty, Being far greater and more tall of stature Then any of the gods or Powers on hie: Yet certes by her face and physnomy,

Whether she man or woman inly were, That could not any creature well descry; For with a veile, that wimpled every where, Her head and face was hid that mote to none

appeare.

That, some do say, was so by skill devized, To hide the terror of her uncouth hew From mortall eyes that should be sore agrized: For that her face did like a Lion shew That eye of wight could not indure to view: But others tell that it so beautious was, And round about such beames of splendor Did deck himselfe in freshest threw.

That it the Sunne a thousand times did pass, Ne could be seene but like an image in a glass.

VII

That well may seemen true; for well I And made him change his graweene.

That this same day when she on Arlo sat, Her garment was so bright and wondrous

sheene That my fraile wit cannot devize to what It to compare, nor finde like stuffe to that: As those three sacred Saints, though else most wise.

Yet on mount Thabor quite their wits forgat, When they their glorious Lord in strange disguise their eyes.

Transfigur'd sawe; his garments so did daze That all the gods were ravisl.

Of his celestiall song, and M

In a fayre Plaine upon an equall Hill She placed was in a pavilion; Not such as Craftes-men by their idle skill Are wont for Princes states to fashion; But th' Earth herselfe, of her owne motion, Out of her fruitfull bosome made to growe

Most dainty trees, that, shooting Did seeme to bow their bloom lowe

For homage unto her, and like showe.

So hard it is for any living wit All her array and vestiments to All her array and vestiments to That old Dan Geffrey (in whose The pure well head of Poesie di In his Foules parley durst not v But it transferd to Alane, who Had in his Plaint of kinde desc Go seck he out that Alane wh sought.

And all the earth far underne Was dight with flowers that v Out of the ground, and sent for Tenne thousand mores of sundi That might delight the smell, or The which the Nymphes from thereby

Had gathered, they at her foo That richer seem'd then any t That Princes bowres adorn imagery.

And Mole himselfe, to honou And his high head, that seem With hardned frosts of former He with an Oaken girlond no As if the love of some new N Had in him kindled youthful Ah, gentle Mole! such joyan beseene.

Was never so great joyance That all the gods whylome a On Hæmus hill in their divid To celebrate the solemne brie Twixt Peleus and Dame The Where Phœbus selfe, that go They say, did sing the spo cleere,

might.

IIIZ

This great Grandmother of Great Nature, ever young, y Still mooving, yet unmoved Unseene of any, yet of all be Thus sitting in her throne, a came dame Mutability;

O greatest Goddesse, onely great! le suppliant loe! I lowely fly, or Right, which I of thee entreat, it to all dost deale indifferently, all Wrong and tortious Injurie, y of thy creatures do to other ig them with power unequally,) em all thou art the equal mother, test each to each, as brother unto ther.

XV

therefore of this same Jove I plaine, s fellow gods that faine to be, lenge to themselves the whole worlds the greatest part is due to me, en it selfe by heritage in Fee: n and earth I both alike do deeme, en and earth are both alike to thee. no more then men thou doest esteeme; the gods to thee, as men to gods, do

XVI

at right | rainty, is do claime the worlds whole soveis onely dew unto thy might to themselves ambitiously: gods owne principality, ve usurpes unjustly, that to be ge Jove's selfe cannot denie, great Grandsire Titan unto mee y dew descent; as is well knowen to

XVII

uger Jove, and all his gods beside, se the worlds most regiment; lease it into parts divide, parts inholders to convent, our eyes appeare incontinent. , the Earth (great mother of us all) seemes unmov'd and permanent, Mutabilitie not thrall, [rall: chang'd in part, and ecke in gene-

xvIII

that from her springs, and is ybredde, faire it flourish for a time e soone decay; and, being dead, againe unto their earthly slime :

Yet, out of their decay and mortall crime, g lowe before her presence feld k obsysance and humilitie, her plaintif Plea with words to plifie:

We daily see new creatures to arize, And of their Winter spring another Prime, the plaintif Plea with words to plifie:

Unlike in forme, and chang'd by strange displifie:

guise:

[lesse wise, [lesse wise. So turne they still about, and change in rest-

'As for her tenants, that is, man and beasts, The beasts we daily see massacred dy As thralls and vassals unto mens beheasts; And men themselves do change continually, From youth to eld, from wealth to poverty From good to bad, from bad to worst of all: Ne doe their bodies only flit and fly, But ceke their minds (which they immortall call) sions fall. Still change and vary thoughts, as new occa-

'Ne is the water in more constant case Whether those same on high, or these belowe; Ocean moveth still from place to For th' place.

And every River still doth ebbe and flowe; Ne any Lake, that seems most still and slowe, Ne Poole so small, that can his smoothnesse

When any winde doth under heaven blowe; With which the clouds are also tost and roll'd. reigh, O soveraigne goddesse! by Now like great Hills, and streight like aluces them unfold.

XXI

'So likewise are all watry living wights Still tost and turned with continual change, Never abiding in their stedfast plights: The fish, still floting, doe at random range, And never rest, but evermore exchange Their dwelling places, as the streames them carrie:

Ne have the watry foules a certaine grange Wherein to rest, ne in one stead do tarry; But flitting still doe flie, and still their places vary.

XXII

'Next is the Ayre; which who fecles not by

(For of all sense it is the middle meane) To flit still, and with subtill influence Of his thin spirit all creatures to maintaine In state of life? O weake life! that does On thing so tickle as th' unsteady ayre, [leane Which every howre is chang'd and altred cleane

With every blast that bloweth, fowle or faire: The faire doth it prolong; the fowle doth it impaire.

XXIII

'Therein the changes infinite beholde, Which to her creatures every minute chaunce; Now boyling hot, streight friezing deadly cold; Now faire sun-shine, that makes all skip and daunce ; tenance Streight bitter stormes, and balefull coun-That makes them all to shiver and to shake:

Rayne, haile, and snowe do pay them sad penance, [quake)
And dreadfull thunder-claps (that make them
With flames and flashing lights that thousand

XXIV

changes make,

'Last is the fire; which, though it live for And on his head (as fit for Ne can be quenched quite, yet every day [ever, A guilt engraven morion he We see his parts, so soone as they do sever, To lose their heat and shortly to decay; So makes himself his owne consuming pray: Ne any living creatures doth he breed, But all that are of others bredd doth slay; And with their death his cruell life dooth feed: Nought leaving but their barren ashes without That was unlyned all, to be secie.

TYV

'Thus all these fower (the which the groundwork bee Of all the world and of all living wights) To thousand sorts of Change we subject see:

Yet are they chang'd (by other wondrous slights) Into themselves, and lose their native mights; The Fire to Ayre, and th' Ayre to Water

sheere, And Water into Earth; yet Water fights With Fire, and Ayre with Earth, approaching neere:

Yet all are in one body, and as one appeare.

XXVI

'So in them all raignes Mutabilitie; How-ever these, that Gods themselves do call, Of them do claime the rule and soverainty; As Vesta, of the fire æthereall; Vulcan, of this with us so usuall; Ops, of the earth; and Juno, of the avre; Neptune, of seas; and Nymphes, of Rivers all: For all those Rivers to me subject are, And all the rest, which they usurp, be all my share.

XXVII

'Which to approven true, as I have told, Vouchsafe, O Goddesse! to thy presence call The rest which doe the world in being hold; As times and seasons of the yeare that fall:

Of all the which des Or judge thyselfe, by verdit Whether to me they are no Nature did yeeld thereto; a Bade Order call them all be

So forth issew'd the Season First, lusty Spring, all d flowre That freshly budded and

bowres That sweetly sung to call fo And in his hand a javelin h

(In which a thousand bire

Then came the jolly Somu In a thin silken cassock col And on his head a girlond v He wore, from which, as he The sweat did drop; and in A boawe and shaftes, as he Had hunted late the Libbar And now would bathe his heated sore,

XXX

Then came the Autumne s As though he joyed in his p Laden with fruits that mad glad That he had banisht hunger Had by the belly oft him pi

Upon his head a wreath, the With cars of corne of every And in his hand a sickle he To reape the ripened frui earth had yold.

XXXI

Lastly, came Winter cloat Chattering his teeth for c chill; Whil'st on his hoary bear And the dull drops, that

bill As from a limbeck did ador In his right hand a tipped With which his feeble steps For he was faint with cold That scarse his loosed limb weld.

XXXII

srching softly, thus in order went; them the Monthes all riding came. dy March, with brows full sternly I strongly, rode upon a Ram, [bent which over Hellespontus swam; hand a spade he also hent, ag all sorts of seeds ysame, the earth he strowed as he went, ier wombe with fruitfull hope of rishment.

XXXIII

se fresh Aprill, full of lustyhed, m as a Kid whose horne new buds: ill he rode, the same which led ting through th' Argolick fluds: were gilden all with golden studs, shed with garlonds goodly dight fairest flowres and fresheat buds earth brings forth; and wet he n'd in sight loves delight. es, through which he waded for his

XXXIV

ne faire May, the fayrest mayd on with dainties of her seasons pryde, ing flowres out of her lap around : brethrens shoulders she did ride, es of Leda; which on eyther side her like to their soveraigne Queene: · all creatures laught when her they and daunc't as they had ravisht beene! d selfe about her fluttred all in me.

XXXV

: her came jolly June, arrayd ne leaves, as he a Player were; time he wrought as well as playd, his plough-yrons mote right well ab he rode, that him did beare neir force contrary to their face; angracious crew which faines demu-

grace.

ne hot July boyling like to fire, is garments he had cast away. ron raging yet with ire rode, and made him to obay : beast that whylome did forray san forrest, till th' Amphytrionide and with his hide did him array.

Behinde his back a sithe, and by his side Under his belt he bore a sickle circling wide.

The sixt was August, being rich arrayd In garment all of gold downe to the ground; Yet rode he not, but led a lovely Mayd Forth by the lilly hand, the which was cround With eares of corne, and full her hand was found:

That was the righteous Virgin, which of old Liv'd here on earth, and plenty made abound; But after Wrong was lov'd, and Justice solde, She left th' unrighteous world, and was to heaven extold.

XXXVIII

Next him September marched, eeke on foote, Yet was he heavy laden with the spoyle Of harvests riches, which he made his boot. And him enricht with bounty of the soyle: In his one hand, as fit for harvests toyle, He held a knife-hook; and in th' other hand A paire of waights, with which he did assoyle Both more and lesse, where it in doubt did stand. And equall gave to each as Justice duly scann'd.

XXXIX

Then came October full of merry glee; For yet his noule was totty of the must, Which he was treading in the wine-fats see, And of the joyous oyle, whose gentle gust Made him so frollick and so full of lust: Upon a dreadfull Scorpion he did ride, The same which by Dianaes doom unjust Slew great Orion; and ceke by his side [tyde. He had his ploughing-share and coulter ready

Next was November; he full grosse and fat As fed with lard, and that right well might seeme;

For he had been a fatting hogs of late, [steem, That yet his browes with sweat did reck and ked crawling steps an uncouth pase, And yet the season was full sharp and bree ward yode, as Bargemen wont to In planting eeke he took no small delight. And yet the season was full sharp and breem: Whereon he rode not easie was to deeme; For it a dreadfull Centaure was in sight, The seed of Saturne and faire Nais, Chiron hight.

And after him came next the chill December: Yet he, through merry feasting which he made And great bonfires, did not the cold remember; His Saviour's birth his mind so much did glad. Upon a shaggy-bearded Goat he rode, The same wherewith Dan Jove in tender yeares, They say, was nourisht by th' Idman mayd;

ш

orre Marcha latta mai incremen M (Y'm for these there was the Day To a

Richard agretion with with simal page. W's of Sight and reversed for microscot lace is then we got in With a Marke Today, and seld in Send & Reck. (b) and a product the mount and arms and little: does and immense manual shout To whom thus Muc

Which we see me b But I my did have mon his empress higher that grady has encompass all with bear MENI Ye may attribute to And say, they by yo Then came the Howres, faire daughters of high But what we see no And timely Night: the which were all endewed Moved by your mi

Mord by your mi Yet what if I can pi Yet what if I can pi Yet what if I can pi I can lly mighty Jova; who did them porters make (And first, concer if heavens gate (whence all the gods issued) Even you, faire C: make Which they did daily watch, and nightly watch turnes, no ever did their charge for Joves dearest darli lly avent turnes, no ever did their charge for

And after all came life, and lastly Death;
Then is she morta
Resides, her face i
We changed see i anh ". MHHM

Then is she morts

TEST! sgar Jers: '

ng i of Linns

But who w

that vert

3

e them sil. I

e his season?

ж?

· .



VII. THE FAERIE OUEENE.

rnd, now round, now bright, now browne Onely the starry skie doth still remaine: 'as changefull as the Moone' men use 0 58V.

Mercury; who though he lesse appeare ige his hew, and alwayes seeme as one, his course doth alter every yeare, of late far out of order gone. is eeke, that goodly Paragone, ismay.

Mars, that valiant man, is changed ometimes so far runnes out of square, his way doth seem quite to have lost, ane without his usuall spheere to fare; en these Star-gazers stonisht are thereof, and damne their lying bookes: rise grim Sir Saturne oft doth spare ne aspect, and calme his crabbed lookes. y turning cranks these have, so many rookes.

on, Dan Jove, that only constant are, ig of all the rest, as ye doe clame, not subject eeke to this misfare? t me aske you this withouten blame; rere ye borne? Some say in Crete by ume a Thebes, and others other-where; erescever they comment the same, consent that ye begotten were poearc.

the kingdome of the sky yee make Il and unchangeable to be: that power and vertue which we spake, here worke, doth many changes take, ir owne natures change; for each of tue have or this or that to make, t and changed from his nature trew,

s opposition or obliquid view.

s, the sundry motions of your Spheares, wayes and fashions as clerkes faine, the same but alteration plaine?

Yet do the Starres and Signes therein still move,

And even itselfe is mov'd, as wizards saine: But all that moveth doth mutation love; Therefore both you and them to me I subject

LVI

'Then, since within this wide great Universe Nothing doth firme and permanent appeare, faire all night, yet is she darke all day:

But all things tost and turned by transverse,

cebus selfe, who lightsome is alone,

soft eclipsed by the way,

a the darkned world with terror and

Now judge then, (O thou greatest goddesse trew)

According as thy selfe doest see and heare. And unto me addoom that is my dew; That is, the rule of all, all being rul'd by you."

So having ended, silence long ensewed: Ne Nature to or fro spake for a space, But with firme eyes affixt the ground still viewed.

Meane-while all creatures, looking in her face, Expecting th' end of this so doubtfull case. Did hang in long suspence what would ensew, To whether side should fall the soveraine place:

At length she, looking up with chearefull view, The silence brake, and gave her doome in speeches few.

LVIII

'I well consider all that ye have said, And find that all things stedfastnesse do hate And changed be; yet, being rightly wayd, They are not changed from their first estate; ne here in this world; ne other can But by their change their being do dilute, And turning to themselves at length againe, Do worke their owne perfection so by fate: are ye mortall borne, and thrall to me Then over them Change doth not rule and raigne.

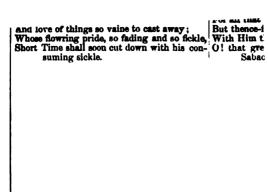
But they raigne over Change, and do their states maintaine.

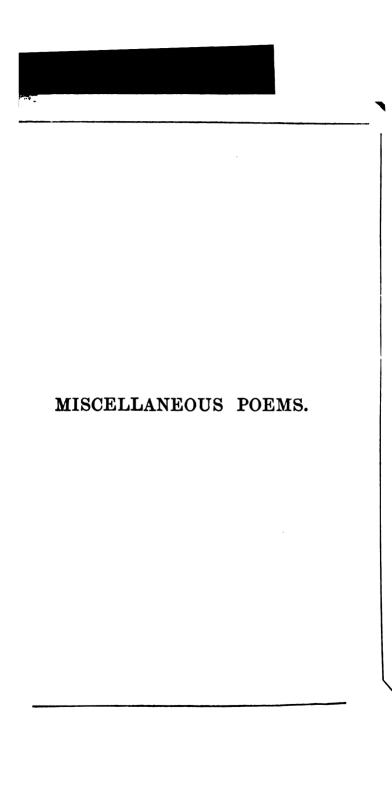
LIX

'Cease therefore, daughter, further to aspire, And thee content thus to be rul'd by mee, For thy decay thou seekst by thy desire; But time shall come that all shall changed bee, And from thenceforth none no more change shal sec.'
So was the Titanesse put downe and whist,

And Jove confirm'd in his imperiall see. short space, and some in longer Then was that whole assembly quite dismist, And Natur's selfe did vanish, whither no man wist.

ABS







THE

SHEPHEARDES CALENDER:

CONTEYNING TWELVE ÆGLOGUES,

PROPORTIONABLE

TO THE TWELVE MONETHES.

ENTITLED

To the noble and vertuous Gentleman, most worthy of all titles both of learning and chevalrie,

MAISTER PHILIP SIDNEY.

TO HIS BOOKE.

Goe, little books! thy selfe present, As child whose parent is unhant, To him that is the president Of Noblesse and of chevalree: And if that Envis barks at thee, As sure it will, for succoure flee Under the shadow of his wing; And asked who thee forth did bring, A shepheards scaine, saye, did thee sing All as his straying flocke he fedde: And, when his honor has thee redde, Crave pardon for my hardyhedde. But, if that any aske thy name, Say, thou wert base-begot with blame; For-thy thereof thou takest shame. And, when thou art past jeopardee, Come tell me what was sayd of mee, And I will send more after thee.

IMMER

TO THE MOST EXCELLENT AND LEARNED,

BOTH ORATOR AND POETE,

MAYSTER GABRIELL HARVEY,

ERIE EPECIAL AND SINGULAR GOOD FREND E. K. COMMENDETH THE GOOD LYKING OF THIS
HIS LABOUR, AND THE PATRONAGE OF THE NEW POETE.

ma, unkiste, sayde the old famous haucer: whom for his excellencie and ull skil in making, his scholler a worthy scholler of so excellent a calleth the Loudestarre of our pe: and whom our Colin Clout in plague calleth Tityrus the God of the comparing hym to the worthines Roman Tityrus, Virgile. Which, myne owne good friend Ma. Harvey, hat good old Poete it served well is purpose for the bolstering of his rocage, so very well taketh place in this Poete, who for that he is uncouthe Chaucer) is unkist, and unknown to m, is regarded but of few. But I l, so soome as his name shall come knowledge of men, and his worthines fed in the tromp of fame, but that he not onely kiste, but also beloved of all, is of the most, and wondred at of the lo lesse, I thinke, descreeth his wittidevising, his pithinesse in uttering, his set of love so lovely, his discourses of so pleasantly, his pastoral rudenesse, all wisenesse, his dewe observing of a coerge where, in personages, in in matter, in speach; and generally, emely simplycitie of handeling his and framing his words: the which I thinges which in him be straunge, I ll seeme the straungest, the words them ing so auxient, the knitting of them and intricate, and the whole Periode passe of speache so delightsome for the see, and so gruve for the straungenesse, we of the wordes to speake, I graunt

they be something hard, and of most men unused, yet both English, and also used of most excellent Authors, and most famous Poetes. In whom, whenas this our Poet hath bene much traveiled and throughly redd, how could it be, (as that worthy Oratour sayde) but that walking in the sonne, although for other cause he walked, yet needes he mought be sunburnt; and, having the sound of those auncient Poetes still ringing in his eares, he mought needes, in singing, hit out some of theyr tunes. But whether he useth them by such casualtye and thinking them fittest for such rusticall rude-nesse of shepheards, eyther for that theyr rough sounde would make his rymes more ragged and rustical, or els because such olde and obsolete wordes are most used of country folke, sure I think, and think I think not amisse, that they bring great grace, and, as one would say, auctoritie to the verse. For alle, amongst many other faultes, it specially be objected of Vulla against Livie, and of other against Saluste, that with over much studie they affect antiquitie, as coveting thereby credence and honor of elder yeeres, yet I am of opinion, and eke the best learned are of the lyke, that those auncient solemne wordes are a great ornament, both in the one, and in the other; the one labouring to set forth in hys worke an eternall image of antiquitie, and the other carefully discoursing matters of gravitie and importaunce. For, if my memory fuile not, Tullie, in that booke wherein he endevoureth to set forth the paterne of a perfect Oratour, sayth that of times an auncient words maketh the style seeme grave, and as it were

reverend, no otherwise then we honour and reverence gray heares, for a certein religious regard, which we have of old age, every where must old words be stuffed in, nor the common Dialecte and maner of speaking so corrupted therby, that, as in old buildings, it seme disorderly and ruinous. But all as is most exquisite pictures they use to blaze and portraict not only the daintie lineaments of beautye, but also rounde about it to shadowe the rude thickets and craggy clifts, that, by the basenesse of such parts, more excellency may accrew to the principall; for oftimes we fynde our selves, I knowe not how, singularly de-lighted with the shewe of such naturall rudenesse, and take great pleasure in that disorderly order. Even so doe those rough and harsh termes enlumine, and make more clearly to appeare, the brightnesse of brave and glorious words. So oftentimes a dischorde in Musick maketh a comely concordaunce : so great delight tooke the worthy Poete Alceus to behold a blemish in the joynt of a wel shaped body. But, if any will rashly blame such his purpose in choyse of old and wawonted words, him may I more justly blame and condemne, or wittesse headinesse in judging, or of heedelesse hardinesse in condemning; for, not marking the compasse of hys bent, he wil judge of the length of his cast: for in my opinion it is one special prayse of many, whych are dew to this Poete, that he hath laboured to restore, as to theyr rightfull heritage, such good and English words, as have ben long naturall time out of use, and almost cleane disherited. Which is the onely cause, that our Mother tonge, which truely of it self is both ful enough for prose, and stately enough for verse, hath long time ben counted most bare and barrein of both. Which default whenas some endevoured to salve and recure, they patched up the holes with peces and rags of other languages, borrowing here of the French, there of the Italian, every where of the Latine; not weighing how il those tongues accorde with themselves, but much worse with ours : So now they have made our English tongue So now they have made our English tonque a gallimaufray, or hodgepodge of al other speches. Other some, not so wel seene in the English tonge as perhaps in other languages, if they happen to here an olde word, albeit very naturall and significant, crye out streightway, that we speak no English, but gibbrish, or rather such as in old time Evanders matter such as in old time Evanders whose is that they mother spake: whose first shame is, that they are not ashamed, in their own mother tonge, to be counted straungers and alienes. The name, wherein it seneth he second shame no lesse then the first, that fold great matter of argu-

what so they understand no way deeme to be sensulesse, an lerstode. Much like to the A fable, that, being blynd her w wise be persuaded that uny The last, more shameful the their owne country and natura together with their Nources mil they have so base regard and ment, that they will not onely labor to garnish and beautific it. that of other it shold be emb the dogge in the maunger, that his no hay, and yet burketh at the that so faine would frede : school though it cannot be kept fro conne I them thanke that they

Now, for the knitting of they call the joynts and mes for al the compasse of the spe without roughnesse, and lear nes, such indeede as may be ; leaste, understoode of the m onely of the learned. For English wryters useth to be were ungyrt, in this Authour finely framed, and strongly to In regard wherof, I scorne rakehellye route of our ragge themselves use to hunt the lett learning boste, without ju without reason rage and f instinct of Poeticull spirite he them above the meanenesse of And being, in the middest of sodenly, either for want of m or having forgotten theyr for seeme to be so pained and remembrance, as it were a birth, or as that same Pythia

came upon her: 'Os rabi domans, &c.' Nethelesse, let them a Go theyr owne folly, so they seek they owner of others glory. As whose person the Authors how furre he is from such glorious showes, both him as he sayth,

'Of Muses Hobbin, I con And

" Enough is me to paint ou

And also appeareth by th

ofessing it, not suffice thereto accordingly. I hich moved him rather in Æglogues then er wise to write, doubting perhaps his habi-e, which he little needed, or mynding to rnish our tongue with this kinde, wherein it withth; or following the example of the best el most auncient Poetes, which devised this ed of wryling, being both so base for the etter, and homely for the manner, at the first trye theyr habilities; and as young birdes, at be newly crept out of the nest, by little at be newly crept out of the nest, ny little at to prove theyr tender wyngs, before they the a greater flyght. So flew Theoritus, as may perceive he was all ready full fledged.

• flew Virgile, as not yet well feeling his neges.

So flew Mantuane, as not being full so Petrurque.

So Boccuce. So Boccuce. So Petrurque, So Boccace, So Sanazarus, and also divers other . ezrot, cellent both Italian and French Poetes, Loss foling this Author every where follows ; yet so as few, but they be wel sented, can So finally flyeth this our new ice him out. >ete as a birde whose principals be scarce **ble to herpe** wing with the best.

Now, as trucking the generall druft and proce of his Æglogues, I mind not to say h, him selfe labouring to conceale it. Onely e appeareth, that his unstuyed yougth had a wandred in the common Labyrinth of **e, in which t**ime to mitigate and allay the wate of his passion, or els to warne (as he pth) the young shepheards, s. his equalls Le companions, of his unfortunate folly, he upiled these xij Æglogues, which, for that up be proportioned to the state of the xij ethes, he termeth the Shepheards Calendar, plying an olde name to a new worke. Herehave I added a certain Glosse, or schofor therposition of old wordes, and rder phrases; which maner of glosing and smenting, well I wote, wil seeme straunge wantens, wet I wore, we weeme struting of rare in our longue: yet, for so much as I m many excellent and proper decisis, both mordes and matter, would passe in the moly course of reading, either as unknowen, se not marked, and that in this kind, as in w, we might be equal to the learned of waterness are mations, I thought good to take the puines m me, the rather for that by meanes of me familiar acquaintaunce I was made privie his counsell and secret meaning in them, as to in sundry other works of his, which albeit thou he nothing so much hateth as to promul-

occasion him to put forth divers other excel-lent works of his, which slepe in silence; as his Dreames, his Legendes, his Court of Cupide, and sondry others, whose commendations to set out were verye vaine, the thinges though worthy of many, yet being knowen to fee. These my present paynes, if to any they be pleasurable or profitable, be you judge, mine own good maister Harvey, to whom I have, both in respect of your worthinesse generally, and otherwyse upon some particular and special considerations, coued this my labour, and the maydenhead of this our common frends Poetrie; himselfe having already in the be-ginning dedicated it to the Noble and worthy Gentleman, the right worshipfull Ma. Phi. Sidney, a special favourer and maintainer of all kind of learning. Whose cause, I pray you, Sir, yf Envie shall stur up any wrongful accusasion, defend with your mighty khe-torick and other your rare gifts of learning, as you can, and shield with your good wil, as you ought, against the malice and outrage of so many enemies, as I know wil be set on with the sparks of his kindled glory. And thus recommending the Author unto you, as unto his most special good frend, and my selfe unto you both, as one making singuler account of two so very good and so choise frends, I bid you both most hartely furneel, and commit you and your commendable studies to the tuicion of the Greatest.

Your owne assuredly to be commaunded,

E. K.

Post ser.

NOW I trust, M. Harvey, that upon sight of your speciall frends and fellow Poets doings, or els for envie of so many unworthy Quidams, which catch at the garlond which to you alone is dewe, you will be persuaded to pluck out of the hateful durknesse those so many excellent English poemes of yours which lye hid, and bring them forth to eternall light. Trust me, you doe both them great wrong, in depriving them of the desired sonne; and also your selfe. in smoothering your deserved prayses; and all men generally, in withholding from them so divine pleasures, which they might conceive of your gallant English verses, as they have already doen of your Latine Poemes, which, in my opinion, both for invention and Elocation are went delicate and arrays. tion are very delicate and superexcellent. to, yet thus much have I adventured upon his thus againe I take my leave of my good Mays adship, him selfe being for long time furre ter Hurvey: from my lodging at London thys ramged, hoping that this will the rather: 10. of Aprill, 1579.

GENERALL ARGUMENT OF THE THE WHOLE BOOKE.

LITTLE, I hope, needeth me at large to discourse the first Originall of Æglogues, having alreadie touched the same. But, for the word Æglogues, I know, is unknowen to most, and also mistaken of some of the best learned (as they think,) I wyll say somewhat thereof, being not at all impertinent to my

present purpose.

They were first of the Greekes, the inventours of them, called Lylogai, as it were aiyur, or aiyoromur Aoyor, that is, Goteheards tales. For although in Virgile and others the speakers be more Shepheards then Goat-heards, yet Theocritus, in whom is more ground of authoritie then in Virgile, this specially from that deriving, as from the first head and welspring, the whole Invencion of these Æglogues, maketh Gotcheards the persons and authors of his tales. This being, who seeth not the grossenesse of such as by colour of learning would make us believe that they are more rightly termed *Eclogai*, as they would say, extraordinary discourses of unnecessarie matter: which definition albe in substaunce and meaning it agree with the nature of the thing, yet no whit answereth with the aradoois and interpretation of the word. For they be not termed Eclegues, but Eglogues; which sentence this authour very well observing upon good judgement, though indeede few Goteheards have to doe herein, nethelesse doubteth not to cal them by the used and best knowen name. Other curious discourses hereof I reserve to greater occasion.

These xij Æglogues, every where answering to the seasons of the twelve monthes, may be well devided into three formes or ranckes. For eyther they be Plaintive, as the first, the sixt, the eleventh, and the twelfth; or Recreative, such as al those be, which containe matter of love, or commendation of special personages; or Moral, which for the most part to mixed with some Satyrical bitternesse; namely, the second, of reverence dewe to old

age; the fift, of coloured deceir and ninth, of dissolute sheph tours; the tenth, of contempt pleasaunt wits. And to this every thing herein be reasonal few onely except, whose specia meaning I am not privie much generally of these xij .E, will we speake particularly of the first, which he calleth by the name, Januarie: wherein to seeme fowly to have faulted, in ously beginneth with that I beginneth not the yeare. For and stoutely mainteyned with of the learned, that the year March; for then the sonne finished course, and the seasor fresheth the earth, and the pl being buried in the sadnesse c ter now worne away, reliveth.

This opinion maynteine the and Philosophers, namely, th dalo, and Macrobius in his b turne; which accoumpt also observed both of Grecians and saving the leave of such lea mayntaine a custome of cou sons from the moneth Janua speciall cause then the heath ever coulde conceive, that is, tion of our mighty Savior redeemer the L. Christ, who. the state of the decayed worl the compasse of expired yere date and first commencemeheires a memoriall of his bir the last yeere and beginni Which reckoning, beside the ment of our salvation, lear good proofe of special judget For abeit that in elder ty the coumpt of the yere was afterwarde it was by Julius

the monethes from Marches beginaccording to the same God (as is icripture) comaunded the people of , to count the moneth Abib, that call March, for the first moneth, in unce that in that moneth he brought of the land of Ægipt: yet, accordradition of latter times, it hath rwise observed, both in governthe Church and rule of Mightiest

For from Julius Cæsar who first the leape yeere, which he called m Annum, and brought into a more urse the odde wandring dayes which reckes were called vwepBairorres, of nes intercalares, (for in such matter g I am forced to use the termes of d) the monethes have bene nombred in the first ordinaunce of Romulus tenne, counting but ecciiij dayes in are, and beginning with March. a Pompilius, who was the father of nain ceremonies and religion, seeing coning to agree neither with the the sonne nor of the moone, thered two monethes, January and Febherin it seemeth, that wise king pon good reason, to begin the yeare

at Januarie, of him therefore so called tanquam Janua anni, the gate and entraunce of the yere; or of the name of the god Janus, to which god for that the olde Paynims attributed the byrth and beginning of all creatures new comming into the worlde, it seemeth that he therfore to him assigned the beginning and first entraunce of the yeare. Which account for the most part hath hetherto con-

tinued: Notwithstanding that the Ægiptians beginne theyr yeare at September; for that, according to the opinion of the best Rabbins and very purpose of the Scripture itselfe, God made the worlde in that Moneth, that is called of them Tisri. And therefore he commaunded them to keepe the feast of Pavilious in the end of the yeare, in the xv. day of the seventh moneth, which before that time was the first.

But our Authour respecting nether the

subtilitie of thone part, nor the antiquitie of thother, thinketh it fittest, according to the simplicitie of common understanding, to begin with Januarie; wening it perhaps no decorum that Shepheards should be seene in matter of so deepe insight, or canvase a case of so doubtful judgment. So therefore beginneth he, and so continueth he throughout.

THE SHEPHEARDS CALENDER

JANUARIE.

ÆGLOGA PRIMA. ARGUMENT.

In this tyrut Legiogue Colin Cloute, a shepheardes boy, complaineth him of his unfortunerily (as semeth) enamoured of a countrie lasse called Rosalinde: with which strovery sore traveled, he compareth his carefull case to the sadde season of the years, to to the frozen trees, and to his owne winter-besten Rocke. And, lastifye, frying hims former pleasaunce and delights, hee breaketh his Fipe in peeces, and casteth him selfe

COLIN CLOUTS.

A SHEPEHEARDS boye, (no better doe him call.) 'Such rage as winters reignetl A SHEPPHEARDS boye, (no better doe him call.) Such arge as whiters regime When Winters wastful spight was almost My life-bloud friesing with ut All in a sunneshine day, as did befall, [spent. Such stormy stoures do breaked forth his flock, that had bene long ypent:

So fayut they woxe, and feeble in the folde. As if my yeare were wast and

That now unnethes their feete could them uphold.

All as the Sheepe, such was the shepeheards 'You naked trees, whose shad looke.

For pale and wanne he was, (alas the while!) May seeme he lovd, or els some care he tooke: May seeme he lovel, or els some care he tooke: And now are clothed with a Well couth he tune his pipe and frame his Instede of bloosmes, wherewi stile:

The to a hill his faynting flocke he ledde, And thus him playnd, the while his shope there fedde.

'Ye Gods of love, that pitie lovers payne, (If any gods the paine of lovers pitie)

Looke from above, where you in joyes remaine. And howe your eares unto my dolefull dittie: With breathed sighes is b And, Pan, thou shepheards God that once prove. didst love,

Pitie the paines that thou thy selfe didst

'Thou barrein ground, whome winters wrath hath wasted,

Art made a myrrhour to behold my plight: Whilome thy fresh spring flowrd, and after hasted

Thy sommer prowde, with Daffadillies dight; And now is come thy wynters stormy state,

Thy mantle mard, wherein thou maskedst late.

And yet, alas! but now my And yet, alas! yt is already

Wherein the byrds were wo: bowre,

flowre;

I see your teares that from Whose drops in drery ysic

'All so my lustfull leafe is d My timely buds with waylin The blossome which my bran beare

And from mine eyes the d scend.

As on your boughes the y.

'Thou feeble flocke, whose f rent, Whose knees are weake thre

Mayst witnesse well, by thy Thy maysters mind is overc

Thou weake, I wanne; th forlorne:

With mourning pyne I; mourne.

nd sithes I curse that carefull hower longd the neighbour towne to see, tenne thousand sithes I blesse the ıre

sawe so fayre a sight as shee: for naught: such sight hath bred bane. [and payne! 1! that love should breede both joy Hobbinol wherefore I plaine, love he seeke with dayly suit; ish gifts and curtaies I disdaine , his cracknelles, and his early fruit. ish Hobbinol! thy gyfts bene vayne; em gives to Rosalind againe.

lke lasse, (alas! why doe I love?) rlorne, (alas! why am I lorne?) nes not my good will, but doth re-

rurall musicke holdeth scorne.

Shepheards devise she hateth as the snake And laughes the songs that Colin Clout doth make.

'Wherefore, my pype, albee rude Pan thou please, Yet for thou pleasest not where most I would:

And thou, unlucky Muse, that wontst to ease My musing mynd, yet canst not when thou should; Both pype and Muse shall sore the while

abye. So broke his oaten pype, and downe dyd lye.

By that, the welked Phœbus gan availe His weary waine; and nowe the frosty Night Her mantle black through heaven gan overhaile: Which seene, the pensife boy, halfe in despight, Arose, and homeward drove his sonned shee Whose hanging heads did seeme his carefull

case to weepe.

COLINS EMBLEME.

Anchôra speme.

GLOSSE.

ste, is a name not greatly used, and yet e a Poesie of M. Skeltons under that ndeede the word Colin is Frenche, and French Poete Marot (if he be worthy e of a Poete) in a certein Æglogue.:h name this Poete secretly shadoweth sometimes did Virgil under the name thinking it much fitter then such es, for the great unlikelyhoode of the

scarcely.

smmeth of the verbe Conne, that is, to
have skill. As well interpreteth the
rorthy Sir Tho. Smith, in his booke of
the wherof I have a perfect copic in nt me by his kinseman, and my verye od freend, M. Gabriel Harvey: as also er his most grave and excellent wryt-

· towne, the next towne : expressing the fitt.

pered.

ish gufts, imitateth Virgils verse. (s Corydon, nec munera curat Alexis. is a fained country name, whereby, it mune and usuall, seemeth to be hidden of some his very special and most end, whom he entirely and extraordin-i, as peradventure shall be more largegreafter. In this place seemeth to be disorderly love, which the learned tios; but it is gathered beside his mean-

ing. For who that hath red Plato his dialogue called Alcybiades, Xenophon, and Maximus Tyrius, of Arcybiades. Aenophon, and Maximus Tyrus, or Socrates opinions, may easily perceive, that such love is muche to be alowed and liked of, specially so meant, as Socrates used it: who sayth, that indeede he loved Alcybiades extremely, yet not Alcybiades person, but hys soule, which is Alcybiades owne selfe. And so is predurantic much to be preferred before generatics, that is, the love whiche enflameth men with lust toward womankind. But yet let no man thinke, that herein I stand with Lucian, or his develish disciple Unico Aretino, in defence of execrable and horrible sinnes of forbid-den and unlawful fieshlinesse. Whose abominable den and unlawful fieshlinesse. Whose abominab errour is fully confuted of Perionius, and others.

I lore, a prety Epanorthosis in these two verses; and withall a Paronomasia or playing with the word, where he sayth I lore thilke lasse alas, &c. Rosalinde, is also a feigned name, which, being

wel ordered, wil bewray the very name of hys love and mistresse, whom by that name he coloureth. So as Ovide shadoweth hys love under the name of Corynna, which of some is supposed to be Julia, themperor Augustus his daughter, and wyfe to Agryppa. So doth Aruntius Stella every where Agryppa. So doth Aruntius Steim every was call his Lady Asteris and Ianthis, albe it is welknowen that her right name was Violantilla: as witnesseth Statius in his Epithalamium. And so the famous Paragone of Italy, Madonna Cœlia, in her letters envelopeth her selfe under the name of Zima: and Petrona under the name of Bellochia. And this generally hath bene a common custome of counterfeicting the names of secret Personages, Arail, bring downe.
Overhaile, drawe over.

TWHENEN

His emblems or Pooses is here under mided in Incklesse love, yet, Italian, Auchbra speme; the meaning wheref is, what recomforted, that notwithstandeing his extreme passion and

FEBRUARIE.

ÆGLOGA SECUNDA. ARGUMENT.

This Æglogue is rather morall and generall, then bent to any secrete or purtice contegnath a discourse of old age, in the persone of Thenot, an olds Shephenor and unlustnesse is scorned of Caddie, on unhappy Heardmans boye. The with the reason of the month, the years now drouping, and as it were drawn in this time of pears, so then in our bodies, there is a dry and withering crudled blood, and frieseth the wetherbesten fieth with stormes of Fortune. To which purpose the olde man telleth a tale of the Oake and the Bryer, so the theing were set forth in some Ficture before our eyes, more plainty could a

CUDDIE.

Cuddie,

An for pittle! wil rancke Winters rage These bitter blasts never ginne tasswage? The kene cold blowes through my beaten hyde, All as I were through the body gryde: My ragged rontes all shiver and shake, As doen high Towers in an earthquake: They wont in the wind wagge their wrigle tayles,

Perke as a Peacock; but now it avales,

Thenot,

Lewdly complainest thou, laesie ladde, Of Winters wracke for making thee sadde, Must not the world wend in his commun course, From good to badd, and from badde to worse, From worse unto that is worst of all, And then returne to his former fall? Who will not suffer the stormy time, Where will he live tyll the lusty prime? Selfe have I worne out thrise threttie yeares, Some in much joy, many in many teares, Yet never complained of cold nor heate. Of Sommers flame, nor of Winters threat, Ne ever was to Fortune foeman, But gently tooke that ungently came; And ever my flocke was my chiefe care, Winter or Sommer they mought well fare.

Cuddie.

No marveile, Thenot, if thou can beare Cherefully the Winters wrathful cheare; For Age and Winter accord full nie, This chill, that cold: this crooked, that wrye; And as the lowring Wether lookes downe, So semest thou like Good Fryday to frowne: But my flowring youth is foe to frost, My shippe unwont in stormes to be tost.

THENOT.

The soveraigne of seas That, once sea-beate, w So loytring live you litt Keeping your beastes in And, when the shining You deemen the Spring The gynne you, fond scorne.

And, crowing in pypes You thinken to be Lord But eft, when ye count Comes the breme Winter Full of wrinckles and fr Drerily shooting his sto Which cruddles the bloo Then is your carelesse of Your carefull beards wit Then paye you the price With weeping, and way

Ah, foolish old man! I That wouldest me my I deeme thy braine emp Through rusty elde, tha Or sicker thy head vera So on thy corbe shoulde Now thy selfe hast lost Als my budding braunch But were thy yeares gree To other delights they The wouldest thou learn And hery with hymnes The wouldest thou pype But Phyllis is myne for I wonne her with a gyn. Embost with buegle abo

one shepeheards would make full faine; one would make thee younge againe.

Thenot.

rt a fon of thy love to boste; is lent to love wyll be lost.

Cuddie

owe brag youd Bullocke beares, ie, so smoothe, his pricked eares? es bene as broade as Rainebowe bent, elap as lythe as lasse of Kent: e he venteth into the wynd; of love is not his mynd? thy flocke thy counsell can, ase bene they, so weake, so wan; with cold, and hoary with frost, ks father his corage hath lost. es, that wont to have blowen bags, ilefull widdowes hangen their crags; ter Lambes bene starved with cold, heir Maister is lustlesse and old.

Thenut.

I wote thou kenst little good, ly tadvaunce thy headlesse hood; way is wildernesse, whose yone Pe-. unce, ope-gallaunt Age, the hoste of Gree-l I tel thee a tale of truth, [vaunce. cond of Tityrus in my youth. his sheepe on the hils of Kent?

Cuddie.

tht more. Thenot, my mind is bent heare novells of his devise; te so well-thewed, and so wise, er that good old man bespake.

Thenot.

scete tales of youth did he make, e of love, and some of chevalrie; : fitter then this to applie. m a while and hearken the end.
rewe an aged Tree on the greene, Oake sometime had it bene, nes full strong and largely displayd, eir leaves they were disarayde: e bigge, and mightely pight, ly rooted, and of wonderous hight; had bene the King of the field, hell must to the husband did vielde, this nuts larded many swine: the gray mosse marred his rine;

His toppe was bald, and wasted with wormes, His honor decayed, his braunches sere. Hard by his side grewe a bragging Brere, Which proudly thrust into Thelement, And seemed to threat the Firmament: It was embellisht with blossomes favre, And thereto ave wonned to repayre The shepheards daughters to gather flowres, To peinct their girlonds with his colowres; And in his small bushes used to shrowde The sweete Nightingale singing so lowde; Which made this foolish Brere wexe so bold, That on a time he cast him to scold And snebbe the good Oake, for he was old. 'Why standst there (quoth he) thou brutish blocke? [stocke; Nor for fruiet nor for shadowe serves thy Seest how fresh my flowers bene spredde, Dved in Lilly white and Cremsin redde, With Leaves engrained in lusty greene: Colours meete to clothe a mayden Queene? Thy wast bignes but combers the grownd. And dirks the beauty of my blossomes round: The mouldie mosse, which thee accloieth, My Sinamon smell too much annoieth: Wherefore soone I rede thee hence remove, igth is a bubble blown up with breath. Least thou the price of my displeasure prove. ittis weakenesse, whose wage is death, So spake this bold brere with great disdaine: Little him aunswered the Oake againe. But yeelded, with shame and greefe adawed, That of a weede he was overcrawed. Yt chaunced after upon a day, The Hus-bandman selfe to come that way, Of custome for to survewe his grownd, And his trees of state in compasse round: Him when the spitefull brere had espyed, Causelesse complained, and lowdly cryed Unto his lord, stirring up sterne strife 'O, my liege Lord! the God of my life! Pleaseth you ponder your Suppliants plaint, Caused of wrong and cruell constraint, Which I your poore Vassall dayly endure; And, but your goodnes the same recure, Am like for desperate doole to dye, Through felonous force of mine enemie. Greatly aghast with this piteous plea, Him rested the goodman on the lea, And badde the Brere in his plaint proceede. With painted words tho gan this proude weede (As most usen Ambitious folke:) His colowred crime with craft to cloke. Ah, my soversigne! Lord of creatures all, Thou placer of plants both humble and tall, Was not I planted of thine owne hand, To be the primrose of all thy land; With flowring blossomes to furnish the prime, And scarlot berries in Sommer time? O G

His bared boughes were beaten with stormes,

How falls it then that this faded Oake, Whose bodie is sere, whose braunches broke, Whose naked Armes stretch unto the fyre. Unto such tyrannie doth aspire; Hindering with his shade my lovely light, And robbing me of the swete sonnes sight? So beate his old boughes my tender side, That oft the bloud springeth from woundes Untimely my flowres forced to fall, That bene the honor of your Coronall: And oft he lets his cancker-wormes light Upon my braunches, to worke me more spight; And oft his hoarie locks downe doth cast, Where with my fresh flowretts bene defast: For this, and many more such outrage, Craving your goodlihead to aswage The ranckorous rigour of his might, Nought aske I, but onely to hold my right; Submitting me to your good sufferance,

And praying to be garded from greevance,'
To this the Oake cast him to replie Well as he couth; but his enemie Had kindled such coles of displeasure, That the good man noulde stay his leasure, But home him hasted with furious heate, Encreasing his wrath with many a threate; His harmefull Hatchet he hent in hand, (Alas! that it so ready should stand!) And to the field alone he speedeth, (Ay little helpe to harme there needeth !) Anger nould let him speake to the tree, Enaunter his rage mought cooled bee; But to the roote bent his sturdy stronke, And made many wounds in the wast Oake. The Axes edge did oft turne againe, As halfe unwilling to cutte the graine; Semed, the sencelesse yron dyd feare, Or to wrong holy eld did forbeare; For it had bene an auncient tree, Sacred with many a mysteree, And often crost with the priestes crewe, And often halowed with holy-water dewe:

But sike fancies weren And broughten this Oal For nought mought th decay

For flercely the good ma The blocke oft groned u And sighed to see his n In fine, the steele had p The downe to the earth His wonderous weight quake, Thearth shronke under

shake: -

There lyeth the Oake, I Now stands the Brere Puffed up with pryde at But all this glee had no For eftsones Winter gan The blustering Boreas of And beate upon the soli For nowe no succoure w Now gan he repent his For, naked left and disc The byting frost nipt hi The watrie wette weigh And heaped snowe burd That nowe upright he co Of cattell, and brouzed, Such was thend of this For scorning Eld-

Now I pray thee, shepl Here is a long tale, and So longe have I listened That graffed to the grou My hart-blood is wel nie And my galage growne But little ease of thy le Hye thee home, shephe wasted.

THENOTS EMBLEME.

Iddio, perche è vecchio, Fa suoi al suo essempio.

CUDDIES EMBLEME.

Niuno vecchio Spaventa Iddio.

GLOSSE.

Kene, sharpe.

Gride, perced: an olde word much used of Lidgate, but not found (that I know of) in Chancer. Routs, young bullocken Wrocke, ruine or Violence, whence commeth

shipwracke; and not wreak wrath.
Foemon, a foe Thenot, the name of a Eglogues.

raigne of Beas, is Neptune the God of the s saying is borowed of Mimus Publianus, at this proverb in a verse.

hè Neptunum accusat, qui iterum naufram facit.

romes, Chaucers verse almost whole.

Iyes, He compareth carelesse sluggardes, bandmen, to flyes that, so soone as the neth, or yt wexeth anything warme, begin groade, when sodeinly they be overtaken

chen, a verye excellent and lively descripinter, so as may bee indifferently taken, old Age, or for Winter season.

chill bitter.

ed, chapt, or wrinckled.
, plucked downe and daunted.

ire, pryde.

ure.

evering.

moked. corship.

the name of some mayde unknowen, ddie, whose person is secrete, loved. The isual, in Theocritus, Virgile, and Man-

girdle or wast-band.

i foole.

oft and gentle. snuffeth in the wind.

ks futher, the Ramme. reckes.

lambes, that be ewed early in the beginor veare.

s, a verye moral and pitthy Allegorie of i the lustes thereof, compared to a wearie

I suppose he meanes Chaucer, who-e r pleasannt tales cannot dye, so long as rie of hys name shal live, and the name shal endure.

need, that is, Bene morake, full of morall

rem: This tale of the Oake and the Brere. s learned of Chancer, but it is cleane in ind, and rather like to Æsopes fables. It

is very excellente for pleasaunt descriptions, being altogether a certaine Icon, or Hypotyposis of disdainfull younkers.

Embellisht, beautified and adorned.
To wonne, to haunt or frequent.
Sneb, checke.

Why standst, The speach is scorneful and very presumptuous

Engrained, dyed in grain.

Accloieth, encombreth.

Adared, daunted and confounded.

Trees of state, taller trees, fitte for timber wood. Sterne strife, said Chancer, s. fell and sturdy. O my liege, a maner of supplication, wherein is kindly coloured the affection and speache of Am-

Coronall, Garlande.

bitions men

Flourets, yong blos-omes.
The Primrose, the chiefe and worthlest.

Naked armes, metaphorically ment of the bare oughes, spoyled of leaves. This colourably he boughes, spoyled of leaves.

speaketh, as adjudging hym to the fyre.

The blood, spoken of a blocke, as it were of a living creature, figuratively, and (as they say) CLEAGHOP.

Hoarie lockes, metaphorically for withered leaves.

Hent, caught.

Nould, for would not.

An, evermore. Wounds, gashes

Engunter, least that.

The priests crewe, holy water pott, wherewith the popishe priest used to sprinckle and hallowe the those times, which the Poets supposed to have bene the finall decay of this auncient O de.

The blocke off ground, a livelye figure, which giveth sence and feeling to unsensible creatures, as Virgile also sayeth: 'Saxa gemunt gravido,'

Boreas, The Northerne wynd, that bringeth the moste stormie weather.

Glee, chere and jollitie.
For scorning Eld, And minding (as shoulds seme) to have made ryme to the former verse, he is con-ningly cutte of by Cuddie, as disdayning to here

Galage, A startuppe or clownish shoe,

EMBLEME.

ibleme is spoken of Thenot, as a moral of retale: namelye, that God, which is him-saced, being lefore al ages, and without re, maketh those, whom he loveth, like to in heaping yeares unto theyre dayes, and hem with longe lyfe. For the blessing not given to all, but unto those whome so blesse. And albeit that many evil he mnto such fulnesse of yeares, and wexe old in myseric and thraldome, yet is not age ever the lesse blessing. For ich evill men such number of yeares is it they may in their last dayes repent, and heir first home : So the old man checketh headed boy for despysing his gray and Cuddye doth counterbuff with abyting

and bitter proverbe, spoken indeede at the first in contempt of old age generally: for it was an old opinion, and yet is continued in some mens conccipt, that men of yeares have no feare of God at al, or not so much as younger folke; for that being rypened with long experience, and having passed many bitter brunts and blastes of vengeaunce, they dread no stormes of For une, nor wrathe of God, nor daunger of menne, as being eyther by longer and rips wis slome armed against all mischaunces and adversitie, or with much trouble hardened against all troublesome tydes: like unto the Ape, of which is sayd in Æsops fables, that, oftentimes meeting the Lyon, he was at first sore aghast and dismayed at the grimnes and austeritic of hys countenance, but at last, being acquainted with his lookes, he was so turns from teaching blim, thank he would familiarly gybe and jest with him; Suche longs experience breedeth in some men securitie. Although it please Krasmus, a great clerke, and good old father, more fatherly and favourablys to construe it, in his Adages, for his own behoofe. That by the proverbe, 'Nemo senes meinti-Jovem.' Is not meant, that old men have no feare of God

at al, but that they be for biolatrons regard of faflut his greate learning plains to be gain-sayd, if more enclined to such for heades.

MARCH.

ÆGLOGA TERTIA. ARGUMENT.

Ix this Azloque two shepheards boyes, taking occasion of the zeason, beginne to a other pleasuree which to spring time as most agreeable. The special meaning markes and tokens to know Capids, the Poets God of Love. But more par person of Thomalia is meant some secrete freend, who scorned Love and his k him selfe was enlangled, and unwares wounded with the dart of some beautiful arrow.

WILLTE.

Wil. Thomalin, why sytten we soe,
As weren overwent with woe,
Upon so fayre a morow?
The joyous time now nightes fast,
That shall alegge this bitter blast,
And slake the winters sorowe.
Tho. Sicker, Willye, thon warnest well;
For Winters wrath beginnes to quell,
And pleasant spring appeareth:
The grasse nowe ginnes to be refresht,
The Swallow peepes out of her nest,
And clowdie Welkin cleareth.
Wil. Seest not thilke same Hawthome studde,
How bragly it beginnes to budde,
And utter his tender head?

The shall we sporten in delight,
And learne with Lettice to wexe light,
That scornefully lookes askaunce;
The will we little Love awake,
That nowe sleepeth in Lethe lake,
And pray him leaden our daunce.
The. Willye, I wene then bee asset;
For lustic Love still sleepeth not,
But is abroad at his game.
Wil. How kenst thou that he is awoke?
Or hast thy selfe his slomber broke,

Flora now calleth forth eche flower,

And bids make readie Maias bowre,

That newe is upryst from bedde:

Or made previe to the same?
Tho. No: but happely I hym spyde,
Where in a buth he did him hide,

With winges of purple and blewe; And, were not that my sheepe would stray, The previe marks I would bewray, Whereby by chaunce I him knewe. Wil. Thomalin, have no care for-thy;

My selfe will have a double eye, Ylike to my flocke and thine; THOMALIN.

For als at home I have A stepdame eke, as who That deely adayes of Tho. Nay, but thy see My sheepe for that may And fall into some m For sithens is but the t That I chaunst to fall: And waked againe w The while thilke same Whose clouted legge he

Whose clouted regge in Fell headlong into a And there unjoynted be Mought her necke bene She shoulde have nec Thelf was so wanton an (But now I trowe can be She mought ne gang Wil. Let be, as may b That is to come, let be:

Now tell us what the Tho. It was upon a hi When shepheardes groo I cast to goe a shooti Long wandring up and With bowe and bolts in

For birds in bushes to At length within an Yv (There shrouded was th I heard a busic bush)

I bent my bolt against Listening if any thing of But then heard no m Tho, peeping close into Might see the moving of

Might see the moving o
Whose shape appeare
But were it faeric, feend
My courage earnd it to
And manfully thereat

sprong forth a naked swavne ed winges, like Peacocks trayne, thing lope to a tree; quiver at his backe. bowe, which was but slacke, ightly he bent at me: , I levelde againe at him with might and maine, e as it had havled. hott, that al was spent; stones I hastly hent we; but nought availed: wimble and so wight. h to bough he lepped light, the pumies latched. affrayd, I ranne away it earst seemd but to playe, in earnest snatched. e running in the heele: little smart did feele,

But soone it sore encreased; And now it ranckleth more and more, And inwardly it festreth sore,
Ne wote I how to cease it.
Wil. Thomalin, I pittie thy plight, Perdie with Love thou diddest fight; I know him by a token; For once I heard my father say, How he him caught upon a day, (Whereof he wil be wroken) Entangled in a fowling net, Which he for carrion Crowes had set That in our Peere-tree haunted: Tho sayd, he was a winged lad, But bowe and shafts as then none had, Els had he sore be daunted. But see, the Welkin thicks apace, And stouping Phebus steepes his face: Yts time to hast us homeward.

WILLYES EMBLEME,

To be wise, and eke to love, Is graunted scarce to Gods above.

THOMALINS EMBLEME.

Of Hony and of Gaule in love there is store; The Honye is much, but the Gaule is more.

GLOSSE.

logue seemeth somewhat to resemble f Theocritus, wherein the boy likewise aid man, that he had shot at a winged se, was by hym warned to beware of come.

overgone. lessen or asswage.

o abate. ne skie.

, which bird useth to be counted the and as it were, the forerunner, of

s Goddesse of flowres, but indede (as is) a famous harlot, which, with the is) a ramous nariot, which, which the er body having gotten great riches, eople of Rome her heyre: who, in re-s of so great beneficence, appointed a for the memoriall of her, calling her, ras, nor as some doe think, Andronica, naking her the Goddesse of floures, and to her solemne sacrifice. ron her solemne sacrince.

er, that is, the pleasaunt field, or raive bushes. Maia is a Goddesse, and
of Mercurie, in honour of whome the
laye is of her name so called, as sayth

fulnes. Wherein the soules being dipped did forget the cares of their former lyfe. So that by love alceping in Lethe lake, he meaneth he was almost forgotten, and out of knowledge, by reason of winters hardnesse, when all pleasures, as it were, sleepe and weare oute of minde.

Assotte, to dote.

His slomber, To breake Loves slomber is to exercise the delightes of Love, and wanton pleasure. Winges of purple, so is he feyned of the Poetes. For als, he imitateth Virgils verse.

'Est mihi namque domi pater, est injusta noverca, &c.

A dell, a hole in the ground.

Spell, is a kinde of verse or charme, that in elder Speil, is a kinde of verse or charms, that in eucer tymes they used often to say over every thing that they would have preserved, as the Nightspel for theeves, and the woodspell. And herehence, I thinke, is named the gospel, as it were Gods spell, or worde. And so sayth Chaucer, Listeneth Lordings to my spell.

Gang, goe.
An Yvie todde, a thicke bush.

of Mercurie, in honour of whome the laye is of her name so called, as sayth laye is of her name so called, as sayth is senier, a boye: For so is he described of the Poetes to be a boye: An Irie lodde, a slwayes freshe and lustie: hindfolded, because he maketh no difference of personne. With divers coloured winges, s. ful of flying fancies: with bowe and arrow, that is, with stributes. For Lethe signifieth forget: arrowe. He is sayd also to have abalta, come leader.

of Styx. The vertue whereof is, to defend and keepe the bodyes washed therein from any mortall wound. So Achilles being washed al over, save onely his hele, by which his mother held, was in the rest invulnerable: therfore by Paris was feyned

١

For once: In of shepheards of Stouping Phasetting.

EMBLEME

Hereby is meant, that all the delights of Love, wherein wanton youth walloweth, be but follye mixt with bitternesse, and sorow sawced with repentannce. For besides that the very affection of Love it selfe tormenteth the mynde, and vexeth the body many wayes, with unrestfulnesse all night, and wearines all day, seeking for that we cannot have, and fynding that we would not have:

even the selfe t in course of t whiche also tl lyking and for some, and breflowe is withe wits aunswere full pleasaunce

APRIL.

ÆGLOGA QUARTA. ARGUME

THIS Æglogue is purposely intended to the honor and prayse of our rabeth. The speakers herein be Hokbanoll and Thenott, two shephous mentioned greatly to have loved Colin, is here set forth more largely misadventure in Love; whereby his mynd was alienate and withdr loved him, but also from all former delightes and studies, as we ryming and singing, and other his laudable exercises. Whereby more excellencie and skill in poetrie, to recorde a songe, which the of her Majestie, whom abruptely he termith Elyss.

THENOT.

Hobbi.

The. Tell me, good Hobbinoll, what garres thee greete? [ytorne? He, plongd teare.]

What? hath some Wolfe thy tender Lambes
Or is thy Bagpype broke, that soundes so sweete?

Or art thou of thy loved lasse forlorne?

Shepheards of sweare.

Or hane thine eves attempred to the yeare,

Shepheards of sweard Hys pleast ment

in thou kenst, the Southerne sheprdes boye; [darte: we hath wounded with a deadly in him was all my care and joye, with gyfts to winne his wanton heart.

om me hys madding mynd is starte, es the Widdowes daughter of the ine; yre Rosalind hath bredde hys smart.

his frend is chaunged for a frenne.

if hys ditties bene to trimly dight, hee, Hobbinoll, records some one, sour flockes do grazze about in sight, close shrowded in thys shade alone, tented I: then, will I singe his laye Elisa, Queene of shepheardes all, the made as by a spring he laye, ed it unto the Waters fall.

ye Nymphs, that in this blessed he your brest, [brooke our warry bowres, and hether looke, equest: ou Virgins, that on Parnasse dwell, bweth Helicon, the learned well, to blaze thy praise,

ner sexe doth all excell.

Elisa be your silver song,
used wight,

of Virgins: may shee florish long ely plight! s Syrinx daughter without spotte, s, the shepheards God, of her begot:

mly race, I blemishe may her blotte.

e she sits upon the grassie greene, ely sight!)

carlot, like a mayden Queene, nines white: nead a Cremesin coronet, naske roses and Daffadillies set:

res betweene, mroses greene,

lest eye,

ig her grace

the sweete Violet.

have we seene her angelick face,

mbe fayre? nly haveour, her princely grace, well compare? rose medled with the White yfere, heeke depeincten lively chere:

estie, re you seene the like but there?

ep- 'I sawe Phœbus thrust out his golden hedde, te: Upon her to gaze: [spredde, dly But, when he sawe how broade her beames did It did him amaze.

He blusht to see another Sunne belowe, Ne durst againe his fyrye face out showe: Let him, if he dare,

His brightnesse compare
With hers, to have the overthrowe.

'Shewe thyselfe, Cynthia, with thy silver rayes, And be not abasht: When shee the beames of her beauty displayes,

O, how art thou dasht!
But I will not match her with Latonaes seede,

Such follie great sorow to Niobe did breede:
Now she is a stone,
And makes dayly mone,

Warning all other to take heede.

'Pan may be proud that ever he begot Such a Bellibone;

blessed Such a Bellibone;
[brooke And Syrinx rejoyse that ever was her lot before looke. To be are such an one.

Soone as my younglings cryen for the dam To her will I offer a milkwhite Lamb:

Shee is my goddesse plaine,
And I her shepherds swayne,

And I ner snepnerus swayne, Albee forswonck and forswatt I am,

'I see Calliope speede her to the place, Where my Goddesse shines;

And after her the other Muses trace, With their Violines, Bene thev not Bay braunches which they do, All for Elisa in her hand to weare?

All for Elisa in her hand to weare?
So sweetely they play,
And sing all the way,

That it a heaven is to heare.

'Lo' how finely the Graces.

Lo! how finely the Graces can it foote
To the Instrument:
They danger defly and singer works

They dauncen deffly, and singen scote, In their meriment.

Wants not a fourth Grace, to make the daunce even?

Let that rowme to my Lady be yeven:

She shal be a Grace,
To fyll the fourth place,

And reigne with the rest in heaven.

And whither rennes this bevie of Ladies bright, Raunged in a rowe? They bene all Ladyes of the lake behight, That unto her goe.

Chloris, that is the chiefest Nymph of all, Of Olive braunches beares a Coronall: Olives bene for peace,

When wars doe surcease:

Such for a Princesse bene principall.

Ye shepheards daughters, that dwell on the 'Now ryse up, Elisa, de-

Hye you there apace: Let none come there but that Virgins bene, To adorne her grace:

And, when you come whereas shee is in place, See that your rudenesse doe not you disgrace : Binde your fillets faste,

And gird in your waste,

For more finenesse, with a tawdrie lace.

Bring bether the Pincke and purple Cullambine, With Gelliflowres;

Bring Coronations, and Sops in wine,

Worne of Paramoures: Strowe me the ground with Daffadowndillies,

And Cowslips, and Kingcups, and loved Lillies: The pretie Pawnee,

And the Chevisaunce,

Shall match with the fayre flowre Delice.

In royall stay ; And now ye daintie Dan Eche one her way.

I feare I have troubled y Let dame Elisa thanke And if you come hether

When Damsines I get I will part them all you

The, And was thilk s owne making? Ah, foolish Boy! that

Great pittie is, he be in For naught caren that

Sicker I hold him That loves the thing ! But let us homeward, for And twincling starres chase.

THENOTS EMBLEME.

O quam te memorem Virgo !

HOBBINOLS EMBLEME.

O dea certe!

GLOSSE.

Sars thee greete, causeth thee weepe and complain. Forlorne, left and forsaken.

Allempred to the years, agreeable to the season of the years, that is Aprill, which moneth is most bent to shours and seasonable rayne: to quench,

bent to shoures and seasonable rayne: to quench, that is, to delay the drought, caused through drynesse of March wyndes.

The Ladde, Colin Clout.

The Lasse, Rosalinda.

Tressed tocks, wrethed and curled.

Is he for a ladde? a strainge manner of speaking, s. what maner of Ladde is he?

To make, to rime and versifye. For in this word, making, our olde Englishe Poetes were wont to comprehend all the skil of Poetrye, according to the Greeke woorde moven, to make, whence commeth the name of Poetes.

Colin thou senst, knowest. Seemeth hereby that Colin pertyneth to some Southern poble man, and

Colin perteyneth to some Southern noble man, and

perhaps in Surry or Kent, the rather bicause he so often nameth the Kentish downes, and before, As luthe as lause of Kent.

The Widowes, He calleth Rosalind the Widowes daughter of the glenne, that is, of a country Hamlet or borough, which I thinke is rather snyde to coloure and concele the person, then simply speken. For it is well knowen even in salethe of Calin For it is well knowen, even in spighte of Colin and Hobbinoil, that she is a Gentlewoman of no meane house, nor endewed with anye vulgare and common gifts, both of nature and manners; but suche indeede, as neede nether Colin be assaured. to have her made knowne by his verses, nor Hobbinel be greved, that so at to immortalitie for her ran Specially deserving it no the most excellent Poets Lauretta the divine Himera the worthye Poet upon whom he is sayd so m in regard of her excellence against the beauty of Hele sumptuous and unheedie h vengeaunce of the Gods, th

Prenne, a straunger. T first poetically put, and afte custome of speach for fore Dight, adorned.

Laye, a songe, as Rounds In all this songe is not to worthinesse of her Majesti the highnes of a Prince is moste comely for the me witte, or to conceive, or to he calleth her Elysa, as the ping in her name; and a being very unit, that a sup in the shepefold, should have heard of, a Queenes of Ye daintie, is, as it were, a

andos animos

Virgins, the nine Mus-and Memorie, whose abode on Parnassus, a bill in C

specially florished the honor of all ex-

is both the name of a fountaine at the srnassus, and also of a mounteine in Beo-which floweth the famous spring Castaate also to the Muses: of which spring it at, when Persons the winged horse of Pereby is meant fame and flying renowme) e grownde with his hoofe, sodenly therea wel of moste cleare and pleasaunte sich fro thenceforth was consecrate to and Ladies of learning. rer song, seemeth to imitate the like in

iργύριος μέλος.
is the name of a Nymphe of Arcadie. n Pan being in love pursued, she, flying of the Gods was turned into a reede.

n catching at the Reedes, in stede of the
and puffing hard, (for he was almost
id.) with hys breath made the Reedes to id.) with hys breath made the Reedes to ich he sceing, tooke of them, and, in rece of his lost love, made him a pype in there by Pan and Syrinx is not to bee that the shephearde simplye meante ticall Gods: but rather supposing (as ser graces progenic to be divine and imoas the Paynims were wont to judge ges and Princes, according to Homeres

δε μέγας έστι διοτρεφέος βασιλήος, ε κ Διός εστι, φιλεί δε ε μητίετα Ζεύς.)

e no parents in his judgement so worthy Pan the shepeheards God, and his bes rinx. So that by Pan is here meant famous and victorious king, her higher, late of worthy memorye, K. Henry

And by that name, oftymes (as heretreth) be noted kings ar d mighty Poand in some place Christ himselfe, who Pan and god of Shepheardes.

coroset, he deviseth her crowne to be

and most delicate flowers, instelle of precious stones, wherewith Princes me to bee adorned and embost.

eautifye and set out.

Mocne, whom the Poets faine to be Phorbus, that is, the Sunne.

ningled.

sether. By the mingling of the Reide he White is meant the uniting of the mil houses of Lancaster and Yorke : by e discord and deadly debate this realm was sore traveiled, and almost cleane Fil the famous Henry the seventh, of I'll the famous Henry the seventh, of Lancaster, taking to which the most ver-rene Elisabeth, daughter to the fourth the house of Yorke, begat the most y the eyght aforesayde, in whom was ion of the Whyte rose and the Redde, one of the nine Muses: to whome they honor of all Poeticall Invention, and orye of the Heroical verse. Other say, s the Goddesse of Rethorick; but by manifeste, that they mystake the thyng. n hys Epigrams, that arte semeth to be to Polymnia, saying,

'Signat cuncta manu, loquiturque Polymnia gestu.

Which seemeth specially to be meant of Action, and elecution, both special parties of Rethorick: besyde that her name, which (as some construe it) importeth great remembraunce, conteineth another part: but I holde rather with them, which call her Polymnia, or Polyhymnia, of her good singing.

Bay branches, be the signe of honor and victory, and therfore of mighty Conquerors worn in theyr triumphes, and eke of famous Poets, as saith Petrarch in hys Sonets,

'Arbor vittoriosa triomphale,

'Honor d' Imperadori et di Poeti,' &c.

The Graces be three sisters, the daughters of Jupitr, (whose names are Aglaia, Thalia, Euphrosyne; and Homer onely added a fourth, s. Pasithes) otherwise called Charites, that is, thankes: whom the Poetes feyned to be the Goddesses of all bountic and comclines, which therefore (as sayth Theodontius) they make three, to wete, that men first ought to be gracious and bountifull to other freely; then to receive benefits at other mens hands cur the to receive extends at other mens name cut-trously; and thirdly, to requite them thankfully; which are three sundry Actions in liberalitye. And Boccace saith, that they be painted naked (as they were indeede on the tombe of C. Julius Cærar) the one having her backe toward us, and her face fromwarde, as proceeding from us; the other two toward us, noting double thanke to be due to us for the benefit we have done.

Deffly, finelye and nimbly.

Sootr. sweete. Meriment, mirth.

Berre, a beavic of ladyes, is spoken figuratively for a company, or troupe: the terme is taken of Larkes. For they say a Bevic of Larkes, even as a

Covey of Partridge, or an eye of Pheasaunts.

Ladyes of the lake be Nymphes. For it wa olde opinion amongste the Auncient Heathen, that of every spring and fountains was a goddesse the Soveraigne. Whiche opinion stucke in the myndes of men not manye yeares sithence, by meanes of certain fine fablers, and lowd lyers, such as were the Authors of King Arthure the great, and such like, who tell many an unlawfull leasing of the Ladyes of the Lake, that is, the Nymphes. For the word Nymphe in Greeke, signifieth Well water, or otherwise, a Sponse or Bryde.

Behight, called or named.

Cloris, the name of a Nymph, and signifieth cenesee; of whome is sayd, that Zephyrus, the Westerne wind, being in love with her, and cover-ing her to wyfe, gave her for a dowrie the chiefedome and soveraigntye of al flowres, and greene herbes, growing on earth.

Olives bene, The Olive was wont to be the ensigne of Pence and quietness, syther for that it cannot be planted and pruned, and so carefully looked to as it ought, but in time of peace; or e a for that the Olive tree, they say, will not grow neare the Firre tree, which is dedicate to Mars the God of riffe tree, which is desired to Mars the God of battaile, and used most for speares, and other instruments of warre. Whereuppon is finely feigned, that when Neptune and Minera strove for the naming of the citie of Athens, Neptune striking the ground with his mace caused a horse to come call responsion.

Inthis, the Moone, so called of Cynthus a hyll, giver.

Polent, Y i

EMBLEME.

This Poesye is taken out of Virgile, and there of him used in the person of Æneas to his mother Venus, appearing to him in likenesse of one of Dianaes damosells: being there most divinely set forth. To which similitude of divinitie Hobbinoll, comparing the excelency of Elisa, and being, through the worthynes of Colins song, as it were, overcome with the hugenesse of his imagination, brusteth

MAYE.

ÆGLOGA QUINTA. ARGUME

IN this Afte Æglogue, under the persons of two shepheards, Piers and of pastoures or Ministers, or the Protestant and the Catholique: wh whether the life of the one must be like the other: with whom he maintelne any felouship, or give too much credit to their colourable a tale of the foxe, that, by such a counterpoynt of craftines, deceive

PALINODE.

Palinode. Is not thilke the mery moneth of When love-lads masken in fresh aray? [May, I sawe a shole With singing, With singing, How falles it, then, we no merrier bene, Ylike as oth rs, girt in gawdy greene? Our bloncket liveryes bene all to sadde For thilke same season, when all is yeladd Whereto they
With pleasaunce: the grownd with grasse, To see those it
the Woods Louds, Made my hear the Woods
With greene leaves, the bushes with blooming Tho to the gre Youghes folke now flocken in every where.

Before them yo

lie, so farre am I from envie. ndnesse inly I pitie: rs little regarden their charge, etting their sheepe runne at large, ime, that should be sparely spent, and wanton meryment. [stedde,

while their flockes be unfedde: me theyr sheepe bene not their

nem runne at randon alone: e hyred for little pay t caren as little as they he flocke, so they han the fleece, he gayne, paying but a peece.
account both these will make: he hire which he doth take,

or leaving his Lords taske. [aske. Pan account of shepeherdes shall , now I see thou speakest of ackest somedele their delight.

ad rather be envied, my foe, then fonly pitied: eede were, pitied would be, ther should scorne at me mishappe that nas remedie, rene dedes of fond foolerie. eir God his good does them send, uite thereof, that is pleasure,

ey bene dead, their good is ygoe, in rest, well as other moe: m wends what they spent in cost,

y left behind them is lost. od, but if it be spend; ood for none other end. Palinodie, thou art a worldes

Pitch, mought needes be defilde; ds (as Algrind used to say) ive vlike as men of the laye. sits to care for their heire, ir heritage doe impaire. [aunce, provide for meanes of maintentue their wont countenaunce: d must walke another way, sovenance he must forsay.

his loines why should he regard ched with that he hath spard? hilke God, that gave him that

live in loudnes and fust, all the welth and the trust. er left by inheritaunce; me wasted with misgovernaunce;

But through this, and other their miscreaunce They maken many a wrong chevisaunce, Heaping up waves of welth and woe, The floddes whereof shall them overflowe Sike mens follie I cannot compare

and wanton meryment. [stedde, Better then to the Apes folish care, bene shepeheardes for the Devils | That is so enamoured of her young one, (And yet, God wote, such cause hath she none) That with her hard hold, and straight em-

bracing, She stoppeth the breath of her youngling. So often times, when as good is meant, Evil ensueth of wrong entent.

The time was once, and may againe retorne, (For ought may happen, that hath bene beforne) When shepeheards had none inheritaunce,

Ne of land, nor fee in sufferaunce, But what might arise of the bare sheem (Were it more or lesse) which they did keepe,

Well ywis was it with shephcards thoe: Nought having, nought feared they to forgoe; For Pan himselfe was their inheritaunce. And little them served for their mayntenaunce. The shepheards God so wel them guided,

That of nought they were unprovided; Butter enough, honye, milke, and whay, en shepheards other things tend, But tract of time, and long prosperitie, air God his good does them send, That nource of vice, this of insolencie, And their flockes fleeces them to araye:

Lulled the shepheards in such securitie, by here liven at ease and leasure? That, not content with lovall obeysaunce, Some gan to gape for greedle governaunce. And match them selfe with mighty potentates, Lovers of Lordship, and troublers of states. Tho gan shepheards swaines to looke aloft,

And leave to live hard, and learne to ligge soft: Tho, under colour of shepeheards, somewhile

There crept in Wolves, ful of fraude, and That often devoured their owne sheepe, [guile, And often the shepheards that did hem keepe:

This was the first source of shepheards sorowe, That now nill be quitt with baile nor borrowe. Pal. Three thinges to beare bene very burdenous But the fourth to forbeare is outragious:

Wemen, that of Loves longing once lust, Hardly forbearen, but have it they must: So when choler is inflamed with rage, Wanting revenge, is hard to asswage: And who can counsell a thristic soule, With patience to forbeare the offred bowle? is child, if in his wayes he stood? But of all burdens, that a man can beare, Most is, a fooles talke to beare and to heare,

I wene the Geaunt has not such a weight. That beares on his shoulders the heavens height.

Thou findest faulte where nys to be found, And buildest strong warke upon a wrake

ground :

Thou raylest on, right withouten reason, And blamest bem much for small encheaso How shoulden shepheardes live, if not so? What! should they pynen in payne and woe? Nay, say I thereto, by my deare borrowe, If I may rest, I nill live in sorrowe.

Sorrowe ne neede be hastened on, For he will come, without calling, anone While times enduren of tranquillitie, Usen we freely our felicitie;

For, when approchen the stormie stowres, We mought with our shoulders beare of the

sharpe showres; And, sooth to sayne, nought seemeth sike

That shepheardes so witen ech others life, And layen her faults the world beforme, The while their foes done cache of hem scorne, Let none mislike of that may not be mended: So conteck soone by concord mought be ended. Piers. Shepheard, I list none accordaunce

make sake: With shepheard that does the right way for- For to entrap in thy tender st And of the twaine, if choice were to me, Had lever my foe then my freend he be;

For what concord han light and darke sam? Or what peace has the Lion with the Lambe? such faitors, when their false harts bene hidde, Will doe as did the Foxe by the Kidde. Pal. Now, Piers, of felowship, tell us that

saying: straying.

For the Ladde can keepe both our flockes from Piers. Thilke same Kidde (as I can well Was too very foolish and unwise; [devise) For on a tyme, in Sommer season,

The Gate her dame, that had good reason, Yode forth abroade unto the greene wood, To brouze, or play, or what shee thought good : But, for she had a motherly care

Of her young sonne, and wit to beware, Shee set her youngling before her knee, That was both fresh and lovely to see, And full of favour as kidde mought be. His Vellet head began to shoote out,

And his wreathed hornes gan newly sprout: The blossomes of lust to bud did beginne, And spring forth ranckly under his chinne. 'My Sonne,' (quoth she and with that gan

For carefull thoughts in her heart did creepe) 'God blesse thee, poore Orphane! as he

And send thee joy of thy jollitee.

Thy father, that word she spake with payne, Ah, deare Lord! and sweete For a sigh had nigh rent her heart in twaine) That some good body woulde

mought me,

'Thy father, had be lived this di To see the braunche of his lady How would be have joyed at this But sh! false Fortune such pay di And cutte of hys dayes with un Betraying him into the traines Now L a wayifull widdows beh Of my old age have this one del To see thee succeede in thy fath And florish in flowres of lusty-b For even so thy father his head And so his hauty hornes did he Tho marking him with meltin

A thrilling throbbe from her ha And interrupted all her other a With some old sorowe that breache: cemed shee sawe in the young

The old lineaments of his fath At last her solein silence she be And gan his newe-budded bear Kiddie, (quoth shee) thou h

I have of thy health and thy Which many wyld beastes lig But most the Foxe, masster of For he has voued thy last cor For-thy, my Kiddie, be ruld i And never give trust to his to And, if he channee come when Sperre the yate fast for feare Ne for all his worst, nor for h Open the dore at his request.

So schooled the Gate her v That answerd his mother, all Tho went the pensife Damme And chaunst to stomble at the Her stombling steppe some v (For such, as signes of ill praised:)

Yet forth shee yode, thereat And Kiddie the dore sperred It was not long, after shee was But the false Foxe came to the Not as a Foxe, for then he h But all as a poore pedler he d Bearing a trusse of tryfles at As bells, and babes, and glass A Biggen he had got about 1 For in his headpeace he felt His binder heele was wrapt For with great cold he had g There at the dore he cast me And layd him downe, and

know the cause of his complaint: After his chere the Pedler can chat, I meaning is double eved.

young maister!' (then gan he

that sweete face I espye carrion careas abounds. pittying hys heavinesse, use of his great distresse, o, and whence that he were? at had well yound his lere, his talke with many a teare: , alas! and little lack of dead, eved by your beastlyhead. : sheepe, albe my coloure donne, g traveile I am brent in the sonne : my Grandsire me sayd be true, very sybbe to you: oodlihead doe not disdayne ired of so simple swaine. nd favour, then, I you pray vd to fore-stall my neere decay.'

f his packe a glasse he tooke,

ile Kiddie unwares did looke,

namored with the newell, he deemed deare for the jewell:

be the dore, and in came xe, as he were starke lame: clapt betwixt his legs twayne,

ild be descried by his trayne.

ove of the glasse he did see.

hin, the Kidde made him good glee,

know the cause of his companion, And how he could show many a his close behind the Wickets clink, And how he could show many a his could show the many a his could show the cause of the the cause And tell many lesinges of this and that, And how he could shewe many a fine knack: In the basket for the Kidde to fynd: Which when the Kidde stooped downe to catch, He popt him in, and his basket did latch: Ne stayed he once the dore to make fast our corpse from the carefull stounds, But ranne awaye with him in all hast. [hyde, Home when the doubtfull Damme had her She mought see the dore stand open wyde. All agast, lowdly she gan to call Her Kidde; but he nould answere at all: Tho on the flore she saw the merchaundise Of which her sonne had sette to deere a prise What helpe? her Kidde shee knewe well was gone:

Shee weeped, and wayled, and made great mone. Such end had the Kidde, for he nould warned Of craft, coloured with simplicitie: And such end, perdie, does all hem remayne, That of such falsers freendship bene fayne. Pal. Truly, Piers, thou art beside thy wit, Furthest fro the marke, weening it to hit. Now, I pray thee, lette me thy tale borrowe For our Sir John, to say to morrowe At the Kerke, when it is holliday; For well he meanes, but little can say. But, and if foxes bene so crafty as so, Much needeth all shepheards hem to knowe.

Piers, Of their falshode more could I recount. But now the bright Sunne gynneth to dismount;

And, for the deawie night now doth nye.

I hold it best for us home to hve.

PALINODES EMBLEME. Has nev anieros anierei. PIERS HIS EMBLEME. Τίς δ' άρα πίστις απίστω;

GLOSSE.

same moneth. It is applyed to the moneth, when all menne delight ith pleasaunce of fieldes, and gardens, eries, gray coates. ere, a straunge, yet proper kind of

diminutive, a. little bushes of hau-

ultitude, taken of fishe, whereof some,

going in great companies, are sayde to swimme in a shole.

Yode, went. Joryssaunce, Joye.

Swinck, labour. Inly, entirely.

Faytours, vagabonds.

Great Pan, is Christ, the very God of all shep-heards, which calleth himselfe the greate, and good shepherd. The name is most rightly (megood snephera. The name is most rightly (me-thinkes) applyed to him; for Pan signifieth all, or omnipotent, which is onely the Lord Jesus. And by that name (as I remember) be is called of East

bius, in his fifte booke De Preparat. Econg., who thereof telleth a proper storye to that purpose. Which story is first recorded of Plutarch, in his the ceasing of Oracles; and of a avoters translated, in his booke of walking sprightes; who sayth, that about the same time that our Lord sufsayth, that about the same time that our Lord suf-fered his most bitter passion, for the redemtion of man, certein passengers sayling from Italy to Cyprus, and passing by certaine Hes called Paus, heard a voyce calling allowed Thamus. Thames! (now Thamus was the name of an Ægyptian, which was Pilote of the ship) who, giving eare to the cry, was bidden, when he came to Palodes, to tel that the great Pan was dead; which he doubt-ing to doe, yet for that when he came to Palodes. ing to doe, yet for that when he came to Palodes, there sodeinly was such a calme of winde, that the there sodemly was such a came of wince, that eshippe stood still in the sea unmoved, he was forced to cry alowd, that Pan was dead! wherewithall there was heard suche piteous outcryes, and dreadfull shriking, as bath not bene the like. By whych Pan, though of some be understoode the great Satanus, whose kingdome at that time was by Christ conquered, the gates of hell broken up, and death by death delivered to eternall death, (for at that time, as he sayth, all Oracles sur-cessed, and enchanned spirits, that were went to deinde the people, thenceforth held theyr peacs;) and also at the domains of the Emperoure Tiberius, who that Pan should be, answere was made bim by the wisest and best learned, that it was the some of Mercuric and Penclope; yet I thinke it more properly meant of the death of Christ, the onely and very Pan, then suffering for his

I as I am, seemeth to imitate the commen proverb, Malim invidere mihi omnes, quam miseres-Nas is a syncope, for ne has, or has not: as nould

for would not.

The with them doth imitate the Epitaphe of the ryotous king Sardanapalus, which he caused to be written on his tombe in Greake: which verses be thus translated by Tullie,

' Hase habul quæ edi, quæque exaturata libido ' Hausit, at illa manent multa ac præclara re-licta.'

Which may thus be turned into English.

'All that I cate did I joye, and all that I greedily

gorged:
'As for those many goodly matters left I for others.'

Much like the Epitaph of a good olde Erie of De-ronshire, which though much more wisedome be-wraleth then Sardampains, yet tath a suncke of his sensuall delights and beastlinesses; the rymes be these :

'Ho, ho! who lies bere?
'I the good Earle of Devonshere,
'And Mande my wife that was ful deare:
'We lived together ly, yeare.
'That we spent, we had:
'That we gave, we have:
'That we lefte, we lost.'

Algrand, the name of a shepheard.

Cherisquace, sometime of Un sometime of other for spoyle. prise, and sometime for chieffic Pan hemselfe, God: according teronomie, That, in division of t to the tribe of Levie no portion bee allotted, for God him-life

Men of the lay, Laymen

Some gan, meant of the Pops, a tian prelates, which usurps a tyr in the Churche, and with Peters open a wide gate to al wickedn government. Nought here spot to deny fatherly rule and gove maliciously of late have done, to and hinderaunce of the Church the pride and disorder of such, as ing their sheeps, indeeds feeds of Source, welspring and original Borrows, pledge or snertis.

The Genunte is the greate Atlan feign to be a huge gessint, that b his shoulders; being indeede a mountaine in Mauritania, that mointains in Manriana, this which, to mans seeming, percet seemeth to touch the heavens, they not amisse, that this fable; Atlas king of the same country bee, that that hil had his denomin Prometheus, who (as the Greeke out the hidden courses of lent imagination: wherefore that he susteyned the firmament Many other conjectures needs les Warke, wonke,

Encheason, cause, occasion

Deare borow, that is our Sav pledge of all mens debts to deal Wylen, blume. Nought seemeth, is unseemely.

Conteck, strife, contention.

Her, theyr, as useth Chancer.

Han, for have,

Sam, together.

This tale is much like to this but the Catastrophe and end is the Kidde may be understoode the faythfull and true Christi Christe, that hath alreadic wi words (as heere doth the gor ones, to beware of such doubl Foxe, the false and faithlesse Is no credit to be given, no mart.

The Gate, the Gote : Norther

O into A.

Fode, went : afforesayd She set, a figure called Faction, bute reasonable actions and sp able creatures.

The bloosmes of lust, be it heares, which then beginne to foorth, when lustfull heare be And with, a very pasticul :

youngling or pupill, that needeth a patheticall parenthesis, to encreas

erbaton.
. of the fathers body, is the child. Alluded to the saying of Andromache

is, sic ille manus, sic ora ferebat.'

Arob, a percing sighe.

collusion, s. coloured guile, because al beasts, is most wily and crafty. ate, shut the dore.

ie gotes stombling is here noted as an he like to be marked in all histories: the leaste of the Lorde Hastingues in de the third his dayes. For. us dreame (whiche was a shrewde his mishap that followed) it is sayd, forning, ryding toward the tower of e to sitte uppon matters of counsell, mbled twise or thrise by the way: ne, that ryding with him in his comivie to his neere destenie, was secretly afterward noted for memorie of his that ensewed. For being then as a might be, and least doubting any ger, he was, within two howres after, me put to a shamefull deathe.

y such trifes are noted, the reliques and the reliques to the reliquest to

opish superstition, which put no

smal religion in Belles, and Babies, s. Idoles, and glasses, s. Paxes, and such lyke trumperics.

Great cold, for they boast much of their outward

patience, and voluntarye sufferannee, as a worke of merite and holy humblenesse. Succete S. Chartite, The Catholiques common othe, and onely speache, to have charitye alwayes in and oney species, to have chartye always in their mouth, and sometime in their outward Ac-tions, but never inwardly in fayth and godly zeale. Clincke, a keyhole. Whose diminutive is clicket,

Clincke,a keyhole. used of Chaucer for a Kev

Stounds, fittes: aforesayde.

His lere, his lesson.

Medled, mingled.

Bestlihead, agreeing to the person of a beast.

Sibbe, of kinne. Newell, a newe thing.

To forestall, to prevent.

Glee, chere : afforesayde.

Deare a price, his lyfe which he lost for those toyer Such ende, is an Epiphonema, or rather the moral

of the whole tale, whose purpose is to warme the protestaunt beware, how he giveth credit to the unfaythfull Catholique; wherof we have dayly proofes sufficient, but one moste famous of all practised of late yeares in Fraunce, by Charles the nynth. Faune, gladde or desyrous.

Our sir lohn, a Popishe priest. A saying fit for the grosenesse of a shepheard, but spoken to taunte unlearned Priestes. Dismount, descende or set.

Nye, draweth nere.

Emblemes make one whole Hexafirst spoken of Palinodie, as in re-m that be distrustfull, is a peece of m. intending, that who doth most mis false. For such experience in falshod trust in the mynd, thinking no lesse is in others then in hymselfe. But Piers thereto strongly replyeth with an other peece of the same verse, saying, as in his former fable, what fayth then is there in the faythlesse? For if fayth be the ground of religion, which fayth they dayly false, what hold is then there of theyr religion? And thys is all that they saye.

JUNE.

ÆGLOGA SEXTA. ARGUMENT.

e is wholly rowed to the complayning of Colins ill successe in his love. For being (as is afor moured of a country lasse, Rosalind, and having (as seemeth) founde place in her heart, he to his deare frend Hobbinoll, that he is nowe forsaken unfaithfully, and in his steede, another shepheard, received disloyally. And this is the whole Argument of this Æglogue.

HORRINGE.

COLIN CLOUT.

ollin, here the place whose plesaunt. The Bramble bush, where Byrds of every kynde [inynde: To the waters fall their tunes attemper right, shades hath weard my wandring Col. O happy Hobbinoll! I blesse thy state, hat wants me here to worke de- That Paradise hast founde whych Adam

lost:

avre, the gentle warbling wynde, coole, as no where else I fynde:

e ground with daintye Daysies

Thy lovely layer here mayst thou freely hoste

Nor elvish ghosts, nor gastly owles doe flee. For sith I h Which hin But frendly Faeries, met with many Graces, And lightfoote Nymphes, can chace the lingdrov I never lyst ring Night
With Heydeguyes, and trimly trodden traces, But, pyping ring Night hight, Nought wei Doe make them musick for their more delight: blam And Pan himselfe, to kisse their christall Ne strive to With sheph faces, [bright: With sheph Will pype and daunce when Phoebe shineth But feede h Such pierlesse pleasures have we in these places. best. I wote my r Col. And I, whylst youth and course of The fytter t carelesse yeeres Enough is r Did let me walke withouten lincks of love, In such delights did joy amongst my peeres: But ryper age such pleasures doth reprove: My fancye eke from former follies move And poore 1 The God of Who taugh: To stayed steps; for time in passing weares, (As garments doen, which wexen old above,) He, whilst l Of shephear And draweth newe delightes with hoary Well couth heares. slake The flames The couth I sing of love, and tune my pype Unto my plaintive pleas in verses made:
The would I seeke for Queene-apples unrype, And tell us The while o To give my Rosalind; and in Sommer shade Nowe dead Dight gaudy Girlonds was my common trade, (O! why sh To crowne her golden locks: but yeeres more And all hvs rype, And losse of her, whose love as lyfe I wayd, Those weary wanton toyes away dyd wype, The fame w But, if on n Of that the Hob. Colin, to heare thy rymes and rounde-I soone wou layes, [singe, Which then west went on westfull halls to woe.

ng my lasse to wexe so light, be knowne for such thy

m not as I wish I were, repheards, which your flocks do

lylls, or dales, or other where, se all of thys so wicked deede: lasse, whose flowre is woxe a

se favth is turned to faithlesse

That she the truest shepheards hart made bleede,

That lyves on earth, and loved her most clere.

Hob. O, carefull Colin! I lament thy case: Thy teares would make the hardest flint to flowe! Ah, faithlesse Rosalind and voide of grace That art the roote of all this ruthfull woe! But now is time, I gesse, homeward to goe: Then ryse, ye blessed Flocks, and home apace, Least night with stealing steppes doe you forsloe, [trace. And wett your tender Lambes that by you

COLINS EMBLEME. Gus speme spenta.

GLOSSE.

m and place e, or place of delights. So he come, wherin Hobbinoll made his abode, / Paradise, in scripture called Eden, in his first creation was placed: most learned is thought to be in the most fertile pleasaunte country as may appeare by Diodorus Syculus
it, in the historic of Alexanders of.) lying betweene the two famous h are sayd in scripture to flowe out ygris and Euphrates, whereof it is

oyle. This is no Poetical fiction, but oken of the Poete selfe, who for ion of private affayres, (as I have himselfe informed) and for his nt, removing out of the Northparts, South, as Hobbinoll indeede advised

that is in the North countrye, where

The Southpartes, where he nowe h thoughe they be full of hylles and ent is very hyllye and woodye; and fled, for Kanish in the Saxons tongue die.) yet in respecte of the North-called dales. For indede the North

higher countrye. ı. Kc. infortunes (whereof they be tokens)

ries. The opinion of Facrics and ld. and yet sticketh very religiously But to roote that rancke of some. es oute of mens hearts, the truth is, o such thinges, nor yet the shadowes but onely by a sort of bald Friers asvelings so feigned; which as in all so in that, soughte to nousell the le in ignoraunce, least, being once th the truth of things, they woulde in tyme smell out the untruth of theyr packed pelfe, and Massepenie religion. But the sooth is, that when all Italy was distracte into the Factions of the Guelfes and the Gibelins, being two famous houses in Florence, the name began through their great mischiefes and many outrages, to be so odious, or rather dreadfull, in the peoples eares, that, if theyr children at any time were frowards and wanton, they would say to them that the Guelfe or the Gibeline came. Which words nowe from then: (as many things els) be come into our usage, and, for Guelles and Gibelines, we say Elfes and Goblins. No otherwise then the Frenchmen used to say of that valiaunt captain, the very scourge of Fraunce, the Lorde Thalbot, afterward Erle of Shrewsbury, whose noblesse bred such a terrour in the hearts of the French, that oft times even great armies were defaicted and put to flyght at the onely hearing of hys name. In somuch that the French wemen, to affray theyr chyldren, would tell them that the Talbot commeth.

Many Graces, though there be indeede but three Graces or Charites (as afore is sayd) or at the utmost but foure, yet, in respect of many gyftes of bounty there may be sayde more. And so Musseus sayth, that in Heroes eyther eye there sat a hundred Graces. And, by that authoritye, thys same Poete, in his Pageaunts, saith 'An hundred Graces on her eyelidde sate,' &c.

Hewleques. A country daunce or rownd. The

Heulequies, A country dannee or rownd. The conceipt is, that the Graces and Nymphes dedaunce unto the Muses and Pan his musicke all night by Moonelight. To signific the pleasauntnight by Moonelight. se of the soyle.

Peeres. Equalles, and felow shepheards. Quene-apples unripe, imitating Virgils verse.

'Ipse ego cana legam tenera lanugine mala.'

Neighbour grores, a straunge phrase in English, but word for word expressing the Latine vicina nemora.

Spring, not of water, but of young trees springing.

Calliope, afforesayde. Thys staffe is tall of vertes
poetical invention.

Tambarines, an oble kind of instrument, which I

Tamberines, an oble kind of instrument, which of some is supposed to be the Clarion.

Pas with Photos, the tale is well knowns, howe that Pan and Apollo, striving for excellencys in unsicks, show Midas for their indge. Who, being corrected with partial affection, gave the victorys to Pan undeserved! for which Phashus sette a payre of Asses cares upon bys head, &c.

payre of Asses cares upon nys mean, acc.

Thyrus I has by Tityrus is meant Chancer, hath
bene already sufficiently sayde; and by thys more
playns appeareth, that he sayth, be tolde merye
tales. Such as be hys Canterburie tales, whom he
calleth the God of Poetes for hys excellencie; so as

Tullie calleth Leutnius, &

of hys life.
To make, to verside.
O sale. A pretye Epo
Discortante: he sees

Menalcas, the name of but here is meant a pera-against whoms he often

EMBLENE.

You remember that in the fyrst Æglogue Colins | hope, that was, is cleane Peesis was Anchora speme: for that as then there was hope of favour to be found in tyme. But nowe being cleane forforme and rejected of her, as whose thys Embleme.

JULYE.

ÆGLOGA SEPTIMA. ARGUMENT.

THIN Aglogue is made in the honour and commendation of good shepeheards, disprayse of proude and ambitious Pastours: Such as Morrell is here im

THOMALIN.

Tho. Is not thilke same a goteheard prowde, Come downe, and learne That sittes on yonder bancke,

Whose straying heard them selfe doth shrowde, Mor. Syker, thous but

Emong the bushes rancke?

Mor. What, ho! thou jollye shepheards

Come up the hyll to me; [swayne, Better is then the lowly playne, Als for thy flocke and thee. Thom. Ah! God shield, man, that I should

And learne to looke alofte; [clime,

This reede is ryfe, that oftentime Great clymbers fall unsoft.

In humble dales is footing fast,

The trode is not so tickle : And though one fall through heedlesse bast, Yet is his misse not mickle.

And now the Sonne hath reared up

His fyerie-footed teme, Making his way betweene the Cuppe And golden Diademe:

The rampant Lyon hunts he fast, With dogges of noysome breath, Whose balefull barking bringes in hast

Pyne, plagues, and dreery death. Agaynst his cruell scortching heate, Where hast thou coverture?

The wastefull hylls unto his threate

Is a playne overture.

But, if thee lust to holden chat

With seely shepherds swayne,

That Thomalin can s

And rekes much of th That with fond termes. To blere mine eyes de

In evill houre thou hent Thus holy hylles to b

For sacred unto saints t And of them han they St. Michels Mount who

That wardes the Wes And of St. Brigets bown All Kent can rightly

And they that con of M Sayne most-what, tha

(As goteheards wont) u Beside a learned well.

And wonned not the gre Upon mount Olivet

Feeding the blessed flor Which dyd himselfe

Thom, O blessed sheepe That bought his flock

And them did save with From Wolves that we Mor. Besyde, as holy i

There is a hyllye place Where Titan ryseth from To renue hys dayly re toppe the starres bene stayed,

bey bene to heaven forewent,

d is with them goe:

Theyr sample onely to us lent,

e skie doth leane; That als we mought doe soe Shepheards they weren of the best, And lived in lowlye leas: cave where Phœbe layed eard long to dreame. re used shepheards all And, sith theyr soules bene now at rest. Why done we them disease? Such one he was (as I have heard neyr flocks at will, ply one did fall ne rest did spill. Old Algrind often sayne) That whilome was the first shepheard, shepheardes bene forsayd And lived with little gavne: And meeke he was, as meeke mought be, es of delight, ene thou be affrayd his hilles height. Simple as simple sheepe; Humble, and like in eche degree n I tell thee more. · Ladves bowre; The flocke which he did keepe. edes to strow my store, Often he used of hys keepe s hill of our.
holy Faunes recourse, A sacrifice to bring, Nowe with a Kidde, now with a sheepe, The Altars hallowing. mes haunten rathe; So lowted he unto hys Lord salt Medway his sourse, he Nymphes doe bathe; Such favour couth he fynd, lway, that trickling stremis to dales of Kent, That sithens never was abhord The simple shepheards kynd. elder brother Themis And such, I weene, the brethren were That came from Canaan: sh waves be meynt. Melampode every where, The brethren twelve, that kept yfere inth, good for Gotes: madding kiddes to smere, to heale theyr throtes. The flockes of mighty Pan. But nothing such thilk shephearde was Whom Ida hyll dyd beare, nills bene nigher heven, That left hys flocke to fetch a lasse, e the passage ethe; Whose love he bought to deare; For he was proude, that ill was payd, prove the piercing levin, ome falles bynethe. (No such mought shepheards bee) And with lewde lust was overlayd: er, thou speakes lyke a lewde [lorrell, Tway things doen ill agree. i to demen so but rude and borrell, But shepheard mought be meeke and mylde, wayes I knowe. Well-cyed, as Argus was e narre, from God more farre, With fleshly follyes undefyled, in old-sayd sawe. And stoute as steede of brasse. strives to touch a starre. Sike one (sayd Algrind) Moses was, es at a strawe. That sawe hys makers face His face, more cleare then Christall glasse, shepheard clymbe to skye s in lowly dales. And spake to him in place. prowd, that, sitting hye, This had a brother (his name I knewe) The first of all his cote, Mountaine sayles. eepe like well belowe, A shepheard trewe, yet not so true As he that earst I hote. e not Melampode: ie hale enough, I trowe, Whilome all these were lowe and lief, theyr abode; with thy Gotes should yede, e myght be corrupted, And loved their flocks to feede; They never stroven to be chiefe, And simple was theyr weede: But now (thanked be God therefore) f the frowie fede, ne weedes be glutted. here dwelled holy saints The world is well amend, Their weedes bene not so nighly wore; Such simplesse mought them shend: e and adore: iselfe, but for the sayncis They bene yelad in purple and pall, So hath theyr god them blist; n be dead of yore.

They reigne and rulen over all,

H H J

And lord it as they list:

Ygyrt with belts of glitterand gold, (Maught they good sheepsheards bene?) Theyr Pan theyr sheeps to them has sold,

I save as some have seene. For Palinode (if thou him ken)

Yode late on Pilgrimage

Rome, (if such be Rome) and then He saw thilke misusage;

For shepsheards (sayd he) there does leade, As Lordes done other where;

Theyr sheepe han crustes, and they the bread; The chippes, and they the chere :

They han the fleece, and eke the flesh, (O, seely sheepe, the while !)

The come is theyrs, let other thresh, Their handes they may not file.

They han great stores and thriftye stockes, Great freendes and feeble foes : What neede hem caren for their flocks,

Theyr boyes can looke to those. These wisards welter in welths waves,

Pampred in pleasures deepe: They han fatte kernes, and leany knaves, Their fasting flockes to keepe.

Sike mister men bene all misgone, They heapen hylles of wrath : Sike syrlye shepheards han we none,

They keepen all the path.

Here is a great of Lost for lacke of tellin

Now, sicker, I see thou Harme may come of a To wyten shepbeards

When folke bene fat, an It is a signe of helth. But say me, what is Ala

That is so oft bynem; Thom. He is a shephen But hath bene long y One daye he sat upon a

(As now thou wouldes But I am taught, by Ali To love the lowe degree For sitting so with bared

An Eagle sored bye. That, weening hys whyte A shell-fish downe let She weend the shell-fish

But therewith bruzd h So now, astonied with th He lyes in lingring pa Mor. Ah! good Algrin But shall be better in

Now farwell, shepheard, Thou hast such doubt

THOMALINS EMBLEME. In medio virtus.

MORRELLS EMBLEME. In summo fælicitas.

GLOSSE.

A tioteheard: by Gotes, in scrypture, be repre-sented the wicked and reprobate, whose pastour also must needes be such.

Banck, is the seate of honor.

Straying heard, which wander out of the waye of truth.

Als, for also.

Clymbe, spoken of Ambition.

Great clymbers, according to Seneca his verse. *Decidunt celsa, graviore lapsus.* Mickle, much.

The sonue, A reason why he refuseth to dwell on Mountaines, because there is no shelter against the scortching Sunne, according to the time of the years, whiche is the whotest moneth of all.

The Cupp and Diademe, be two signes in the Firmament, through which the sonne maketh his

course in the moneth of July.

Lion, Thys is poetically spoken, as if the Sunne did hunt a Lion with one dogge. The meaning whereof is, that in July the soune is in Leo. At which time the Dogge starre, which is called Syrius, or Canicula, reigneth with immoderate heate, causing pestilence, drougth, and many dis-

Overture, an open place. of the French, and used in

To holden chatt, to talke A loords was wont am A learne was wont am signific a Lorde. And the long time asurped theyr taine, were called, for mo Lurdanes, s. Lord Danes, sayd, that the insolencie m was so outragious in thys was so outragious in tury tuned a Briton to be going the Dane set foote upon torne backs, till the Dane abyde the pryce of his dis lesse then present death, expelled, that name of Lips unto the people, whom the to call the Quartane ague t

Paynes.
Westelesse, not understoo & Michels mount, is a pr part of England.

smanns afforceave.

trybe is put for the whole nation, per

ton, the Sonne. Which story is to be isse, the Sonne. Which story is to be storus Syc. of the hyl Ida; from whence, I night time is to bee seene a mightye se skye burned, which toward morning ogather into a rownd forme, and thereof sonne, whome the Poetes call Titan.

Aneuro is Rudymion, whom the Poets ave bene so beloved of Phœbe. s. the the was by her kept saleepe in a cave e of xxx yeares, for to enjoye his com-

at is, in Paradise, where, through errour neards understanding, he sayth, that all did us. to feede theyr flocks, till one, m.) by hys follye and disobedience, made of hys ofspring be debarred and shutte hill in Arabia, where God appeared.

vs bours, a place of pleasure so called.
r Sylvanes he of Poetes feigned to be . Woode. the name of a Ryver in Kent, which, y Rochester, meeteth with Thames, y Rochester, meeteth with Thames, alleth his elder brother, both because r, and also falleth sooner into the Sen. ingled. te and Terebinth be hearbes good to cure

tes : of thone speaketh Mantuane, and Theorritus. *είνθου τράγων είκατον άκρίμονα*.

ween: Note the shepheards simplenesse. oseth that from the hylls is nearer waye

htning, which he taketh for an argu-ve the nighnes to heaven, because the loth commonly light on hygh moun-ording to the saying of the Poete : iuntque summos fulmina montes.'

. losell. a playne fellowe.

nustye or mossie.

ong agoe

, gone afore. shepheard, was Abell the righteons, who re sayth) bent hys mind to keeping of did hys brother Cain to tilling the

nesye Thomalin confirmeth that, which her speach by sondrye reasons he had being both hymselfe sequestred from

and also abhorring it in others of hys eth occasion to prayse the meane and as that wherein is safetic without feare. ithout danner; according to the say-Philosophers, that vertue dwelleth in t, being environed with two contrary eto Morrell replieth with continuance

Philosophers opinion, that albeit all

His keepe, hys charge, s. his flocke. Louted, did honour and reverence.

The brethren, the twelve sonnes of Jacob, which

The ordiner, the twelve somes of Jacob, which were shepe-maisters, and lyved onely ethersupon.

Whom Ida, Paris. which being the sonne of Priamus king of Troy, for his mother Hecubas dreame, which, being with childe of hym, dreamed shee broughte forth a firebrand, that set all the towre of llium on fire, was cast forth on the hyll Ida, where being fostered of shepheards, he cke in

time became a shepheard, and lastly came to the knowledge of his parentage.

A lasse, Helena, the wyfe of Menelaus king of Lacedemonia, was by Venus, for the golden Aple to her geven, then promised to Paris, who thereupon with a sorte of lustye Troyanes, stole her out of Lacedemonia, and kept her in Troye, which was the cause of the tenne yeares warre in Troye, and the moste famous citye of all Asia lamentably

sacked and defaced. Argus, was of the Poets devised to be full of eyes, and therefore to hym was committed the keeping of the transformed Cow. Io: so called, because that, in the print of a Cowes foote, there is figured an I in the middest of an O.

His name, he meaneth Aaron, whose name, for more Decorum, the shepehearde sayth he hath forgot, lest his remembraunce and skill in antiquities of holy writ should seeme to exceede the meanenesse of the Person.

Not so true, for Aaron, in the absence of Moses, started saide, and committed Idolatry.

In purple, spoken of the Popes and Cardinalles, which use such tyrannical colours and pompous paynting. Belts, Girdles

Glitterand, glittering, a participle used sometime in Chaucer, but altogether in I. Gower.

Theyr Pan, that is, the Pope, whom they count theyr God and greatest shepheard.

Pulmode, a shephearde, of whose report he seemeth to speake all thys.

Wisards, greate learned heads, Welter, wallowe.

Kerne, a Churle or Farmer.

Sike mister men, suche kinde of men.

Surly, stately and prowde. Melling, medling.

Bett. better.

Bynempte, named.

Gree, for degree.

Algrind, the name of a shepheard afforesayde, whose myshap he alludeth to the chaunce that happened to the Poet Æschylus, that was brayned with a shell-fishe.

EMBLEME

bountye dwelleth in mediocritie, yet perfect felicitye dwelleth in supremacie: for they say, and most true it is, that happinesse is placed in the highest degree, so as if any thing be higher or better, then that streight way ceaseth to be perfect happines. Much like to that which once I heard alleaged in and have to make which once I heard alreaged in defence of humilitye, out of a great doctour. Suo-rum Christus humillimus: 'which saying a gentle man in the companie taking at the rehownd, heate backe againe with a lyke saying of another doctoure, as he sayde 'Buorum Yens althesimus.'

Wherefore with myne thou dare thy musick Well mous matche? Per. There Or bene thy Bagpypes renne farre out of frame? Lan Or hath the Crampe thy joynts benomd with Of all m ache? For I broug Per. Ah! Willye, when the hart is ill assayde, But Coli How can Bagpipe or joynts be well apayd? That he pu Wil. What the foule evill hath ther so bes-Sore agains tadde? Wil. Sicke Whilom thou was peregall to the best But who And wont to make the jolly shepeheards gladde, lost i With pyping and dauncing did passe the Per, That ! daunce; rest. Which over Per. Ah! Willye, now I have learnd a newe Wil But, f My old musick mard by a newe mischaunce. Wil. Mischiefe mought to that mischaunce Were not be befall, Per. Well That so hath raft us of our meriment. dowr But reede me what payne doth thee so appall; Sike a sor Or lovest thou, or bene thy younglings mis-Cud. Gynne [and mee: went? Per. Love hath misled both my younglings tway Sike a ju I pyne for payne, and they my payne to sec.

Wil. Perdie, and wellawaye, ill may they
thrive! Per. 'It fel ₩il. Hey Per. When Never knew I lovers sheepe in good plight: Wil. Nov But, and if in rymes with me thou dare strive, Per. Sitting Such fond fantsies shall soone be put to flight Hey Wil. Per. That shall I doe, though mochell worse Per. The wi I fared: Wil. The Never shall be sayde that Perigot was dared. Wil. Then loe, Perigot, the Pledge which I will Hard plight, Per. Trippii A mazer ywrought of the Maple warre, Wil. She Wherein is enchased many a fayre sight Per. Well d Of Beres and Twores, that maken fler

i gazd on her as they were wood, Voode as he that did them keepe. the bonilasse passed bye, ley, ho, bonilasse! rovde at me with glauncing eye, cleare as the christall glasse as the Sunnye beame so bright, ley, ho, the Sunne-beame unceth from Phæbus face forthright, so love into thy hart did streame as the thonder cleaves the cloudes, ley, ho, the Thouder erein the lightsome levin shroudes, so cleaves thy soule asonder: as Dame Cynthias silver raye, Icy, ho, the Moonelight! on the glyttering wave doth playe, such play is a pitteous plight. glaunce into my heart did glide; Hey, ho, the glyder! erewith my soule was sharply gryde, such woundes soone wexen wider. sting to raunch the arrow out, Hey, ho, Perigot! ft the head in my hart-roote, t was a desperate shot. re it ranckleth, ay more and more, ey, ho, the arrowe an I find salve for my sore: re is a curclesse sorrowe. though my bale with death I bought, ght,

you may buye golde to deere. hether in paynefull love I pyne, , ho, pinching payne! ve in welth, she shalbe mine, if thou can her obteine, for gracelesse greefe ho, gracelesse griefe e shee slewe me with her eye, by follye be the priefe. t, that sawe it, simple shepe, ho, the fayre flocke e thereof, my death shall weepe, one with many a mocke. love on a holye eve,

o, holidaye since my hart did greve, deth our roundelay. Perigot of the best, ot greatly overgone, mder-songs well addrest.

who has the victorye

Cud. Fayth of my soule, I deeme ech ayned:

For-thy let the Lambe be Willye his ow And for Perigot, so well hath hym payner To him be the wroughten mazer alone. Per. Perigot is well pleased with the doon

Ne can Willye wite the witelesse herdgroot Wil. Never dempt more right of beautye

weene, [Queen The shepheard of Ida that judged beauti Cud. But tell me, shepherds, should it n yshend

Your roundels fresh, to heare a doolefu verse

Of Rosalend (who knowes not Rosalend?) That Colin made? ylke can I you rehearse. Per. Now say it, Cuddie, as thou art a ladde: With mery thing its good to medle sadde. Wil. Fayth of my soule, thou shalt ycrouned bē

In Colins stede, if thou this song areede; For never thing on earth so pleaseth me As him to heare, or matter of his deede. Cud. Then listneth ech unto my heavy laye, And tune your pypes as ruthful as ye may.

'Ye wastefull Woodes! beare witnesse of my woe,

Wherein my plaints did oftentimes resound: Ye carelesse byrds are privie to my cryes, Which in your songs were wont o make a part: y, ho, heavie cheere! Thou, pleasaunt spring, hast luld me oft a sleepe, should thilk lasse not from my Whose streames my tricklinge teares did ofte augment.

> Resort of people doth my greefs augment, The walled townes doe worke my greater woe; The forest wide is fitter to resound The hollow Echo of my carefull cryes I hate the house, since thence my love did part, Whose waylefull want debarres myne eyes from sleepe.

> 'Let stremes of teares supply the place of sleepe; Let all, that sweete is, voyd: and all that may my woe augment

> My doole, draw neare! More meete to wayle Bene the wild woodes, my sorowes to resound, Then bedde, or bowre, both which I fill with cryes.

When I them see so waist, and fynd no part

a roundle never heard I Of pleasure past, Here will I dwell apart none: In gastfull grove therefore, till my last sleepe Doe close mine eyes : so shall I not augment With sight of such as chaunge my restlesse woe. , I fear me, thou have a squint Helpe me, ye banefull byrds, whose shrieking sound

I's signe of dreery death, my deadly cryes.

mory or mys misuseeds that dred her woe, The night

PERIGOT HIS EMBLEM! Vincenti gloria victi. WILLYES EMBLEME. Vinto non vitto. CUDDIES EMBLEME. Felice chi pno.

GLOSSE.

Besendde, disposed, ordered.
Perepuli, equall.
Whitome, once.
Rafts, bereft, deprived.
Missent, gon a straye.
Ill may, according to Virgile.

'Infelix o semper ovis pecus.'

"Infelix o semper ovis pecus."

A mazer: So also do Theocritus and Virgile feigne pledges of their strafe.

Enchezed, engraved. Such pretie descriptions every where useth Theocritus to bring in his Idyllia. For which speciall cause, indeed, he by that name termeth his Æglogues; for Idyllion in Greake signifieth the shape or picture of any thyngs, where his Edglogues; for Idyllion in Greake signifieth the shape or picture of any thyngs, where his booke is ful. And not, as I have heard some fondly guesse, that they be called not Idyllia, but Hædulia, of the Gotcheards in them.

Enswelled, wrought betwene.

Harvest Queene, The manner of country folks in harvest tyme

Pousse, Pease.

It fell spos: Perigot maketh all hys song in the auther.

prayse of his underverse. uprightly sa

uprightly sa shoo deserve Greete, we Chaplet, a Leven, Lig Cynthia, y Gryde, per But if, not Squint eye. Ech have, s

SEPTEMBER.

ÆGLOGA NONA. ARGUMENT.

Diggon Davie is devised to be a shepheard that, in hope of more gaune, drore his sheepe into a farre courseth at large.

HOBBINOL.

DIGGON DAVIE! I bidde her god They looken bigge as Bulls that bene bate, on her is, or I missaye. Ier was her, while it was daye-light, her is a most wretched wight: that was, is wightly past,
r at earst the dirke night doth hast. s the fayre flocke thou was wont to Sitte we downe here under the hill: they chaffred, or at mischiefe dead? Tho may we talke and tellen our fill stion ripeth up cause of newe woe, opened, mote unfolde many moe Nav, but sorrow close shrouded in hart, to kepe is a burdenous smart :

ng imparted is more eath to beare: he rayne is faln, the cloudes wexen PATP re, sithence I sawe thy head last, iree Moones bene fully spent and past: idred, I wene, about the world round. Hardly my selfe escaped thilke payne, ou can many thinges relate; me first of thy flocks estate.

erefore!) r shepheard that was of yore nor jollye, nor shepeheard more. a costes men sayd was plentye; nere is, but all of miserye: there much to have eaked my store, eeking hath made my hart sore.

untryes, whereas I have bene, for those that truely mene; uch, as of guile maken gayne, countrye as there to remaine; ten to sale their shops of shame, en a Mart of theyr good name : heards there robben one another.

m baytes to beguile her brother; will buy his sheepe out of the cote, will carven the shepheards throte. heardes swayne you cannot wel ken, by his pryde, from other men :

DIGGON DAVIE.

day; And bearen the cragge so stiffe and so state, light, As cocke on his dunghill crowing cranck. Hob. Diggon, I am so stiffe and so stanck,

That uneth may I stand any more: And nowe the Westerne wind bloweth sore, Diggon, areede who has thee so dight? That nowe is in his chiefe sovereigntee. wist thee in so poore a plight. [leade? Beating the withered leafe from the tree,

th! for love of that is to thee moste And make a mocke at the blustring blast, efe,

Now say on, Diggon, what ever thou hast,

I I pray thee, gall not my old griefe:

Dig. Hobbin, ah Hobbin! I curse the stounde

> That ever I cast to have lorne this grounde: Wel-away the while I was so fonde To leave the good, that I had in hande, In hope of better that was uncouth!

So lost the Dogge the flesh in his mouth. My seely sheepe (ah, seely sheepe!) That here by there I whilome usd to keepe, All were they lustye as thou didst see, ien thou hast measured much grownd. Bene all sterved with pyne and penuree:

Driven for neede to come home agayne. Hob. Ah fon! now by thy losse art taught, My sheepe bene wasted; (wae is me That seeldome chaunge the better brought: Content who lives with tryed state Neede feare no chaunge of frowning fate;

But who will seeke for unknowne gayne, Oft lives by losse, and leaves with payne.

Dig. I wote ne, Hobbin, how I was bewitcht With vayne desire and hope to be enricht; But, sicker, so it is, as the bright starre Seemeth av greater when it is farre: I thought the soyle would have made me rich, But nowe I wote it is nothing sich; For eyther the shepeheards bene ydle and still,

And ledde of theyr sheepe what way they wyll,

But the more bene fraight with fraud and spight, Ne in good nor goodnes taken delight,

But kindle coales of conteck and yre, Wherewith they sette all the world on fire;

Or they bene false, and full of covetise, And casten to compasse many wrong emprise:

Which when they thinken agayne to quench, But of sike pastoures howe done the With holy water they doen hem all drench, They saye they con to heaven the high-way, But, by my soule, I dare undersave They never sette foote in that same troade,

But balk the right way, and strayen abroad, They boast they han the devill at commaund, But aske hem therefore what they han paund: And to theyr foldes yeed at their owne les Marrie! that great Pan bought with deare borrow.

To quite it from the blacke bowre of sorrowe. But they han sold thilk same long agoe, For thy woulden drawe with hem many moe. But let hem gange alone a Gods name As they han brewed, so let hem beare blame,

Diggon, I praye thee, speake not so dirke: Such myster saying me seemeth to mirke.

Dig. Then, playnely to speake of shepheards most what.

Badde is the best; (this English is flatt.)

Their ill haviour garres men missay

Both of their doctrine, and of theyr fave. They savne the world is much war then it wont, All for her shepheards bene beastly and blont. Other sayne, but how truely I note, All for they holden shame of theyr cote:

Some sticke not to say, (whote cole on her tongue!) That sike mischiefe graseth hem emong, All for they casten too much of worlds care, To deck her Dame, and enrich her heyre;

For such encheason, if you goe nye, Fowe chymneis recking you shall espye: The fatte Oxe, that wont ligge in the stal, Is nowe fast stalled in her crumenall, Thus chatten the people in theyr steads,

Ylike as a Monster of many heads;

But they that shooten neerest the pricke Sayne, other the fat from their beards doen Colin Clout, I were, be his selfe boyr, lick: For bigge Bulles of Basan brace hem about,

That with theyr hornes butten the more stoute; That doen so carefully theyr tocks toal But the leane soules treaden under foote, And to seeke redresse mought little boote: For liker bene they to pluck away more,

Then ought of the gotten good to restore: For they bene like foule wagmoires overgrast, That, if thy galage once sticketh fast, The more to wind it out thou doest swinck,

Thou mought ay deeper and deeper sinck. Yet better leave of with a little losse, Then by much wrestling to leese the grosse,

Hob. Nowe, Diggon, I see thou speakest Better it were a little to feyne. And cleanly cover that cannot be cured: Such ill, as is forced, mought nedes be endured.

Dig. Sike as the shepheards, sike ben sheepe,

creepe ?

For they nill listen to the shephearl- vo But-if he call hem at they good choyce They wander at wil and stay at pleasure But they had be better come at their cal

For many han into mischiefe fall, And bene of ravenous Wolves vrent, All for they nould be buxome and beat. Hob. Fye on thee, Diggon, and all

foule leasing! Well is knowne that sith the Saxon king Never was Woolfe seene, many nor some Nor in all Kent, nor in Christendome:

But the fewer Woolves (the soth to sayne The more bene the Foxes that here remain Dig. Yes, but they gang in more secret. And with sheepes clothing doen hem dig. They walke not widely as they were wont

For feare of raungers and the great hum. But prively prolling to and froe Enaunter they mought be inly known. Hob. Or prive or pert yf any bene,

We han great Bandogs will teare their skis Dig. Indeede, thy Ball is a bold bigget And could make a jolly hole in they fam But not good Dogges hem needeth to chast But heedy shepheards to discerne their in For all their craft is in their countenauss

They bene so grave and full of mayntman But shall I tell thee what my selle known Chaunced to Roffynn not long ygoe? Hob. Say it out, Diggon, whatever it his For not but well mought him betight

He is so meeke, wise, and merciable. And with his word his worke is convenient (Ah, for Colin, he whileme my joye! Shepheards sich, God mought us many se

Dig. Thilk same shepheard mought !

He has a Dogge to byte or to barke: Never had shepheard so kene a kurre. That waketh and if but a leafe stur Whilome there wonned a wicked Welfe That with many a Lambe had glatted big And ever at night wont to rejayre Unto the flocke, when the Welkin she

Yeladde in clothing of seely sheeps. When the good old man used to see Tho at midnight he would barke and ball to plaine; (For he had eft learned a curres call) As if a Woolfe were emong the sheepe With that the shepheard would be ыlсере,

ut Lowder (for so his dog hote) the fields with wide open throte. If sike bene Wolves, as thou hast told, How mought we, Diggon, hem be-hold? as Lowder was farre awaye, ah sheepe woulde catchen his pray, or a Kidde, or a weanell wast; to the wood would he speede him he used this slippery pranck, [fast. sould for his laboure him thanck. shepheard his practise spyed, is wise, and as Argus eyed,) at even he came to the flocke, yr folds he did them locke, ut the Woolfe in his counterfect cote, the sheepes bloud at his throte. rry, Diggon, what should him have devoured both hidder and ier. a perilous beast above all, d he cond the shepherds call, the night came to the shepe-cote, Lowder, with a hollow throte, old man selfe had bene: s maisters voice did it wene,

Dig. How, but, with heede and watchfullnesse Forstallen hem of their wilinesse: For-thy with shepheards sittes not playe. Or sleepe, as some doen, all the long day; But ever liggen in watch and ward, From soddein force theyr flocks for to gard. Hob. Ah, Diggon! thilke same rule were too straight, All the cold season to wach and waite; We bene of fleshe, men as other bee, Why should we be bound to such miseree? Whatever thing lacketh chaungeable rest, owne where ever it laye? [affraye Mought needes decay, when it is at best. s wesand bene a little widder, Dig. Ah! but, Hobbinoll, all this long Dig. Ah! but, Hobbinoll, all this long tale Nought easeth the care that doth me forhaile; [great curse! What shall I doe? what way shall I wend, chiefe light on him, and Gods My piteous plight and losse to amend? rhim had bene a great deale worse; Ah! good Hobbinoll, mought I thee praye Of ayde or counsell in my decaye. Hob. Now, by my soule, Diggon, I lament The haplesse mischiefe that has thee hent; Nethelesse thou seest my lowly saile, That froward fortune doth ever availe: But, were Hobbinoll as God mought please, vas ne was wont of yore.
vas out, but, swifter them thought;
byde the Wolfe Lowder caught;
t Roffy renne to the staven. Diggon should soone find favour and ease: There mayst thou ligge in a vetchy bed, Till fayrer Fortune shewe forth her head. Dig. Ah, Hobbinoll! God mought it thee I shield, man, he should so ill have requite; [thrive, Diggon on fewe such freends did ever lite.

> DIGGONS EMBLEME. Inopem me copia fecit,

GLOSSE.

te and phrase of speache, in this Diaa somewhatto differ from the common. rerof is supposed to be, by occasion of ein meant, who, being very freend to ereof, had bene long in forrain coun-iere seene many disorders, which he th to Hobbinoll. Bidde good morrow. For to bidde, is reof commeth beades for prayers, and To bidde his beades, s. to saye his sicklye, or sodenlye.

be slaine thilke same even

id his devoyr belive!

chiefe, an unusuall speache, but much idgate, and sometime of Chaucer.

: moones, nine monethes.

Measured, for traveled. Wae, woe, Northernly. Ecked, encreased. Carren, cutte. Kenne, know. Cragge, neck. State, stoutely

stanck, wearie or fainte.

And nowe: he applieth it to the tyme of the yeare, which is in thend of harvest, which they call the fall of the leafe; at which tyme the Westerne wynde beareth most swaye.

A mocke, Imitating Horace, 'Debes ludibrium rentis.'

Lorne, lefte.

Soote, swete. Uncouthe, unknowen. Hereby there, here and there. As the brighte, translated out of Mantuane, Emprise, for enterprise, Per Syncopen. Contek, strife.

Trode, path.

Marrie that, that is, their soules, which by popish

Exorcismes and practices they damne to hell.

Gangs, goe.
Mister, maner.
Mirke, obscure.
Warre, worse.

Warrey was a compasse.
Brace, compasse.
Encheson, occasion.
Overgram, overgrowen with grasse,
Galage, shoe.
The grouse, the whole.
Busome and bent, meeke and obedient.
Sevon King, King Edgare that reigned here inBrytanye in the yeare of our Lord [957-975] which
king caused all the Wolves, whereof then was
store in this countrye, by a proper policie to be
destroyed. So as never since that time there have
ben Wolves here founds, unlesse they were broughtfrom other countryes. And therefore Hobbinoll
from other countryes. And therefore Hobbinoll

rebuketh him of untruth, for skying tous there are Wolves in England.

Nor in Christendome: this saying seemeth to be strange and unreasonable; but indeed it was wont to be an olde proverbe and common phrase. The original whereof was, for that most part of England in the reigne of King Ethelbert was christened, Kent onely except, which remayned long after in mysbeliefe and unchristened; So that Kent was counted no nart of Christendoms.

counted no part of Christendome

Great hunt, Executing of lawes and instice. Encunter, least that.

Inly, inwardly : afforesayde.

Prively or pert, openly, sayth Chancer.

Roffy, the name of a de Æglogue of Robin and the commendeth for greate car of his flock.

of his flock.

Calin cloute: Now I tain
by Colin is meant the Au
ciall good freem Hobbian
rightly Mayster Galtrail It
commendation, aswell in I
other choyce learning, we
ficient tryall in divers his
his Maystern Lockers. ficient tryall in divers his his Masarum Lachrymer, an Valdinensum, which boks Andley in Essex, he dedic Majestie, afterward present to her Highnesse at the wor in Hertfordshire. Beside or are and very notable writt known tytles, and partly in as his Theannoussier, his Cules, and esspecially that p divine Anticosmopolita, an importance. As also, by theardes, he coverent the his familiar freendes and be This tale of Roffy seems ticular Action of his. But.

ticular Action of his. But.

not

Wonned, haunted, Welkin, skie : afforesaid, A weanell waste, a weane Hidder and shidder, he as Steven, norse. Belire, quickly. What ever, Ovids verse tr

"Quod caret alterna requ

Forehaile, drawe or distriction of Pease strawe.

EMBLEME. This is the saying of Narcissus in Ovid. For when the foolishe boy, by beholding hys face in the brooke, fell in love with his owne likenesse, and not hable to content him selfe with much looking For

But our Diggon useth it to that, by tryall of many worst, and through greate great penurie. This poesi-much used of the author, a thereon, he cryed out, that plentye made him poore, much used of the author, a meaning that much gazing had bereft him of sence.

OCTOBER.

ÆGLOGA DECIMA, ARGUMENT,

In Cuddle is set out the perfecte paterne of a Poete, whiche, finding no maintenaunce complaymeth of the contempte of Poetrie, and the causes thereof: Specialty have compagnent of the contempte of Poetrie, and the causes thereof: Specially have even amongst the most barberous, always of singular accounty and honor, an and commendable an arte; or rather no arte, but a dicine gift and heavenly ind laboure and learning, but adorned with both; and poured into the witte by a ond celestical inspiration, as the Author hereof els where at large discourseth English Poete, which books being lately come to my hands, I mynde also by G. advisement, to publish.

PIERCE.

CUDDIE.

Piers. CUDDIE, for shame! hold up thy Whilome thou wont th heavye nead,

And let us cast with what delight to chace,

Now they in thee, and the heavye head,

And weary thys long lingring Phubus race.

, I have pyped erst so long with And, when the stubborne stroke of stronger stounds

e Oten reedes bene rent and wore, d hath got, and much lesse gayne. unce makes the Grashopper so 10 layd, when Winter doth her litties, that I wont devise thes fancie, and the flocking fry,

uch; what I the bett for-thy? e pleasure, I a sclender prise; ush, the byrds to them doe flye: hereof to Cuddie can arise?

idie, the prayse is better then the te much greater then the gayne: honor is it, to restraine awlesse youth with good advice.

em forth with pleasaunce of thy

u list their trayned willes entice. a gynst to sette thy notes in frame, urall routes to thee doe cleave! a dost their soule of sence bereave; epheard that did fetch his dame s balefull bowre withouten leave, might the hellish hound did tame.

And if that any buddes of Poesie, raysen babes the Peacoks spotted Yet of the old stocke, gan to shoote agayne, n at bright Argus blazing eve; ards him ere the more for-thy, n once the fuller by a graine ? is smoke, that sheddeth in the vayne.

bene wynd, and wasten soone in from Princes pallace thou doe sitt, andon, then, the base and viler relfe out of the lowly dust, bloody Mars, of wars, of giusts; , those that weld the awful crowne.

inights, whose woundlesse armour

unbruzed wexen dayly browne. thy Muse display her fluttryng her selfe at large from East to

u list in fayre Elisa rest, [West; lease in bigger notes to sing, e worthy whome shee loveth best.

he white beare to the stake did

Has somewhat slackt the tenor of thy string, re Muse hath spent her spared Of love and lustihead the mayst thou sing, And carroll lowde, and leade the Myllers rownde, All were Elisa one of thilke same ring; straine. So mought our Cuddies name to heaven sownde. Cud. Indeede the Romish Tityrus, I heare,

Through his Mccænas left his Oaten reede, Whereon he earst had taught his flocks to feede, And laboured lands to yield the timely eare, And eft did sing of warres and deadly drede, So as the Heavens did quake his verse to here.

But ah! Mecænas is yclad in claye, And great Augustus long ygoe is dead, And all the worthies liegen wrapt in leade, That matter made for Poets on to play: For ever, who in derring-doe were dreade,

The loftie verse of hem was loved ave. But after vertue gan for age to stoope, And mightie manhode brought a bedde of ease, The vaunting Poets found nought worth a

pease To put in preace emong the learned troupe: Tho gan the streames of flowing wittes to cease And sonne-bright honour pend in shamefull coupe.

Or it mens follies mote be forst to fayne, And rolle with rest in rymes of rybaudrye; Or, as it sprong, it wither must agayne: Tom Piper makes us better melodie.

Piers. O pierlesse Poesye! where is then thy place? (And yet is Princes pallace the most fitt.) Ne brest of baser birth doth thee embrace, Then make thee winges of thine aspyring wit, And, whence thou camst, flye backe to heaven

apace. Cud. Ah, Percy! it is all to weake and wanne, So high to sore and make so large a flight;

Her peeced pyneons bene not so in plight: For Colin fittes such famous flight to scanne; He, were he not with love so ill bedight, Would mount as high, and sing as soote as Swanne.

Piers. Ah, foul for love does teach him climbe so hie, And lyftes him up out of the loathsome myre:

Such immortal mirrhor, as be doth admire, Would rayse ones mynd above the starry skie, And cause a caytive corage to aspire; For lofty love doth loath a lowly eye,

Cud. All otherwise the state of Poet stands; For lordly love is such a Tyranne fell, That where he rules all power he doth expell; The vaunted verse a vacant head demaundes. Ne wont with crabbed care the Muses dwell: Unwisely weaves, that takes two webbes in

Who ever casts to compasse weightye prise, And thinkes to throwe out thondring words of threate,

Let powre in lavish cups and thriftie bitts of mente,

For Bacchus fruite is frend to Phobus wise;

And, when with Wine t

The numbers flowe as fast

Thou kenst not, Percie, he

o! if my temples were di And girt in girlonds of will How I could reare the Mn And teache her tread aloft With queint Bellona in he

But ah! my corage coo For-thy content us in thy Where no such troublons to Here we our slender pype

Piers, And, when my to bellies lavd, Cuddie shall have a Kidde

CUDDIES EMBLEME.

Agitante calescimus illo, &c.

GLOSSE.

This Æglogue is made in imitation of Theocritus his xx. Indition, wherein he reproved the Tyanne Hiero of Syracuse for his nigardise towarde Poetes, in whome is the power to make men im-mortal for theyr good dedes, or shameful for their naughty lyfe. And the lyke also is in Mantaane. The style hereof, as also that in Theocritus, is more loftye then the rest, and applyed to the heighte of Poeticall witte.

Cuddie. I doubte whether by Cuddie be specified the authour selfe, or some other. For in the eyght Æglogue the same person was brought in, singing a Cantion of Colins making, as he sayth. So that some doubt that the persons be different.

Whitome, sometime.

Outen reedes, Avens.

Ligge so layde, lye so faynt and unjustye.

Dapper, pretye.

Frye, is a bold Metaphore, forced from the spawning fishes; for the multitude of young fish be called

the frye.

To restraine: This place seemeth to conspyre with Plato, who in his first booke de Legibus sayth, that the first invention of Poetry was of very vertuous intent. For at what time an infinite number of youth usually came to theyr great solemne feastes youth usually came to theyr great solemne teastes called Panegyrica, which they used every five yeers to hold, some learned man, being more hable then the rest for speciall gyftes of wytte and Musickey would take upon him to sing fine verses to the people, in prayse cyther of vertue or of victory, or furnity that the property of the people, in prayse cyther of vertue or of victory, or furnity that the people of the people. people in prayed cyther of vertice or vertically, or of immortality, or such like. At whose wonderfull gyft al men being astonied, and as it were ravished with delight, thinking (as it was indeed) that he was inspired from above, called him vatern; which kinds of men afterward framing their verses to distribute manick for a familiak beamany kinds, some lighter musick (as of musick be many kinds, some

sadder, some lighter, some r and so diversely eke affect found out lighter matter of ing wyth love, some scorn some powred out in pleasure

Poetes or makers

Sence bereave: what the sec is in the myndes of men, as that some of the auncient F the moste wise, as Plato am opinion, that the mynd wa harmonie and musicall nomi harmonic and likenes of affecti other, as also by that memo ander; to whom when as Musitian playd the Phrygis that he was distraught with that, streightway rysing for rage, he caused himselfe to goe to warre, (for that min And immediatly when as it his stroke into the Lydian a he was so furr from warring if he had bene in matters of is in musick : wherefore Pl. bid the Arcadian Melodie fro For that being altogither tone, it is of great force to r kindly courage, which use breats. So that it is not incre here sayth, that Musick car

The shepheard that, Orphe that by his excellent skil in recovered his wife Enrydice

Argus eyes: of Argus is to him committed her husbe

he had an hundred eyes : but afterwyth hys Musick lulling Argus a and brought Io away, whose eyes uno, for his eternall memory, placed Peacocks tayle; for those coloured semble eyes.

mour, unwounded in warre, doe rust neeticall metaphore, whereof the it, if the Poet list showe his skill nore dignitie then is the homely occasion is him offered of higher

Heroicall argument in the person tious soveraign, whom (as before)
Or if matter of knighthoode and him better, that there he many unt men, that are both worthy of r deserved prayses, and also favour-

e meanth (as I guesse) the most renowned the Erle of Leycester, missince (although the same be also) rather then by his name he be-let likely that the names of worldly

n to country clowne.

then thou chaungest thy verse from e, to matter of more pleasaunce

kind of daunce.

ly of dauncers. ityrus, wel knowen to be Virgile, as means was brought into the Emperor Augustus, and by him loftier kinde then he erst had doen. e three verses are the three of Virgil intended, for in teaching ede, is meant his Æglogues. In this is hys Bucollques. In singing early dreads, is his divine Æneis

In manhood and chevalrie.

heweth the cause why Poetes were in such honor of noble men, that their worthines and valor shold mous Poesies be commended to al refore it is sayd, that Achilles had amous, as he is, but for Homeres which is the only advantage ector. And also that Alexander Hector. And also that Alexander ring to his tombe in Sigeus, with deseed him, that ever was his hap with so excellent a Poets work, as id ennobled onely by hys meanes. lared in a most elequent Oration Petrarch no lesse woorthely sette

idro a la famosa tomba le, sospirando disse:

ie si chiara tromba. Trouasti, &c.

account hath bene alwayes made account nath one awayes made ill shewith this, that the worthy warres against Carthage and Numore in his company, and that in ort, the goul oble poet Ennius; as der destroying Thebes, when he lat the famous Lyrick poet Pindathat citie, not onely commaunded

streightly, that no man should, upon payne of strengthy, that no man should, upon payer or death, do any violence to that house, by fire or otherwise: but also specially spared most, and some highly rewarded, that were of hys kinne. So fa-voured he the only name of a Poste, which prayse otherwise was in the same man no lesse famous, otherwise was in the same man no lesse famous, that when he came to ransacking of king Darius coffers, whom he lately had overthrowen, he founde in a little coffer of silver the two bookes of Homers works, as layd up there for speciall jewels and richesse, which he taking thence, put one of them dayly in his bosome, and thother every night layde under his pillowe. Such honor have Poetes alwayes found in the sight of princes and noble which this author here very wall sheweth, as men, els where more notably.

But after, He sheweth the cause of contempt of Poetry to be idlenesse, and basenesse of mynd.

Pent, shut up in slouth, as in a coope or cage. Tom piper, an ironicall sarcasmus, spoken in de-rision of these rude wits, whych make more ac-count of a ryming rybaud, then of skill grounded upon learning and judgment.

Ne brest, the meaner sort of men.

Her pecced pineons, unperfect skil: Spoken wyth humble modestie.

As soote as Swanne: The comparison seemeth to be strange, for the swanne hath ever wonne small commendation for her swete singing: but it is sayd of the learned, that the swan, a little before hir death, singeth most pleasantly, as prophecying by a secrete instinct her neere destinic. As well sayth the Porte elsewhere in one of his sonetts.

'The silver awanne doth sing before her dving day,
'As shee that feeles the deepo delight that is in

death,' &c.

Immortall myrrhour, Beautie, which is an excellent object of Poeticall spirites, as appeareth by the worthy Petrarch, saying.

'Fiorir faceva il mio debile ingegno, 'A la sua ombra, et crescer ne gli affanni.'

A captive corage, a base and abject minde. For loftu love, I thinke this playing with the letter, to be rather a fault then a figure, as wel in our English tongue, as it hath bene alwayes in the Latine called Cacozelon A racant, imitateth Mantuanes saying, 'vacuum

curis divina cerebrum Poscit. Larish cups, Resembleth the comen verse, 'Forcundi calices quem non fecere disertum.

Off my, he seemeth here to be ravished with a Poetical furie. For (if one rightly mark) the numbers rise so ful, and the verse groweth so big, that it seemeth he had forgot the meanenesse of

shepheards state and stile.

shepheards state and stile.

Wild yeir, for it is dedicated to Bacchus, and therefore it is sayd, that the Manades (that is Bacchus franticke priestes) used in theyr sacrifice to carry Thyrsos, which were pointed staves or Javelins, wrapped about with yvie.

In buskin, it was the maner of Poetes and plaiers in tragedies to were buskins, as also in Comedies to use stockes and light shoes. So that the buskin in Poetry is used for tragical matter, as is said in Vegile, 'Sola Sophocleo tua carmina digna columns.

NOVEMBER.

ÆGLOGA UNDECIMA. ARGI

In this xi. Eglogue hee bewayleth the death of some mayden of gr personage is secrete, and to me altoyether unknowne, albe of hin Eglogue is made in imitation of March his song, which he ma Queene; but furre passing his reache, and in myne opinion all

THENOT.

Cor

The. Colly, my deare, when shall it please Nay, better thee sing,
And han be have wort, songs of some jouisaunce? The kindely Thy Muse to long slombreth in sorrowing, And wets th Lulled a sleepe through loves misgovernaunce. But if sadde Now somewhat sing, whose endles sovenaunce Emong the shepeheards swaines may aye re-Accorde not To sadder ti maine,
Whether thee list thy loved lasse advaunce, And sing of For deade is Or honor Pan with hymnes of higher vaine. Dido! the Col. Thenot, now nis the time of merimake. sheen The fayrest Nor Pan to herye, nor with love to playe; Sike myrth in May is meetest for to make, And taken up his yone in Fishes haske. Much greate Thilke sollein season sadder plight doth aske, And loatheth sike delightes as thou doest prayee: Then Kidde The mornefull Muse in myrth now list ne Then up, I s maske,

As shee was wont in youngth zhostes! and up my rufull ryme! 'But nowe sike happy cheere is turnd to heavie 7th now shalt thou have no more; e is, that myrth thee made of yore. leare, alas! is dead. lyeth wrapt in lead. ierse!

g teares be poured out in store; verse !

, that by your flocks on Kentish s abvde. s wofull waste of Natures warke;

e wight whose presence was our [carke; he wight whose absence is our all the world is dimme and darke:

now lacks her wonted light, e dwell in deadly night. ierse!

ar pypes, that shrild as lowde as verse ! e longer live, (ah! why live we so

[woe? r dayes death hath shut up in floure our gyrlond all emong moe te, and into dust ygoe. that Colin made you in her praise, reeping turne your wanton layes. nerse!

ie to dye: Nay, time was long

verse!

it, that the flouret of the field ade, aryed long in Win'ers bale; spring his mantle hath displayde, esh, as it should never fayle? l earth that is of most availe, , braunch and beauties budde, st for any good. ierse!

once dead, the budde eke needes [must quaile; verse!

she was, (that was, a woful word 'ne!) prayse and plesaunce had no peere; couth the shepherds entertayne and cracknells, and such country swaine;

ne scorne the simple shepheards ould cal him often heame him curds and clouted Creame.

aerae ! oute she would not once disdayne; verse!

chaunce, Such pleasaunce now displast by dolors dint: All musick sleepes, where death doth leade the

daunce And shepherds wonted solace is extinct

The blew in black, the greene in gray is tinct;
The gaudie girlonds deck her grave,
The faded flowres her corse embrave.

O heavie herse! Morne nowe, my Muse, now morne with teares

O carefull verse! [besprint; 'O thou greate shepheard, Lobbin, how great

is thy gricfe! [thee? Where bene the nosegayes that she dight for The coloured chaplets wrought with a chiefe, The knotted rush-ringes, and gilte Rosemaree?

[Larke; For shee deemed nothing too deere for thee. Ah! they bene all yelad in clay; One bitter blast blewe all away.

O heavie herse! Thereof nought remaynes but the memoree; O carefull verse!

'Ay me! that dreerie Death should strike so mortall stroke,

e shepheards daughters, sing no That can undoe Dame Natures kindly course; The faded lockes fall from the loftie oke, layes. The flouds do gaspe, for dryed is theyr sourse, [ygoe: And flouds of teares flowe in theyr stead per-

forse: The mantled medowes mourne, Theyr sondry colours tourne.

O heavie herse! The heavens doe melt in teares without re-O carefull verse! morse:

'The feeble flocks in field refuse their former foode, [to weepe; And hang theyr heads as they would learne The beastes in forest wayle as they were woode, Except the Wolves, that chase the wandring sheepe,

Now she is gone that safely did hem keepe: The Turtle on the bared braunch

Laments the wound that death did launch. O heavie herse! And Philomele her song with teares doth

steepe; O carefull verse! The water Nymphs, that wont with her to

sing and daunce And for her girlond Olive braunches beare, Nowe balefull boughes of Cypres doen advaunce: weare,

The Muses, that were wont greene beyon to Now bringen bitter Eldre braunches seere; II

The f That did her buried body hould. O has O heavie herse! Make h Yet saw I on the beare when it was brought; O joy O carefull verse! 'But maugre death, and dreaded sisters 'Dido is deadly spight,
And gates of hel, and fyrie furies forse,
She hath the bonds broke of eternall night, There liv There d And joy Her soule unbodied of the burdenous corpse. The hon Why then weepes Lobbin so without remorse?
O Lobb! thy losse no longer lament; That 1 While Dido nis dead, but into heaven hent. O happye herse!
Cease now, my Muse, now cease thy sorrowes
O joyfull verse!
[sourse; O hap Ceasse n O joyí sourse; 'Why wayle we then? why weary we the Gods with playnts, The. 1 As if some evill were to her betight? With do She raignes a goddesse now emong the saintes, That whilome was the saynt of shepheards Whether Thyne b light, Up, Coli And is enstalled nowe in heavens hight, Now gyr COLINS EMBLEME. La mort ny mord.

GLOSSE.

Sociations, myrth.
Sociations, remembrance.
Heric, honour.
Welked, shortned or empayred. As the Moone short in the wains is savide of Videote to malk

e. The sadde and waylefull Muse, used of have attayned to the excellencye of those famous nor of Tragedies : as saith Virgile, 'Melsico proclamat mesta beatu.'
y gosts, The maner of Tragicall Poetes,
seipe of Furies, and damned ghostes: so
f Euripides, and Tantalus brought in of nd the rest of the rest.

the solemne obsequie in funeralles.

an elegant Epanorthosis, as also soone time was long ago This is diminutive for a little floure. nd sententious comparison, 'A minore

d. live not againe, s. not in theyr earthly in heaven they enjoy their due reward. iyne braunch now withered, the buddes, atie (as he sayd afore) can no more

s, fit for shepheards bankets. r home, after the northerne pronoun-

d or stayned. e: the meaning is, that the things which naments of her lyfe are made the honor rall, as is used in burialls.

e name of a shepherd, which seemeth e the lover and deere frende of Dido.

tes, dryed leaves. As if Natura her seife ie death of the Mayde. ring.

coverlet wrought with many colours.

the Nightingale: whome the Poetes o have bene a Ladye of great beauty, ravished by hir sisters husbande, she be turned into a byrde of her name, plaintes he very well set forth of Ma. coin, a wittle gentleman, and the very late rymers, who, and if some partes of inted not (albee it is well knowen he wanted not learning) no doubt would

For gifts of wit and naturall promptnesse Poets appeare in hym aboundantly.

Cypresse, used of the old Paynims in the furnish-

ing of their funerall Pompe, and properly the signe of all sorow and heavinesse.

of all sorow and heavinesse. The fatall siters, Clotho, Lachesis, and Atropos, daughters of Herebus and the Nighte, whom the Poetes fayne to spinne the life of man, as it were a long threde, which they drawe out in length, till his fatal howre and timely death be come; but if by other casualtie his dayes be abridged, then one of them, that is, Atropos, is sayde to have cut the threde in twain. Hereof commeth a common verse.

'Clotho colum bajulat, Lachesis trahit, Atropos occat.

O trustlesse, a gallant exclamation, moralized with great wisedom, and passionate wyth great affection.

Beare, a frame, wheron they use to lay the dead

Furies, of Poetes are feyned to be three, Perse phone, Alecto, and Megera, which are sayd to be the Authours of all evill and mischiefe. Eternall night, is death or darknesse of hell.

Belight, happened.

I see, a lively Icon or representation, as if he saw her in heaven present.

Elysian fieldes, be devised of Poetes to be a place of pleasure like Paradisc, where the happye soules doe rest in peace and eternal happynesse.

Dye would, the very expresse saying of Plato in

Phædone.

Astert, befall unwares.

and Ambrosia, be feigned to be the drink and foode of the gods: Ambrosia they liken to Manna in scripture, and Nectar to be white like Greine, whereof is a proper tale of Hebe, that split a cup of it, and stayned the heavens, as yet appeareth. But I have already discoursed that at large in my Commentary e upon the Dreames of the same Authour.

Meynt, mingled.

KMBLEME.

s much to say, as death biteth not. For course of nature we be borne to dve. ipened with age, as with a timely harist be gathered in time, or els of our il like rotted ripe fruite fro the tree: not to be counted for evill, nor (as the a little before) as doome of ill desert.

For though the trespasse of the first man brought death into the world, as the guerdon of sinne, yet being overcome by the death of one that dyed path way to life. So that it agreeth well with that was sayd, that Death byteth not (that is) hurteth not at all.

DECEMBER.

ÆGLOGA DUODECIMA. ARGUMENT.

rue (even as the first beganne) is ended with a complaynte of Colin to God Pan; wherein, as if his former ways, her proportioneth his life to the foure seasons of the yeare; comparing his to the spring time, when he was fresh and free from loves follye. His manhoode to the sommer, he saigh, was consumed with greate heate and excessive drouth, caused throughe a Comet or blaston. 112

E LEUDOKINS TAKEST KEEDA And, when our flocks into mischaunce mought My hu My fre Love fall, Doest save from mischiefe the unwary sheepe, Als of their maisters hast no lesse regarde But 1 Then of the flocks, which thou doest watch and warde; Tho go And So 'I thee beseche (so be thou deigne to heare Rude ditties, tund to shephcards Oaten reede, (For lov Or if I ever sonet song so cleare, The rag As it with pleasaunce mought thy fancie feede)
Hearken awhile, from thy greene cabinet,
The rurall song of carefull Colinet. A con That Forth v 'Whilome in youth, when flowrd my joyfull When e spring, Like Swallow swift I wandred here and there; But whe For heate of heedlesse lust me so did sting. Woulde That I of doubted daunger had no feare:

I went the wastefull woodes and forest wide, play The b Withouten dreade of Wolves to bene espyed. The V Ht I wont to raunge amydde the mazie thickette, And gather nuttes to make me Christmas · Where game, Working And joyed oft to chace the trembling Pricket, The grie-Or hunt the hartlesse hare til shee were tame. Ι: What recked I of wintrye ages waste?-And loat Tho deemed I my spring would ever laste.

'How often have I scaled the craggie Oke,

For ylike to me was libertee and luf-

All to dislodge the Raven of her nest?

How have I wearied with many a stroke

The stately Walnut-tree, the while the rest

Under the tree fell all for nuts at strife?

And w

The gh

Then as

als the signes of heaven to ken, be fayles, where Venus sittes, and

ime yet taught me greater thinges; rysing of the raging seas, of byrdes by beating of their

ease. of herbs, both which can hurt and h be wont t' enrage the restlesse

h be wont to worke eternall sleepe. inwise and witlesse Colin Cloute, the hidden kinds of many a wede, ot ene to cure thy sore hart-roote, kling wound as yet does rifelye

[wound? it thou stil, and yet hast thy deathes ≈t thou stil, and yet alive art

r sommer worne away and wasted, harvest hastened all to rathe; at budded faire is burnt and blasted, hoped gaine is turnd to scathe: seeds that in my youth was sowne tht but brakes and brambles to be že.

es with bloosmes that crowned at firste.

ed of timely fruite such store, h bare and barrein now at erst; g fruite is fallen to grownd before,

ere they were halfe mellow ripe; wast, my hope away dyd wipe. at flowres, that in my garden grewe, ed, as they had bene gathered long; s bene dryed up for lacke of dewe,

with teares they han be ever spight, has wrought my Rosalind this

e flowres that should her girlond Adieu, delightes, that lulled me asleepe;

ifting of the shepheards foote, nowe have gathered as too ripe, m out as rotten and unsoote.

The loser Lasse I cast to please no more; One if I please, enough is me therefore.

And thus of all my harvest-hope I have Nought reaped but a weedye crop of care; Which, when I thought have thresht in swelling sheave,

Cockel for corne, and chaffe for barley, bare: Soone as the chaffe should in the fan be fynd, All was blowne away of the wavering wynd.

'So now my yeare drawes to his latter terme, My spring is spent, my sommer burnt up quite; My harveste hasts to stirre up Winter sterne, And bids him clayme with rigorous rage hys right: stoure;

So nowe he stormes with many a sturdy So now his blustring blast eche coste dooth scoure.

'The carefull cold bath nypt my rugged rynde. And in my face deepe furrowes eld hath pight: My head besprent with hoary frost I fynd, And by myne cie the Crow his clawe dooth wright:

Delight is lavd abedde; and pleasure past; No sonne now shines; cloudes han all over-Cast.

Now leave, ye shepheards boyes, your merry glee;

My Muse is hoarse and wearie of thys stounde: Here will I hang my pype upon this tree: Was never pype of reede did better sounde, Winter is come that blowes the bitter blaste,

And after Winter dreerie death does hast. 'Gather together ye my little flocke My little flock, that was to me so liefe;

Let me, ah! lette me in your foldes ye lock, Ere the breme Winter breede you greater griefe. Winter is come, that blowes the balefull breath

And after Winter commeth timely death.

Adieu, my deare, whose love I bought so deare; ; whilome wont to frame my pype Adieu, my little Lambes and loved sheepe; Adieu, ye Woodes, that oft my witnesse were: Adieu, good Hobbinoll, that was so true,

Tell Rosalind, her Colin bids her adieu.

COLINS EMBLEME.

Vivitur ingenio: cætera mortis erunt.

GLOSSE.

sucer, as hath bene oft sayd. oung lambes. . seemeth to expresse Virgils verse. irat oves oviumque magistros. tcheefe.

Cabinet, Colinet, diminutives. Masie, for they be like to a maze whence it is hard Peres, felowes and companions.

Musict, that is Poetry, as Terence myth, ariem tractant musicam; speking of Poetes.

Where I was: a fine description of the change of his lyfe and liking, for all things nowe seemed to him to have altered their kindly course. Lording: Spoken after the manner of Paddocks

and Frogges sitting, which is indeed lordly, not removing nor looking once aside, unlesse they be

sturred. Then as: The second part, that is, his manhoode. Cotes, Sheepecotes, for such be the exercises of

shepheards.

Sale, or sallow, a kinde of woodde like Wyllow,
fit to wreath and bynde in leapes to catch fish

withall. Phoebe fayles, The Eclipse of the Moone, which is alwayes in Cauda, or Capite Draconis, signes in

heaven. Venus, s. Venus starre, otherwise called Hesperus,

and Vesper, and Lucifer, both because he seemeth
to be one of the brightest starres, and also first
ryeth, and settoth last. All which skill in starres
being convenient for shepheardes to knowe, Theosixe ver touched critus and the rest use. delights Raging seas: The cause of the swelling and ebbing of the sea commeth of the course of the Moone. of Rosa which is

sometime encreasing, sometime wayning and defourth. creasing.

Sooth of byrdes, A kind of soothsaying used in elder tymes, which they gathered by the flying of

EMBLEME.

Kids Bare Scalk

The) partes

they w

his ripo eth litt So no cribal

Thus

Carc Glee,

Hoar

Breen Adien

professe Hobbine

tered by

The meaning whereof is, that all thinges perish and come to theyr last end, but workes of learned wits and monuments of Poetry abide for ever, and therefore Horace of his Oles, a worke though ful indede of great wit and learning yet of no so great weight and importaunce, boldly sayth, shall end sample o

'Grane ign 'Exect monimentum ære perennius. 'Nec f 'Quod nec imber edax, nec aquilo vorax.' &c.

Los! I have made a Calender for every Goe, I veare.

COMPLAINTS:

CONTAINING SUNDRIE SMALL POEMES

OF THE

WORLDS VANITIE.

WHEREOF THE NEXT PAGE MAKETH MENTION.

BY ED. SP.

That wi 'Name have I none (quoth she) nor anie being, Bereft of both by Fates unjust decreeing. Deignd The pict And of t 'I was that Citie, which the garland wore Of Britaines pride, delivered unto me By Romane Victors, which it wonne of yore; Though nought at all but ruines now I bee, So I of And lye in mine owne ashes, as ye see, Verlame I was: what bootes it that I was, 'To tell Adornd v Sith now I am but weedes and wastfull gras? To tell n That by

'O vaine worlds glorie! and unstedfast state

Of all that lives on face of sinfull earth! Which, from their first untill their utmost date, Taste no one hower of happines or merth; But like as at the ingate of their berth

To tell n

Were bu

And with

'Theretoo

In Britani That man Ne Troyn

With my That stou

Who in a

High to They crying creep out of their mothers woomb, So wailing backe go to their wofull toomb. Strong w Large str Sure gate Why then dooth flesh, a bubble-glas of breath, Wrought Hunt after honour and advauncement vaine, All those And reare a trophee for devouring death, And over

With so great labour and long lasting paine,
As if his daies for ever should remaine? Sith all that in this world is great or gain Doth as a vapour vanish, and decaie. Looke backe, who list, unto the former ages, And call to count what is of them become: Where be those learned wits and antique Sages,

Which of all wisedome knew the perfect somme? 'But long Where those great warriors, which did over- Her migh come Bunduca, The world with conquest of their might and That, lifti And made one meare of th' earth and of their Bove wo nent of whose sad funerall, or of the world, long in me lasted, o nought through spoyle of time is sted.

t is, as if it never were; e rest, that me so honord made b world admired ev'rie where, b smoake, that doth to nothing fade; at brightnes now appeares no shade, ie shades, such as doo haunt in hell ull fiends, that in deep darknes dwell.

y high steeples whilom usde to stand, the lordly Faulcon wont to towre is but an heap of lyme and sand, riche-owle to build her balefull bowre: the Nightingale wont forth to powre

es plaints, to comfort wakefull Forgotten quite as they were never borne.

[Plovers.]

r haunt yelling Mewes and whining A mightie Prince, of most renowmed race, re the christall Thamis wont to slide Whom England high in count of honour he

hannell, downe along the Lee, see flowrie bankes on either side d Nymphes, with mirthfull jollitee, t to play, from all annovance free, no rivers course is to be seene, sh fennes, and marshes ever greene.

that that gentle River for great fe
haps, which oft I to him plained,
hunne the horrible mischiefe,
h he saw my cruell foes me pained,
ure streames with guiltles blood oft
ned;
nhappie neighborhood farre fled,
reete waters away with him led.

», where the winged ships were seene raves to cut their fomic waie, and Fishers numbred to have been, de lake looking for plenteous praic lich they with baits usde to betraie, lake, nor anie fishers store, hip shall saile there anie more.

are gone, and all with them is gone; to me remaines, but to lament ecay, which no man els doth mone, he my fall with dolefull dreriment. In more, in great languishment, oned with compassion kinde, ates the anguish of the minde.

o man bewaileth, but in game, th teares from lamentable eie; ives that mentioneth my name smbred of posteritie, Save One that, maugre fortunes injurie, And times decay, and envies cruell tort, Hath writ my record in true-seeming sort. 'Camblen! the nourice of antiquitie,

And lanterne unto late succeding age, To see the light of simple veritie Buried in ruines, through the great outrage Of her owne people led with warlike rage:

Cambden! though Time all moniments obscure, Yet thy just labours ever shall endure.

But whie (unhappie wight!) doo I thus crie, And grieve that my remembrance quite is raced Out of the knowledge of posteritie,

is but an heap of lyme and sand, iche-owle to build her balefull bowre: Sith I doo dailie see things highest placed, the Nightingale wont forth to powre! So soone as Fates their vitall thred have shorne, so plaints, to comfort wakefull Forgotten quite as they were never borne.

A mightie Prince, of most renowmed race, Whom England high in count of honour held, And greatest ones did sue to gaine his grace; Of greatest ones he, greatest in his place, Sate in the bosome of his Soveraine,

And Right and loyall did his word maintaine.

'I saw him die, I saw him die, as one
Of the meane people, and brought foorth on
beare;

I saw him die, and no man left to mone His dolefull fate, that late him loved deare: Scarse anie left to close his cylids neare; Scarse anie left upon his lips to laie The sacred sod, or Requiem to saic.

'O! trustlesse state of miserable men, That builde your blis on hope of earthly thing, And vainly thinke your selves halfe happie then, When painted faces with smooth flattering Doo fawne on you, and your wide praises sing; And, when the courting masker louteth lowe,

Him true in heart and trustie to you trow,
'All is but fained, and with oaker dide,
That everie shower will wash and wipe away;
All things doo change that under heaven abide,

And after death all friendship doth decaie: Therefore, what ever man bearst worldlie sway, Living, on God and on thy selfe relie; For, when thou diest, all shall with thee die.

'He now is dead, and all is with him dead, Save what in heavens storehouse he uplaid: His hope is faild, and come to passe his dread, And evill men, now dead, his deeds npbraid: Spite bites the dead, that living never baid. He now is gone, the whiles the Foxe is creet Into the hole, the which the Badget week.

He now is dead, and all his glorie gene, And all his greatnes repeared to nought, That as a glasse upon the water shope, Which vanisht quite, so soone as it was sought; His name is worne alreadie out of thought, Ne anie Poet seekes him to revive, Yes manie Poets homourd him alive.

Ne doth his Colin, carelesse Colin Cloute, Care now his side bagpipe up to raise, Ne teil his sorrow to the listning rout Of shepherd groomes, which wont his songs to praise:

Praise who so list, yet I will him dispraise, Untill he quite him of this guiltie blame. Wake, shopheards toy, at length awake for shame!

And who so els did goodnes by him gaine. And who so els his bounteous minde did trie, Whether he shepheard be, or shepheards swaine,

(For manie did, which doo it now denie,)
Awake, and to his Song a part applie:
And I, the whilest you mourne for his decease,
Will with my mourning plaints your plaint
increase.

'He dyde, and after him his brother dyde, His brother Prince, his brother noble Peere, That whilste he lived was of none envyde, And dead is now, as living, counted deare, Deare unto all that true affection beare: But unto thee most deare, O dearest Dame! His noble Spouse, and Paragon of fame.

⁴ He, whilest he lived, happie was through thee, And, being dead, is happie now much more; Living, that lineked chaunst with thee to bee, And dead, because him dead thou dost adore As living, and thy lost deare love deplore. So whilst that thou, faire flower of chastitie, Dost live, by thee thy Lord shall never die.

'Thy Lord shall never die, the whiles this verse

Shall live, and surely it shall live for ever:
For ever it shall live, and shall rehearse
His worthle praise, and vertues dying never,
Though death his soule doo from his bodie
sever;

And thou thy selfe herein shalt also live: Such grace the heavens doo to my verses give.

Ne shall his sister, ne thy father die, Thy father, that good Earle of rare renowne, And noble Patrone of weake povertie; Whose great good deeds, in countrey and in towne,

Have purcless him in bear Where he new liveth in et And left his sonne t' ensue

* He, noble bud, his Grand Under the slandow of thy o Now ginnes to shoote up fa In learned artes, and good That him to highest honor Brave Impe of Bedford! gr And count of wisedome Countie.

'Ne may I let thy husban That goodly Ladie, sith at Out of his stocke and fame Whose praises I to future And foorth out of her hap The sacred brood of learni In whom the heavens po upon her.

'Most gentle spirite, breat
Out of the bosome of the s
In whom all bountie and s
Appeared in their native p
And did enrich that noble
With treasure passing all:
Worthie of heaven it sel
forth,

'His blessed spirite, full of And influence of all celest Loathing this sinfull earth Fled back too soone unto I Too soone for all that did Too soone for all this wrete Robd of all right and true

Yet, ere his happie soule Out of this fleshlie gaole, I Unto his heavenlie maker His bodie, as a spotles sac And chose that guiltie han Should powre forth the off blood:

So life exchanging for his

O noble spirite! live there The worlds late wonder, as Live ever there, and leave With mortall cares and cum But, where thou dost that Bid me, O! bid me quickli That happie there I maie

'Yet, whilest the fates affor I will it spend in speaking And sing to thee, untill th By heavens doome doo ends daunce,

thou my humble spirite raise. that sacred breath inspire, there breathest perfect and entire

I sing; but who can better sing owne sister, peerles Ladie bright, ee sings with deep harts sorrowing, empered with deare delight, heare I feele my feeble spright ense, and ravished with joy:

nade of mourning and anoy! ing; but who can better sing

ards leave their lambs unto misv shrill Arcadian Pipe to heare:

ore happie thou, and wretched wee , now in Elisian fields so free us, and with Linus, and the choice ever did in rimes rejoice, [layes, and doost heare their heavenlie laves,

eare thine, and thine doo better iou livest, singing evermore,

ou livest, being ever song
h living loved thee afore, [throng
nee worship mongst that blessed
Poets and Heroes strong. a here and there immortall art,

where through excellent desart. s neither of themselves can sing, sung of others for reward,

ire oblivion, as the thing r was, ne ever with regard s shall of the later age be heard, rustie darknes ever lie, mentiond be with infamie,

eth it to have been rich alive? great? what to be gracious? death no token doth survive eing in this mortall hous, in dust, dead and inglorious, whose breath but in his nostrels is, o hope of happinesse or blis.

e great ones may remembred be, eir daies most famouslie did florish; no word we heare, nor signe now

es wipt out with a sponge to periahe, Or Shrines made of the mettall most desired,

Because they living cared not to cherishe No gentle wits, through pride or covetize, Which might their names for ever memorize.

Provide therefore (ye Princes) whilst ye live, That of the Muses ye may friended bee, Which unto men eternitie do give; For they be daughters of Dame Memorie And Jove, the father of eternitie, And do those men in golden thrones repose, Whose merits they to glorifie do chose.

'The sevenfold yron gates of grislie Hell, hy selfe, thine owne selfes valiance, thou livedst, madest the forrests. They able are with power of mightic spell To breake, and thence the soules to bring awaie esownd, and flockes to leap and Out of dread darkenesse to eternall day, [die And them immortall make, which els would In foule forgetfulnesse, and nameles lie.

re those dayes, thrice happie were! So whileme raised they the puissant brood Of golden girt Alemena, for great merite, Out of the dust, to which the Octaan wood the wonted sweetnes of thy voice, Had him consum'd, and spent his vitall spirite, To highest heaven, where now he doth inherite All happinesse in Hebes silver bowre,

> 'So raisde they eke faire Ledaes warlick twinnes.

Chosen to be her dearest Paramoure.

And interchanged life unto them lent, [ginnes That, when th' one dies, th' other then be-To shew in Heaven his brightnes orient; And they, for pittie of the sad wayment Which Orpheus for Eurydice did make, Her back againe to life sent for his sake.

 So happie are they, and so fortunate, Whom the Pierian sacred sisters love. That freed from bands of impacable fate And power of death, they live for aye above, Where mortall wreakes their blis may not re-

move; But with the Gods, for former vertues meede, On Nectar and Ambrosia do feede,

 For deeds doe die, how ever noblie donne, And thoughts of men do as themselves decay; But wise wordes, taught in numbers for to Recorded by the Muses, live for ay; [runne, Ne may with storming showers be washt away, Ne bitter-breathing windes with harmfull blast, Nor age, nor envie, shall them ever wast,

'In vaine doo earthly Princes, then, in vaine, Seeke, with Pyramides to heaven aspired, Or huge Colosses built with costlie paine, Or brasen Pillours never to be fired,

And with brave plumes doth beate the azure But sate Admir'd of base-borne men from farre away: Then, who so will with vertuous deeds assay Looking To mount to heaven, on Pegasus must ride, And with sweete Poets verse be glorifide. Which w My thous 'For not to have been dipt in Lethe lake, Could save the soune of Thetis from to die; Renewing For ruth Whose wo But that blinde bard did him immortall make With verses, dipt in deaw of Castalie: I felt suci Which made the Easterne Conquerour to crie, That from O fortunate yong-man, whose vertue found So brave a Trompe, thy noble acts to sound! So inlie g And deep Whose me 'Therefore in this halfe happie I doo read Good Melibæ, that hath a Poet got To sing his living praises being dead, Deserving never here to be forgot, Being abo At length. Before mi In spight of envie that his deeds would spot: Like tragi Since whose decease, learning lies unregarded, And men of armes doo wander unrewarded. I saw an Placed on

'Those two be those two great calamities That long agoe did grieve the noble spright Of Salomon with great indignities, Who whilome was alive the wisest wight: But now his wisedome is disprooved quite For he, that now welds all things at his will, Scorns th' one and th' other in his deeper skill. But th' Alı Was (() gr 'O griefe of griefes! O gall of all good heartes! That short To see that vertue should dispised bee Of him, that first was raisde for vertuous parts. And now, broad spreading like an aged tree. Then down Lets none shoot up that nigh him planted bee: Scorned of O let the man, of whom the Muse is sooned.

That all, w

Might wor

Not that g

To which 1

The holie

With show

confusion in Holie Writ. worke, might be compar'd to it.

! labours of terrestriall wit, s so stronglie on so travle a sovle, h storme does fall away, and thit, he fruit of all your travailes toyle ray of Tyme, and Fortunes spoyle! owre fall sodainelie to dust, with griefe thereof my heart was

see a pleasant Paradize, te flowres and daintiest delights, earth man could not more devize. ires choyce to feed his cheerefull hts: hich Merlin by his magicke slights e gentle Squire, to entertaine Belphæbe, could this gardine

rt pleasure, bought with lasting Was but earth, and with her owne weighti-Upon them fell, and did unwares oppresse; ٠, ereafter anie flesh delight That, for great sorrow of their sudden fate, blis, and joy in pleasures vaine, I sawe this gardine wasted quite, it was scarce seemed anie sight? ch once that beautie did beholde, rom teares my melting eyes with-

this a Giaunt came in place, is powre, and of exceeding statur lurst vewe the horror of his face, e milde of speach, and meeke of ich in despight of his Creatour

this mightie one in hugenes boast; But hope of heaven, and heart to God inclinde; ie one he could to th' other coast stride, his hand into his enemies hoast. end of pompe and fleshlie pride! feete unwares from him did slide,

e hee fell into the deepe Abisse,

.

wnd with him is all his earthlie

see a Bridge, made all of golde, en from one to other side, prop or pillour it t' upholde, e coloured Rainbowe arched wide: reat Arche, which Trajan edifide,

ender to all age ensuing, able to this in equall vewing.

But (ah!) what bootes it to see earthlie thing

In glorie, or in greatnes to excell, Sith time doth greatest things to ruine bring? This goodlie bridge, one foote not fastned well, Gan faile, and all the rest downe shortlie fell. Ne of so brave a building ought remained.

That griefe thereof my spirite greatly pained.

I saw two Beares, as white as anie milke, Lying together in a mightie cave, Of milde aspect, and haire as soft as silke, That salvage nature seemed not to have.

Nor after greedie spoyle of bloud to crave: Two fairer beasts might not elswhere be found, Although the compast world were sought around.

But what can long abide above this ground In state of blis, or stedfast happinesse? The Cave, in which these Beares lay sleeping sound.

Henceforth all worlds felicitie I hate. ¶ Much was I troubled in my heavie spright. At sight of these sad spectacles forepast

That all my senses were bereaved quight, And I in minde remained sore agast, Distraught twixt feare and pitie; when at last I heard a voyce, which loudly to me called,

That with the suddein shrill I was appalled. Behold (said it) and by ensample see, That all is vanitie and griefe of minde, g tearmes defied the Jewish houst, Ne other comfort in this world can be,

For all the rest must needs be left behinde: With that it bad me, to the other side strong thighes, and th' Ocean To cast mine eye, where other sights I spide.

Upon that famous Rivers further shore,

There stood a snowie Swan of heavenly hiew, And gentle kinde as ever Fowle afore; A fairer one in all the goodlie criev Of white Strimonian brood might no man view: There he most sweetly sung the prophecie

()f his owne death in dolefull Elegie. At last, when all his mourning melodie He ended had, that both the shores resounded, Feeling the fit that him foreward to die, With loftic flight above the earth he bounded. And out of sight to highest heaven mounted, Where now he is become an heavenly signe, There now the joy is his, here sorrow mine.

Whilest thus I looked, loe! adowne the Lee I sawe an Harpe stroong all with silver twyne, And made of golde and costlic yvorie, Swimming, that whylome seemed to have been The Harpe on which Dau Orpheus was seene Wylde beasts and forrests after him to lead, But was th' Harpe of Philisides now dead,

At length out of the River it was reard And borne above the cloudes to be divin'd, Whilst all the way most heavenly noyse was heard

Of the strings, stirred with the warbling wind, That wrought both joy and sorrow in my minds

So now in heaven a signe it doth appeare, The Harpe well knowne beside the Northern Beare.

Soone after this I saw, on th' other side, A curious Coffer made of Heben wood, That in it did most precious treasure hide, Exceeding all this baser worldes good: Yet through the overflowing of the flood It almost drowned was, and done to nought, That sight thereof much griev'd my pensive thought,

At length, when most in perill it was brought, Two Angels, downe descending with swift flight,

Out of the swelling streame it lightly caught, And twixt their blessed armes it carried quight

Above the reach of anie living sight: So now it is transform'd into that starre, In which all heavenly treasures locked are.

Looking aside I saw a stately Bed, Adorned all with costly cloth of gold, That might for anie Princes couche be red, And deckt with daintie flowres, as if it shold Be for some bride, her joyous night to hold: Therein a goodly Virgine sleeping lay; A fairer wight saw never summers day.

I heard a voyce that called farre away, And her awaking bad her quickly dight, For lo! her Bridegrome was in readic ray To come to her, and seeke her loves delight, With that she started up with cher When suddeinly both bed and all v And I in languar left there all alone

Still as I gazed, I beheld when atm A Knight all arm'd, upon a winged The same that bred was of Mednas On which Dan Perseus, borne of her The faire Andromeda from perill fro Full mortally this Knight ywoun That streames of blood foorth flor

Yet was he deckt (small joy to him With manie garlands for his victor And with rich spoyles, which late Through brave atcheivements from Fainting at last through long infin He smote his steed, that straight him bore,

And left me here his losse for to d

Lastly I saw an Arke of purest go Upon a brazen pillour standing l Which th' ashes seem'd of some Encloade therein for endles me Of him, whom all the world did Seemed the heavens with the e

Whether should of those ashes k

At last me seem'd wing-footed M From heaven descending to appea The Arke did beare with him ab And to those ashes gave a secon To live in heaven where happine At which the earth did grieve es And I for dole was almost like t

L' Envoy.

Immortall spirite of Philisides. Which now art made the heave That whilome wast the worldes Give leave to him that lov'de th His losse, by lacke of thee to he And with last duties of this bro Broken with sighes, to decke the

And ye, faire Ladie, th' honour And glorie of the world your scorne,

Vouchsafe this moniment of his With some few silver-dropping And as ye be of beavenile off-s So unto heaven let your high a And leath this drosse of sinfull

THE TEARES OF THE MUSES.

BY ED. SP.

TO THE RIGHT HONORARIE

THE LADIE STRANGE.

ave and noble Ladie, the things, s ye so much honored of the world s, are such, as (without my sim-testimonie) are throughlie knowen n; namely, your excellent beautie, nous behavior, and your noble match most honourable Lord, the verie f right Nobilitie: But the causes ye have thus deserved of me to be (if honour it be at all) are, both icular bounties, and also some priis of affinitie, which it hath pleased iship to acknowledge. Of which found my selfe in no part worthie, this last slender meanes, both to

intimate my humble affection to your Ladiship, and also to make the same universallie knowen to the world; that by honouring you they might know me, and by knowing me they might honor you. Vouchsafe, noble they might honor you. Vouchsafe, noble Lady, to accept this simple remembrance, thogh not worthy of your self, yet such as, perhaps, by good acceptance thereof, ye may hereafter cull out a more meet and memorable evidence of your own excellent deserts. So, recommending the same to your Ladiships good liking, I humbly take leave,
Your La: humbly ever.

ED. SP.

THE TEARES OF THE MUSES.

se to me, ye sacred Sisters nine, en brood of great Apolloes wit, cons plaints and sorrowfull sad tine, te ye powred forth as ye did sit e silver Springs of Helicone,

nne red, through Joves avengefull wrath, raing the charret of the Sunne he compasse of his pointed path, is mournfull Sisters, was lamented, urnfull tunes were never since innted.

Nor since that faire Calliope did lose Her loved Twinnes, the dearlings of her joy, Her Palici, whom her unkindly foes, The fatall Sisters, did for spight destroy, Whom all the Muses did bewaile long space, Was ever heard such wayling in this place.

e the time that Phœbus foolish For all their groves, which with the heavenly noyses Of their sweete instruments were wont to sound, And th' hollow hills, from which their silver

voyces Were wont redoubled Echoes to rebound, Did now rebound with nought but rufull cries. And yelling shricks throwne up into the skies.

KK

sweet. And to the measure of their melodies

Did learne to move their nimble-shifting feets, Now, hearing them so heavily lament,

Like heavily lamenting from them went And all that els was wont to worke delight

Through the divine infusion of their skill, And all that els seemd faire and fresh in sight,

So made by nature for to serve their will, Was turned now to dismall heavinesse,

Was turned now to dreadfull uglinesse.

Ay me! what thing on earth, that all thing

breeds, Might be the cause of so impatient plight? What furie, or what feend with felon deeds

Hath stirred up so mischievous despight? Can griefe then enter into heavenly harts,

And pierce immortall breasts with mortall smarts? Vouchsafe ye then, whom onely it concernes,

To me those secret causes to display; For none but you, or who of you it learnes,

Can rightfully aread so dolefull lay. Begin, thou eldest Sister of the crew, And let the rest in order thee ensew.

Heare, thou great Father of the Gods on hie,

That most art dreaded for thy thunder darts; And thou, our Syre, that raignst in Castalie
And mount Parnasse, the God of goodly Arts:

Heare, and behold the miserable state Of us, thy daughters, dolefull desolate.

Behold the fowle reproach and open shame,

Or rather le That is the

But (ah!) a Of th' heav And to be 1 Base minde

For God his And men to But they do Through po In th' eyes

And onely l But vertuo tirst To their Gr

So I, that d To register, Through th Finde nothi For better f Than telling

So shall suc Of things fo And all tha Shall die in Therefore I

Because I n With that s teare: That could | And all her

ed world! the den of wickednesse, ith filth and fowle iniquitie; ed world! the house of heavinesse, he wreaks of mortall miserie: ed world! and all that is therein, s of Gods wrath, and slaves of sin. That wont with Comick sock to beautefie able creature under sky ut understanding doth appeare; worlds affliction he thereby. ies freakes, is wisely taught to beare: d life the onely joy shee is, ly comfort in calamities. the brest with constant patience bitter throwes of dolours darts: h with rules of Sapience

minds, in midst of worldlie smarts: sad, shee seeks to make him merie. efresh his sprights when they be is of reasons skill bereft, the staffe of wisedome him to stay, p in midst of tempest left helme or Pilot her to sway : 1 dreadfull is that ships event;

an that wants intendiment. doo foolish men so much despize is store of this celestiall riches? ney banish us, that patronize learning? Most unhappie

hes! lie drowned in deep wretchednes, see their owne unhappiness.

is and my professed skill with Tragick buskin to adorne, Scene with plaint, and outcries shrill I persons to misfortune borne; iore tragick matter I can finde of men depriv'd of sense and minde.

s life me seemes a Tragedy, sights and sore Catastrophees; ing to the world with weeping eye, is dayes, like dolorous Trophees, rith spoyles of fortune and of feare, ast laid forth on balefull beare.

rufull spectacles is tild, era or Persephone; in true Tragedies am skild, of wit, finde nought to busic me: mourne, and pitifully mone,

it mourning matter I have none. ae wofully to waile, and wring

ed hands in lamentable wise;

So rested she; and then the next in rew Began her grievous plaint, as doth ensew.

THALIA. Where be the sweete delights of learnings treasure

The painted Theaters, and fill with pleasure The listners eyes and eares with melodie; In which I late was wont to raine as Queene, And maske in mirth with Graces well beseene?

O! all is gone; and all that goodly glee, Which wont to be the glorie of gay wits, Is layd abed, and no where now to see; And in her roome unseemly Sorrow sits. With hollow browes and greisly countenaunce, Marring my joyous gentle dalliaunce.

And him beside sits ugly Barbarisme, And brutish Ignorance, ycrept of late Out of dredd darknes of the deepe Abysme, Where being bredd, he light and heaven does hate:

They in the mindes of men now tyrannize, And the faire Scene with rudenes foule disguize. All places they with follie have possest,

And with vaine toyes the vulgare entertaine; But me have banished, with all the rest That whilome wont to wait upon my traine, Fine Counterfesaunce, and unhurtfull Sport, Delight, and Laughter, deckt in seemly sort, All these, and all that els the Comick Stage

With seasoned wit and goodly pleasance graced, By which mans life in his likest image Was limned forth, are wholly now defaced; And those sweete wits, which wont the like to frame, Are now despized, and made a laughing game.

And he, the man whom Nature selfe had made To mock her selfe, and Truth to imitate, With kindly counter under Mimick shade. Our pleasant Willy, ah! is dead of late:

With whom all joy and jolly meriment Is also deaded, and in dolour drent. In stead thereof scoffing Scurrilitie, And scornfull Follie with Contempt is crept,

Rolling in rymes of shameles ribaudrie Without regard, or due Decorum kept; Each idle wit at will presumes to make, And doth the Learneds taske upon him take. But that same gentle Spirit, from whose

Large streames of honnie and sweete Nectar flowe, Sisters, thereto answering, [cries. Scorning the boldnes of such base-borne men, 1 lowd ahrieks and drerie dolefull Which dare their follies forth so rashlie throws Doth rather choose to sit in idle Cell, Than so himselfe to mockerie to sell.

So am I made the servant of the manie, And laughing stocke of all that list to scorne; Not honored nor cared for of anie, But loath'd of losels as a thing forlorne: Therefore I mourne and sorrow with the rest, Untill my cause of sorrow be redrest.

Therewith she lowdly did lament and shrike, Pouring forth streames of teares abundantly; And all her Sisters, with compassion like, The breaches of her singults did supply. So rested shee; and then the next in rew Began her grievous plaint, as doth ensew.

EUTERPE.

Like as the dearling of the Summers pryde, Faire Philomele, when winters stormie wrath The goodly fields, that earst so gay were dyde In colours divers, quite despoyled hath, All comfortlesse doth hide her chearlesse head During the time of that her widowhead:

So we, that earst were wont in sweet accord All places with our pleasant notes to fill, Whilest favourable times did us afford Free libertie to chaunt our charmes at will, All comfortlesse upon the bared bow, Like wofull Culvers, doo sit wayling now,

For far more bitter storme than winters stowre The beautie of the world hath lately wasted, And those fresh buds, which wont so faire to

And those yong plants, which wont with fruit t'abound,

Now without fruite or leaves are to be found.

A stonic coldnesse hath benumbd the sence And livelie spirits of each living wight, And dimd with darknesse their intelligence, Darknesse more than Cymerians daylie night: And monstrous error, flying in the ayre, Hath mard the face of all that semed fayre.

Image of hellish horrour, Ignorance, Borne in the bosome of the black Abysse, And fed with Furies milke for sustenaunce Of his weake infancie, begot amisse By yawning Sloth on his owne mother Night; So hee his sonnes both Syre and brother hight.

He, armd with blindnesse and with boldness stout,
(For blind is bold) hath our fayre light
And, gathering unto him a ragged rout
Of Faunes and Satyres, hath our dwellings

Gefaced:
For vertues meed and ornament
Sith ignorance our kingdome did
Bee now become most wretche
ground.

And our clast bowers, in which

With brutishnesse and beastlie fi stained.

The sacred springs of horsefoot Heli-So oft bedeawed with our learned by And speaking streames of pure Cast The famous witnesse of our wonted They trampled have with their fow trade.

And like to troubled puddles have th

Our pleasant groves, which planted

paines, That with our musick wont so oft And arbors sweet, in which the swaines

Were wont so oft their Pastornlla : They have cut downe, and all their That now no pastorall is to bee har

Instead of them, fowle Goblins owles

With fearfull howling do all places And feeble Eccho now laments an The dreadfull accents of their out So all is turned into wildernesse, Whilest Ignorance the Muses doth

And I, whose joy was earst with a To teach the warbling pipe to sou My spirits now dismayd with sorr Doo mone my miserie with silene Therefore I mourne and waile inc flowre, flowre, Till please the heavens affoord m

Therewith shee wayled with exce And pitious lamentation did make And all her sisters, seeing her doo With equall plaints her sorrowe of So rested shee; and then the nex Began her grievous plaint, as dot

TERPSICHORE,

Whose hath in the lap of soft deli Beene long time luld, and fed w sweet,

Feareles through his own fault. To tumble into sorrow and regree Yf channce him fall into calamit Findes greater burthen of his mis

So wee that earst in joyance did And in the bosome of all blis did Like virgin Queenes, with law

royall thrones, which lately stood s of men to rule them carefully, h placed his accursed brood, otten of fowle infamy scornefull Follie, and base Spight, by wrong that wee should have by

vulgar sort now pipe and sing, them merrie with their fooleries lie chaunt, and rymes at randon

Above the compasse of the arched skie Il spawne of their ranke fantasies: the eares of fooles with flattery, nen blame, and losels magnify.

hey doo with their toyes possesse, in liking of the multitude; es they fill with fond new fangle-[rude; in Court with pride and rashnes

eir musicke matcheth Phœbus quill. hearts to pleasures they allure, eir Prince that learning is but vaine: ies loves they spot with thoughts

ure mindes with lewd delights distaine; to loathly idlenes entice, eir bookes with discipline of vice.

here they rule, and tyrannize, surped kingdomes maintenaunce, we silly Maides, whom they dispize reprochfull scorne discountenaunce, wne native heritage exilde, ugh the world of every one revilde. ne doth care to call us in,

uchsafeth us to entertaine me one perhaps of gentle kin, sake compassion our paine, us some reliefe in this distresse; o reliev'd is wretchednesse.

we all carefull comfortlesse loth care to comfort us at all; re helpe our sorrow to redresse, ouchsafes to answere to our call; we mourne and pittilesse complaine, me living pittieth our paine,

she wept and wofullie waymented, ht on earth her griefe might pacifie; e rest her dolefull din augmented ces and groanes and grievous agonie. shee; and then the next in rew piteous plaint, as doth ensew.

ERATO. Ye gentle Spirits, breathing from above, Where ye in Venus silver bowre were bred, Thoughts halfe devine, full of the fire of love, With beautie kindled, and with pleasure fed,

Forgetfull of your former heavinesse: Now change the tenor of your joyous layes, With which ye use your loves to deifie, And blazon foorth an earthlie beauties praise

Which ye now in securitie possesse,

Now change your praises into piteous cries, And Eulogies turne into Elegies. Such as ye wont, whenas those bitter stounds Of raging love first gan you to torment,

And launch your hearts with lamentable wounds Of secret sorrow and sad languishment, in Court with pride and rashnes Before your Loves did take you unto grace; ple shepheards they do boast their Those now renew, as fitter for this place.

For I that rule in measure moderate The tempest of that stormie passion, And use to paint in rimes the troublous state Of Lovers life in likest fashion,

Am put from practise of my kindlie skill, Benisht by those that Love with leawdnes fill. Love wont to be schoolmaster of my skill,

And the devicefull matter of my song; Sweete Love devoyd of villanic or ill But pure and spotles, as at first he sprong Out of th' Almighties bosome, where he nests; From thence infused into mortall brests.

Such high conceipt of that celestiall fire, The base-borne brood of blindnes cannot gesse, Ne ever dare their dunghill thoughts aspire

Unto so loftie pitch of perfectnesse, But rime at riot, and doo rage in love; Yet little wote what doth thereto behove. Faire Cytheree, the Mother of delight, And Queene of beautie, now thou maist go

pack; For lo! thy Kingdome is defaced quight, Thy scepter rent, and power put to wrack; And thy gay Sonne, that winged God of Love May now goe prune his plumes like ruffed Dove. And ye three Twins, to light by Venus

brought, The sweete companions of the Muscs late. whom what ever thing is goodly thought, From Doth borrow grace, the fancie to aggrate;

And with brave plumes doth beate the asure Admir'd of base-borne men from farre away: For her de But sate lo Looking sti Then, who so will with vertuous deeds assay To mount to heaven, on Pegasus must ride, Which whe And with sweete Poets verse be glorifide. My though Renewing 1 'For not to have been dipt in Lethe lake, Could save the sonne of Thetis from to die; For ruth of Whose word But that blinde bard did him immortall make I felt such a With verses, dipt in deaw of Castalie: Which made the Easterne Conquerour to crie, That frosen O fortunate yong-man, whose vertue found So brave a Trompe, thy noble acts to sound! So inlie gree And deepeli Whose mear 'Therefore in this halfe happie I doo read Good Melibes, that hath a Poet got To sing his living praises being dead, Deserving never here to be forgot, Being above At length, b Before mine Like tragick In spight of envie that his deeds would spot: Since whose decease, learning lies unregarded, And men of armes doo wander unrewarded. I saw an In Placed on hi 'Those two be those two great calamities That all, whi That long agoe did grieve the noble spright Might worst Of Salomon with great indignities, Not that gre Who whilome was alive the wisest wight: To which th But now his wisedome is disprooved quite; The holie br For he, that now welds all things at his will Scorns th' one and th' other in his deeper skill. But th' Altai Was (O great That shortly 'O griefe of griefes! O gall of all good heartes!

With showre

Then downe

Scorned of ev

away

To see that vertue should dispised bee

Of him, that first was raisde for vertuous parts,

Lets none shoot up that nigh him planted bee:

And now, broad spreading like an aged tree,

O let the man, of whom the Muse is scorned

ee mount aloft unto the skie, the Christall firmament: ild the heavens great Hierarchie, pure light, the Spheres swift Heapes of huge wordes uphoorded hidcously, ent.

th humble minde and high in-

lakers majestie wee viewe ruth, his glorie, and his might, ore than mortall men can vew. Lord! O soveraigne happinesse,

nd thy mercie measurelesse! sse have they that doo embrace of my heavenlie discipline;

d sorrow and accursed case at scorne the schoole of arts divine, ie, which do professe the skill heavenly wise through humbled

et contentment of my thought 1y selfe with mine owne selfeion of things heavenlie wrought: arth, I looke up to the sky, iven hence, I thether fly.

they mee despise and spight,

old the miserie of men, he blis that wisedom would them e beasts doo lie in loathsome den rkenes, and of gastlie dreed;

isters cake whom they disdaine. e wept and waild so pityouslie, had beene two springing wells;

est, her sorrow to supplie, th shricks and cries and dreery :; and then the next in rew

POLYHYMNIA. e desires a dolefull song, e art or curious complements : Fortune, into basenes flong, he pride of wonted ornaments:

re these ragged rimes for mee,

rrowes that exceeding bee.

purnfull plaint, as doth ensew.

numbers and melodious measures, i wont the winged words to tie, unefull Diapase of pleasures,

t to runne at libertie

By those which have no skill to rule them right, Have now quite lost their naturall delight.

With horrid sound though having little sence, and Intelligences fayre, [chayre. They thinks to be chiefe praise of Postry; waighting on th' Almighties And, thereby wanting due intelligence,

Have mard the face of goodly Poësie, And made a monster of their fantasie.

Whilom in ages past none might professe But Princes and high Priests that secret skill; The sacred lawes therein they wont expresse. And with deepe Oracles their verses fill: Then was shee held in soveraigne dignitic.

And made the noursling of Nobilitie.

But now nor Prince nor Priest doth her maintayne,

But suffer her prophaned for to bee Of the base vulgar, that with hands uncleane Dares to pollute her hidden mysterie And treadeth under foote hir holie things, Which was the care of Kesars and of Kings.

One onelle lives, her ages ornament, And myrrour of her Makers majestie, That with rich bountie, and deare cherishment,

Supports the praise of noble Poësie; Ne onelie favours them which it professe,

But is her selfe a peereles Poetresse. [breed, Most peereles Prince, most peereles Poetresse, The true Pandora of all heavenly graces, Divine Elisa, sacred Emperesse!

Live she for ever, and her royall Places mourne, and for my selfe com-Be fild with praises of divinest wits, That her eternize with their heavenlie writa! Some few beside this sacred skill esteme.

Admirers of her glorious excellence; Which, being lightned with her beawties beme, Are thereby fild with happie influence; And lifted up above the worldes gaze, To sing with Angels her immortall praize.

But all the rest, as borne of salvage brood And having beene with Acorns alwaies fed, Can no whit savour this celestiall food, But with base thoughts are into blindnesse led,

And kept from looking on the lightsome day: For whome I waile and weepe all that I may. Estsoones such store of teares shee forth did powre,
As if shee all to water would have gone:

And all her sisters, seeing her sad stowre, Did weep and waile, and made exceeding mone, And all their learned instruments did breaks The rest untold no living tongue can speake.

VIRGILS GNAT.

LONG SINCE DEDICATED

TO THE MOST NOBLE AND EXCELLENT LORD.

THE EARLE OF LEICESTER,

LATE DECEASED.

Wnone'n yet not daring to expresse my paine,
To you (great Lord) the causer of my care,
In clowdie teares my case I thus complaine
Unto yourselfe, that onely privie are:
But if that any Oedipus unware
Shall chaunce, through power of some divining sprigh
To reade the secrete of this riddle rare,
And know the purporte of my evill plight.
Let him rest pleased with his owne insight,
Ne further seeke to glose upon the text;
For griefe enough it is to grieved wight
To feele his fanit, and not be further vext.
But what so by my selfe may not be showen,
May by this Gnatta complaint be easily knowen.

VIRGILS GNAT.

WE now have playde (Augustus) wantonly, Tuning our song unto a tender Muse, And, like a cobweb weaving slenderly, Have onely playde: let thus much then excuse This Gnats small Poeme, that th' whole history Is but a jest, though envie it abuse: [blame, But who such sports and sweet delights doth Shall lighter seeme than this Gnats idle name.

Hereafter, when as season more secure Shall bring forth fruit, this Muse shall speak to thee

In bigger notes, that may thy sense allure, And for thy worth frame some fit Poësie: The golden ofspring of Latona pure, And ornament of great Joves progenic, Phabus, shall be the author of my song, Playing on yvorie harp with silver strong. He shall inspire my verse w of Poets Prince, whether he Faire Xanthus sprincled wid Or in the woods of Astery n Or whereas mount Parnasse Doth his broad forhead like a And the sweete waves of soo With liquid foote doth slide

Wherefore ye Sisters, which Of the Pierian streames, fay Go too, and, dauncing all in Adorne that God: and thou To whome the honest care c Returneth by continuall suc Have care for to pursue his Throgh the wide woods and thee I lifted am aloft e forrest wide and starrie sky: most dread (Octavius), which oft wits givest courage worthily, hou sacred childe) come sliding soft,

r my beginnings graciously; sese leaves do sing that dreadfull ground. nd. ints bloud did staine Phlegræan

'halfe-horsy people, Centaures hight, th the bloudie Lapithaes at bord: ie East with tyranous despight Attick towres, and people slew with rd. ount Athos through exceeding might

d downe, nor yron bands abord k sea by their huge Navy cast, shall renowne, so long since past, pont trampled with horses feete, ing Persians did the Greeks affray;

: Muse, as for her power more meete, rith Phœbus friendly leave) to play inning verse with tender feete. (dread sacred child) to thee alway, ting lightsome glory strive, e worlds endles ages to survive.

happie roome remaine for thee wenly ranks, where blessed soules ₩t: ig lasting life with joyous glee, meede that thou deservest best, nany yeares remembered be ood men, of whom thou oft are blest; or ever in all happinesse! turne to our first businesse.

un was mounted now on hight eavenly towers, and shot each where zolden Charet glistering light; Aurora, with her rosie heare, Il darknes now had put to flight; ie shepheard, seeing day appeare, loats gan drive out of their stalls, proad where pasture best befalls.

h mountaines top he with them kest grasse did cloath the open hills. amongst the woods and thickets valleies wandring at their wills, ent, (fills,

Others the utmost boughs of trees doe crop And brouze the woodbine twigges that freshly bud;

This with full bit doth catch the utmost top Of some soft Willow, or new growen stud; This with sharpe teeth the bramble leaves doth lop, And chaw the tender prickles in her Cud;

The whiles another high doth overlooke Her owne like image in a christall brooke, O! the great happines, which shepheards have,

Who so loathes not too much the poore estate, With minde that ill use doth before deprave, Ne measures all things by the costly rate Of riotise, and semblants outward brave! No such sad cares, as wont to macerate And rend the greedie mindes of covetous men, Do ever creepe into the shepheards den.

Ne cares he if the fleece, which him arayes, Be not twice steeped in Assyrian dye; Ne glistering of golde, which underlayes The summer beames, doe blinde his gazing eve;

Ne pictures beautie, nor the glauncing rayes Of precious stones, whence no good commeth by;
Ne yet his cup embost with Imagery
Of Bætus or of Alcons vanity.

Ne ought the whelky pearles esteemeth hee, Which are from Indian seas brought far away; But with pure brest from carefull sorrow free, On the soft grasse his limbs doth oft display, In sweete spring time, when flowres varietie With sundrie colours paints the sprinckled

lay: There, lying all at ease from guile or spight, With pype of fennie reedes doth him delight, There he, Lord of himselfe, with palme be-

dight, His looser locks doth wrap in wreath of vine: There his milk-dropping Goats be his delight, And fruitefull Pales, and the forrest greene And darkesome caves in pleasaunt vallies

pight, Whereas continuall shade is to be seene And where fresh springing wells, as christall neate,

Do alwayes flow to quench his thirstie heate.

O! who can lead, then, a more happie life naelves farre abroad through each Than he, that with cleane minde, and heart sincere

we soft greene grasse feeding their No greedy riches knowes nor bloudie strife, bring through the hollow cliffes on hy No deadly fight of warlick fleete doth feare; bushie shrubs which growe thereby. Ne runs in perill of foez cruell knile,

Sweete quiet harbours in his harmeless head, And perfect pleasure buildes her joyous bowre, Free from sad cares that rich mens hearts Not so much devowre.

This all his care, this all his whole indevour, To this his minde and senses he doth bend, How he may flow in quiets matchles treasour,

Content with any food that God doth send; And how his limbs, resolv'd through idle leisour, Unto sweete sleepe he may securely lend In some coole shadow from the scorching heat,

The whiles his flock their chawed cuds do In the fresh s eate.

O flocks! O Faunes! and O ye pleasaunt Springs Of Tempe! where the countrey Nymphs are rife, sings Through whose not costly care each shepheard As merrie notes upon his rusticke Fife,

As that Ascreau bard, whose fame now rings Through the wide world, and leads as joyfull life; Free from all troubles and from worldly toyle.

In which fond men doe all their dayes turmoyle. In such delights whilst thus his carelesse time

This Shepheard drives, upleaning on his batt, And on shrill reedes chaunting his rustick rime, Hyperion, throwing foorth his beames full hott, Into the highest top of heaven gan clime, And, the world parting by an equal lott, Did shed his whirling flames on either side,

Woodgods, a With many The streame weene

As that faire Staied thee, (From cheeref

some a The verie nat

With gentle A pleasant bo

To rest their For first the h Out of the lo And high she

And them an Wicked for h

Ulysses men,

Taking to ho And eke thos The Sunnes decay Of Phaeton, v They, gather lament

And that sam By his dislov Eternall hurt Whom als ac Through fats an one The Oke. who

3 Cypresse, signe of deadly bale.

est the clambring Yvie grew, anton armes with grasping hold, Poplar happely should rew trokes, whose boughes she doth

e twigs, till they the top survew, 1 pallid greene her buds of gold. Myrtle tree to her approach,

idfull of her olde reproach. Birds, in their wide boughs emconsent; ir sundrie tunes with sweete m a silver Spring, forth powring

reames, a gentle murmure sent; ogs, bred in the slimie scowring That all his tract with bloudie drops is stained mores, their jarring voyces bent, shoppers chirped them around; avrie Echo did resound.

ant place this Shepheards flocke ere, their wearie limbs to rest, i, and everie hollow rocke, e on them the whistling stocke, st:

ne Shepheard self, tending his ountaine side, in shade to rest, slumbring sleep oppressed him ound, and seized everie lim.

r traines nought tooke he keep, the grassie greene dispredd, fe did trust to careles sleep; ing down his drouping drowsie

nis molten heart did steep e, and feare of all falshedd; istant fortune, bent to ill, iischance his quietnes to spill. nted time in that same place t Serpent, all with speckles pide,

aselfe in moorish slime did trace, e boyling heate himselfe to hide:

scalie boughts with fell despight, za seem'd appalled at his sight. id more having himselfe enrolde, breast he lifteth up on hie, oud vaunt his head aloft doth

ove, spotted with purple die, e did shine like scalie golde; at eyes, glauncing full dreadfullie, Yet

Holme that loves the watrie Did seeme to flame out flakes of flashing fyre, And with sterne lookes to threaten kindled yre.

Thus wise long time he did himselfe dispace There round about, when as at last he spide, Lying along before him in that place, That flocks grand Captaine and most trustie

guide Estsoones more fierce in visage, and in pace, Throwing his firie eyes on everie side, He commeth on, and all things in his way Full stearnly rends that might his passage stay.

Much he disdaines that anie one should dare To come unto his haunt; for which intent He inly burns, and gins straight to prepare The weapons, which Nature to him hath lent: Fellie he hisseth, and doth fiercely stare, And hath his jawes with angrie spirits rent,

And all his foldes are now in length outstrained. Whom, thus at point prepared, to prevent, A litle noursling of the humid ayre, A Gnat, unto the sleepie Shepheard went; And, marking where his ey-lids twinckling rare

Shewd the two pearles which sight unto him lent, Through their thin coverings appearing fayre, His little needle there infixing deep,

Warnd him awake, from death himselfe to keep. Wherewith enrag'd he fiercely gan upstart, And with his hand him rashly bruzing slewe As in avengement of his heedles smart

That streight the spirite out of his senses flew, And life out of his members did depart: When, suddenly casting aside his vew, He spide his foe with felonous intent, And fervent eyes to his destruction bent,

All suddenly dismaid, and hartles quight, He fled abacke, and catching hastie holde ()f a yong alder hard beside him pight, It rent, and streight about him gan beholds What God or Fortune would assist his might.

But whether God or Fortune made him bold by with rolling wreathed pace, and to read: yet hardie will be had tongue the emptie aire did To overcome, that made him lesse adrad. The scalie backe of that most hideous snake

Enwrapped round, oft faining to retire And oft him to assaile, he fiercely strake Whereas his temples did his creast-front tyre; And, for he was but slowe, did slowth off shake And gazing ghastly on, (for feare and yre Had blent so much his sense, that lesse he

feard) when he saw him slaine himselfe cheard.

By this the Night forth from the darksome Into the same mishap I now an howre

Of Herebus her teemed steedes gan call, And lassie Vesper in his timely howre From golden Oeta gan proceede withall; Whenas the Shepheard after this sharpe stowre, Seeing the doubled shadowes low to fall,

Gathering his straying flocke, does homeward fare. And unto rest his wearie joynts prepare.

Into whose sense so soone as lighter sleepe Was entered, and now loosing everic lim, Sweete slumbring deaw in carelesnesse did steepe The Image of that Gnat appeard to him, And in sad tearmes gan sorrowfully weepe With greislie countenaunce and visage grim, Displeasure too implacable was

Wailing the wrong which he had done of late, In steed of good, hastning his cruell fate. Said he, 'What have I, wretch, deserv'd, that Into this bitter bale I am outcast, Whilest that thy life more deare and precious Was than mine owne, so long as it did last?

I now, in lieu of paines so gracious, Am tost in th' ayre with everie windie blast: Thou, safe delivered from sad decay, Thy careles limbs in loose sleep dost display.

'So livest thou; but my poore wretched ghost Is forst to ferrie over Lethes river, And spoyld of Charon too and fro am tost. Seest thou not how all places quake and quiver Lightned with deadly lamps on everie post? Tisiphone each where doth shake and shiver Her flaming fire-brond, encountring me,

Whose lockes uncombed cruell adders be. 'And Cerberus, whose many mouthes doo bay And barke out flames, as if on fire he fed; Adowne whose necke, in terrible array Ten thousand snakes cralling about his hed

Doo hang in heapes, that horribly affray, And bloodie eyes doo glister firie red; He oftentimes me dreadfullie doth threaten

With painfull torments to be sorely beaten. 'Ay me! that thankes so much should faile of meed;

For that I thee restor'd to life againe Even from the doore of death and deadlie dreed! Where then is now the guerdon of my paine?

Where the reward of my so piteous deed? The praise of pitie vanisht is in vaine, And th' antique faith of Justice long agone Out of the land is fled away and gone. I saw anothers fate approaching fast, And left mine owne his safetie to tender;

And shun'd destruction dot render: Not unto him that never hath t

But punishment is due to the o Yet let destruction be the punis So long as thankfull will may i

'I carried am into waste wilde Waste wildernes, amongst Cym Where endles paines and hideor Is round about me heapt in dar

For there huge Othos sits in sa Fast bound with serpents that h
Far of beholding Ephialtes tide
Which once assai'd to burne thi And there is mournfull Tityus Of thy displeasure, O Latona fa

That made him meat for wild fou Much do I feare among such fit [thus Much do I feare back to them t To the black shadowes of the S Where wretched ghosts sit wail 'There next the utmost brinck That did the bankets of the Go

Whose throat through thirst t being dride His sense to seeke for ease turn And he, that in avengement of For scorning to the sacred God:

Against a mountaine rolls a mi Calling in vaine for rest, and ca Go ye with them, go, cursed d Whose bridale torches foule Er And Hymen, at your Spousalls Tydings of death and massacre With them that cruell Colchid The which conceiv'd in her reve

slav. And murdred troupes upon grea There also those two Pandioni Calling on Itis, Itis! evermore, Whom, wretched boy, they sle blades; For whome the Thracian king l Turn'd to a Lapwing, fowlie the

With bitter woundes her owne

And fluttering round about then There now they all eternally ex Of others wrong, and suffer end 'But the two brethren borne of Whilst each does for the Soveri Blinde through ambition, and v wood. Each doth against the others be

all foes remaine. ie hand was slaine. end of paine, intreated bee;

well withstood,

arcases doth rend;

arried faine, fferent I see, Elisian plaine: ountring mee, earnestlie me to terrific.

iviolate, ier husbands daies g fate for fate. iortall praise all to her mate. e awaves hich her woo'd, wallowed in their

ow no more detained bee id before: rpheus, in thee. ie spirite bore, lowes goe to see, thing could please wres appease:

le fashion; Tartar covered ke confusion; e Judge is deadlie

s of Phlegeton.

h punish sore espassed before. in Orpheus bolde; still did stand,

through the land:

im understand; [ceav'd. |

s silver sound re-

starrie skie; in!) thou delay his melodie?

To yeeld Eurydice unto her fere Backe to be borne, though it unlawfull were. 'She, (Ladie) having well before approoved

The same was able with like lovely lay

The Queene of hell to move as easily,

The feends to be too cruell and severe Observ'd th' appointed way, as her behooved, Ne ever did her ey-sight turne arere, Ne ever spake, ne cause of speaking mooved; But, cruell Orpheus, thou much crueller,

Seeking to kisse her, brok'st the Gods decree, And thereby mad'st her ever damn'd to be. Ah! but sweete love of pardon worthie is

And doth deserve to have small faults remitted. If Hell at least things lightly done amis Knew how to pardon, when ought is omitted; Yet are ye both received into blis, And to the seates of happie soules admitted:

And you beside the honourable band Of great Heroës doo in order stand.

There be the two stout sonnes of Aeacus, Fierce Pelcus, and the hardie Telamon, Both seeming now full glad and joyeous Through their Syres dreadfull jurisdiction, Being the Judge of all that horrid hous:

And both of them, by strange occasion, Renown'd in choyce of happie marriage Through Venus grace, and vertues cariage.

'For th' one was ravisht of his owne bondmaide, The faire Ixione captiv'd from Troy;

kingdomes, com- But th' other was with Thetis love assaid, Great Nereus his daughter and his joy On this side them there is a yongman layd, Their match in glorie, mightie, fierce, and coy

That from th' Argolick ships with furious yre Bett back the furie of the Trojan fyre. O! who would not recount the strong divorces Of that great warre, which Trojanes oft be-

And oft beheld the warlike Greekish forces, trie did withhold. When Teucrian soyle with bloodie rivers swelde, d in the earthly Andwide Sigman shores were spred with corses,

And Simois and Xanthus blood outwelde; Whilst Hector raged with outragious minde, were of sense be- Flames, weapons, wounds, in Greeks fleete to have tynde.

' For Ida selfe, in ayde of that fierce fight, astic steedes did Out of her mountaines ministred supplies; And, like a kindly nourse, did yeeld (for spight) Store of firebronds out of her nourseries

Unto her foster children, that they might Inflame the Navie of their enemies,

e great clap of thunder which deth ryve Whith seem dryve.

'So th' one with fire and weapons did contend | Suddenly, w To cut the ships from turning home againe
To Argos; th' other strove for to defend
The force of Vulcane with his might and

maine.

Thus th' one Aeacide did his fame extend; But th' other joy'd, that, on the Phrygian playne

Having the blood of vanquisht Hector shedd, He compast Troy thrice with his bodie dedd. Againe great dole on either partie grewe,

That him to death unfaithfull Paris sent: And also him that false Ulysses slewe, Drawne into danger through close ambush-

ment; Therefore from him Laërtes sonne his vewe Doth turne aside, and boasts his good event

In working of Strymonian Rhæsus fall, And efte in Dolons subtile surprysall. 'Againe the dreadfull Cycones him dismay, And blacke Læstrigones, a people stout: Then greedie Scilla, under whom there bay Manie great bandogs which her gird about :

Then doe the Aetnean Cyclops him affray, And deep Charybdis gulphing in and out: Lastly the squalid lakes of Tartarie, And griesly Feends of hell him terrifie.

'There also goodly Agamemnon bosts, The glorie of the stock of Tantalus, And famous light of all the Greekish hosts; Under whose conduct most victorious,

Black storme farre. That now the But skies ar Warre The billowes And th' heav And in aver Both Sun ar powre Conspire in c And downe

Or haplesse 1 The heavens

townes The skie, in Throwes ligh ful she That death o

In thousand feares 'Some in th drent: Some on the Some on th' Some scattr know: And manie l

Remaines, no

ntique fame of stout Camill and constant Curtius, ; his vowed life to spill health, a gulph most hideous wne with his owne corps did

whe with his owne corps did nowers; and prduent Mutius, nendur'd the scorching flame, by ensample of the same.

Curius, companion s, lives in endles rest; inius, whose devotion : fires scorn'd furie to detest; raise of either Scipion st place above the best.

raise of either Scipion st place above the best, un'd walls of Carthage vow'd, r forces, sound their praises

ever through their lasting

etch, am forced to retourne s that Phœbus sunnic rayes , where soules doo alwaies

vling shores to waste my dayes, on with quenchles flames doth sever Minos righteous soules doth nes, to live in blisse for ever.

hus the cruell fiends of hell, ; snakes, and thousand yron [compell e of that their cruell Judge ture, and impatient paines, ath and just complaint to tell:

ath and just complaint to tell: e whom my poore glost comor of her ill unwares, [plaines ar'st my intollerable cares.

re as bequeathing to the winde, eturning to thee never, lamentable plaint behinde: haunt he soft downe-rolling

minde; ne woods and fruitful pastures ing aire my vaine words sever.' iid, he heavily departed crie, that anie would have

sloathfull fit of lifes sweete rest avie Shepheard, wondrous cares d minde full sore opprest; grow he no longer beares

imprest,
But bends what ever power his aged yeares
Him lent, yet being such a sthrough their
might
He lately slue his dreadfull foe in fight.

For that Gnats death, which deeply was

By that same River lurking under greene, Eftsoones he gins to fashion forth a place; And, squaring it in compasse well beseene, There plotteth out a tombe by measured space:

His yron-headed spade tho making cleene,

To dig up sods out of the flowrie grasse, His worke he shortly to good purpose brought, Like as he had conceiv'd it in his thought.

Enclosing it with banks on everie side, And thereupon did raise full busily A little mount, of greene turffs edifide; And on the top of all, that passers by Might it behold, the toomb he did provide Of smoothest marble stone in order set,

That never might his luckie scape forget.

And round about he taught sweete flowres to

grows:
The Rose engrained in pure scarlet die;
The Lilly fresh, and Violet belowe;
The Marigolde, and cherefull Rosemarie;
The Spartan Mirtle, whence sweet gumb does flowe;

The purple Hyacinthe, and fresh Costmarie; And Saffron, sought for in Cilician soyle; And Lawrell, th' ornament of Phœbus toyle. Fresh Rhododaphne, and the Sabine flowre,

Matching the wealth of th' auncient Frankincence; And pallid Yvie, building his owne bowre; And Box, yet mindfull of his olde offence; Red Amaranthus, lucklesse Paramour; Oxeye still greene, and bitter Patience;

Oxeye still greene, and bitter Patience; Ne wants there pale Narcisse, that, in a well Seeing his beautie, in love with it fell. And whatso ever other flowre of worth, And whatso other hearb of lovely hew, [forth, The joyous Spring out of the ground brings To cloath her selfe in colours fresh and new,

He planted there, and reard a mount of earth, In whose high front was writ as doth ensue. To thee, small Gnat, in lieu of his life saved, The Shepheard hath thy deaths record engraved.

PROSOPOPOLA:

ΛR

HUBBERDS TALI MOTHER

BY ED. SP.

DEDICATED TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE, THE LADIE COMPTON AND MOUNTEGLE.

TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE, THE LADIE COMPTON AND MOUNTEGLE.

Most faire and vertuous Ladie; having often sought opportunitie by some good meanes to make knowen to your Ladiship the humble affection and faithfull ductie, which I have alwaies professed, and am bound to beare to that House, from whence yee spring, I have at length found occasion to remember the same, by making a simple present to you of these my idle labours; which having long sithens composed in the raw conceipt of my youth, I lately amongst other papers lighted upon, and was by others, which liked the same, mooved to set them foorth. Simple is

the device, and the composition carrieth some delight, even the r of the simplicitie and meannesse ated. The same I beseech your in good part, as a pledge of the which I have made to you; an you untill, with some other I labour, I do redeeme it out of and discharge my utmost dutic wishing your Ladiship all incre and happinesse, I humblie take Your La: ever hu

PROSOPOPOIA: OR MOTHER HUBBERDS T

It was the month in which the righteous Maide, | Depriv'd of sense and ordinarie re That for disdaine of sinfull worlds upbraide Fled back to heaven, whence she was first con- My fortune was, mongst manie o ceived.

Into her silver bowre the Sunne received: And the hot Syrian Dog on him awayting,

That it to Leaches seemed strang To be partaker of their common v And my weake bodie, set on fire Was rob'd of rest and naturall re And the hot Syrian Dog on min and string.

After the chafed Lyons cruell bavting.

Corrupted had th' ayre with his novsome [death.]

Began to comfort me in chearfull and meanes of gladsome solace t And powr'd on th' earth plague, pestilence, and And meanes of gladsome solace t

Emongst the rest a wicked maladie

Raign'd emongst men, that manie did to die, His office, and my feeble eyes for les (fit for that idle stound) e to waste the wearie howres.

ies and their strange attires; ints, hard to be believed: thereof me much releeved. : a good old woman was, ubberd, who did farre surpas est mirth, that seem'd her

me was come her tale to tell, e adventure, that betided e and th' Ape by him mis

it my sense it greatly pleased, ite heavie and deseased, s as she the same did sav. words remember may. e needes heretoo to call : and matter meane withall. l she) before the world was

' Ape, disliking of their evill determined to seeke [lyeke, arre abroad, lyeke with his iftie and unhappie witted; tht no where be better fitted. this cause of gricfe did tinde. aine his case with words un-

and my Gossip eke beside ands in friendship to be tide) more trustely complaine hat doth me sore constraine to finde due remedie? paine and inward agonie. s I now have spent and worne and basest fortunes scorne, trey service as I might, aie, than the prowdest wight; . to be up advaunced, at no lenger hope I see, me still to follow mee, the next leafe of the booke: e way I doo betake, sip privie first to make.

your griefe doth great appeare. Thus therefore I advize upon the case, my selfe am touched neare: That not to anie certaine trade or place.

roubled sense how to deceave For I likewise have wasted much good time, might unquiet fancies reave; Still wayting to preferment up to clime, a seates about me round, Whilest others alwayes have before me stept, And from my beard the fat away have swept; That now unto despaire I gin to growe, lies, and their Paramoures; And meane for better winde about to throwe, nights, and their renowned Therefore to me, my trustic friend, aread Thy councell: two is better than one head.'
'Certes (said he) I meane me to disguize In some straunge habit, after uncouth wize; Or like a Pilgrim, or a Lymiter, Or like a Gipsen, or a Juggeler, And so to wander to the worldes ende, To seeke my fortune, where I may it mend: For worse than that I have I cannot meete. Wide is the world I wote, and everie streets Is full of fortunes, and adventures straunge, Continuallie subject unto chaunge. Say, my faire brother now, if this device Doth like you, or may you to like entice.'
'Surely (said th' Ape) it likes me wondrous
well; And would ye not poore fellowship expell,

> Is disadventrous, and quite fortunelesse; Abroad, where change is, good may gotten bee. The Foxe was glad, and quickly did agree: So both resolv'd, the morrow next ensuing, So soone as day appeard to peoples vewing, On their intended journey to proceede; And over night whatso theretoo did neede Each did prepare, in readines to bee. The morrow next, so soone as one might see Light out of heavens windowes forth to looke, Both their habiliments unto them tooke, And put themselves (a Gods name) on their

My selfe would offer you t' accompanie

For to wexe olde at home in idlenesse

In this adventures chauncefull jeopardie:

way; Whenas the Ape, beginning well to wey This hard adventure, thus began t' advise, Now read, Sir Reynold, as ye be right wise, What course ye weene is best for us to take, That for our selves we may a living make. Whether shall we professe some trade or skill, Or shall we varie our device at will, s; but still it has mischaunced. Even as new occasion appeares? Or shall we tie our selves for certaine yeares To anie service, or to anie place? up on high, where I did looke, For it behoves, ere that into the race We enter, to resolve first hereupon.'
'Now surely brother (said the Foxe anon) Ye have this matter motioned in season; Gossip, (answer'd then the For everie thing that is begun with reason Will come by readie meanes unto his end, sad words my wits awhape, But things miscounselled must needs miswend.

Nor anie man, we should our selves applie; For why should be that is at libertie | born Make himselfe bond? sith then we are free Let us all servile base subjection scorne : And as we bee sonnes of the world so wide, Let us our fathers heritage divide, And chalenge to our selves our portions dew Of all the patrimonic, which a few Now hold in hugger mugger in their hand, And all the rest doo rob of good and land. For now a few have all, and all have nought, Yet all be brethren ylike dearly bought: There is no right in this partition, Ne was it so by institution Ordained first, ne by the law of Nature, But that she gave like blessing to each creture, As well of worldly livelode as of life, That there might be no difference nor strife, Nor ought cald mine or thine: thrice happie

then Was the condition of mortall men. That was the golden age of Saturne old, But this might better be the world of gold; For without golde now nothing wilbe got, Therefore (if please you) this shalbe our plot: We will not be of anie occupation;

Let such vile vassals, borne to base vocation, Drudge in the world, and for their living droyle,

Which have no wit to live withouten toyle; But we will walke about the world at pleasure

His breeches were made afte

Like two free men, and make our case our

At Portugese, loose like an e treasure.

Free men some beggers call, but they be free, And they which call them so more beggers bee: For they doe swinke and sweate to feed th other.

Who live like Lords of that which they doo And yet doo never thanke them for the same, But as their due by Nature doo it clame. Such will we fashion both our selves to bee, Lords of the world; and so will wander free Where so us listeth, uncontrol'd of anie: Hard is our hap, if we (emongst so manie) Light not on some that may our state amend;

Yet, well considering of the circumstaunce As pausing in great doubt, awhile he staid And afterwards with grave advizement said:
'I cannot, my lief brother, like but well The purpose of the complot which ye tell; For well I wot (compard to all the rest Of each degree) that Beggers life is best; [all, And they, that thinke themselves the best of Oft-times to begging are content to fall.

But this I wot withall, that we shall ronne

Into great daunger, like to bee undone,

Thus wildly to wander in the Withouten pasport or good For feare least we like ros

And for eare-marked beasts Therefore, I read that we o How to prevent this mischi And how we may, with mor Beg amongst those that be Right well, deere Gossip, (Said then the Foxe) but For ere we farther passe I w And by the names of Sould That now is thought a civil-Be you the Souldier, for you For manly semblance, warre:

I will but wayte on you, an Falls out, my selfe fit for fashion.'

The pasport ended, both the The Ape clad Souldierlike, find a blew jacket with a cross And manie slits, as if that he had been supported by the state of the stat Much blood through many receaved.

Which had the use of his rig Upon his head an old Scotel With a plume feather all to And his hose broken high a And his shooes beaten out v But neither sword nor dagg Seemes that no fees rev feare :

In stead of them a handsom On which he leaned, as on Shame light on him, that illusion,

Doth turne the name of Son And that, which is the nobl Brings to reproach and come Long they thus travalled, y Adventure which might the Sildome but some good commeth ere the end. Adventure which might the Well seemd the Ape to like this ordinaunce; Yet manie waies they sought Yet for their purposes none At last they chaunst to me A simple husbandman in ga Yet though his vesture we bace.

A good yeoman he was of he And more for thrift did or clothing ;

Gay without good is good The Foxe him spying, bad t To play his part, for loe! he

4.] er'd not,) should them entertaine, them timely profite for their paine. he Ape himselfe gan up to reare, shoulders high his bat to beare, service he were fit to doo; hrift for him he did it too: y forward he his steps did straine, handsome swaine it him became. n wander loosly, first began of custome, what and whence they he Ape, 'I am a Souldiere, [were? in warres have spent my deerest

g service lost both limbs and good; onstrain'd that trade to overgive, 1 to seeke some meanes to live: ht it you in pitie please t' afford, readie, both in deed and word, faithfull service all my dayes.

vorld (that same he weeping sayes)

doth bravest mindes abate, them seeke for that they wont to and of hope at once forlorne.'

t man, that heard him thus comd as he had felt part of his paine; lispos'd him some reliefe to showe,

usbandrie he ought did knowe, to plant, to reap, to rake, to sowe to ditch, to thrash, to thetch, to

labour els he was prepar'd, ds life is labourous and hard? e Ape him hard so much to talke that did from his liking balke, have slipt the coller handsomly, said: Good Sir, full glad am I ir kindly services as needeth.

eth, nay no painfull worke endure, ig labour can it selfe enure : anie other place you have tes small paines, but thriftines to

overlooke, or trust to gather, me trust as your owne ghostly

at the husbandman gan him avize, him were fittest exercise

Cattell to keep, or grounds to oversee; And asked him, if he could willing bee To keep his sheep, or to attend his swyne, Or watch his mares, or take his charge of kyne?

'Gladly (said he) what ever such like paine Ye put on me, I will the same sustaine; But gladliest I of your fleecie sheepe they nigh approached, that good (Might it you please) would take on me the keep.

For ere that unto armes I me betooke, Unto my fathers sheepe I usde to looke, That yet the skill thereof I have not loste: Thereto right well this Curdog, by my coste, (Meaning the Foxe) will serve my sheepe to gather,
And drive to follow after their Belwether.

The Husbandman was meanly well content Triall to make of his endevourment; And, home him leading, lent to him the charge Of all his flocke, with libertie full large, Giving accompt of th' annuall increce rne the stowtest hearts to lowest Both of their lambes, and of their woolly Thus is this Ape become a shepheard swaine, And the false Foxe his dog (God give them paine!)

For ere the yeare have halfe his course out-run, And doo returne from whence he first begun They shall him make an ill accompt of thrift. Now whenas Time, flying with winges swift, Expired had the terme, that these two javels Should render up a reckning of their travels Unto their master, which it of them sought, Exceedingly they troubled were in thought, Ne wist what answere unto him to frame, Ne how to scape great punishment, or shame, For their false treason and vile theeverie: For not a lambe of all their flockes supply Had they to shew; but, ever as they bred, They slue them, and upon their fleshes fed; For that disguised Dog lov'd blood to spill, And drew the wicked Shepheard to his will at paines may anie living wight; So twixt them both they not a lambkin left, ate maymed limbs lack wonted And when lambes fail'd the old sheepes lives

they reft; That how t' acquite themselves unto their Lord right hand the mouth with diet They were in doubt, and flatly set abord. The Foxe then counsel'd th' Ape for to require Respite till morrow t' answere his desire; For times delay new hope of helpe still breeds. The goodman granted, doubting nought their deeds,

And bad next day that all should readie be: But they more subtill meaning had than he; For the next morrowes meed they closely ment, For feare of afterclaps, for to prevent: And that same evening, when all shrowded were In careles aleep, they without care or feare

Cruelly fell upon their flock in folde, And of them slew at pleasure what they wolde. Of which whenas they feasted had their fill. For a full complement of all their ill, They stole away, and tooke their hastie flight, Carried in clowdes of all-concealing night.

So was the husbandman left to his losse, And they unto their fortunes change to tosse: After which sort they wandered long while, Abusing manie through their cloaked guile, That at the last they gan to be descryed Of everie one, and all their sleights espyed. So as their begging now them failed quyte,

For none would give, but all men would them wyte: [living, Yet would they take no paines to get their From the right way full eath n But seeke some other way to gaine by giving, Much like to begging, but much better named, For manie beg which are thereof ashamed. And now the Foxe had gotten him a gowne, And th' Ape a cassocke sidelong hanging downe; For they their occupation meant to change,

For, since their souldiers pas no better spedd, They forg'd another, as for Clerkes booke-redd. Who passing foorth, as their adventures fell, Through manie haps, which needs not here to The Priest gan wexe halfe protell, [meete, At length chaunst with a formall Priest to Whom they in civill manner first did greete,

And now in other state abroad to range:

And after askt an almes for Gods deare love. The man straightway his choler up did move, And with reproachfull tearmes gan them revile, For following that trade so base and vile; And askt what license, or what Pas they had? 'Ah! (said the Ape, as sighing wondrous sad) Daylie thereby, and grow to gove

Twixt them that aske, and them that asked lee. Natheles, because you shall not us misdeeme, But that we are as honest as we seeme, Yee shall our pasport at your pleasure see, And then ye will (I hope) well mooved bee. Which when the Priest beheld, he yew'd it nere,

That list at will them to revile or snib:

And yet (God wote) small oddes I often see

As if therein some text he studying were But little els (God wote) could thereof skill; For read he could not evidence, nor will, Ne tell a written word, ne write a letter,

Ne make one title worse, ne make one better: Of such deep learning little had he neede, No yet of Latine, ne of Greeke, that breede Doubts mongst Divines, and difference of texts, The bread of life powr'd downe for From whence arise diversitie of sects, And hatefull heresics, of God abhor'd:

But this good Sir did follow the plaine word, Did rule the Jewes, All shalle to

Ne medled with their controversies All his care was, his service well t And to read Homelies upon bolids When that was done, he might

playes:
An easie life, and fit high God to pl He, having overlookt their pas a

Gan at the length them to rebuke: That no good trade of life did ente But lost their time in wandring le Seeing the world, in which they b

Had wayes enough for all therein Such grace did God unto his creati Said then the Foxe: 'Who hath not tride.

We are but Novices, new come alt. We have not yet the tract of anie Nor on us taken anie state of life. But readie are of anie to make pro Therefore might please you, which

have proved, Us to advise, which forth but late Of some good course that we m take ;

Ye shall for ever us your bondmer praide,

And thereby willing to affoord the It seemes (said he) right well Clerks,

Both by your wittie words, and by Is not that name enough to make To him that hath a whit of Natur

How manie honest men see ye ar Its an hard case, when men of good deserving.

Must either driven be perforce to sterving,
Or asked for their pas by everie squib,

All jolly Prelates, worthie rule to Who ever them envie: vet spite!

Why should ye doubt, then, but ! Might unto some of those in time In the meane-time to live in good Loving that love, and hating the Being some honest Curate, or sor Content with little in condition s 'Ah! but (said th' Ape) the ch drous great,

To feed mens soules, and hath an h To feede mens soules (quoth he) i For they must feed themselves, doc We are but charg'd to lay the me Eate they that list, we need to d But God it is that feedes them w

place. Therefore said he, that with the

lock is rightly fed, and taught heard, and the Priest is hee; pheard swaines ordain'd to bee. with doo not your selfe dismay; s so great, but beare ye may, it, as it was wont of yore, es, ne halfe so streight and sore. used duly everie day and their holie things to say, even, besides their Anthemes

sses, and their Complynes meete, their Trentals, and their shrifts, s, their singings, and their gifts. needlesse works are laid away; eke, upon the Sabbath day, doo our small devotion, llow any merrie motion.
e to fast, but when we list; arments base of wollen twist, inest silkes us to aray, od we may appeare more gay, arons glorie in his place: it is, that person bace vile cloaths approach Gods

leannes may approachen nie; n, which anie master serve, · for their service should deserve: serves the Lord of hoasts most

nighest place, t' approach him

oples prayers to present me, as on ambassage sent fro, should not deserve to weare tter than of wooll or heare. y have lying by our sides sses, or bright shining Brides: le to wilfull chastitie. Gospell of free libertie.' ended had his ghostly sermon, well induc'd to be a Parson, iest eftsoones gan to enquire, efice he might aspire? (said the Priest) is arte indeed: ep learning one thereout may

round-worke is, and end of all, e a Beneficiall. , when ye have in handsome wise rred, as you can devise, Noble-man your selfe applye, one in the worldes eye, ealous disposition o to his religion.

th Jesus Christ now to him There must thou fashion eke a godly zeale, Such as no carpers may contrayre reveale; For each thing fained ought more warie bee. There thou must walke in sober gravitee, And seeme as Saintlike as Saint Radegund: Fast much, pray oft, looke lowly on the ground, And unto everie one doo curtesie meeke: These lookes (nought saying) doo a benefice sceke,

> And be thou sure one not to lacke or long. But if thee list unto the Court to throng, And there to hunt after the hoped pray, Then must thou thee dispose another way: For there thou needs must learne to laugh, to To face, to forge, to scoffe, to companie, To crouche, to please, to be a beetle-stock Of thy great Masters will, to scorne, or mock. So maist thou chaunce mock out a Benefice, Unlesse thou canst one conjure by device, Or cast a figure for a Bishoprick; And if one could, it were but a schoole trick. These be the waves by which without reward Livings in Court be gotten, though full hard,; For nothing there is done without a fee: The Courtier needes must recompenced bee With a Benevolence, or have in gage The Primitias of your Parsonage: Scarse can a Bishoprick forpas them by, But that it must be gelt in privitie. Doo not thou therefore seeke a living there, But of more private persons seeke elswhere, Whereas thou maist compound a better penie, Ne let thy learning question d be of anie. For some good Gentleman, that hath the right Unto his Church for to present a wight,

Shall twentie have, and twentie thou hast wonne: Thou hast it wonne, for it is of franke gift, And he will care for all the rest to shift, Both that the Bishop may admit of thee, And that therein thou maist maintained bee, This is the way for one that is unlern'd Living to get, and not to be discern'd. But they, that are great Clerkes, have nearer wayes,

To fortie pound, that then his yougest sonne

Will cope with thee in reasonable wise;

That if the living yerely doo arise

For learning sake to living them to raise; Yet manie cke of them (God wote) are driven T' accept a Benefice in pecces riven. [courst How saist thou (friend) have I not well dis-Upon this Common-place, (though plaine, not wourst?)

Better a short tale than a bad long shriving: Needes anie more to learne to get a living 'Now sure, and by my hallidome, (quota be Ye a great master are in your degree:

Then made they revell route and goodly gies; But, ere long time had passed, they so IR Did order their affaires, that th' evill will · Fra Of all their Parishners they had constraind; Who to the Ordinarie of them complain'd, How fowlie they their offices abus'd, And them of crimes and heresies accus'd, But tidin That Pursivants he often for them sent; That Pursivants he often for them sent;
But they neglected his commaundement.
So long persisted obstinate and bolde,
Till at the length he published to holde
A Visitation, and them cyted thether:
Then was high time their wits about to We make geather.
What did they then, but made a composition Marie, (Be the With their next neighbor Priest, for light condition,
To whom their living they resigned quight
For a few pence, and ran away by night. For in the The Lyon But chiefl

Yet never found occasion for their tourne, mourne.

So passing through the Countrey in disguize, Enchaste They fled farre off, where none might them So wilde: surprize;
And after that long straied here and there,
Through everie field and forrest farre and nere,
But his 1 But almost sterv'd did much lament and At last they chaunst to meete upon the way. The Mule all deckt in goodly rich aray, With bells and bosses that full lowdly rung, To some (And costly trappings that to ground downe Els as a t So vainly hung.

h

Where al And all t Is to be f That hat

Save that

chi

tee

For so bra In the wi Therefore In case th



MOTHER HUBBERDS TALE.

thinke of you in generall, ou which is not at all: at which is, the world now

but by that same that seemeth, but that ye well can fashion retoo, according to occasion.; good Courtiers may ye bee! ghing, from them parted hee. raftie couple to devize, ourt themselves they might

themselves meant to addresse, there happier successe. ifted, that the Ape anon oathed like a Gentleman, ore, as like to be his groome, it in seemly sort they come; Ape, himselfe uprearing ly a, stalketh stately by, ome great Magnifico, h amongst the boldest go; Reynold, with fine counterfe-

edite and his countenaunce. ourtiers gaze on everie side, m, with big lookes basen wide, t mister wight he was, and

l in strange accoustrements, queint devises, never seene , yet there all fashions beene: newfanglenesse did pas. ur altogether was much the more admyr'd; loftie, as if he aspyr'd sdeign'd the low degree; [see did such strangenesse in him nes gan of his state enquire, servant thereto hire: · arm'd against such coverture. dl, that he was sure [far'd. nan of high regard, ianners of all beasts on ground; d, to see if like he found. Ape at first him credit gaine, ds he wisely did maintaine owe, and daylie more augment ie feates and Courtly comple-

y, and dannee, and vaute, and pertaines to reveling, kindly aptnes of his joynts, d doo manie other poynts, surt him served to good stead; Ladies could their fortunes

Out of their hands, and merie leasings tell, And juggle finely, that became him well. But he so light was at legierdemaine That what he toucht came not to light againe; Yet would he laugh it out, and proudly looke, And tell them that they greatly him mistooke. So would he scoffe them out with mockerie, For he therein had great felicitie; And with sharp quips joy'd others to deface, Thinking that their disgracing did him grace: So whilst that other like vaine wits he pleased, And made to laugh, his heart was greatly eased. But the right gentle minde woulde bite his lip, To heare the Javell so good men to nip; For, though the vulgar yeeld an open eare, And common Courtiers love to gybe and fleare At everie thing which they heare spoken ill, And the best speaches with ill meaning spill, Yet the brave Courtier, in whose beauteous thought

Regard of honour harbours more than ought, Doth loath such base condition, to backbite Anies good name for envie or despite: He stands on tearmes of honourable minde, Ne will be carried with the common winde Of Courts inconstant mutabilitie. Ne after everie tattling fable flie; But heares and sees the follies of the rest, And thereof gathers for himselfe the best. He will not creepe, nor crouche with fained face, But walkes upright with comely stedfast pace. And unto all doth yeeld due curtesie; But not with kissed hand belowe the knee, As that same Apish crue is wont to doo: For he disdaines himselfe t' embase theretoo. He hates fowle leasings, and vile flatterie, Two filthic blots in noble gentric; And lothefull idlenes he doth detest The canker worme of everie gentle brest; The which to banish with faire exercise Of knightly feates, he daylie doth devise: Now menaging the mouthes of stubborne steedes,

nan of high regard, and of high revel state world had with long travel how practising the proofe of warlike deedes, anners of all beasts on ground; Now his bright armes assaying, now his speare, how the high aymed ring away to beare. At other times he casts to new the chace owe, and daylie more augment of swift wilde beasts, or runne on foote a race, owe, and daylie more augment to electes and Courtly complements.

[spring, Or els by wrestling to wex strong and heedfull, iv, and daunce, and vaute, and Or his stiffe armes to stretch with Eughen pertaines to reveling, bowe,

And manly legs, still passing too and fro, Without a gowned beast him fast beside, A vaine ensample of the Persian pride; Who, after he had wonne th' Assyrian too, Did ever after scorne on focke to goe.

Thus when this Courtly Gentleman with With courtizens, and costly riotize toyle Himselfe hath wearied, he doth recoyle Unto his rest, and there with sweete delight Of Musicks skill revives his toyled spright; Or els with Loves, and Ladies gentle sports, The joy of youth, himselfe he recomforts;

Or lastly, when the bodie list to pause, His minde unto the Muses he withdrawes: Sweete Ladie Muses, Ladies of delight,

Delights of life, and ornaments of light! With whom he close confers with wise discourse, atures workes, of heavens continuall course, Of Natures

Of forreine lands, of people different, Of kingdomes change, of divers gouvernment, Of dreadfull battailes of renowmed Knights; With which he kindleth his ambitious sprights To like desire and praise of noble fame, The onely upshot whereto he doth ayme: For all his minde on honour fixed is. To which he levels all his purposis And in his Princes service spends his dayes, Not so much for to gaine, or for to raise Himselfe to high degree, as for his grace,

And in his liking to winne worthie place, Through due deserts and comely carriage, In whatso please employ his personage, That may be matter meete to gaine him praise: For he is fit to use in all assayes, Whether for Armes and warlike amenaunce, ()r else for wise and civill governaunce. For he is practiz'd well in policie,

And thereto doth his Courting most applie: To learne the enterdeale of Princes strange, To marke th' intent of Counsells, and the change Of states, and eke of private men somewhile, Supplanted by fine falshood and faire guile; Of all the which he gathereth what is fit

T' enrich the storehouse of his powerfull wit, Which through wise speaches and grave conference He daylie cekes, and brings to excellence. Such is the rightfull Courtier in his kinde,

But unto such the Ape lent not his minde: Such were for him no fit companions, Such would descrie his lewd conditions; But the yong lustic gallants he did chose To follow, meete to whom he might disclose His witlesse pleasance, and ill pleasing vaine. Got him small gaines, but shamele A thousand wayes he them could entertaine, And filthic brocage, and unseemly With all the thriftles games that may be found:

With mumming and with masking all around, With dice, with cards, with balliards farre unfit

With shuttelcocks, misseeming manlie wit,

Whereof still somewhat to his sha Ne, them to pleasure, would be scorne

A Pandares coate (so basely was l Thereto he could fine loving verses And play the Poet oft, But ah! i

Let not sweete Poets praise, whose Is virtue to advaunce, and vice del Ne with the worke of losels wit do Ne let such verses Poetrie be name Yet he the name on him would ra-

Maugre the sacred Muses, and it n

A servant to the vile affection Of such, as he depended most upor And with the sugrie sweete thereo Chast Ladies eares to fantasies im To such delights the noble wits

Which him reliev'd, and their vai fed With fruitles follies and unsound But if perhaps into their noble spr Desire of honor or brave thought of

Did ever creepe, then with his wich And strong conceipts he would it a Ne suffer it to house there halfe a And whenso love of letters did in-Their gentle wits, and kindle wise That chieflie doth each noble mine

Then he would scoffe at learnin

The Sectaries thereof, as people be

And simple men, which never cam Of worlds affaires, but, in darke co Muttred of matters as their be shewd, Ne other knowledge ever did attai But with their gownes their gravitic From them he would his impu-

Against Gods holie Ministers oft n And mocke Divines and their prof What else then did he by progress But mocke high God himselfe, professe ? But what car'd he for God, or god

All his care was himselfe how to a

speach

And to uphold his courtly counten By all the cunning meanes he coul Were it by honest wayes, or other He made small chovce; yet sure h Got him small games, but shamele And borowe base, and some good I But the best helpe, which chiefly his

gain'd. For he was school'd by kinde in all Of close conveyance, and each pra-

Was his man Raynolds purchas

and cleanly knaverie, aintain'd his masters braverie. isde another slipprie slight, i himselfe, in common sight, ages fit for everie sted, he thousands cleanly coosined: Merchant, Merchants to deceave, his credite he did often leave his gay Masters hopelesse dett Lawyer, when he land would lett, imples in his Masters name, ad never, nor ought like the same. he be a Broker, and draw in and money, by exchange to win: he seeme a Farmer, that would

f woods, which he did lately fell, cattle, or such other ware, coosin men not well aware: hich there came a secret fee, [bee. s, that in Court did haunt some

d learne their busines secretly, forme his Master hastely. meanes might cast them to pre-

sute the which the other ment. a false Reynold would abuse Suter, and wish him to chuse being one of great regard compas anie sute not hard. paines were recompenst

worke the silly man by treason Masters frivolous good will, t power to doo him good or ill. thing is Suters state! ble man, whom wicked fate ht to Court, to sue for had ywist, ave found, and manie one hath

nowest thou, that hast not tride, : is in suing long to bide: ood dayes, that might be better

g nights in pensive discontent; day, to be put back to morrow; sope, to pine with feare and sorrow; Lo! where they spide, how, in a gloomy glade, by Princes grace, yet want her The Lyon sleeping lay in secret shade, :8:

· asking, yet waite manie yeeres; soule with crosses and with cares; heart through comfortlesse dis-

) give, to want, to be undonne.

Unhappie wight, borne to desastrous end, That doth his life in so long tendance spend! Who ever leaves sweete home, where meane estate

In safe assurance, without strife or hate, Findes all things needfull for contentment meeke,

And will to Court for shadowes vaine to seeke. Or hope to gaine, himselfe will a daw trie: That curse God send unto mine enemie! For none but such as this bold Ape, unblest, Can ever thrive in that unluckie quest; Or such as hath a Reynold to his man, That by his shifts his Master furnish can But yet this Foxe could not so closely hide His craftie feates, but that they were descride At length by such as sate in justice seate, Who for the same him fowlie did entreate; And having worthily him punished, Out of the Court for ever banished, that he his countenaunce might And now the Ape wanting his huckster man, I this, he us'd oft to beguile

That wont provide his necessaries, gan To growe into great lacke, ne could upholde His countenance in those his garments olde: Ne new ones could he easily provide, Though all men him uncased gan deride, Like as a Puppit placed in a play, Whose part once past all men bid take away: So that he driven was to great distresse, And shortly brought to hopelesse wretched-

nesse. Then, closely as he might, he cast to leave The Court, not asking any passe or leave; But ran away in his rent rags by night, Ne ever stayd in place, ne spake to wight,

Till that the Foxe, his copesmate he had found, To whome complayning his unhappy stound, At last againe with him in travell joynd, And with him far'd some better chaunce to fynde.

So in the world long time they wandered, And mickle want and hardnesse suffered; That them repented much so foolishly To come so farre to seeke for misery, And leave the sweetnes of contented home, Though eating hipps, and drinking watry fome. Thus as they them complayed too and fro, Whilst through the forest rechlesse they did

His Crowne and Scepter lying him beside And having doft for heate his dreadfull hide: Which when they sawe, the Ape was sore afrayde,

s; [ronne, And would have fled with terror all dismayde, to crowche, to waite, to ride, to But him the Foxe with hardy words did stay, And bad him put all cowardize away:

For now was time (if ever they would hope) To ayme their counsels to the fairest scope, And them for ever highly to advanues, In case the good, which their owne happle chaunc

Them freely offred, they would wisely take. Scarse could the Ape yet speake, so did he quake ;

Yet, as he could, he askt how good might Where nought but dread and death do seeme in show? Now, (sayd he) whiles the Lyon sleepeth

May we his Crowne and Mace take from the Into a secret corner unsapid ground,

And eke his skinne, the terror of the wood, Wherewith we may our selves (if we thinke For th' Ape was stryfull, an

'Ah! but (sayd the Ape) who is so bold a That dare his hardy hand to those outstretch, When as he knowes his meede, if he be spide, To be a thousand deathes, and shame beside? 'Fond Ape! (sayd then the Foxe) into whose brest

Never crept thought of honor, nor brave gest, Who will not venture life a King to be, And rather rule and raigne in soveraign s Than dwell in dust inglorious and bace, Where none shall name the number of his place?

One joyous howre in blisfull happines, I chose before a life of wretchednes. Be therefore counselled herein by me, And shake off this vile harted cowardree. If he awake, yet is not death the next, For we may coulor it with some pretext Of this, or that, that may excuse the cryme: Else we may five; thou to a tree mayst clyme, In his chiefe parts, that is, i And I creepe under ground, both from his But I therein most like to hi reach:

Therefore be rul'd to doo as I doo teach.'

Now gan some courage unto him to take, And was content to attempt that enterprise, Tickled with glorie and rash covetise But first gan question, whether should assay Those royall ornaments to steale away? 'Marie, that shall your selfe, (quoth he theretoo) For ye be fine and nimble it to doo; Of all the beasts, which in the forrests bee, Is not a fitter for this turne than yee: Therefore, my owne deare brother, take good hart.

And ever thinke a Kingdome is your part.'
Losth was the Ape, though praised, to adventer,
Yet faintly gan into his worke to enter,

Afraid of everie leafe that at And everie stick that and Upon his tiptoes nicely he t For making noyse, and still To everie sound that under Now went, now stopt, now ward drew,

That it good sport had been Yet at the last, (so well he h Through his fine handling, as He all those royall signes be Whither whenas they en Whether of them should be good)
Make Kings of Beasts, and Lords of forests all That neither pleased was to Subject unto that powre imperiall.' [wretch, Twixt them divided into ex-But either (algates) would I For Love and Lordship bide 'I am most worthie, (said th For it did put my life in jeon Thereto I am in person and Most like a Man, the Lord of So that it seemeth I was ma And borne to be a Kingly s ' Nay (said the Foxe) Sir Ap For though to steale the Du

Were the worke of your nim Did first devise the plot by So that it wholly springeth For which also I claime my Than you to rule; for gover Will without wisedome soon And where ye claime your shape

Most like a man, Man is not For my slie wyles and subti The title of the Kingdome to The Ape, that earst did nought but chill Nath'les (my brother) since and quake, ow gan some courage unto him to take, That ye shall have both cr ment,

Upon condition, that ye rule In all affaires, and counselle And that ye let none other e Your minde from me, but ke And hereupon an oath unto The Ape was glad to end And thereto swore; for wh

sweare, And oft unsweare, a Diadem Then freely up those royall s Yet at the Lyons skin he inl ed, and upon his head d on his backe the skin he did, oxe him helped to array. was all dight, he tooke his way that he might be seene ists in his new glory sheene. irst whome he encountred were d th' Asse, who, striken both , gan fast away to flye; the Foxe alowd did cry, gs name bad them both to stay, that thereof follow may. as, were they restrayned so, xe forth toward them did goe, aded them from needlesse feare, ng did favour to them beare; readles bad them come to Corte, sts should do them any torte ; ne would his majestve rell, with gracious clemencye, new to him both fast and true. I them, with homage due numble to the Ape prostrate, them bowing in his gate, with chearefull entertayne. roceeding with his princely

the Tygre, and the Bore, simple Camell raged sore seeking to take occasion y corpse to make invasion: sey this mook-King did espy, strife they stinted by and by, i that it the Lyon was, whether his powre would pas the Foxe to them streightway, them their cause of strife be-

ong on eyther side there were, warne the wronger to appeare xt at Court, it to defend; ne upon the King t' attend. te so well his message sayd, beasts him readily obayd: pe in wondrous stomack woxe, gc'd by the crafty Foxe; ed himselfe he shortly thought, usts him feared as they ought, nto his palaice hye; longé, each one by and by home in dreadfull awe, eared sight which late they

is seized of the Regall throne, insell of the Foxe alone, for all things in assurance, might lenger have endurance.

First to his Gate he pointed a strong gard, That none might enter but with issue hard: Then, for the safegard of his personage, He did appoint a warlike equipage Of forreine beasts, not in the forest bred, But part by land and part by water fed: For tyrannie is with strange ayde supported. Then unto him all monstrous beasts resorted Bred of two kindes, as Griffons, Minotaures, Crocodiles, Dragons, Beavers, and Centaures: With those himselfe he strengthned mightelie, That feare he neede no force of enemic. Then gan he rule and tyrannize at will, Like as the Foxe did guide his graceles skill; And all wylde beasts made vassals of his pleasures, treasures And with their spoyles enlarg'd his private No care of justice, nor no rule of reason, No temperance, nor no regard of season, Did thenceforth ever enter in his minde; But crueltie, the signe of currish kinde, And sdeignfull pride, and wilfull arrogaunce: Such followes those whom fortune doth ad-

But the false Foxe most kindly plaid his
For whatsoever mother-wit or arte [part;
Could worke, he put in proofe: no practise slie,
No counterpoint of cunning policie,
No reach, no breach, that might him profit
bring,
But he the same did to his purpose wring.
Nought to start the same did to his purpose wring.

vannce

bring,
But he the same did to his purpose wring.
Nought suffered he the Ape to give or graunt,
But through his hand must passe the Fiaunt.
All offices, all leases by him lept,
And of them all whatso he likte he kept.
Justice he solde injustice for to buy,
And for to purchase for his progeny.
Ill might it prosper that ill gotten was;
But, so he got it, little did he pas,
He fed his cubs with fat of all the soyle,
And with the sweete of others sweating toyle;
He crammed them with crumbs of Benefices,
And fild their mouthes with meeds of malefices:

hees:
He cloathed them with all colours, save white,
And loded them with lordships and with might,
So much as they were able well to beare,
That with the weight their backs nigh broken
were:

He chaffred Chayres in which Churchmen were set,

And breach of lawes to privic ferme did let: No statute so established might bee, Nor ordinaunce so needfull, but that hee Would violate, though not with violence, Yet under colour of the confidence The which the Ape repor'd in him alone, And reckned him the kingdomes corner we

gaine.

And ever, when he ought would bring to pas, His long experience the platforme was: And, when he ought not pleasing would put by The cloke was care of thrift, and husbandry, For to encrease the common treasures store; But his owne treasure he encreased more, And lifted up his loftie towres thereby, That they began to threat the neighbour sky; The whiles the Princes pallaces fell fast To ruine (for what thing can ever last?) And whilest the other Peeres, for povertie, Were forst their auncient houses to let lie And their olde Castles to the ground to fall, Which their forefathers, famous over-all, Had founded for the Kingdomes ornament, And for their memories long moniment: But he no count made of Nobilitie, Nor the wilde beasts whom armes did glorifie. Whom not their kindly Sovereig The Realmes chiefe strength and girland of But an usurping Ape, with guilt the crowne.

[adowne, Had all subverst, he sleignfully All these through fained crimes he thrust in his great heart, and hardly divided the control of the c

Or made them dwell in darknes of disgrace; For none, but whom he list, might come in place. Of men of armes he had but small regard, But kept them lowe, and streigned verie hard.

For men of learning little he esteemed; His wisdome he above their learning deemed. As for the rascall Commons least he cared, For not so common was his bountie shared: Lct God, (said he) if please, care for the manie, I for my selfe must care before els anie, So did he good to none, to manie ill, So did he all the kingdome rob and pill, Yet none durst speake, ne none durst of him

So great he was in grace, and rich through Ne would he anie let to have accesse Unto the Prince, but by his owne addresse, For all that els did come were sure to faile. Yet would he further none but for availe; For on a time the Sheepe, to whom of yore The Foxe had promised of friendship store,

plaine,

What time the Ape the kingdome first did [plaine ; gaine,

Came to the Court, her case there to com-How that the Wolfe, her mortall enemie, Had sithence slaine her Lambe most cruellie, And therefore crav'd to come unto the King, To let him knowe the order of the thing. 'Soft, Gooddie Sheepe! (then said the Foxe)

not soe: Unto the King so rash ye may not goe;

He is with greater matter busied Than a Lambe, or the Lambes owne mothers hed

Ne, certes, may I take it well in part, That ye my cousin Wolfe so fowly thwart, And seeke with slaunder his good For there was cause, els doo it h Therefore surcease, good Dam

depart. So went the Sheepe away with ! So many moe, so everie one was That to give largely to the boxe Now when high Jove, in wh

hand The care of Kings and power Sitting one day within his turned From whence he vewes, with hi Whatso the heaven in his wic taines,

And all that in the deepest earth And troubled kingdome of wilhelde

But that with thunder bolts he h And driven downe to hell, his de But, him avizing, he that dread Forbore, and rather chose with se Him to avenge, and blot his bru Unto the world, that never after

Should of his race be voyd of inf And his false counsellor, the cau To damne to death, or dole perpe From whence he never should be a Forthwith he Mercurie unto him And bad him flie with never-res Unto the forrest, where wilde ber And there enquiring privily, to l What did of late chaunce happe

stearne, That he rul'd not the Empire. a: And whence were all those plai brought

Of wronges, and spoyles, by a committed? Which done, he bad the Lyon b

Into his scate, and those same t Be punished for their presumptu.
The Sonue of Maia, soone as l That word, streight with his az

cleav'd

The liquid clowdes, and lucid fir Ne staid, till that he came with Unto the place where his prescri There stouping, like an arrowe He soft arrived on the grassie pl And fairly paced forth with casi

Till that unto the Pallace nigh h Then gan he to himselfe new shi And that faire face, and that An Which wonts to decke the Gods in :he shinie firmament, or that rude rabblement. the gates in strange disguize, of some in secret wize, ig, and of his government, e, and his false blandishment: ne heard each one complaine both in realme and raine;

rove more true he meant to see, ies of each thing to bee. I his dreadfull hat he dight, him invisible in sight,

h' eves of all the lookers on, hinke it but a vision. r of that he runnes through [herds swerds:

of that he passeth through the rke, that none the same espies;

he power of that, he putteth on list in apparition. id he wore, and in his hand

ceus, his snakie wand, a damned ghosts he governeth, And threatned death, and thousand deadly s, and Tartare tempereth. auseth sleep to seize the eyes, arts of all his enemyes;

list, an universall night e world he makes on everie re with Alcumena lay. into the Court he tooke his

scride, the gard, which never him dehe watchmen, who him never

past into each secrete part, v, that sorely griev'd his hart, unding with fowle injuries, reasure rackt with robberies: efilde with blood of guiltles [beheasts:

een slaine to serve the Apes ice, pride, and covetize, raigning with riotize; nite extortions, the Foxes great oppressions, plaints thereof could not be

e did with lothfull eyes beholde, iore endure, but came his way, eke the Lion where he may,

worke the avengement for this caytives, which had bred him ill the forrest busily,

id, where sleeping he did ly.

The wicked weed, which there the Foxe did lay, From underneath his head he tooke away,

And then him waking, forced up to rize. The Lion looking up gan him avize, As one late in a traunce, what had of long Become of him; for fantasic is strong.

'Arise, (said Mercurie) thou sluggish beast,
That here liest senseles, like the corpse deceast, The whilste thy kingdome from thy head is

rent And thy throne royall with dishonour blent:

Arise, and doo thyself redeeme from shame And be aveng'd on those that breed thy blame.' Thereat enraged, soone he gan upstart,

Grinding his teeth, and grating his great lde beasts, and doth beguile hart; nouthes of the expected spoyle; And, rouzing up himselfe, for his rough hide of that his cunning theoveries He gan to reach, but no where it espide,

Therewith he gan full terribly to rore, And chafte at that indignitic right sore:

But when his Crowne and scepter both he [panted: wanted, Lord! how he fum'd, and sweld, and rag'd, and

dolours, [honours.
To them that had purloyn'd his Princely With that in hast, disroabed as he was, He toward his owne Pallace forth did pas; And all the way he roared as he went

[wight; That all the forrest with astonishment Thereof did tremble, and the beasts therein Fled fast away from that so dreadfull din. At last he came unto his mansion,

Where all the gates he found fast lockt anon, And manie warders round about them stood: With that he roar'd alowd, as he were wood, That all the Pallace quaked at the stound, As if it quite were riven from the ground,

And all within were dead and hartles left; And th' Ape himselfe, as one whose wits were reft, Fled here and there, and everie corner sought, To hide himselfe from his owne feared thought. But the false Foxe, when he the Lion heard, Fled closely forth, streightway of death afeard

And to the Lion came, full lowly creeping, With fained face, and watric cyne halfe weeping, T' excuse his former treason and abusion,

And turning all unto the Apes confusion. Nath'les the royall Beast forbore beleeving, [blame. But bad him stay at ease till further preeving. Then, when he saw no entraunce to him

graunted, Roaring yet lowder that all harts it dannied,

Upon those gates with force he fiercely flewe, And, rending them in pieces, felly slewe Those warders strange, and all that els he

met. [get: But th' Ape still flying he no where might From rowme to rowme, from beam to beame he fled All breathles, and for feare now almost ded; Yet him at last the Lyon spide, and caught, And forth with shame unto his judgement

brought. Then all the beasts he caus'd assembled bee, To heare their doome, and sad ensample see.

The Foxe, first Author of that tree He did uncase, and then away let But th' Apes long taile (which th he quight

Cut off, and both cares pared of th Since which all Apes but halfe have left.

And of their tailes are utterlie bere So Mother Hubberd her discoun Which pardon me, if I amisse have For weake was my remembrance i And bad her tongue that it tolde

тне RUINES OFROME:

BY BELLAY.

YE heavenly spirites, whose ashie cinders lie Under deep ruines, with huge walls opprest, But not your praise, the which shall never die Through your faire verses, no in ashes rest; If so be shrilling voyce of wight alive May reach from hence to depth of darkest hell, Then let those deep Abysses open rive, That ye may understand my shreiking yell. Thrice having seene under the heavens veale Your toombs devoted compasse over-all, Thrice unto you with lowd voyce I appeale, And for your antique furie here doo call, The whiles that I with sacred horror sing

Your glorie, fairest of all earthly thing!

Great Babylon her haughtie walls will praise, And sharped steeples high shot up in ayre; Greece will the olde Ephesian buildings blaze, And Nylus nurslings their Pyramides faire;
The same yet vaunting Greece will tell the storie
Of Joves great Image in Olympus placed;
Mausolus worke will be the Carians glorie;
And Crete will boast the Labyrinth, now reced: The antique Rhodian will likewise set forth The great Colosse, erect to Memorie; And what els in the world is of like worth, Some greater learned wit will magnifie:
But I will sing above all moniments
Seven Romane Hils, the worlds Seven Won-

derments.

Thou stranger, which for Rome in Rome here seekest.

These same olde walls, olde arches. seest, Olde Palaces, is that which Rome:

Beholde what wreake, what ruine And how that she, which with !

Tam'd all the world, hath tam'd last;

The pray of time, which all t Rome now of Rome is th' onely fu And onely Rome of Rome hath vic Ne ought save Tyber hastning to be Remaines of all. O worlds inconst That which is firme doth flit and And that is flitting doth abide a

She, whose high top above the star. One foote on Thetis, th' other on th One hand on Scythia, th' other on Both heaven and earth in round

passing;
Jove fearing, least if she should gre The Giants old should once again : Her whelm'd with hills, these seven be nowe

Tombes of her greatnes which did Upon her head he heapt Mount Sa Upon her bellie th' antique Palatin Upon her stomacke laid Mount Qu On her left hand the noveome Esqu And Celian on the right; but be Mount Viminall and Aventine de

Who lists to see what ever nature And nought of Rome in Rome perceiv'st at all, And heaven could doo, O Rome! ti

atnes he can gesse in harte, but the picture is of thee.
re: but if the shade of Rome ie yeeld a seeming sight,

drawne forth out of the tombe

ill out of eternall night. tome in ashes is entombed, spirite, rejoyned to the spirite asse, is in the same enwombed;

time out of the dust doth reare ber Idole through the world

recynthian Goddesse bright, arret with high turrets crownde, sanie Gods she brought to light; Citie in her good daies found:

ire than that great Phrygian fruite of famous progenie, s by the greatnes of none other,

le, her equall match could see. ight to Rome compared bee, me could make great Rome to

s by heavenly doome decree, thlie power should not resemble lid match the whole earths

100, [vaunce. r courage to the heavens ad-

es, and ye tragick sights, loo the name of Rome retaine, ts, which of so famous sprights t in ashes doo maintaine;

rcks, spyres, neighbours to the a doth th' heaven it selfe appall; ye to nothing flie, ble, and the spoyle of all: your frames do for a time make

et time in time shall ruinate

nd names, and your last reliques , rest therefore moderate; ime make ende of things so sure,

ad the paine which I endure.

VIII

sea in roundnes had survew'd, sure of her bredth and length:

This peoples vertue yet so fruitfull was Of vertuous nephowes, that posteritie, Striving in power their grandfathers to pas The lowest earth join'd to the heaven hie To th' end that, having all parts in their power, [quight; Nought from the Romane Empire might be And that though time doth Commonwealths

devowre, writings, which her famous Yet no time should so low embase their hight, That her head, earth'd in her foundations Should not her name and endles honour

keep, Ye cruell starres, and eke ye Gods unkinde,

Heaven envious, and bitter stepdame Nature! Be it by fortune, or by course of kinde, That ye doo weld th' affaires of earthlis creature;

Why have your hands long sithence traveiled To frame this world that doth endure so long? Or why were not these Romane palaces Made of some matter no less firme and strong?

I say not, as the common voyce doth say, That all things which beneath the Moone have Are temporall, and subject to decay: [being Are temporall, and subject to decay: [being But I say rather, though not all agreeing With some that weene the contrarie

thought,
That all this whole shall one day come to nought. x

that brave sonne of Aeson, which by

charmes Atcheived the golden Fleece in Colchid land, Out of the earth engendred men of armes Of Dragons teeth, sowne in the sacred sand; So this brave Towne, that in her youthlie daies An Hydra was of warriours glorious, Did fill with her renowmed nourslings praise The firie sunnes both one and other hous: But they at last, there being then not living An Hercules so ranke seed to represse,

Mow'd downe themselves with slaughter mercilesse; Renewing in themselves that rage unkinde, Which whilom did those earthborn brethren blinde.

Emongst themselves with cruell furie striving,

XI s and vassals Rome the world Mars, shaming to have given so great head [strength To his off-spring, that mortall puissaunce, ald weene that one sole Cities Puft up with pride of Romane hardiehead.

sea in roundnes had survew'd, Seem'd above heavens powre it selfe to see vaunce;

Cooling agains his former kindled heate, With which he had those Romane spirits fild, Dad blows new fire, and with enflamed breath Into the Gothicke colde hot rage instil'd. Then gan-that Nation, th' earths new Giant

brood, To dart abroad the thunder bolts of warre, And, beating downe these walls with furious

Into her mothers bosome, all did marre; To th'end that none, all were it Jove his sire,

Should boast himselfe of the Romane Empire,

Like as whilome the children of the earth Heapt hils on hils to scale the starrie skie, And fight against the Gods of heavenly berth, Whiles Jove at them his thunderbolts let flie, All suddenly with lightning overthrowne The furious squadrons downe to ground did fall,

That th' earth under her childrens weight did And th' heavens in glorie triumpht over all: So did that haughtie front, which heaped was On these seven Romane hils, it selfe upreare Over the world, and lift her loftic face Against the heaven, that gan her force to feare.

But now these scorned fields bemone her fall.

And Gods secure feare not her force at all.

XIII

Nor the swift furie of the flames aspiring, Nor the deep wounds of victours raging blade, Nor ruthlesse spoyle of souldiers blood-desiring, The which so oft thee, (Rome) their conquest Ne stroke on stroke of fortune variable, [made; Ne rust of age hating continuance,

Nor wrath of Gods, nor spight of men unstable, Nor thou oppos'd against thine owne puissance; Nor th' horrible uprore of windes high blowing, Nor swelling streames of that God snakie-

paced,

Which hath so often with his overflowing Thee drenched, have thy pride so much abaced,

But that this nothing, which they have thee left, Makes the world wonder what they from thee

the men in Summer fearles passe the foord Which is in Winter lord of all the plaine, And with his tumbling streames doth beare But all so soone as scortching & aboord

[vaine: The ploughmans hope and shepheards labour The earth out of her massie we And as the coward beasts use to despise The noble Lion after his lives end, [hardise Whetting their teeth, and with vaine fool

Daring the foe that cannot him defend:

checkes The Romane triumphs glone to Now on these ashie tomb And, conquer'd, dare the

And as at Troy most distard

Did brave about the cornes of

So those, which whilems

daine.

Ye pallid spirits, and ye ashie Which, joying in the brightn Brought foorth those signes

mous boasts

Which now their dusty reliqu Tell me, ye spirits, (sith the d Of Styx, not passable to soule Enclosing you in thrice three Doo not restraine your image Tell me then, (for perhaps so Yet here above him secretly d Doo ye not feele your torm When ye sometimes behold the

Of these old Komane works. hands,

Now to become nought els bu

Like as ye see the wrathfull S In a great mountaine heap' novse.

Eftsoones of thousand billowes Against a Rocke to breake

poyse:

Like as ye see fell Boreas with Tossing huge tempests throu skic

Eftsoones having his wide win To stop his wearie cariere sude And as ye see huge flames spo Gathered in one up to the hea Eftsoones consum'd to fall dow So whilom did this Monarchie

As waves, as winde, as fire. Till it by fatall doome adow

So long as Joves great Bird did Bearing the fire with which hear Heaven had not feare of that might,

With which the Giaunts did & His wings which wont the cart That antique horror, which adredd.

Then was the Germane Raven That Romane Engle scene to c wen freshly to arise ountaines, now consum'd to [lightning,

foule, that serves to beare the e seen flying, nor alighting,

stones, these old wals, which ures but of salvage soyle :

Pallaces, which may stred bee epheards cottages somewhile.

ale of yearely Presidents sixe months greater a great

petuall, rose to so great might, mperiall Eagle rooting tooke, it selfe, opposing gainst her rs successor betooke; [might, ırdlike, (as fates the same

tall things turne to their first

XIX

t, which th' heaven beautefies; ect, borne belowe the Moone; de our spirits and our eies, consume our pleasures soone; e which our daies outweares, of th' oldest times afore,

e of her great ancesters, locked long in store. huge Chaos turmovling, 1 and evill was enclosed, vertues from these woes

, from sinfull bondage losed; sinnes, the causers of their

itique ruines yet remaine.

n raynie cloud, first fed yours gathered in the ayre, pas arch't, to steepe his hed, selfe in Tethys bosome faire; ees, grewe to such height, land and sea her selfe she

to beare so great weight,

Her power, disperst through all the world did vade; [fade. To shew that all in th' end to nought shall

XXI

The same, which Pyrrhus and the puissaunce Of Afrike could not tame, that same brave Citie, Which, with stout courage arm'd against mischaunce,

Sustein'd the shocke of common enmitie; Long as her ship, tost with so manie freakes, Had all the world in armes against her bent, hepheards Kingly ornaments, Was never seene, that anie fortunes wreakes nde arm'd his right hand with Could breake her course begun with brave

intent. But, when the object of her vertue failed, Her power it selfe against it selfe did arme; As he that having long in tempest sailed, Faine would arive, but cannot for the storme, If too great winde against the port him drive,

Doth in the port it selfe his vessell rive.

XXII When that brave honour of the Latine name, Which mear'd her rule with Africa, and Byze, With Thames inhabitants of noble fame, And they which see the dawning day arize;

Her nourslings did with mutinous uprore Harten against her selfe her conquer'd spoile, Which she had wonne from all the world afore, Of all the world was spoyl'd within a while: So, when the compast course of the universe In sixe and thirtie thousand yeares is ronne, The bands of th' elements shall backe reverse To their first discord, and be quite undonne: The seedes, of which all things at first were

bred. Shall in great Chaos wombe againe be hid,

XXIII

O! warie wisedome of the man, that would That Carthage towres from spoile should be forborne, To th' end that his victorious people should With cancring laisure not be overworne: He well foresaw how that the Romane courage, Impatient of pleasures faint desires Through idlenes would turne to civill rage,

) againe from whence he came, And be her selfe the matter of her fires; allie spreds the dimmed world, For, in a people given all to ease, issolving his moist frame, e, or haile, he forth is horld; As, in a vicious bodic, grose disease was first but shepheards shade, Soone growes through humours superfluitie.

That came to passe, when, swolne with plentics pride. Nor prince, nor peere, nor kin, they would abide.

XXIV

If the blinde furie, which warres breedeth oft, Wents not t'eurage the hearts of equal beasts, Whether they fare on foote, or file aloft, Or armed be with clawes, or scalie creasts, What fell Erynnis, with hot burning tongs, Did grype your hearts with noysome rage imbew'd.

That, each to other working cruell wrongs, Your blades in your owne bowels you embrew'd?

Was this (ye Romanes)) your hard destinie, Or some old sinne, whose unappeased guilt Powr'd vengeance forth on you eternallie? Or brothers blood, the which at first was spilt

Upon your walls, that God might not endure Upon the same to set foundation sure?

XXV

O that I had the Thracian Poets harpe,
For to awake out of th' infernall shade
Those antique Cæsars, sleeping long in darke,
The which this auncient Citie whilome made!
Or that I had Amphions instrument,
To quicken, with his vitall notes accord,
The stonie joynts of these old walls now rent,
By which th' Ausonian light might be restor'd!
Or that at least I could, with pencill fine,
Fashion the pourtraicts of these Palacis,
By paterne of great Virgils spirit divine!
I would assay with that which in me is,

To builde, with levell of my loftic style, That which no hands can evermore compyle,

XXVI

Who list the Romane greatnes forth to figure, Him needeth not to seeke for usage right Of line, or lead, or rule, or squaire, to measure Her length, her breadth, her deepnes, or her hight;

But him behooves to vew in compasse round
All that the Ocean graspes in his long armes;
Was wont this anneient Citie to
And the heaven it selfe with be
ground,
All that which Athens ever bround.

Orwhere colde Boreas blowes his bitterstormes. All that which Afrike ever Rome was th' whole world, and all the world All that which Asie ever had of was Rome;

Was here to see. O merrelow

And if things nam'd their names doo equalize, When land and sea ye name, then name ye Rome;

And, naming Rome, ye land and sea comprize:
For th' auncient Plot of Rome, displayed
plaine,

The map of all the wide world doth containe,

XXVII

Thou that at Rome astonisht dost behold The antique pride which menaced the skie, These haughtic heapes, these p These wals, these arcks, these temples hie;

temples hie;
Judge, by these ample ruines v
The which injurious time bath.
Since of all workmen belie in r
Yet these olde fragments are for
Then also marke how Bome, fi
Repayring her decayed fashion.
Renewes herselfe with building
That one would Judge, that the fi

Doth yet him elfe with fatal Againe on foote to reare corse.

XXVIII

He that hath scene a great Ok Yet clad with reliques of some Lifting to heaven her aged he Whose foots in ground bath holde,

But halfe disbowel'd lies above Showing her wreathed roote armes,

And on her trunke, all rotten a Onely supports herselfe for me And, though she owe her fa Yet of the devout people is alex And manie yong plants spra rinde:

Who such an Oke hath scene, l That such this Cities honour And mongst all Cities florish

XXIX

All that which Aegypt whilom All that which Greece their to brave

After th' Ionicke, Atticke, Dani Or Corinth skil'd in curious wo All that Lysippus practike arte Apelles wit, or Phidias his skill. Was wont this auncient Citic to And the heaven it selfe with her All that which Afrike ever All that which Afrike ever All that which Asic ever had of p Was here to see. O mervelous

Rome, living, was the worlds And, dead, is now the worlds

Like as the seeded field gree showes,

Then from greene grasse into And from a stalke into an eare Which eare the frutefull grain oring;

And as in season due the husb

es of those faire

sheaves, and layd in comely elds in stackes he reares: ne Empire by degree, n hands it quite did spill, these olde markes to se rs by doo somewhat pill: gleane, the reliques use to

XXXI

w nought but a champian :lds pride once was situate. whoseever dost abide 2. or Tygre, or Euphrate; guiltie is, nor Spaine, ile by the Thamis brincks, licke brood of Alemaine, ldier which Rhine running

O Civill furie! art, [spight, th' Aemathian fields thy nd against thy proper hart; rhen thou wast in greatest

me, through long prosperitie, ne might'st fall more hor-

XXXII , that posteritie Il you ever read? yeallow Hope ye, that ever immortalitie rowes, So meane Harpes worke may ch So meane Harpes worke may chalenge for her

meed? If under heaven anie endurance were, These moniments, which not in paper writ, But in Porphyre and Marble doo appeare, Might well have hop'd to have obtained it. Nath'les my Lute, whom Phœbus deignd to [scater | Cease not to sound these olde antiquities; adman behind him chanst to For if that time doo let the close live

For if that time doo let thy glorie live Well maist thou boast, how ever base thou bee That thou art first, which of thy Nation song Th' olde honour of the people gowned long.

L' Envoy.

Bellay, first garland of free Poësie That France brought forth, though fruitfull of brave wits, Well worthie thou of immortalitie, That long hast traveld, by thy learned writs, Olde Rome out of her ashes to revive, And give a second life to dead decayes! Needes must be all eternitie survive, That can to other give eternall dayes: Thy dayes therefore are endles, and thy prayse

Excelling all that ever went before.

And, after thee, gins Bartas hie to rayse
His heavenly Muse, th' Almightie to adore. Live, happie spirits, th' honour of your name,

And fill the world with never dying fame!

MUIOPOTMOS,

BUTTERFLIE. ΓE OF THE

BY ED. SP.

EDICATED TO THE MOST FAIRE AND VERTUOUS LADIE, THE LADIE CAREY.

TO THE RIGHT WORTHY AND VERTUOUS LADIE,

THE LA : CAREY.

ountifull La: for so excelave received at your sweet iese fewe leaves, as in rebe as to offer flowers to the ine benefites. Therefore I

absolutely vowed to your services: which in all right is ever held for full recompence of debt or damage, to have the person yeelded.

My person I wot wel how little worth it is,
But the faithfull minde and humble zeale to give my selfe wholy to and oned from my selfe, and which I beare unto your La: may perhaps be more of price, as may please you to account un 2 and use the poore service thereof; which taketh glory to advance your excellent partes and noble vertiess, and to spend it selfe in honouring you; not so much for your great bounty to my self, which yet may not be unminded; nor for name or kindreds sake by you vouchsafed, being also regardable; as for that honourable name, which yee bave by your brave deserts purchast to your self, and spred in the mouths of al men; with

which I have also press verses, and under your as the world this small Pot seeching your La: to tak all things therein accordigraciousnes to make a m humbly pray for your hap Your La:

MUIOPOTMOS: OR THE FATE OF THE BUT

I sing of deadly dolorous debate, Stird up through wrathfull Nemesis despight, Betwixt two mightie ones of great estate, Drawne into armes, and proofe of mortall fight, Through prowd ambition and hart-swelling

Through prowd ambition and hart-swelling hate,
Whilest neither could the others greater might
And sdeignfull scorne endure; that from small

jarre Their wraths at length broke into open warre,

The roote whereof and tragicall effect, [nyne! Vouchsafe, O thou the mourafulst Muse of That wontst the tragick stage for to direct, In funerall complaints and waylfull tyne, Reveale to me, and all the meanes detect, Through which sad Clarion did at last decline To lowest wretchednes: And is there then Such rancour in the harts of mightie men?

Of all the race of silver-winged Flies Which doo possesse the Empire of the aire, Betwixt the centred earth and azure skies, Was none more favourable, nor more faire, Whilst heaven did favour his felicities, Then Clarion, the eldest sonne and haire Of Muscaroll; and in his fathers sight Of all alive did seeme the fairest wight.

With fruitfull hope his aged breast he fed Of future good, which his yong toward yeares, Full of brave courage and bold hardyhed, Above th' ensample of his equall peares, Did largely promise, and to him fore-red, (Whilst oft his heart did melt in tender teares) That he in time would sure prove such an one, As should be worthie of his fathers throne.

The fresh yong flie, in whom the kindly fire Of lustfull yongth began to kindle fast, Did much disdaine to subject his desire To loathsome sloth, or houres in ease to wast, But joy'd to range abroad in fresh attire, Through the wide compas of the ayric coast: And, with unwearied wings, each part t' inquire Of the wide rule of his renowmed sire,

For he so swift and nimble. That from this lower tract he up to the clowdes, and the To mount aloft unto the Cri To view the workmanship of Whence, down descending, lupon the streaming rivers, And oft would dare to ten winde.

So on a Summers day, when With gentle calme the work And high in heaven Hyperi Ascending did his beames al Whiles all the heavens or smilde,

Yong Clarion, with vauntful After his guize did cast abro And theretoo gan his furnity

His breastplate first, that was Before his noble heart he firs That mought his life from y And ward his gentle corpes f For it by arte was framed to The bit of balefull steele and No lesse than that which Valc Achilles life from fate of Tr

And then about his shoulder An hairie hide of some wilde In salvage forrest by advent And reft the spoyle his orna Which, spredding all his b full view

Made all that him so horribl Thinke him Alcides with the When the Næmean Conques

Upon his head his glistering The which was wrought by And curiously engraven, he The metall was of rare and p Not Bilbo steele, nor brasse Nor costly Oricalche from st d both Phoebus arrowes Whereof the feare,

ts of heaven beating hard.
weapons fixt he bore,
I towards either side,
ares his enemies to gore:
rigandine, applyde
her threatfull pikes afore
i in them sad death doo

tretch his fearefull hornes, terrour more adornes.

ings as silver bright, and colours, passing farre ie did about him dight: sundrie colours arre aven doth shine so bright, manie a twinckling starre; her ey-spotted traine lours doth containe.

touten perill spoken?)
ne sonne of Cytheree,
ched lovers to be wroken,
s of bleeding harts to see,
gs so manie a changefull
! forgive it unto mee

! forgive it unto mee, ine honour I have tokle; gs were fairer manifolde. faire, in Court full oft

im secretly envide, o such fannes, so silken soft er Love would her provide: 1 the gorgeous Flie had doft, uld with grace be gratifide, teale them privily away, o precious a pray.

ne Venus, on a day owres doo clothe the fruitful

ith all her Nymphes to play, zels, flocking her arownd, her forhead to array: a gentle Nymph was found, elling all the crewe and unstained hewe;

ler joynted than the rest, ious, gathered more store ir than the others best; ret harts envying sore, n her as the worthiest. Dupide (as they heard before) t aide, in gathering hildren of the spring.

feare,
Not yet unmindfull how not long agoe
Her sonne to Psyche secrete love did beare,
And long it close conceal'd, till mickle woe
Thereof arose, and manie a rufull teare,
Reason with sudden rage did overgoe;
And, giving hastic credit to th' accuser,
Was led away of them that did abuse her.

Goddesse

gathering

Eftsoones that Damzell, by her heavenly might,

She turn'd into a winged Butterflie, In the wide aire to make her wandring flight; And all those flowres, with which so plenteouslie

Her lap she filled had, that bred her spight, She placed in her wings, for memorie Of her pretended crime, though crime none were:

were:
Since which that flie them in her wings doth beare.
Thus the fresh Clarion, being readie dight,

Unto his journey did himselfe addresse, And with good speed began to take his flight. Over the fields, in his franke lustinesse, And all the champain o're he soared light; And all the countrey wide he did possesse, Feeding upon their pleasures bounteouslie, That none gainsaid, nor none did him envie.

The woods, the rivers, and the medowes green,
With his aire-cutting wings he measured wide,
Ne did he leave the mountaines bare unscene,
Nor the ranke grassie fennes delights untride.
But none of these, how ever sweete they beene,
Mote please his fancie, nor him cause t'abide:
His choicefull sense with every change doth
fii:

No common things may please a wavering wit.

To the gay gardins his unstaid desire
Him wholly caried, to refresh his sprights:

'', There lavish Nature, in her best attire,
Powres forth sweete odors and alluring sights;
And Arte, with her contending, doth aspire

', T' excell the naturall with made delights;
And all, that faire or pleasant may be found,
In riotous excesse doth there abound.

There he arriving round about doth flie, From bed to bed, from one to other border, And takes survey, with curious busic eye, Of every flowre and herbe there set in order: Now this, now that, he tasteth tenderly, Yet none of them he rudely doth disorder, Ne with his feete their silken leaves deface, But pastures on the pleasures of each place.

And evermore, with most varietie And change of sweetnesse, (for all change

He casts his glutten sense to satisfie, Now sucking of the sap of herbe most meete, Or of the deaw which yet on them does lie, Now in the same bothing his tember feeter And then he pearcheth on some beaunce thereby, To weather him, and his moyst wings to dry.

And then againe he furneth to his play, To speyle the pleasures of that Paradise; The wholesome Saalge, and Lavender still HERY. Ranke-smelling Rue, and Cummin got The Roses raigning in the pride of May, good Sharpe Isope, good for greene wounds remedies

Faire Marigoldes, and Bees-alluring Thime

Coole Violets, and Orpine growing still, Embathed Balme, and chearfull Galingale, Fresh Costmarie, and breathfull Camomill, Dull Poppie, and drink-quickning Setuale, Veyne-healing Verven, and hed-purging Dill, Sound Sayorie, and Bazil hartie-hale, Fat Colworts, and comforting Perseline, Colde Lettuce, and refreshing Rosmarine,

And whatso else of vertue good or ill Grewe in this Gardin, fetcht from farre away, Of everie one he takes, and tastes at will, And on their pleasures greedily doth pray, Then, when he hath both plaid and fed his HIII,

In the warme Sunne he doth himselfe embay, And there him rests in riotous suffisaunce Of all his gladfulnes, and kingly joyaunce.

What more felicitie can fall to creature Then to enjoy delight with libertic, And to be Lord of all the workes of Nature, To raine in th' aire from th' earth to highest skie, ture,

To feed on flowres and weeds of glorious fea-To take what ever thing doth please the cie? Who rests not pleased with such happines, Well worthy he to taste of wretchednes.

But what on earth can long abide in state, Or who can him assure of happie day, Sith morning faire may bring fowle evening late,

And least mishap the most blisse alter may? For thousand perills lie in close awaite About us daylie, to worke our decay; That none, except a God, or God him guide, May them avoyde, or remedie provide.

And whatso heavens in the Ordained have, how can for Forecast, but it must need The sea, the aire, the fire, And th' armies of their cre Do serve to them, and with Warre against us, the vas Who then can save what the

Not thou, O Clarion! thou Of all thy kinds, unhappie Whose cruell fate is waven Of Joves owne hand, to we Ne may then help the man Which thy old Sire with a Hath powred forth for the sprent :

Nought may thee save fre ment

Sweet Marjoram, and Daysies decking prime: It fortuned (as heavens had That in this gardin, where Was wont to solace him, a The fee of faire things, th's The shame of Nature, the be And, lurking closely, in aw How he might anie in his t

> But when he spide the joyo In this faire plot dispacing Feareles of foes and hidden Lord! how he gan for to be And to his wicked worke es His heart did carne against And bowels so with ranckli That scarce the skin the helde.

The cause why he this Flie Was (as in stories it is writ For that his mother, whi bred,

The most fine-fingred work Arachne, by his means was Of Pallas, and in her owne When she with her for exc That wrought her shame ended.

For the Tritonian goddess Her blazed fame which all Came downe to prove th reward

For her prais-worthie work But the presumptuous Day The Goddesse selfe to chall And to compare with her i Of workes with loome, will quill.

alenge not refuse, er the paragon to make: they sit, and each doth

ill for her tapet take. w Jove did abuse , and on his backe sea did beare; so lively [weene. , and true Bull, ye would She smote the ground, the which streight foorth

A fruitfull Olyve tree, with berries spredd, icke unto the land to looke, wes aide to call, and feare waves, that up she tooke nd garments gathered neare; w she in everie member

mes of waters deepe: tly to lament and weepe. e pictur'd winged Love,

she saw no more appeare,

other Sport, light fluttering is each had been a Dove; we and shafts, the other about his head did move,

new love both triumphing: iphes about them flocking [sound. ons which their hornes did

her worke she did empale

Yvie-winding trayle: full fit for kingly bowres; llas, such as Envie pale, ings with venemous tooth bright

e. Then gan the Goddesse unto her worke to dight. rie of the olde debate Neptune did for Athens trie:

sit around in royall state, it with awfull Majestie, rife betweene them stirred

, by his like visnomie

es and power Imperiall.

ds the God of Seas in place, a-coast Citie as his right. rockes with his three-forked

tes a warlike steed in sight,

The signe by which he chalengeth the place: That all the Gods, which saw his wondrous

Did surely deeme the victorie his due: [might, But seldome seene, forejudgment proveth true. Then to her selfe she gives her Aegide shield,

And steelhed speare, and morion on her hedd, Such as she oft is seene in warlicke field: Then sets she forth, how with her weapon dredd [did yield

That all the Gods admir'd: then, all the storie She compast with a wreathe of Olyves hoarie. Emongst these leaves she made a Butterflie, With excellent device and wondrous slight, Fluttring among the Olives wantonly, That seem'd to live, so like it was in sight: The velvet nap which on his wings doth lie, The silken downe with which his backe is

dight, His broad outstretched hornes, his hayrie thies, His glorious colours, and his glistering eies.

Which when Arachne saw, as overlaid And mastered with workmanship so rare, She stood astonied long, ne ought gainesaid; And with fast fixed eyes on her did stare, And by her silence, signe of one dismaid, The victorie did yeeld her as her share: Yet did she inly fret and felly burne,

And all her blood to poysonous rancor turne: order wrought of sundrie That shortly from the shape of womanhed, Such as she was when l'allas she attempted,

She grew to hideous shape of dryrihed Pined with griefe of folly late repented: Eftsoones her white streight legs were altered To crooked crawling shankes, of marrowe

empted; And her faire face to fowle and loathsome hewe, And her fine corpes to a bag of venim grewe. This cursed creature, mindfull of that olde

Enfested grudge, the which his mother felt, So soone as Clarion he did beholde, His heart with vengefull malice inly swelt; And weaving straight a net with manie a fold About the cave in which he lurking dwelt,

With fine small cords about it stretched wide, wen; but Jove above them So finely sponne that scarce they could be spide.

Not anie damzell, which her vaunteth most In skilfull knitting of soft silken twyne, Nor anie weaver, which his worke doth boast In dieper, in damaske, or in lyne, Nor anie skil'd in workmanship embost, Nor anie skil'd in loupes of fingring fine.

Might in their divers cunning over dare With this so curious networke to compare.

Ne doo I thinke, that that same subtil glu, The which the Lemnian God framde craftily, Mars sloeping with his wife to compasse in, That all the Gods with common mockerie Might laugh at them, and scorne their shame-

full sin,
Was like to this. This same he did applie
For to entrap the careles Clarion,
That rang'd each where without suspition.

Suspition of friend, nor feare of foe That hazarded his health, had he at all, But walkt at will, and wandred too and fro, In the pride of his freedome principall: Little wist he his fatall future woo But was secure; the liker he to fall. He likest is to fall into mischaunce, That is regardles of his governaunce,

Yet still Aragnoll (so his foe was hight) Lay burking covertly him to surprise; And all his gins, that him entangle might, Drest in good order as he could devise. At length, the foolish Flie, without foresight, As he that did all daunger quite despise, Toward those parts came flying carelesslie, Where hidden was his hatefull enemie.

Who, seeing him, with secret joy therefore Did tickle inwardly in everie vaine; And his false hart, fraught with all treasons store,

Was fil'd with hope his purpose to obtaine: Himselfe he close upgathered more and more Into his den, that his deceitfull traine By his there being might not be bewraid, Ne anie noyse, ne anie motion made.

Like as a wily Foxe, that having spide Where on a sunnie banke the Lambes doo play,

Full closely creeping by the hinder sid Lyes in ambushment of his hoped pray No stirreth limbe; till, seeing rudle to He rusheth forth, and snatcheth quite One of the litle yonglings unaware So to his worke Aragnoll him prop

Who now shall give unto my havier A well of teares, that all may overface Or where shall I finde lamentable cry And mournfull tunes enough my a

Helpe, O thou Tragick Muse! me to d Notes and enough to expresse this bline For loe! the drerie atownd is now are That of all happines hath us deprived

The luckles Clarion, whether cruell For wicked Fortune faultles him misles Or some ungracious blast, out of the Of Acoles raine, perforce him draws Was (O sad hap, and howre unfortu Into the cursed cobweb, which his fo Had framed for his finall overthree

There the fond Flie, entangled, stra Himselfe to free thereout; but all is For striving more, the more in lace Himselfe he tide, and wrapt his win In lymic snares the subtill loupes at That in the ende he breathlesse did And, all his yongthly forces idly sp Him to the mercy of th' avenger let

Which when the greisly tyrant did Like a grimme Lyon rushing with out of his den, he seized greedelle On the resistles pray; and, with fe Under the left wing stroke his wa Into his heart, that his deepe In bloodie streames foorth fled into His bodie left the spectacle of care.

VISIONS OF THE WORLDS VANITIE

ONE day, whiles that my daylie cares did sleepe, My spirit shaking off her earthly prison, Began to enter into meditation deepe Of things exceeding reach of common reason; Such as this age, in which all good is geason, And all that humble is, and meane debaced, Hath brought forth in her last declining sea-

Griefe of good mindes, to see disgraced!

On which when as my thought w Unto my eyes strange showes pres Picturing that which I in minde et That yet those sights empassion m Such asthey were (faire Ladie!) to That when time serves may be better forth.

when Phœbus fairly shone, hite as driven snowe, es embowed like the Moone, g meadow lying lowe:

1e verdant grasse did growe, res did offer to be eaten; es so did overflowe, [beaten, lowed in the weedes downe m his daintie lips to sweeten: a scorned little creature,

e hide his angrie sting did , that all his goodly feature

enteous pasture nought him I the great is oft diseased.

ш Il shore of muddie Nile, nke outstretched lay, rth, a mightie Crocodile, guiltles blood and greedie pray le travailing that way, [pride, gs lesse than his disdainful gs lesse than i cal'd Tedula,

sands which on earth abide, deous beast to open wide of his devouring hell , as Nature did provide, at with blacke venime swell ald greatest things the least

all so mightie can constraine? τv

, that beares Joves thunderne the simple Scarabee, est service, and good hap, her Foules his thralls to bee: at no redresse did see,

Eagle built his towring nest, within the hollow tree, g ones, and himselfe distrest; i anie place to rest, es owne lap his egs to lay; also filth him to infest, lth his egs to fling away: en as the Foule was wroth,

east the greatest may reprove.'

urning my troubled eye, fish I may it cleepe) sea before his face to flye, laggie finnes doth seeme to

The fomie waves out of the dreadfull deep, The huge Leviathan, dame Natures wonder, Making his sport, that manie makes to weep: A sword-fish small him from the rest did sunder,

That, in his throat him pricking softly under, His wide Abysse him forced forth to spewe That all the sea did roare like heavens thunder. And all the waves were stain'd with filthie howe. Hereby I learned have not to despise

Whatever thing seems small in common eyes.

An hideous Dragon, dreadfull to behold Whose backe was arm'd against the dint of speare golde, With shields of brasse that shone like burnisht And forkhed sting that death in it did beare, Strove with a Spider his unequall peare;

And bad defiance to his enemie. The subtill vermin, creeping closely neare, Did in his drinke shed poyson privilie; Which, through his entrailes spredding diversly,

Made him to swell, that nigh his bowells brust, And him enforst to yeeld the victorie, That did so much in his owne greatnesse trust. O! how great vainnesse is it then to scorne The weake, that hath the strong so oft forlorne!

High on a hill a goodly Cedar grewe, Of wondrous length, and streight proportion, That farre abroad her daintie odours threwe;

Mongst all the daughters of proud Libanon, Her match in beautie was not anie one. Shortly within her inmost pith there bred A little wicked worme, perceiv'd of none, That on her sap and vitall moysture fed:

Thenceforth her garland so much honoured Began to die, (O great ruth for the same!) And her faire lockes fell from her loftie head, That shortly balde and bared she became. I, which this sight beheld, was much dis-

mayed To see so goodly thing so some decayed.

Soone after this I saw an Elephant, Adorn'd with bells and bosses gorgeouslie, That on his backe did beare (as batteilant) A gilden towre, which shone exceedinglie;

That he himselfe through foolish vanitie, Both for his rich attire and goodly forme, Was puffed up with passing surquedrie, And shortly gan all other beasts to scorne.
Till that a little Ant, a silly worme.

Into his nosthrils creeping, so him pained

That, casting downe his towres, he did deforme Both berrowed pride, and native beautie stained.

Let therefore nought, that great is, therein Sith so small thing his happines may varie,

Looking far foorth into the Ocean wide, A goodly ship with banners bravely dight, And flag in her top-gallant, I espide Through the maine sea making her merry flight Faire blew the winde into her bosome right; And th' heavens looked lovely all the while, That she did seeme to daunce, as in delight, And at her owne felicitie did smile, All sodainely there clove unto her keele little fish, that men called Remora, Which stopt her course, and held her by the heele,

That winde nor tide could move her thence Straunge thing, me seemeth, that so small a thing

Should able be so great an one to wring.

A mighty Lyon, Lord of all the wood, Having his hunger throughly satisfide With pray of beasts and spoyle of living blood, Safe in his dreadles den him thought to hide : His sternesse was his prayse, his strength his And all his glory in his cruell clawes. [pride, I saw a wasp, that fiercely him defide, And bad him battaile even to his jawes: Sore he him stong, that it the blood forth

drawes And his proude heart is fild with fretting ire: In vaine he threats his teeth, his tayle, his pawes.

And from his bloodie eyes doth sparkle fire:

That dead himselfe he wishe So weakest may anoy the u

What time the Romaine Empir Of all the world and florisht n The nations gan their sovera And cast to quitt them from quight: So, when all shrouded were in

The Galles were, by corrupting Possest nigh of the Capitol that Had not a Goose the treacher If then a Goose great Rome fro And Jove himselfe, the patron Preserved from being to his fo Why do vaine men mean thing

And in their might repose th ance,

Sith nought on earth can endurance?

XII

When these sad sights were ore My spright was greatly move With inward ruth and deare a To see so great things by so sr Thenceforth I gan in my engri To scorne all difference of grea Sith that the greatest often are And unawares doe into daunge And ye, that read these minn Learne by their losse to love th And, if that fortune chaunce ye To honours seat, forget not wh

For he, that of himselfe is m Shall finde his state most sure.

THE VISIONS

Ir was the time, when rest, soft sliding downe From heavens hight into mens heavy eyes, In the forgetfulnes of sleepe doth drowne The earefull thoughts of mortall miseries; Then did a Ghost before mine eyes appeare, On that great rivers banck, that runnes by Rome;

Which, calling me by name, bad me to reare My lookes to heaven whence all good gifts do Out of her womb a thousand ra

And crying lowd, Loe! now beholde (quoth Golde was the parget; and the What under this great temple placed is: Lo, all is nought but flying vanitee! So I, that know this worlds inconstancies

OF BELLAY.

Sith onely God surmounts al In God alone my confidence

On high hills top I saw a state An hundred cabits high by he With hundreth pillours from All wronght with Diamond after Nor brick nor marble was the v But shining Christall, which from hee) On hundred steps of Afrike gol Did shine all scaly with great The floore of Jasp and Emerand O worlds vainesse! Whiles thu rthrew this frame with ruine great.

sharped spyre of Diamond bright, ach way in square appeare to mee, portion'd up unto his hight, ircher might his level see: ereof a pot did seeme to beare, e mettall, which we most do honour; s golden vessel couched weare of a mightie Emperour: corners of the base were pight, he frame, foure great Lyons of gold ; tombe for such a worthy wight. world doth nought but grievance 1! tempest from the heaven descend his brave monument with flash did

de up on yvorie pillowes tall, es were of richest mettalls warke, ers Alablaster, the fryses christall, front of a triumphall Arke: de purtraid was a Victorie, Nimph, that wings of silver weares, umphant chayre was set on hie, ent glory of the Romaine peares. it seem'd of earthly craftsmans wit, · wrought by his owne industry, der-dartes for Jove his syre doth fit. more see faire thing under sky, t mine eves have seene so faire a sight dain fall to dust consumed quight.

the faire Dodonian tree far seene. ven hills to spread his gladsome ıme

ierours bedecked with his greene, bancks of the Ausonian streame:
y an auncient Trophee was addrest, a spoyle, and many a goodly show, it brave races greatnes did attest, ome from the Troyan blood did flow. was so rare a thing to vew;

a barbarous troupe of clownish fone ir of these noble boughs down threw: wedge I heard the tronck to grone; ce, I saw the roote in great disdaine e of forked trees send forth againe.

olfe under a rockie cave two whelpes; I saw her litle ones dalliance the teate to crave, [nones

bquake shocke the hill from lowest I saw her raunge abroad to seeke her food, And roming through the field with greedie rage blood

T'embrew her teeth and clawes with lukewarm Of the small heards, her thirst for to asswage. I saw a thousand huntsmen, which descended Downe from the mountaines bordring Lombardie, [rended.

That with an hundred speares her flank wide I saw her on the plaine outstretched lie, Throwing out thousand throbs in her owne

sovle; Soone on a tree uphang'd I saw her spoyle.

VII

I saw the Bird that can the sun endure, With feeble wings assay to mount on hight; By more and more she gan her wings t'assure, Following th' ensample of her mothers sight: I saw her rise, and with a larger flight To pierce the cloudes, and with wide pinneons To measure the most haughtie mountaines

hight, Untill she raught the Gods owne mansions: There was she lost; when suddaine I behelde, Where, tumbling through the avre in firie fold, All flaming downe she on the plaine was felde, And soone her bodie turn'd to ashes colde,

I saw the foule, that doth the light dispise, Out of her dust like to a worm arise.

I saw a river swift, whose fomy billowes Did wash the ground-work of an old great wall; I saw it cover'd all with griesly shadowes That with black horror did the ayre appall: Thereout a strange beast with seven heads

That townes and castles under her brest did And seem'd both milder beasts and fiercer foes Alike with equall ravine to devoure.

Much was I mazde, to see this monsters kinde In hundred formes to change his fearefull hew; When as at length I saw the wrathfull winde, Which blows cold storms, burst out of Scithian

That sperst these cloudes; and, in so short This dreadfull shape was vanished to nought.

Then all astonied with this mighty ghoast, An hideous bodie big and strong I sawe With side-long beard, and locks down hanging loast.

Sterne face, and front full of Satúrnlike awe Who, leaning on the belly of a pot, Pourd foorth a water, whose out gushing flood Ran bathing all the creakie shore atlot, her neck wreath'd from them for the Whereon the Troy an prince spilt Turnus blood And at his feete a bitch wolfe suck did yeeld To two young babes: His left the palme tree stout,

His right hand did the peacefull olive wield; And head with Lawrell garnisht was about. Sudden both Palme and Olive fell away, And faire greene Lawrell branch did quite decay.

Hard by a rivers side a virgin faire,

And outraging her cheekes and golden haire, To falling rivers sound thus tun'd her sobs, 'Where is (quoth she) this whilom honoured face? Where the great glorie and the auncient praise, In which all worlds felicitie had place, When Gods and men my honour up did raise? Suffisd it not that civill warres me made The whole worlds spoile, but that this hydra Of hundred Hercules to be assaide, new, With seven heads, budding monstrous crimes So many Neroes and Caligulaes [anew, anew, Out of these crooked shores must dayly rayse?'

Upon an hill a bright flame I did see

Waving aloft with triple point to skie, Which, like incense of precious Cedar tree, With balmie odours fil'd th' ayre farre and nic. A Bird all white, well feathered on each wing, Hereout up to the throne of Gods did flie, And all the way most pleasant notes did sing, Whilst in the smoake she unto heaven did stie. Of this faire fire the scattered rayes forth threw On everie side a thousand shining beames: When sudden dropping of a silver dew (O grievous chance!) gan quench those precious

flames: That it, which earst so pleasant sent did yeld, Of nothing now but noyous sulphure smeld.

XII

I saw a spring out of a rocke forth rayle.

As cleare as Christall gainst the Sunnie beames. The bottome yeallow, like the golden grayle That bright Pactolus washeth with his streames; It seem'd that Art and Nature had assembled All pleasure there, for which mans hart could long; And there a noyse alluring sleepe soft trembled. Whilst I thus mazed was with great affixy. Of manie accords more sweete than Mermaids I saw the heavens in warre against her use song:

The seates and benches shone as yvorie, And hundred Nymphes sate side by side about;

When from nigh hills, with hideous outcrie A troupe of Satyres in the place did rout,

Which with their villeine feete the street [Nymphes aw did ray Threw down the seats, and drove t

XIII

Much richer then that vessell seem'd to bee, Which did to that sad Florentine appeare, Casting mine eyes farre off, I channel to see throbs, Upon the Latine Coast herselfe to reare: Folding her armes to Heaven with thousand But suddenly arose a tempest great, Bearing close envie to these riches rare,

Which gan assaile this ship with dreat, This ship to which none other might course And finally the storme impetuous Sunke up these riches, second unto some, Within the gulfe of greedie Nereus. I saw both ship and mariners each one, And all that treasure, drowned in the n

But I the ship saw after raisd' againe.

Long having deeply gron'd these Visions ad, I saw a Citie like unto that same, Which saw the messenger of tidings glad; But that on sand was built the goodly for It seem'd her top the firmament did my And, no lesse rich than faire, right worthie (If ought here worthie) of immortall days. Or if aught under heaven might firme Much wondred I to see so faire a wall: When from the Northerne coast a stome an Which, breathing furic from his inward pal On all which did against his course opp Into a clowde of dust sperst in the a The weake foundations of this citie fairs.

At length, even at the time, when Morphen Most trulie doth unto our eyes appeare. Wearie to see the heavens still wavering the I saw Typhœus sister comming neare; Whose head, full bravely with a morion be. Did seeme to match the Gods in Majestie. She, by a rivers bancke that swift downe Over all the world did raise a Trophee hie; An hundred vanquisht Kings under her lay With armes bound at their backs in shan wize.

Then downe she stricken fell with clap thonder, That with great noyse I wakte in suid

'HE VISIONS \mathbf{OF} PETRARCH.

FORMERLY TRANSLATED.

at my window all alone, re things happened me to see, weth me to thinke thereon. nd a Hynde appear'd to mee, the greatest god delite; did her pursue in chace, ne was blacke, the other white: rce so in their cruell race haunches of that gentle beast, t, and in short time, I spide, , where she, alas, opprest, ind, and there untimely dide. vanquishing so noble beautie, e wayle so hard a destenie.

tall ship did appeare, ben and white Yvorie; olde, of silke the tackle were: inde, calme seem'd the sea to bee, here did show full bright and

ures this gay ship fraighted was: rme did so turmoyle the aire, p the sea, that she (alas) k, that under water lay, ast all recoverie. uth, and sorrowfull assay, spirite with perplexitie, oment to see lost and drown'd. ies as like cannot be found!

ш

branches did I see arise h and lustie Lawrell tree, ng greene wood; of l'aradise int I thought myselfe to see: sirds therein yshrowded were, shade their sundrie melodie, r sweetnes I was ravish't nere Laurell fixed was mine eie. verie where to overcast, vas the welkin all about, flash of heavens fire out brast, royall tree quite by the roote; es me much and ever to com-

shadow shalbe had againe.

Within this wood, out of a rocke did rise A spring of water, mildly rumbling downe, Wherto approched not in anie wise The homely shepheard, nor the ruder clowne; But manie Muses, and the Nymphes withall, That sweetly in accord did tune their voyce To the soft sounding of the waters fall: That my glad hart thereat did much rejoyce. But, while herein I tooke my chiefe delight, I saw (alas) the gaping earth devoure The spring, the place, and all cleane out of sight: Thoure, Which yet aggreeves my hart even to this

And wounds my soule with rufull memorie, To see such pleasures gon so suddenly.

I saw a Phœnix in the wood alone, With purple wings, and crest of golden hewe; Strange bird he was, whereby I thought anone. That of some heavenly wight I had the vewe; Untill he came unto the broken tree, And to the spring, that late devoured was. What say I more? each thing at last we see Doth passe away: the Phoenix there alas, pying the tree destroid, the water dride, Himselfe smote with his beake, as in disdaine, And so foorthwith in great despight he dide, That yet my heart burnes in exceeding paine, For ruth and pitie of so haples plight: O let mine eyes no more see such a sight!

At last so faire a Ladie did I spie, That thinking yet on her I burne and quake; On hearbs and flowres she walked pensively, Milde, but yet Love she proudly did forsake: White seem'd her robes, yet woven so they were. As snowe and golde together had been wrought:

Above the wast a darke clowde shrouded her, A stinging serpent by the heele her caught; Wherewith she languisht as the gathered floure; And, well assur'd, she mounted up to joy.

Alas, on earth so nothing doth endure. But bitter griefe and sorrowfull annoy: Which make this life wretched and miserable. ladainer sautrol lo asanots this base'l

When I behold this tickle trustles state Of vaine worlds gloric, flitting too and fro. And mortall men tossed by troublous fate In restles seas of wretchednes and woe; I wish I might this wearie life forgoe. And shortly turne unto my happie rest, Where my free spirite might not anie moe Be vext with sights, that doo her peace molest.

And ye, faire Ladie, in whose bounter All heavenly grace and vertue shrine When ye, these rythmes doo read, the rest,

Loath this base world, and thinke of And though ye be the fairest

creatures, Yet thinke, that death shall spo goodly features.

DAPHNAÏDA:

AN ELEGIE

UPON THE DEATH OF THE NOBLE AND VERTUOUS

DOUGLAS HOWARD.

DAUGHTER AND HEIRE OF HENRY LORD HOWARD, VISCOUNT BYNION. AND WIFE OF ARTHURE GORGES, ESQUIER.

DEDICATED TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE THE LADY

HELENA, MARQUESSE OF NORTHAMPTON. By ED. SP.

TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE AND VERTUOUS LADY HELENA, MARQUESSE OF NORTH-HAMPTON.

I HAVE the rather presumed humbly to offer unto your Honour the dedication of this little Poeme, for that the noble and vertuous Gentlewoman of whom it is written, was by match neere alied, and in affection greatly devoted, unto your Ladiship. The occasion why I wrote the same, was as well the great good fame which I heard of her deceased, as the particular goodwill which I bear unto her husband Master Arthur Gorges, a lover of learning and vertue, whose house, as your Ladiship by mariage hath honoured, so doe I find the name of them, by many notable records, to be of great antiquitie in this Realme, and such as have ever borne themselves with honourable reputation to the world, and unspotted loyaltie to their Prince and Countrey : besides,

so lineally are they descended f Howards, as that the Lady Anne eldest daughter to John Duke of I was wife to Sir Edmund, mother Edward, and grandmother to Sir and Sir Thomas Gorges, knightes: a fore I doe assure my selfe that no du done to the White Lyon, but will gratefull to your Ladiship, whose and children do so neerely particip the bloud of that noble family. dutie I recommende this Pamphlet. good acceptance thereof, to your he favour and protection. London, thi Januarie, 1591. Your Honours humbly eve

DAPHNAÏDA.

WHAT-EVER man be he whose heavie minde, Let reade the rufull plaint herein exp With griefe of mournefull great mishap op- Of one, (I weene), the wofulst man a prest.

Even sad Alcyon, whose empierced b Fit matter for his cares increase would finde, Sharpe sorrowe did in thousand peece e in pleasure findeth sense, tehed life dooth take delight, nisht farre away from hence; ed Sisters here be hight, of sorrowe heavilie can sing; heavie song would breede de-

mes, save sobs and grones, shall

em, and their sweet harmonic, e fatall Sisters, whose sad hands direfull threds of destinie, rath breake off the vitall bands, to; and let the dreadfull Queene

deepe come from the Stygian

osts, to heare the dolefull teene.
ning, when the wearie Sun,
s long labour drew to rest,
eeds, now having overrun
kie, gan water in the west,
le to breath the freshing ayre
whose flowring pride, opprest
sts, had lost their beautie faire.

comy minde a troublous thought, dooth my weaker wit possesse, untill it forth have brought a Infant, fruit of heavinesse, ceived hath through meditation s vainnesse and lifes wretched-

oule it deepely doth empassion. on the miseric live, and I of many most e man; I did espie

e man; I did espie s me a sory wight did cost, ck, that mourning did bewray, affe in hand devoutlie crost, Pilgrim come from farre away. ocks uncombed and unshorne, ware, and beard all overgrowne,

eemd to be sum wight forlorne; e earth his heavie eyes were th; and ever as he went , and inly deepe did grone, in peeces would have rent. high, his face I vewed nere,

mblant of his countenaunce ul his person scene elsewhere, on seeming at a glaunce; ; jollie Shepheard swaine merrilie to pipe and daunce, leasance every wood and plaine.

Yet halfe in doubt, because of his disguize, I softlie sayd, Alcyon! There-with-all He lookt aside as in disdainefull wise, Yet stayed not, till I againe did call: [sound, Then, turning back, he saide, with hollow 'Who is it that dooth name me, wofull thrall, The wretchedst man that treades this day on

ground?

'One, whome like wofulnesse, impressed deepe, Hath made fit mate thy wretched case to heare, And given like cause with thee to waile and weepe; [beare. Griefe findes some case by him that like does Then stay, Alcyon, gentle shepheard! stay, (Quoth I) till thou have to my trustie eare Committed what thee dooth so ill spay.'

'Cease, foolish man!' (saide he, halfc wrothfully)
'To seeke to heare that which cannot be tolde, For the huge auguish, which dooth multiplye My dying paines, no tongue can well unfold;

Ne doo I care that any should bemone
My hard mishap, or any weepe that would,
But seeke alone to weepe, and dye alone.'
'Then be it so,' (quoth I) 'that thou are bent

To die alone, unpitied, unplained;
Yet, ere thou die, it were convenient
To tell the cause which thee theretoo constrained,
Least that the world thee dead accuse of guilt,
And say, when thou of none shalt be maintained,

That thou for secret crime thy blood hast spilt.'

Who lifedooes loath, and longs to bee unbound
From the strong shackles of fraile flesh,'
quoth he, [ground,
'Nought cares at all what they, that live on
Livern the occasion of his death to hee.'

Nought cares at all what they, that live on Deem the occasion of his death to bee; Rather desires to be forgotten quight, Than question made of his calamitie, For harts deep sorrow hates both life and light.

'Yet since so much thou seemst to rue my

griefe,
And carest for one that for himselfe cares
(Signe of thy love, though nought for my reliefe,
For my reliefe exceedeth living thought;)
I will to thee this heavie case relate:
Then harken well till it to ende bee brought.

For never didst thou heare more haplesse fate,
Whilome I usde (as thou right well doest know)

My little flocke on westerne downes to keepe, Not far from whence Sabrinaes streame doth flow, And flowrie bancks with silver liquor steepe; Nought carde I then for worldly change or chaunce.

For all my joy was on my gentle sheepe, And to my pype to caroll and to daunce.

It there befell, as I the fields did range Fearelesse and free, a faire young Lionesse, White as the native Rose before the chaunge Which Venus blood did in her leaves impresse, I spied playing on the grassie playne Her youthfull sports and kindlic wantonnes That did all other Beasts in beawtie staine. Much was I moved at so goodly aight,

Whose like before mine eye had seldo And gan to cast how I her compasse might,

And bring to hand that yet had never been So well I wrought with mildnes and with paine,

That I her caught disporting on the greene, And brought away fast bound with silver And seeking misse, and missing deels

And afterwards I handled her so fayre, That though by kind shee stout and salvage were.

For being borne an auncient Lions haire, And of the race that all wild beastes do feare, Yet I her fram'd, and wan so to my bent, That shee became so meeke and milde of cheare.

As the least lamb in all my flock that went:

' For shee in field, where-ever I did wend, Would wend with me, and waite by me all day And all the night that I in watch did spend, If cause requir'd, or els in sleepe, if nay, Shee would all night by mee or watch or sleepe And evermore when I did sleepe or play, She of my flock would take full warie keepe.

Safe then, and safest were my sillie sheepe, Ne fear'd the Wolfe, ne fear'd the wildest beast, All were I drown'd in carclesse quiet deepe; My lovelie Lionesse without beheast So carefull was for them, and for my good, That when I waked, neither most nor least I found miscaried or in plaine or wood,

Oft did the Shepeheards, which my hap did

And oft their lasses, which my luck envide, Daylie resort to me from farre and neare, To see my Lyonesse, whose praises wide Were spred abroad; and when her worthinesse Much greater than the rude report they tride, Becomes more fierce and fervent in They her did praise, and my good fortune And, breaking foorth at last, thu blesse.

Long thus I joyed in my happinesse, And well did hope my joy would have But oh, fond man! that in worlds fick Reposedst hope, or weenedst her thy f That glories most in mortall misers And daylie doth her changefull cours To make new matter fit for Tragedist

For whilest I was thus without dread or A cruell Satyre with his murdrous dar Greedie of mischiefe, ranging all about Gave her the fatall wound of deadlies And reft fro me my sweets companion And reft fro me my love, my life, my My Lyonesse (ah, woe is mee!) is goo Out of the world thus was she reft as

Out of the world, unworthie such as And borne to heaven, for heaven a fitt Much fitter than the Lyon, which wil Alcides slew, and fixt in firmament; Her now I seek throughout this earth Therewith he gan afresh to waile and That I for pittie of his heavie plight

Could not abstaine mine eyes with t steepe ; But, when I saw the anguish of his Some deale alaid, I him bespake ag Certes, Alcyon, painfull is thy phel That it in me breeds almost equall p

Yet doth not my dull wit well unde The riddle of thy loved Lionesse; For rare it seemes in reason to be ak That man, who doth the whole w

possesse, Should to a beast his noble hart em And be the vassall of his vassaless Therefore more plaine areade this

Then sighing sore, 'Daphne thou quoth he, 'She now is dead;' ne more endure But fell to ground for great extrem That I, beholding it, with deepe dis Was much appald, and, lightlie him

Revoked life, that would have fled All were my self, through griefe, drearing. Then gan I him to comfort all my

And with milde counsaile strove to The stormie passion of his troubled But he thereby was more empassion As stubborne steed, that is with strained,

plained:

henceforth that breatheth vitall

,

eaven, or heavenlie powers adore, ustlie doe their judgments share lie wightes, as to afflict so sore , as those which do transgresse, pare the best or fayrest, more r fowlest, but doe both oppresse?

tht, why did they then create ayre, sith fairenesse is neglected? sey themselves immaculate, gs be not by them respected? e pure, most faire, most pure shee

iem as thing impure rejected; urenesse heaven it selfe did pas.

and in all celestiall grace nire in goodlie womankinde, l, and seem'd of Angels race, th like Angell new divinde, wisedome and with chastitie, owrics of a noble mind. r beautie much more beautifie.

bred (since fayre Astrea left orld) more vertue in a wight; he parted hence, with her she

[quight. and robd her race of bountie shepheard lasses now lament; se by her hath on them light, her and bounties ornament.

royall Shepheardesse, f my parted love envy, praises in all plenteousnesse her, like showers of Castaly, hepheard, Colin, her owne Shep-

heavenly hymnes doth deifie, me full hardly to be betterd.

ose, the glorie of the day, Primrose in the lowly shade: t mine; amisse I mine did say:

is, with him to live for ay e a flower so soone should fade, untimely tempest fall away!

y in her first ages spring,

against all course of kinde.

For age to dye is right, but youth is wrong; She fel away like fruit blowne downe with winde.

Weepe, Shepheard! weepe, to make my undersong.

'What hart so stony hard but that would weepe,

And noure foorth fountaines of incessant teares? What Timon but would let compassion creepe Into his brest, and pierce his frosen eares? In stead of teares, whose brackish bitter well. wasted have, my heart-blood dropping

[fell. weares. To thinke to ground how that faire blossome ' Yet fell she not as one enforst to dye, Ne dyde with dread and grudging discontent. But as one toyld with travaile downe doth lye, So lay she downe, as if to sleepe she went, And closde her eyes with carelesse quictnesse; The whiles soft death away her spirit hent, And soule assayld from sinfull fleshlinesse. 'Yet ere that life her lodging did forsake, She, all resolv'd, and ready to remove, Calling to me (ay me!) this wise bespake; "Alcyon! ah, my first and latest love!
Ah! why does my Alcyon weepe and mourne, And grieve my ghost, that ill mote him behove

As if to me had chanst some evill tourne! "I, since the messenger is come for mee, That summons soules unto the bridale feast Of his great Lord, must needes depart from thee, And straight obay his soveraine beheast; Why should Aleyon then so sore lament That I from miserie shall be releast, And freed from wretched long imprisonment!

"Our daies are full of dolor and disease, Our life afflicted with incessant paine, That nought on earth may lessen or appease; Why then should I desire here to remaine! Or why should he, that loves me, sorie bee For my deliverance, or at all complaine My good to heare, and toward joyes to see! "I goe, and long desired have to goe;

it His, which mine awhile her I goe with gladnesse to my wished rest, Whereas no worlds sad care nor wasting woe May come their happie quiet to molest; But Saints and Angels in celestiall thrones Eternally Him praise that hath them blest; There shall I be amongst those blessed ones.

er leafe was greene, and fresh her "Yet, ere I goe, a pledge I leave with thee [did bring, Of the late love the which betwixt us past, er braunch faire blossomes foorth My yong Ambrosia; in lieu of mee, Love her; so shall our love for ever last

Thus, deare ! adieu, whom I expect ere long."-So having said, away she softly past: Weep, Shepheard! weep, to make undersong. make

So oft as I record those piercing words, Which yet are deepe engraven in my brest, And those last deadly accents, which like swords Did wound my heart, and rend my bleeding

With those sweet sugred speaches doo compare, The which my soule first conquerd and possest, The first beginners of my endles care:

' And when those pallid cheekes and ashy hew, In which sad Death his pourtraicture had writ, And when those hollow eyes and deadly view, On which the clowde of ghastly night did sit, I match with that sweet smile and chearfull

Which all the world subdued unto it, How happie was I then, and wretched now!

'How happie was I when I saw her leade The Shepheards daughters dauncing in a rownd! How trimly would she trace and softly tread The tender grasse, with rosic garland crownd! And when she list advance her heavenly voyce, Both Nymphes and Muses nigh she made astownd.

And flocks and shepheards caused to rejoyce.

But now, ye Shepheard lasses! who shall lead Your wandring troupes, or sing your virelayes? Or who shall dight your bowres, sith she is

dead That was the Lady of your holy-dayes? Let now your blisse be turned into bale, And into plaints convert your joyous playes, And with the same fill every hill and dale.

Let Bagpipe never more be heard to shrill, That may allure the senses to delight, Ne ever Shepheard sound his Oaten quill Unto the many that provoke them might To idle pleasance; but let ghastlinesse And drery horror dim the chearfull light, To make the image of true heavinesse:

Let birds be silent on the naked spray, And shady woods resound with dreadfull yells: Let streaming floods their hastie courses stay And parching drougth drie up the christall

And Nature, nurse of every Let rest her selfe from her lo And cease henceforth things bring

But hideous monsters full of a For she it is that hath me do No nurse, but Stepdame, crus Weepe, Shepheard! weepe, to song.

'My little flocke, whom ears And wont to feede with finest Feede ye hencefoorth on bitte And stinking Smallage, and a And, when your mawes are corrupted,

Be ye the pray of Wolves; no That with your carkasses wil

'Ne worse to you, my sillie al Ne sorer vengeance wish on Than to my selfe, for whose To carelesse heavens I doo da But heavens refuse to heare a And cruell Death doth scorns Or graunt his boone that mo

The good and righteous he a To plague th'unrighteous whi But the ungodly ones he dot By living long to multiplie the As the Great Judge at first d But rather riddance from long Therefore, my Daphne they be For worthic of a better place But me unworthic willed here

That with her lacke I might Sith then they so have ordred Penance to her, according the And to her ghost doo service For I will walke this wandri Throughout the world from o And in affliction wast my bet

My bread shall be the anguis My drink the teares which I raine, My bed the ground that hard So will I wilfully increase my

And she, my love that was, I When she beholds from her c wells;
Let th' earth be barren, and bring foorth no flowres,
And th' ayre be filled with noyse of dolefull
And wandring spirits walke untimely howres.
On mortall men, and rue thei ve with sorowe satisfide fates, which vengeance on me

ns with long languor pacifide, sitie of my sufferance meeke, ne; for which I daylie long; hen my painful penance eeke. ard! weep, to make my under-

I hate what ever Nature made, kmanship no pleasure finde.

iven, because it doth withhold ve, and eke my love from me; h. because it is the mold e and fraile mortalitie; because to nought it flyes; e, because sighes of it be; because it teares supplyes. v, because it lendeth light gs, and not my love to see; nesse and the drery night, reed sad balefulnesse in mee; s, because, all times doo flye and may not stayed bee, ie post that passeth by. eares;

lowd plaints have duld mine for food withholds my dying; nine eyes are dimd with teares; , no sweet on earth is left; my flesh is numbd with feares: es from me are bereft.

1, and shun all womankinde; ise as I they wretched are; because I doo not finde

, because it will not last: ite, because it life doth marre; that is to come or past. rld, and all in it I hate, ngeth ever too and fro, ideth in one certaine state, lfast, round about doth goe seele in midst of miserie, reames of wretchednesse and woe, es, and living still does dye.

'So doo I live, so doo I daylie die, And pine away in selfe-consuming paine! Sith she that did my vitall powres supplie, And feeble spirits in their force maintaine, Is fetcht fro me, why seeke I to prolong My wearie daies in dolor and disdaine! Weep, Shepheard! weep, to make my under-

'Why doo I longer live in lifes despight, And doo not dye then in despight of death; Why doo I longer see this loathsome light but vaine, and quickly fade: And doo in darknesse not apringe my oreas, hem blowes the Northern winde, Sith all my sorrow should have end thereby, And cares finde quiet! Is it so uneath And doo in darknesse not abridge my breath, id them nought but griefe of To leave this life, or dolorous to dye?

such as thinke they long will 'To live I finde it deadly dolorous, For life drawes care, and care continuall woe; Therefore to dye must needes be joyeous, And wishfull thing this sad life to forgoe: But I must stay; I may it not amend, My Daphne hence departing bad me so She bad me stay, till she for me did send. 'Yet, whilest 1 in this wretched vale doo stay My wearie feete shall ever wandring be, That still I may be readic on my way When as her messenger doth come for me; Ne will I rest my feete for feeblenesse, Ne will I rest my limmes for frailtic, Ne will I rest mine eyes for heavinesse.

· But, as the mother of the Gods, that sought For faire Eurydice, her daughter deere, eake, my voyce is spent with Throughout the world, with wofull heavie thought;

So will I travell whilest I tarrie heere, Ne will I lodge, ne will I ever lin, Ne, when as drouping Titan draweth neere To loose his teeme, will I take up my Inne.

' Ne sleepe (the harbenger of wearie wights) Shall ever lodge upon mine ey-lids more; Ne shall with rest refresh my fainting sprights, Nor failing force to former strength restore: But I will wake an I sorrow all the night them, that wont to be their With Philumene, my fortune to deplore With Philumene, the partner of my plight.

And ever as I see the starres to fall, And under ground to goe to give them light Which dwell in darknes, I to minde will call How my fair Starre (that shinde on me so Fell sodainly and faded under ground: [bright) Since whose departure, day is turnd to night, And night without a Venus starre is found.

But soone as day doth shew his deanie for And calls foorth men unto their toy home trade, I will withdraw me to some darksome place, Or some deepe cave, or solitarie shade; There will I sigh, and sorrow all day long, And the huge burden of my cares unlade. Weep, Shepheard! weep, to make my undersong.

VII

Hencefoorth mine eyes shall never more be

Faire thing on earth, ne feed on false delight Of ought that framed is of mortall moulde, Sith that my fairest flower is faded quight; For all I see is vaine and transitorie, Ne will be helde in anie stedfast plight, But in a moment loose their grace and glorie.

'And ye fond men! on fortunes wheele that ride,

Or in ought under heaven repose assurance, Be it riches, beautie, or honors pride, Be sure that they shall have no long endurance, But ere ye be aware will flit away: [usance For nought of them is yours, but th' onely Of a small time, which none ascertaine may.

'And ye, true Lovers! whom desastrous

Hath farre exiled from your Ladies grace,
To mourne in sorrow and sad sufferance,
When ye doo heare me in that desert place
Lamenting lowde my Daphnes Elegie,
Help me to wayle my miserable case,
And when life parts vouchsafe to close mine eye.

And ye, more happie Lovers! which enjoy The presence of your dearest loves delight, When ye doo heare my sorrowfull annoy, Yet pittle me in your empassiond spright, And thinke that such mishap, as chaunst to

May happen unto the most happiest wight; For all mens states alike unstedfast be.

And ye, my fellow Shepheards! which do feed

Your carelesse flocks on hils and open plaines, With better fortune than did me succeed, Remember yet my undeserved paines; And, when ye heare that I am dead or slaine, Lament my lot, and tell your fellow-swaines That sad Alcyon dyde in lifes disdaine.

And ye, faire Damsels! Shepheards delights,

That with your loves do their rule hearls.
When as my hearse shall happen to y
sightes.

Vouchsafe to dock the same with Cypares And ever sprinckle brackish teares among In pitic of my undeserv'd distresse, The which, I, wretch, endured have this li

'And ye, poore Pilgrimes ! that with esti-

Wearie your selves in wandring desert at Till that you come where ye your to assoyle,

When passing by ye read these wofilling.
On my grave written, rue my Daphaes wand mourne for me that languish out dayes,

Cease, Shepheard! cease, and end thy

Thus when he ended had his heavist.
The heaviest plaint that ever I head as
His cheekes wext pale, and sprights be
faint,

As if agains he would have fallen to go Which when I saw, I (stepping to him Amooved him out of his stonie swomd, And gan him to recomfort as I might.

But he no waie recomforted would be, Nor suffer solace to approach him nie. But casting up a sdeinfull cie at me. That in his traunce I would not let his Did rend his haire, and beat his bluke As one disposed wilfullie to die. That I sore griev'd to see his wretchel

The when the pang was somewhat over And the outragious passion nigh appeal I him desirde sith dain was overcast. And darke night fast approached, to ly To turne aside unto my Cabinet. And staic with me, till he were better Of that strong stownd which him so so

But by no meanes I could him win the Ne longer him intreate with me to sta But without taking leave he fourth d With staggring pace and dismall looks as if that death he in the face had so Or hellish hags had met upon the wa But what of him became I cannot we

A Street

COLIN CLOUTS COME HOME AGAINE.

BY ED. SPENCER.

TO THE RIGHT WORTHY AND NOBLE KNIGHT

SIR WALTER RALEIGH.

PTAINE OF HER MAJESTIES GUARD, LORD WARDEIN OF THE STANNERIES, AND LIEUTENANT OF THE COUNTIE OF CORNWALL.

you may see that I am not alwaies yee thinke, though not greatly well, nor altogither undutifull, though sely officious, I make you present of sple pastorall, unworthie of your onceipt for the meanesse of the stile, eing with the truth in circumstance ter. The which I humbly beseech ccept in part of paiment of the infi-t in which I acknowledge my selfe

bounden unto you, for your singular favours and sundrie good turnes, shewed to me at my late being in England, and with your good countenance protect against the malice of evill mouthes, which are alwaies wide open to carpe at and misconstrue my simple meaning. I pray continually for your happinesse. From my house of Kilcolman, the 27. of December, 1591.

Yours very humbly. ED. SP.

COLIN CLOUTS COME HOME AGAINE.

ame) er Tityrus first sung his lay, sweet love, without rebuke or blame. his custome was) upon a day, ig his oaten pipe unto his peres heardswaines that did about him play: And all their flocks from feeding to refraine: the while, with greedie listfull eares, id astonisht at his curious skill, when as he piped had his fill, [sound. d him: and, sitting then around, hose groomes (a jolly groome was he, piped on an oaten reed, d this shepheard dearest in degree, lobbinol:) gan thus to him aread.
L, my liefe, my life, how great a losse the shepheards nation by thy lacke:

ıcke rd to sound as she was wont on hye, de us all so blessed and so blythe.

epheards boy (best knowen by that Whilest thou wast hence, all dead in dole did lie: sythe, The woods were heard to waile full many a

And all their birds with silence to complaine: The fields with faded flowers did seem to mourne

The running waters wept for thy returne, And all their fish with languor did lament: rtlesse deare, dismayd with thunders But now both woods and fields and floods revive,

Sith thou art come, their cause of meriment, That us, late dead, has made againe alive: But were it not too painfull to repeat The passed fortunes, which to thee befell In thy late voyage, we thee would entreat, Now at thy leisure them to us to tell." To whom the shepheard gently answered

oore swaine, of many, greatest crosse! thus; the thy Muse first since thy turning 'Hobbin, thou temptest me to that I covet: For of good passed newly to discus, By dubble usurie doth twice renew it And since I saw that Angels blessed eie,

Her worlds bright sun, her heavens fairest light, As water doth within his bancks appear My mind, full of my thoughts satistic, Doth feed on sweet contentment of that sight: Since that same day in nought I take delight, Ne feeling have in any earthly pleasure, But in remembrance of that glorious bright, My lifes sole blisse, my hearts eternall threa-

Wake then, my pipe; my sleepie Muse, Till I have told her praises lasting long: Hobbin desires, thou maist it not forsake; Harke then, ye jolly shepheards, to my song." With that they all gan throng about him

neare. With hungrie eares to heare his harmonie: The whiles their flocks, devoyd of dangers feare, Did round about them feed at libertie,

One day (quoth he) I sat (as was my trade) Under the foote of Mole, that mountaine hore, Keeping my sheepe amongst the cooly shade Of the greene alders by the Mullaes shore; There a straunge shephcard chaunst to find me out,

Whether allured with my pipes delight, Whose pleasing sound yshrilled far about, Or thither led by chaunce, I know not right : Whom when I asked from what place he came, And how he bight, himselfe he did ycleepe The Shepheard of the Ocean by name, And said he came far from the main-sea deepe, He, sitting me beside in that same shade, Provoked me to plaie some pleasant fit; And, when he heard the musicke which I made, He found himselfe full greatly pleasd at it: Yet, amuling my pipe, he tooke in hond My pipe, before that æmuled of many, And plaid thereon; (for well that skill he cond;) Himselfe as skilfull in that art as any. He pip'd, I sung; and, when he sung, I piped; By chaunge of turnes, each making other mery; Neither envying other, nor envied, So piped we, until we both were weary.

There interrupting him, a bonie swaine, That Cuddy hight, him thus atweene bespake: And, should it not thy readie course restraine, I would request thee, Colin, for my sake To tell what thou didst sing, when he did

plaie; For well I weene it worth recounting was, Whether it were some hymne, or morall laic, Or carol made to praise thy loved lasse, Nor of my love, nor of my lasse (quoth he,)

I then did sing, as then occasion fell: For love had me forlorne, forlorne of me, That made me in that desart chose to dwell. But of my river Bregogs love I soong, Which to the shiny Mulla he did beare And yet doth beare, and ever will, so long

' Of fellowship (said then that bony Record to us that lovely lay againe: The state whereof shall nought these Who all that Colin makes do rovet fain

' Heare then (quoth he) the tenor of m In sort as I it to that shepheard told: No leasing new, nor Grandams fable at But auncient truth confirm'd with creden 'Old father Mole, (Mole hight that a

tain gray
That walls the Northside of Armulla da
He had a daughter fresh as floure of Ma Which gave that name unto that pleasant Mulla, the daughter of old Mole, so his The Nimph, which of that water cos charge,

That, springing out of Mole, doth nm To Buttevant, where, spreading forth at It giveth name unto that auncient Citi Which Kilnemullah cleped is of old; Whose ragged ruines breed great m To travailers, which it from far behold. Full faine she lov'd, and was belov'd for Of her owne brother river, Bregog high So hight because of this deceitfull train Which he with Mulla wrought to wind But her old sire more carefull of her go And meaning her much better to profet Did thinke to match her with the nei

flood. Which Allo hight, Broad-water called And wrought so well with his continual And wrought so well with the daughter wo That he that river for his daughter wo The dowre agreed, the day assigned pl The place appointed where it should be Nath-lesse the Nymph her former likin For love will not be drawne, but n ledde;

And Bregog did so well her fancie well That her good will he got her first to But for her father, sitting still on his. Did warily still watch which way ab And eke from far observ'd, with jeals Which way his course the want bent;

Him to deceive, for all his watchfull a The wily lover did devise this slight: First into many parts his streame be That, whilest the one was watcht, might

Passe unespide to meete her by the And then, besides, those little stre

He under ground so closely did conv That of their passage doth appears n Till they into the Mullaes water slid So secretly did be his love enjoy

16-245.] COLIN CLOUTS COME HOME AGAINE.

1. ot so secr. t, but it was descride, told her father by a shepheards boy, wondrous wroth, for that so foule derest avenge did roll downe from his hill mightie stones, the which encomber might assage, and his water-courses spill. of a River, which he was of old none was made, but scattred all to nought; d lost emong those rocks into him rold, d lose his name: so deare his love he bought. Which having said, him Thestylis bespake: Let him to sea, and he shall see it there.
And yet as ghastly dreadfull, as it seems to see the of Colin selfe, that did it make.
Bold men, presuming life for gaine to see the second mow eke, of friendship I thee pray.
Dare tempt that gulf, and in those war at dittie did that other shepheard sing: I do covet most the same to heare, en use most to covet forreine thing That shall I eke (quoth he) to you declare: song was all a lamentable lay great unkindnesse, and of usage hard, Cynthia the Ladie of the Sea, ch from her presence faultlesse him debard. ad ever and anon, with singults rife, plaine, [breake, | t could great Cynthiaes sore displeasure ad move to take him to her grace againe. **t tell on f**urther, Colin, as befell suade. [well, When thus our pipes we both had wearied both he) and each an end of singing made • gan to cast great lyking to my lore. d great dislyking to my lucklesse lot, it banisht had my selfe, like wight forlore. o that waste, where I was quite forgot. [full mee, eet for man, in whom was ought regardid wend with him, his Cynthia to see; hose grace was great, and bounty most rewardfull. ides her peerlesse skill in making well,

id all the ornaments of wondrous wit, ch as all womankynd did far excell;

thas the world admyr'd, and praised it:

what with hope of good, and hate of ill, Ime perswaded forth with him to fare.

wht tooke I with me, but mine outen quill: needments else need shepheard to pre-

So to the sea we came; the sea, that is A world of waters heaped up on hie Rolling like mountaines in wide wildernesse, Horrible, hideous, roaring with hoarse crie, 'And is the sea (quoth Coridon) so fearfull?' ' Fearful much more (quoth he) then hart can fear: [gaping direfull Thousand wyld beasts with deep mouthes Therin stil wait poore passengers to teare Who life doth losth, and longs death to behold. Before he die, alreadie dead with feare, [cold, And yet would live with heart halfe stonic And yet as ghastly dreadfull, as it seemes, Bold men, presuming life for gaine to sell, Dare tempt that gulf, and in those wandring stremes [hell. Seck waies unknowne, waies leading down to For, as we stood there waiting on the strond, Behold! an huge great vessell to us came, Dauncing upon the waters back to lond, As if it scornd the daunger of the same: Yet was it but a wooden frame and fraile, Glewed togither with some subtile matter. Yet had it armes and wings, and head and Beryed out, to make his undersong; taile,

limy loves queene, and goddesse of my life. And life to move it selfe upon the water,

be shall me pittie, when thou doest me Strange thing! how bold and swift the monster was,

[raine,] That neither car'd for wynd, nor Lail, nor Then gan a gentle bonylasse to speake, That neither car'd for wynd, nor Lail, nor Marin hight; 'Right well be sure did Nor swelling waves, but thorough them did passe So proudly, that she made them roare againe, The same aboord us gently did receave And without harme us farre away did beare. pist him and thee, that thee did hence dis- So farre that land, our mother, us did leave, And nought but sea and heaven to us appeare. Then hardesse quite, and full of inward feare, That shepheard I besought to me to tell, Under what skie, or in what world we were, In which I saw no living people dwell. Who, me recomforting all that he might, Told me that that same was the Regiment m which to leave, thenceforth he counseld Of a great shepheardesse, that Cynthia hight, His liege, his Ladie, and his lifes Regent. 'If then (quoth I) a shepheardesse she bee Where be the flockes and heards, which she doth keep? And where may I the hills and pastures see, On which she useth for to feed her sheepe?

'These be the hills (quoth he) the surges

On which faire Cynthia her heards doth feed: Her heards be thousand fishes with their frie,

Of them the shepheard which hath charge in

Is Triton, blowing loud his wreathed home:

Which in the bosome of the billowes breed.

hie,

chief.

Both h To wash faire Cynthiaes sheep, when they be shorne, And fold them up, when they have made an (Quoth be) Those be the shepheards which my Cynthia For there a At sea, beside a thousand moe at land: [serve Conspire in No wayling For land and sea my Cynthia doth deserve To have in her commandement at hand.' No bloodie Thereat I wondred much, till, wondring No griesly No nightly And more, at length we land far off descryde: The shephe Which sight much gladed me; for much afore On hills and I feard, least land we never should have eyde: Thereto our ship her course directly bent, As if the way she perfectly had knowne. No ravenou Nor outlaw We Lunday passe; by that same name is ment There learn An island, which the first to west was showne. And Poets For each of the sease of the se The first, to which we nigh approched, was 'Foorth o An high headland thrust far into the sea, passe, (Quoth he) Like to an horne, whereof the name it has, Yet seemed to be a goodly pleasant lea: guvde There did a loftie mount at first us greet, Which did a stately heape of stones upreare, Untill that v Whose glori-

Much greater then that frame, which us did Such greatue

I found much

That seemd amid the surges for to fleet,

COLIN CLOUTS COME HOME AGAINE. 47.]

553

n do I, base shepheard, bold and nd, the things so sacred to prophane? e of the heavens in shape humane.'
nat Alexis broke his tale asunder, By wondring at thy Cynthiaes ise. selfe thou mak'st us more to wonder, praising doest thy selfe upraise heare what grace she shewed thee, that shepheard strange thy cause ranced,'

hepheard of the Ocean (quoth he) Goddesse grace me first enhanced, ine oaten pipe enclin'd her eare,

thenceforth therein gan také deht; sir'd at timely houres to heare, my notes but rude and roughly

ht; measure of her owne great mynd. that country shephcard ought could

great a shepheardesse her selfe, so many shepheards in her fee, thee sing, a simple silly Elfe? ie shepheards which do serve her sie.

· list not their mery pipes applie? ir pipes untunable and craesie, cannot her honour worthylie? ay (said Colin) neither so, nor so: shepheards be not under skie, r hable, when they list to blow es aloud, her name to gloritie. good Harpalus, now woxen aged Il service of faire Cynthia: is Corydon though meanly waged, st wit of most I know this day. : is sad Alcyon bent to mourne, t to frame an everlasting dittie entle spright for Daphnes death

tie. ive boy, pursue that brave conceipt ecte Eglantine of Meriflure; y notes unto their wonted height,

thy Muse and mates to mirth allure. is Palin worthic of great praise, nvie at my rustick quill:

: is pleasing Alcon, could he raise from laies to matter of more skill. And there is old Palemon free from spight Whose carefull pipe may make the hearer rew:

Yet he himselfe may rewed be more right, That sung so long untill quite hoarse he grew. And there is Alabaster throughly taught In all this skill, though knowen yet to few Yet, were he knowne to Cynthia as he ought. His Eliseïs would be redde anew. Who lives that can match that heroick song, Which he hath of that mightie Princesse

made ?

O dreaded Dread, do not thy selfe that wrong, To let thy fame lie so in hidden shade: But call it forth, O call him forth to thee, To end thy glorie which he hath begun: That, when he finisht hath as it should be, No braver Poeme can be under Sun. Nor Po nor Tyburs swans so much renowned, Nor all the brood of Greece so highly praised, Can match that Muse when it with bayes is crowned,

drous worth, she mott my simple And to the pitch of her perfection raised. [fynd And there is a new shepheard late up sprong, The which doth all afore him far surpasse; that country shephcard ought count in e which doth an alore him far surpasse; arkening to, emongst the learned Appearing well in that well tuned song, ong?

[shee Which late he sung unto a scornfull lasse.

(said Alexis then) what needeth Yet doth his trembling Muse but lowly flie, As daring not too rashly mount on hight, And doth her tender plumes as yet but trie In loves soft laies and looser thoughts delight. Then rouze thy feathers quickly, Daniell, And to what course thou please thy selfe advance:

> But most, me seemes, thy accent will excell In Tragick plaints and passionate mischance. And there that Shepheard of the Ocean is That spends his wit in loves consuming smart:

Full sweetly tempred is that Muse of his, That can empierce a Princes mightie hart. There also is (ah no, he is not now!) But since I said he is, he quite is gone, Amyntas quite is gone, and lies full low, Having his Amaryllis left to mone. Helpe, O ye shepheards, helpe ye all in this, Helpe Amaryllis this her losse to mourne: h tourn

Her losse is yours, your losse Amyntas is,
ves of love to endlesse plaints of Amyntas, floure of shepheards pride forlorne: He whilest he lived was the noblest swaine, That ever piped in an oaten quill: Both did he other, which could pipe, maintaine,

And eke could pipe himselfe with passing And there, though last not least, is Action, A gentler shepheard may no where be found: Whose Muse, full of high thoughts invention, Doth like himselfe Heroically sound.

Or art ingrataful to each gentle mayd,
That none of all their due deserts resoundest.'
'Ah far be it (quoth Colin Clout) fro me,
That I of gentle Mayds should ill deserve! Infleming She there Yet there About the For that my selfe I do professe to be Vassall to one, whom all my dayes I serve; Now made Ne lesse pi The beame of beautie sparkled from above, Necera ours The floure of vertue and pure chastitie, For of the The blossome of sweet joy and perfect love, For high de The pearle of peerlesse grace and modestie:
To her my thoughts I daily dedicate,
To her my heart I nightly martyrize:
To her my love I lowly do prostrate, She is the Adorned w She is the t Belov'd of To her my life I wholly sacrifice: Ne les e pr My thought, my heart, my love, my life is shee, Though no And I hers ever onely, ever one: One ever I all vowed hers to bee, Whom vers Hath prais' One ever I, and others never none.' [Mayd, Ne lesse pr Then thus Melissa said; 'Thrise happie The honor Whom thou doest so enforce to deitie: [made Of which I That woods, and hills, and valleyes thou hast And most t Her name to eccho unto heaven hie. Phyllie, Ch. But say, who else vouchsafed thee of grace?' Phyllis, the 'They all (quoth he) me graced goodly well, That all I praise; but in the highest place, The next to But th' you Urania, sister unto Astrofell, Phyllis, the In whose brave mynd, as in a golden cofer, Faire sprea All heavenly gifts and riches locked are : delig More rich then pearles of Ynde, or gold of Opher, That, with And in her sex more wonderfull and rare. Re lesse praise-worthie I Thean a read, [dight] But sweet (

Whose goodly beames though they be overr- Of peerlesse

COLIN CLOUTS COME HOME AGAINE.

ride and primrose of the rest,
re Maker selfe to be admired;
goodly beacon high addrest,
h sparks of hevenlie beautic fired.
llis, whether fortunate
ortunate may I aread,
is from Cupids yoke by fate,
h she doth new bands adventure
d;—
what ever thou hast heard to be
nat praysd diversly apart,
maist them all assembled see,
p in the threasure of her hart.
e worthie, gentle Flavia,

p in the threasure of her hart.

w worthie, gentle Flavia,
ste life and vertue I externe:
e worthie, curteous Candida,
love and loyaltie I deeme.
many mo that Cynthia serve,
Nymphs, and high to be com-

ed:
should praise as they deserve,
uld faile me ere I halfe had ended:
closure of a thankfull mynd,
est to hold eternally [shrynd,

teous deeds and noble favours course them to indignifie, ; said, Aglaura him bespake: worthie were those goodly favours thee, that so of them doest make,

quitest with thy thankfull labours, it Cynthiaes goodnesse, and high torie which thou hast begunne.' h (quoth he) it is in such a case in, then know how to have donne.

ift, and everie goodly meed, n me bestowd, demaunds a day; day, in which she did a deed, a yeare it duly to display. [ing, rere like a streame of honny fleet-loth softly trickle from the hive, elt the hearrs heart unweeting, make the dead againe alive.

were like great clusters of ripe es, the braunches of the fruitfull vine; ill into each mouth that gapes,

ill into each mouth that gapes, same with store of timely wine. With Cynthia and all her noble crew; [grace Why didst thou ever leave that happie place, In which such wealth might unto thee accrew; [East, And back returnedst to this barrein soyle,

ng through the windowes of the the fleecie cattell have begun erled grasse to make their feast. are like the fume of Franckincence, a golden Censer forth doth rise, ng forth sweet odours mounts fro ce

lobes up to the vauted skies.

There she beholds, with high aspiring thought, The cradle of her owne creation,

555

Emongst the seats of Angels heavenly wrought Much like an Angell in all forme and fashion.
'Colin, (said Cuddy then) thou hast forgot Thy selfe, me seemes, too much, to mount so

hie:
Such loftie flight base shepheard seemeth not.
From flocks and fields, to angels and to skie.

From flocks and fields, to angels and to skie.'

'True (answered he) but her great excellence
Lifts me above the measure of my might:
That, being fild with furious insolence,
I feele my selfe like one yrapt in spright.

I feele my selfe like one yrapt in spright. For when I thinke of her, as oft I ought, Then want I words to speake it fitly forth: And, when I speake of her what I have

And, when I speake of her what I have thought, I cannot thinke according to her worth:

Yet will I thinke of her, yet will I speake, So long as life my limbs doth hold together; And, when as death these vitall bands shall breake.

breake,
Her name recorded I will leave for ever.
Her name in every tree I will endosse, [grow:
That, as the trees do grow, her name may
And in the ground each where will it engrosse,

And in the ground each where will it engrosse, And fill with stones, that all men may it know. The speaking woods, and murmuring waters fall.

Her name He teach in knowen terms to frame:
And eke my lambs, when for their dams they
He teach to call for Cynthia by name. [call,
And, long while after I am dead and rotten,

And, long while after I am dead and rotten, Amongst the shepheards daughters dancing rownd, My layes made of her shall not be forgotten,

But sume by them with flowry gyrlondscrownd. And ye, who so ye be, that still survive, When as ye heare her memory renewed, Be witnesse of her bountie here alive, [shewed.

Which she to Colin her poore shepheard Much was the whole assembly of those heards

Moov'd at his speech, so feelingly he spake: And stood awhile astonisht at his words, Till Thestylis at last their silence brake, Saving: 'Why Colin, since thou foundst such With Cynthia and all her noble crew; [grace Why didst thou ever leave that happie place, In which such wealth might unto thee accrew;

ig through the windowes of the the fleecie cattell have begun erled grasse to make their feast.

Most wretched he, that is and cannot tell.'
'Happie indeed (said Colin) I him hold,
That may that blessed presence still enjoy,

Of fortune and of envy uncomptrold, Which still are wont most happie states t'annoy

But I, by that which little while I prooved, Some part of those enormities did see, The which in Court continually hooved

And followd those which happie seemd to bee. Therefore I, silly man, whose former dayes Had in rude fields bene altogether spent, Durst not adventure such unknowen waves.

Nor trust the guile of fortunes blandishment;

But rather chose back to my sheep to tourne, Whose utmost hardnesse I before had tryde, Then, having learnd repentance late, to mourne

scryde.' [spight Their plaine attire such glorious 'Shepheard, (said Thestylis) it seemes of Disdaines so much, that none t

Thou speakest thus gainst their felicitie, Which thou enviest, rather then of right

'Cause have I none (quoth he) of cancred To quite them ill, that me demeand so well: But selfe-regard of private good or ill

Moves me of each, so as I found, to tell [wit, And eke to warne yong shepheards wandring As ever else in Princes Court th Which, through report of that lives painted Of which among you many yet! Abandon quiet home to seeke for it, [blisse, Whose names I cannot readily n

And leave their lambes to losse, misled amisse. For, sooth to say, it is no sort of life, For shepheard fit to lead in that same place,

Where each one seeks with malice, and with The ledden of straunge language strife. To thrust downe other into foule disgrace, Himselfe to raise: and he doth soonest rise

That best can handle his deceitfull wit In subtil shifts, and finest sleights devise, Either by slaundring his well-deemed name, Through leasings lewd, and fained forgerie; Or else by breeding him some blot of blame,

By creeping close into his secrecie; To which him needs a guilefull hollow hart, Masked with faire dissembling curtesie, A filed toung, furnisht with tearmes of art, No art of schoole, but Courtiers schoolery,

For arts of schoole have there small countenance. Counted but toyes to busic vdle braines;

And there professours find small maintenance, But to be instruments of others gaines. Ne is there place for any gentle wit, Unlesse to please it selfe it can applie;

But shouldred is, or out of doore quite shit, As base, or blunt, unmeet for melodic. For each mans worth is measured by his weed, As harts by hornes, or asses by their eares:

Yet asses been not all whose cares exceed, Yet asses been not all whose cares exceen,
Noryet all harts that homes the highest beares:
Whose service high to basely th
For highest lookes have not the highest mynd,
That Cupid selfe of them asham
Nor haughtie words most full of highest had, mustring all his men in V.

Denies them quite for servitors

But are like bladders blowen up That being prickt do vanish into

Even such is all their vaunted var Nought else but smoke, and f Such is their glorie that in simple

Seeme greatest, when their garms So they themselves for praise of f And all their wealth for painting With price whereof they buy a g And purchace highest rowmes i

Whiles single Truth and simple H Emongst those wretches which I there de- Do wander up and downe despys

call. 'Ah! Colin, (then said Hobbin That ought in them blameworthie thou doest Which thou imputest, is too gens spie.'

Nor honest mynd might there be For well I wot, sith I my wife w Towait on Lobbin, (Lobbin wellt) Full many worthie ones then wa

Those that poore Sutors papers d And those that skill of medicine And those that do to Cynthia ex For Cynthia doth in sciences als And gives to their professors stip Therefore unjustly thou doest w

For that which thou mislikedst 'Blame is (quoth he) more generall,
Then that which private errours For well I wot, that there amon. Full many persons of right wort

Both for report of spotlesse hone And for profession of all learned Whose praise hereby no whit in Though blame do light on thos bee; For all the rest do most-what fa And yet their owne misfaring w For either they be puffed up wit

Or fraught with envie that their Or they their dayes to ydleness: Or drownded lie in pleasures wa In which like Moldwarps nous! lurke, Unmindfull of chiefe parts of m. And do themselves, for want of

Vaine votaries of laesie Love pro

I his sweet lore professed there? e he was our God alone, ond in fields and forests here: juoth he) Love most aboundeth

alls and windows there are writ, e, and love, and love my deare, talke and studie is of it. : doth brave or valiant seeme,

nimselfe doth ought esteeme, wim in love up to the cares. love, and of his sacred lere, l be) all otherwise devise,

sue and serve all otherwise: d speeches, and licentious deeds, mysteries they do prophane, ydle name to other needs. iplement for courting vaine.

do not serve as they professe, m serve to them for sordid uses: ad Lord, that doest liege hearts

selfe on them for their abuses. e shepheards whether rightly so, our rudenesse into errour led, igion how we rashly go t God, that is so greatly dred; greatest of the Gods we deeme, ut Syre or couples of one kynd; elfe doth solv couples seeme,

and female through commixture spotlesse Cupid forth she brought, ;ardens of Adonis nurst: ving he his owne perfection

ŗht, was of all the Gods the first bow and shafts of gold and lead, fell and puissant he grew, imselfe his powre began to dread, up to heaven, him godded new. e he shootes his arrowes every

ld, at randon as he will. men, his wretched vassals here, elfe us pleaseth save or spill. or hip, so we him adore e hearts to heaven uplifted hie, loves he may us evermore I of their grace us dignifie: shephcard, ne yet shepheards

eve then (said Corylas) once What ever feeds in forest or in field, That dare with evil deed or leasing vaine Blaspheme his powre, or termes unworthie yield. 'Shepheard, it seemes that some celestiall

Of Love (quoth Cuddy) is breath'd into thy brest. That powreth forth these oracles so sage Of that high powre, wherewith thou art possest.

But never wist I till this present day, some gay Mistresse badge he Albe of love I alwayes humbly decmed, That he was such an one as thou doest say, And so religiously to be esteemed. Well may it seeme, by this thy deep insight, That of that God the Priest thou shouldest

bee, oore shepheards are accustomd So well thou wot'st the mysterie of his might, As if his godhead thou didst present see. 'Of loves perfection perfectly to speake,

Or of his nature rightly to define, Indeed (said Colin) passeth reasons reach, And needs his priest t' expresse his powre

divine. For long before the world he was ybore, And bred above in Venus bosome deare: For by his powre the world was made of yore, And all that therein wondrous doth appeare.

For how should else things so far from attone, And so great enemies as of them bee, Be ever drawne together into one And taught in such accordance to agree? Through him the cold began to cover heat,

And water fire; the light to mount on hie, And th' heavie downe to peize; the hungry And voydnesse to seeke full satietie. [t' eat. [t'eat, So, being former foes, they wexed friends, And gan by litle learne to love each other:

So, being knit, they brought forth other kynds Out of the fruitfull wombe of their great mother. Then first gan heaven out of darknesse dread For to appeare, and brought forth chearfull day:

Next gan the earth to shew her naked head, Out of deep waters which her drownd alway: And, shortly after, everic living wight Crept forth like wormes out of her slimie

nature Soone as on them the Suns life-giving-light Had powred kindly heat and formall feature, Thenceforth they gan each one his like to love, And like himselfe desire for to beget : The Lyon chose his mate, the Turtle Dove Her deare, the Dolphin his owne Dolphinet; But man, that had the sparke of reasons might More then the rest to rule his passion,

Chose for his love the fairest in his sight Like as himselfe was fairest by creation: For beautie is the bayt which with delight Doth man allure for to enlarge his kynd; Beautie, the burning lamp of heavens light, Darting her beames into each feeble mynd:

Against whose powre, nor God nor man can From heaven, though graft in frai

fynd Defence, ne ward the daunger of the wound; But, being hurt, seeke to be medicynd Of her that first did stir that mortall stownd.

Then do they cry and call to love apace, With praiers lowd importuning the skie, Whence he them heares; and, when he list Till he recanted had his wicked rit

And rules the creatures by his powrfull saw: All being made the vassalls of his might,

Through secret sence which thereto doth them draw. Thus ought all lovers of their lord to deeme,

And with chaste heart to honor him alway: But who so else doth otherwise esteeme, Are outlawes, and his lore do disobay. For their desire is base, and doth not merit The name of love, but of disloyall lust: Ne mongst true lovers they shall place inherit, But as Exuls out of his court be thrust.

So having said, Melissa spake at will; 'Colin, thou now full deeply hast divynd Of Love and beautie; and, with wondrous skill, Hast Cupid selfe depainted in his kynd, To thee are all true lovers greatly bound That doest their cause so mightily defend: But most, all wemen are thy debtors found, That doest their bountie still so much com-

mend. 'That ill (said Hobbinol) they him requite, For having loved ever one most deare: He is repayd with scorne and foule despite That yrkes each gentle heart which it doth

heare. 'Indeed (said Lucid) I have often heard Faire Rosalind of divers fowly blamed For being to that swaine too cruell hard That her bright glorie else hath much defamed. And after him uprose eke all the But who can tell what cause had that faire All loth to part, but that the gloo

Or who with blame can justly her upbrayd

For loving not? for who can love And, sooth to say, it is foolhardie Rashly to wyten creatures so divi nine.

And well I wote, that oft I heard How one, that fairest Helene did: Through judgement of the goo ywrokeu, Lost both his eyes and so remaynd

shew grace,

Beware therefore, ye groomes. I re

Color is I and of all the world by right,

Beware therefore, ye groomes. I re

How rashly blame of Rosalind ye

'Ah! shepheards, (then said C weet.

How great a guilt upon your head To make so bold a doome, with wo Of things celestiall which we neve For she is not like as the other cre-Of shepheards daughters which er But of divine regard and heavenly Excelling all that ever ye did see. Not then to her that scorned thing But to my selfe the blame that los So hie her thoughts as she her place,

And loath each lowly thing with l Yet so much grace let her vouches To simple swaine, sith her I may 1 Yet that I may her honour parave And praise her worth, though far m Such graces hall be some guerdon for And long affliction which I have e Such grace sometimes shall give n liere

And ease of paine which cannot be And ye, my fellow shepheards, wh And heare the languors of my too Unto the world for ever witnesse be. That hers I die, nought to the wor This simple trophe of her great cor

So, having ended, he from grout To use him so that used her so well; [Mayd Warnd them to draw their bleating rest.

ASTROPHEL

A PASTORALL ELEGIE.

TFON THE DEATH OF THE MOST NOBLE AND VALOROUS KNIGHT.

SIR PHILIP SIDNEY.

DEDICATED TO THE MOST BEAUTIFULL AND VERTUOUS LADIE.

THE COUNTESS OF ESSEX.

s, that wont, on pipes of oaten To you whose softened hearts it may empierse [smart; With dolours dart for death of Astrophel.

> plaine your loves concealed To you I sing and to none other wight,

ur piteous layes have learnd to For well I wot my rymes bene rudely dight.

in a countrey lasses hart gentle shepheards, to my song, ny dolefull plaint your plaints

I sing this mournfull verse,

Yet as they been, if any nycer wit Shall hap to heare, or covet them to read: Thinke he, that such are for such ones most fit,

Made not to please the living but the dead. And if in him found pity ever place, Ist verse that ever man heard tell: Let him be moov'd to pity such a case,

ASTROPHEL.

repheard borne in Arcady, see that ever shepheard bore, assie bancks of Hæmony sheep, his litle stock and store: he kept them day and night, ds; and Astrophel he hight. phel, the pride of shepheards

shel, the rusticke lasses love: ill the pastors of his daies, emly shepheard might behove. onely fayling of the best, not so happie as the rest.

time that first the Nymph his raine, excelling far each other, pe, like her that did him breed, As Somers larke that with her song doth greet ast in goodnesse and in grace, aire wox both in mynd and face.

Which daily more and more he did augment. With gentle usuage and demeanure myld: That all mens hearts with secret ravishment He stole away, and weetingly beguyld. Ne spight it selfe, that all good things doth spill.

Found ought in him, that she could say was ill.

His sports were faire, his joyance innocent, Sweet without sowre, and honny without gall: And he himselfe seemed made for meriment, Merily masking both in bowre and hall. There was no pleasure nor delightfull play, When Astrophel so ever was away.

feed; For he could pipe, and daunce, and caroll sweet, I bring, and taught her lambs to Emongst the shepheards in their shearing

The dawning day forth comming from the East.

And layes of love he also could compose: Thrise happie she, whom he to praise chose.

Full many Maydens often did him woo, Them to vouchsafe emongst his rimes to name, Or make for them as he was wont to doo For her that did his heart with love inflame For which they promised to dight for him Gay chapelets of flowers and gyrlonds trim,

And many a Nymph both of the wood and brooke,

Soone as his oaten pipe began to shrill, Both christall wells and shadie groves forsooke, To heare the charmes of his enchanting skill; And brought him presents, flowers if it were prime, Or mellow fruit if it were harvest time,

But he for none of them did care a whit,

Yet woodgods for them often sighed sore : Ne for their gifts unworthic of his wit, Yet not unworthic of the countries store. For one alone he cared, for one he sigh't, His lifes desire, and his deare loves delight.

Stella the faire, the fairest star in skie, As faire as Venus or the fairest faire, (A fairer star saw never living eie,) Shot her sharp pointed beames through purest aire.

Her he did love, her he alone did honor, Widewounds emongst them m. His thoughts, his rimes, his songs were all Now with his sharp hore-spea upon her.

To her he vowd the service of his daies, On her he spent the riches of his wit: For her he made hymnes of immortall praise, Of onely her he sung, he thought, he writ. Her, and but her, of love he worthie deemed; For all the rest but litle he esteemed.

Ne her with ydle words alone he wowed, And verses vaine, (yet verses are not vaine,) But with brave deeds to her sole service vowed, And bold atchievements her did entertaine, For both in deeds and words he nourtred was, Both wise and hardie, (too hardie, alas!)

In wrestling nimble, and in renning swift, In shooting steddie, and in swimming strong: Well made to strike, to throw, to leape, to lift,

And all the sports that shepheards are emong. In every one he vanquisht every one, He vanquisht all, and vanquisht was of none.

Besides, in hunting such felicitie, Or rather infelicitie, he found, That every field and forest far away

He sought, where salvage beasts do most abound.

No beast so salvage but he or No chace so hard, but he the Such skill, matcht with such o

Did prick him foorth with praise To seek abroad, of daunger no His mistresse name, and his

What needeth perill to be son Since round about us it doth It fortuned as he that perilon

In forreine soyle pursued far Into a forest wide and waste ! Where store he heard to be of So wide a forest and so waste Nor famous Ardeyu, nor fowl

There his welwoven toyles, ar He laid the brutish nation to So well he wrought with pr paines, That he of them great troups of

Full happie man (misweening So rich a spoile within his po-Eftsoones, all heedlesse of his Full greedily into the heard h To slaughter them, and worke Least that his toyle should of

brust,

blade. His care was all how he them That none might scape, (so par

Ill mynd so much to mynd an As to become unmyndfull of h But pardon that unto the eme That from himselfe to them wi

So as he rag'd emongst that b A cruell beast of most accurse Upon him turnd, (despeyre And, with fell tooth accustom Launched his thigh with so mis That it both bone and muscles So deadly was the dint and de

And so huge streames of blo That he endured not the direfu But on the cold deare earth him The whiles the captive heard h And, having none to let, to we

Ah! where were ye this while peares.

To whom alive was nought so And ye favre Mayds, the mate Which in his grace did boast

The Party

und that wondrously did bleed!

boy, the shape of drery head, ple of mans suddein end: h but thou shalt be dead, aynd, of foe or frend: s nigh, thine eylids up to close, lips like faded leaves of rose.

heards, sewing of the chace, rest raunged on a day. une came unto the place, ucklesse boy yet bleeding lay; y, and yet would still have bled iap those shepheards thether led.

wound, (too late to stop it was!) rmes then softly did him reare: d) unto his loved lasse, c, him dolefully did beare. seare that ever man did see, L but dearest unto mee!

saw her love in such a plight, blood and filthie gore deformed. be with flowers and gyrlonds

favours dearly well adorned; airest face that eye mote see, id deforme, like him to bee.

ks that shone so bright and long, mes in fairest somers day, e, and with outragious wrong heeks the roses rent away; brest, the threasury of joy reof, and filled with annoy.

e, impictured with death. with teares, and dried oft: t kisses suckt the wasting breath like lilies pale and soft : ld to him, who answerd nought, his lookes did tell his thought.

: impatient regret, one the which she for him made, tell, nor any forth can set, heart like sorrow did invade. aine his vitall powres had spent, e her wearie lodge forwent.

re ye, when he of you had need, Which when she saw, she staied not a whit, But after him did make untimely haste: Forth-with her ghost out of her corps did flit, And followed her make like turtle chaste To prove that death their hearts cannot divide. Which living were in love so firmly tide.

> The gods, which all things see, this same beheld. And, pittying this paire of lovers trew, Transformed them, there lying on the field, Into one flowre that is both red and blew; It first growes red, and then to blew doth fade,

Like Astrophel, which thereinto was made.

And in the midst thereof a star appeares, As fairly formd as any star in skyes; Resembling Stella in her freshest yeares. Forth darting beames of beautie from her eyes: And all the day it standeth full of deow Which is the teares, that from her eyes did flow.

That hearbe of some Starlight is cald by name. Of others Penthia, though not so well: But thou, where ever thou doest finde the same, From this day forth do call it Astrophel: And, when so ever thou it up doest take, Do pluck it softly for that shepheards sake.

Hereof when tydings far abroad did passe, The shepheards all which loved him full deare, And sure full deare of all he loved was Did thether flock to see what they did heare. And when that pitteous spectacle they vewed, The same with bitter teares they all bedewed.

And every one did make exceeding mone, With inward anguish and great griefe opprest: And every one did weep and waile, and mone, And meanes deviz'd to shew his sorrow best. That from that houre, since first on grassie greene seen.

Shepheards kept sheep, was not like mourning But first his sister that Clorinda hight, The gentlest shephcardesse that lives this day, And most resembling both in shape and spright

Her brother deare, began this dolefull lay. Which, least I marre the sweetnesse of the vearse,

In sort as she it sung I will rehearse.

THE DOLEFULL LAT :

seems supposed to have here so the soft of the control of Fouriers.

Institute See Proc. (Section)

.

of Law onse complaints. sev impatient griefe! a my inward paine, acry and reliefe! accepts powered show? and the dwell below?

is a second a nathors were, disco Lagrens here. . they be seen cardian comes no spill?

. . m warne car beec. . Vac. ... c. certert

in their . acking and seemd

٠.. . .,

State Charles

The norm of all the appears? y · •

Noveral of the conservation of the land of the conservation of the And their lines of will the Earlies Nesses (22 to) (Telepher #1 in H #

Who ever Table 5, the period of the Bar Ne ever reality of the second of the Bar United year entire Table 5, 2007 Voir the Trades second of the Second

Your mer - ----Death, the box for the land of the Hath robotics with the Hath robotics with the Hath robotics with the land of th Hath robe of y
Hath robe of y
Hath robe of y
Hath robe of y
Joy of the worth Address

hee! Shepheards, logonout live again-

Oh Death! their hast read sub fide

Tell us at least, what host it, a with What is become of him when flowed Is but the shadow of his licenesse 20 Scarse like the shadow of that will Nought like, but that he like a pas.

But that immortall spirit, which was With all the dowries of celestiall gta By soveraine choyce from the heven wheet,

And burnily derived from Angels to O' what is now of it become at a As medican so divine a thing bes Volume: it is not dead, no can it do

By: lives for aic, in blisfull Paradisc Worse like a new borne babe at set to to be fellies wru t in tenter was And compast all about wirkers s Ve i danitie violets from 1 acc

There thousand birds, all of coasti-I cam do sweetly caroll day a of Acid with straumle notes, or her stool.

is 1.1 ham asleep in Angelick delta

Il beauties, which no eye may see. a sees, and takes exceeding pleasure rine aspects, appearing plaine, ng love in him above all measure: still joyous, never feeling paine: t so goodly forme he there doth see, enjoy from jealous rancor free

h he in everlasting blis, t never fearing more to die: g harme from any foes of his, salvage beasts more crueltie. we here, wretches, waile his private

I vaine vowes do often call him back. s leave thee here thus to lament!

in sweet dreame to him presented Not thee that doest thy heavens joy inherit, But our owne selves that here in dole are drent Thus do we weep and waile, and wear our eies.

Mourning, in others, our own miseries.

WHICH when she ended had, another swaine Of gentle wit and daintie sweet device, Whom Astrophel full deare did entertaine, Whilest here he liv'd, and held in passing price, Hight Thestylis, began his mournfull tourne: And made the Muses in his song to mourne.

And after him full many other moe, As everie one in order lov'd him best, Gan dight themselves t' expresse their inward woe

ou there, still happie, happie spirit, With dolefull layes unto the time addrest : The which I here in order will rehearse As fittest flowres to deck his mournfull hearse,

THE MOURNING MUSE OF THESTYLIS.

the succeeding Poem are supposed to have been written by Lodowick Bryskett.)

, ye Nymphes, come forth, forsake	F
watry bowres, [ment:	
ur mossy caves, and help me to la-	В
tune my dolefull notes to gurgling	
id [teares of ours	т
tumbling streames: Come, let salt	Ē
his waters fresh. O come, let one	•
ent [deadly wound]	Δ
mourne with wailfull plaints the	î
Il clap hath made, decreed by higher	
res; [vrent	
den in which they have from us	r.
day in which they have from us	Ľ
st plant that might from East to	"
it be found.	
ourn, great Philips fall, mourn we	1
wofull end, [from the tree, itefull Death hath pluct untimely	
itefull Death hath pluct untimely	Ą
t his yeares in flowre did promise	
thie frute. [knight defend?	
iful Mars, why didst thou not thy	
hfull mood, what fault of ours, hath	H
'ed thee	
shining light to leave us destitute?	11
benigne aspect sometime didst us	
old, [old,	
in Britons valour tane delight of	
thy presence oft vouchsaft to attri-	
1	ľ
•	

ame and renowme to us for glorious martiall deeds. ut now thy ireful bemes have chill'd our

harts with cold; [our land: hou hast estrang'd thy self, and deignest not arre off to others now thy favour honour breeds, [clime, (I feare;) nd high disdaine doth cause thee shun our or hadst thou not bene wroth, or that time

neare at hand. [England made; hou wouldst have heard the cry that woful ke Zelands piteous plaints, and Hollands toren heare, [mynd: ould haply have appeared thy divine angry

hou shouldst have seen the trees refuse to yeeld their shade, nd wailing to let fall the honor of their head; nd birds in mournfull tunes lamenting in

their kinde. p from his tombe the mightie Corineus rose. ho, cursing oft the fates that this mishap had bred, [unkinde, lis hoary locks he tare, calling the heavens

he Thames was heard to roare, the Seyne and eke the Mose, and eke the Mose, [chance did rue, he Schald, the Danow selfe, this great misith torment and with grief: their fountains pure and cleere

002

Were troubled, and with swelling flouds de- Which languisheth being shred by clar'd their woes, clar'd their woes,
Muses comfortles, the Nymphs with A trembling chilly cold ran th paled hue, With cies brimfull of teures to se and neers, The Silvan Gods likewise, came running farre howre, And all with teares bedeawd, and eyes cast Whose blustring sighes at first their up on hie; to crie. Next, murmuring ensude; at las O help, O help, ye Gods, they ghastly gan O chaunge the cruell fate of this so rare a forbesre Plaine outeries, all against the b Depriv'd us of a spright so per Tout his age. wight, And graunt that natures course may measure TATE. The beasts their foode forsooke, and, trembling The sun his light som beames did s fearfully, For griefe, whereby the earth [so fright, eternally: Each sought his cave or den, this cry did them eternally: [turn'd their Out from amid the waves, by storme then stirr'd to rage. [Ocean hoare, stirr'd to rage, And th' aire gan winterlike to ra-This crie did cause to rise th' old father apace : [fier Who grave with eld, and full of majestie in sight, [teares and plaints, And grisly ghosts by night were Amid the clouds with claps of the Spake in this wise, 'Refrain (quoth he) your Cease these, your idle words, make vaine did seeme To rent the skies, and made bot The birds of ill presage this luckle requests no more.

No humble speech, nor mone, may move the foretold, [made: Of destinic or death; Such is His will that By demfull noise; and dogs will [with store Some mischief was at hand; for such [fixed stint The earth with colours fresh; the darkest skies Of starry lights: And though your teares a hart of flint [will prevaile.]

Might tender make, yet nongit herein they Whiles thus he said, the noble knight, who Her greevous losse, or seene her her whiles the wild have the said. gan to feele dint While she, with woe opprest, hers His vitall force to faint, and death with cruell unfold. Of direfull dart his mortall bodie to assaile, Her haire hung lose, With eyes lift up to heav'n, and courage franke as steele, exprest, time so deere. To with cheerfull face, where valour lively was But humble mynd, he said: 'O Lord, if ought Twixt lilly and the rose. She wrong And from those two bright starres to this fraile [t'advaunce; with paine,
And earthly carcasse have thy service sought
If my desire have bene still to relieve th' Alas, and woe is me! why should opprest; [spent]

If justice to maintaine that valour I have On me thus frowne Which thou me gav'st; or if henceforth I What cruell envious hand hath Thy name, the truth the Thy name, thy truth, then spare me (Lord) And with thee my content, my com

If that prefixed time be come which thou hast did rest, Through pure and fervent faith, I hope now to be plast [blood In th' everlasting blis, which with thy precious

Thou purchase didst for us,' With that a sigh he fet, And straight a cloudie mist his sences overcast;

Forbcare these unripe yeares. But if thy will be bent. [set;

His lips waxt pale and wan, like damaske roses bud

Cast from the stalke, or like in field to purple Howre,

Alas, what now is left but grief, the Afflicts this wofull life, and with rage

Thou onelie wast the ease of trouble When they did me assaile; in the

Torments ten thousand waies m O greedie envious heav'n, what no have

Enricht with such a jewell this mi To take it back againe so soons! shall

Mine cies see ought that may con

ss-waine eke refus'd to be the ship- All haile, therefore, O worthie Phillip in

[equall h thee on earth I liv'd. :: iee to the place of rest where thou t her roong. roe, [emong. ier paine: 1 old Tithons bed, shee weeping did 4 [faire cies; ly wise. [amend, e lights. uests shine. tuckt her hair, which hung like ls of gold, with her to weep, it seemed, didenid help them mourne, with dark ds, raine, and mist,

easure hides, the joyes of my poore On Neptune warre was made by Acolus and his traine, [ed th' aire, even so Who, letting loose the winds, tost and torment it were with thee in heav'n I did So that on ev'ry coast men shipwrack did abide, : [part. abide, [waves, troubles all we here on earth did Or else were swallowed up in open sea with ould that there of thy most happie And such as came to shoare were beaten with despaire. [still to slide, are. Alas, if thou my trustie guide The Medwaies silver streames, that wont so to be, how canst thou leave me thus Were troubled now and wrothe; whose hidden late, hollow caves [mans eye, e and astray; weake, wearie, deso-Along his banks with fog then shrowded from mans eye, a world of woe, refusing for to take Ay Phillip did resownd, aie Phillip they did [stil it craves) crie. one!' [her toong; His nimphs were seen no more (thogh custom he held her peace, for sorrow tide; With haire spred to the wynd themselves to d of more words, seemd that her bath or sport,
a lake [therefro: Or with the hooke or net, barefooted wantonly,
id bene, they flow'd so plenteously The pleasant dantie fish to entangle or deceive,
her sobs and sighs, the aire round. The shepheards left their wonted places of her roong. [slaine, resort, [mery layes when she waild her deare Adonis Their bagpipes now were still; their loving v'd in thy fiers hart compassion of Were quite forgot; and now their flocks men might perceive isters plaints, her sighes and teares To wander and to straie, all carelesly neglect, have made thee milde, and inly And in the stead of mirth and pleasure, nights and dayes [plaints, and mone. 'e so faire her selfe did never show, Nought els was to be heard, but woes, com-But thou (O blessed soulc!) doest haply not [of raine, respect [pure affect, 1 Archer-boy, like larke in showre These teares we shead, though full of loving of his wings, and glad the time did Having affixt thine eyes on that most glorious throne, [reignes; e cristall drops, which fell from her Where full of majestie the High Creator r brightest beames him proynd in In whose bright shining face thy joves are all complete, alwaies one, for her grief, which he could not Whose love kindles thy spright; where happie boy gan wipe her eies, and clear Thou liv'st in blis that earthly passion never staines ; [tar sweete s through which his glory and his Where from the purest spring the sacred Nec-Is thy continuall drinke; where thou doest gather now Of well emploied life th' inestimable gaines vvorie brest, the treasure of delights. There Venus on thee smiles, Apollo gives thee place, [bow, stones so cold. And Mars in reverent wise doth to thy vertue the hills, the dales, the caves, the And decks his fiery sphere, to do thee honour most. In highest part whereof, thy valour for to grace, many a day to cleare itselfe againe; A chaire of gold he sets to thee, and there doth ha shold [untwist. Thy noble acts arew, whereby even they that a spoile the earth, their fatall threds Themselves of auncient fame, as Pirrhus, llanniball, s spoile the cartin, there is a spoile the cartin, the spoile the ca er quivering light Latonas daughter In martiall prowesse, high thy glorie do adThe flowre of Sydneyes race, the honour of thy [aspire, name!

But sorrowfull and sad these teares to thee let

Yet wish their verses might so fi thy fame Whose worthie praise to sing, thy Muses not Extend, that envies rage, nor tin the same.

A PASTORALL AEGLOGUE

UPON THE

DEATH OF SIR PHILLIP SIDNEY, KNIGHT, ETC.

LYCON.

LYCON.

COLIN, well fits thy sad cheare this sad stownd, This wofull stownd, wherein all things complaine

This great mishap, this greevous losse of owres. Hear'st thou the Orown? How with hollow sownd

He slides away, and murmuring doth plaine, And seemes to say unto the fading flowres. Along his bankes, unto the bared trees, Phillisides is dead. Up jolly swaine Thou that with skill canst tune a dolefull lay, Help him to mourn. My hart with grief doth

freese, Hoarse is my voice with crying, else a part Sure would I beare, though rude : but, as I may, With sobs and sighes I second will thy song, And so expresse the sorrowes of my hart.

Colin. Ah Lycon, Lycon! what need skill, to teach [long | Colin. Phillisides is dead, O ha A grieved mynd powre forth his plaints? how O deadly harme! Unhappie All

Hath the pore turtle gon to school (weenest When shalt thou see, emong thys thou)

[each Any so sage, so perfect? Whon To learne to mourne her lost make! Creature by nature can tell how to waile.

now? Seemeth their leaders bell their bleating tunes And her faire face, bent sadly dov In dolefull sound. Like him, not one doth faile A floud of teares to bathe the ear

With hanging head to shew a heavie cheare. What bird (I pray thee) hast thou seen, that runes

Himselfe of late? did any cheerfull note

Come to thine eares, or gladsome sight appeare Unto thine eies, since that same fatall howre? Hath not the aire put on his mourning coat, And testified his grief with flowing teares? Sith then, it seemeth each thing to his powre

COLIN.

Doth us invite to make a sad con Come, let us joyne our mournfu Griese will endite, and sorrow wi Thy voice; and Eccho will our v Lycon. Though my rude rymes verses frame,

That others farre excell, yet wil My selfe to answere thee the best And honor my base words wi But if my plaints annoy thee who In secret shade or cave; vouchss To pardon me, and hear this had With patience while I sing, and And eke ye rurall Muse, that do In these wilde woods: if ever pi We did endite, or taught a woful With words of pure affect his gri Instruct me now. Now, Colin. t And I will follow thee, though for

No, no, Envie could touch for vertuous l Curteous, valiant, and liberall. Seest not these flocks, how sad they wander Behold the sacred Pales, where v Untrust she sitts, in shade of yo Doth call the heav'ns despightfu Cruell his fate, that made so sho

Of that same life, well worthie to Prolonged with many yeares, famous. The Nymphs and Oreades her re Do sit lamenting on the grassic And with shrill cries, beating brests,

irefull dart that death sent out fatall stroke. The starres they

l tunes, whiles wolves do howle Happie name! happie tree! faire may you rke,

ld thy hopes, when they do faint, unate! What spitefull fate, se destinie, hath thee bereft comfort, of thy onely stay ome thy wonted happie state ein through many a hill and dale, asant woods, and many an unie way, nkes of many silver streames, n yodest; and with him didst scale ocks of th' Alpes and Appenine! ne Muses sporting, while those dled in his noble brest, [beames did so gloriously forth shine! ne!) they now yquenched are , and death hath them opprest. entune, with sad countenance, mourning on the strond now bare, e th' Ocean with his rolling waves ete washeth (wailing this mis-

les. His sacred skirt about all are set; from their moist caves mfort gathered there they be. r lord to mourne, and eke to see sight, and sad pomp funerall,

ir heads, with Cypres gyrlonds

Eccho, forgetting her deare

les, O woods! that oft have rong,

With his sweet caroling, which could asswage The fiercest wrath of Tygre or of Beare: carelesse seeme at their request. These thickets oft have daunst after his pipe; shade of stately groves they shun; Ye Nymphs and Nayades with golden heare heir cristall springs, where they That oft have left your purest cristall springs rame

To hearken to his layes, that coulden wipe Ye Silvans, Fawnes, and Satyres, that emong of Myrtel twigs and Lawrel faire, Away all griefe and sorrow from your harts! selves free from the scorching Sun. Alas! who now is left that like him sings? hollow caves where horror darke When shall you heare againe like harmonic?

whence banisht is the gladsome So sweet a sownd who to you now impures
[their time, Loe where engraved by his hand yet lives
and there in mourning spend The name of Stella in yonder bay tree,

grow, gives beare a bourdon to their plaint. And spred your sacred branch, which llisides is dead. O dolefull ryme! To famous Emperors and Poets crowne, my toong expresse thee? who is Unhappie flock that wander scattred now, What marvell if through grief ye woxen leane, Forsake your food, and hang your heads

adowne! For such a shepheard never shall you guide, Whose parting hath of weale bereft you cleane. Lycon, Phillisides is dead. O happie sprite, That now in heav'n with blessed soules doest

bide. [above, Looke down a while from where thou sitst And see how busic shepheards be to endite Sad songs of grief, their sorrowes to declare, And gratefull memory of their kynd love. Behold my selfe with Colin, gentle swaine (Whose lerned muse thou cherisht most whylcare,)

Where we, thy name recording, seeke to ease The inward torment and tormenting paine, That thy departure to us both hath bred: Ne can each others sorrow yet appease. Behold the fountains now left desolate, And withred grasse with cypres boughes be

spred; strew; Behold these floures which on thy grave we Which faded, shew the givers faded state, [pure) (Though eke they shew their fervent zeale and miort gameieu their constants.

Whose onely comfort on thy wenate gameies importune shall the heavins for whose praiers importune shall the heavins for their may assure: [av, That, to thy ashes, rest they may assure: [ay, That learnedst shepheards honor may thy name

corps passing through his king- With yearly praises, and the Nymphs alway [crown'd, Thy tomb may deck with fresh and sweetest flowres; shrikes salute him great and And that for ever may endure thy fame.

Colin. The sun (lo!) hastned hath his face to steep lisides is dead. O lucklesse age! Warnes us to drive homewards our silly sheep: rld! O brookes and fountains Lycon, lett's rise, and take of them good keep. Virtute summa: catera fortuna

ELEGIE.

OT

FRIENDS PASSION, FOR HIS ASTROPHEL

WEITTEN UPON THE DEATH OF THE RIGHT HONOGRABLE

SIR PHILLIP SIDNEY, KNIGHT,

LORD GOVERNOUR OF PLUSHING.

(This Poem was written by Matthew Roydon.)

As then, no winde at all there blew. No swelling cloude accloid the aire; The skie, like glasse of watchet hew, Reflected Phobus golden haire;

The garnisht tree no pendant stird, No voice was heard of anie bird.

There might you see the burly Beare, The Lion king, the Elephant; The maiden Unicorne was there, So was Acteons horned plant,

And what of wilde or tame are found, Were coucht in order on the ground.

Alcides speckled poplar tree, The palme that Monarchs do obtaine, With love-juice staind the mulberie, The fruit that dewes the poets braine; And Phillis philbert there away, Comparde with mirtle and the bay.

The tree that coffins doth adorne With stately height threatning the skie; And, for the bed of love forlorne, The blacke and dolefull ebonie:

All in a circle compast were, Like to an ampitheater.

Upon the branches of those trees, The airie-winged people sat, Distinguished in od degrees: One sort is this, another that,

Here Philomell, that knowes full well, What force and wit in love doth dwell.

The skie-bred Egle, roiall bird, ercht there upon an oke above: The Turtle by him never stird, Example of immortall love.

The Swan that sings about to dy,
Leaving Meander stood thereby. And, that which was of woonder most The Phomix left sweet Arabis; And, on a Cædar in this coast, Built up her tombe of spicerie.

As I conjecture, by the same Preparde to take her dying flavor

In midst and center of this plot, I saw one groveling on the grass A man or stone, I knew not that No stone; of man the figure was

And yet I could not count him and More than the image made of store

At length I might perceive him num His bodie on his elbow end: Earthly and pale with gastly ches Upon his knees he upward tend,

Sceming like one in uncouth ste To be ascending out the ground.

A grievous sigh forthwith he throw As might have torne the vitall an Then down his cheeks the teares As doth the streame of many spring So thunder rends the cloud in 181 And makes a passage for the rate

Incontinent, with trembling soul; He wofully gan to complaine; Such were the accents as might we And teare a diamond rocke in twin

After his throbs did somewhat stay Thus heavily he gan to say!

O sunne! (said he) seeing the sun On wretched me why dost thou the My star is false, my comfort dost. Out is the apple of my eine:

Shine upon those possesse delight And let me live in endlesse night

at liest upon my soule, is a mount of lead, it of my life controll, quickly with the dead; this hart, this sprite, and will, the brest of Astrophill.

ompassionate of my wo, s, beasts, and shadle trees, e ye long to kno e sorrowes me agreev's; then to that insu'th. e a tale of teares and ruthe.

who knew not Astrophill? uld live to say I knew, ot in possession still!) wne permit me to renew; ou know his merit such, say, you heare, too much.

e woods of Arcadie elight and pleasure tooke,

mountaine Parthenie,
rrystall liquid brooke,
s met him ev'ry day
th him sing, to write, and say.
scended downe to the mount,
ge seemed most divine,
graces one might count

ge seemed most divine, graces one might count wely cheerfull eine; him speake and sweetly smile, in Paradise the while, ractive kinde of grace,

ance given by lookes, comfort in a face, ents of Gospell bookes; hat countenance cannot lie loughts are legible in the eie.

eie did see that face, eare did heare that tong, minde did minde his grace, hought the travell long; and eares, and ev'ry thought. h his sweete perfections caught.

t such a worthy man,
rare desarts did raigne,
s, must leave us than,
wish for him in vaine!
he stars that bred that wit,
to longer fixed sit!
fid with learned dew,

willed him to love; ment can aprly shew, our conceits will move: us opes dissembled harts, sets out our belter parts. Stella, a Nymph within this wood, Most rare and rich of heavenly blis, The highest in his fancie stood, And she could well demerite this:

Tis likely they acquainted soone; He was a Sun, and she a Moone.

Our Astrophill did Stella love; O Stella, vaunt of Astrophill, Albeit thy graces gods may move. Where wilt thou finde an Astrophill! The rose and lillie have their prime,

And so hath beautic but a time.

Although thy beautie do exceed, In common sight of ev'ry eie. Yet in his Poesies when we reede, It is apparant more thereby, He that hath love and judgement too

Sees more than any other doo.

Then Astrophill hath honord thee;
For when the holder is extinct,
Thy graces shall eternal het.

Thy graces shall eternall be And live by vertue of his inke; For by his verses he doth give To short-livde beautic aye to live.

Above all others this is hee, Which erst approoved in his song, That love and honor might agree, And that pure love will do no wrong.

Sweet saints! it is no sinne nor blame, To love a man of vertuous name.

Did never love so sweetly breath In any mortall brest before, Did never Muse inspire beneath A Poets braine with finer store:

He wrote of love with high conceit, And beautic reard above her height.

Then Pallas afterward attyrde Our Astrophill with her device, Whom in his armor heaven admyrde, As of the nation of the skies;

He sparkled in his armes afarrs, As he were dight with fieric starrs.

The blaze whereof when Mars beheld, (An envious cie doth see afar.)
Such majestie (quoth he) is seeld,
Such majestie my mart may mar;
Perhaps this may a suter be.

Perhaps this may a suter be, To set Mars by his deitie.

In this surmize he made with speede An iron cane, wherein he put The thunder that in cloudes do breede; The flame and bolt togither shut

With privic force burst out againe, And so our Astrophill was slaine.

This word (was slaine) straightway did move, And natures inward life strings twitch; The skie immediately above

Was dimd with hideous clouds of pitch, The wrastling winds from out the ground Fild all the aire with ratling sound,

The bending trees exprest a grone, And sigh'd the sorrow of his fall ; The forrest beasts made ruthfull mone The birds did tune their mourning call, And Philomell for Astrophill

Unto her notes annext a phill.

The Turtle dove with tunes of ruthe Shewd feeling passion of his death; Me thought she said, I tell thee truthe, Was never he that drew in breath

Unto his love more trustic found, Than he for whom our griefs abound.

The swan, that was in presence heere, Began his funerall dirge to sing: Good things (quoth he) may scarce appeare, But passe away with speedle wing. This mortall life as death is tride

And death gives life; and so he di'de.

The generall sorrow that was made, Among the creatures of each kinde, Fired the Phoenix where she laide, Her ashes flying with the winde,

So as I might with reason are That such a Phonix per sho

Haply the cinders, driven shout May breede an offspring near the But hardly a peere to that, I do It cannot sinke into my minds,

That under branches ere can b Of worth and value as the tre

The Egle markt with pearcing a The mourafull habite of the play And parted thence with mount To signifie to Jove the case,

What sorrow nature doth sus For Astrophill by envis slain

And while I followed with min The flight the Egle upward to All things did vanish by and by And disappeared from my look The trees, beasts, birds, and

gone : So was the friend that made

This spectacle had firmly wrea A deepe compassion in my spa My molting hart issude, me th In streames forth at mine eles And here my pen is forst to My teares discoller so mine

AN EPITAPH

UPON THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

SIR PHILLIP SIDNEY, KNIGHT,

LORD GOVERNOR OF FLUSHING.

(The Authors of the two following poems are unknown.)

To praise thy life, or waile thy worthie death, And want thy wit, thy wit high, pure, divine, Is far beyond the powre of mortall line, Nor any one hath worth that draweth breath.

Drawne was thy race aright line:

Nor lesse than such, (by gift line).

Yet rich in zeale, though poore in learnings lore

And friendly care obscurde in secret brest, And love that envie in thy life supprest, Thy deere life done, and death, hath doubled more.

And I, that in thy time, and living state, Did onely praise thy vertues in my thought, As one that seeld the rising sun hath sought, With words and teares now waile thy timelesse fate.

Nor lesse than such, (by gift The common mother that all cre Doth vertue show, and princely

A king gave thee thy name; a k That God thee gave, who four deere

For this base world, and hath res To sit in skies, and sort with po

Kent thy birth daies, and Oxl youth 1 The beavens made hast, and sta

nits of age grew ripe in thy first prime, rill, thy words; thy words the seales of truth.

gifts and wisedom rare imployed thee thence, at from kings with those more great than hope men had to lay the highest things y wise youth, to be transported hence!

ce to sharpe wars sweet honor did thee call. call,
ountries love, religion, and thy friends:

fame.

The marks, the lives, and Nations thy wit, our mindes lay up thy love;

er defence, for whom we labor all.

sorrow, sicknes, and base fortunes | ising day saw never wofull night, stage.

to the campe, by thee that day was exprest, and honor truly taught.

What hath he lost, that such great grace hath woon? sure Young yeeres for endles yeeres, and hope un-Of fortunes gifts for wealth that still shall dure:

[kings; Oh! happie race with so great praises run.

England doth hold thy lims that bred the same,

Flaunders thy valure where it last was tried, The Campe thy sorrow where thy bodie died; Thy friends, thy want; the world, thy vertues

Letters thy learning, thy losse, yeeres long to come:

didst thou vanquish shame and tedious. In worthy harts sorrow hath made thy tombe; age, [might: Thy soule and spright enrich the heavens above.

Thy liberall hart imbalmed in gratefull teares, sest with praise from of this worldly Yoong sighes, sweet sighes, sage sighes, bewaile thy fall:

Envie her sting, and spite hath left her gall; fame; Malice her selfe a mourning garment weares. thine owne death, and after thy long. That day their Hanniball died, our Scipio fell; , to the soldiers, the proud Castilians, Scipio, Cicero, and Petrarch of our time! [rime, Whose vertues, wounded by my worthlesse Let Angels speake, and heaven thy praises tell.

ANOTHER OF THE SAME.

CE augmenteth grief, writing encreaseth He, onely like himselfe, was second unto none, rage, [the wonder of our age; Whose deth (though life) we rue, and wrong, are my thoughts, which lov'd, and lost, and al in vain do mone:

uickned now with fire, though dead with Their losse, not him, waile they, that fill the [no fault she found; abound. [worlds delight. slaine her knight; pensive wailes his fall, whose presence Harts ease and onely I, like parallels run on, was her pride; [my spring tide: Whose equall length keep equall bredth, and rieth out, My ebbe is come; his life was

ving wight laments his lacke, and all in deepest works of wit. he writ, st conceits, longest foresights, and And farewel friendships sacred league, uniting

frost ere now, [quick, I know not how. world with cries; | ladder to the skies. 'de I write, I know not what: dead, Death slue not him, but he made death his harted mindes relent, and rigors teares Now sinke of sorrow I, who live; the more the

wrong; [thred is al to long, nvie strangely rues his end, in whom Who wishing death, whom deth denies, whose edge her light hath lost, valor hath Who tied to wretched life, who lookes for no reliefe, [ending griefe. is dead, dead is my friend, dead is the Must spend my ever dying daies in never

never meet in one; [sorrowes cell, mournes in that she lost the ground of Yet for not wronging him, my thoughts, my her reports; [sundry sorts. Shall not run out, though leake they will, fo hking him so well.

se (wo worth that word!) to ech well Farewell to you, my hopes, my wonted waking thinking minde [vertue ever shinde, dreames; [thy beames! tlesse friend, a matchles man, whose Farewell, sometimes enjoyed joy; eclipsed are ing in his thoughts, his life, and that Farewell selfe pleasing thoughts which quiet-[thy beames!] nes brings foorth; minds of woorth.

And farewell mery hart, the gift of guiltlesse Now rime, the sonne of rage, while mindes,
And all sports, which, for lives restore, varietie And endlese griefe,

Let all, that sweete is, voyd; in me no mirth
may dwell:

[content, farswell to finde,
Phillip, the cause of all this woe, my lives
Salute the stones, that keep the

AMORETTI AND EPITHALAMION.

WRITTEN NOT LONG SINCE BY

EDMUNDE SPENSER.

TO THE RIGHT WORSHIPFULL

SIR ROBART NEEDHAM, KNIGHT.

Sin, to gratulate your safe return from Ire-land, I had nothing so readie, northought any Englande, nowe at the length thing so meete, as these sweete conceiled Seas in your happy companye Sonets, the deeds of that wel deserving gen-your selfe unknowned seemeth to tleman, maister Edmond Spenser: whose name of you, as meetest to give I work, I do more confidently presume to her, then, (Right worshipfull) in publish it in his absence, under your name, to seeming your gentle minde, and whom (in my poore opinion) the patronage and take in worth my gossl will therof doth in some respectes properly appers seeke no more but to shew my states. For, besides your judgement and ne- all dutifull affection. lighte in learned poesic, this gentle Muse, for

TO THE AUTHOR.

DARKE is the day, when Phabus face is Ah! Colin, whether on the lowing shrowded,

And weaker sights may wander soone astray ; But, when they see his glorious raies unclowded, With steddy steps they keeps the perfect way: So, while this Muse in forraine landes doth stay, Invention weepes, and pens are cast aside;

The time, like night, deprived of chearefull day; And few do write, but (ah!) too some may slide. Then, hie thee home, that art our perfect guide, And with thy wit illustrate Englands fame. Descriting thereby our neighboures anneient pride, That do, for poesie, challendge cheefest name: So we that live, and ages that succeede,

With great applause thy learned works shall reede, G. W. SESIOR.

Pyping to shepherds thy sweete n Or whether singing, in some lefty Heroich deedes of past or present Or whether in thy lovely mistris p Thou list to exercise thy learned a Thy muse hath got such grace please,

With rare invention, bewlifted by As who therein can ever joy their O! therefore let that happy muse To clime the height of Vertues so Where endles honour shall be more Because no malice of succeedis Can rase those records of thy la



SONNETS.

leaves! when as those lilly hands, my life in their dead-doing might, Wils him awake, and soone about him dight you, and hold in loves soft bands, His wanton wings and darts of deadly power.

he sorrowes of my dying spright, h teares in harts close-bleeding

rymes! bath'd in the sacred brooke whence she derived is; hold that Angels blessed looke

ye please, I care for other noue!

sught! whom at the first I bred rd bale of my love-pined hart; have with sighes and sorrowes fed. then my wombe thou woxen art: h at length out of the inner part, ou lurkest lyke to vipers brood; ome succour both to ease my smart, sustayne thy selfe with food. resence of that fayrest proud e to come, fall lowly at her feet; neeke humblesse and afflicted mood, thee, and grace for me. intreat : she graunt, then live, and my love Be nought dismayd that her unmoved mind

vne beauty which I doo admyre, ed: g still on her, I stand amazed is sight of so celestiall hew. [dew. ly toung would speak her praises is with thoughts astonishment : my pen would write her titles true, s with fancies wonderment: hart I then both speake and write ler that my wit cannot endite.

IV

forth looking out of Janus gate, to promise hope of new delight: ag th' old Adieu, his passed date thoughts to die in dumpish spright: g forth out of sad Winters night

Fresh Love, that long hath slept in cheerlesse bower,

es trembling at the victors sight. For lusty Spring now in his timely howre lines! on which, with starry light, Is ready to come forth, him to receive; ng eyes will deigne sometimes to And warnes the Earth with divers-colord flowre To decke hir selfe, and her faire mantle weave. Then you, faire flowre! in whom fresh youth doth raine,

Prepare your selfe new love to entertaine.

Rudely thou wrongest my deare harts desire, ong-lacked foode, my heavens blis ; In finding fault with her too portly pride : nes, and rymes, seeke her to please The thing which I doo most in her admire, Is of the world unworthy most envide: For in those lofty lookes is close implide, Scorn of base things, and sdeigne of foule dis honor:

Thretning rash eies which gaze on her so wide, That loosely they ne dare to looke upon her. Such pride is praise; such portlinesse is

honor: That boldned innocence beares in hir eies; And her faire countenance, like a goodly ban-Spreds in defiaunce of all enemies. [ner,

Was never in this world ought worthy tride, Without some spark of such self-pleasing pride.

[perish.] Doth still persist in her rebellious pride: tie soone; and I with thee will Such love, not lyke to lusts of baser kynd, The harder wonue, the firmer will abide. The durefull Oake, whose sap is not yet dride, Is long ere it conceive the kindling fyre; ie world how worthy to be prayzed! Is long ere it conceive the kindling fyre; bereof hath kindled heavenly fyre le spirit, by her from basenesse So hard it is to kindle neave described to the spirit. So hard it is to kindle new desire [aspire. [dazed. In gentle brest, that shall endure for ever: 5 now with her huge brightnesse. Deepe is the wound, that dints the parts entire.

I can no more endure to view: With about effects that march her death are With chast affects that naught but death can sever;

Then thinke not long in taking litle paine To knit the knot, that ever shall remaine.

Fayre eyes! the myrrour of my mazed hart, What wondrous vertue is contayed in you, The which both lyfe and death forth from you Into the object of your mighty view? [dart, For, when ye mildly looke with lovely hew, Then is my soule with life and love inspired: But when ye lowre, or looke on me askew, Then doe I die, as one with lightning fyred But, since that lyfe is more then death desyred

ooke ever lovely, as becomes you hest; That your bright beams, of my weak admyred,

May kindle living fire within my brest, such life should be the honor of your light, Such death the sad ensample of your might.

More then most faire, full of the living fire, Kindled above unto the Maker neere; No eies but joyes, in which all powers conspire, That to the world naught else be counted

deare ;

Thrugh your bright beams doth not the blinded Shoot out his darts to base affections wound; But Angels come to lead fraile mindes to rest In chast desires, on heavenly beauty bound. You frame my thoughts, and fashion me

within; [speake; You stop my toung, and teach my hart to You calme the storme that passion did begin, Strong thrugh your cause, but by your vertue

weak. Dark is the world, where your light shined Well is he borne, that may behold you ever.

Long-while I sought to what I might com-[spright; Those powrefull eies, which lighten my dark Yet find I nought on earth, to which I dare Resemble th' ymage of their goodly light, Not to the Sun; for they doo shine by night; Nor to the Moone; for they are changed never; Nor to the Starres; for they have purer sight; Nor to the Fire; for they consume not ever; Nor to the Lightning; for they still persever; Nor to the Diamond; for they are more tender;

Nor unto Cristall; for nought may them sever; Nor unto Glasse; such basenesse mought offend her.

Then to the Maker selfe they likest be, Whose light doth lighten all that here we see

Unrighteous Lord of Love, what law is this, That me thou makest thus tormented be, The whiles she lordeth in licentious blisse Of her freewill, scorning both thee and me? See! how the Tyrannesse doth joy to see The huge massacres which her eyes do make : And humbled harts brings captive unto thee, That thou of them mayst mightie vengeance take.

But her proud hart doe thou a little shake, And that high look, with which she doth comptroll

All this worlds pride, bow to a baser make, And al her faults in thy black booke enroll: That I may laugh at her As she doth laugh at m pain her sport.

Dayly when I do seeke and And hostages doe offer for a She, cruell warriour, doth h To battell, and the weary w Ne wilbe moov'd with rease To graunt small respit to m Of my poore life to make ur Yet my poore life, all sorrow I would her yield, her wrath But then she seeks, with torn To force me live, and will p All paine hath end, and

peace : But mine, no price nor pra

One day I sought with her To make a truce, and terme All fearelesse then of so fals Which sought me to entrap So, as I then disarmed did r A wicked ambush which lay In the close covert of her gu Thence breaking forth, did throng

Too feeble I t'abide the brun Was forst to yeeld my selfe Who, me captiving streig

wrong, Have ever since me kept in So, Ladie, now to you I d Against your cies, that ju

In that proud port, which her Whiles her faire face she res And to the ground her ele-li Most goodly temperature y Myld humblesse, mixt with For, looking on the earth Her minde remembreth her Whatso is fayrest shall to e But that same lofty count

Base thing, and thinke how Treading downe earth as lorne,

That hinders heavenly thou Yet lowly still vouchsafe Such lowlinesse shall mak

Retourne agayne, my forces Unto the siege by you abane

575

SONNETS.

e it is to leave, like one afrayd, peece, for one repulse so light. ch strong castles needeth greater belay: at o yield unto the first assay. efore all the forces that ye may, cessant battery to her heart; rayers, vowes, ruth, sorrow, nay; ins can the proudest love convert: hose fayle, fall downe and dy before g live, and living do adore her.

- xv · all Merchants, that, with weary [gain; nost pretious things to make your the Indias of their treasure spoile; leth you to seeke so farre in vaine? y love doth in her selfe containe yilds riches that may farre be found: ss, loe, her eies be Saphyres plaine; loc, hir lips be Rubies sound; hir teeth be Pearles, both pure and her forehead Yvory weene; [round: er locks are finest Gold on ground; her faire hands are Silver sheene: t which fairest is, but few behold, ad adornd with vertues manifold.

XVI

is I unwarily did gaze [light; fayre eyes, my loves immortall a my stonisht hart stood in amaze, weet illusion of her lookes delight; recive how, in her glauncing sight, loves with little wings did fly heir deadly arrowes, fyry bright, rash beholder passing by se archers closely I did spy, is arrow at my very hart: idenly, with twincle of her eye, zell broke his misintended dart. ; not so doon, sure I had bene slayne; t was, I hardly scap't with paine.

xvII

ous pourtraict of that Angels face, maze weake mens confused skil, worlds worthlesse glory to embase h he colours could devize at will, ais learned hand at pleasure guide, mbling, it his workmanship should

Yet many wondrous things there are beside: The sweet eye-glaunces, that like arrowes glide; [hart; The charming smiles, that rob sence from the small forts which ye were wont The lovely pleasance; and the lofty pride; hty mynds, enur'd to hardy fight, Cannot expressed be by any art. [nee Cannot expressed be by any art. [neede,
A greater craftes mans hand thereto doth That can expresse the life of things indeed.

XVIII The rolling wheele that runneth often round,

The hardest steele, in tract of time doth teare : And drizling drops, that often doe redound, The firmest flint doth in continuance weare: Yet cannot I, with many a dropping teare And long intreaty, soften her hard hart; That she will once vouchsafe my plaint to beare.

Or looke with pitty on my payneful smart; But, when I pleade, she bids me play my part; And, when I weep, she sayes, Teares are but water,

And, when I sigh, she sayes, I know the art; And, when I waile, she turnes hir selfe to laughter. vaine, So do I weepe, and wayle, and pleade in Whiles she as steele and thint doth still re-

XIX

mayne.

The merry Cuckow, messenger of Spring, His trompet shrill hath thrise already sounded, That warnes al lovers wayt upon their king, Who now is comming forth with girland crouned. With noyse whereof the quyre of Byrds re-

sounded, Their anthemes sweet, devized of loves prayse, That all the woods theyr ecchoes back re-

bounded, As if they knew the meaning of their layes, But mongst them all, which did Loves honor

ravse. No word was heard of her that most it ought; But she his precept proudly disobayes, And doth his ydle message set at nought. Therefore, O Love, unlesse she turne to thee

$\mathbf{x}\mathbf{x}$

Ere Cuckow end, let her a rebell be!

In vaine I seeke and sew to her for grace, And doe myne humbled hart before her poure; The whiles her foot she in my necke doth place, And tread my life downe in the lowly floure. And yet the Lyon that is Lord of power, And reigneth over every beast in field, In his most pride disdeigneth to devoure The silly lambe that to his might doth yield. But she, more cruell, and more salvage wilde.

Then either Lyon or the Lyonesse; Shames not to be with guiltlesse bloud de-

fylde,

But taketh glory in her cruelnesse. Fayrer then fayrest! let none ever say, That ye were blooded in a yeelded pray.

Was it the worke of Nature or of Art, Which tempred so the feature of her face That pride and meeknesse, mixt by equall part, Doe both appeare t' adorne her beauties grace? For with mild pleasance, which doth pride displace.

She to her love doth lookers eyes allure; And, with sterne countenance, back again doth

Their looser lookes that stir up lustes impure; With such strange termes her eyes she doth inure.

That, with one looke, she doth my life dismay ; And with another doth it streight recure; Her smile me drawes; her frowne me drives [lookes:

away. Thus doth she traine and teach me with ber Such art of eyes I never read in bookes!

XXII

This holy season, fit to fast and pray, Men to devotion ought to be inclynd: Therefore, I lykewise, on so holy day, For my sweet Saynt some service fit will find, Her temple fayre is built within my mind, In which her glorious ymage placed is; On which my thoughts doo day and night attend.

Lyke sacred priests that never thinke amisse! There I to her, as th' author of my blisse, Will builde an altar to appease her yre ; And on the same my hart will sacrifise, Burning in flames of pure and chast desyre: The which youchsafe, O goddesse, to accept,

Amongst thy deerest relicks to be kept.

Penelope, for her Ulisses sake, Deviz'd a Web her woods to deceave; In which the worke that she all day did make, The same at night she did againe unreave: Such subtile craft my Damzell doth conceave, Th' importune suit of my desire to shonne; For all that I in many dayes doo weave, In one short houre I find by her undonne. So, when I thinke to end that I begonne, I must begin and never bring to end: For with one looke she spils that long I sponne; And with one word my whole years work

doth rend.

Such labour like the Spyders web I fy Whose fruitlesse worke is broken with wynd

When I behold that beauties we And rare perfection of each goodly part Of natures skill the onely complete I honor and admire the Makers art. But when I feele the bitter balefull

Which her fayre eyes unwares doe wall That death out of theyr shiny beames a

I thinke that I a new Pamlors so Whom all the Gods in councell did aga Into this sinfull world from braven to a That she to wicked men a scourge d bee For all their faults with which they aid if

But, since ye are my scourge, ! == treat,

That for my faults ye will me gently

How long shall this lyke dying lyfe and And know no end of her owne mysery. But wast and weare away in termes un Twixt feare and hope depending doubt Yet better were attonce to let me die, And shew the last ensample of your p Then to torment me thus with cruelt To prove your powre, which I too well tride

But yet if in your hardned brest ye had A close intent at last to shew me grad Then all the woes and wrecks which I a As meanes of blisse I gladly wil embras And wish that more and greater they

That greater meede at last may turne li

Sweet is the Rose, but growes upon a Sweet is the Junipere, but sharpe his Sweet is the Eglantine, but pricketh Sweet is the Firbloome, but his in is rough;

Sweet is the Cypresse, but his rynd is Sweet is the Nut, but bitter is his pilit Sweet is the Broome-flowre, but yet enough:

And sweet is Moly, but his root is fill. So every sweet with source is temporal a That maketh it be coveted the mure: For easie things, that may be got at Most sorts of men doe set but little

Why then should I accoumpt of little That endlesse pleasure shall unto se

ud! now tell me, why should faire proud, orlds glorie is but drosse uncleane, e shade of death it selfe shall shroud, now thereof ye little weene! ly Idoll, now so gay beseene, her fleshes borrowd fayre attyre, rgot as it had never beene; y now much worship and admire! en shall after it inquire, mtion shall thereof remaine, this verse, that never shall expyre, our purchas with her thankles paine! eno lenger proud of that shall perish; , which shall you make immortall,

XXVIII

il-leafe, which you this day doe great hope of your relenting mynd: t is the badge which I doe beare, g it, doe seeme to me inclind: thereof, which ofte in me I find, wise your gentle brest inspire t infusion, and put you in mind oud mayd, whom now those leaves hne, scorning Phæbus lovely fyre, escalian shore from him did the: the gods, in theyr revengefull yre, maforme into a laurell-tree. no more, fayre Love, from Phebus urbrest his leafe and love embrace.

XXIX

the stubborne damzell doth demeaning with disdaynfull scorne; bay, which I unto her gave, my self her captive quite forlorne. uoth she) is of the victours borne, m by the vanquisht as theyr meeds, herewith doe Poetes heads adorne, glory of their famous deedes. e will the conquest challeng needs, ept me as her faithfull thrall; reat triumph, which my skill ex-

lyke to yee, and I to fyre;

Is not dissolv'd through my so hot desyre But harder growes the more I her intreat Or how comes it that my exceeding heat Is not delayd by her hart-frosen cold; But that I burne much more in boyling sweat, And feele my flames augmented manifold! What more miraculous thing may be told, That fire, which all things melts, should harden

And yee, which is congeald with sencelesse cold. Should kindle fyre by wonderfull devyse! Such is the powre of love in gentle mind, That it can alter all the course of kynd.

XXXI

Ah! why hath nature to so hard a hart Given so goodly giftes of beauties grace! Whose pryde deprayes each other better part, And all those pretious ornaments deface. Sith to all other beastes of bloody race A dreadfull countenaunce she given hath; That with theyr terrour al the rest may chace, And warne to shun the daunger of theyr wrath.

But my proud one doth worke the greater scath, Through sweet allurement of her lovely hew; That she the better may in bloody bath

Of such poor thralls her cruell hands embrew. But, did she know how ill these two accord | Such cruelty she would have soone abhord

XXXII

The paynefull smith, with force of fervent heat, The hardest yron soone doth mollify;

That with his heavy sledge he can it beat, And fashion to what he it list apply. Yet cannot all these flames, in which I fry, Her hart more harde then yron soft a whit Ne all the playnts and prayers, with which I Doe beat on th' and vile of her stubberne wit: But still, the more she fervent sees my fit, The more she frieseth in her wilfull pryde; And harder growes, the harder she is smit With all the playnts which to her be applyde.

What then remaines but I to ashes burne, And she to stones at length all frosen turne!

amp of fame blaze over-all.

Id I decke her head with glorious

Drayse.

Great wrong I doe, I can it not deny,
To that most sacred Empresse, my dear dred,
Not finishing her Queene of Faëry, the world with her victorious But Lodwick, this of grace to me aread;

XXX

Not finishing ner queene of a copy,

Prayse, That mote enlarge her living prayses, dead,

But Lodwick, this of grace to me aread;

10 ove not thinck th' accomplishment of it Sufficient worke for one mans simple head, it then that this her cold so great All were it, as the rest, but rudely writ?

whenes a storme name supplements y guyor Out of her course doth watter far astray? So I, whose star, that wont with her brigi And. b T Take heed, ray stare Me to direct, with cloudes is over-cast, Doe wander now, in darknesse and dismay,
Through hidden perils round about me plast;
Yet hope I well that, when this storme is
My Helice, the lodestar of my lyfe,

[past, Henceforth 1 In which, if Out of her b Fondnesse Will shine again, and looke on me at last, With lovely light to cleare my cloudy grief, To covet f Till then I wander carefull, comfortlesse, Arion, when In secret sorow, and sad pensivenesse. He forth wa Through the did m My hungry eyes, through greedy covetize Still to behold the object of their paine, Allur'd a Do With no contentment can themselves suffize; But, having, pine; and, having not, com-But my rude Some dainty plaine. The dreadfu For, lacking it, they cannot lyfe sustayne; And, having it, they gaze on it the more; In their amazement lyke Narcissus vaine, Nor move th But in her p All carclesse Whose eyes him starv'd: so plenty makes me Yet with one To spill were Chose rath poore. Yet are mine eyes so filled with the store Then to I Of that faire sight, that nothing else they brooke, But lothe the things which they did like before, blood. And can no more endure on them to looke, Sweet Smile All this worlds glory seemeth vayne to me, And all their showes but shadowes, saving Love.

XXXVI

Tell me, when shall these wearie woes have

she.

end,

Expressing a

With which

When all the

dart: Sweet is thy

579



SONNETS.

a she smiles with amiable cheare, e whereto can ye lyken it; ach eyelid sweetly doe appeare d Graces as in shade to sit. eemeth, in my simple wit, avre sunshine in somers day; a dreadfull storme away is flit e broad world doth spred his goodly

hereof, each bird that sits on spray, beast that to his den was fled, h afresh out of their late dismay, light lift up theyr drouping hed. at sunshine, when cloudy looks are

red.

XLI ture, or is it her will, uell to an humbled foe? then she may it mend with skill: en she at will may will forgoe, nature and her wil be so, most rill plague the man that loves her lelight t' encrease a wretches woe; er natures goodly guifts are lost: ame glorious beauties ydle boast yt such wretches to beguile, ong in her loves tempest tost, s at last to make her pitious spoyle, at fayre! let never it be named. fayre beauty was so fowly shamed.

XLII

rhich me so cruelly tormenteth, g is in my extreamest paine, he more my sorrow it augmenteth, I love and doe embrace my bane. ish (for wishing were but vaine) nit fro my continual smart; er thrall for ever to remayne, for pledge my poore captyved hart; , that it from her may never start, f please her, bynd with adamant [vart all wandring loves, which mote persurance, strongly it restravne. t her abstaine from cruelty, : me not before my time to dy. XLIII

m silent be, or shall I speake? peake, her wrath renew I shall; ilent be, my hart will breake, be with overflowing gall, mny is this, both my hart to thrall, y toung with proud restraint to tie; er I may speake nor thinke at all, stupid stock in silence die!

Yet I my hart with silence secretly Will teach to speak, and my just cause to plead; And eke mine eies, with meek humility, Love-learned letters to her eyes to read;

Which her deep wit, that true harts thought can spel,

Wil soon conceive, and learne to construe well.

XLIV

When those renoumed noble Peres of Greece Thrugh stubborn pride, amongst themselves did Forgetfull of the famous golden fleece; [jar, Then Orpheus with his harp theyr strife did bar. But this continuall, cruell, civill warre, The which my selfe against my selfe doe make; Whilest my weak powres of passions warreid No skill can stint, nor reason can aslake, [arre; But, when in hand my tunelesse harp I take, Then doe I more augment my foes despight; And griefe renew, and passions doe awake To battaile, fresh against my selfe to fight.

Mongst whome the more I seeke to settle peace, The more I fynd their malice to increase.

Leave, lady! in your glasse of cristall clene, Your goodly selfe for evermore to yew: And in my selfe, my inward selfe, I meane, Most lively lyke behold your semblant trew. Within my hart, though hardly it can shew Thing so divine to vew of earthly eye, The favre Idea of your celestiall hew And every part remaines immortally: And were it not that, through your cruelty, With sorrow dimmed and deform'd it were, The goodly ymage of your visnomy, Clearer then cristall, would therein appere. But, if your selfe in me ve playne will see, Remove the cause by which your fayre beames darkned be.

When my abodes prefixed time is spent, My cruell fayre streight bids me wend my way: But then from heaven most hideous stormes are sent.

As willing me against her will to stay. Whom then shall I, or heaven or her, obay? The heavens know best what is the best for me: But as she will, whose will my life doth sway, My lower heaven, so it perforce must bee. But ye high hevens, that all this sorowe see, Sith all your tempests cannot hold me backe, swage your storms; or else both you, and she, Will both together me too sorely wracke.

Enough it is for one man to sustaine The stormes, which she alone on me dots raine.

XLVII

Trust not the treason of those smyling lookes, Untill ye have theyr guylefull traynes well tryde:

For they are lyke but unto golden hookes, That from the foolish fish they bayts doe hyde: So she with flattring smyles weake harts doth guyde

Unto her love, and tempte to theyr decay; Whome, being caught, she kills with cruell

And feeds at pleasure on the wretched pray: Yet, even whylst her bloody hands them slay, Her eyes looke lovely, and upon them smyle; That they take pleasure in her cruiell play, And, dying, doe themselves of payne beguvle.

O mighty charm! which makes men love theyr bane, [payne. And thinck they dy with pleasure, live with

XLVIII

Innocent paper; whom too cruell hand Did make the matter to avenge her yre: And, ere she could thy cause wel understand, Did sacrifize unto the greedy fyre. Well worthy thou to have found better hyre, Then so bad end for hereticks ordayned; Yet heresy nor treason didst conspire, But plead thy maisters cause, unjustly payned. Whom she, all carelesse of his griefe con-

strayned
To utter forth the anguish of his hart:
And would not heare, when he to her complayed
The piteous passion of his dying smart.

Yet live for ever, though against her will, And speake her good, though she requite it ill.

XLIX

Fayre cruell! why are ye so fierce and cruell? Is it because your eyes have powre to kill? Then know that mercy is the Mighties jewell: And greater glory thinke, to save then spill. But if it be your pleasure, and proud will, To shew the powre of your imperious eyes; Then not on him that never thought you ill, But bend your force against your enemyes: Let them feele the utmost of your crueltyes; And kill with looks as Cockatrices doo: But him, that at your footstoole humbled lies, With mercifull regard give mercy too.

Such mercy shall you make admyr'd to be; So shall you live, by giving life to me,

Long languishing in double malady Of my harts wound, and of my bodies griefe; There came to me a leach, that would apply Fit medicines for my bodies best reliefe.

Vayne man, quod I, that hast but little pr In deep discovery of the mynds disease; Is not the hart of all the body chelo. And rules the members as it selfe doth plea. Then, with some cordialls, seeks first a spe The inward languor of my wounded har, And then my body shall have shortly case. But such sweet cardialls areas Physicians.

But such sweet cordialla passe Physican at Then, my lyfes Leach! doe yourskill reval And, with one salve, both hart mi is heale.

L

Doe I not see that fayrest ymages
Of hardest marble are of purpose made,
For that they should endure through many
Ne let theyr famous moniments to fale?
Why then doe I, untraineds in lovers trais
Her hardnes blame, which I should man a
Sith never rought was excellent assayde [we
Which was not hard t' atchieve and bring
end.

end. Ne ought so hard, but he, that would atte Mote soften it and to his will allure: So doe I hope her stubborne hart to best.

And that it then more stedfast will called Onely my paines will be the more to get But, having her, my joy wil be the gro

LII

So oft as homeward I from her cepar.
I goe lyke one that, having lost the field is prisoner led away with heavy har.
Despoyld of warlike armes and known so doe I now my selfe a prisoner yeld. To sorrow and to solitary pains a From presence of my dearest deare expl. Long-while alone in langour to remain. There let no thought of joy, or pleasure. Dare to approch, that may my solace be

But sudden dumps, and drery sad dash; Of all worlds gladnesse, more my torres-So I her absens will my penaunce and That of her presens I my meed may it

The Panther, knowing that his spotsed Doth please all beasts, but that his look

fray;
Within a bush his dreadfull head dash
To let them gaze, whylest he on them ma
Right so my cruell fayre with me doll
For, with the goodly semblant of he h
She doth allure me to mine owne deap
And then no mercy will unto me shee;
Great shame it is, thing so divine in v
Made for to be the worlds most orname
To make the bayte her gazers in ember
Good shames to be to ill an instrument



SONNETS.

r doth with beautie best agree. T Maker ye them best may see.

is Theatre in which we stay. te the Spectator, ydly sits;
te, that all the pageants play,
diversly my troubled wits.
joy when glad occasion fits,
myrth lyke to a Comedy: when my joy to sorrow flits, make my woes a Tragedy. olding me with constant eye, in my merth, nor rues my smart: laugh, she mocks; and, when I cry, , and hardens evermore her hart. n can move her? if nor merth nor

woman, but a sencelesse stone.

er beauty doe behold, th doe her cruelty compare, f what substance was the mould ier made attonce so cruell faire. or her high thoghts more heavenly

for her love doth burne like fyre: or she is not so light or rare: or she doth friese with faint desire. another Element inquire mote be made, that is, the skye. eaven her haughty lookes aspire: · mind is pure immortall hve so beaven ye lykened are the best, 1 mercy as in all the rest,

sure, but cruell and unkind, ffind re, that with greedinesse bloud; when he by chance doth at, doth felly him oppresse. sure, but proud and pittilesse, ne, that all things doth prostrate; ee alone all comfortlesse, strongly, it to ruinate. sure, but hard and obstinate, e amidst the raging floods; ch, a ship, of succour desolate, wreck both of her selfe and goods. that tree, and that same beast.

doe wreck, doe ruine, and destroy,

iour! you? t is this warre now ended were

Which I no lenger can endure to sue, Ne your incessant battry more to beare: So weake my powres, so sore my wounds, appeare

That wonder is how I should live a jot, Seeing my hart through-launced every where With thousand arrowes, which your eies have shot:

Yet shoot ye sharpely still, and spare me not, But glory thinke to make these cruel stoures. Ye cruell one! what glory can be got, In slaying him that would live gladly yours!

Make peace therefore, and graunt me timely

That al my wounds wil heale in little space.

LVIII

By her that is most assured to her selfe. Weake is th' assurance that weake flesh re-

poseth In her owne powre, and scorneth others ayde ; That soonest fals, when as she most supposeth Her selfe assurd, and is of nought affrayd. All flesh is frayle, and all her strength unstayd. Like a vaine bubble blowen up with ayre: Devouring tyme and changeful chance have prayd,

Her glories pride that none may it repayre. Ne none so rich or wise, so strong or fayre, But fayleth, trusting on his owne assurance; And he, that standeth on the hyghest stayre, Fals lowest; for on earth nought hath enduraunce. [so farre,

Why then doe ye, proud fayre, misdeeme That to your selfe ye most assured arre!

Thrise happie she! that is so well assured Unto her selfe, and setled so in hart, That nether will for better be allured, Ne feard with worse to any chaunce to start; But, like a steddy ship, doth strongly part The raging waves, and keepes her course aright;

Ne ought for tempest doth from it depart, Ne ought for fayrer weathers false delight Such selfe-assurance need not feare the spight Of grudging foes, ne favour seek of friends: But, in the stay of her owne stedfast might, Nether to one her selfe nor other bends

Most happy she, that most assur'd doth rest; But he most happy, who such one loves best.

when shall I have peace They, that in course of heavenly spheares are akild.

To every planet point his sundry years:

In which her circles voyage is fulfild, As Mars in three-score yeares doth run his spheare. So, since the winged god his planet cleare Began in me to move, one yeare is spent:

The which doth longer unto me appeare, Then al those fourty which my life out-went. Then by that count, which lovers books invent,

The spheare of Cupid fourty yeares containes: Which I have wasted in long languishment, That seemd the longer for my greater paines. But let my loves fayre Planet short her

waves This yeare ensuing, or else short my dayes.

The glorious image of the Makers beautie, My soverayne saynt, the Idoll of my thought, Dare not henceforth, above the bounds of dewtie,

T' accuse of pride, or rashly blame for ought. For being, as she is, divinely wrought, And of the brood of Angels hevenly borne: And with the crew of blessed Saynts upbrought, Each of which did her with theyr guifts adorne; The bud of joy, the blossome of the morne, The beame of light, whom mortal eyes admyre; What reason is it then but she should scorne Base things, that to her love too bold aspire! Such heavenly formes ought rather worshipt

be Then dare be lov'd by men of meane degree.

_ LXII

The weary yeare his race now having run, The new begins his compast course anew:

With shew of morning mylde he hath begun, Betokening peace and plenty to ensew.

So let us, which this chaunge of weather vew,
Chaunge eke our mynds, and former lives There pride dare not approch.

amend;

The old yeares sinnes forepast let us eschew, And fly the faults with which we did offend. Then shall the new yeares joy forth freshly

Into the glooming world, his gladsome ray: And all these stormes, which now his beauty blend. Shall turne to caulmes, and tymely cleare away

So, likewise, Love! cheare you your heavy spright.

And chaunge old yeares annoy to new delight, LXIII

After long stormes and tempests sad assay, Which hardly I endured heretofore, In dread of death, and daungerous dismay,

With which my silly barke was to sed sore:

I doe at length descry the hap In which I hope ere long for to Fayre soyle it seemes from 1 with store Of all that deare and daynty i

Most happy he! that can at la The joyous safety of so sweet a Whose least delight sufficeth t Remembrance of all paines wh All paines are nothing in re-All sorrowes short that gain

Comming to kisse her lyps, (suc Me seemd, I smelt a gardin of That dainty odours from them For damzels fit to decke their Her lips did smell lyke unto G

Her ruddy cheekes, lyke unto Her snowy browes, like budded Her lovely eyes, lyke Pincks b Her goodly bosome, lyke a Str Her neck, lyke to a bounch of

Her brest, lyke Lillyes, ere t shed; Her nipples, lyke yong blossom Such fragrant flowers doe giv smell :

But her sweet odour did ther

The doubt which ye misdeem

That fondly feare to loose your l When, loosing one, two libertie And make him bond that bonda Sweet be the bands, the which Without constraynt, or dread of The league twixt them, that I bound:

Seekes with sweet peace, to sa wound: There Fayth doth fearlesse And spotlesse Pleasure bu bowre.

But simple truth, and mutuall

To all those happy blessings, v With plenteous hand by her thrown; This one disparagement they t

That ye your love leut to so m Yee, whose high worths surpas Could not on earth have found Ne but in heaven matchable to Why did ye stoup unto so low!



by much greater glory gate, sorted with a princes pere: ir light doth more itselfe dilate, larknesse, greater doth appeare, your light hath once enlumind me, reflex yours shall encreased be.

LXVII

antsman after weary chace, ame from him escapt away, to rest him in some shady place, is hounds beguiled of their pray: g pursuit and vaine assay, weary had the chace forsooke, leare returnd the selfe-same way, the quench her thirst at the next is:

e:

eholding me with mylder looke, to fiy, but fearelesse still did bide;

id her yet halfe trembling tooke, er owne goodwill hir fyrmely tyde. hing, me seemd, to see a beast so y wonne, with her owne will be-

LXVIII

us Lord of lyfe! that, on this day, thy triumph over death and sin; a harrowd hell, didst bring away hence captive, us to win:
day, deare Lord, with joy begin; hat we, for whom thou diddest dye, thy deare blood clene washt from rever in felicity! [sin, hy love we weighing worthily, se love thee for the same againe; y sake, that all lyke deare didst

may one another entertayne! love, deare love, lyke as we ought: he lesson which the Lord us taught.

LXIX

s warriors of anticke world hees to erect in stately wize; hey would the records have enrold reat deeds and valorous emprize. hee then shall I most fit devize, may record the memory s conquest, peerelesse beauties prise, th honour, love, and chastity! verse, vowd to eternity, ereof immortall moniment; er prayse to all posterity, dmire such worlds rare wonderment; py purchase of my glorious spoile, it last with labour and long toyle.

LXX

Fresh Spring, the herald of loves mighty king, In whose cote-armour richly are displayd All sorts of flowers, the which on earth do In goodly colours gloriously arrayd; [spring, Goe to my love, where she is carelesse layd, Yet in her winters bowre not well awake; Tell her the joyous time wil not be staid, Unlesse she doe him by the forelock take; Bid her therefore her selfe soone ready make, To wayt on Love amongst his lovely crew; Where every one, that misseth then her make, Shall be by him amearst with penance dew.

Shall be by him amearst with penance dew.

Make hast, therefore, sweet love, whilest it
is prime;

For none can call againe the passed time.

LXXI

I oy to see how, in your drawen work, Your selfe unto the Bee ye doe compare; And me unto the Spyder, that doth lurke In close awayt, to catch her unaware: Right so your selfe were caught in cunning snare Of a deare foe, and thralled to his love;

Of a deare foe, and thralled to his love;
In whose streight bands ye now captived are
So firmely, that ye never may remove.
But as your worke is woven all above
With woodbynd flowers and fragrant Eglantine;

So sweet your prison you in time shall prove, With many deare delights bedecked fyne. And all thensforth eternall peace shall see Betweene the Spyder and the gentle Bee.

LXXII -

Oft, when my spirit doth spred her bolder winges,
In mind to mount up to the purest sky;
It down is weighed with thought of earthly

It down is weighd with thoght of earthly
And clogd with burden of mortality; [things,
Where, when that soverayne beauty it doth
Resembling heavens glory in her light, [spy,
Drawne with sweet pleasures bayt, it back
doth fly,
And unto heaven forgets her former flight.

And unto heaven forgets her former flight.
There my fraile fancy, fed with full delight,
Doth bath in blisse, and mantleth most at
ease;
Ne thinks of other heaven, but how it might

Her harts desire with most content please.

Hart need not wish none other happinesse,
But here on earth to have such hevens
blisse.

LXXIII

dmire such worlds rare wonderment;
being my self captyved here in care,
by purchase of my glorious spoile,
it last with labour and long toyle.

Wy hart, (whom none with servile bands can
tve.

But the fayre tresses of your golden hayre,) Breaking his prison, forth to you doth fly. Lyke as a byrd, that in ones hand doth spy Desired food, to it doth make his flight: Even so my hart, that wont on your fayre On the sweet spoyle of beauti-

To feed his fill, flyes backe unto your sight. Doe you him take, and in your bosome bright They loosely did theyr wanton Gently encage, that he may be your thrall: Perhaps he there may learne, with rare delight,

To sing your name and prayses over-all:
That it hereafter may you not repent,
Him lodging in your bosome to have lent.

LXXIV

Most happy letters! fram'd by skilfull trade. With which that happy name was first desynd, The which three times thrise happy hath me made, With guifts of body, fortune, and of mind, The first my being to me gave by kind, From mothers womb deriv'd by dew descent: The second is my sovereigne Queene most

kind, That honour and large richesse to me lent: The third, my love, my lifes last ornament, By whom my spirit out of dust was raysed: To speake her prayse and glory excellent, Of all alive most worthy to be praysed. Ye three Elizabeths! for ever live,

That three such graces did unto me give,

LXXV

One day I wrote her name upon the strand; But came the waves, and washed it away: Agayne, I wrote it with a second hand; But came the tyde, and made my paynes his pray. [assay Vayne man, sayd she, that doest in vaine A mortall thing so to immortalize;

For I my selve shall lyke to this decay, And eek my name bee wyped out lykewize, Not so, quod 1; let baser things devize To dy in dust, but you shall live by fame:

My verse your vertues rare shall éternize, And in the hevens wryte your glorious name. Where, whenas death shall all the world subdew,

Our love shall live, and later life renew.

LXXVI

Fayre bosome! fraught with vertues richest And vertuous mind, is much n tresure

The neast of love, the lodging of delight, The bowre of blisse, the paradice of pleasure, The sacred harbour of that hevenly spright;

And my frayle thoughts too ra Whiles diving deepe throug sight, And twixt her paps, (like earl Whose harvest seemd to haste And there to rest themselves (Sweet thoughts! I envy you Which oft I wisht, yet neve

How was I ravisht with your

A goodly table of pure yvory, All spred with juncats, fit to e The greatest Prince with pom Mongst which, there in a silve Twoo golden apples of unvalev Far passing those which Heret Or those which Atalanta did e Exceeding sweet, yet voyd of : That many sought, yet none co Sweet fruit of pleasure, broug

Was it a dreame, or did I see

dice By Love himselfe, and in his g Her brest that table was, so My thoughts the guests, thereon have fedd.

Lackyng my love, I go from pl Lyke a young fawne, that lat hynd; And seeke cach where, where

Whose ymage yet I carry fresl I seeke the fields with her late I seeke her bowre with her deckt: Yet nor in field nor bowre I her

Yet field and bowre are full of But, when myne eyes I thereu They yelly back returns to me And, when I hope to see theyr I fynd my selfe but fed with fa Ceasse then, myne eyes, to se see ;

And let my thoughts behold!

LXXIX

Men call you fayre, and you do For that your selfe ye dayly su But the trew fayre, that is the For all the rest, how ever favre Shall turne to nought and loos But onely that is permanent an From frayle corruption, that do



SONNETS.

tie: that doth argue you l borne of heavenly seed; t fayre Spirit, from whom al

ty did at first proceed: e, and what he favre hath

lyke flowres, untymely fade.

- LXXX -

ice as I have run and, which those six books

; me being halfe fordonne, reelfe new breath awhile. refreshed after toyle, I will breake anew; that second worke assoyle. vour and attention dew. ve to me, in pleasant mew ie, and sing my loves sweet

a of whose heavenly hew, gher pitch will rayse, rses yet be low and meane, imayd of the Faery Queene.

LXXXI

re, when her fayre golden marke; wynd ye waving chance to rose in her red checkes

fyre of love does sparke. rest, lyke a rich laden barke, chandize she forth doth lay; sloud of pryde, which oft doth

with smiles she drives away. then so she doth display rles and rubyes richly dight: r words so wise do make

age of her gentle spright. ks of natures wonderment: rke of harts astonishment.

ll oft for loving you at was so lucky placed: by so meane love embased. uall bevens so much you

est, ye mote invent

te in golden moniment.

But since ye deignd so goodly to relent To me your thrall, in whom is little worth; That little, that I am, shall all be spent In setting your immortall prayses forth: Whose lofty argument, uplifting me, Shall lift you up unto an high degree,

LXXXIII

Let not one sparke of filthy lustfull fyre Breake out, that may her sacred peace molest;

Ne one light glance of sensuall desyre Attempt to work her gentle mindes unrest: But pure affections bred in spotlesse brest, And modest thoughts breathd from tempred sprites,

Goe visit her in her chast bowre of rest Accompanyde with angelick delightes. There fill your selfe with those most joyous

sights, The which my selfe could never yet attayne:

But speake no word to her of these sad plights,
Which her too constant stiffenesse doth con-

strayn. Onely behold her rare perfection, And blesse your fortunes fayre election.

LXXXIV

The world that cannot deeme of worthy things,

When I doe praise her, say I doe but flatter: So does the Cuckow, when the Mavis sings, Begin his witlesse note apace to clatter. But they that skill not of so heavenly matter, All that they know not envy or admyre; Rather then envy, let them wonder at her, But not to deeme of her desert aspyre. Deepe, in the closet of my parts entyre Her worth is written with a golden quill, That me with heavenly fury doth inspire, And my glad mouth with her sweet prayees fill. [shal thunder,

Which when as Fame in her shrill trump Let the world chose to envy or to wonder.

LXXXV

Venemous toung, tipt with vile adders sting. Of that selfe kynd with which the Furies fell Theyr snaky heads doe combe, from which a spring

Of poysoned words and spitefull speeches well; Let all the plagues, and horrid paines, of hell Upon thee fall for thine accursed hyre t, whose verse could have That with false forged lyes, which thou didst tel,

In my true love did stirre up coles of yre;

neyr sad protract from evening untill morne.
For, when as day the heaven doth adorne,
I wish that night the noyous day would end:
And, when as night hath us of light forlorne, Lyke as ti Sits mour And, in he I wish that day would shortly reascend. For his re Thus I the time with expectation spend, So 1 alone And faine my griefe with chaunges to be-Mourne to guile,
That further seemes his terme still to extend,
Seek with And maketh every minute seeme a myle, dove So sorrow still doth seeme too long to last; Ne joy of o But joyous houres doe fly away too fast. Can comfor Whose swe LXXXVII Since I have lackt the comfort of that light, The which was wont to lead my thoughts In her unsp Dark is i astray; I wander as in darkenesse of the night, mis, And dead Affrayd of every dangers least dismay.

. .

161

EPIGRAMS.

In youth, before I waxed old,
The blynd boy, Venus baby,
For want of cunning made me bold,
In bitter hyve to grope for honny:
But, when he saw me stung and cry,
He tooke his wings and away did fiv.

And sayd to But, when h His face with Not knowing 'Then, never For many ha

lfe likewise art lyttle made, e same. ffrest neyther gods in sky, 1, to rest: art disposed cruelly. u doost molest. nge thy cruelty. e unto the fly. ruell boy, not so content, fly pursue; with heedlesse hardiment, to subdue. he hasty hand did lay, ng therefore: he cryde, and wel-away! Il sore: o much did scorne, th his little horne. straight he weeping came. complayned:

Full many thou hast pricked to the hart, That pitty never found: Therefore, henceforth some pitty take, When thou doest spoyle of lovers make.' She tooke him streight full pitiously lamenting, And wrapt him in her smock: She wrapt him softly, all the while repenting That he the fly did mock She drest his wound, and it embaulmed wel With salve of soveraigne might: And then she bath'd him in a dainty well, The well of deare delight. Who would not oft be stung as this, To be so bath'd in Venus blis? The wanton boy was shortly wel recured Of that his malady: But he, soone after, fresh againe enured His former cruelty. And since that time he wounded bath my With his sharpe dart of love: [selfe hose but laugh at his fond e him pained. [game, His mothers heast to prove. d she) my sonne, how great hou dost wound: [the smart My pining anguish to appease.

RPITHALAMION.

s, which have oftentimes ng, others to adorne, [rymes, names sung in your simple [layes, vr praise; your owne mishaps to mourne, love, or fortunes wreck did

I soone to sadder tenor turne. ods and waters to lament riment: rrowfull complaints aside; your heads with girlands

wne loves prayses to resound; of any be envide: or his owne bride! fring. fe alone will sing; to me answer, and my Eccho worlds light-giving lampe e upon the hils doth spred, he nights unchearefull dampe, und, with fresh lusty-hed, of my beloved love,

My truest turtle dove; Bid her awake; for Hymen is awake, th worthy of your gracefull And long since ready forth his maske to move, eatest did not greatly scorne With his bright Tead that flames with many a flake,

And many a bachelor to waite on him, In theyr fresh garments trim. Bid her awake therefore, and soone her dight, For lo! the wished day is come at last, That shall, for all the paynes and sorrowes past, Pay to her usury of long delight: And, whylest she doth her dight, Doe ye to her of joy and solace sing, That all the woods may answer, and your eccho ring.

Bring with you all the Nymphes that you can heare

Both of the rivers and the forrests greene, And of the sea that neighbours to her neare: Al with gay girlands goodly wel beseene. And let them also with them bring in hand Another gay girland,
For my fayre love, of lillyes and of roses Bound truelove wize, with a blew silke riband. And let them make great store of bridale posses

And let them eeke bring store of other flowers, My love is now awake out of he [tread, And her fayre eyes, like stars To deck the bridale bowers.

wrong, Be strewed with fragrant flowers all along.

And diapred lyke the discolored mead. Which done, doe at her chamber dore awayt, For she will waken strayt;

The whiles doe ye this song unto her sing, The woods shall to you answer, and your Eccho

And ye three handmayds of Ye Nymphes of Mulla, which with carefull The which doe still adorne her t

heed The silver scaly trouts doe tend full well. And greedy pikes which use therein to feed: (Those trouts and pikes all others doo ex-

cell;)

And ye likewise, which keepe the rushy lake, Where none doo fishes take; [light, Bynd up the locks the which hang scatterd And in his waters, which your mirror make,

Behold your faces as the christall bright,

That when you come whereas my love doth lie, No blemish she may spie. And eke, ye lightfoot mayds, which keepe the dore.

That on the hoary mountayne used to towre; And the wylde wolves, which seeke them to Speer; devoure.

With your steele darts doo chace from comming Be also present heere,

To helpe to decke her, and to help to sing, That all the woods may answer, and your eccho ring.

Wake now, my love, awake! for it is time; The Rosy Morne long since left Tithones bed, All ready to her silver coche to clyme;

And Phœbus gins to shew his glorious hed. Hark! how the cheerefull birds do chaunt theyr laies

And carroll of Loves praise.
The merry Larke hir mattins sings aloft; The Thrush replyes; the Mavis descant playes: The Ouzell shrills; the Ruddock warbles soft; So goodly all agree, with sweet consent,

To this dayes merriment. Ah! my deere love, why doe ye sleepe thus That all the sences they doe ravious,

The whyles the boyes run up at

When meeter were that ye should now awake, I' awayt the comming of your joyous make, And hearken to the birds love-learned song,

The deawy leaves among! Nor they of joy and pleasance to you sing.

That all the woods them answer, and they eccho ring.

And let the ground whereas her foot shall were
For feare the stones her tender foot should With darksome cloud, now shew More bright then Hesperus his h Come now, ye damzels, daughte Helpe quickly her to dight:

But first come ye fayre houre In Joves sweet paradice of Day

Which doe the seasons of the ve And al, that ever in this world i Doe make and still repayre:

Helpe to addorne my beautifulk And, as ye her array, still throv Some graces to be seene; And, as ye use to Venus, to her The whiles the woods shal ans eccho ring.

Now is my love all ready forth t Let all the virgins therefore wel And ye fresh boyes, that tend up Prepare your selves; for he is co

Set all your things in seemely g Fit for so joyfull day: The joyfulst day that ever sunni Faire Sun! shew forth thy favo And let thy lifull heat not ferve For feare of burning her sunshy

If ever I did honour thee aright Or sing the thing that mote thy Doe not thy servants simple box But let this day, let this one da Let all the rest be thine.

Her beauty to disgrace. O fayrest Phœbus! father of the

Then I thy soverayne prayses I That all the woods shal answ eccho ring. Harke: how the Minstrils gin t Their merry Musick that resour

The pipe, the tabor, and the tre That well agree withouten brea But, most of all, the Damzels do When they their tymbrels amyte And thereunto doe daunce and c street,

Crying aloud with strong confus As if it were one voyce, Hymen, io Hymen, Hymen, then

That even to the heavens theyr s Doth reach, and all the firmamer To which the people standing all

EPITHALAMION.

doe thereto applaud. e ber land; Hymen, Hymen sing, is them answer, and theyr

omes along with portly pace, her chamber of the East, un her mighty race, that seemes a virgin best. eemes, that ye would weene rad beene. llow locks lyke golden wyre, perle, and perling flowres

mantle her attyre; ed with a girland greene, mayden Queene abashed to behold s on her do stare. round affixed are; r countenance too bold, e her prayses sung so loud, ig proud. may answer, and your eccho

ants daughters, did ye see e in your towne before; y, and so mild as she. itves grace and vertues store? vke Saphyres shining bright, ry white, [rudded, 2 apples which the sun hath Behold, whiles she before the altar stands, rryes charming men to byte, i bowle of creame uncrudded. llies budded. : lyke to a marble towre; like a pallace fayre. th many a stately stayre, d chastities sweet bowre. Il ye virgins in amaze, ıze, your former lay to sing, oods did answer, and your

t which no eyes can see, ty of her lively spright, avenly guifts of high degree, would ye wonder at that

tht lyke to those which red 1 hed. t love, and constant chastity, and comely womanhood, and mild modesty;

There vertue raynes as Queene in royal throne, And giveth lawes alone, The which the base affections doe obay And yeeld theyr services unto her will; Ne thought of thing uncomely ever may Thereto approch to tempt her mind to ill. Had ye once seene these her celestial threa-And unrevealed pleasures, [sures, Then would ye wonder, and her prayees sing, That al the woods should answer, and your echo ring.

Open the temple gates unto my love Open them wide that she may enter in, And all the postes adorne as doth behove, And all the pillours deck with girlands trim, For to receive this Saynt with honour dew, That commeth in to you. With trembling steps, and humble reverence, She commeth in, before th' Almightics view; Of her ye virgins learne obedience, When so ye come into those holy places, To humble your proud faces: Bring her up to th' high altar, that she may The sacred ceremonics there partake, The which do endlesse matrimony make; And let the roring Organs loudly play The praises of the Lord in lively notes; The whiles, with hollow throates, The Choristers the joyous Antheme sing, That al the woods may answere, and their eccho ring.

Hearing the holy priest that to her speakes, And blesseth her with his two happy hands, How the red roses flush up in her cheekes. And the pure snow, with goodly vermill stayne Like crimsin dyde in grayne: That even th' Angels, which continually About the sacred Altare doe remaine. Forget their service and about her fly, Ofte peoping in her face, that seems more fayre, The more they on it stare. But her sad eyes, still fastened on the ground, Are roverned wind needly modesty, That suffers not one looke to glaunce awry Which may let in a little thought unsownd. Why blush ye, love, to give to me your hand, The pledge of all our band ! Sing, ye sweet Angels, Alleluya sing, That all the woods may answere, and your eccho ring.

Now al is done: bring home the bride againe; Bring home the triumph of our victory Bring home with you the glory of her gaine With joyance bring her and with jollity.

Never had man more joyfull day then this, Whom heaven would heape with blis, Make feast therefore now all this live-long

day; This day for ever to me holy is.

Poure out the wine without restraint or stay, Poure not by cups, but by the belly full, Poure out to all that wull,

And sprinkle all the postes and wals with wine, And odourd sheetes, and A That they may sweat, and drunken be withall. Behold how goodly my fair Crowne ye God Bacchus with a coronall.

And Hymen also crowne with wreathes of vine; And let the Graces daunce unto the rest,

For they can doo it best: The whiles the maydens doe theyr carroll sing,

To which the woods shall answer, and theyr

eccho ring. Ring ye the bels, ye yong men of the towne, And leave your wonted labors for this day:

This day is holy; doe ye write it downe, That ye for ever it remember may. This day the sunne is in his chiefest hight,

With Barnaby the bright, From whence declining daily by degrees, He somewhat loseth of his heat and light,

When once the Crab behind his back he sees. But for this time it ill ordained was,

To chose the longest day in all the yeare, And shortest night, when longest fitter weare: Yet never day so long, but late would passe.

Ring ye the bels, to make it weare away, And bonefiers make all day; And daunce about them, and about them sing, That all the woods may answer, and your

eccho ring. Ah! when will this long weary day have end, And lende me leave to come unto my love? How slowly do the houres theyr numbers spend? How slowly does sad Time his feathers move?

Hast thee, O fayrest Planet, to thy home, Within the Westerne fome:

Thy tyred steedes long since have need of rest. Be heard all night within,

Long though it be, at last I see it gloome, Long though it be, at last I see it gloome, Ne let false whispers, breed And the bright evening-star with golden creast Breake gentle sleepe with 1 Appeare out of the East. [love!! Let no deluding dreames, n

That all the host of heaven in rankes doost Ne let house-fyres, nor li-lead, [dread, Ne let the Pouke, nor other

And guydest lovers through the nights sad Nelet mischivous witches w How chearefully thou lookest from above, And seemst to laugh atweene thy twinkling

light,

As joying in the sight
Of these glad many, which for joy doe sing, Nor the night Raven, that
That all the woods them answer, and their Nor damned ghosts, cald up
Nor greely vultures, make

Now cease, ye damsels, you Enough it is that all the d Now day is doen, and nigh Now bring the Bryde into The night is come, now so

And in her bed her lay; Lay her in lillies and in vi-And silken courteins over l

In proud humility!

Like unto Maia, when as J. In Tempe, lying on the flow Twixt sleepe and wake, aft With bathing in the Acida

Now it is night, ye damsel: And leave my love alone, And leave likewise your for The woods no more shall

echo ring. Now welcome, night! thou pected, That long daies labour does

And all my cares, which cru Hast sumd in one, and can Spread thy broad wing ove That no man may us see; And in thy sable mantle us

From feare of perrill and fo Let no false treason seeke t Nor any dread disquiet onc The safety of our joy; But let the night be calme, Without tempestuous storn

Or lyke as when he with th And begot Majesty. And let the mayds and you Ne let the woods them i eccho ring.

Lyke as when Jove with fa When he begot the great T

Ne let false whispers, breed

Fayre childe of beauty! glorious lampe of Make sudden sad affrights

Ne let hob Goblins, names Fray us with things that be

unpleasant Quyre of Frogs still And thou, great Juno! which with awful wish theyr choking. [croking might I these theyr drery accents sing; woods them answer, nor theyr eccho

I Silence trew night-watches keepe, d Peace may in assurance rayne y Sleep, when it is tyme to sleepe, his limbs forth on your pleasant rne;
; an hundred little winged loves, s-fethered doves nd flutter round about your bed, secret darke, that none reproves v stealthes shal worke, and snares spread ray sweet anatches of delight. hrough covert night. of Venus, play your sports at will!
r pleasure, carelesse of your toyes,

re upon her paradise of joyes, t ye do, albe it good or ill. therefore attend your merry play, . soone be day :

e same, which at my window peepes? is that faire face that shines so that shines so that? In this, she that never sleepes, s about high heaven al the night? t goddesse, do thou not envy [thought, vith me to spy: likewise didst love, though now unares with thee wrought. to us be favorable now; of wemens labours thou hast charge, ration goodly dost enlarge hy will t'effect our wishfull vow. chast wombe informe with timely our comfort breed:

h we cease our hopefull hap to sing; ne woods us answere, nor our Eccho Be unto her a goodly ornament,

The lawes of wedlock still dost patronize; And the religion of the faith first plight With sacred rites hast taught to solemnize; And eeke for comfort often called art Of women in their smart; Eternally bind thou this lovely band, And all thy blessings unto us impart. And thou, glad Genius! in whose gentle hand The bridale bowre and geniall bed remaine, Without blemish or staine: And the sweet pleasures of theyr loves delight With secret ayde doest succour and supply, Till they bring forth the fruitfull progeny; Send us the timely fruit of this same night. And thou, fayre Hebe! and thou, Hymen free!

Grant that it may so be. Til which we cease your further prayse to sing;

Ne any woods shall answer, nor your Eccho ring. And ye high heavens, the temple of the gods,

In which a thousand torches flaming bright doth hinder you, that say or sing; Doe burne, that to us wretched earthly clods e woods now answer, nor your Eccho In dreadful darknesse lend desired light; And all ye powers which in the same remayne, More then we men can fayne! Poure out your blessing on us plentiously, And happy influence upon us raine, That we may raise a large posterity, Which from the earth, which they may long With lasting happinesse, рояневве Up to your haughty pallaces may mount; And, for the guerdon of theyr glorious merit, May heavenly tabernacles there inherit fleece of wooll, which privily ian shepherd once unto thee brought, So let us rest, sweet love, in hope of this, And cease till then our tymely joyes to sing : The woods no more us answer, nor our eccho ring!

> Song! made in lieu of many ornaments, With which my love should duly have been dect, Which cutting off through hasty accidents, Ye would not stay your dew time to expect, But promist both to recompens; And for short time an endlesse moniment

FOWRE HYMNES.

MADE BY

EDM. SPENSER.

TO THE RIGHT HONORABLE AND MOST VERTUOUS LADIES.

THE LADIE MARGARET.

COUNTESSE OF CUMBERLAND, AND

THE LADIE MARIE.

COUNTESSE OF WARWICKE.

HAVING in the greener times of my youth, I doe dedicate joyntly unto you two composed these former two Hymnes in the sisters, as to the most excellen praise of Love and Beautie, and finding that ornaments of all true love and be the same too much pleased those of like age in the one and the other kinde; l the same too much pleased those of like age in the one and the other kinde; I and disposition, which being too vehemently seeching you to vouchsafe the particular with that kind of affection, do rather them, and to accept this my hum sucke out poyson to their strong passion, then in lieu of the great graces and hony to their honest delight, I was moved by favours which ye dayly shew unto the one of you two most excellent Ladies, to such time as I may, by better me call in the same. But, being unable so to doe, you some more matched testime by reason that many copies thereof were forthankfull mind and Jutifull devo merly scattered abroad, I resolved at least to even so I pray for your happiness amend, and, by way of retractation, to reforme wich this first of September, I them, making, in stead of those two Hymnes Honors most bounded ever them, making, in stead of those two Hymnes Honors most bounden ever, of earthly or naturall love and beautie, two-others of heavenly and celestiall. The which

in all humble s

AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF LOVE.

Love, that long since hast to thy mighty Of mighty Victors, with wyde w Perforce subdude my poore captived hart,

And, raging now therein with restlesse stowre.

Doest tyrannize in everie weaker part : Faine would I seeke to ease my bitter smart By any service I might do to thee,

Or ought that else might to thee pleasing bee. And now t' asswage the force of this new

flame And make thee more propitious in my need, I meane to sing the praises of thy name, And thy victorious conquests to areed.

By which thou madest many harts to bleed

brewed,

And by thy cruell darts to thee su

Onely I feare my wits enfeebled is Through the sharpe sorrowes which me bred.

Should faint, and words should ! The wondrous triumphs of my grea But, if thou wouldst vouchsafe to Me with the shadow of thy gentle I should enabled be thy actes to si

Come, then, O come, thou migh

Out of thy silver bowres and secre

AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF LOVE.

593

in Venus lap above ı her ambrosiall kiss en any Nectar is; feeble breast inspire ndled of thy fire.

ses! which have often

f his avengefull darts; ! which oftentimes have

your kindly smarts ind open wide your harts amph of your glorie, erie oft when ye were

mes of youths wanton

sts of your beautie bost, rs feeble eyes you feed, s that needeth nourture [host,

to march amongst his sacred hymne do sing, your Soveraigne king. GHT, that reignest in the

hy hest doest frame. er of mankynd, and fell Tigers tame, ige thy scornefull game, iking great delight;

glorie of thy might? ectly declare of thine infancie, ier Venus first thee bare.

of Penurie, ine owne nativitie. wing still thy yeares, the heavenly Peares? ill moving mightie masse zly prison crept, ace long hidden was

ong time securely slept ed then and naked, y Clotho being waked: ings of his owne heate,

and in deepe darknesse

heavens life-giving fyre, of his idle seate; after with desyre mount up hyre,

, make his hardie flight it wide wast, yet wanting

Yet wanting light to guide his wandring way, His owne faire mother, for all creatures sake, Did lend him light from her owne goodly ray; Then through the world his way he gan to take, The world, that was not till he did it make

Whose sundrie parts he from themselves did sever The which before had lyen confused ever.

The earth, the ayre, the water, and the fyre, Then gan to raunge them selves in huge array, And with contrary forces to conspyre Each against other by all meanes they may, Threatning their owne confusion and decay: Ayre hated earth, and water hated fyre,

Till Love relented their rebellious yre.

He then them tooke, and, tempering goodly well Their contrary dislikes with loved meanes, Did place them all in order, and compell To keepe them selves within their sundrie

raines Together linkt with Adamantine chaines; Yet so, as that in every living wight They mixe themselves, and shew their kindly might.

So ever since they firmely have remained, And duly well observed his beheast; Through which now all these things that are contained

Within this goodly cope, both most and least, Their being have, and dayly are increast Through secret sparks of his infused fyre, Which in the barraine cold he doth inspyre.

Thereby they all do live, and moved are To multiply the likenesse of their kynd Whilest they seeke onely, without further

care, To quench the flame which they in burning But man that breathes a more immortall mynd. Not for lusts sake, but for eternitie, Seekes to enlarge his lasting progenie;

For, having yet in his deducted spright Some sparks remaining of that heavenly fyre, He is enlumind with that goodly light, Unto like goodly semblant to aspyre; Therefore in choice of love he doth desyre That seemes on carth most heavenly to em-

brace, That same is Beautie, borne of heavenly race. For sure of all that in this mortall frame Contained is, nought more divine doth seeme, ()r that resembleth more th' immortall flame Of heavenly light, then Beautics glorious

beame.

Thenceforth they playne, and make ful piteous mone

. ... were with consuming griefe.

Unto the author of their balefull bane:

The daies they waste, the nights they grieve For love i and grone, [daine; Lifting him Their lives they loath, and heavens light dis- On golden

No light but that, whose lampe doth yet remaine; Above the Fresh burning in the image of their eye, They deigne to see, and seeing it still dye.

That whilst thou tyrant Love doest laugh and But like a scorne

At their complaints, making their paine thy Whylest they lye languishing like thrals for-

lorne, The whyles thou doest triumph in their decay :

And otherwhyles, their dying to delay, Thou doest emmarble the proud hart of her

Whose love before their life they doe prefer. So hast thou often done (ay me, the more!)

To me thy vassall, whose yet bleeding hart With thousand wounds thou mangled hast so sore, That whole remaines scarse any little part;

That no one drop of pitie there doth rest. Why then do I this honor unto thee, Thus to ennoble thy victorious name. Since thou doest shew no favour unto mee,

Yet, to augment the anguish of my smart, Thou hast enfrosen her dislainefull brest,

Ne once move ruth in that rebellious Dame Somewhat to alast.

But basel les: Which at

Such fanc.

Whose bas Of his wea

[play, His dungh enur

To dirtie di Ne can his t The flaming Which kind And makes

Of heavie ea Such is 🚨 That & Le

Unto a faire In his high Which he be Admires the Whose imag

He thereon i Still full, vet Like Tantale

AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF LOVE.

rth so heavenly to have seene rined saint, his heavens queene, rest, in his fayning eye, ect he counts felicitye.

casts in his unquiet thought, do, her favour to obtaine exploit, what perill hardly paine,

anger, nor misfortune feares, ortune, in his breast he beares, ed, thou art his mightie guyde, ind, letst him not see his feares, to that which he hath evde, through flames, through thouords and speares; stand, ong that may his force withou armest his resistlesse hand. ler in the Euxine waves, as in the Trojane fyre, sing through the Phrygian

laring to provoke the yre ds, to get his love retyre; [way zh heaven and hell thou makest orship which to thee obay. hese perils and these paynes, rchase lyking in her eve. of joy then to himselfe he

vpes quite out of memory fore he did aby : ath, yet would he die againe, ppie as her grace to gaine. ath found favour to his will, can so contented rest, ther on, and striveth still re neare, till in her inmost

omd bee and loved best; st, but to be lov'd alone; t endure a Paragone. eof, O how doth it torment

such happie grace did to him The gnawing envie, the hart-fretting feare, The vaine surmizes, the distrustfull showes. The false reports that flying tales doe beare, The doubts, the daungers, the delayes, the woes.

595

The favned friends, the unassured foes, [tell, With thousands more then any tongue can Doe make a lovers life a wretches hell

Yet is there one more cursed then they all. That cancker-worme, that monster, Gelosie t conquest, what adventurous Which eates the hart and feedes upon the gall, er best, and grace unto him Turning all loves delight to miserie, Through feare of loosing his felicitie. Ah, Gods! that ever ye that monster placed In gentle love, that all his joyes defaced!

By these, O Love! thou doest thy entrance make

Unto thy heaven, and doest the more endeere Thy pleasures unto those which them partake, As after stormes, when clouds begin to cleare, The Sunne more bright and glorious doth appeare;

So thou thy folke, through paines of Purgatorie Dost bearc unto thy blisse, and heavens glorie.

There thou them placest in a Paradize Of all delight and joyous happie rest, Where they doe feede on Nectar heavenly-wize, With Hercules and Hebe, and the rest Of Venus dearlings, through her bountie blest; And lie like Gods in vvorie beds aravd. With rose and lillies over them displayd.

There with thy daughter Pleasure they doe play [blame, Their hurtlesse sports, without rebuke or And in her snowy bosome boldly lay Their quiet heads, devoyd of guilty shame, After full joyance of their gentle game; Then her they crowne their Goddesse and their Queene. And decke with floures thy altars well beseene.

Ay me! deare Lord! that ever I might hope, For all the paines and woes that I endure, To come at length unto the wished scope Of my desire, or might myselfe assure That happie port for ever to recure! [all, Then would I thinke these paines no paines at

And all my woes to be but penance small. nynd with more then hellish Then would I sing of thine immortall praise An heavenly Hymne, such as the Angels sing, ing fansie represent [vaine, And thy triumphant name then would I raise eene, and thousand shadowes Bove all the gods, thee onely honoring

eepe, and thousand sandowes beve at the good, thee only honoring eepe, and waste his ydle braine: My guide, my God, my victor, and my king: never lov'd canst not believe th' evils which poore lovers Till then, dread Lord! vouchsafe to take of me th' evils which poore lovers This simple song, thus fram'd in praise of thee.

AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF BEAUTIE.

And whither, Love! wilt thou now carrie mee? What wontlesse fury dost thou now inspire Into my feeble breast, too full of thee? Whylest seeking to aslake thy raging fyre, Thou in me kindlest much more great desyre, And up aloft above my strength doest rayse. The wondrous matter of my fyre to prayse.

That as I carst, in praise of thine owne name, So now in honour of thy Mother deare, An honourable Hymne I eke should frame, And, with the brightnesse of her beautic cleare, The ravisht harts of gazefull men might reare To admiration of that heavenly light, From whence proceeds such soule-enchaunting might.

Therto do thou, great Goddesse! Queene of Beauty,

Mother of love, and of all worlds delight, Without whose soverayne grace and kindly dewty

Nothing on earth seemes fayre to fleshly sight, Doe thou vouchsafe with thy love-kindling light

T' illuminate my dim and dulled cyne, And beautifie this sacred hymne of thyne:

That both to thee, to whom I meane it most, And eke to her, whose faire immortall beame Hath darted fyre into my feeble ghost, That now it wasted is with woes extreame, It may so please, that she at length will streame. Some deaw of grace into my withered hart, After long sorrow and consuming smart.

WHAT TIME THIS WORLDS GREAT WORK-MAISTER DID CAST

To make al things such as we now behold, It seemes that he before his eyes had plast A goodly Paterne, to whose perfect mould He fashiond them as comely as he could, That now so faire and seemely they appeare, As nought may be amended any wheare.

That wondrous Paterne, wheresoere it bee, Whether in earth layd up in secret store, Or else in heaven, that no man may it see With sinfull eyes, for feare it to deflore, Is perfect Beautie, which all men adore; Whose face and feature doth so much excell All mortall sence, that none the same may tell.

Thereof as every earthly thing partakes Or more or lesse, by influence divine, So it more fairs accordingly it makes, And the grosse matter of this earthly Which clotheth it thereafter doth ref Doing away the drosse which thus it Of that faire beame which therein is

For, through infusion of celestial pow The duller earth it quickneth with da And life-full spirits privily doth pow Through all the parts, that to the look They seeme to please; That is thy a might,

O Cyprian Queene! which flowing!
Of thy bright starre, thou into the
streame.

That is the thing which giveth pleas To all things faire, that kindleth live Light of thy lampe; which, shysin face,

Thence to the soule darts amorous and And robs the harts of those which it Therewith thou pointest thy Sons arrow,

That wounds the life, and wastes if How vainely then doe yelle wits inv That beautie is nought else but mis Of colours faire, and goodly temp'is Of pure complexions, that shall qui And passe away, like to a sommers Or that it is but comely composition of parts well measurd, with meet di

Hath white and red in it such wonds That it can pierce through th' eye hart,

And therein stirre such rage an As nought but death can stint I smart?

Or can proportion of the outward ps Move such affection in the inward. That it can rob both sense, and rea

Why doe not then the blossomes of Which are arayd with much more. And to the sense most daintie odos. Worke like impression in the looke Or why doe not faire pictures like In which off-times we nature see of Exceld, in perfect limming every p

But ah! believe me there is more That workes such wonders in the men;



AN HYMNE IN HONOUR OF BEAUTIE.

ften prov'd, too well it know, st the like assayes to ken, tryall, and confesse it then, is not, as fond men misdeeme, new of things that onely seeme.

goodly hew of white and red. he cheekes are sprinckled, shal

ete rosy leaves, so fairely spred , shall fade and fall away were, even to corrupted clay:

lampe, from whose celestiall rav roceedes, which kindleth lovers

s extinguisht nor decay; vitall spirits doe expyre, ve planet shall retyre; enly borne and can not die, il of the purest skie.

soule, the which derived was of that great immortall Spright, live to love, whilome did pas the top of purest heavens hight

ed here, it then tooke light irits from that fayrest starre the world forth from his firie

retayning still or more or lesse, fleshly seede is eft enraced, ry part she doth the same im

the heavens have her graced her house, in which she will be

lfe, adorning it with spoyle nly riches which she robd ere-

ses that these faire soules, which

emblance of that heavenly light, emselves most beautifull and

bowre, most fit for their delight, e matter by a soveraine might rim, that it may well be seene for such a virgin Queene.

it, as it is most pure, it the more of heavenly light, er bodie doth procure and it more fairely dight ull grace and amiable sight; ile the bodie forme doth take orme, and doth the bodie make. Therefore where-ever that thou doest behold A comely corpse, with beautic faire endewed, Know this for certaine, that the same doth hold

A beauteous soule, with faire conditions thewed, Fit to receive the seede of vertue strewed; For all that faire is, is by nature good; That is a signe to know the gentle blood.

Yet oft it falles that many a gentle mynd Dwels in deformed tabernacle drownd, Either by chaunce, against the course of kynd, wyre, those sparckling stars so Or through unaptnesse in the substance found,

iust, and loose their goodly light. Which it assumed of some stubborne grownd, That will not yield unto her formes direction, But is deform'd with some foule imperfection,

[fire, And oft it falles, (aye me, the more to rew!)
That goodly beautie, albe heavenly borne, Is foule abusd, and that celestiall hew, Which doth the world with her delight adorne, Made but the bait of sinne, and sinners scorne, Whilest every one doth seeke and sew to have

it, But every one doth seeke but to deprave it. Yet nathëmore is that faire beauties blame, But theirs that do abuse it unto ill: Nothing so good, but that through guilty

shame May be corrupt, and wrested unto will: Nathelesse the soule is faire and beauteous

still. How ever fleshes fault it filthy make; For things immortall no corruption take.

But ye, faire Dames! the worlds deare ornaments

And lively images of heavens light, Let not your beames with such disparagements

Be dimd, and your bright glorie darkned quight; But, mindfull still of your first countries sight, Doe still preserve your first informed grace, Whose shadow yet shynes in your beauteous face.

Loath that foule blot, that hellish fierbrand, Disloiall lust faire beauties foulest blame, That base affections, which your eares would bland

Commend to you by loves abused name, But is indeede the hondslave of defame; Which will the garland of your glorie marre, And quench the light of your bright shyning starre.

But gentle Love, that loiall is and trew. Will more illumine your resplendent ray,

And adde more brightnesse to your goodly hew, And with his spirits proportion to From light of his pure fire; which, by like He thereon fixeth all his fantasic,

Kindled of yours, your likenesse doth display; Like as two mirrours, by opposd reflexion, Doe both expresse the faces first impression.

Therefore, to make your beautie more appeare, It you behoves to love, and forth to lay That heavenly riches which in you ye beare, Through mutuall receipt of beams. That men the more admyre their fountaine Which carrie privie message to the

may; For else what booteth that celestiall ray, If it in darknesse be enshrined ever, That it of loving eyes be vewed never?

But, in your choice of Loves, this well advize, That likest to your selves ye them select, The which your forms first sourse may sym-pathize,

And with like beauties parts be inly deckt;

For, if you loosely love without respect, It is no love, but a discordant warre, Whose unlike parts amongst themselves do jarre.

For Love is a celestiall harmonie Of likely harts composd of starres concent, Which joyne together in sweete sympathie, To worke ech others joy and true content, Which they have harbourd since their first.

descent Out of their heavenly bowres, where they did And know ech other here belov'd to bee.

Then wrong it were that any other twaine Should in loves gentle band combyned bee But those whom heaven did at first ordaine, And made out of one mould the more t'agree; For all, that like the beautie which they see, Streight do not love; for Love is not so light But on her lips, like rosy buds in As streight to burne at first beholders sight. So many millions of chaste pleasur As streight to burne at first beholders sight.

But they, which love indeede, looke otherwise, With pure regard and spotlesse true intent, Drawing out of the object of their eyes A more refyned forme, which they present Unto their mind, voide of all blemishment;

Which it reducing to her first perfection Beholdeth free from fleshes frayle infection.

And then conforming it unto the light Which in it selfe it hath remaining still, Of that first Sunne, yet sparckling in his sight, Thereof he fashions in his higher skill An heavenly beautie to his fancies will; And, it embracing in his mind entyre, The mirrour of his owne thought doth admyre.

Which seeing now so inly faire to be, As outward it appeareth to the eye,

And fully setteth his felicitie; Counting it fairer then it is indeed

And yet indeede her fairenesse de For lovers eyes more sharply sight

Then other mens, and 'u deare los See more then any other eyes can And to their eyes that immost fair. As plaine as light discovers dawn

Therein they see, through am glaunces.

Armies of Loves still flying too an Which dart at them their litle fier Whom having wounded, backe age Carrying compassion to their love Who, seeing her faire eyes so shar Cures all their sorrowes with

aspect. In which how many wonders doe t To their conceipt, that others neve Now of her smiles, with which they feede. Like Gods with Nectar in their ba

Now of her lookes, which like to (But when her words embássade fort [see Lord, how sweete musicke that lends!

> Sometimes upon her forhead they A thousand Graces masking in del Sometimes within her eye-lids the Ten thousand sweet belgards, wh sight Doe seeme like twinckling starn

All those, O Cytherea! and thouse Thy handmaides be, which do on t To decke thy beautie with their da That may it more to mortall eyes o And make it more admyr'd of fee ! That in mens harts thou mayst enstall,

And spred thy lovely kingdome or

Then Iö, tryumph! O great Beaut Advance the banner of thy conque That all this world, the which beene,

May draw to thee, and with dew fi Adore the powre of thy great Maje Singing this Hymne in honour of t Compyld by me, which thy poore lie

AN IIYMNE IN HONOUR OF REAUTIE. 274-287.]

lieu whereof graunt, O great Soveraine! captive

r trembling hart in her eternall chaine, drop of grace at length will to me give, at I her bounden thrall by her may live, reaved.

Ly owe to her, of whom I it receaved.

And you, faire Venus dearling, my deare dread! at she, whose conquering beautie doth Fresh flowre of grace, great Goddesse of my life. read

599

When your faire eyes these fearefull lines shal Deigne to let fall one drop of dew reliefe, That may recure my harts long pyning griefe,

d this same life, which first fro me she And shew what wondrous powre your beauty hath,

That can restore a damned wight from death,

AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY LOVE.

WE, lift me up upon thy golden wings am this base world unto thy heavens hight. bere I may see those admirable things bich there thou workest by thy soveraine

might. are above feeble reach of earthly sight, at I thereof an heavenly Hymne may sing ato the God of Love, high heavens king.

any lewd layes (ah! woe is me the more!) praise of that mad fit which fooles call

love, have in th' heat of youth made heretofore, in light wits did loose affection move : all those follies now I do reprove. and turned have the tenor of my string.

be beavenly prayses of true love to sing. ad ye that wont with greedy vaine desire

d in her ashes shrowd my dying shame; who my passed follies now pursewes,

REFORE THIS WORLDS GREAT FRAME, in which al thing-

now containd, found any being-place, flitting Time could wag his eyas wings

brace n rolling Spheres, and parts their houres gold.) move

all these things, mov'd in it selfe by love.

lov'd it selfe, because it selfe was faire; faire is lov'd;) and of it selfe begot, **to it selfe his eldest sonne and heire,** mall, pure, and voide of sinfull blot, firstling of his joy, in whom no jot loves dislike or pride was to be found,

crownd.

With him he raignd, before all time prescribed, In endlesse glorie and immortall might, Together with that third from them derived

Most wise, most holy, most almightic Spright! Whose kingdomes throne no thought of earthly wight Can comprehend, much lesse my trembling With equall words can hope it to reherse.

Yet, O most blessed Spirit! pure lampe of light.

Eternall spring of grace and wisedome trew, Vouchsafe to shed into my barren spright

Some little drop of thy celestiall dew That may my rymes with sweet infuse embrew,

And give me words equall unto my thought, To tell the marveiles by thy mercic wrought.

reade my fault, and, wondring at my tlame. Yet being pregnant still with powrefull grace, warme your selves at my wide sparckling And full of truitfull love, that loves to get fire, | blame, Things like himselfe, and to enlarge his race, now that heat is quenched, quench my His second broad, though not in powre so great.

Yet full of beautie, next he did beget An infinite increase of Angels bright, All glistring glorious in their Makers light,

To them the heavens illimitable hight (Not this round heaven, which we from hence behold,

bout that mightie bound which doth em- Adornd with thousand lamps of burning light, [by space, And with ten thousand gemmes of shyning

> That they might serve him in cternall blis, And be partakers of those joyes of his.

There they in their trinall triplicities About him wait, and on his will depend, Either with nimble wings to cut the skies, When he them on his messages doth send. Or on his owne dread presence to attend, res dislike or pride was to be found, Where they behold the glorie of his light, in he therefore with equall honour And caroll Hymnes of love both day

night.



we or mer first condition. And sit in Gods owne seat without commission: The brightest Angell, even the Child of Light, Drew millions more against their God to fight

Th' Almighty, seeing their so bold assay,

Kindled the flame of His consuming yre, And with His onely breath them blew away He downe From heavens hight, to which they did aspyre, And abject To deepest hell, and lake of damned fyre, Where they in darknesse and dread horror

That He for And him re dwell. In which he Hating the happie light from which they fell In flesh at fi Therefore in

So that next off-spring of the Makers love, Next to Himselfe in glorious degree,

Degendering to hate, fell from above Through pride, (for pride and le agree)

So, taking the And now of sinne to all ensample bee? How then can sinfull flesh itselfe assure, For mans der Sith purest Angels fell to be impure? And that mos Without all b But that Eternall Fount of love and grace, He freely gav Of cruell han

Still flowing forth His goodnesse unto all, Now seeing left a waste and emptie place In His wyde Pallace, through those Angels fall,

Cast to supply the same, and to enstall A new unknowen Colony therein, Whose root from earths base groundworke O huge and m

shold begin.

Therefore of clay, base, vile, and next to Of that deare nought, [might.

Of loves deep hart

In that de

Him, wre

But cast o And pay th

Out of the

In which h

Nor spirit, n

pas, Could make

But onely ma

dwe

Revyling him

At length hin

And slew the

AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY LOVE.

nage of thy Fathers face, g of Glorie, Lord of Might, e of God, before all worlds be-

thee requite for all this good? 1 prize that thy most precious

hou ask'st in lieu of all this love, s, for guerdon of thy paine: t can us lesse then that behove? red life of us againe, e wrong to aske his owne with The glory of our heavenly riches lay, ife, he it restored lost; re least, that us so litle cost.

fe hath left unto us free, [band; s thrall, and blessed that was naunds but that we loving bee, fe hath lov'd us afore-hand, herto with an eternall band, love that us so dearely bought, r brethren, to his image wrought.

love great right and reason is, us our life and being gave, hen we first, had amisse, from the steend death did save; food of life, which now we have, selfe, in his deare sacrament, hungry soules, unto us lent.

to love our brethren, that were

mould, and that selfe Makers hand, I to the same againe shall fade. shall have like heritage of land, ere on higher steps we stand, were with selfe-same price re

эd w ever of us light esteemed.

ey not, yet since that loving Lord d us to love them for his sake, sake, and for his sacred word, s last bequest he to us spake, them love, and with their needs

at, whatsoere to them we give, him by whom we all doe live.

he by his most holy reede ght, and to approve it trew, it by his most righteous deede, mercie (miserable crew!)

ill of Love! O Floure of Grace! And love our brethren; thereby to approve Morning-Starre! O Lampe of How much, himselfe that loved us, we love.

Then rouze thy selfe, O Earth! out of thy soyle,

In which thou wallowest like to filthy swyne, And doest thy mynd in durty pleasures moyle, Unmindfull of that dearest Lord of thyne; Lift up to him thy heavie clouded eyne, That thou his soveraine bountie mayst behold,

And read, through love, his mercies manifold. Beginne from first, where he encradled was In simple cratch, wrapt in a wad of hav, Betweene the toylefull Oxe and humble Asse,

When him the silly Shepheards came to see, Whom greatest Princes sought on lowest knee.

From thence reade on the storie of his life, His humble carriage, his unfaulty wayes, His cancred foes, his fights, his toyle, his

strife,
His paines, his povertie, his sharpe assayes,
Through which he past his miserable dayes,
Offending none, and doing good to all,

Yet being malist both of great and small. And looke at last, how of most wretched wights He taken was, betrayd, and false accused; How with most scornefull taunts, and fell des

pights He was revyld, disgrast, and foule abused; How scourgd, how crownd, how buffeted, how brused:

And lastly, how twixt robbers crucifyde, With bitter wounds through hands, through feet, and syde!

Then let thy flinty hart, that feeles no paine, Empierced be with pittifull remorse, And let thy bowels bleede in every vaine, At sight of his most sacred heavenly cors So torne and mangled with malicious forse; And let thy soule, whose sins his sorrows wrought,

Melt into teares, and grone in grieved thought. With sence whereof, whilest so thy softened

spirit Is inly toucht, and humbled with meeke zeale Through meditation of his endlesse merit, Lift up thy mind to th' Author of thy weale, And to his soveraine mercie doe appeale; Learne him to love that loved thee so deare, And in thy brest his blessed image beare.

With all thy hart, with all thy soule and mind. [brace; : like should to the wretches shew, Thou must him love, and his behearts see Weake fancies, and stirre up affections base,

Thou must renounce and atterly displace, And give thy selfe unto him full and free, That full and freely gave himselfe to thee,

Then shalt thou feele thy spirit so possest, And ravisht with devouring great desire Of his deare selfe, that shall thy feeble brest Inflame with love, and set thee all on fire With burning zeale, through every part entire, That in no earthly thing thou shalt delight, But in his sweet and amiable sight,

Thenceforth all worlds desire will in thee dye, And all earthes glorie, on which men do gaze,

All other loves, with which the world doth Seems durt and drosse in thy pure sighted blind

Compar'd to that celestiall beauties blaze Whose glorious beames all deshly sense

With admiration of their passing light, Blinding the eyes, and Inmining the sprig

Then shall thy ravisht soule inspired be. With heavenly thoughts farry above his

And thy bright radiant eyes shall plained Th' Idee of his pure glorie present still Before thy face, that all thy spirits shall With sweete enragement of celestial low Kindled through sight of three fairs the above.

AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY BEAUTIE

RAPT with the rage of mine own ravisht Of this wyde universe, and therein ned thought,

Through contemplation of those goodly sights, And glorious images in heaven wrought, Whose wondrous beauty, breathing sweet delights

Do kindle love in high conceipted sprights; I faine to tell the things that I behold, But feele my wits to faile, and tongue to fold.

Vouchsafe then, O thou most Atmightie Luow. Spright!

From whom all guifts of wit and knowledge To shed into my breast some sparkling light Of thine eternall Truth, that I may show Some litle beames to mortall eyes below Of that immortall beautie, there with thee, Which in my weake distraughted mynd I see;

That with the glorie of so goodly sight The hearts of men, which fondly here admyre Faire seeming shewes, and feed on vaine Transported with celestiall desyre [delight, Of those faire formes, may lift themselves up Ayre more then water, fire much w

hyer, And learne to love, with zealous humble dewty, Th' eternall fountaine of that heavenly beauty.

Beginning then below, with th' easie vew Of this base world, subject to fleshly eye, From thence to mount aloft, by order dew, To contemplation of th' immortall sky; Of the soare faulcon so I learne to fly, That flags awhile her fluttering wings beneath,

Till she her selfe for stronger flight can breath. Then looke, who list thy gazefull eyes to feed day,
With sight of that is faire, looke on the frame As King and Queene, the heavens Empire

The endlesse kinds of creatures which by aime ; All which are made with wondrous wisers

And all with admirable beautic deckt.

First, th' Earth, on adamantine pillers for Amid the Sen, engirt with brasen bands; Then th' Aire still flitting, but yet for bounded

On everie side, with pyles of flaming by Never consum'd, nor quencht with m hands:

And, last, that mightle shining christali Wherewith he hath encompassed this All

By view whereof it plainly may appear That still as every thing doth upward i And further is from earth, so still more And faire it growes, till to his perfect of [delight, Of purest beautie it at last ascend; And heaven then fire, appeares more pur favre.

> Looke thou no further, but affixe thins e On that bright shynie round will a

> Masse, The house of blessed God, which as All sowd with glistring stars mere thick

Whereof each other doth in brightness But those two most, which, ruling me

AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY BEAUTIE.

1. what hast thou ever seene sutie may compared bee. ptains flaming head to see ? those, much higher in degree, er then the land and seas? argenesse and in hight, rrupt, and spotlesse bright, nnet' illuminate their spheres, ative light farre passing theirs. ivens still by degrees arize, e to their first Movers bound, itie compasse doth comprize, ie rest with him around: e doe by degrees redound. ire, till they at last arive it of felicitie. ternall Majestie;

it, where those idees on hie thich Plato so admyred, gences from God inspyred. t heaven, in which doe raine owres and mightie Potentates,

ces and imperiall States; whereas the royall Seates ominations are set, earthly governance is fet.

ire be those bright Cherubins, golden wings are overdight, all burning Seraphins ir faces dart out fierie light; they both, and much more

nd Archangels, which attend person, without rest or end.

ire each other farre excelling, est they approch more neare, test farre beyond all telling, he rest which there appeare, eir beauties joynd together

ortall tongue hope to expresse ich endlesse perfectnesse? tongue! and lend unto my

ke how great that beautie is parts so beautifull I fynd;

How much more those essentiall parts of his, His truth, his love, his wisedome, and his blis, that is most sharpe or keene His grace, his doome, his mercy, and his might,

might, By which he lends us of himselfe a sight! er, and much more then these, Those unto all he daily doth display And show himselfe in th' image of his grace, these heavens, which here we As in a looking glasse, through which he may xceeding these in light, [see, Be seene of all his creatures vile and base, t corrupt, as these same bee, That are unable else to see his face, [bright, That are unable else to see his face, [bright, His glorious face! which glistereth else so That th' Angels selves can not endure his sight.

> But we, fraile wights! whose sight cannot sustaine shyne, The Suns bright beames when he on us doth But that their points rebutted backe againe

Are duld, how can we see with feeble evne The glory of that Majestie Divine, darke, In sight of whom both Sun and Moone are e, whereto they all do strive. Compared to his least resplendent sparke?

ren where happy soules have The meanes, therefore, which unto us is lent [place, Him to behold, is on his workes to looke, e still behold the glorious face Which he hath made in beauty excellent, And in the same, as in a brasen booke, To reade enregistred in every nooke His goodnesse, which his beautie doth declare; For all thats good is beautifull and faire.

Thence gathering plumes of perfect speculation. To impe the wings of thy high flying mynd, nigh protections doe containe Mount up aloft through heavenly contem-

plation, soule do blynd, From this darke world, whose damps the And, like the native brood of Eagles kynd, On that bright Sunne of Glorie fixe thine eyes, Clear'd from grosse mists of fraile infirmities.

Humbled with feare and awfull reverence, Before the footestoole of his Majestie Throw thy selfe downe, with trembling inno-Ne dare looke up with corruptible eve f cence, On the dred face of that great Deity For feare, lest if he chaunce to looke on thee, Thou turne to nought, and quite confounded be.

But lowly fall before his mercie seate, Close covered with the Lambes integrity From the just wrath of his avengefull threate That sits upon the righteous throne on hy; His throne is built upon Eternity. More firme and durable then steele or brasse Or the hard diamond, which them both doth

passe. His scepter is the rod of Righteousnesse.

With which he bruseth all his foes to dust, And the great Dragon strongly doth repress Under the rigour of his judgement just; His seate is Truth, to which the faithfull trust, From whence proceed her beames so pure and bright That all about him sheddeth glorious light:

Light, farre exceeding that bright blazing parke Which darted is from Titans flaming head, That with his beames enlumineth the darke

And dampish aire, whereby al things are red; Whose nature yet so much is marvelled Of mortall wits, that it doth much amaze

The greatest wisards which thereon do gaze. But that immortall light, which there doth [cleare, shine

Is many thousand times more bright, more More excellent, more glorious, more divine, Through which to God all mortall actions here, And even the thoughts of men, do plaine appeare

For from th' Eternall Truth it doth proceed, Through heavenly vertue which her beames doe breed.

With the great glorie of that wondrous light His throne is all encompassed around, And hid in his owne brightnesse from the sight Of all that looke thereon with eyes unsound;

And underneath his feet are to be found Thunder, and lightning, and tempestuous fyre, The instruments of his avenging yre. There in his bosome Sapience doth sit,

The soveraine dearling of the Deity, Clad like a Queene in royall robes, most fit For so great powre and peerelesse majesty, And all with gemmes and jewels gorgeously Adornd, that brighter then the starres appeare, And make her native brightnes seem more cleare.

And on her head a crowne of purest gold Is set, in signe of highest soveraignty And in her hand a scepter she doth hold With which she rules the house of God on hy, And menageth the ever-moving sky, And in the same these lower creatures all Subjected to her powre imperiall.

And all the creatures which they both containe; For of her fulnesse which the world doth fill They all partake, and do in state remaine As their great Maker did at first ordaine,
Through observation of her high beheast,
By which they first were made, and still in-None thereof worth be, but those w creast.

Both heaven and earth obey unto her will

For she the daughters of all wemens And Angels eke, in beautie doth exc Sparkled on her from Gods owne glos And more increast by her owne good That it doth farre exceed all human Ne can on earth compared be to our

The fairenesse of her face no tongue

Ne could that Painter (had he lived Which pictured Venus with so curio That all posteritie admyred it, Have purtrayd this, for all his maist

Ne she her selfe, had she remained s And were as faire as fabling wits do Could once come neare this beauty s

But had those wits, the wonders of the Or that sweete Teian Poet, which d His plenteous vaine in setting prayse, Seene but a glims of this which I pr How wondrously would he her face

That all the world shold with his fraught! How then dare I, the novice of his Presume to picture so divine a wigh Or hope t' expresse her least perfecti Whose beautie filles the heavens with

Above that Idole of his favning thou

And darkes the earth with shad-sight? Ah, gentle Muse! thou art too weake The pourtraict of so heavenly hew to

Let Angels, which her goodly face be And see at will, her soveraigne prais And those most sacred mysteries un Of that faire love of mightie heaven Enough is me t' admyre so heavenly And, being thus with her huge love In th' only wonder of her selfe to re-But who so may, thrise happie man Of all on earth whom God so much d And lets his owne Beloved to behold

For in the view of her celestiall face All joy, all blisse, all happinesse, have ought on earth can want unto the Who of her selfe can win the wishful For she, out of her secret threasur Plentie of riches forth on him will p Even heavenly riches, which there h

Within the closet of her chastest box Th' eternall portion of her precious d Which mighty God bath given to be And to all those which thereof worth

Vouchsaleth to her presence to reces



AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY BEAUTIE. 1**1.**]

605

h them her lovely face to see. such wondrous pleasures they conre, contentment, that it doth bereave e of sense, through infinite delight, transport from flesh into the spright. they see such admirable things, them into an extasy, igh praise, that filles the brasen sky; such joy and pleasure inwardly, eth them all worldly cares forget, thinke on that before them set, henceforth doth any fleshly sense, ought of earthly things, remaine; hat earst seemd sweet seemes now

at pleased earst now seemes to paine; their comfort, their desire, their gaine, I on that which now they see; sights but fayned shadowes bec. faire lampe, which useth to inflame s of men with selfe-consuming fyre

th seemes fowle, and full of sinfull me; [aspyre things; that pompe to which proud minds With whose sweete pleasures being so possest,

of honor, and so much desyre,

Seemes to them basenesse, and all riches drosse. And all mirth sadnesse, and all lucre losse.

So full their eyes are of that glorious sight, And senses fraught with such satietie. That in nought else on earth they can delight, But in th' aspect of that felicitie, Which they have written in their inward ey;

On which they feed, and in their fastened mynd such heavenly notes and carolings, All happie joy and full contentment fynd.

> Ah, then, my hungry soule' which long hast On idle fancies of thy foolish thought, [fed On idle fancies of thy foolish thought, [fed And, with false beauties flattring bait misled, Hast after vaine deceiptfull shadowes sought, Which all are fled, and now have left thee nought

> But late repentance through thy follies prief; Ah! ceasse to gaze on matter of thy grief:

And looke at last up to that Soveraine Light, From whose pure beams al perfect beauty springs, That kindleth love in every godly spright Even the love of God; which loathing brings Of this vile world and these gay-seeming things;

Thy straying thoughts henceforth for ever rest.

PROTHALAMION.

OR.

SPOUSALL VERSE.

MADE BY

EDM. SPENSER.

'B OF THE DOUBLE MARIAGE OF THE TWO HONORABLE AND VERTUOUS LADIES. LADIE ELIZABETH, AND THE LADIE KATHERINE SOMERSET, DAUGHTERS TO THE T HONOURABLE THE EARLE OF WORCESTER, AND ESPOUSED TO THE TWO WORTHIE LEMEN M. HENRY GILFORD, AND M. WILLIAM PETER, ESQUYERS.

eathing Zephyrus did softly play pirit, that lightly did delay Was paynted all with variable nowers, which then did glyster And all the meades adornd with daintie is beames, which whom sullein care, fayre; liscontent of my long fruitlesse stay Court, and expectation vayne pes, which still doe fly away, y shaddowes, did afflict my brayne,) h to case my payne

is the day, and through the trem- Along the shoare of silver streaming Themmes; ig ayre Whose rutty Bancke, he which his River

hemmes

gemmes
Fit to decke maydens bowres, And crowne their Paramours

Against the Brydale day, which is not long: Sweete Themmes! runne softly, till I end my Song

There, in a Meadow, by the Rivers side, A Flocke of Nymphes I chaunced to espy, All lovely Daughters of the Flood thereby With goodly greenish locks, all loose untyde, As each had bene a Bryde;

And each one had a little wicker basket, Made of fine twigs, entrayled curiously In which they gathered flowers to fill their

flasket.

And with fine Fingers cropt full feateously The tender stalkes on hye. Of every sort, which in that Meadow grew, They gathered some; the Violet, pallid blew, The little Dazie, that at evening closes,

The virgin Lillie, and the Primrose trew, With store of vermeil Roses, To decke their Bridegromes posies

Against the Brydale day, which was not long: Sweete Themmes! runne softly, till I end Of freshest Flowres which in that X my Song.

With that I saw two Swannes of goodly hewe Whil'st one did sing this Lay, Come softly swimming downe along the Lee; Prepar'd against that Day. Two fairer Birds I yet did never see; The snow, which doth the top of Pindus strew, Did never whiter shew,

Nor Jove himselfe, when he a Swan would be, For love of Leda, whiter did appeare; Yet Leda was (they say) as white as he,

That even the gentle streame, the which them Joy may you have, and gentle hearts

Seem'd foule to them, and bad his billowes Of your loves couplement:

Spare

And let faire Venus, that is Queene spare To wet their silken feathers, least they might with her heart-quelling Some u soule flux polymer with water not so Sovle their favre plumes with water not so

my Song.

Eftsoones the Flowers their fill,

Ran all in haste to see that silver brood. As they came floating on the Christal Flood; Whom when they sawe, they stood amazed

Their wondring eyes to fill; still, Them seem'd they never saw a sight so fayre,

For sure they did not seems

The earth did fresh aray;

So fresh they seem'd as day,

Even as their Brydale day, which

long: ete Themmes! runne softly, Sweete my Song. Then forth they all out of their bash

Great store of Flowers, the honour of That to the sense did fragrant odour All which upon those goodly Birds to And all the Waves did strew. That like old Peneus Waters they di When downe along by pleasant Tem

Scattred with Flowres, through The streeme, That they appeare, through Lillies Like a Brydes Chamber flore. Two of those Nymphes, meane w

Garlands bound The which presenting all in trim Ar. Their snowie Foreheads therewith

Against their Brydale day, which Sweete Themmes! runne softly. my Song. 'Ye gentle Birdes! the worlds fai

ment. Yet not so white as these, nor nothing neare; And heavens glorie, whom this hap So purely white they were, [bare, Doth leade unto your lovers blisfull]

smile, And marre their beauties bright,
That shone as heavens light,
Against their Brydale day, which
Sweete Themmes! runne softly, till I end Let endlesse Peace your steadfast hear

And blessed Plentie wait upon your b And let your bed with pleasures chast Nymphes, which now had That fruitfull issue may to you affor Which may your foes confound, And make your joyes redound Upon your Brydale day, which is not

Sweete Themmes! runne softlie, t my Song.

Of Fowles, so lovely, that they sure did deeme So ended she; and all the rest aroun Them heavenly borne, or to be that same payre To her redoubled that her undersons. Which through the Skie draw Venus silver Which said their brydale days shoul [Teeme: And gentle Eccho from the neighbou |Their accents did resound.

For sure date,

To be begot of any earthly Seede,
But rather Angels, or of Angels breede:
Yet were they bred of Somers-heat, they say,
In sweetest Season, when each Flower and As he would speake, but that he lack.

The earth did fresh aray; [weede Yet did by signes his glad affection at Making his streame run slow.]

PROTHALAMION.

607

out these twaine, that did excell ar as Cynthia doth shend urres. So they, enranged well, two attend, st service lend [long: r wedding day, which was not nemmes! run softly, till I end

ey all to mery London came, don, my most kyndly Nurse, ave this Lifes first native sourse, another place I take my name, suncient fame: [towres they came, whereas those bricky 1 Themmes brode aged backe doe [bowers.

he studious Lawvers have their ne wont the Templer Knights to ayd through pride: byde, nto there standes a stately place, zayned giftes and goodly grace t Lord, which therein wont to

[case; too well now feeles my freendles fits not well at joyes, to tell

e bridale daye, which is not long: emmes! runne softly, till I end

low doth lodge a noble Peer, nds glory, and the Worlds wide did thunder, full name late through all Spaine s two pillors standing neere quake and feare: of Honor, flower of Chevalrie!

oule which in his flood did dwell; That fillest England with thy triumpher fame, Joy have thou of thy noble victoric, And endlesse happinesse of thine owne name That promiseth the same; [armer [armes, That through thy prowesse, and victorious Thy country may be freed from forraine harmes;

And great Elisaes glorious name may ring Through al the world, fil'd with thy Alarmes,

Which some brave muse may sing To ages following.

Upon the Brydale day, which is not long: Sweete Themmes! runne softly till I end my Song.

From those high Towers this noble Lord issuing.

Like Radiant Hesper, when his golden havre In th' Ocean billowes he hath bathed fayre, Descended to the Rivers open vewing, With a great traine ensuing.
Above the rest were goodly to bee seene

Two gentle Knights of lovely face and feature. Beseeming well the bower of anic Queene. With gifts of wit, and ornaments of nature,

Fit for so goodly stature, That like the twins of Jove they seem'd in sight, [bright; Which decke the Bauldricke of the Heavens

They two, forth pacing to the Rivers side, Received those two faire Brides, their Loves delight;

Which, at th' appointed tyde, Each one did make his Bryde Against their Brydale day, which is not long.

Sweete Thommes! runne softly, till I end my Song.

SONNETS

WRITTEN BY SPENSER.

TED FROM THE ORIGINAL PUBLICATIONS IN WHICH THEY APPEARED.

corshipfull my singular good frend, I Harvey, Doctor of the Lawes.

e happy above happiest men , sitting like a Looker on les Stage, doest note with critique

islikes of each condition: arelesse of suspition, or the favour of the great; olish reprehension

Of faulty men, which daunger to thee threat: But freely doest, of what thee list, entreat, Like a great Lord of peerelesse liberty; Litting the Good up to high Honours seat, And the Evill damning evermore to dy: For Life, and Death, is in thy doomefull writing!

So thy renowne lives ever by endighting, Dublin, this xviij, of July, 1586.

Your devoted frend, during life, EDMUND SPENCER,

(Prefixed to 'Nennio, or A Treatise of Nobility. &c.)

Who so wil seeke, by right deserts, t'attaine, Unto the type of true Nobility; And not by painted shewes, and titles vaine.

Derived farre from famous Auncestrie: Behold them both in their right visnom Here truly pourtray'd, as they ought to be,

And striving both for termes of dignitie, To be advanced highest in degree

And, when thou doest with equal insight see The ods twixt both, of both them deem aright, And chuse the better of them both to thee: But thanks to him, that it deserves, behight;
To Nenna first, that first this worke created,

And next to Jones, that truely it translated. ED. SPENSER.

Upon the Historie of George Castriot, alias Scanderbeg, hing of the Epirots, translated into English.

Wherefore doth vaine antiquitie so vaunt Her ancient monuments of mightie peeres, And old Herües, which their world did daunt With their great deedes, and fild their childrens eares?

Who, rapt with wonder of their famous praise, Admire their statues, their Colossoes great Their rich triumphall Arcks which they did

Their huge Pyramids, which do heaven threat.

Lo! one, whom later age hath bro

light,
Matchable to the greatest of those gre Great both by name, and great in po might, And meriting a meere triumphant sea

The scourge of Turkes, and plague dels,

Thy acts, O Scanderbeg, this volum ED. SI

ıv

(Prefixed to ' The Commonwealth and ment of Venice.)

The antique Babel, Empresse of the I Upreard her buildinges to the threatn And second Babell, tyrant of the Wes Her ayry Towers upraised much more But, with the weight of their own sur They both are fallen, that all the es

feare, And buried now in their own ashes ly Yet shewing, by their heapes, how gre were

But in their place doth now a third ap Fayre Venice, flower of the last wo light;

And next to them in beauty draweth: But farre exceedes in policie of right. Yet not so fayre her buildinges to t As Lewkenors stile that hath her told.

EDM. SI

VIEW OF THE PRESENT STATE OF IRELAND

DISCOURSED BY WAY OF A DIALOGUE BETWEENE

EUDOXUS AND IRENÆUS.

Eudox.

that countrey of Ireland, whence ly came, be see goodly and coma soyle, as ye report, I wonder that me is taken for the tourning therefuses, and reducing of that savadge naetter government and civilitye.

Marry, soe there have beene divers
ttes devised, and wise counsells cast
r about reformation of that realme;
say, it is the fatall desteny of that
t noe purposes, whatsoever are meant
ood, will prosper or take good effect,
whether it proceede from the very
of the soyle, or influence of the
or that Allmighty God hath not yet
de the time of her reformation, or
reserveth her in this unquiett state
some secrett scourdge, which shall by
e unto England, it is hard to be
but yet much to be feared.

out yet much to be leared.

Surely I suppose this but a vayne of simple men, which judge thinges a effectes, and not by theyre causes; I rather thinke the cause of this evill, angeth upon that countrey, to proher of the unsoundness of the countplottes, which you say have beene as layed for the reformation, or of a in following and effecting the en of any such fatall course or apnot of God, as you misdeeme: but it inner of men, that when they are to any absurditye, or theyr actions not as they would, they are ready to impute the blame therof unto

ens, soe to excuse their owne follyes recetiones. Soe have I allso heard wished, (even of some whose greate es, in my opinion, should seeme to ore soundly of soe weighty a control that all that land were a sea-poole: and of speach, is the manuer rather rat men farr driven, to wishe the

utter ruine of that they cannot redress, then of grave counsellors, which ought to thinke nothing see hard but that, through wysedome, it may be mastred and subdued; since the Poet sayeth, that 'the wyse man shall rule even over the starres,' much more over the earth; for were it not the part of a desperat phisition to wish his diseased patient dead, rather then to applye the best endevours of his skill for his recovery. But since we arre so farre entred, let us, I pray you, a litle devise, of those evills, by which that countrey is held in this wretched case, that it cannot (as you say) be recured. And yf it be not paynfull to you, tell us what thinges, during your late continuaunce there, you observed to be most offensive, and an empeachement unto the good rule and government therof.

Iren. Surely, Eudox., the evills which you desire to be recounted are very many, and allmost countable with those that were hidden in the baskett of Pandora. But since ye soe please, I will out of that infinit number, recken but some that are most capitall, and commonly current both in the life and conditions of privat men, as also in the managing of publick affavres and pollicye, the which you shall understand to be of diverse natures, as I observed them: for some of them are of very great antiquitye and longe continualine; others more late and of lesse enduraunce; others dayly growing and encreasing continually as the evill occasions are every day offered.

are every day offered.

Eudox. Tell them then, I pray you, in the same order that you have now rehearsed them; for there can be noe better methode then this which the very matter it self offereth. And when ye have reckned all the evills, lett us heare your opinion for redressing of them: after which there will perhaps of it self appeare some reasonable way to settle a sound and perfect rule of government, by shunning the former evills, said

RR

That in no earthly thing thou shall delight, But in his sweet and amiable sight.

Thenceforth all worlds desire will in thee dye, Kindled throng And all earthes glorie, on which men do gaze,



AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLY

RAPT with the rage of mine own ravisht Of this wyde u thought, Through contemplation of those goodly sights, And gloridus images in heaven wrought, Whose wondrous beauty, breathing sweet delights
Do kindle love in high conceipted sprights; I faine to tell the things that I behold,
But feele my wits to faile, and tongue to fold. Vouchsafe then, O thou most Almightie Spright! [flow, From whom all guifts of wit and knowledge To shed into my breast some sparkling light Of thine eternall Truth, that I may show Some litle beames to mortall eyes below Of that immortall beautie, there with thee, Which in my weake distraughted mynd I see; That with the glorie of so goodly sight
The hearts of men, which fondly here admyre
And further is
Faire seeming shewes, and feed on vaine
Transported with celestiall desyre

[delight, of purest beaut Of those faire formes, may lift themselves up Ayre more ther hyer,

The endlesse k Thou canst not aime; All which are m And all with a First, th' Earth Amid the Sea, Then th' Aire bounded On everie side, Never consum hands; And, last, that Wherewith he

By view where That still as ev And heaven the And learne to love, with zealous humble dewty, favre.

a Lordes Brehoon, adjudgeth for rt a better share unto his lord, that of the soyle, or the head of that iso unto himself, for his judgeuter portion then unto the playnes greeved.

his is a most wicked lawe indeed; it is not now used in Ireland inges of England have had the minion therof, and established

lawes there.

s, truly, for there be many wide a lreland in which the lawes of renever established, nor any act of subjection made; and also that are subdued, and seeme to subjection, yet the same Breis practised amongst themselves, but dwelling as they doe, whole septs of the Irish togither, withiglishman amongest them, they hat they list, and compound or maceal amongest themselves they to of which noe notice can be had ich would and might amend the rule of the lawes of England. What is this which you say?

e rule of the lawes of England.
What is this which you say?
any part of that realine or any
n, which have not yet bene subcrowne of England? Did not
alme universally accept and acur late prince of famous memory,
Eighth, for theyr only king and

s, verely: in a Parliament the time of Sir Antony Sent-Lord Deputye, all the Irish rincipall men came in, and being

mes wrought therunto, acknow-Henry for theyr soverayne lord, it (as some say) unto themselves one former priviledges and segplate.

Then by that acceptance of his they also accepted of his lawes, should any other lawes be now

est them?

ne it is that thereby they bound o his lawes and obedience, and in bene followed upon them, as it bene, and a government thertly setled amongest them agreto, they should have bene reduced i civilitye, and contayned in cone. But what bootes it to breake o lett him straight runn loose at oe were this people at first well wisely brought to acknowledge

alleageaunce to the Kinges of England; but being straight left unto themselves and theyr owne inordinate life and manners, they eftsoonce forgott what before they were taught, and soe soone as they were out of sight by themselves, shooke of theyr bridels, and began to colt anew, more licentiously then before.

themselves showed they to the same began to cold anew, more licentiously then before.

Eudox. It is a great pitty, that soe good an opportunitye was omitted, and soe happy an occasion fore-stald, that might have bredd the eternall good of that land. But doe they not still acknowledge that submission?

Iren. Now they doe not; for now the heyres and posteritve of them which yeelded the same are (as they say) either ignoraunt therof, or doe willfully denye or stedfastly

disavowe it.

Eudox. How can they doe soe justly? Doth not the act of the parent, in any lawfull graunt or conveyannee, bind the heyres for ever thereunto? Since then the auncestours of those that now live yeelded themselves then subjectes and liedgemen, shall it not tye theyr children to the same subjection?

Iren. They say no; for theyr auncostours had noe estate in any theyre landes, signoryes, or hereditamentes, longer then during theyr owne lives, as they alledge, for all the Irish doe hold theyr landes by Tanistrye; which is (as say they) noe more then a personall estate for his life time, that is, Tanistih, by reason that he is admitted therunto by election of the countrey.

unto by election of the countrey.

Eudox, What is this that you call
Tanistih and Tanistrye? They be names and
termes never hard of nor knowen to us.

Iren. It is a custome among all the Irish, that presently after the death of any they cheif Lordes or Captaynes, they doe presently assemble themselves to a place, generally appoynted and knowen unto them, to choose another in his steede; where they doe nominate and elect, for the most part, not the eldest soun, nor any of the children of theyre Lord deceased, but the next to him of blood, that is the eldest and woorthyest; as commonly the next brother to him yf he have any, or the next brother to him yf he have any, or the next to him they choose the next of bloud to be Tanistih, whoe shall next succeede him in the sayd Captaynrye, yf he live thereunto.

Eudox. Doe they not use any ceremonyes in this election? for all barbarous nations are commonly great observers of ceremonyes are

superstitions rites.

EBB

following the offred good. The which methode we may learne of the wise Phistitions, which first require that the malady be knowen throughly, and discovered; afterwardes doe teach how to cure and redress it; and lastly doe prescribe a diett with straight rule and orders to be dayly observed, for feare of a relapse into the former disease, or falling into some other more daungerous then it.

Fren. I will then, according to your advisement, beginne to declare the evilla, which seeme to me most hurtfull to the common-weale of that land, and first, those which I sayd were most auncient and long growen. And they allso are of three kindes; the first in the Lawes, the second in Customes,

and the third in Religion.

Eudox. Why, Irenaeus, can there be any evill in the Lawes? can thinges, which are ordayned for the good and safetye of all, turne to the evill and hurt of them? This well I wote, both in that state and in all others, that were they not contayned in duty with feare of law, which restrayneth offences, and inflicteth sharpe punishment to misdoeres, no man should enjoy any thing; every mans hand would be agaynst another. Therfore, in finding fault with the lawes, I doubt me, you shall much over-shoote your self, and make me the more dislike your other dislikes of that government.

Irea. The lawes, Eudox, I doe not blame

for themselves, knowing right well that all lawes are ordayned for the good of the common-weale, and for repressing of licentiousness and vice; but it falleth out in lawes, no otherwise then it doth in phisick, which was at first devised, and is yet dayly ment, and ministred for the health of the patient. But neverthelesse we often see, that either through ignoraunce of the dysease, or through unseasonableness of the time, or other accidentes coming between, in steede of good, it worketh hurt, and, out of one evill, throweth the patient into many miseryes. See the lawes were at first intended for the reformation of abuses, and peaceable continuaunce of the subjectes; but are sithence either disanulled, or quite prevaricated through chaunge and alterations of times, yet are they good still in themselves; but to that commonwealth, which is ruled by them, they woorke not that good which they should, and some-times also, perhaps, that evill which they would not.

Eudox. Whether do you meane this by the common-law of the realme, or by the satute Lawes, and Actes of Parlyaments?

Iren. Surely by them loth; for even common-law, being that which v Normandy brought in with an en layed upon the neck of Englant it perhaps fitted well with the state through the power of the comments had before subdued the people on himade easy way to the setling of his w with the state of Ireland pendentaril not so well agree, being a poor stubborne, and untamed, or yf a retamed, yet now lately having que theyr yoke, and broken the lands of obedience. For England (below the and but lately entred to the mid al government of K. Edward, according to the Confession; besides now lately grown lothing and detestation of the will tyrannous rule of Harold as ware made them the more willing to stopt reasonable conditions and order of victor, thinking surely that it mall i worse then the later, and hoping would be as good as the former: yet w proof of the first bringing in and me of those lawes bath beene, was after to full bitterly made knowen. But w land it is farr otherwise, for it is a not acquaynted with warres, though later themselves, and in theyre over the youthes; which they have never in youthes; which they have never in taught to lay aside, nor made to dience unto lawe, scarcely to know of lawe, but insteede therof have are served and kept theyr owns have a the Brehoone lawe.

Eudox. What is that which per Brehoone Lawe? it is a word to be

unknowen.

Fren. It is a certayne mis written, but delivered by traditional another, in which oftentimes than greate shewe of equitye, in deterright betweene party and many thinges repugning quits hand mans lawe; as for example many dependent of the party murthered will compound between the maintenance of the party murthered secure the action, that the mission of the party murthered secure the action, that the mission of the party murthered secure the action, that the mission of the party murthered secure the action, that the mission of the party murthered secure the action, that the mission of the party murthered secure and smoothered. Act of the party murthered and smoothered. Act of the party murthered and smoothered.

VIEW OF THE PRESENT STATE OF IRELAND.

2 Lordes Brehoon, adjudgeth for ta better share unto his lord, that if the soyle, or the head of that so unto himself, for his judgeter portion then unto the playnmagreeved.

his is a most wicked lawe indeed; it is not now used in Ireland nges of England have had the minion therof, and established

awes there.

truly, for there be many wide Ireland in which the lawes of e never established, nor any act of subjection made; and also that are subdued, and seeme to subjection, yet the same Brespractised amongst themselves, at dwelling as they doe, whole septs of the Irish togither, withglishman amongest them, they lat they list, and compound or neeal amongest themselves theyr of which noe notice can be had ch would and might amend the rule of the lawes of England. What is this which you say? any part of that realme or any, which have not yet bene subcrowne of England? Did not alme universally accept and acry late prince of famous memory, lighth, for theyr only king and

, verely: in a Parliament the time of Sir Antony Sent-Lord Deputye, all the Irish incipall men came in, and being new wrought therunto, acknow-Henry for theyr soverayne lord, t (as some say) unto themselves ne former priviledges and seglate.

Then by that acceptance of his hey also accepted of his lawes, hould any other lawes be now

hould any other lawes be now st them?

e it is that thereby they bound his lawes and obedience, and in bene followed upon them, as it bene, and a government thereby setled amongest them agreco, they should have bene reduced civilitye, and contayned in contay the bene reduced that the bene reduced is the bene in contay and contay are the benefit as the

o lett him straight runn loose at were this people at first well wisely brought to acknowledge alleageaunce to the Kinges of England; but being straight left unto themselves and theyr owne inordinate life and manners, they eftsoones forgott what before they were taught, and soe soone as they were out of sight by themselves, shooke of theyr bridels, and began to colt anew, more licentiously then before.

611

to colt anew, more licentiously then before.

Eudox. It is a great pitty, that soe good an opportunitye was omitted, and soe happy an occasion fore-stald, that might have bredd the eternall good of that land. But doe they not still acknowledge that submission?

Iren. Now they doe not; for now the heyres and posteritye of them which yeelded the same are (as they say) either ignorannt therof, or doe willfully denye or stedfastly disavowe it.

Eudox. How can they doe soe justly? Doth not the act of the parent, in any lawfull graunt or conveyaunce, bind the heyres for ever thereunto? Since then the auncestours of those that now live yeelded themselves then subjectes and liedgemen, shall it not tye theyr children to the same subjection?

Iren. They say no; for theyr auncestours had noe estate in any theyre landes, signoryes, or hereditamentes, longer then during theyr owne lives, as they alledge, for all the Irish doe hold theyr landes by Tanistrye; which is (as say they) noe more then a personall estate for his life time, that is, Tanistih, by reason that he is admitted therunto by election of the countrey.

Eudox. What is this that you call Tanistih and Tanistrye? They be names and

termes never hard of nor known to us, Iren. It is a custome among all the Irish, that presently after the death of any theyr cheir Lordes or Captaynes, they doe presently assemble themselves to a place, generally appoynted and knowen unto them, to choose another in his steede; where they doe nominate and elect, for the most part, not the eldest sonn, nor any of the children of theyre Lord deceased, but the next to him of blood, that is the eldest and woorthyest; as commonly the next brother to him yf he have any, or the next cossin germayne, or soe foorth, as any is clder in that kinred or sept, and then next to him they choose the next of bloud to be Tanistih, whoe shall next succeede him in the sayd Captaynrye, yf he live thereunto.

Endox. Doe they not use any ceremony as in this election? for all barbarnus nations are commonly great observers of ceremonyes and superstitious rites.

RRZ

following the offred good. The which me-thode we may learne of the wise Phisitions, which first require that the malady be knowen throughly, and discovered; afterwardes doe teach how to cure and redress it; and lastly doe prescribe a diett with straight rule and orders to be dayly observed, for feare of a relapse into the former disease, or falling into some other more daungerous then it.

Iren. I will then, according to your advisement, beginne to declare the evills, which seeme to me most hurtfull to the common-weale of that land, and first, those which I sayd were most auncient and long growen. And they allso are of three kindes; the first in the Lawes, the second in Customes,

and the third in Religion.

Eudox. Why, Irenaus, can there be any evill in the Lawes? can thinges, which are ordayned for the good and safetye of all, turne to the evill and hurt of them? This well I wote, both in that state and in all others, that were they not contayned in duty with feare of law, which restrayneth offences, and inflicteth sharpe punishment to misdocres, no man should enjoy any thing; every mans hand would be agaynst another. Therfore, in finding fault with the lawes, I doubt me, you shall much over-shoote your self, and make me the more dislike your other dislikes

of that government,

Iren. The lawes, Eudox., I doe not blame for themselves, knowing right well that all lawes are ordayned for the good of the com-mon-weale, and for repressing of licentiousness and vice; but it falleth out in lawes, ness and vice; but it doth in phisick, which was at first devised, and is yet dayly ment, and ministred for the health of the patient. But neverthelesse we often see, that either through ignoraunce of the dysease, or through unseasonableness of the time, or other acci-dentes coming between, in steede of good, it worketh hurt, and, out of one evill, throweth the patient into many miseryes. See the lawes were at first intended for the reformation of abuses, and peaceable continuaunce of the subjectes; but are sithence either disanulled, or quite prevaricated through chaunge and alterations of times, yet are they good still in themselves; but to that commonwealth, which is ruled by them, they woorke not that good which they should, and sometimes also, perhaps, that evill which they would not.

Eudox. Whether do you meane this by the common-law of the realme, or by the Statute Lawes, and Actes of Parlyaments?

Surely by the common-law, being Normandy brought in w layed upon the neek it perhaps fitted well land then being, and through the power of the made easy way to the s with the state of Ireland not so well agree, being stubborne, and untamed tamed, yet now lately ha theyr yoke, and broken obedience. For England of the Conquerour) was a and but lately entred in government of K. Eds Confessour; besides now lothing and depostation tyrannous rule of Harol made them the more will reasonable conditions a victor, thinking surely to worse then the later. would be as good as the proof of the first bringing of those lawes hath been fall bitterly made know land it is farr otherwise. acquaynted with warres, themselves, and in theyr tary discipline, trayned youthes; which they ha taught to lay aside, nor dience unto lawe, searcel of lawe, but insteeds the served and kept theyr

the Brehoone lawe.

Eudox. What is that
Brehoone Lawe? it is a w

unknowen.

Iren. It is a certay: written, but delivered by another, in which oftenti greate shewe of equitye, right betweene party ; many thinges repugning and mans lawe : as for examurder, the Brehoon, the will compound betweene t frendes of the party mu secute the action, that t give unto them, or to thim that is slayue, a roco call a Breaghe; by when many murders are

VIEW OF THE PRESENT STATE OF IRELAND.

Lordes Brehoon, adjudgeth for ta better share unto his lord, that f the soyle, or the head of that to unto himself, for his judgeer portion then unto the playns greeved.

us is a most wicked lawe indeed; it is not now used in Ireland nges of England have had the minion therof, and established

awes there.

, truly, for there be many wide Ireland in which the lawes of e never established, nor any acit of subjection made; and also that are subdued, and seeme to subjection, yet the same Brepractised amongst themselves, at dwelling as they doe, whole epts of the Irish togither, withglishman amongest them, they at they list, and compound or iceal amongest themselves theyr of which noe notice can be had :h would and might amend the rule of the lawes of England.
That is this which you say? any part of that realine or any, which have not yet bene subcrowne of England? Did not lme universally accept and acr late prince of famous memory lighth, for theyr only king and

, verely: in a Parliament he time of Sir Antony Sent-Lord Deputye. all the Irish incipall men came in, and being ies wrought therunto, acknow-Henry for theyr soverayne lord, (as some say) unto themselves ne former priviledges and seglate. hen by that acceptaunce of his nev also accepted of his lawes. hould any other lawes be now st them? e it is that thereby they bound his lawes and obedience, and in bene followed upon them, as it bene, and a government therly setled amongest them agreo, they should have bene reduced civilitye, and contayned in con-But what bootes it to breake lett him straight runn loose at

lett him straight runn loose at e were this people at first well wisely brought to acknowledge alleageaunce to the Kinges of England; but being straight left unto themselves and theyr owne inordinate life and manners, they eftsoones forgott what before they were taught, and soe soone as they were out of sight by themselves, shooke of theyr bridels, and began to colt anew, more licentiously then before.

611

to colt anew, more licentiously then before.

Eudox. It is a great pitty, that soe good an opportunitye was omitted, and soe happy an occasion fore-stald, that might have bredd the eternall good of that land. But doe they not still acknowledge that submission?

Iren. Now they doe not; for now the heyres and posterities of them which yeelded the same are (as they say) either ignoraunt therof, or doe willfully denye or stedfastly disayowe it.

Eudox. How can they doe soe justly? Doth not the act of the parent, in any lawfull graunt or conveyannee, bind the heyres for ever thereunto? Since then the auncestours of those that now live yeelded themselves then subjectes and liedgemen, shall it not tye theyr children to the same subjection?

Iren. They say no; for theyr auncestours had noe estate in any theyre landes, signoryes, or hereditamentes, longer then during theyr owne lives, as they alledge, for all the Irish doe hold theyr landes by Tanistrye; which is (as say they) noe more then a personall estate for his life time, that is, Tanistih, by reason that he is admitted therunto by election of the countrey.

Eudox. What is this that you call Tanistih and Tanistrye? They be names and

termes never hard of nor knowen to us. Iren. It is a custome among all the Irish, that presently after the death of any theyr cheir Lordes or Captaynes, they doe presently assemble themselves to a place, generally appoynted and knowen unto them, to choose another in his steede; where they doe nominate and elect, for the most part, not the eldest sonn, nor any of the children of theyre Lord deceased, but the next to him of blood, that is the eldest and woorthyest; as commonly the next brother to him yf he have any, or the next cossin germayne, or soe foorth, as any is elder in that kinred or sept, and then next to him they choose the next of bloud to be Tanistih, whoe shall next succeede him in the sayd Captaynrye, yf he live thereunto.

Endox. Doe they not use any ceremonyes, in this election? for all barbarous nations are commonly great observers of ceremonyes and superstitions rites.

ER 2

following the offred good. The which methode we may learne of the wise Phisitions, which first require that the malady be knowen throughly, and discovered; afterwardes doe teach how to cure and redress it; and lastly doe prescribe a diett with straight rule and orders to be dayly observed, for feare of a relapse into the former disease, or falling into some other more daungerous then it.

Iren. I will then, according to your advisement, beginne to declare the evilla, which seeme to me most hurtfull to the common-weale of that land, and first, those which I sayd were most auncient and long growen. And they allso are of three kindes; the first in the Lawes, the second in Customes,

and the third in Religion.

Eudox. Why, Ireneus, can there be any evill in the Lawes? can thinges, which are ordayned for the good and safetye of all, turne to the evill and hurt of them? This well I wote, both in that state and in all others, that were they not contayned in duty with feare of law, which restrayneth offences, and inflicteth sharpe punishment to misdocres, no man should enjoy any thing; every mans hand would be agaynst another. Therfore, in finding fault with the lawes, I doubt me, you shall much over-shoote your self, and make me the more dislike your other dislikes

of that government, Iren. The lawes, Eudox., I doe not blame for themselves, knowing right well that all lawes are ordayned for the good of the common-weale, and for repressing of licentious-ness and vice; but it falleth out in lawes, no otherwise then it doth in phisick, which was at first devised, and is yet dayly ment, and ministred for the health of the patient. But neverthelesse we often see, that either through ignoraunce of the dysease, or through unseasonableness of the time, or other accidentes coming between, in steede of good, it worketh hurt, and, out of one evill, throweth the patient into many miseryes. Soe the lawes were at first intended for the reformation of abuses, and peaceable continuaunce of the subjectes; but are sithence either disanulled, or quite prevaricated through chaunge and alterations of times, yet are they good still in themselves; but to that commonwealth, which is ruled by them, they woorke not that good which they should, and sometimes also, perhaps, that evill which they would not.

Eudox. Whether do you meane this by the common-law of the realme, or by the Statute Lawes, and Actes of Parlyaments? Iren. Surely by them both; for common-law, being that which Wi Normandy brought in with his on layed upon the neck of Engles it perhaps fitted well with the can land then being, and was no through the power of the enthal had before subdued the people of made easy way to the selling of li with the state of Ireland perals not so well agree, being a people of stubborne, and untamed, or of it a tamed, yet now lately having or theyr yoke, and broken the backs obedience. For England (below the of the Conquerour) was a peaceable and but lately entred to the mild a government of K. Edward, surn Confessour; besides now lately lothing and detestation of the tyrannous rule of Harold an usur made them the more willing to = reasonable conditions and order of victor, thinking surely that it and worse then the later, and being would be as good as the former popos of the first bringing in select of those lawes hath beene, was aber full bitterly made knowen. land it is farr otherwise, far it is a = acquaynted with warres, though but themselves, and in theyre owne kit tary discipline, trayned up over b youthes; which they have mere taught to lay aside, nor made to be dience unto lawe, scarcely to know of lawe, but insteede theref have a served and kept theyr owns laws the Brehoone lawe.

Endox. What is that which yes

unknowen.

Iren. It is a certayne rule of written, but delivered by traditions another, in which oftentimes that a greate shewe of equitye, in deterright betweene party and party and party and the party and party and the party and party and the party and party will compound betweene the market frendes of the party murthers. It is the will compound betweene the market frendes of the party murthers. It is the will compound betweene the market frendes of the party murthers. It is the will be the action, that the market frendes is the action, that the market frendes of the party murthers are compensed in that is slayne, a recompense will be a many murders are amongest that and smoothered. And this just the

is Lordes Brehoon, adjudgeth for rt a better share unto his lord, that of the soyle, or the head of that lso unto himself, for his judge-ater portion then unto the playnes greeved.

This is a most wicked lawe indeed;

This is a most wicked lawe indeed; it is not now used in Ireland tinges of England have had the minion therof, and established lawes there.

2, truly, for there be many wide

n Ireland in which the lawes of the never established, nor any ac-

ant of subjection made; and also e that are subdued, and seeme to e subjection, yet the same Breis practised amongst themselves. that dwelling as they doe, whole septs of the Irish togither, withnglishman amongest them, they that they list, and compound or onceal amongest themselves theyr s, of which noe notice can be had nich would and might amend the e rule of the lawes of England. What is this which you say? e any part of that realme or any n, which have not yet bene subcrowne of England? Did not salme universally accept and acour late prince of famous memory, Eighth, for theyr only king and

s, verely: in a Parliament the time of Sir Antony Sent-Lord Deputye, all the Irish rincipall men came in, and being anes wrought therunto, acknow-; Henry for theyr sovernyne lord, et (as some say) unto them-elves rue former priviledges and segolate.

Then by that acceptance of his they also accepted of his lawes, should any other lawes be now est them? ue it is that thereby they bound

to his lawes and obedience, and in bene followed upon them, as it e bene, and a government theratly setled amongest them agretto, they should have bene reduced it civilitye, and contayned in conce. But what bootes it to breake to lett him straight runn loose at 50e were this people at first well d wisely brought to acknowledge

alleageaunce to the Kinges of England; but being straight left unto themselves and theyr owne inordinate life and manners, they ett-scenes forgott what before they were taught, and see scone as they were out of sight by themselves, shooke of theyr bridels, and began to colt anew, more licentiously then before.

Endox. It is a great pitty, that see good

Endox. It is a great pitry, that soe good an opportunitye was omitted, and see happy an occasion fore-stald, that might have bredd the eternall good of that land. But doe they not still acknowledge that submission? Iren. Now they doe not; for now the

Iren. Now they doe not; for now the heyres and posteritye of them which yeelded the same are (as they say) either ignorunt therof, or doe willfully denye or stedfastly disayowe it.

Eudox. How can they doe soe justly? Doth not the act of the parent, in any lawfull graunt or conveyannce, bind the heyres for ever thereunto? Since then the annecestours of those that now live yeelded themselves then subjectes and liedgemen, shall it not tye theyr children to the same subjection?

tion?

Iren. They say no; for theyr auncostours had noe estate in any theyre landes, signoryes, or hereditamentes, longer then during theyr owne lives, as they alledge, for all the frish doe hold theyr landes by Tanistrye; which is (as say they) noe more then a personall estate for his life time, that is, Tanistih, by reason that he is admitted therunto by election of the countrey.

Eudor. What is this that you call Tanistih and Tanistrye? They be uames and termes never hard of nor known to us,

Iren. It is a custome among all the Irish, that presently after the death of any theyr cheif Lordes or Captaynes, they doe presently assemble themselves to a place, generally appoynted and knowen unto them, to choose another in his steede; where they doe nominate and cleet, for the most part, not the cldest sonn, nor any of the children of theyre Lord deceased, but the next to him of blood, that is the cldest and woorthyest; as commonly the next brother to him yf he have any, or the next cossin germayne, or see foorth, as any is elder in that kinred or sept, and then next to him they choose the next of blond to be Tanistih, whoe shall next succeede him in the sayd Captaynrye, yf he live thereunto.

Endox. Doe they not use any ceremonyes in this election? for all barbarous nations are commonly great observers of ceremonyes and superstitions rites.

They use to place him that shalbe Captayne, uppon a stone allwayes reserved for that purpose, and placed com-monly upon a hill: in many of the which I have seene the foote of a man formed and engraven. which they say was the measure of theyr first Captayns foote, wheron he standing receaveth an oth to preserve all the former auncient customes of the countrey inviolable, and to deliver up the succession peace-ably to his Tanistih, and then hath a wand delivered unto him by some whose proper office that is; after which, discending from the stone, he turneth himself round aboute, thrise forward, and thrise backward.

Eudox. But how is the Tanistih chosen?

Iren. They say he setteth but one foote upon the stone, and receaveth the like othe

that the Captayne did.

Eudox. Have you ever hard what was the occasion and first beginning of this custome? for it is good to knowe the same, and may perhaps discover some secrett meaning and entent therin, very materiall to the state

of that government.

I have heard that the beginning and Iren. I have heard that the beginning and cause of this ordinaunce amongest the Irish. was specially for the defence and mayntenaunce of theyr landes in theyr posteritye, and for excluding of all innovation or alienation therof unto straungers, and specially to the English. For when theyr Captayn dyed, yf the segniory should discend to his child, and he perhaps an Infant, another might peradventure stepp in betwene, or thrust him out by strong hand, being then unable to defend his right, or to withstand the force of a forreiner; and therfore they doe appoint the eldest of the kinn to have the seguiorye, for that he commonly is a man of stronger yeares, and better experience to mayntayne the inheritannee, and to defend the countrye, either agaynst the next bordering Lordes, which use commonly to encroch one upon another as ech one is stronger, or agaynst the English, which they thinke lye still in wayte to wipe them out of theyr landes and territoryes. And to this end the Tanistih is allway readye knowen, yf it should happen the Captayne suddaynly to dye, or to be slayne in battell, or to be out of the countrye, to defend and keepe it from all such doubtes and daungers. For which cause the Tanistih hath also a share of the countrey allotted unto him, and certayne cuttinges and spendinges upon all the Inhabitauntes under the Lord.

Eudor. When I heare this woord Tanistil,

it bringeth to my mynd and re what I have reade of Tania, th signifie a province or segniorye, a Lusitania, and Britania, the thinke to be derived of Dania, t the Danes; but, I thinke, amiss it seemeth, that it came aunc those barbarous nations that ov world, which possessed those wherof they are now see called. may well be that from the first this woord Tanistih and Tanistri the custome therof hath sithenothers els, bene continued. generall subjection of the land, formerly spake, me seemes that or tenure can be no barr nor em seing that in open Parliament by acknowledgment they wayved therof, and submitted themselv standing to the ordinaunce of

Soveraigne. Yea, but they say, as l Iren. you, that they reserved theyr tit and signioryes whole and some selves, and for proofe alleader, the ever sithence remayned to them soe as nowe to alter them, should be a greate wronge.

Endor. What remedye is th meanes to avoyde this inconver without first cutting of this custome, it seemeth hard to sounde ordinaunce, or reduce the government, since all theyr ill c permitted unto them.

Iren. Surely nothing hard:

Act of Parliament wherof we spe-was given to King Henry which before from his auncestours, bu bare name of a King; for all of power of principalitye he had before derived from many former famous progenitors and woorthy of that land. The which, sithen conquered and subdued unto the what needeth afterward to enter it idle termes with them to be c King, wheras it was in the 14 conquerour to take upon him-el he will over the dominions conq all is the conquerours, as Tully sayth. Therfore (me seemes) in great and meritorious a service t they performed to the King, in the Irish to acknowledge him for they did great hart auto his titl olutely bound red but with lives, theyr re in his free what lawes, them which here could be here were, he

them with a seemed better hem by theyr and to plant ngest them. keepe them reby lost any or having all power, it reaving neither therby unto nething from ry and loyall sty may yet, any thing of proynt other for her owne people. ot soe casve,

ito an habite

se, to chaunge came another

a colourable

Innovations.

es and rules
e not accept of
e to theyr old
ough they be
inconvenient
triate relation
for the lawes
most just and
vernment and
How falles it
e of them as
f Ireland, and
but also the
e, which were
for the onely

told you my olf drewe me I was shewing what sort, the ht in and eserour: which oplyed to the oras yet might

best be, (as should by lawgivers principally be regarded) but were indeede the very lawes of his owne countrey of Normandye. The condition wherof how farr it differeth from this of England is apparaunt to every least judgement. But to transferr the same lawes for the government of the realme of Ireland was much more inconvenient and unmeete; for he found a better advauntage of the time, then was in the planting of them in Ireland, and followed the execution of them with more severitye, and was also present in parson to overlooke the Magistrates, and to overawe the subjectes with the terrour of his

swoord and countenaunce of his Majestye.

But not see in Ireland, for they were other-

wise affected, and yet doe soe remayne, soe

as the same lawes (me seemes) can ill sitt

with theyr disposition, or woorke that reformation that is wished. For lawes ought to be fashioned unto the manners and conditions of the people, to whom they are ment, and not to be imposed unto them according to the simple rule of right; for els (as I sayd) in steede of good they may woorke ill, and pervert Justice to extreme Injustice. that would transferr the lawes of the Lace demonians to the people of Athens should find a greate absurditye and inconvenience. For those Lawes of Lacedæmon were devised by Lycurgus, as most proper and best agreing with that people, whom he knewe to be enclyned alltogither to warres, and therefore wholly trayned them up even from theyr craddels in armes and military exercises, cleane contrarye to the institution of Solon who, in his lawes to the Atheniens, laboured by all meanes to temper theyr warlick couradge with sweete delight of learning and sciences, soe that as much as the one excelled in armes, the other exceeded in knowledge. The

of goodness and civilitye.

Eudox. I can not see how that may better be then by the discipline of the lawes of England: for the English were, at the first, as stout and warrelike a people as ever were the Irish, and yet ye see are now brought unto that civilitye, that no nation in the world excelleth them in all goodly conversation, and all the studyes of knowledge and humanitye.

like regard and moderation ought to be had in

tempering, and managing of this stubborne nation of the Irish, to bring them from that delight of licentious barbarisme unto the love

manitye.

Iren. What they now be both you and I see very well, but by how many thornye and hard wayes they are come thereunto, by born

many civill broyles, by how many tumultuous rebellions, that even hazarded oftentimes the whole safetic of the kingdome, may easely be considered: all which they nevertheless fayrely overcame, by reason of the continuall presence of the King; whose onely parson is oftentimes in steede of an army, to contayne the unruly people from a thousand evill occasions, which this wretched kingdome is, for want theref, dayly carryed into. The which, whensoe they make head, noe lawes, noe penaltyes, can restrayne them, but that they doe, in the violence of theyr furyes, treade downe and trample under foote all both divine and humane thinges, and the lawes themselves they doe specially rage upon, and rend in peeces, as most repugnant to theyr libertye and naturall freedome, which in theyr madness they affect.

Eudar. It is then a very unseasonable time to pleade lawe, when a swoord is drawen in the hand of the vulgar, or to thinke to retayne them with the feare of punnishmentes, when they looke after libertye, and shake of all

government,

Iren. Then see it is with Ireland continually, Eudoxus; for the swoord was never yet out of theyr hand; but when they are weary of warres, and brought downe to extreeme wretchedness, then they creepe a litle perhaps, and sue for grace, till they have gotten new breath and recovered their strength agayne. See as it is in vayne to speake of planting of lawes, and plotting of pollicyes,

till they are altogither subdued,

Eudox. Were they not see at the first conquering of them by Strangbowe, in the time of King Henry the second? was there not a through way then made by the swoord for the imposing of lawes uppon them? and were they not then executed with such a mightye hand as you say was used by the Norman Conquerour? What oddes is there then in this case? why should not the same lawes take as good effecte in that people as they did heere, being in like sort prepared by the swoord, and brought under by extremitye? and why should they not continue in as good force and vigour for the contayning of the people?

Iren. The case is yet not like, but there

fren. The case is yet not like, but there appeareth a greate oddes betwene them; for by the conquest of Henry the Second, true it is the Irish were utterly vanquished and subdued, soe as noe enemye was able to hold up his head agaynst his power; in which theyre weakness he brought in his lawes, and settled them as now they there remayne, like as

William the Conquerout did; much they agree, but in the r cheifest, they varye; ar to w Henry the second imposs the the Irish for the most part of t his power into the deserves at leaving the wide countrey to who in theyr stoods effsomes men, who possessed all theyr quite shutt out the Irish or of them. And to these new and Colonyes he gave his law same lawes under which they bredd, the which it was not di amongest them, being former therunto; unto whem afters payred divers of the poore dis the Irish for succour and n such as they thought fitt for dustriously disposed, as the the baser sort are, they recease they rvassals, but scarcely impart unto them the benefit under which themselves live made his will and comaunde his owne vassall: thus was t England ever properly applys nation, as by a purposed plots but as they could insimust a selves under the same by the riadge and submission.

Eudox. How comes it the having once beene see law throughly subjected, they aft themselves see strongly agayn doe stand see stifly agayns

government?

Irem. They say that they elowlyness, untill the time the betweene the two howses of yorke arose for the crowne which time all the great Eng Gentellmen, which had great Ireland, repayred over hither some to succour theyr freen to strengthen theyr party it ostrengthen theyr party it ostrengthen theyr party it of the same upon hope of a kingdome, and succession of they favoured and affected, whom they before had been mountaynes, where they like white meates, as it is recording the same downe into all the play and thence expelling those for remayned, repossessed them

VIEW OF THE PRESENT STATE OF IRELAND.

have remayned in them, and, ater, have brought under them e English, which were before . This was one of the occasions I those countryes which, lying ny mountaynes or Irish desertes, uted with English, were shortly nd lost. As namely in Mounster s adjoyning to Slewloghir, Arlo, g of Allone. In Connaught all as bordering uppon the Culuers, and Oroirke countrey. In Leinster s neighbouring unto the moundlaunmaleerih, unto Shillelah, ariskelah, and Polmonte. In the countreys neere unto Tyrone, and the Scotts.

Surely this was a greate violence; rour speach it seemeth that only es and vallyes neere adjoyning mountaynes and desertes, were ed by the Irish; but how comes t we see almost all that realme of them? Was there any more casions growen by the troubles Or did the Irish, out of those

y them gotten, breake further themselves through out the for now, for ought that I can there is noe part but the bare e in which the Irish have not ing.

out of these small beginninges tten neere the mountaynes, did themselves into the Inland; and r further advauntage, there did shappy accidentes happen out of ich gave hart and good opportun to regavne theyr old posses-in the raigne of King Edward hinges remayned yet in the same ney were after the late breaking ish, which I spoke of; and that begann to cast an eye unto Iremynd the reformation of thinges niss: for he sent over his brother Duke of Clarence, whoe having heyre of the Earle of Ulster, aving all the Earledome of Ulster, Meath and Mounster, very carebout the redressing of those late hough he could not beate out the , by reason of his short continudid shutt them up within these ers and glinnes under the mounin which they lurked; and soe om breaking any further, by trong holdes upon every border,

and fortifying all passages. Amongest which he builded the castle of Clare in Tomond, of which countrey he had the inheritaunce, and of Mortimers landes adjoyning, which is now (by the Irish) called Killalowe. But the But the times of that good King growing also troublesome did lett the thorough reformation of all thinges. And therunto soone after was added another fatall mischeif, which wrought a greater calamitye then all the former. For the said Duke of Clarence, then Lord Lieu-For tenant of Ircland, was by practise of evill persons about the King, his brother, called thence away; and soone after by sinister meanes was cleane made away. Presently after whose death all the north revolting did sett up O'neale for theyr Captayne, being before that of small power and regard: and there arose in that part of Tomond, one of the O-Briens, called Murroh en-Ranah, that is, Morrice of the Fearne, or wast wilde places, whoe gathering unto him all the relicks of the discontented Irish, eftsones surprised the said castle of Clare, burnt all, and spoyled all the English dwelling there, and in short space possessed all that countrey of beyond the River of Shannon and neere adjoyning: whence shortly breaking foorth, like a suddayne tempest, he over-rann all Mounster and Connaght; breaking downe all the holdes and fortresses of the English, defacing and utterly subverting all corporat townes that were not strongly walled: for those he had noe meanes nor Engines to overthrowe, neither indeede would he stay at all about them, but speedely rann forward, accounting his suddaynness his most advauntage, that he might overtake the English before they could fortifye or gather themselves togither. Soe in short space he cleane wiped out many great townes, as first Inshequinn, then Killaloih, before called Clarifort, afterwardes, Thurles, Mourne, Buttevant, and many others, whose names I cannot remember, and of some of which there is now noe memory nor signe remayning. Uppon report wherof then flocked unto him all the scumm of the lrish out of all places, that ere long he had a mighty army, and thence marched foorth into Leinster, where he wrought great outradges, wasting all the countreys where he went, for it was his pollicye to leave noe holdes behind him, but to make all playne and wast. In the which he soone after created himself King, and was called King of all Ireland; which before him I doe not remember that any did soe generally, but onely Edward le Bruce.
Eudox. What! was there ever any generall King of all Ireland? I never heard it before, but that it was allwayes (whilst it was under the Irish) divided into fowre, and sometimes into five kingdomes or dominions. But this Edward le Bruce, what was he, that he could

make himself King of all Ireland? Iren. I would tell you, in case you would not challenge me anone for forgetting the mattere which I had in hand, that is, the

mattere which I had in hand, that is, the inconvenience and unfitnes which I suppose he to be in the lawes of the land.

Endox. No surely, I have no occasion, for neither is this impertinent therunto; for sithence you did sett your course (as I remember) in your first part to treate of the evills which hindereth the peace and good ordering of that land, amongest which that of the inconvenience of the lawes was the first which you had in hand, this discourse of the over-running and wasting of the realme is very materiall therunto, for that it was the begining of all the other evills, which sithence have afflicted that land, and opened a way unto the Irish to recover theyr possession, and to beate out the English which had formerly wonne the same. And besides, it will give a great light both unto your second and third part, which is the redressing of those evills, and planting of some good forme and pollicye therin, by renewing the remembraunce of those occasions and accidentes by which those ruines hap-pened, and laying before us the ensamples of those times, to be compared with ours, and to be warned by those which shall have to do in the like. Therfore, I pray you, tell them unto us, and as for the poynt where you left, I will not forget afterwardes to call you back agayne thereunto.

Iren. This Edward le Bruce was brother

to Robert le Bruce, who was King of Scot-land at such time as King Edward the Second raigned here in England, and bare a most malicious and spitefull mynd agaynst King Edward, doing him all the hurt he could, and annoying his territoryes of England, whilest he was troubled with civill warres of his Barrons at home. He also, to woorke him the more mischeif, sent over his sayd brother Edward with a power of Scottes and Redd-shankes into Ireland, where, by the meanes of the Lacyes and of the Irish with whom he combined, they gott footing, and gathering to him all the scatterlinges and out-lawes out of all the woodes and moun-taynes, in which they long had lurked, marched foorth into the English Pale, which then was cheifly in the north, from the | beaven, seamed thoroughou

Belfast, Armagh, and Carli are now the most out-bour doned places in the Eng indeede not counted of the all; for it stretches now n Dundalke towardes the nor savd Edward le Bruce spoyle the olde English inhabitaum and razed all cittyes and c noe lesse then Murroghe whom I earst told you: Belfast, Green-Castle, Kell Castletowne, Newton, and good townes and strong hole out the noble familyes of the Talbots, the Touchets, the the Mandevils, and the S Ardes, though of the Lord remayne yet an heyre, that poore gentellman of very meyet dwelling in the Ardes. lastly to Dundalke, he there lastly to Dunuance, ... King, and raigned by the space yeare, by the name of Edu Ireland, untill that King Edw. having sett some quiett in I home, sent over the Lord John to be generall of the warres whoe, encountring him neere over-threwe his armye, and and presently followed the hottly upon the Scottes, the them not to breathe, or to gath togither agayne, till they car cost. Notwithstanding, all

they fledd, for very rancour

theyr returne they utterly wasted whatsoever they had

spoyled; see that of all to fortes, bridges, and habitation any stick standing, nor any I

ing; for those fewe which yet

from their furie further into Thus was all that go

utterly wasted, and left des

remayneth to this day, whic

beene the cheif ornament and

land, for that of the north son

populous and plentifull as any p and yeelded unto the K. of En peareth by good recordes the markes of old mony by the

many thousandes of able men in theyr warres. And sure it beautifull and sweet countrey t

Pale.

poynt of Donluce, and beyon having in the middest of he

s, replenished with all sortes of soundantly sprinckled with many les and goodly lakes, like litte , that will carry even ships upon s, adorned with goodly woodes ding of howses and shippes, soe , as that yf some princes in the them, they would soone hope of all the seas, and ere long of d; also full of good portes and ing upon England and Scotland, as to come to them, to see what smodityes that countrey can afall kind of fruite that shal be erunto. And lastly, the heavens and temperat, though somewhat then the part toward the West. Fruly Irenaeus, what with your te countrey, and what with your the lamentable desolution therof ose ragtayle Irish Scottes, you me with great compassion of tyes, that I doe much pittye that to be subject to soe many evills I see more and more throwen and doe half beginn to thinke, you sayd in the beginning) her tune, above all countreys that be thus miserably tossed and with these variable stormes of But since we are thus farr entred siderations of her mishaps, tell re bene any more such tempests, them, wherin she bath thus wene wracked? my more, God wote, have there ich her principall partes have d torne sounder, but none that I er soe universall as these. And lion of Thomas Fitz Gerrald did tretch itself into all partes of it that, which was in the time of ent of the Lord Gray, was surely retall then all those; for there free from the contagion, but all one to cast of theyr subjection ne of England. Nevertheless, most wise and valiaunt handright noble Lord, it gott not that the former evills found; for in alme was left, like a shipp in a idest all the raging surges, unundirested of any: for they to or forsooke theyre charge. But nost wise pilote) kept her course id held her moste strongly even

agaynst those roring billowes, that he brought her safely out of all; soe as long after, even by the space of twelve or thirtene yeares, she rode in peace, through his only paynes and excellent enduraunce, how ever envye list to bluster agaynst him. But of this we shall have more occasion to speake in another place; now (if you please) lett us returne agayne unto our first course.

returne agayne unto our first course.

Eudox. Truely I am very gladd to heare your judgement of the government of that honorable man see soundly; for I have indeede oftentimes hard it maligned, and his doings depraved of some, whoe (I perceave) did rather of malicious mynd, or private greeyaunce, seeke to detract from the honour of his deedes and connsells, then of any just cause: but he was nevertheless, in the judgement of all good and wise men, defended and mayntayned. And now that he is dead, his immortall fame surviveth, and flourisheth in the mouthes of all people, that even those that did backbite him, are choaked with theyr owne venome, and breake theyre galles to heare his see honorable report. But lett him rest in peace; and turne we to our more troubleous matters of discourse, of which I am right sorve that ve make see short an end, and covett to pass over to your former purposes; for there be many other partes of Ireland, which I have | heard have bene noe less vexed with the like stormes, then these which you have treated of, as the countrey of the Birnes and Tooles neere Dublin, with the insolent out-rages and spoyles of Fengh mac Hughe, the countreys of Katerlagh, Wexford, and Water ford, of the Kevanaghs. The countreys of Leis, Kilkenny, and Kildare of the Moores. countreys of Ofalve and Longfood of a the Connors. The countreys of Westmean, Cavan, and Louth of the O Reyleys, the Kellyes, and many others, see as the discoursing of them, besides the pleasure which would redounde out of theyr history, be also very profitable for matter of pollicyc.

Iren. All this which we have named, and many more besides, often times have I right well knowen, (and yet often times doe) kindle great tires of tunnituous broyles in the countreys bordering upon them. All which to rehearse should rather be to chronicle times, then to search into reformation of abuses in that realme; and yet very needfull it wil be to consider them, and the evills which they have often stirred up, that some redress therof, and prevention of the evills to come, may thereby the rather be devised. But I

suppose we shall have a fitter opportunity for the same, when we shall speake of the particular abuses and enormityes of that government, which wil be next after those generall defectes and inconveniences which I sayd were in the lawes, customes, and

I sayd were in the naws, customes, and religion.

Eudox. Goe to then, a Godes name! ard followe the course which you have promised to your self, for it fitteth best, I must confess, with the purpose of your discourse. Declare your opinion, as you begann, about the lawes of that realme, what incomodity you have conceaved to be in them, cheifly in the Common Lawe, which I would have thought to be most free from all such dislike.

such dislike.

The Common Law is (as before I Iren. The Common Law is (as before I sayd) of itself most rightfull and very convenient (I suppose) for the kingdome for the which it was first devised; for this (I thinke) which it was institutes at its fet think at the as it seemes reasonable, that out of the manners of the people, and abuses of the countrey, for which they were invented, they take theyr first beginning, or els they should be most unjust; for noe lawes of man (according to the straight rule of right) are just, but as in regard of the evills which they prevent, and the safety of the common-weale which they provide for. As for example, in the true ballauncing of justice, it is a flatt wrong to punish the thought or purpose of any before it be enacted; for true Justice punnisheth nothing but the evill act or wicked woord; yet by the lawes of all kingdomes it is a capitall crime to devise or purpose the death of the King: the reason is, for that when such a purpose is effected, it should then be to late to devise therof, and should turne that common-weale to more hurt by such loss of theyr Prince, then such punnishment of the malefactours. And therfore the lawe in that case punnisheth the thought; for better is a mischeif, then an inconvenience. Soe that jus politicum, though it be not of it self just, yet by application, or rather necessitye, it is made just; and this only respect maketh all lawes just. Now then, yf these lawes of Ireland be not likewise applyed and fitted for that realme, they are sure very inconvenient.

Eudox. You reason strongly: but what unfitness doe you finde in them for that realme? shewe us some particulars.

Iren. The Common Lawe appoynteth that

all tryalls, as well of crimes as titles and rights, shal be made by verditt of a Jurye, choosen out of the honestest and most sub-

stantiall free-holders. Now, most holders of that realme are Irish, w the cause shall fall betwixt an E and an Irish, or betweene the Q any fre-holder of that countrey, t noe more scruple to pass agaynst at man, and the Queene, though it be theyr othes, then to drinke milke u Soe that, before the Jurye goe tori well knowen what the verdict will tryall herof have I soe often see dare confidently avouch the abu Yet is the lawe of itself, I say, good first institution therof, being give naturall Englishmen, very rightful that the Irish have stept into the ro. English, (whoe are now become and provident to keepe them out fr forth that they make noe scruple of to passe against them) yt is go that either that course of the lawe be altered or other provision for jur

Eudox. In sooth, Ireneus, vou covered a poynt woorthy the consi for heerby not only the English findeth noe indifferency in decidi cause, be it never soe just; but Queene, as well in all pleas of the calso in inquiryes for Escheates. taynted, wardships, concealmentes a like, is abused and exceedingly dar

Iren. You say very true; for I dertake, that at this day there are taynted landes, concealed from her then she hath now possessions in all and it is noe small inconvenience: that she looseth soe much land as sh her to great profitt, she besides k many good subjectes, which might! unto her, as those landes would ve itantes and living unto.

Eudox. But doe that people (say) noe more conscience to perjure t in theyr verdictes, and damne they

Iren. Not only soe in theyr vert also in all other theyr dealinges: toward the English, they are most bent: for though they will not see festly to doe it, yet will some one suttle-headed fellowe amongest the some quirke, or devise some evaso the rest will lightly take hold, a themselves easely to be ledd by his themselves desired. For in the m raunt matter that may be, the least or doubt that can be moved will stopp unto them, and putt them que the way. Besides that, of themsel

he most part) soe cautelous and led, specially being men of see small and practize in lawe matters, that wonder whence they borrowe such and sive shiftes.

But, me thinkes, this inconvenience much helped by the Judges and estrates which have the choosing ating of those juryes, of they would to appoynt either most English-h Irishmen as were of the soundest and disposition; for noe doubt bere be incorruptible.

ome there be indeede as you say; rould the Irish party crye out of md complayne he hath noe justice, not used as a subject, that he is to have the free benefitt of the hese outcryes the Magistrates there shunn, as they have cause, since readily hearkened unto heere: it be indeede, allthough the Irish d be see contented to be see comit such English freeholders, which we, and such faythful Irishmen, indeede as fewe, shall allwayes be tryalls; for being see fewe, they made weary of theyr free-holdes. re a good care is to be had by all ions to encrease theyr numbers, it more by them. But were it soe, tryes could be piked out of such 1 as you desire, there would neveris badd corruption in the tryall; lence being brought in by the base le, wil be as deceitfull as the for they care much lesse then the at they sweare, and sure their compell them to saie any thinge; elf have heard, when one of that (which they call churles) being and reproved for his false oth, ered confidently, That his Lord him, and it was the least thing

s good. It is a most miserable case, but can there be in this? for though s of the tryalls should be altered, oof of every thing must needes imonyes of such persons as the ill produce; which yf they shall w can there ever any light of the eare? what remedye is there for but to make heavy lawes and gaynst jurours?

e for his L rd to sweare for him; ionable are these common people. : feeling have they of God, or theyr

I thinke sure that will doe small Iren. good; for when a people are inclined to any vice, or have noe touch of conscience, nor sence of theyr evill doings, it is booteless to thinks to restrayne them by any penaltyes or feare of punnishment; but either the occasion is to be taken away, or a more understanding of the right, and shame of the fault to be imprinted. For yf that Licurgus should have made it death for the Lacedemonians to steale, they being a people which naturally delighted in stealth; or yf it should be made a capitall crime for the Flemmings to be taken in drounkenness, there should have bene few Lacedemonians then left, and fewer Flemmings. See impossible it is to remove any fault, soe generall in a people, with terrour of lawes or most sharpe

Eudox. What meanes may there then be to avoyde this inconvenience? for the case

sure seemes very hard.

Iren. We are not yet come to that poynt to devise remedyes for the evills, but only are now to recount them; of the which, this that I have told you is one defect in the

Common Lawes, Eudox. Tell us then (I pray you) further, have you any more of this sort in the Common

Lawes.

By rehearsall of this, I remember Iren. also of an other like, which I have often observed in tryalls to have wrought great hurt and hindraunce, and that is, the excep-tions which the Common Law alloweth a fellon in his tryall; for he may have (as you knowe) thirty-six exceptions peremptorye agaynst the jurours, of which he shall shewe noe cause. By which shift there being (as I have shewed you) small store of honest jurye men, he will either putt of his tryall, or leave it to such men as (perhaps) are not of the soundest sort, by whose meanes, yf he can acquitt himself of the crime, as he is likely, then will he plague such as were brought first to be of his jurye, and all such as made any party against him. And when he comes foorth, he will make theyr cowes and garrans to walke, yf he doe noe other mischeif to theyr persons.

Eudox. This is a slye devise, but I thinke it might soone be remedyed; but we must leave it awhile with the rest. In the meane-

while goe ye forward with others.

Iren. There is an other noe less incon-Iren. There is an other noe less inconvenient then this, which is the tryall of accessoryes to fellow; for, by the Common Lawe, the accessoryes cannot be proceeded. agaynst, till the principall receave his tryall. Now the case often falleth out in Ireland that a stealth being made by a rebell, or an outlawe, the stollen goodes are convayed to some husbandman or gentellman, which hath well to take to, and yet liveth most by the receit of such goodes stoln, where they are found by the owner, and handled: wherupon the party is perhaps apprehended and committed to goale, or putt upon suretyes, till the sessions, at which time the owner, preferring a bill of indictment, prooves sufficiently the stealth to have bene made upon him by such an outlaw, and to have bene found in the possession of the prisoner, agaynst whom, nevertheless, noe course of lawe can proceede, or tryall can be had, for that the principall theif is not to be gotten, notwithstanding that he likewise standeth perhaps indited at once with the receaver, being in rebellion, or in the woodes, whereunto peradventure he is flowns before he can be gotten, and see the receaver clean acquitted and discharged of the crime. By which meanes the theeves are greatly encouradged to steale, and theyr mayntayners emboldened to receave theyr stealths, knowing howe hardly they can be brought to any tryall of lawe,

Kudox. Truly this is a great incon-

Kudox. Truly this is a great inconvenience, and a great cause (as you say) of the mayntenaunce of theeves, knowing theyr receavers allwayes readye; for, were there noe receavers, there would be noe theeves: but this (me seemes) might easely be provided for by some Act of Parliament, that the receaver, being convicted by good proofs, might receave his tryall without his principall.

Iren. You say very true, Eudoxus, but it is allmost impossible to be compassed. And herin also you discover another imperfection in the course of the Common Lawe, and first ordinaunce of the realme; for ye knowe that the sayd Parliament must consist of the peeres, gentellmen, feecholders, and burgesses of that realme it self. Nowe perhaps these being themselves, or the most part of them (as may seeme by their stiff with-standing of this Act) culpable of this crime, or favourers of theyr frendes, which are such by whom theyr kitchins are sometime amended, will not suffer any such Statut to pass. Tet hath it oftentimes beene attempted, and in the time of Sir John Perrot very earnestly (I remember) laboured, but by noe meanes could be effected. And not only this, but many other like, which are as needfull for the reformation of that realme.

Endor. This also is surely a great defect,

but we must not talks, yet exdressing of this, antill ser seven which purposely therion is seven fore proceeds to the reconnex sevills, yf you have any more.

fren. There is also a great which hath wrought great dame her Majesty, and to the com through close and colourable m the landes and goodes of trayto fugitives. As, when one of the goe Into rebellion, he will conve landes and lordships to feelies by he reserveth unto himself! for terme of life, which bei either by the swoord or by the lambs cometh straight unle and the Quene is defrauded of the lawe, which layd that gre ment upon tray tours to forfeit al to the Prince, to the end that n the rather terrifyed from commit for manye which would lide es owne lives, yet for remorse of the nous crimes. This appeareth late Earle of Desmond; for, be ing foorth into his open rel convayed secretly all his lands trust, in hope to have cutt of from the escheat of his landes.

Eudox. Yea, but this was avoyded; for that Act of Padi gave all his landes to the Qu have heard) cut of and frustrat veyaunces, as had any time of twelve yeares before his made; within the compass when alent feofernent, and many sthe his accomplices and fellowe to were attaynted, hath bene man Iren. Very true, but how he

Iren. Very true, but how he of Parliament was wronge out witness; and were it to be pass dare undertake it roudd never But were it soe that such Aots be brought to pass agaymst fellons, yet were it not an en that noe traytour nor fellon shotted, but a Parliament must bringing his landes to the Que Common-Lawe giveth her.

Eudox. Then this is now Common-Lawe, but of the p woorke this frand unto her Man

Iren. Yes, mary! for the C bath left them this benefitt, who advantage, and wrest it to the

Soe as they are therby the bolder to into evil actions, knowing that, yf the met befall them, they shall loose nothing taxmselves, wherof they seeme surely to try careless, like as all barbarous people. Casar in his Comentaryes sayth, very loos of daunger.

Or how doth this concerne them?

Yor how doth this concerne them?

Yes, very greatly; for ye shall unmad that there be many ill disposed and

Midull parsons of that realme, like as in

yout there are also in this realme of
mad to many, which being men of good

Taunce, are for dislike of religion, or
year of the lawe into which they are runn,

montanted with the present government,
beyond the seas, where they live under

that are her Majesties professed tyes, and converse and are confederat other traytors and fugitives which are abiding. The which nevertheless have medit of theyr landes heere, by pretence the colourable conveyaunces therof, formade by them to theyr privy frendes of trust, whose secretly doe send over them the sayd revenues, wherewith they there mayntayned and enabled agaynst lajectie.

such fugitives which are releved by the lit of theyr landes in England, for there straighter order taken. And of there my such in Ireland, it were good it were releved unto, for this evill may easely medyed. But proceeds.

This also inconvenient in that realme reland, that the wardes and mariadges of bellmens children should be in the disposare, by reason that they landes are held thightes service of those Lordes. By the meanes it cometh to pass that those gentellmens children, being thus in the of those Lordes, are not only therby in the top lewdly, and Irish-like, but also ever after see bound to they recruices, as will runn with them into any disloyall

Dutox. This greevannee, Irenaus, is also uplayned of in England, but howe can it remedyed? since the service must follow tenure of the landes, and the landes were an away by the Kinges of England to be Lordes, when they first conquered that ime; and, to say trouth, this also would be prejudice to the Prince in her wardships.

wardes, but by such as fall into the handes of Irish Lordes; for I could wish, and this I would enforce, that all those wardships were in the Princes disposition; for then it might be hoped, that she, for the universall refor-mation of that realme, would take better order for the bringing up of those wardes in good nurture, and not suffer them to come into see badd handes. And though these thinges be allready passed away, by her progenitours former grauntes, unto those sayd Lordes; yet I could find a way to remedye a great part therof, as herafter, when fitt time serveth, shall appeare. And since we are entred into speach of such grauntes of former Princes, to sundry parsons of this realme of Ireland, I will mention unto you some other, of like nature to this, and of like inconvenience, by which the former Kinges of England passed unto them a great part of theyr prerogative; which though then it was well intended, and perhaps well deserved of them which receaved the same, yet now such a gapp of mischeif lyeth open therby, that I could wish it were well stopped. Of this sort are the grauntes of Countyes Palentines in Ireland, which though at first were graunted upon good consideration when they were first con-quered, for that these landes lay then as a very border to the wild Irish, subject to continuall invasion, see as it was needefull to give them great privileges for the defence of the inhabitauntes therof; yet now for that it is noe more a border, nor frontyerd with enemyes, why should such privileges be any more contynued? I would gladly knowe what ye Endorus.

Endorus. I would gladly knowe what ye call a County Palentine, and whence it is soe called.

Iren. It was (as I suppose) first named Palentine of a pale, as it were a pale and defence to theyr inner landes, see as it is called; the English Pale, and therfore also is a Palsgrave named, that is, an Earle Palentine, Others thinke of the Latine, polare, that is, to forrage or out-runn, because the marchers and borderers use comonly see to doe. as to have a County Palentine is, in effect, but to have a privilege to spoyle the enemyes borders adjoyning. And surely see it is used at this day, as a privileged place of spoyles and stealthes; for the County of Tipperarye, which is nowe the onely Countye Palentine in Ireland, is, by abuse of some badd ones, made a receptacle to robb the rest of the Countyes about it, by meanes of whose privi leges none will followe theyr stealthes, see it, being situat in the very lupp of all ye have

inconvenient it is lett every man judge. And though that right noble man, that is the Lord of the libertye doe endevour himself all that he may to yeeld equall justice unto all, yet can there not but great abuses lurke in soe inward and absolute a privilege, the consideration wherof is to be respected carefully, for the next succession. And much like unto this graunte there are alsoe other privileges

land, is made nowe a border, which how

graunted unto most of the corporations there; that they shall not be bound to any other government then theyr owne, that they shall not be charged with garrisons, that they shall not be traveled foorth of theyre owne fraunchises, that they may buye and sell with theeves and rebells, that all amercementes and fines that shal be imposed upon them shall come unto themselves. All which,

though at the time of theyr first graunt they were tollerable, and perhaps reasonable, yet nowe are most unreasonable and inconvenient; but all these will easely be cutt of with the superiour power of her Majesties prerogative, agaynst which her owne grauntes are not to be

pleaded or enforced. Eudox. Nowe truly, Irenæus, ye have (me seemes) very well handled this poynt,

Lawe there, by you observed; and it seemeth that you have a myndfull regard unto the thinges that may concerne the good of that realme. And yf you can as well goe through with the Statute Lawes of that land,

touching the inconveniences in the Common

I will thinke you have not lost all your time there. Therfore, I pray you, now take them in hand, and tell us what you thinke to be amiss in them. Iren. The Statutes of that realme are not many, and therfore we shall the sooner runn through them. And yet of these fewe there are sundrye impertinent and unnecessarve: the which perhaps, though at the time of the making of them were very needefull, yet

nowe through chaunge of time are cleane antiquated, and altogither idle : as that which forbiddeth any to weare theyr beardes on the upper lipp, and none under the chinn: that which putteth away saffron shirtes and smockes; that which restrayneth the use of gilt bridles and petronells; that which is appoynted to the recorders and clarkes of

Dublin and Drogheda, to take but two pence for the copye of a playnt; that which commaundeth bowes and arrowes; that use somety which maketh that all Irishmen that shall same is si converse amongest the English shall be hard lawe.

taken for spices, and see punnished; that

which forbiddeth persons to enter and distrayne which they have title : a like I could rehearse.

Eudor. These, which seeme very frivolous and

the breach of them litle venience can come to the Neither, indeede, yf any tr he seems woorthy of pun blame, saving for that the lawes. But lawes ought the keeping of them sho the behoofe of the Comm

vyolating of them should and sharply punnished. more waighty dislikes in these, and that may more the reformation of them. Iren. There is one or t make the wrongfull distra goodes agaynst the form

seeme surely to have ben

the great good of the restrayning of a fowle : raigned commonly among yet is not altogither laved any one was indetted to first demaund his dett, at paved, he would straigh distress of his goodes and could find them, to the v he would keepe till he were the simple churle (as they monly use to doe yet thre his misdoing, or evill use tled amongest them. sure most unlawfull, yet s to hard to make it death. purpose in the other party goodes, or to conceale the And agayne, the same Sta lye penned (besides the la unsensibly contryved that any reason in it) that they easely wrested to the frauc yf one going to distrayne i

use sometymes to cappe same is straight felonye. Eudox. Nevertheless th

or tenement, where lawful

in doing therof he transgre of the Common Lawe, he st

felonye. Or yf one by a take any thing from a

tother mans goodes, you will not it is to be abolished and taken

is soe, but not by taking away withall; for that is to violeut a especially this use being per-I made lawfull unto some, and to e death. As to most of the ownes, there it is graunted by er, that they may, every man by thout any officer (for that were ble) for any dett, to distrayne the any Irish, being found within tye, or but passing through theyrand the first permission of this t in those times when that graunt the Irish were not ameanable to it was not safetye for the townes-: to them foorth to demaund theyr ossible to drawe him into lawes had leave to be his owne bayliff, is dettors goodes within his owne The which the Irish seeing was lawfull for them to distravne mens goodes in the countrey where And soe, by the example of te of the townes-men, they thought and made it a use to distrayne ers goodes for small detts. eth, me thinkes it is hard for fling dett, of two or three shil-driven to lawe, which is soe farr

Yea, but the judge, when it fore him to tryall, may easelye I doubt, and lay open the intent by his better discretion.

See but it is deurgerous to leave

sometimes to be sought; for

thinkes it an heavye ordinaunce to

, especially to a rude man that is

of lawe, and thinketh a common use

to other men is a lawe for him-

'es, but it is daungerous to leave
of the lawe unto the reason or will
ges, whoe are men and may be
l by affections, and many other
But the lawes ought to be like
ye tables, playne, stedfast, and
e. There is also such another
two, which make Coygnye and
be treason, noe less inconvenient
ormer, being, as it is penned, how
st purpose therof were expedient;
now noe man can goe into another
se for lodgings, nor to his owne
owse to take victuall by the way,
nding that there is noe other
him to have lodging, nor horse

meate, nor mans meate, there being noe Innes, nor none otherwise to be bought for mony, but that he is endammaged to the Statute of treason, whensoever he shall happen to fall out with his tenaunt, or that his sayd host list to complayne of grevaunce, as oftentimes I have seene them very maliciously doe through the least provocation.

Eudox. I doe not well knowe, but by gess, what you doe meane by these termes of Coygnye and Liverye: therfore I pray you explane them.

Iren. I knowe not whether the woordes be English or Irish, but I suppose them rather to be auncient English, for the Irishmen can make noe derivation nor analogye of them. What Liverye is, we by common use in England knowe well enough, namelye, that it allowaunce of horse-meate, as they commonly use the woord in stabling, as to keepe horses at liverye; the which woord, as I gess, is derived of livering or delivering foorth theyr nightlye foode. Soe in great howses, the liverye is sayd to be served up for all night, that is theyr nyghtes allowaunce for drinke, And Liverye is also called the upper garment which serving men weareth, see called (as I suppose) for that it is delivered and taken from him at pleasure: soe it is apparaunt, that by the woord Liverye is meant horse-meate, like as by the woord Coygnye is understood mans-meate; but how the woord is derived is very hard to tell: some say of coyne, because they used commonly in theyr Coygnyes, not only to take meate, but coyne also; and that taking of mony was specially ment to be prohibited by that Statute: but I think rather that this woord Coignye is de-The which is a common rived of the Irish. use amongest the Irish landlordes, to have a common spending upon theyr tenauntes; for all theyr tenauntes, being commonly but all theyr tenauntes, being commonly tenauntes at will, they use to take of them what victualls they list, for of victualls they were wont to make small reckning : neither in this were the tenauntes wronged, for it was an ordinarye and knowen custome, and his Lord commonlye used soe to covenaunt with him, which yf at any time the tenaunt misliked, he might freelye depart at his pleasure. But now by this Statute the sayd Irish Lord is wronged, for that he is cutt of from his customarye services, of the which this was one, besides many more of the like, as Cuddeehih, Cosshirh, Bonaught, Shragh, Sorehim, and such like; the which (I think) at first were customes brought in by the English upon the Irish, for they were never woont, and yet are very loth to yeld any certayne rent, but onely such spendinges, saying com-

monly, Spend me and defend me,

Surely I take it as you say, that therin the Irish Lordes hath greate wronge, since it was an auncient custome, and nothing contrarye to lawe, for to the willing there is now wrong done. And this right well I wote, noe wrong done. And this right well I wote, that sven heere in England, there are in many places as large customes as that of Coignve and Liverye. But I suppose by your speach, that it was the first meaning of the Statute to forbidd the violent taking of victualls upon other mens tensuntes agaynst theyr willes, which surely is a great outrage, and yet not soe great (me seemes) as that it should be made treason : for considering that the nature of treason is concerning the realme, estate or person of the King, or practising with his enemyes, to the derogation and daunger of his crowne and dignitye; it is hardly wrested to make this treason. But (as you earst sayd) 'better a mischeif then an inconvenience.

Iren. Another Statute I remember, which having beene an auncient English custome is now upon advisement made an Irish lawe, and that is called the Custome of Kin-cogish, which is, that every head of every sept, and every cheif of every kinred or familye, should be answerable and bound to bring foorth every one of that kinred or sept under hym at all times to be justifyed, when he should be required or charged with any treason, felonye,

or other haynous crime,

Why, surely this seemes a very awe. For considering that many Endox. necessary lawe. of them be such losells and scatterlings, as that they cannot easely by any sheriff, constable, bayliff, or other ordinarye officer be gotten, when they are challenged for any such fact; this is a very good meane to get them to be brought in by him, that is the head of that sept, or cheif of that howse: wherfore I wonder what just exception you can make agaynst the same.

Trewe, Eudoxus, in the pretence of the good of that Statute you have nothing erred, for it seemeth very expedient and ne cessarye; but the hurt which cometh therby is greater then the good. For, whilest every cheif of a sept standeth soe bound to the lawe for every one of his bloud or sept that is under him, inclusive everie one of his sept is put under him, and he made greate by the com-maunding of them all. For yf he may not comaunde them, then that lawe doth wrong

which bindeth him to brieg th be justified: and of he may on then he may communds them as to good, whereby the lorder of countreyes, and the princip of septs, are made stron be a most speciall care in pelithem, and to set up and so of his underlinger whensoever he shall offer to dutye may be able to bear very daungerous to leave the many as some septs are, bei thousand persons, to the will whoe may leade them to what himself shal be inclyned.

Eudox. In very deede, Ira daungerous, especially seing to of those people is not allways the best. And therfore I hold dome to leave unto them to no over theyr kinred, but rather theyr followers from them assuand to gather them under the of Kin-cogish. The which w be gladd to knowe what it nam for the meaning therof I -

reasonable well.

Iren. It is a woord mingle lish and Irish togither, see as I to thinke, that the custome t English, and afterwardes made an other lawe they had heere i gentellman should continually his kinred and followers to the is English, and Cogish signife Irish.

Eudox. Siththen we have the us now pass unto the second p as I remember, of the abuses in which, me seemes, you have pian layd open unto you, in w at large stretch out your disco sweete remembranness of an whence it seemeth that the c countrey proceeded.

Iren. Indeede, Endoxus, vo

for alle the customes of the have often noted and compare have reade, would minister or ample discourse of the first ori and the antiquitye of that p trueth I doe thinke to be more most that I knowe in this pad soe as with were in the handle

The course

ment and plentifull reading it pleasaunt and proffitable. may, at some other time of occasion to treat therof more at onely it shall suffice to touche of the Irish as seeme offensive. at to the good government of

lowe then your owne course, for ter content my self to forbeare e, in hope that you will, as you r time more aboundantly satis-

re we enter into the treatise of it is first needfull to consider they first sprong; for from anners of the nations, from people which now are called rived, some of the customes yne amongest them have bene id since they have bene con-st them; for not of one nation e, but of many and of different 1 manners. But the cheifest st possessed, and inhabited it, be Scythians, which at such rtherne Nations overflowed all came downe to the sea-cost, ig for other countreves abrode, itelligence of this countrey of z shipping convenient, passed nd arrived in the North-part is now called Ulster, which z, and afterwardes stretching rther into the land as theyr used, named it all of themselves which more breifly is called tland. wonder (Irenæus) whither you re astraie; for whylest wee ad, me thinkes you rip upp

Scotlande, but what is that to ye verye much, for Scotlande e all one and the same.

at seemeth more straunge; for ght well they are distinguished, ea running betwene them; or vo Scotlands.

are there two r the more two kindes of Scotts there were may gather out of Buckhanan) r Irish Scotts, the other Albinose Scotts or Scythyans ard) in the North partes of Ireme of them afterwardes passed coast of Albin, now called th (after much trouble) they

possessed, and of themselves named it Scotland; but in process of time (as is commonly seene) the denomination of the part prevayled in the whole, for the Irish Scottes putting away the name of Scottes, were called onely Irish, and the Albin Scottes, leaving the name of Albin, were called onely Scottes. Therfore it cometh that of some writers Ireland is called Scotia-major, and that which nowe is called Scotland, is named Scotiaminor.

Eudox. I doe now well understand your distinguishing of the two sortes of Scottes, and two Scotlandes, how that this which is now called Ireland was aunciently called Irin, and afterwardes of some writers Scotland, and that which now is called Scotland was formerly called Albin, before the coming of the Scottes thither: but what other nation inhabited the other partes of Ireland?

Iren. After this people thus planted in the North, or before, (for the certayntye of times in thinges soe farr from all knowledge cannot be justly avouched) another nation coming out of Spayne arrived in the West part of Ireland, and finding it wast, or weakely inhabited, possessed it: who whether they were native Spaynyards, or Gaules, or Affricans, or Gothes, or some other of those Northerne Nations which did overspredd all Christendome, it is impossible to affirme, onely some naked conjectures may be gathered, but that out of Spayne certaynly they came, that doe all the Irish Chronicles agree.

Eudox. You doe very boldly, Irenæus, adventure upon the historye of soe auncient times, and leane to confidently unto those Irish Chronicles which are most fabulous and forged, in that out of them you dare take in hand to lay open the originall of such a nation soe antique, as that noe monu-ment remayneth of her beginning and first inhabiting there; specially having bene in those times allwayes without letters, but onely bare traditions of times and remembraunces of BARDES, which use to forge and falsifye every thing as they list, to please or

falsitye ever, the displease any man.

Iren. Truly I must confess I doe soe, but yet not see absolutely as you suppose. I doe herin relye upon those Bards or Irish Chroniclers, though the Irish themselves, through theyr ignoraunce in matters of learning and deepe judgement, doe most constantly beleve and avouch them, but unto them besides I add my owne reading; and out of them both togither, with comparison of times, likewise of manners and customes, affinitye of woorden and names, propertyes of natures and uses, resemblances of rytes and ceremonyes, monu-mentes of churches and tombes, and many other like circumstanness, I doe gather a like ilhood of trueth; not certaynly affirming any thing, but by conferring of times, languages, monumentes, and such like, I doe hunte out a probabilitye of thinges, which I leave to your judgement to beleve or refuse. theless there be some very auncient authors which make mention of these thinges, and some moderne, which by comparing them with present times, experience, and theyr owne reason, doe open a windowe of great light unto the rest that is yet unseene; as namely, of the older Cæsar, Strabo, Tacitus, Ptolomie, Plinie, Pompeius Mela, and Bero-sus; of the later, Vincentius, Æncas Sitvius, Luddus, Buckhanan; of all which I doe give most gredit unto Buckhanan for that he have most credit unto Buckhanan, for that he him-self, being an Irish Scott or Picte by nation, and being very excellently learned, and industrious to seeke out the trueth of these thinges concerning the original of his owne people, hath both sett downe the testimonyes of the auncientes truely, and his owne opinion, withall very reasonably, though in some thinges he doth somewhat flatter. Besides, the Bards and Iriah Chroniclers themselves, though throughe desire of pleasing perhaps to much, and through ignoraunce of arte and purer learning, they have clouded the trueth of those times; yet there appeareth amongest them some reliques of the true antiquitye, though disguised, which a well-eyed man may happely discover and find out. Eudox. Howe can there be

Eudox. Howe can there be any trueth in them at all, since the auncient nations which first inhabited Ireland were altogither destitute of letters, much more of learning, by which they might leave the veritye of thinges written. And those Bards, coming alsoe soe many hundred yeares after, could not knowe what was done in former ages, nor deliver certayntye of any thing, but what they fayned out of theyr unlearned heades.

Iren. Those Bardes indede, Casar writeth, deliver noe certayne trueth of any thing, neither is there any certayne hold to be taken of any antiquitye which is receaved by tradition, since all men be lyars, and may lye when they will; but yet for the antiquitye of the written Chronicles of Ireland give me leave to say something, not to justifye them, but to shewe that some of them might say trueth. For where ye say that the Irish have

allwayes bene without letter, much deceaved, for it is certayn hath had the use of letter we and long before England.

and long before England.

Endow, Is it possible? Buthen that they are so larke soc unlearned, being so ald a learning (as the Poet asyth) and nec simit esse feros: "show yon) could they have those learn. It is hard to say: for at theyr first coming into the wardes by trading with the

nec sinit esse toros,
you) could they have those is
Iren. It is hard to say: so
at theyr first coming into the
wardes by trading with other
had letters, learned them of it
them amongest themselve, i
old, but that they had letter full; but that they had letter nothing doubtfull for the Sax are sayd to have theyr letter and learned men, from the Im appeareth by the likeness of the Now the Scithyans never, as old had letters amongest the seemeth that they had them t which came out of Spayne, for was (as Strabo writeth) let used, whether brought unto the nesians, or Persians, which by bim) had some footing Marseilles, which is sayd to habited first by the Greekes to have had the Greeke chir Marsilians it is sayd, that the theraunce of theyr trades at ness: for the Gaules (as is prooved by many auncient a writers) did first inhabite all Spayne, even unto Cales an the Streits, and peopled als of Italye, which appeareth by and havens in Spayne call Portingallia, Gallicia, Galdan by sundrye nations therin yet have receaved theyr own Gaules, as the Rhegni, Presa Nerii, and divers others. All Mela, being himself a Span to have discended from the Co wherby it is to be gathered, t aunciently Gaules, and that with them those letters which i in Spayne, first into Ireland, also say doe much resemble cian character, being Reowis with pricks and accord, so the but the further country.

ger discourse then this our short

Surely you have shewed a great of that which I had thought to have bene proved; but that 20w say, that Ireland should have d with the Gaules, seemeth much ige, for all theyr Chronicles doe ie west and south was possessed ed of Spanyards: and Cornelius doth strongly affirme the same, ou must overthrowe and falsifve. your opinion. either soe, nor soe; for the Irish

(as I sayd unto you) being made d men, and writing thinges acconceaved, doe err in the circumot in the matter. For all that ! Spayne (they being noe diligent to the differences of nations) supto be Spanyards, and soe called

the groundwoorke therof is neversayd true and certayne, however h ignoraunce disguise the same, or ir owne vanitye (while they would be ignoraunt), doe therupon build many forged historyes of theyr uitye, which they deliver to fooles, hem believe them for trewe; as for at first of one Gathelus the sonn or Argos, who having marryed Lipts daughter, thence sayled ito Spayne, and there inhabited: of Nemed and his fowre sonnes. ; out of Seythia peopled Ireland. ed it with his sonnes two hundred zares untill he was overcome of the lwelling then in Ireland, and at banished and rooted out, after hundred yeares, the sonnes of one Scythyans, arrived there agayne,

ed the whole land, of which the alled Slevins, in the end made march. Lastly, of the fowre hat land from the Scythyans, and t with Spanyardes, and called name of the youngest, Hiberus, all which are in very trueth very Mylesian lyes (as the Latine), for never was there such a King called Mylesins, nor any such ted with his sonnes, as they can ever be prooved; but yet

tales ye may in a manner see urke. For Scythians, heere in-

y name and doe put Spanyards,

wherby appeareth that both those nations heere inhabited, but whether very Spanyards, as the Irish greatlye affect, is noe wayes to be prooved.

Eudox. Whence cometh it then that the Irish doe soe greatly covett to fetch themselves from the Spayniards, since the old Gaules are a more auncient and much more honorable a nation?

Iren. Even soe of a very desire of new fangleness and vanitye, for being as they are nowe accounted the most barbarous nation in Christendome they to avoyde that reproche would derive themselves from the Spanyards, whom they nowe see to be a very honorable people, and next bordering unto them: but all that is most vayne; for from the Spanyard that nowe is, or that people that nowe inhabites Spayne, they noe wayes can approove themselves to discend; neither should it be greatly glorious unto them; for the Spanyard, that nowe is, is come from as rude and savage nations as they, there being, as it may be gathered by course of ages and viewe of theyr owne historyes, (though they therin laboure much to ennoble themselves) scarce any dropp of the old Spanish bloud left in them; for all Spayne was first conquered by the Romains, and filled with colonves from them, which were still encreased, and the native Spanyard still cutt of. Afterwardes the Carthagenians in all the long Punicke Warres (having spoyled all Spayne, and in the end subdued it wholve to themselves) did, as it is likelye, roote out all that were affected to the Romayns. And lastly the Romaynes, having agayne recovered that countrey and bett out Hanniball, did doubtless cutt of all that favoured the Carthagenians, see that betwixt them both, to and froo, there was scarce a native Spanyard left, but all inhabited of Romayns, All which tempestes of troubles being overblowen, there long after arose a newe storme, more dreadfull then all the former, which over-rann all Spayne, and made an infinite confusion of all thinges; that was, the coming downe of the Gothes, the Hunnes, and the Vandals: And lastly all the nations of Seythya, which, like a mountayne flude, did over-flowe all Spayne, and quite drowne and wash away whatsoever relickes there were left of the land-bredd people, yea, and of all the Romayns to. The which Northerne nations finding the complexion of that sayle, and the vehement heute there farr differing from theyr natures, tooke not felicitie in that countrey, but from thome passed over 4 4 2

and did spredd themselves into all countreys m Christendome, of all which there is none but liath some mixture and sprinckling, vf not through peopling of them. And yet after all these the Moores and Barbarians, after all these the Moores and Barbarians, breaking over out of Africa, did finally possess all Spayne, or the most part therof, and did tredd downe under theyr heathenish feete whatever litle they found there yet standing. The which, though afterward they were beaten out by Ferdinando of Aragon and Isabell his wife, yet they were not see clensed, but that through the marriadges which they had made, and mixture with the people of the land, during theyr long continuaunce there, they had left noe pure dropp of Spanish blond, noe more of Romayne, nor of Scythyan. See that of all nations under heaven (I suppose) the Spannations under heaven (I suppose) the Spanyard is the most mingled, most uncertayne, and most bastardly; wherfore most foolishlye doe the Irish thinks to ennoble themselves by wreating theyr auncientrye from the Spayn-yarde, who is unable to derive himself from any certayne.

Eudox. You speake very sharpely, Ira-neus, in dishonour of the Spanyard, whom some other boast to be the only brave nation

under the skye.

Iren. Soe surely he is a very brave man; neither is that which I speake anything to his derogation, for in that I sayed he mingled nation, it is noe disprayse, for I thinke there is noe nation nowe in Christendome, nor muche further, but is mingled, and compounded with others : for it was a singular compounded with others; for it was a singular providence of God, and a most admirable purpose of his wisedome, to drawe those northerne heathen nations downe into these Christian partes, where they might receave Christianitye, and to mingle nations soe remote myraculously, to make, as it were, one kmred and bloud of all people, and ech to have knowlege of him.

Neither have you sure any more Eudox. dishonoured the Irish, for you have brought them from very great and auncient nations, as any were in the world, how ever fondly they affect the Spanish. For both Scythians and Gaules were two as mightye nations as ever the world brought foorth. But is there any token, denomination, or monument of the Gaules yet remaynyng in Ireland, as there is

of the Scythians?

Iren. Yea surely very many woordes of the Gaules remayning, and yet daylye used in common speache.

Eudox. Why what was the Gaulish

speach? is there may part of Amongest any nation?

Brittish, the which was very g heere in all Brittavne before of the Saxons; and yet is no Walshmen, the Cornishus, an of Fraunce, though time, westeration of all thinges, and the interdeale with other nation. have channed and greatly ab therof: but yet the original w Camden and Buckhanan, may Besides, ther be many plan hills, townes, and matles, wh names from the Gaules, of the nan reherseth above 300 in S can (I thinke) recount here Ireland which retaine the old

of the Gaules, as the Menapil, Venti, and others; by all wh other very reasonable probabilit short course will not suffer tol it appeareth that the cheif in Ireland were Gaules, coming t

of Spayne, and afterwarder Tanais, where the Gothes, the the Getes sate downe, they al is sayd of some) auncient Gas passing out of Gallia it self, It coste of Belgia and Celtie

southerne coastes of Irvian possessed and inhabited, wh this day, amongest the Irish to call any strange inh amongest them, Gaull, tha from the Gaules.

from the Gaules,

Eudox. This is very likel
did those Gaules aunesend;
people all the southerns of
Brittayne, which yet retay
names, as the Belgæ in S.
Wiltshire, and part of Hamp
batti in Barkshire, Regni in S. rey, and many others. Now I understand your opinion, the planted in the North partes Spanyards (for see we will o the West; the Gaules in the ! there nowe remayneth the I wardes England, which I wou understand from whence yo

were peopled.

Iren. Mary, I thin
themselves, of who
footing now remain

erwardes, and lastly the English, all the inhabitauntes therof, did ad people it themselves. Yet he Tooles, the Brinnes, the and other nations in Leinster, the the . one memorye of the Brittons ; as the Tooles are called of the he Brinnes of the Brittish woord is, woodes, and the Kavanaghs of Kaun, that is, stronge; see that in people the very denomination of ttons doth still remayne. Besides, flyeth under the succour or protecv agaynst an enemye, he cryeth Cummurreeth, that is in Brittish they call theyr owne language, s. Furthermore to proove the same, by Diodorus Siculus, and by alled Britannia, and a part of trayne. Finally it appeareth by d yet extant, that King Arthur, him Comment had all that Hand him Gurgunt, had all that Iland igeannce and subjection : herunto I manye probabilityes of the names persons, and speeches, as I did in but they should be to longe for and I reserve them for another. you have had my opinion, howe all e of Ireland was first peopled, and ations. After all which the Saxons ; subdued it wholy unto themselves. Egfrid, Kinge of Northumberlande, wast and subdue it, as it appeareth e his complaynt agaynst him; and . King Edgar brought it under nce, as it appeareth by an auncient which it is found written that he all the Hands of the North, even way, and them the king did bring

This ripping up of auncient hisvery pleasing unto me, and indeedof good conceite, and some reading
I see heerby howe profitable traexperience of forreine nations, is to
will applye them to good purther indeede would I have thought,
such antiquityes could have bene
for the Irish, that maketh me the
ong to see some more of your obserhich ye have gathered out of that
and have erst half promised to put
de sure in this mingling of nations
(as you erst have well noted) a
1 providence and purpose of Alliod, that stirred up that people of
t partes of the woorld to seeke out

those regions so remote from them, and by that meanes both to restore theyr decayed habitations, and to make himself knowen to the Heathen. But was there, I pray you, noe more generall winning of that lland, then first by the Scythians, which you say were the Scotts, and afterwardes by Spanyards, besides the Gaules. Brittons, and Saxons?

Iren. Yes, there was an other, and that the last and the greatest, which was by the English, when the Earle Strangbowe, having conquered that land, delivered up the same into the handes of Henry the second, then King, whoe sent over thither great store of gentellmen, and other warlick people, amongest whom he distributed the land, and settled such a strong colonye therin, as never since could, with all the subtill practises of the Irish, be rooted out, but abide still a mighty people, of soe many as remayne English of them.

Eudox. What is this that you say, of see many as remayne English of them? Why, are not they that were once English abiding English still?

Iren. Noe, for the most part of them are degenerated and growen allmost meere Irish, yea and more malicious to the English then the very Irish themselves.

Endox. What heare I? And is it possible that an Englishman, brought up naturally in such sweete civilitye as Lugland affoordes, can find such liking in that barbarous rudeness, that he should forgett his owne nature, and forgoe his owne nation? how may this be, or what (I pray you) may be the cause hereof?

Iren. Surely, nothing but the first evill ordinannee and institution of that Commonwealth. But theref now is here noe fitt place to speake, least, by the occasion theref offering matter of a long discourse, we might be drawen from this that we have in hand, namely, the handling of abuses in the customes of Ireland.

Eudox. In tructh, Ireneus, you do well remember the plott of your first purpose; but yet from that (me seemes) ye have much swarved in all this long discourse, of the first inhabiting of Ireland; for what is that to your purpose?

Iren. Trulye very material; for yf ye

Iren. Trulye very materiall; for vf ve marked the course of all that speach well, it was to show by what meanes the customes, that nowe are in Ireland, wing some of them indeed very straunge and allmost heatherish were first brought in; and that was, as I way



which there yet remaying diverse great familyes and septs, of whom I will also in theyr proper places make mention.

Eudox. You bring your self, Ireneus,

Eudox. You bring your self, Irenœus, very well into the way agayne, notwithstanding that it seemeth that ye were never out of the way, but nowe that ye have passed through those antiquitives, which I could have wished not soe soone ended, beginn, when you please, to declare what customes and manners have bene derived from those nations to the Irish, and which of them you find fault with-

all,
Iren. I will then begin to count theyr customes in the same order that I counted theyr nations, and first with the Scythian or Scottish manners. Of the which there is one use amongest them, to keepe theyr cattell, and to live themselves the most part of the yeare in bolyes, pasturing upon the mountayn, and wast wild places; and removing still to fresh land, as they have depastured the former. The which appeareth playne to be the manner of the Scythians, as you may reade in Olaus Magnus, and Jo. Bohemus, and yet is used amongest all the Tartarians and the people about the Caspian Sea, which are naturally Scythians, to live in heardes as they call them, being the very same that the Irish bolyes are, driving theyr cattell continually with them, and feeding onely upon they milke and white meates.

Eudox, What fault can ye find with this custome? for though it be an old Scythian use, yet it is very behoofull in that countrey of Ireland, where there are greate mountaynes,

therby the more barbaro licentiously then they coal what meanes they list, as mischeives and villanves agaynst the government it binations, or agaynst priva maligne, by stealing theyring themselves. For there selves halfe exempted from and having once tasted for steere that hath bene long grudge and repyne ever a rule agayne.

Endox. By your speac ceave more evills come by then good by theyr grazin may well be reformed: in his due course: do yo next.

Iren. They have anot the Scythians, that is the tells and long glibbes, whis bush of heare, hanging dow and monstrously discuising both very badd and hurtfu

Endox. Doe you think came from the Scythians; thinke otherwise, for by t read, it appeareth that m world aunciently used the Jewes used it, as you m mantell. The Chaldreans; may reade in Diodorus. T wise used it, as ye may re and may be gathered by t

useth this very woord MANTILE

lantilia humi sternunt,'

meth that the mantell was a gento most nations, and not proper nians onely, as you suppose cannot denve but that aunciently mon to most, and yet since dis-layed away. But in this later vorld, since the decay of the Ropire, it was renewed and brought by those Northern nations when, it of theyr cold caves and frozen into the sweete soyle of Europe, it with them theyr usuall weedes, d the cold, and that continual ich they had at home bene enured: yet they left not of, by reason ere in perpetuall warres with the om they had invaded, but, still om place to place, carryed allwayes hat weede, as theyr howse, theyr nevr garment; and, coming lastly I, they found there more speciall by reason of the rawe cold climate, se it is nowe growen into that e in which that people nowe have thom the Gaules succeeding, yet like necessitye for that garment,

he like use therof.

Sith then the necessity therof odious, as ye alleage, that it is howsing, bedding, and clothing, have ye then to wish soe neces; cast of?

ecause the comoditye doth not e the discomoditie, for the inconhat therby doe arise are much ; for it is a fitt howse for an outte bedd for a rebell, and an apt theif. First the out-lawe being y crimes and villanves bannished wnes and howses of honest men, ing in wast places, furr from lawe, maketh his mantell his under it covereth himself from of heaven, from the offence of nd from the sight of men. When it is his pent-howse; when it his tent; when it freezeth it is iter he can weare it close; at all an use it; never heavy, never. Likewise for a rebell it is as for in his warre that he maketh it besemeth the name of warr) fireth from his foe, and lurketh

in the thick woodes and straite passages. wayting for advantages, it is his bedd, yea, and allmost his howsehold stuff. For the wood is his howse agaynst all weathers, and his mantell is his cave to sleepe in. Therin he wrappeth himself rounde, and encloseth himself strongly agaynst the gnattes, which in that countrey doe more annoye the naked rebelles, whilest they keepe the woodes, and doe more sharply wound them then all theyr enemyes swoordes or speares, which can come seldome nigh them : yea, and oftentimes theyr mantell serveth them when they are neere driven, being wrapt about they left arme in steede of a Targett, for it is as hard to cutt through it with a swoord; besides it is light to beare, light to throwe away, and, being (as they then commonly are) naked, it is to them all in all. Lastly, for a theif it is soe handsome, as it may seeme it was first invented for him; for under it he can cleanly convay any fitt pillage that cometh hand-somely in his way, and when he goeth abrode in the night on free-booting, it is his best and surest frend; for lying, as they often doe, two or thre nightes togither abrode to watch for theyr bootye, with that they can pretelye shrowde themselves under a bush or bankes side, till they may conveniently doe theyr errand: and when all is done, he can in his mantell pass through any towns or company, being close hooded over his head, as he useth, from knowledge of any to whom he is endaungered. Besides all this, yf he be disposed to doe mischeif or villanye to any man, he may under his mantell goe privilye armed without suspicion of any, carrying his head-peece, his skeane, or pistoll yf he please, to be allwaye in readiness. necessarye and fitting is a mantell for a badd man, and surely for a badd howsewife it is noe less convenient, for some of those that be wandring women, there called of them Beantoolhe, it is half a wardrobe, for in Sommer you shall have her arrayed commonlye but in her smocke and mantle, to be more readye for her light services: in Winter, and in her travell, it is her best cloke and safegard, and also a coverlett for her lewde And when she hath filled her exercise. vessell, under it she can hide both her burden and her blame; yea, and when her bastard is borne it serves insteede of a craddle and all bother swadling cloutes. And as for all other good women which love to doe but little woorke, howe handsome it is to live and sleepe, or to lowize themselves in the sum shine, they that have bene but a while Ireland can well witness. Sure I am that ye will thinke it very unflit for good howse-wives to stirre in, or to busy them solves about theyr howse-wiverye in such sort as they should. These be some of the abuses for which I would thinke it move to forbidd all mantells.

Eurlox. O evill mynded man, that having reckned up soe many uses of a mantell, will yet wish it to be abandoned! Sure I thinke Diogenes dish did never serve his master more turnes, notwithstanding that he made more turnes, notwithstanding that he made it his dish, his cupp, his measure, his waterpott, then a mantell doth an Irish man. But I see they be all to badd intentes, and therfore I will joyne with you in abelishing it. But what hlame lay you to the glibb? Take heede (I pray you) that you be not to busye therwith for feare of your owne blame, seing our Englishmen take it up in such a generall fashion to weare theyr hears so unmeasurably long, that some of them exceede the longest Irish glibbes.

Iren. I feare not the blame of any undeserved dislikes; but for the Irish glibbes, I say that, besides theyr savage brutishness and lothsome filthiness which is not to be named, they are as fitt maskes as a mantell is for a thief. For whensoever he hath runn himself into that perill of lawe that he will not be knowen, he either cutteth of his glibbe quite, by which he becometh nothing like himself, or pulleth it see lowe downe over his eyes, that it is very hard to discerne his theivish countenaunce; and therfore fitt to

be trussed up with the mantell.

Endox, Truly these thre Scythian abuses, I hold most fitt to be taken away with sharpe penaltyes; and surely I wonder how they have bene kept thus long, notwithstanding see many good provisions and orders as have bene devised for the reformation of

that people.

Iren. The cause therof shall appeare to you hereafter; but lett us now goe forward with our Scythian customes, of which the next that I have to treate of is the manner of theyr raysing the crye in theyr conflictes, and at other troublesome times of uproare : the which is very naturall Seythian, as you may reade in Diodorus Siculus, and in Herodotus, describing the manner of the Scythians and Persians coming to give the charge at theyr battells: at the which it is sayd, they come running with a terrible yell yi he found it in any of and hubbabowe, as yf heaven and earth would have gone togither, which is the very image of the Irish hubbabowe, which theyr have bene carryed.

kerne use at they first race the same Herodotus writels, the in theyr battells to call upon theyr captaynes or generals, is upon theyr greatest king tess buttell of Tomyris against D amongest the Irish. For a the battell, they likewise call upon taynes name, or the name of his As they under Oncale crys La that is, the blondye hand, with hadge: they under O Brom laider, that is, the strong la theyr ensample, the old Engli there remayneth have gotten a Scythian-like, as the Geralius and the Butlers Butleaur above in also lyeth open an other m that the Irish be Scythes or So theyr encounters they use easy woord, crying Farrib, Farrib, wh ish woord, to weete, the name sairst Kinges of Soutland, called gus, or Ferragus, which fought Pictes, as ye may reade in Re rebus Scoticis; but as others long before that, the name of Captayne, under whom they for the Africans, the which was t tunate unto them, that ever a have used to call upon his un battells.

Eudox. Beleve me, this ob yours, Irenaus, is very good full; farr beyond the blunt con who (I remember) have upon th Farrih, made a very gross on namely Mr. Stanihurst, who t the same country man borne, searche more neerely into the thinges, yet hath strayed from the heavens wide (as they say, upon groundeth a very gro that the Irish should discend fro tians which came into that ilst the leading of one Scota the Pharao, wherupon they use 6 all theyr battells to call upon Tharao, crying Farrib, Farrib, shootes wyde on the bowe has farr from the marke. For I knowe of him what auncient g thoritye he hath for such a sene yf he found it in any of the rude as it may be he had, yet two man of his learning should

ovaunce of his owne reason; for cota be an Ægyptian woord or ny learning or judgement lett the ge. But this Scota rather cometh ke scotos, that is, darkeness, which tt him see the light of the trueth. 'ou knowe not, Eudoxus, tanihurst could see in the darke; bath owles or cats eyes, but well seeth not well the light of the aatters of more waight. But as I have told you my conjecture yet thus much more I have to ikelychoode, that there are this Ireland, many Irish men (cheifly h partes) called by the name of But lett that nowe be: this onely ice suffiseth, that it is a common in theyr Hubbobowes, the which the rest) is to be abolished, for covereth an affectation of Irish which in this plattforme I encially to beate downe. There be of cryes also used amongest the h savoure greatly of the Scythian as theyr lamentations at theyr ith dispayrefull out-cryes, and waylinges, the which Mr. Staninight have used for an argument nem Ægiptians, which lamented h of Joseph. Others thinke this come from the Spayniardes, for oe see unmeasurably likewise ber dead; but the same is not proper it altogither heathenish, brought first either by the Scythians, or , which were Africans, that long For it is the manhat countrey. 'agans and Infidells to be intem-heyr waylinges of the dead, for and noe fayth nor hope of salvathis ill custome also is specially Diodorus Siculus, to have bene in ans, and is yett amongest the icotts.

This is sure an ill custome also, h not soe much concerne civill n, as an abuse of religion.

did not rehearse it as one of the ich I thought most woorthy of; but having made mention of I thought this manner of lewd howling not impertinent to be neivill and Scythian-like: for by istomes, and other like conjectural nees, the discents of nations can rooved, where other monumentes be not remayning.

Eudox. Then (I pray you) whensoever in your discourse you meete with them by the way, doe not shunne, but boldly touche them; for besides theyr greate pleasure and delight for theyr antiquitye, they bring also great profitt and helpe unto civilitye.

Iren. Then sith you will have it soe, I will heere take occasion, since I lately spake of theyr manner of cryes in joyning battell,

of theyr manner of cryes in joyning battell, to speake also somewhat of the manner of theyr armes, and array in battell, with other customes perhaps woorthy the noting. first of theyr armes and weapons, amongest which theyr brode swoordes are proper Seythian, for such the Scythes used comonly, as ye may reade in Olaus Magnus. And the same also used the old Scottes, as ye may reade in Buckhanan, and in Solinus, where the pictures of them are in the same forme expressed. Also theyr short bowes, and litle quivers with short bearded arrowes, are also very Scythian, as ye may reade in the same Olaus. And the same sort, both of bowes, quivers, and arrowes, are at this day to be sene commonly amongest the Northern Irish-Scotts, whose Scottish bowes are not past thre quarters of a yard longe, with a string of wreathed hemp slackly bent, and whose arrowes are not much above half an ell longe, tipped with steele heades, made common brode arrowe heades, but much more sharpe and slender, that they enter into an armed man or horse most cruelly, notwithstanding that they are shott foorth weakelye. Moreover, theyr long brode shieldes, made but of wicker roddes, which are commonly used amongest the sayd Northern Irish, but specially of the Scottes, are brought from the Scythians, as ye may reade in Olaus Magnus, Solinus, and others: likewise theyr going to battell without armour on theyr bodyes or heades, but trusting onely to the thickness of theyr glibbes, the which (they say) will sometimes beare of a good stroke, is mere savage and Scythian, as ye may see in the sayd Images of the old Seythes or Scottes, sett foorth by Herodianus Besides, theyr confused kind of and others. marche in heapes, without any order or array, theyr clashing of swoordes togither, theyr fierce running upon theyr enemyes, and theyr manner of fight, re-embleth alltogither that which is reade in historyes to have bene used of the Scythians. By which it may allmost infallibly be guthered, togither with other circumstaunces, that the Irish are very Ecotta or Scythes originally, though sithence intermingled with many other nations repayris

and joining unto them. And to these I may add also another very stronge conjecture which cometh to my mynd, that I have often there observed amongest them; that is, certayne religious ceremonyes, which are very superstitiously yet used amongest them, the which are also written by sundrye authours, to have bene observed amongest the Scythians, by the which it may very vehemently be presumed that both the nations were aunciently all one. For Plutark (as I re-member) in his Treatise of Homer, endevouring to searche out the truthe, what countryman Homer was, proveth it most strongly (as he thinketh) that he was an Æolian borne; for that in describing a sacrifice of the Greekes, he omitted the chinbone, the which all the other Grecians (saving the Eolians) doe use to burne in theyre sacrifices: aliso for that he maketh the intralls to be rosted on five spittes, the which was the proper manner of the Æolians whoe , of all nations and countreys of Grecia, used to sacrifice in that sort, whereas all the rest of the Greekes used to rost them on thre spittes. By which he inferreth, necessarilye, that Homer was an Æoliau. And by the same reason may I (as reasonablie) conclude, that the Irish are discended from the Scithyans; for that they use to this day some of the same ceremonyes which the Scy-thians aunciently used. As for example, ye may reade in Lucian, in that sweete dialogue which is intituled Toxaris or of frendship, that the common oath of the Scythians was by the swoord, and by the fire, for that they accounted these two speciall divine powers, which should woorke vengeaunce on per-jurours. So doe the Irish at this day, when they goe to any battell, say certayne prayers or charmes to theyr swoordes, making a cross therewith upon the earth, and thrusting the pointes of theyr blades into the ground; thinking therby to have the better success in fight. Also they use commonly to sweare by theyr swoordes. Likewise at the kindling of the fire, and lighting of candells, they say certaine prayers or use some other superstitious rites, which sheweth that they honoure the fire and the light; for all those Northern nations, having bene used to be annoyed with much cold and darkenes, are wonte therfore to have the fire and the sunn in great veneration: like as contrariwise the Moores and Ægiptians, which are much offended and greived with much extreme heate of the sunn. doe every morning, when thes unn riseth, fall to ursing and banning of him as they r plague | carryed see far from my set.

and cheif scourge. Also the Sc when they would binde any se or combination amongest then bowle of bloud togither, vowi spend theyr last bloud in that even soe doe the wild Scotts. reade in Buckhanan; and some ern Irish likewise. As ye may the same booke, in the Tale of that it was the manner of the when any one of them was hear and would assemble unto him people to joyne with him in h sitt in some publick place for o upon an oxe hide to which resort all such persons as bein; take armes, would enter into joyne with him in his quarr same ye may likewise reade to auncient manner of the wild are indeede the very naturall over, the Scythians used to sw Kinges hand, as Olaus sheweth. the Irish nowe use to sweare by hand, and, to forsweare it, hold minall then to sweare by the Scythians sayd, that they we yeare turned into wolves, and se of the Irish: though Mr. Camd sence doth suppose it was a c Lycanthropia, see named of the yet some of the Irish doe use wolfe theyr gossip. The Scyth to seeth theyr flesh in the hide the Northern Irish yet. The S wise used to boyle the bloud of living, and to make meate thereo the Irish still in the North. tomes I could recount unto you old manner of marrying, of dauncing, of singing, of feasting though Christians have wiped part of them, by resemblaun might playnly appeare unto nations are the same, but that ning of these fewe which I ha you, I find my speach drawen or length then I purposed. Thus for this time, I hope, shall st thinke that the Irish are au cended from the Soythians.

Eudar. Surely, Ireneus, I h.

fewe woordes, herd that from would have thought had bene have bene spoken of times see customes so auncient: with deli was all that while as it were ent sorye that you ended soe soone.

ell much howe it cometh to pass,
a long continuaunce of time, and
come betwene, yet any jote of
rites and superstitious customes
ayne amongest them.
is noe cause of wonder at all; for

aner of all barbarous nations to be titious, and diligent observers of old id antiquity es; which they receave all tradition from they parentes, g of theyr Bards and Chronicles, nges, and by daylye use and exeyr elders.

But have you I pray you obauch customes amongest them, kewise from the Spanyardes or these from the Scythians? that e very materiall to your first pur-

me perhaps I have; and who that s occasion more diligently marke e theyr customes shall find many there are fewer I thinke rethe Gaules or Spaynyardes then :hians, by reason that the partes, r then possessed, lying upon the e Westerne and Southerne Sea, ce continually visited with straunorrein people, repayring thither, and for fishing, which is very pon these coastes: for the trade ale of sea-cost nations one with worketh more civilitye and good them, all sea men being naturally new fashions, then amongst the llers, which are seldome seene of yet some of such as I have noted, I te unto you. And first I will, for reditt of the rest, shewe you one r Statutes, amongest which it is it noe man shall weare his bearde in the upper lipp like muschachoes, Il the rest of his chinn. And this ncient manner of Spaynyardes, as all the Mahometans to cutt of all les close, save only theyr muschach they weare long. And the is use was for that they, being ote country, founde much haire on and other partes to be novsome for which cause they did cutt it r, like as contrarily all other ought up in cold countryes, doe rish theyr haire, to kepe them ch was the cause that the Scythottes weare Glibbes (as I shewed e theyr heades warme, and long

beardes to defend theyr faces from cold. From them also (I thinke) came saffron shirtes and smockes, which was devised by them in those hote countryes, where saffron is very common and rife, for avoyding that evill which commeth by much sweating, and longe wearing of linnen: also the women amongest the old Spanyardes had the charge of all household affayres, both at home and abrode, (as Bohemus writeth) though nowe the Spanyardes use it quite otherwise. see have the Irish women the trust and care of all thinges, both at home, and in the fieldes. Likewise rounde leather targetts is the Spanish fashion, whoe used it (for the most part) paynted, which in Ireland they use also, in many places, coloured after theyr rude fashion. Moreover the manner of theyr womens riding on the wrong side of theyr horse, I meane with theyr faces towardes the right side, as the Irish use, is (as they say) old Spanish, and, as some say, Affricane, for amongest them the women (they say) use so to ride acrosse: Also the deepe smock sleeve to ride across: Anso the covepe anothe section hanging to the grounde, which the Irish women use, they say, it was old Spanish, and is used yet in Barbarye; and yet that should seeme rather to be an old English fashion; for in armory the fashion of the Manche, which is given in armes by many, being indede nothing els then a sleeve, is fashioned much like to that sleeve, that Knightes in auncient times used to weare theyr mistress or loves sleeve, upon theyr armes, as appeareth by that which is written of Sir Launcelott, that he wore the sleeve of the Fayre Mayde of Asteloth in a turney, whereat Queene Guenever was much displeased.

Eudox. Your conceite is good, and well fitting for thinges soe farr growen from certaynte of knowledge and learning, onely upon likelyhoodes and conjectures. But have you any customes remayning from the Gaules or Brittons?

Iren. I have observed a fewe of either; and whoe will better searche into them may finde more. And first the profession of theyr Bards who (as Cæsar writeth) were usuall amongest the Gaules; and the same was also common amongest the Brittons, and is not yet altogither left of by the Welsh which are theyr posteritye. For all the fashions of the Gaules and Brittons, as he testifyeth, were much like. The long dartes came also from the Gaules, as ye may reade in the same Cæsar, and in Jo. Bohemus. Likewise the said Bohemus writeth, that the Gaules as

swoordes a hand full broade, and soe doe the Irish nowe. Also that they used long wicker sheildes in battayll that should cover theyr whole bodyes, and so doe the Northern Irish; but because I have not seene such fashioned targets used in the Southerne parts, but onely amongst the Northern people, and Irish-Scotts, I doe thinke that they were rather brought in by the Scythians, then by the Gaules. Also the Gaules used to drinke theyr enemyes bloud, and paynte themselves with it: soe also they write, that the old Irish were wonte, and soe I have seene some of the Irish doe, not theyr enemyes but theyr frendes bloud. As namely at the execution of a notable traytour at Limmericke, called Murrogh O-Brein, I sawe an old woman, which was his foster mother, take up his head, whilest he was quartered, and sucked up all the bloud running thereout, saying, that the earth was not woorthye to drinke it, and therewith also steeped her face and breast, and tore her hayre, crying out and shreeking out most terriblye.

Eudox. You have very well runne through such customes as the Irish have derived from the first old nations which inhabited that land: namely, the Scythians, the Spanyardes, the Gaules, and the Brittons. It nowe remayneth that you take in hand the customes of the old English which are amongest the Irish: of which I doe not thinke that you shall have much to finde fault with, considering that by the English most of the old badd Irish customes were abolished, and more civill fashions brought in theyr steede.

Iren. You think otherwise, Eudoxus,

then I doe; for the cheifest abuses which are nowe in that realme, are growen from the English that were, but are nowe much more lawless and licentious then the very wild Irish: see that as much care as was then by them had to reforme the Irish, soe much and more must nowe be used to reform them; see much time doth alter the manners of men.

Eudox. That seemeth very straunge which you say, that men should soe much degenerate from theyr first natures as to growe wilde.

Iren. Soe much can libertye and ill ex-

ample doe.

Eudox. What libertye had the English Were not the lawes plaunted amongest them at the first, and had not they governours to courbe and keepe them still in awe and obedience?

They had, but it was, for the most

themselves, and commonly ou howses of the Geraldins and both adversaryes and corryvalls the other. Whoe though, for the they were but as deputyes unde King of Englandes sonnes, bretl neere kinsemen, whoe were the tenauntes, yet they swayed see r had all the rule, and the others Of which Butlers and Geraldi must confess) theve were ver woorthye men, as also of other that realme, made Lord Deput Justices at sundry times, y greatnes of their late conquests: they grewe insolent, and ber regall authoritye, and also t powers, one agaynst another, subversion of themselves, and to f the Irish agavne. This of the Irish agayne. playnly discovered by a letter

the cittizens of Corke out of In

of London, and also amongest th

Earle of Shrewsbury then in remayning yet upon record, both

part, such as did more hurte the they had governours for the 1

of Ireland. Wherein it is by plained, that the English Lords men, who then had great p Ireland, beganne, through pri leneve, to make private warres another, and when either part they would wage and drawe to take theyr parte, by which both greatlie encouraged and Irish, which till that time had within the Mountayne of Sle weakened and disabled them much that theyr revenues were impayred, and some of them, w reckoned to have bene able to l or 13 hundred poundes per & rent, (that I may say noe more) commodityes of creekes and nowe scarce able to dispend the From which disorder, an otl lamitye came upon them, as t nowe growen to be allmost as Irish: I meane of such English a: above toward the West; for the hath preserved it self, through their state, in reasonable civility

which dwell above Conaught a

ster, which is the sweetest sov!

and some in Leinster and Ulst

erate, and growen to be as very | the wild Irish, yea and some o

en of theyr English names, and put ut they might be alltogither Irish. Is it possible that any should soe sout of frame that they should in space, quite forgett theyr country owne names? That is a most danhargie, much woorse then that of orvinus, who, being a most learned ugh sickness forgate his owne at can you counte us any of this

cannot but by reporte of the Irish swho report, that the Mack-mahons, whe were aunciently English; to aded from the Fitz Ursulas, which he familye in England, and that appeareth by the signification of 1 names. Likewise that the Mackwe in Ulster, were aunciently of the England, but that they themselves, of English, see disguised theyr

Could they ever conceave any tish dislike of theyr owne naturall as that they would be ashamed of and byte of her dugg from which ed life?

ed life? I wote well there should be none; de hartes doe oftentimes (like iltes) kicke at theyr mothers, as we bia les and Themistocles did, whoe, nished out of Athens, fledd unto the sia, and there stirred them up to warr neyr owne countrey, in which warres selves were cheiftaynes. So they ese Mack-swines and Mack-mahons, Veres and Fitz Ursulas, for private arne themselves agaynst England, uch time as Ro. Vere. Earle of vas in the Barons warres agaynst hard the Second, through the malice eres, banished the realme and proie with his kinseman Fitz Ursula Ireland, where being prosecuted, wantes putt to death in England. man, there remayning behind in rebelled, and, conspiring with the quite cast of the English name and nce, since which time they have remayned, and have ever sithence ited meere Irish. The verye like is rted of the Mack-swines, Mack-ma-Mack-sheeheis of Mounster, whoe were aunciently English, and old of the Earle of Desmonde, untill the King Edward the Fourth: at which Earle of Desmonde that then was, mas, being through false subornation (as they say) of the Queene for some offence by her agaynst him conceaved, brought to his death at Drogheda most unjustly, notwithstanding that he was a very good and sound subject to the King. Thereupon all his kinsmen of the Geraldins, which then was a mightye familye in Mounster, in revenge of that huge wronge, rose into armes agaynst the King, utterly renounced and forsooke all obedience to the crowne of England; to whom the sayd Mack-swines, Mack-sheeheis, and Mackmahons, being then servauntes and followers, did the like, and have ever sithence soe continued. And with them (they say) all the people of Mounster went out, and many others of them, which were meere English, thencefoorth joyned with the Irish agaynst the King, and termed themselves meere Irish, taking on them Irish habits and customes, which could never since be cleane wiped away, but the contagion therof hath remayned still amongest theyr posterityes. Of which sorte (they say) be most of the surnames which end in an, as Hernan, Shenan, Maugan, &c. the which now accounte themselves meere Irish. Other greate howses there be of the old English in Ireland, which through licentious conversing with the Irish, or marrying, or fostering them, or lacke of good nurture, or other such unhappye occasions, have degenerated from theyr auncient dignitye, and are nowe growen as Irish as Ohanlans breeche, as the proverbe there is; of which sorte there are two most pityfull examples above the rest, to witt the Lord Bremechame, whoe being the most auncient barron, I thinke, in England, nowe waxen the most savage Irish amongest them, naming himself Irishlike, Noccorish; and the other is the greate Mortimer, whoe forgetting howe greate he was once in England, or English at all, is nowe become the most barbarous of them all, and is called Macknihmarrih; and not much better then he is the old Lo. Courcye, who, having lewdly wasted all the landes and signoryes that he had, allyed himself unto the Irish and is himself also nowe growen quite Irish.

Endox. In trueth this which you tell is a most shamefull hearing, and to be reformed with most sharpe censures in see greate personages, to the terror of the meaner: for where the lordes and cheif men wax see barbarous and bastardlike, what shall be hoped of the pesanter, and base people. And hereby sure you have made a say way unto your self to lay open the above.

of theyr evill customes, which you are nowe nexte to declare, the which, noe doubt, are very badd and barbarous, being borrowed from the Irish, as theyr apparrell, theyr language, theyr riding, and many other the

like. You cannot but thinke them sure Tren. to be very brute and uncivill; for were they at the best that they were of old, when they were brought in, they should in soe long an alteration of time seeme very straunge and wonderfull. For it is to be thought, that the use of all England was in the raigne of the use of all England was in the raigne of Henry the Second, when Ireland was first planted with English, very rude and barbarous, soe as yf the same should be nowe used in England by any, it would seeme woorthy of sharpe correction, and of newe lawes for reformation, for it is but even the other day since England grows to be similar. other day since England grewe to be civill: therfore in counting the evill customes of the English there, I will not have regard whether the beginning therof were English or Irish, but will have respect onely to the inconvenience therof. And first I have to finde fault with the abuse of language, that is, for the speaking of Irish amongest the English, which as it is unnaturall that any people should love anothers language more then theyr owne, soe it is very inconvenient,

and the cause of many other evills.

Eudox. It seemeth straunge to me that the English should take more delight to speake that language then theyr owne, wheras they should (me thinkes) rather take scorne to acquaynte theyr tonges therewith: for it hath bene ever the use of the conquerours to dispuse the language of the conquered, and to force him by all meanes to learne his. See did the Romayns alwayes use, in soe much as there is almost noe nation in the worlde, but it is sprinckled with theyr language. It were good therfore one thinkes) to scarche out the originall cause of this evill; for, the same being discovered, a redress therof wil be the more casely provided. For I thinke it were straunge, that the English being soe many, and the Irish soe fewe as they then were left, they being the fower should draw the more they being the fewer should drawe the more

unto theyr use. Iren. I suppose that the chenest cause of the bringing in of the Irish language, amongest them, was specially theyr fostring, and marrying with the Irish, the which are two most daungerous infections: for first the child that sucketh the milke of the nurse, must of necessitye learne his first speache of \ vate discretions thinke it not till

her, the which being the first t to his tongue, is ever after t unto him, in see much as the ward be taught English, yet t the first will allwayes abide w not onely of the speache, but manners and conditions. For yong children be like apes, whi and imitate what they see don specially of theyr nurses who soe well, they moreover drawe selves, togither with theyr suc nature and disposition of they the mynd followeth much the to the bodye; and also the wo Image of the mynd, soe as, the from the mynd, the mynd mi affected with the woordes. speache being Irish, the harte be Irish; for out of the abounc harte, the tonge speaketh. Th marriadge with the Irish, whic gerous a thing it is in all com appeareth to every simplest though some greate ones have such matches with theyr vass of them nevertheless raysed w as Telamon did with Termes: the Great with Roxane, and

to the conditions of theyr mothe them they are first framed at soe as what they receave once they will hardly ever after forgare these evill customes of marrying with the Irish most be restrayned; for of them tv evill, that is the custome (which I speake of) cheitly proc Eudox. But are there not La appointed, for avoyding of this Iren. Yes, I thinke there be.

with Cleopatra, yet the exa-

perilous, as it is not to be adver-steede of these fewe good, I

unto them infinite many ev

deede how can such matchir foorth an evill race, seing the

the child taketh most of his I mother, besides speache, manner tion, which are (for the most p

never a whitt as never the bette doe statutes avayle without | lawes without charge of executi there is another like lawe ena wearing of Irish apparrell, but a is it observed by any, or executhat have the charge: for they

poore wretches of that countrey, not woorth the price of English apr expedient to be practised agaynst sorte, by reason that the bare say they doth yeelde noe better: there better to be had, yet these to be used, as namely, the mantell ng, because there be noe Innes ete bedding might be had, soe that er quilted jacke in journeying and g, for that it is fittest to be under of mayle, for any occasion of rice, as there happen many, and to thinn breeche on horsebacke: the nen rowle, which the women weare, theyr heades warme after cutting re, which they use in any sickness; neyr thicke folded linnen shirtes, ige-sleeved smockes, theyr halfthey will devise some colourable them, either of necessitye, or of anor of comeliness

But what coloure see ever they to thinkes it is not expedient, that ution of a lawe once ordayned left to the discretion of the judge, but that, without partialities or it should be fulfilled as well on as Irish.

But they thinke this precisenes in on of apparrell not to be see materiall,

pertinent.

Yes surely but it is; for mens is commonly made according to iditions, and theyre conditions are s governed by theyr garments: for n that is gowned is by his gowne mynd of gravitye, and also refrom lightnes by the very unaptness ede. Therfore it is written by Arisit when Cyrus had overcome the that were a warlicke nation, and debring them to a more peaceable life, uged theyr apparrell and musick, ede of theyr shorte warlicke coates, hem in long garments like women, :eede of theyr warlick musick, apto them certayne lascivious layes, ; gigges, by which in shorte space ndes were so mollyfyed and abated, forgate theyr former fierceness, and jost tender and effeminate: wherby eth, that there is not a litle in the to the fashioning of the mynde and But be all these, which you have the fashions of the Irish weede?

Irea. Noe; all these that I have rehearsed unto you, be not Irish garments, but English; for the quilted leather Jacke is old English; for it was the proper weede of the horseman, as ye may reade in Chaucer, where he describeth Sir Thopas his apparrell and armoure, when he went to fight agavnst the Gyant, in his robe of shecklaton, which schecklaton is that kind of guilded leather with which they use to embroder theyr Irish jackes. And there likewise by all that description ye may see the very fashion and manner of the Irish horseman most lively set foorth, his long hose, his shooes of costly cordewayne, his hacqueton, and his habberjon, with all the rest therto belonging.

Eudox. I surely thought that that manuer had bene kindly Irish, for it is farr differing from that we have nowe; as also all the furniture of his horse, his stronge brasso bitt, his slyding raynes, his shaunckpillion without stirrops, his manner of mounting, his fashion of riding, his charging of his speare aloft above head, and the forme of

his speare.

Iren. Noe sure; they be native English, and brought in by the Englishmen first into Ireland: neither is the same counted an uncomelye manner of riding,; for I have heard some greate warriours say, that, in all the services which they had seene abroade in forrayne countreys, they never sawe a more comely horseman then the Irish man, nor that cometh on more bravely in his charge: neither is his manner of mounting unseemely, though he wante stirrops, but more ready then with stirrops; for in his getting up his horse is still going, wherby he gayneth way. And therfore the stirrops were called see in scorne, as it were a stayre to gett up, being derived of the old English woord sty, which is, to gett up, or mounte.

Endox. It seemeth then that ye finde

Eudox. It seemeth then that ye finde noe fault with this manner of riding; why then would you have the quilted Jacke layed

away?

fren. I would not have that layed away, but the abuse thereof to be putt away; for being used to the end that it was framed, that is, to be worne in warre under a shirte of mayle, it is allowable, as also the shirte of mayle, and all his other turniture; but to be worne daylye at home, and in townes and civil places, it is a rude habite and most uncomely, seeming like a hayers paynted coate.

Endox. But it is wome (they say) like wise of Irish footemen; bow day you allow

of that? for I should thinke it were un-

Iren. Noe, not as it is used in warre,
Iren. Noe, not as it is used in warre,
it is then worne likewise of a footeman
under a shirte of mayle, the which footeman
thay call a Galloglass, the which name deth discover him to be also anneient English, for Gallogla signifyes an English servitour or yeoman. And he being see armed, in a long shirt of mayle downe to the calfe of his legg, with a long brode axe in his hand, was then pedes gravis armatura, and was insteade of the armed footeman that nowe weareth a corselett, before the corseletts were used, or allmost invented.

Eudox. Then him belike ye likewise allow in your straight reformation of old

customes.

Iren. Both him and the kearne also (whom onely I tooke to be the proper Irish souldiour) can I allowe, soe that they use that habite and custome of theyrs in the warres onely, when they are ledd foorthe to the service of theyr Prince, and not usually at home, and in civill places, and besides doe lay aside the evill and wild uses which the galloglass and kearne doe use in their common trade of tyfe.

Eudox. What be those?

Iren. Marye, those be the most lothsome

and barbarous conditions of any people (I thinke) under heaven; for, from the time they enter into that course, they doe use all the beastly behaviour that may be to oppress all men; they spoyle as well the subject as the enemy; they steale, they are cruell and bloudye, full of revenge and delighting in deadly execution, licentious, swearers, and blasphemers, common ravishers of women, and murtherers of children.

Endox. These be most villenous conditions; I marvayle then that ever they be used or employed, or allmost suffred to live: what good can there then be in them?

Iren. Yet sure they are very valiannte and hardye, for the most part great endurours of cold, labour, hunger, and all hardiness, very active and stronge of hand, very swift of foote, very vigilaunte and circumspect in theyr enterprises, very present in perrills, very great scorners of death.

Endox. Truly, by this that ye saie, it

seemes the Irishman is a very brave souldiour.

Iren. Yea surely, even in that rude kind of service he beareth himself very couragiously. But when he cometh to experience of service abroade, and is putt to a peece, or a pike, he maketh as woorthy a souldiour as any

nation he meeterh with. But lett a you) turne agayne to our disc

customes amongest the link

Eudox. Me thinkes all this se
speake of, concerneth the customs of verey materiallie; for their ton it of no small importance in la con well to reforme those which are confirme and continue those which? But followe you your owne come, what other their customes ye have

Iren. There is among at the in tayne kind of people called Rank, to to them insteade of poets, when it to sett foorth the prayes and in pray in theyr poems and rimes; the who in see high request and estimation them, that none dure to disple for feare of running into reprodu theyr offence, and to be made in the mouthes of all men. For they taken up with a generall and usually songe at all fensts and certayne other persons, whose post that is, which also receave for the rewardes and reputation besides.

Eudox. Doe you thans the which I would otherwise have to have been woorthy of good ato rather to have bene mayutayued mented amongest them, then to misliked? For I have reade that Poettes have bene had in speciall t and that (me seemes) not with cause; for besides theyr sweete i and most wittye layes, they hav used to sett foorth the prayees of the vertuous, and to beate downs an the badd and vicious. See that of yong myndes have oftentimes, the ing of the prayses and famous I woorthy men song and reported bene stirred up to affect like cious, and soe to strive to like dethey say the Lacedemonians wer clined to desire of honour with the verses of the Poet Tirtzeus, then w exhortations of their Captaines, or of theyr Rulers and Magistrates

Iren. It is most true that such I theyr writings doe laboure to beth ners of men, and through the swee theyr numbers, to steale into you he had in great respect. B Banks are for the and soe fair from

pline, that they themselves doe e to be sharpely disciplined; for e use to choose unto themselves of good men for the ornamentes ms, but whomsoever they find to ntions of life, most bold and lawoinges, most daungerous and despartes of disobedience and rebeltion, him they sett up and gloririmes, him they prayse to the to yong men make an example

marvayle whate kind of speeches i, or what face they can putt on, ch lewde persons as live see lawlicentiouslye upon stealthes and most of them doe; or how can that any good mynde will approve the same?

ere is none soe badd, Eudoxus, de some to favoure his doinges; entious partes as these, tending parte to the hurte of the Engatenaunce of theyre owne lewde y themselves, being most desirous most allowe. Besides this, evill g decked and suborned with the of goodly woordes, may easely I carrye away the affection of a that is not well stayed, but dene bold adventure to make proofe or being (as they all be) brought ithout awe of parentes, without nasters, without feare of offence, rected, or employed in any cours may carrye them to vertue, will twen to followe such as any shall them: for a yong mynd cannot he be not still busyed in some will find himself such busines e busye all about him. In which and any to prayse him, and to couragement, as those Bards and or a litle reward, or a share of a then waxeth he most insolent ld with the love of himself, and rde deedes. And as for woordes h such lewdness, it is not hard

give a goodly glose and paynted unto, borrowed even from the ch are proper to vertue itself. notorious theif and wicked outhad lived all his lifetime of robberyes, one of these Bardes se sayd, That he was none of milk-sops that was brought up side, but that most of his dayes rmes and valyaunt enterprises;

that he did never eate his meate before he had wonne it with his swoorde; that he was not slugging all night in a cabin under his mantell, but used comonly to keepe others wak-ing to defend theyr lives, and did light his candell at the flames of theyr howses to leade him in the darkeness; that the day was his night, and the night his day; that he loved not to lye long wooing of wenches to yeeld unto him, but where he came he tooke by force the spoyle of other mens love, and left but lamentations to theyr lovers; that his musicke was not the harpe, nor layes of love, but the cryes of people, and clashing of armour; and that finally, he died not bewayled of many, but made many wayle when he died that dearely bought his death. Doc not you thinke (Eudoxus) that many of these prayses might be applyed to men of best desarte? yet are they all yeelded to a most notable traytoure, and amongest some of the Irish not smally accounted of. For the songe, when it was first made and songe unto a person of high degree, they were bought (as their manner is) for forty crownes.

Eudox. And well worthye sure! But tell me (I pray you) have they any arte in theyr compositions? or be they any thing wittye or well savoured, as Poems should be?

Iren. Yea truly; I have caused diverse of them to be translated unto me that I might understand them; and surely they savoured of sweete witt and good invention. but skilled not of the goodly ornamentes of Poetrye: yet were they sprinckled with some prety flowers of theyr owne naturall devise, which gave good grace and comliness unto them, the which it is greate pittye to see soe abused, to the gracing of wickedness and vice, which would with good usage serve to beautifye and adorne vertue. This evill custome therfore needeth reformation. And nowe next after the Irish Kearne, me seemes the Irish Horse-boyes or Cuilles (as they call them) would come well in order, the use of which, though necessitye (as times nowe be) doe enforce, yet in the thorough reformation of that realme they should be cutt of. For the cause why they must nowe be permitted is the wante of convenient lunes for lodging of travellers on horsebacke, and of Ostelers to tende theyr horses by the waye. But when thinges shalbe reduced to a better pass, this needeth specially to be reformed; for out of the free of these rakehelle horse-boyes, growing up in knaverye and villanye, are they kearne continually supplyed and mayntayne For having bene once brought up an ide TT

horse-boy, he will never after fall to laboure, but is onely made fitt for the halter. And these also (which is one fowle over-eight) are for the most parte bredd up amongest Englishmen and souldiours, of whom learning to shoote in a peece, and being made acquaynted with all the trades of the English, they are afterwardes, when they become kerne, made more fift to cutt theyr throtes. Next to this there is another much like, but much more leude and dishonest; and that is, of theyre Kearrooghs, which are a kind of people that wander up and downe to gentell-mens howses, living onely upon cardes and dice, the which, though they have litle or nothing of theyr owne, yet will they playe for much mony, which yf they wlane, they waste most lightlie, and if they loose, they paic as alenderlie, but make recompence with one stealth or another, whose onely hurte is not, that they themselves are idle lossels, but that through gaming they drawe others to like lewdness and idleness. And to these may be added another sorte of like loose fellowes, which doe pass up and downe amongest gentellmen by the name of Jesters, but are (indeede) notable rogues, and par-takers not onely of many stealthes by setting foorth other mens goodes to be stellen, but also privy to many trayterous practises, and common carryers of newes, with desire wher-of you would woonder howe much the Irish are fedd: for they use commonlye to send up and downe to knowe newes, and yf any meete with another his second woorde is, What newes? Insoemuch that herof is told a prety jest of a Frenche-man, whoe having bene sometimes in Ireland, where he marked theyr greate enquirye for newes, and meet-ing afterwardes in Fraunce an Irishman, whom he knewe in Ireland, first saluted him, whom he knewe in Ireland, first saluted him, and afterwardes thus merëly: Sir, I pray you, quoth he, tell me of curtesy, have ye hearde yet any thing of the newes that ye soe much enquired for in your countrey?

Eudox. This argueth in them sure a greate desire of Innovation, and therfore these occasions that nurrish the same are the be taken away a namely these letters.

to be taken away, as namely, these Jesters, Kearrooghs, Beantooilhs, and all such straglers, for whom (me seemes) the shorte riddaunce of a marshall were meeter then any ordinaunce or prohibition to restrayne them. Therfore (I pray you) leave all these rabble-mentes of such loose runnagates, and pass

to some other customes.

Irem. There is a great use amongest the Irish to make greate assemblyes togither

upon a rath or hill, there to park about matters of wronge between and towneship, or one private another. But well I wore, and times hath bene proposed, that is ings many mischeifs have bene and wrought; for to then de resorte all the scamme of bise loose, where they may freely conferr of whate they list, a ledge of others. Besides at the I have diverse times known Englishmen, and good Irish se bene villanously murthered b quarrell or another agaynst th Irish never come to those t whether on horse or on feet English nothing suspecting, as monly taken at advauntage like pin-folde.

Eudox. Eudor. It may be, lone abuse may be in those meeting soe strongly trenched and three (they say) at first ordayed for purpose, that people might men and therefore aunciently the Folkemotes, that is, a place of meete or talke of any thing th any difference between partyes ships, which seemes yet to m

site.

Iren. Ye say very true. Enfirst making of these high hists indeed to verye good purpor to meete; but though in the they were first made they mgl to good occasions, as perhaps in England, yet thinges being and nowe Ireland much differs state of England, the goods ms to them is now turned to also of them is nowe turned to ab hilles wherof you speake were gather by reading) appointed to uses, and built by two severall r one is those which you call the which were builte by the S woorde bewraieth ; for it signif a meeting of folke or people. for the most parte in forme well trenched for meeting: the are rounde were cast up by the name of them doeth called Dane-rathes, that is, hills for them to gather

rouble arose; for the Danes, being in comparison of the Saxons in sed this for theyr safetye: they small rounde hilles, soe strongly every quarter of the hundred to & if in the night, or at any other troublous crye or uprore should sy might repayre with all speede owne forte, which was appoynted marter, and there remayne safe. uld assemble themselves in greate or they were made see stronge small entraunce, that whosever er first, were he one or twoe, or he or they might there rest safe, . themselves agaynst many, till are came unto them: And when gathered to a sufficient number sed to the next forte, and see forthey mett with the perrill, or occasions therof. But besides ortes of hilles, there were auncientthers; for some were raysed, where bene a greate battayll fought, as or trophee therof; others, as monuburialls of the carcasses of all were slayne in any fight, upon y did throwe up such rounde memorialls for them, and someast up greate heapes of stones, as ade in many places of the Scripther whiles they did throwe upp I heapes of earth in a Circle, like or pitch manie longe stones on apasse, every of which (they say) some woorthy person of note e and buryed; for this was theyr istome, before Christianitye came st them that church-yardes were

Ye have very well declared the these mountes and greate stones d, which some vaynly e terme the a Trivetts, and thinke that those a could not els be brought into ared up without the strength of others. And some vaynly e thinke vere never placed there by mans e, but onely remayned there since ning, and were afterwardes disting the deluge, and layed open as a washing of the waters, or other tye. But lett them with those d vayne imaginations please themyou have satysfied me much by that I see some confirmation also remember that in many Historyes and Chroni-

cles the like mounts and stones oftentimes mentioned.

Iren. There be many greate authorityes (I assure you) to proove the same; but as for these meetings on hilles, wheref we were speaking, it is very inconvenient that any such should be permitted, specially in a people soe evill mynded as they nowe be and diversly shewe themselves.

Endox. But yet it is very needefull (me seemes) for many other purposes, as for the countrye to gather togither when there is any imposition to be layed upon them, to the which they then may all agree at such meetinges to cutt and devide amongest themselves, according to theyr holdinges and abilityes. Soe as yf at those assemblyes there be any officers, as Constables, or Bayliffs, or such like amongest them, there can be noe perrill nor doubt of such badd practises.

Iren. Nevertheless, daungerous are such assemblyes, whether for Cesse or ought els, the Constables and Officers being also of the Irish; and yf any happen to be there of the English, even to them they may proove perrillous. Therfore for avoyding of all such evill occasions, they were best to be abolished.

Eudox. But what is that which ye call Cesse? It is a woorde sure not used amongest us heere, therfore (I pray you) expounde the same.

Cesse is none other but that which our selfe called imposition, but it is in a kind perhaps unacquaynted unto you. For there are cesses of sundrye sortes; one is, the cessing of souldiours upon the countrey; for Ireland being a countrey of warre (as it is handled) and alwayes full of souldiours, they which have the government, whether they find it the most ease to the Queenes purse, or most readye meanes at hand for the victualling of the souldiours, or that necessitye enforceth them therunto, doe scatter the armye abrode the countrey, and place them in townes to take theyr victualls of them, at such vacant times as they lye not in campe, nor are otherwise imployed in service. Another kinde of cesse, is the imposing of provision for the Governours house-keeping. which though it be most necessarve, and be also (for avoyding of all the evills formerly therin used) lately brought to a composition, yet it is not without greate inconvenience, noe lesse then heere in England, or rather much more. The like cease is also charged upon the country sometimes for victualling of the souldiours, when they lye in garrison, at so times as there is none remayning in

Queenes stere, or that the same cannot convenientlye be conveyed to theyr place of garrison. But those two are not easye to be redressed when necessitye thereunto compelieth; but as for the former, as it is not necessarye, see is it most hurtfull and offensive to the poore countreye, and nothing convenient for the souldiours themselves, whoe, during theyr lying at cesse, use all kind of outragious disorder and villance both towardes the poore men that vittell and lodge them, and also to all the rest of the countrey about them, whom they abuse, oppresse, spoyle, and afflicte by all the meanes they can invente: for they will not onely not content themselves with such victualls as theyre hostes doe provide for them, nor yet as the place doe proving to them, but they will have other meate provided, and aqua rite sent for; yea and monye besides layed at theyr trenchers, which if they wante, then aboute the house they walke with the wretched poore man and the silly e poore wife, whoe are gladd to purchase theyr peace with any thing. By which vile manner of abuse, the country people, yea and the very English which dwell abrode and see, and sometimes feele these outrages, growe into greate detestation of the souldiours, and thereby into hatred of the very government, which draweth upon them such evills: And therfore this ye may also joyne unto the former evill customes which we have to reproove in Ireland.

Eudox. Trulye this is one not the leaste, and though the persons, by whom it is used be of better note then the former rogish sorte which ye reckned, yet the faults (me seemes) is noe lesse woorthy of a Marshall.

Iren. That were a harde course, Eudoxus, to redresse every abuse by a Marshall: it would seeme to you very evill surgery to cutt of every unsounde or sicke parte of the bodye, which, being by other due meanes recovered, might afterwardes doe very good service to the bodye agayne, and happely helpe to save the whole: Therfore I thinke better that some good salve for the redresse of this evill be sought foorthe, then the least parte suffred to perrishe; but herof we have to speake in another place, Nowe we will proceede to other like defectes, amongest which there is one generall inconvenience which raigneth allmost throughout all Ireland: that is, of the Lordes of landes and Free-holders, whoe doe not there use to sett out theyr landes to farme, or for terme of yeares, to theyr tenauntes, but only from yeare to yeare, and some during pleasure; neither indede will the Irish tenaunt or hus-

bandman otherwise take his last longe as he list himselfs. Then in the tensunte is, for that the there use most shamefully to tensimies, laying upon him Co Liverye at pleasure, and exact (besides his covenaunts) what he that the poore husbandmen binde himselfe to him for h that he thinketh by his on of chaunge to keepe his land-in in 'awe for wronging him. And why the Land-lord will not longer with him is, for that he dayly chaunges and alterations, at expectation of news workles,

Eudar, But what evill on the common-wealth; or what that any landlord should not se tenaunt take his land as himself

Iren. Marye! the eville whi thereby are greate, for by this the land-lord thinketh that h tenaunte more at comaunie to f into what action soever he sha also the tenaunte, being left at b shal be offred by time; and as the more readye and willing is hinto the same, for that he had estate in any his holding, now as upon any farme, noe such costes fencing and husbandring the say with-hold him from any such wa as his lordes cause, or his own position may carrye him unto. hath forborne, and spared so me for that he had noe firme estate ment, but was onely a tenaunt at more, and soe at will may less this inconvenience may be may grounde any ordinaunce for the common-wealth, against the proor will of any landlord that sh graunte any such terme or esta tenaunte as may tende to the whole realme.

Eudor, Indeede (me seemes) willfullnes in any such land-lorde make any longer farmes unto the as may, besides the generall realme, be also greatly for therr and avayle: For what reasons not thinke that the tenement much better for the lordes belo tennante may by much good mean theron, to di

s and husband it as good farmors use? $^{-1}$ en his tenauntes terme shalbe expired, weeld him, in the renewing of his lease, good fine, and also a better rente.

is it wil be for the goode of the
likewise, whoe by such buildinges osures shall receave many benefitts: by the handsomnes of his house, he shall sate comforte of his life, more safe and a delighte to keepe his sayde ate and cleanlye, which nowe being, y commonly are, rather swynes-steades manner of life, and savadge condiying and living togither with his beaste s howse, in one roome, and in one bedd, the cleane strawe, or rather the fowle **ill.** And to all these other commodities all in shorte time finde a greater added, is his owne wealth and riches encreased, renderfully enlarged, by keeping his in inclosures, where they shall allhave fresh pasture, that nowe is all led and over-runne; warme coverte,

L that nowe are continually filched and Ye have well, Eudoxus, counted andityes of this one good ordinaunce, ast which this that ye named last is a least; for all togither being most ciall both to the land-lord and tenaunte, eifly redoundeth to the good of the on-wealth, to have the land thus inand well fenced. For it is both a ipall barre and impeachement unto so a gall agaynst all rebells, and outthat shall rise up in any number the governement; for the theif y shall have much adoe, first to bring and afterwardes to drive away his prey through the common high wayes, he shall soone be discried and mett all: And the rebell or open enemye, yf such shall happen, either at home, or abrode, shall easely be found when he th foorthe, and also be well encountred by a fewe in soe straite passages and ge inclosures. This therfore, when we to the reforming of all these evill cusbefore mentioned, is needefull to be rered. But nowe by this time me seemes I have well runne throughe the evill which I have observed in Ireland. And eit there be many more abuses woorthye, reformation both in publicke and in priamongest them, yet these, for that they are the more generall, and most tending to the hurte of the common-wealthe, as they have come to my remembrance. I have, as breifly as I could, rehearsed them unto you. Wherfore nowe I thinke it best that we pass unto our thirde parte, in which we noted inconveniences that are in religion.

Eudor. Surely you have very well handled these two former, and yf you shall as well goe thoroughe the thirde likewise, ye shall merite a very good meede.

Iren. Litle have I to say of religion, both because the partes therof be not many, (it self being but one) and my self have not beene much conversaunte in that calling, but as lightly passing by I have seene or heard: Therfore the faulte which I finde in Religion is but one, but the same is universall throughe out all the countrey; that is, that they are all Papistes by theyre profession, but in the same see blindely and brutishly enformed, (for the most parte) as that you would rather thinke them Atheistes or Intidells for not one amongest an hundred knoweth any grounde of religion, or any article of his faythe, but can perhaps say his Pater noster, or his Ave Maria, without any knowledge or understanding what one woorde therof meaneth.

Eudox. This is truly a most pitifull hearing that see many sowless should full into the devills handes at once and lacke the blessed comforte of the sweete gospell and Christes deare passion. Aye me! how cometh it to pass that being a people, as they are, trading with soe many nations, and frequented of see manye, yet they have not tasted any parte of these happye joyes nor once bene lightened with the morning starre of trueth but lye weltring in such spirituall darkeness harde by hell-mouth, even readye to fall in yf God happely help not?

Iren. The general faulte cometh not of any late abuse either in the people or theyr preistes, whoe can teache noe better then they knowe, nor shewe noe more light then they have seene, but in the first institution and planting of religion in all that realme, which was as I reade in the time of Pope Celestine, whoe, as it is written, did first send over thither Palladius, whoe there deceasings, he afterwardes sent over St. Patricke, being by nation a Britton, who converted the people (being then Intidells) from paganisme and christened them. In which Popes time and longe before it is certayne that religious was generally corrupted with theyr popula trunsperve, therfore what other could they learn them, then such trashe as was taughte the

and drinke of that cup of fornication with which the purple harlott had then made all nations drunken?

nations drunken? Endor. What! doe you then blame and finde faulte with soe good an Acte in that good pope as the reducing of such a greate people to Christianitye, bringing soe manys sowles to Christ? Yf that was ill, what is good?

I doe not blame the christening of them, for to be sealed with the marke of the Lambe, by what hand soever it be done rightlye, I hold it a good and gracious woorke, for the generall profession which they then take upon them of the Cross and favthe of Christ. I nothing doubte but that through the powerfull grace of that mighty Saviour it will woorke salvation in many of them; but nevertheless since they drinke not from the pure spring of life but onely tasted of such troubled waters as were brought unto them, the dregges therof have bredd greate contagion in theyr sowles, the which dayly encreasing and being still more augmented with their owne lewde lives and faulty conversation hath nowe bredd in them this generall disease that can not, but onely with very stronge purgations, be clensed and carryed away.

Eudox. Then for this defecte ye finde noe

Eudox. Then for this defecte ye finde noe faulte with the people themselves nor with the priestes which take the charge of sowles, but with the first ordinaunce and institution therof?

Iren. Not see, Eudoxus, for the sinne or ignoraunce of the preistes shall not excuse the people, nor the authoritye of their greate pastour, Peters successor, shall not excuse the preist, but they all shall dye in theyr sinnes for they have all erred and gone out of the way togither.

Eudox. But yf this ignoraunce of the people be such a burden to the pope, is it not a blott unto them that nowe hold the place of government, in that they which are in the lighte themselves suffer a people under theyr charge to wallowe in such deadly darkeness, for I doe not see that the faulte is chaunged but the faulte-master.

Jeen. That which you blame, Eudox., is not (I suppose) any faulte of will in these godly fathers which have the charge therof, but the inconvenience of the time and troublesome occasions, wherewith that wretched realme hath continually bene turmoyled; for instruction in religion needeth quiett times, and ere we seeke to settle a sounde discipline in the clargye, we must purchase peace unto

the layetye; for it is an ill ti amongest swoordes, and most he impossible, it is to settell a got the myndes of men for matte doubtfull, which have a doutless of ourselves; for ere the newe b the old must be removed. Eudox. Then belike it is me

Eudox. Then belike it is me fitter time be attended, that Go and quietness there in civill n it be attempted in ecclesiastic rather have thought that (as it rection should begin at the h and that the care of the sowle bene preferred before the care of

Iren. Most true, Eudoxus, tl sowle and sowles matters are to before the care of the bodye in of the woorthyness therof, but time of reformation; for yf you s a wicked person daungerously nowe both sowle and bodye gree vet both recoverable, would ve ill advisement to bring the preach phisition? For yf his bodye we it is like that his languishing disquieted by his diseasefull t utterly refuse and lothe all sp forte; but yf his bodye were first brought to good frame, should th be founde best time to recure his Soe it is in the state of the rea fore (as I sayde) it is expedient, such a course of government the both civill disorders and also e abuses may be reformed and ame needeth not any such great distau as ye suppose I require, but one j tion for both, that eche might see firme the other.

Eudox. That we shall see w therunto: in the meane time I of much, as we have delivered, t generall faulte which we suppose to weet, that it is popish; but do particular abuses therin, nor in therof?

Iren. Yes verely; for what you see in the Churche of Englinde there, and many more: Na Simonye, greedy covetousness, fi tinence, careless slouthe, and g disordered life in the common of And besides all these, they have particular enormityes; for all priestes, which nowe enjoyed livinges there, are in a manner men, go lyke laymen, live like is

kinde of husbandrye, and other tyres, as thother Irish men doe. er reade scriptures, nor preache le, nor minister the sacrament of ; but the baptisme they doe, for n yet after the popish fashion, and ministration, onely they take the ffringes, and gather what fruites ay of theyr livinges, the which rt as badly, and some of them paye as due tributes and shares of es to theyr Bishops (I speake of are Irish) as they receave them

But is it suffered amongest them? rfull but that the governours doe h shamefull abuses

owe can they, since they knowe For the Irish bishops have theyr such awe and subjection under they dare not complayne of them, may doe unto them what they they, knowing theyr owne un-and incapacitye, and that they still removable at theyr bishops what pleaseth him, and he taketh t: yea, and some of them whose in remote partes, somewhat out les eve, doe not not at all bestowe s, which are in theyr owne donanve, but keepe them in they rowne , sett theyr owne servauntes and to take up the tithes and fruites th the which some of them pure landes, and builde fayre castells me. Of which abuse yf any queseved they have a very seemely scuse, that they have noe woorthy o bestowe them upon, but keepe nbestowed for any such sufficient ny shall bring unto them.

But is there noe lawe, or ordineete with this mischeif, nor hath ore bene looked into?

es, it seemes it hath; for there is there enacted in Ireland, which save bene grounded upon a good · That whatsoever Englishman, ood conversation and sufficiency, aght unto any of the bishoppes, sted unto any living within theyr is presently voyde, that he shall intradiction) be admitted therunto

This is surely a very good lawe, ovided for this evill, we speake of; not the same observed?

thinks it is well observed, and

that none of the bishopps transgresse the same, but yet it woorketh noe reformation herof for many respectes. First there are noe such sufficient English ministers sent over as might be presented to any bishopp for any living, but the most parte of such English as come over thither of themselves are either unlearned, or men of some badd note, for which they have forsaken England. Soe as the bishop, to whom they shalbe presented, may justly rejecte them as incapable and insuf-ficient. Secondly, the bishop himself is perhaps an Irish man, whoe being made judge by that lawe of the sufficiencye of the minis-ters, may at his owne will, dislike of the Englishman, as unwoorthye in his opinion, and admitt of any Irish whom he shall thinke more meete for his turne. And yf he shall at the instaunce of any Englishman of countenaunce there, whom he will not displease, accept of any such English minister as shall be tendred unto him, yet he will underhand carrye such a harde hande over him, or by his officers wringe him soe sore, as he will soone make him wearye of his poore living. Lastly, the benefices themselves are soe meane, and of soe small profitt in these Irish countreyes, through the ill husbandrye of the Irish people which inhabite them, that they will not yeelde any competent mayntenaunce for any honest minister to live on, scarcely to buye him a gowne. And were all this redressed (as happely it might be) yet what good shall any English minister doe amongest them, by preaching or teaching, which either cannot understand him, or will not heare him? Or what comforte of life shall he have, when all his parishioners are soe unsociable, soe intractable, so ill-affectedunto him, as they usually be to all the English? Or finally, howe dare allmost any honest ministers, that are peacefull civill men, committ theyr safetye into the handes of such neighbours, as the boldest captaynes

dare scarcely dwell by?

Eudox. Litle good then (I see) is by that statute wrought, howe ever well intended; but the reformation therof must growe higher, and he brought from a stronger ordinaunce then the comaundement or penaltye of a lawe, which none dare enforme or complayn of when it is broken: but have you any more of those abuses in the cleargye?

Iren. I could perhaps recken more, but I perceave my speach to growe to longe and these may suffice to judge of the general disorders which raigne amongest them; for the particulars, they are to many to reckned. For the cleargye there (except some fewe grave fathers which are in high place about the state, and some fewe others which are lately planted in theyr newe Col-ledge,) are generally badd, licentious, and at disordered.

Eudox. Ye have then (as I suppose) gone through these three first partes which ye purposed unto your self; to weete, the Inconvenience which ye observed in the lawes, in the customes, and in the religion of that land; the which (me seemes) ye have so throughly touched, as that nothing more remayneth to

be spoken thereof,

Iren. Not see throughly as ye suppose, that nothing more can remayne, but see generally as I purposed; that is, to laye open the generall evills of that realme, which doe hinder the good reformation therof: for to counte the particular faultes of private men should be a woorke to infinite; yet some there be of that nature, that though they be in private men, yet theyr evill reacheth to a generall hurte, as the extortions of sherriffs, subsherriffs, and theyr bayliffs; the corrup tion of vittaillors, cessors, and purveyors; the disorders of seneschalls, captaynes, and theyr souldiours, and many such like: All which I will onely name heere, that theyr reformation may be mynded in place where it most concerneth. But there is one very fowle abuse which, by the way, I may not omitt, and that is in captaynes, who, notwithstanding that they are specially employed to make peace through stronge execution of warre, yet they doe soe dandle theyr doinges, and dallye in the service to them committed, as yf they would not have the Enemye subdued, or utterly beaten downe, for feare least afterwardes they should neede imployment, and soe be discharged of pay for which cause some of them that are layed in garrison doe soe handle the matter, that they will doe noe greate hurte to the enemyes, yet for colour sake some men they will kill, even halfe with the consent of the enemy, being persons either of base regard, or enemies to the enemy, whose heades eftsones they send to the governour for a comendacion of theyr great endevour, telling how waightye a service they have perfourmed by cutting of such and soe dangerous rebells.

Trulye this is a prettye mockerye, and not to be permitted by the governours,

Iren. Yea! but how can the governours

knowe readely what persons those were, and what the purpose of theyr killing was? Yea, and what will ye say, yf the captaynes doe

justifys this theyr course by each some of theyr government, which some of theyr government, which is die tell it you,) dee practical slightes in theyr government.

Emfort. Is it possible? Tale he

you say, Iremus

Iren. To you onely, Endown, I sit, and that even with greate hates and inwarde trouble of mysic u Majestic soc much abusel by she puttes in special trust of these affayres: of which some, being mills will not doe allwayes what they s quieting of thinges, but will rather some faultes, and will suffer then we least that they (having pur all that assuraunce of peace that they should seeme afterwards out to b nor continued in theyr government a fore they doe cumingly carrye than doe bandle the service like a tennathey will never quite strike sang-

least afterwards they should sale a Eudox. Doe you speake of marttates, or principall governours? Iren. I doe speake of noe patical the trueth may be founde out by tra reasonable insight into some of they? And yf I should say there is berof in some of the principall of I think I might also shows some proof of my speache. As for example of them seing the end of them mente drawe nigh, and some me troublous practise growing up with wardes may woorke trouble to the may ceeding governours, will not atten dress or cutting of therof, either for a should leave the realme unquist at the theyr government, or that the act a meth should receave the same to posse happely winne more prayer the they before. And therfore they will I sayd) seeke at all to redress that will either by graunting protection to or holding some impariannee with the or by treatye of commissioners of like devises, onely smoother and to breake out in theyr time of govern comes afterwardes they care with wish the woorst. This course he

noted in some governours.

Endox. Surely (fremens) this !!

true, should be worthy of should

ruld soe much either envye the it realme which is putt into his fraude her Majestie, whoe trusteth uch, or maligne his successours possess his place, as to suffer an we up, which he might timely under, or perhaps to nourrish it ed countenaunces, or such sinister

doe not certaynly avouch soe

loxus) but the sequell of thinges nanner proove, and playnly speake that the governours usually are of anothers greater glorye, which ould seeke to excell by better t, it should be a most laudable But they doe quite otherwise: ye may marke) is the common m, that whoe cometh next in the ot followe that course of govern-ever good, which his predecessor for disdayne of him, or doubt to loings drowned in another mans; will straight take a way quite o the former: as yf the former y keeping under the Irish) to rethe next, by discountenauncing h will currye favour with the soe make his government seeme I viewe, as having all the Irish at de: but he that comes next after s followe neither one nor the other, ndle the one and the other in such will sucke sweete out of them eave bitterness to the poore lande, s that comes after shall seeke to shall perhaps finde such crosses be hardly able to beare, or doe hat might woorke the disgrace of Examples herof ye may Beors. covernors of late times sufficiently. ers of former times more mani-n the government of that realme tted sometimes to the Geraldins, as Iowse of Yorke had the Crowne of sometimes to the Butlers, as when of Lancaster gott the same. And s, when an English governour was he perhaps founde enemyes of both. s the wretchedness of that fatall which, I thinke, therefore, was in not called amisse Banna or sacra

ing sacred (sacra) for accursed. I am sorye to heare see much as ; and nowe I beginne to conceave more of the cause of her continuall s then heretofore I founde, and his inconvenience were well looked

into: for sure (me seemes) it is more waightye then all the former, and more hardly to be redressed in the governour then in the governed; as a maladye in a vitall parte is more incurable then in an externall.

Iren. You say very true; but nowe that we have thus ended all the abuses and inconveniences of that government, which was our first parte, it followes next to speake of the seconde, which was of the meanes to cure and redress the same, which we must laboure to reduce to the first beginning therof.

Eudox. Right soe, Irenseus: for by that

which I have noted in all this your discourse ye suppose that the whole ordinaunce and institution of that realmes government was, both at first when it was placed, evill plotted, and also since, through theyr other oversights, runne more out of square to that disorder which; is nowe come to; like as two indirect lines, the further they are drawen

out, the further they goe asunder.

Iren. I doe soe, Eudoxus, and as you say, see thinke, that the longer that government thus continueth, in the woorse course will that realme be; for it is all in vayne that they nowe strive and endevour by favre meanes and peaceable plottes to redress the same, without first removing all those incorveniences, and newe framing (as it were in the forge) all that is worne out of fashion: For all other meanes wilbe but as lost labour, by patching up one hole to make manye; for the Irish doe strongly hate and abhorre all reformation and subjection to the English. by reason that, having bene once subdued by them, they were thrust out of all theyr po-Soe as nowe they feare, that yf they were agayne brought under, they should likewise be expelled out of all, which is the cause that they hate the English government, according to the saying, 'Quem metuunt oder-Therfore the reformation must nowe unt: be the strength of a greater power.

Eudox. But, me thinkes, that might be by making of good lawes, and establishing of newe statutes, with sharpe penaltyes and punnishments for amendment of all that is presently amiss, and not (as ye suppose) to beginne all as it were anewe, and to alter the whole forme of the government; which howe daungerous a thing it is to attempt you your selfe must needes confess, and they which have the managing of the realmes whole pollicye cannot, without greate cause, feare and refravne: for all Innovation is perilous, inseemuch as though it be mente for the better, yet soe many accidents and fearfull events may come betwene, as that it may

hazarde the losse of the whole.

Very true, Endoxus: all change is to be shunned, where the affayres stand in such state as that they may continue in quietness, or be assured at all to abide as they are. But that in the realme of Ireland we see much otherwise, for everye day we perceave the troubles to growe more upon us, and one evill growing upon another, insoemuch as there is noe parte sounde nor ascertayned, but all have theyr eares upright, wayting when the watch-woord shall come waying when the watch word has that they should all rise generally into rebellion, and cast away the English subjection.

To which there nowe little wanteth; for I thinke the woorde be allreadye given, and there wanteth nothing but opportunitye, which trulye is the death of one noble parson, whoe, being himself most stedfast to his most noble Queene and his countrey, coasting upon the South-Sea, stoppeth the Ingate of all that evill which is looked for, and holdeth in all those which are at his becke, with the terrour of his greatness, and the assuraunce of his honourable loyaltye: And therfore where you thinke, that good and sounde lawes might amende, and reforme thinges amiss, there you thinke surely amisse. For it is vayne to prescribe laws, where noe man careth for keeping them, nor feareth the daunger of breaking them. But all the realme is first to be reformed, and lawes are after-wardes to be made for keeping and conteyning it in that reformed estate,

Eudox. Howe then doe you thinke is the reformation therof to be begunne, yf not by

lawes and ordinaunces?

Iren. Even by the swoorde; for all those evills must first be cutt away with a strong hand, before any good can be planted; like as the corrupt braunches and unholsome boughes are first to be pruned, and the fowle mosse clensed and scraped away, before the

tree can bring foorth any good fruite.

Eudox. Did you blame me, even nowe, for wishing Kearne, Horse-boyes, and Kearrooghs, to be cleane cutt of, as to violent a meanes, and doe you your self nowe prescribe the same medicine? Is not the swoord the most violent redress that may be used for any

evill?

Iren. It is soe; but yet where noe other remedye may be founde, nor noe hope of recoverve had, there must needes this violent meanes be used. As for the loose kind of peo-ple which ye would have cutt of I blamed it, for that they might otherwise be brought per-

haps to good, as namely by this a

I sett before you.

Endox. Is not your way all so with the former, which you loude! save onely this oddes that I a halter, and you say by the se difference is there?

Iren. There is surely a when you shall understand its cutting of of all that nation with a which farre be it from me that I at thinks soe despently, or subsably, but by the sweeds I man power of the Prince, which such it self foorthe in the cheifest st redressing and cutting of af the which are evill. For evill per ordinaunces and government goods; but the evill that is of it mover become good.

Eudox, I pray you then destroyed at large, how you would sword, which you meane to be a reformation of all those evils.

Iron. The first thing must be to into that realme such a stronge p as that shall perforce bring in a bellious route of loose people, w doe nowe stande out in open wandring companyes doe kee

spoyling the good subject.

Eudox. You speake now, Ire infinite charge to her Majestie, t such an armye as should treate that standeth before them on for on the grounde all the stiff-nacks that lande; for there is nowe but of any greate reckning, to weete, of any greate rectangly.

Tyrone, abrode in armes, agaynst
see what huge charges she hath b
last yeare, in sending of men, p
victualls, and making head agayn there is litle or nothing at all d Queenes treasure spent, her per the poor countrey troubled, and nevertheless brought unto noe me then he was, or list outwarfly which in effect is none, but rather her power, and an emboldening rebell, and an encourailgement rebell, and an encourage that shall leved disposed tray tors that shall up theyr heeles agaynst theyr Ladye. Therfore it were hards drawe such an excession great cher, whose event shall be a second

certayne; but the certaintye of the herof shal be see infallible as that noe a can gain saye it, neither shall the of all this armye (the which I dede) be much greater then see much as be two last yeares warres hath vaynly expended. For I dare undertake, that the cost the Queene above 200000 s alireadye; and for the present charge, as is nowe at there, amounteth to very 2000 poundes a monthe, wherof cast accoumpte; yet nothing is done. The somme, had it bene imployed as it I be, would have effected all this that I

goe about.

but to be spent in the paye of souland provision of victualls ?

Right soe, but it is nowe not dis-at once, as it might be, but drawen to a long length, by sending over nowe poundes, and the next halfe yeare poundes; see as the souldiour in the toe over lustve able men, in half a yeare are not left five hundred. And yet the hes charges are never a whit the lesse, what is not payed in present monye is mapted in dett, which will not be long red; for the Captayne, halfe whose iours are dead, and the other quarter mustered, nor seene, comes shortly to ampte, where, by good meanes of some sones, and privye sharing with the and servauntes of othersome, he reth his dett, much less perhaps then due, yet much more indeede then he

· deserved. udox. I take this, sure, to be noe good andrye; for what must needes be spente pod spent at once, where is enough, as we it drawen out into longe delayes, that therby both the service is much red, and yet nothing saved: but it may renseus, that the Queenes treasure in soe e occasions of disbursementes (as it is knowen she hath bene at latelye) is not iyes soe readye nor soe plentifull, as it mare see greate a somme togither, but paved as it is, nowe some and then it is noe greate burthen to her, nor any te impoverishing to her coffers, seing ach delaye of time, that it daylye cometh fast as she parteth it out.

Let may be as you sayd, but for the

going through of so honorable a course I doubt not but yf the Queenes coffers be not soe well stored, (which we are not to looke into) but that the whole realme which nowe. as thinges be used, doe feele a continuall burden of that wretched realme hanging upon theyr backes, would, for a finall riddaunce of all that trouble, be once troubled for all; and putt to all theyr shoulders, and helping handes, and hartes also, to the defraying of that charge, most gladfullie and willinglie; and surely the charge, in effect, is nothing to the infynite great good which should come thereby, both to the Queene, and all this realme generally, as when time serveth shal be shewed.

Howe many men then would you Eudox. require to the finishing of this which ye take in hand? and howe long space would you have them entertayned?

Verely, not above 10000 footemen, Iren. and 1000 horse, and all those not above the space of one yeare and a halfe; for I would still, as the heate of the service abateth, abate the number in paye, and make other provision for them, as I will shewe.

Eudor. Surely, it seemeth not much which ye require, nor noe long time; but howe would you have them used? Would you leade foorth your armye agaynst the Enemye, and seeke him where he is to tight?

Noe, Eudoxus; it would not be, for Iren. it is well knowen that he is a flying enemye, hiding himself in woodes and bogges, from whence he will not drawe foorth, but into some straite passage or perillons foord, where he knowes the armic must needes passe; there will he lye in wayte, and, yf he finde advauntage fitt, will daungerously hazarde the troubled souldiour. Therfore to seeke him out that still flyeth, and followe him that can hardly be founde, were vayne and booteless; but I would devide my men in garrison upon his countrey, in such places as I should thinke might most annoye him.

Endox. But howe can that be, Irenaus, with so fewe men? For the enemye, as you nowe see, is not all in one countrey, but some in Ulster, some in Connaughte, and others in Soe as to plaunte stronge garrisons in all these places should neede many more men then you speake of, or to plaunte all in one, and to leave the rest naked, should be but to leave them to the spoyle.

Iren. I would wish the cheif power of the armye to be garrisoned in one countrey that is strongest, and thother upon the reare weakest: As for example, the Earle Tyrone is nowe accompted the strongest: upon him would I lay 8000 men in garrison, 1000 uppon Fenghe Mac-Hughe and the Kevanagha, and 1000 upon some parts of Connaughte, to be at the direction of the Governour

Eudor. I see nowe all your men bestowed, but in what places would you sett theyr garrison that they might rise out most con-veniently to service? And though perhaps I am ignorannte of the places, yet I will take the mappe of Ireland, and lay it before me, and make myne eyes (in the meane while)

my schoole-master, to guide my under-standing to judge of your plott. These 8000 in Ulster I would devide Iron. likewise into fowre partes, see as there should be 2000 footemen in everye garrison; the which I would thus place. Upon the Black-water, in some convenient place, as highe uppon the River as might be, I would laye one garrison. Another would I putt at Castle liffar, or there-abouts, see as they should have all the passages upon the river to Lorhfoyle, The thirde I would place about Fearnemunnaghe or Bondraise, see as they might lye betwene Connaughte and Ulster, to serve upon both sides, as occasion should be offered; and this therfore would I have stronger then any of the rest, because it should be most enforced, and most employed, and that they might put wardes at Ballashaine and Belike, and all those passages, The last would I sett about Moneham or Belterbert, see as it should fronte both upon the enemye that waye, and also keepe the countreys of Cavan and Meath in awe from passing of stragglers and outgadders from those partes, whence they use to come foorthe, and oftentimes use to woorke much mischeif. And to everye of these garrisons of 2000 footemen I would have 200 horsemen added. for the one without the other can doe but litle service. The fowre garrisons, thus being placed, I would have to be vittayled afore hand for halfe a year, which ye will say to be harde, considering the corruption and usuall wast of victualls But why should not they be as well vittayled for soe long time, as the shippes are usuallye for a yeare, and sometimes two, seing it is easyer to keepe them on lande then on water? Theyr bread would I have in flowre, see as it might be baked still to serve theyr necessary wante, Theyr drinke also there brewed within them, from time to time, and theyr beef before hand barelled, the which may be used as it is bare and nake needefull; for I make noe doubt but fresh and howse the

themselves amonoust there en Hereanto would I likewise has necessaryes as may be need diours, soe as they would h casion to look for relief for cause such trouble, for the supplye, as I see and have of Ireland to be combersoms: and more daungerous to them them, then halfe the lending a for the enemye, knowing the or by which theyr releif must be I useth commonlye to drawe bin strayte passages thitherwards times doth daungerouslye for Besides, the paye of such fore be sent for theyr convoy shall ! charge of the carriadges, and t of the countrey likewise. But halfe yeare the supplye to be be Deputye himselfe, and his power then visite and overlooke all the to see what is needefull, to the expedient, and to direct what advise, And these fowre gar foorthe, at such convenient to shall have intelligence or esp enemye, will so drive him from another, and tennis him among he shall finde no where safe creete, or hide himselfe, but it fire shall fall into the water, a dannger into another, that is shalbe wasted in praying, or living, or starved for wante the woodes, and he himself brotthat he shall have noe harte n endure his wretchedness, the surely come to pass in very sho one winters well following of plucke him on his knees, that be able to stand up agayne,

victualls they will so

Eudox. Doe you then think time fittest for the service of Infalles it then that our most en in sommer, and the armyes th

monly foorthe?

Iren. It is surely misconer not with Ireland as it is with treyes, where the warres flame mer, and the helmetts glister br fayre sunneshine: But in Irelan h useth to be his bedding; the nd bitter, which useth to blowe naked sides and legges; the en and without milke, which is onely foode, neither yf he will they yeelde him any flesh, e them will they give him any then being all in calfe (for ie) they will, through much iving, cast all they calves and ilke, which should retayne him her.

loe well understand your reayour leave, I have hearde it ie, of some that were outlawes, r they kept themselves quiett, they would playe theyr partes, nightes were longest, then yle most, soe that they might before dave.

before daye. we likewise hearde, and also herof trewe: But that was of as were either abiding in well itreyes, as in Mounster, or bor-English pale, as Feugh Mac Kevanaghs, the Moores, the e Ketins, the Kellyes or such :hem indeede the winter is the spoyling and robbing, because e then (as ye say) longest and lso the countreyes rounde about st of corne, and good provision there gotten by them; but it is with a stronge peopled enemye h a whole countrey, for the ut a fewe, are indede privilye pt in out villages, and corners les and mountaynes, by some frendes, to whom they bring and stealthes, and of whom live receave secrett relief; but mye having all his countrey by himself, and what by the deth then succour in noe place. are none of which he may gett re all burnte; countrey howses there are none, they be all e hath none, he ploughed not in

me winter, ye shall have litle hem the next sommer. doe nowe well perceave the difoe verely thinke that the winter test for service: withall I permer of your handlinge the serring suddayne draughtes upon

n he hath, but of he kill it in ill wante milke in sommer, and

life. Therfore if they be well

the enemye, when he looketh not for you, and to watche advanulages upon him as he doth upon you. By which straight keeping of them in, and not suffring them long at any time to rest, I must needes thinke that they will scone be brought lowe, and driven to great extremityes. All which when you have perfourmed, and brought them to the verye last cast, suppose that they will offer, either to come in unto you and submitt themselves, or that some of them will seeke to withdrawe themselves, what is your advise to doe? will you have them receaved?

Iren. Noe; but at the beginning of those

warres, and when the garrisons are well plaunted and fortifyed, I would wish a proclamation were made generally e and to come to theyr knowlege:—That what persons soever would within twenty dayes absolutly submitt themselves, (excepting onely the very principalls and ring-leaders) should tinde grace: I doubt not, but upon the settling of those garrisons, such a terrour and neere consideration of theyr perillous estate wilbe stricken into most of them, that they will covett to drawe awaye from theyr leaders. agayne I well knowe that the rebells themselves (as I sawe by proof in the Desmonds warres) will turne away all theyr rascall people, whom they thinke unserviceable, as old men, women, children, and hindes, (which they call churles), which would onely wast theyr victualls, and yeeld them noe ay de; but theyr cattell they will surely keepe away: These therfore, though pollicye would turne them backe agayne that they might the rather consume and afflicte the other rebells, yet in a pityfull commiseration I could wish them to be receaved; the rather for that this base sorte people doth not for the most parte rebell of himself, having noe harte therunto, but is of force drawen by the graunde rebells into theyr actions, and carryed away with the vyolence of the streame, els he should be sure to loose all that he hath, and perhaps his life also; the which nowe he carryeth unto them, in hope to enjoy them there, but he is there by the strong rebells themselves soone turned out of all, soe that the constraynte herof may in him deserve pardon. Likewise yf any of theyr able men or gentellmen shall then offer to come awaye, and to bring theyr cattell with them, as some noe doubte may steale them previlve away, I wish them alsoe to be receaved, for the disabling of the enemye, but withall, that good assuraunce may taken for theyr true behaviour and absolute submission, and that they then be not suf-

(as I have by experience knowen) be ever after such a gall and inconvenience unto them, as that theyr profitt should not recompence theyr burte; for they will privilye releive theyr frendes that are foorthe; they could finde then after, insoemuel spared not to ser will send the enemye secrett advertisement yf they founde sham-rokes, ther of all their purposes and journeyes which they meane to make upon them; they will the time, yet not also not sticke to drawe the enemye privilie uppon them, yea and to betraye the forte it selfe, by discoverye of all her defectes and disadvauntages (yf any be) to the cutting of withall; that in allmost left, and tifull countrey all theyr throates. For avoyding wherof man or beast; ye and many other inconveniences, I wish that perished not man they should be carryed farre from thence into the extremitye of some other partes, see that (as I sayd) they come in and submitt themselves, upon the selves had wrong Endox. It is more to be wondr first summons: but afterwardes I would have none receaved, but left to theyr fortune and fren. It is me miserable end. My reason is, for that those which will afterwardes remayoe without are very readye; for stoute and obstinat rebells, such as will never be made dutifull and obedient, nor brought to strength of all Galloglasse, Stok boyes, the which labour or civill conversation, having once tasted that licentious life, and being acquainthave any thing ed with spoyles and outrages, will ever after living upon the spare of any th be readye for the like occasions, soe as there is noe hope of theyr amendment or recoverye, and therfore needefull to be cutt of. fusion of all they theyr owne fren Eudox. Surely of such desperat persons as will willfully followe the course of theyr owne follye, there is no compassion to be had. And yf they ha spoyles at any

655

VIEW OF THE PRESENT STATE OF IRELAND.

all filled with this rufull specmy wretched carcasses starving, reys wasted, see huge a desolausion, as even I that doe but you, and doe picture it in my reative pittye and commiserate happen, that the state of this lamentable image of thinges and feelingly presented to her stie, being by nature full of smencye, whoe is most inclinable all complaynts, and will not ene such tragedyes made of her ore subjectes as some about her e; then she perhaps, for verye f such calamityes, will not one-streame of such violence, and r woonted mildenesse, but also itle thankes which have bene nd counsellours of such blooddie Soe I remember in the late of the good Lord Graye, when, well and many perilous assayes, ht thinges allmost to this pass te of, and that when it was even for reformation, and might have t to what her Majestie would, nte was made agaynst him, that adye man, and regarded not the ibjectes noe more then dogges, ted and consumed all, see as ad nothing almost left, but to yr ashes; her Majesties care was thereunto, and all suddaynly turvy; the noble Lord eft-sones the wretched people pittyed; and s plotted, in which it was con-general pardon should be sent that would accept of it, uppon mer purposes were blaunked, the a baye, and not onely all that ong charge, which she had be-, quite lost and cancelled, but pe of good which was even at tt backe, and cleane frustrated. hether it be true, or noe, your i tell.

true, Eudoxus, the more the may not forgett soe memorable a er can I be ignoraunte of that ise, and of the whole meanes by compassed, and very cunningly sowing first dissention between other Noble Personage, wherin ounde at length howe notably me abused, and howe therby, this universal alteration of wought aboute, but then to late

to staye the same; for in the meane time all that was formerly done with long labour and great toyle, was (as you say) in a moment undone, and that good Lord blotted with the name of a bloudy man, whom, who that well knewe, knewe him to be most gentell, affable, loving, and temperate; but that the necessitye of that present state of thinges enforced him to that violence, and allmost chaunged his very naturall disposition. But otherwise he was soe farr from delighting in bloud, that oftentimes he suffred not just vengeance to fall where it was deserved: and even some of those which were afterwardes his accusers had tasted to much of his mercye, and were from the gallowes brought to be his accusers. But his course indeede was this, that he spared not the heades and principalls of any mischeivous practize or rebellion, but shewed sharpe judgement on them, cheifly for examples sake, that all the meaner sorte, which also then were generallye infected with that evill, might by terrour therof be reclaymed, and saved, yf it might be possible. For in that last conspiracye of some of the English Pale, thinke you not that there were manye more guiltye then they that felt the punishment, or was there any allmost clere from the same? yet he touched onely a fewe of speciall note; and in the tryall of them alsoe even to prevente the blame of crueltie and partiall dealing, as seeking theyr bloud, which he, in his great wisedome (as it seemeth) did fore-see would be objected agaynst him; he, for the avoyding therof, did use a singular discretion and regarde. For the Jurye that went upon theyr tryall, he made to be chosen out of theyr necrest kinsemen, and theyr Judges he made of some of theyr owne fathers, of others theyr uncles and dearest frendes, whoe, when they could not but justly condemne them, yet uttred theyr judgement in aboundaunce of teares, and yet he even herin was counted bloudye and

Eudox. Indeede soe have I hearde it often here spoken, and I perceave (as I all-waves verely thought) that it was most unjustlye; for he was allwayes knowen to be a most just, sincere, godly, and right noble man, farr from such sterness, farr from such unrighteousnes. But in that sharpe execution of the Spanyardes at the Forte of Smerwicke, I heard it speciallye noted, and, yf it were true as some reported, surelye it was a great touche to him in honour, for wome say that he promised them life; others that a least he did putt them in hope thered.

Iren.

Both the one and the other is most untrue; for this I can assure you, my selfe being as neere them as any, that he was soe farr from either promising, or putting them in hope, that when first theyr Secretarye, called, as I remember, Jacques Geffray, an Italian, being sent to treate with the Lord Deputye for grace, was flatlye denyed; and afterwardes theyr Coronell, named Don Sebastian, came foorthe to intreate that they might parte with theyr armes like souldiours, at least with theyr lives, according to the custome of warre and lawe of nations, it was strongely denyed him, and tolde him by the Lord Deputye himselfe, that they could not justlye pleade either custome of warre, or lawe of nations, for that they were not any lawfull enemyes; and yf they were, he willed them to shewe by what commission they came thither into another Princes dominions to warre, whether from the Pope or the King of Spayne, or any other: the which when they sayd they had not, but were onely ad-venturers that came to seeke fortune abrode, and serve in warres amongest the Irish, who desired to entertayne them, it was then tolde them, that the Irish themselves, as the Earle and John of Desmonde with the rest, were noe lawfull enemyes, but rebells and traytours; and therfore they that came to succour them noe better then roges and runnagates, specially coming with noe lycence, nor commission from theyr owne King: Soe as it should be dishonorable for him in the name of his Queene to condicion or make any termes with such rascalls, but left them to theyr choise, to yeelde and submitt them-selves, or noc. Wherupon the sayd Coronel did absolutely yeeld himselfe and the forte. with all therin, and craved onely mercye, which it being not thought good to shewe them, both for daunger of themselves, yf, being saved, they should afterwardes joyne with the Irish, and also for terrour to the Irish, who were much emboldened by those forravne succours, and also putt in hope of more ere long; there was noe other way but to make that shorte end of them which was made. Therfore most untruelye and maliciously doe these evill tonges backbite and slaunder the sacred ashes of that most just and honorable personage, whose least vertue, of many most excellent which abounded in his heroycall spiritt, they were never able to

aspire unto.

Endox. Trulye, Irenscus, I am right gladd to be thus satisfied by you in that I have often hearde questioned, and yet was never | warden noe remorse or drawing be

able, till nowe, to choke the me detractours with the certayne theyr slaunderous untruthes: n knowledge herof impertinent to we formerly had in hand, I r thorough prosecuting of that s which ye have sett downe for under of those rebells of Ulst naught, and preparing a way f petuall reformation, least hap petian reformation, reason maps such sinister suggestions of cru much bloudshedd, all the plo overthrowen, and all the cost therin employed be utterly lo awaye.

Ye say most true; for

Lordes calling away from ther Lordes Justices continued but which the one was of mynde, (ato have continued in the footing decessour, but that he was cour travned. But the other was n disposed, as was meete for his pre willing to have all the pityfull that commonwealth healed and not with that heede as they shoul whom Sir John Perrot, succeding into another mans harvest, foun way to what course he list, the w not to that poynte which the for nours intended, but rather quit as it were in scorne of the forme vayne vaunte of his owne counsel which he was to willfullye carr did treade downe and diagrace a lish, and sett up and countenaur all that he could, whether think to make them more tractable and his government, (wherin he tho amiss) or privily plotting some oth of his owne, as it partly afterwarde but surely his manner of govern not be sounde nor holsome for t being soe contrarve to the form was even as two physitians shou sicke bodye in hand at two sum of which the former would minister meete to purge and keepe under the other to pamper and strengt

dainly agayne, wherof what is to for but a most daungerous relay

which we see nowe through his re next after him, happened there

nowe more daungerously sicke

before. Therfore by all meanes fore-seene and assured, that after o

into this course of reformation, the

ill objectes as must r compassion of theyr y noe other meanes them, and that these ry urgent necessitye. hen ye have nowe our garrisons, and to of the which neverconceave that there direction sett downe. we the occasions that I diligently awayted. næus), notwithstandll fore-sight and proto hazarde all the e, yf it be not very at is, the corruptions hough they be placed d theyr companyes ly, yet may they, yf m they please, and perhaps willingly be and harde service; l) is theyr common ev are layd in garri-y better hide their are in campe, where yr pay cometh, they the greatest portions re, by an hundreth heere to be named, entimes deceave the Queene, and greatly that lett the Queene t the muster-master diligently, lett the to them never soe exn them all. Therfore d, yf it be possible, to this inconvenience. be very harde; but evention herof must iel that hath the goison, to have an eye knowe the number te souldiours, and the beerve theyr rankes orthe to the service, selve be abused, soe an of speciall assur-And therfore greate n the choosing and ides, I would not by ptaynes should have iours, but that there ppoynted, of speciall trust, which should paye everye man according to his captaynes tickett, and the accoumpte of the clarke of his bande, for by this meanes the captayne will never seeke to falsifye his alterations, nor to diminish his companye, nor to deceave his souldiours, when nothing therof shal be for his gayne. This is the manner of the Spanyardes captaynes, whoe never hath to meddle with his souldiours paye, and indeede scorneth the name as base to be counted his souldiours pagador; whereas the contrary amongest us hath brought thinges to soe badd a pass, that there is noe captayne, but thinkes his band very sufficient, yf he muster threscore, and stickes not to say openly, that he is unwoorthy of a captaynship, that cannot make it woorth 500l. by the yeare, the which they right well

500l. by the yeare, the which they right well verefye by the proofe.

Ewdor. Truly I thinke this a verye good meane to avoyde that inconvenience of captaynes abuses. But what say you of the coronel? what authoritye thinke you meete to be given him? whether will ye allowe him to protecte, to safe conducte, and to have marshall lawe as they are accustomed;

Iren. Yea verely, but all these to be limitted with verye straight instructions. As thus for protections, that they shall have authoritye after the first proclamation, for the space of twentye dayes, to protect all that shall come in unto them, and them to sende unto the Lord Deputye with theyr safe conducte or pass, to be at his disposition; but see as none of them returne backe agayne, being once come in, but be presently sent away out of the countrey, unto the next sherriff, and so convayed in safetye. And likewise for marshall lawe, that to the souldiour it be not extended, but by tryall formerly made of his cryme, by a jurye of his fellowe souldiours as it ought to be, and not rashlye at the will or displeasure of the coronel, as I have sometimes seene to lightlye. And as for others of the rebells that shall light into theyr handes, And as for others of the that they be well aware of what condition they be, and what holding they have. For, in the last generall warres there, I knewe many good freeholders executed by marshall lawe. whose landes were thereby saved to theyr heyres, which should otherwise have escheated to her Majestie. In all which, the greate discretion and uprightness of the coronel himself is to be the cheifest stay both for all these doubts, and for many other difficultyes

that may in the service happen.

Endox. Your caution is very good; but nowe touching the arche-rebell himselfe.

meane the Earle of Tyrone, if he, in all the time of these warres, should offer to come in and submitt himselfe to her Majestic, would you not have him receaved, giving good hostages, and sufficient assurance of himself?

Iren. Noe, marye; for there is noe doubt, but he will offer to come in, as he hath done diverse times allreadye, but it is without any intent of true submission, as the effect hath well shewed; neither indede can he nowe, vf he would, come in at all, nor give that assuraunce of himselfe that should be meete, for being, as he is, very suttell-headed, seing himselfe nowe soe farre engaged in this badd action, can be thinke that by his submission he can purchase to himselfe any safetye, but that hereafter, when thinges shal be quieted, these his villanyes will ever be remembred? And whensoever he shall treade awaye (as needes the most righteous must sometimes) advauntage wil be taken therof, as a breache of his pardon, and he brought to a reckning for all former matters; besides, howe harde it is now for him to frame himselfe to subjection, that having once sett before his eyes the hope of a kingdome, hath thereunto founde not onely encouragement from the greatest King of Christendome, but also founde great fayntness in her Majesties withstanding him, whereby he is animated to thinke that his power is to defende him, and to offend further then he hath done, whensoe he please, lett everye reasonable man judge. But yf he himselfe should come in, and leave all other his accomplices without, as O-Donell, Mac-Mahon, Maguecirhe, and the rest, he must needes thinke that then, even they will ere long cutt his throate, which having drawen them all into this occasion, nowe in the middest of theyr trouble giveth them the slip; wherby he must needes perceave howe impossible a thing it is for him to submit himselfe. But yet yf he would doe soe, can he give any good assuraunce of his obedience? For howe weake hold is there by hostages hath to often bene prooved, and that which is spoken of taking Shane O-Neale-is sonnes from him, and setting them up agaynst him is a verye perillous counsell, and not by any meanes to be putt in proofe; for were they lett foorth and could overthrowe him, whoe should afterwardes overthrowe them, or what assuraunce can be had of them? It wil be like the tale in Æsope of the wild horse, whoe, having thereunto mounted upon his b but then when the horse we light he refused, but kept his his service and subjection. not, would be the proof of Sh sonnes. Therfore it is most attempt any such plott; for a manner of plott, was the most this trayterous Earle is now a for whenas the last O-Neale, o O-Neale, beganne to stand up termes, this fellowe, then ta Dungannau, was sett up as it-him, and countenanneed and st the Queene so farre, as that he to keepe her selfe play: muhis next fellow gamester the winner, somewhat to mayntay which he, setting unto lim a therby winneth all from the w

Eudor. Was this rebell fi the Quene (as you saie), and r

unduetifull?

Iren. He was (I assure outcast of all the O-Nealest) up by her Majestie out of the hath nowe wrought himself us he playeth like the frozen sna for compassion relieved by the soone after he was warme bega threaten daunger even to him Eudox. He surely then

nunnishment of that snake, an thely be hewed in peaces. Br of the raysing up of Shane Oagaynst him, what say you advise which (I hearde) was to drawe in the Scottes, to serve

how like you that advise?

Iren. Much woorse then to whoe is he that is experienced and knoweth not that the neerelye allyed unto the Mac-land, and to the Earle of Argi they use to have all theyr su Scotts and Reddshankes? Scotts are, through long co myngled and allyed to all the of the North; see as there is they will ever be wrought to a agaynst theyr old frender as And yf they would, howe who are finished, and they have over shall they the most so be putted not all known, that the enmitye agaynst the stage came to a man to desire his ayde agaynst his toe, whose yeelding

STORE TO THE

alled North Irish were s, which challenge the theyr owne aunciently. to leape out of the pann the cheifest caveat and t the Scotts.

I remember that in your peopling of Ireland, you vthians or Scottes were downe in the Northe. hey may challenge some e comes it then that e dominion therof, and sayeth the right is in solve me therin; for it is e kuowen, and maketh the warre agaynst him, ommonly to be according e cause, for which it is one have any right in emes) it should be wrong r yf (as I remember ye ag) that O-Neale, when he King of England for Soveraigne, did (as he the same submission all ightes unto himselfe, it ed unjust to thrust him

zht of O-Neale in the the, it is surely none at the Kinges of England me, and thereby assumed right of that land to r heyres and successours ing was left in O-Neale ved backe from them, ever had any auncient ountreve, but what by chement, after the death ence, he gott upon the a and possessions being the Scotts, under the Bruce, (as I formerly he eft-sones entred into, wrongfullye detayned, occupations and great inges of England (soone e at home, see as they the recoverye of that the, nor the restrayning O-Neale; whoe, finding and him, raigned in that himselfe Lorde of those emayned there, uppon ath continued his first

usurped power, and nowe exacteth and extorteth upon all men what he list: soe that nowe to subdue or expell an usurper, should be noe unjust enterprize nor wrongfull warre, but a restitution of auncient right unto the crowne of England, from whence they were most unjustlye expelled and longe kept out.

Eudox. I am verye gladd herin to be thus satisfyed by you, that I may the better satisfye them whom often I have hearde object these doubtes, and slaunderously to barke at the courses which are held against that trayterous Earle and his adherentes. But nowe that you have thus settled your service for Ulster and Connaughte, I would be gladd to heare your opinion for the pro-secuting of Feugh Mac Hughe, whoe being but a base villeyn, and of himselfe of noe power, yet soe continually troubleth that state. notwithstanding that he lyeth under theyr nose, that I disdayne his bold arrogauncye, and thinke it to be the greatest indignitye to the Queene that may be, to suffer such a caytiff to play such Rex, and by his example not only to give harte and encouradgement to all such bold rebells, but also to yeeld them succoure and refuge agaynst her Majestye, whensoever they flye into his Cummerreeighe: wherfore I would first wish, before you enter into your plott of service agaynst him, that you should laye open by what meanes he, being soe base, first lifted himselfe up to this daungerous greatnes, and how he mayn-tayneth his parte agaynst the Queene and her power, notwithstanding all that hath bene done and attempted agaynst him. whether also he hath any pretence of right in the landes which he holdeth, or in the warres that he maketh for the same?

Iren. I will soe, at your pleasure, and since ye desire to know his first beginning, I will not only discover the first beginning of his privat howse, but also the original of all his sept, of the Birnes and Tooles, so farre as I have learned the same from some of themselves, and gathered the rest by readinge: This people of the Birnes and Tooles (as before I shewed unto you my conjecture) discended from the auncient Brittons, which first inhabited all those Easterne partes of Ireland, as theyr names doe betoken; for Brin in the Brittons language signifyeth hillye, and Tol hole, valley or darke, which names, it seemeth, they tooke of the countreye which they inhabited, which is all very mountayne and woodye. In the which the seemeth that ever sithence the coming in be English with Deurmuid-ne-tialli, the have continued: Whether that theyr countrey being see rude and mountaynous was of them dispised, and thought not woorthye the inhabiting, or that they were receaved to grace by them, and suffred to enjoye theyr lands as unfit for any other, yet it seemeth that in some places of the same they did putt foote, and fortifyed with sundrye castells, of which the raynes onely doe there now remayne, since which time they are growen to that strength, that they are able to lift up hand agaynst all that state; and nowe lately, through the boldness and late good success of this Feugh Mac Hugh, they are see farr em-boldened, that they threaten perill even to Dublin, over whose necke they continually hange. But touching your demaunde of this Feughe-is right unto that countrey or the segniorye which he claymes therin, it is most vayne and arrogaunte. For this ye cannot be ignoraunte of, that it was parte of that which was given in inheritannee by Deurmuid Mac Marroghe, King of Leinster, to Strangbowe with his daughter, and which Strangbowe gave over to the King and to his heyres, soe as the right is absolutely nowe in her Majestie; and yf it were not, yet could it not be in this Fough, but in O-Brin, which is the ancient lord of all that countrey; for he and his auncestours were but followers unto O-Brin, and his grandfather, Shane Mac Tirrelaghe, was a man of meanest regarde amongest them, neither having wealth nor power. But his sonne Hughe Mac Shane, the father of this Fenghe, first beganne to lift up his head, and through the strength and greate fastness of Glan-Malecirh, which adjoyneth unto his howse of Ballinecorrib, drewe unto him many theves and ont-lawes, which field unto the succour of that glinne, as to a saunctuarye and brought unto him parte of the spoyle of all the countrey, through which he grewe stronge, and in shorte space got to himselfe a greate name thereby amongest the Irish, in whose footing this his sonne continuing hath, through many unhappy occasions, encreased his said name, and the opinion of his greatness, soe that nowe he is become a daungerous enemy to deale withall,

Eudor. Surely I can comend him that, being of himselfe of soe base condition, hath through his owne hardiness lifted himselfe up to that height that he dare now to fronte princes, and make termes with greate potensoe it is to them most disgracefull, to be bearded of such a base variett, that being but of late growen out of the dounghill of the speyle of

beginneth nowe to overnous wel taynes, and make himself er of all outlawes and rebells that w unto him. But doe you thinks soe daungerous an enemye as he or that it is see hards to take his

fren. Noc verely, then is reckning to be made of him! ever bene taken in hand, when the realme (or at least the parts had bene quiett, as the honoral that nowe governeth there (I William Russell) gave a total therunto, and had woorthely per his course had not bene cross he could not have stoode three ever have looked up agavnst a power; but nowe all the parts being up in a madding moode, in Lease, the Kevenachs in th Wexforde, and some of the B countye of Kilkennye, they al him, and drawe unto his coun strong hold where they think from all that prosecute them thence they doe at they please into all the borders adjoyning, peopled countreyes, as the Dublin, of Kildare, of Catarle kenny, of Wexforde, with the they vittell and strengthen then otherwise should in shorte tis and soone pined nway : see the

of himselfe you may hereby soo Eudor. Then, by soe much out of your speaches, the next the warres with him, and to re out, should be to keepe him fi those countreyes adjoyning, whi pose) is to be done, either by dr inhabitauntes of those next l and leaving them utterly wast ing garrisons upon all those fr him, that, when he shall be may sett upon him and shorten Iren. Ye conceave rightly

but for the dispeopling and dri all the inhabitannies from the co him, which ye speake of, shoul confusion and trouble, as well for ingness of them to leave they as also for placing and providing other countreyes, (me seemes course should be by planning about him, the which whenso hooke foorth, or be drawed to



VIEW OF THE PRESENT STATE OF IRELAND.

tell, shal be allwayes readye to going or coming.

Where then doe ye wish these be plaunted that they may serve him; and howe manye in everye

my selfe, by reason that (as I am noe martiall man, will not me to directe so daungerous t onely as I understood by the d plotts, which the Lord Graye ell experienced in that service, did laye downe: to the perfourmed he onely required a 1000 ayed in fowre garrisons; that is, rrih 200 footemen and 50 horse, ld shutt him out of his great reto he soe much trusteth; at h 200 footemen and 50 horse, to countye of Catarlaghe; at Arkloe 200 footemen to defend all that de the sca; in Shelelagh 100 thich should cutt him from the and the countye of Wexforde; the three castells 50 horsemen, ld defende all the countye of all 100 footemen at Talbots h should keepe him from breakthe countye of Kildare, and be his necke on that side: The ons, see layed, will see busye shall never rest at home, nor sbrode but he shall be had; as hey cannot be above grounde, needes fall into theyr handes ie hath noe fastness nor refuge l as for his partakers of the , and Kevanaghes, they will , when they see his fastness 's thus taken from him. ly this seemeth a plott of

nd small difficultye which of a shorte end. But what will ye sett downe for the ga out of these garrisons? her then the present occarer unto them, and as by if there they cannot wante drawen continually upon them shal be still upon all at one instant bayte [assure my selfe) will e time, but wil be all ce of one yeare; which it is, unto the eternall ll thereby be purchased the great good which Majestie, should (me

thinkes) readely drawe on her Highnthe undertaking of the enterprise.

Endox. You have very well (me seen Ireneus, plotted a course for the atchie of those warres nowe in Ireland, we seeme to aske noe long time, nor greharge, soe as the effecting therof be comitted to men of sure trust, and some perience, as well in the same countrey as the manner of those services; for yf it left in the handes of such rawe captaynes sare unallye sent out of England, being ther preferred onely by frendship, and not chose by sufficiencye, it will soone fall to ground

Iren. Therfore it were meete (me thinkes that such captaynes onely were thereunt employed, as have formerly served in tha countreye, and bene at least lieutenaunte unto other captaynes there. For otherwise, being brought and transferred from other services abrode, as in Fraunce, in Spayne, and in the Lowe-countreyes, though they be of good experience in those, and have never soc well deserved, yet in these they wil be newe to seeke, and, before they have gathered experience, they shall buye it with great loss to her Majestie, either by hazarding of theyr companyes, through ignoraunce of the places, and manner of the Irish services, or by loosing a great parte of the time that is required hereunto, being but shorte, in which it might be finished, before they have allmost taken out a newe lesson, or can tell what is to be done.

Eudox. You are noe good frend to newe captaynes it seemes, Iren., that you barre them from the creditt of this service: but (to say trueth) me thinkes it were meete, that any one, before he come to be a captayne, should have bene a souldiour; for, 'Parere qui nescit, nescit imperare.' And besides, there is great wrong done to the old soul-diour, from whom all meanes of advancement which is due unto him is cutt of by shuffling in these newe cutting captaynes into the places for which he hath long served, and perhaps better deserved. But nowe that you have thus (as I suppose) finished all the warre, and brought all thinges to that lowe chbe which ye speake of, what course will ye take for the bringing in of that reformation which ye intend, and recovering all thinges from this desolate estate, in which thinkes) I behold them nowe left, unto that perfect establishment and news common and an assured peace be confirmed; Eur. wealth which ye have concerned, of which we will be a been made to been Majest with the confirmed; Eur. is it whereunto we are nowe to looke, and doe greatlye long for, being long sithence made wearye with the huge charge which ye have layed uppon us, and with the strong enduraunce of soe many complayntes, soe manyedelayes, soe many doubts and daungers, as will hereof (I know well) arise: unto the which before you come, it were meete (me thinkes) that you should take some order for the souldiour, which is nowe first to be discharged and disposed of, some way; the which you doe not well fore-see, may growe to be as great an inconvenience as all this that we suppose you have quitt us from, by the loose leaving of soe many thousand souldiours, which from hence foorth wil be unfitt for any labour or other trade, but must either seeke service and imployment abrode, which may be daungerous, or els will perhaps imploye themselves heere at home, as may be discomodious.

Iren. You say verye true; and it is a thing indeede much misliked in this our common-wealth that noe better course is taken for such as have bene employed once in service, but that returning, either maymed and soe unable to labour, or otherwise, though whole and sounde, yet afterwardes unwilling to worke, or rather willing to sett the hang-man a woorke. But that needeth another consideration; but to this that we have nowe in hande, it is farre from my meaning to leave the souldiour soe at random, or to leave that wast realme soe weake and destitute of strength, which may both defend it agaynst others that might seeke then to sett upon it, and also kepe it from that relapse which I before did fore-cast. For it is one speciall good of this plott which I would devise, that 6000 souldiours of these whom I have nowe imployed in this service, and made throughly acquaynted both with the state of the countrey, and manners of the people, should hencefoorth be still continued, and for ever mayntayned of the countrey, without any charge to her Majestie; and the rest that either are old, and unable to serve any longer, or willing to fall to thrifte, as I have seene manye souldiours after the service to proove verye good husbandes, should be placed in parte of the landes by them wonne, at such rate, or rather better then others, to

whom the same shal be sett out.

Eudor. Is it possible. Irenews? Can there be any such meanes devised, that soe manye men should be kept still in her Majesties service without any charge to her at all? Surelye this were an exceeding greate good,

old souldiours allway readys what purpose soever she list er and alsoe to have that land strengthned, that it shall neit forrein invasion, nor practize, w shall ever attempte, but shall under in continuall awe and fire Iren. It is son indeede. trulye I doe not take to be a great difficultye, as I thinke it w appeare unto you. And first woof the North parte, for that the most waight and importaunce. it shall appeare that the enemy downe, and the stout rebell eith driven to that wretchedness th longer able to hold up his he come to any conditions, which selfe will be before the end of Winter, I wish that there be ag clamation made, that whatsever will freely come in, and submit to her Majestics mercye, shall h soe to doe, where they shall eith grace they desire, or have leave agayne in safetye: uppon which that see manye as survive will sue for grace, of which whoe-see meete for subjection, and fitt to to good, may be receaved, or els (for I thinke that all wilbe but a uppon condicion and assuraune will submit themselves absolut Majesties ordinaunce for them they shal be assured of life and l be onelye tyed to such condicion thought by her meete for conta ever after in due obedience.

both to her Highnes to hav

most readelye, and upon therm mitt themselves, by the proof of I sawe in Mounster. For upon I clamation there, they all came in and ragge: and when as afterwarthem were denyed to be receaved them doe with them what the they would not by any meanes return or goe foorthe. For in this cannot accept allmost of any condicted then dye of hunger and miserye? Endox. It is very likely see, then is the ordinaunce, and what dicions which you will propose which shall reserve unto them and the same of the

condicions I nothing doubt but t

of life and libertye?

Iren. Soe soone then as they
the best assurance of themse

be required, which must be (I suppose) of theyr principall men to remayne in ge one for another, and some other for t, for other suretye I recken of none may binde them, neither of wife, nor ildren, since then perhaps they would be ridd of both from the famine; I have them first unarmed utterlye and quite of all theyr warrlick weapons, then these condicions sett downe and knowen unto them, where they shal be 3, and have land given unto them to ye and to live upon, in such sorte as become good subjectes, to labour efcorth for theyr living, and to applye selves to honest trades of civilitye as shall everye one be founde meete and

or. where then, a Gods name, will have them? In Leynster? or will you any new lande there for them that is nknowen?

. Noe, I will place them all in the were of the Brinnes and Tooles, which mh Mac Hughe hath, and in all the of the Kevanaghs, which are nowe bellion, and all the landes which will to her Majestie there-abouts, which I to be verye spacious and large enough mayne them, being verye neere twentye irtye miles wyde.

actor. But what then will ye doe with be Brinnes there, the Tooles, and the manghs, and all those that nowe are with them?

At the same very time, and in the manner that I make that proclamation em of Ulster, will I have it also made to and uppon theyr submission there-

I will take like assuraunce of them as bers. After which I will translate all remayne of them into the places of wer in Ulster, with all theyr creete, and else they have left them, the which I name to be devided amongest them in meete sorte, as eche may thereby have untill, by his further travell and labour earthe, he shalbe able to provide himbetter.

udor. But will you then give the lande we unto them, and make them heyres of former rebells? see may you perhaps them heyres also of all theyr former tives and disorders; or howe els will you me of them?

Not soe: but all the landes I will

drawen thither, who shall have the same with such estates as shal be thought meete, and for such rentes as shall eft-sones be rated: under everye of these Englishmen will I place some of the Irish to be tenauntes for a certayne rente, according to the quantitye of such land, as everye man shall have allotted unto him, and shalbe founde able to weelde, wherin this speciall regarde shal be had, that in noe place under any land-lorde there shall remayne manye of them planted togither, but dispersed wide from theyre acquayntaunce, and scattred farre abrode through all the countreye; For that is the evill which I nowe finde in all Ireland, that the Irish dwell togither by theyr septs, and severall nations, see as they may practize or conspire what they will; whereas yf there were English shedd amongest them and placed over them, they should not be able once to styrre or murmure, but that it shoulde be knowen, and they shortened according to theyr demerites.

Endox. Ye have good reason; but what rating of rents meane you? To what end

doe you purpose the same?

Iren. My purpose is to rate the rents of all those landes of her Majestie in such sorte, unto those Englishmen which shall take them, as they may be well able to live ther-upon, to yeeld her Majestic reasonable cheverye, and also give a competent mayntenaunce unto the garrisons, which shall be there left amongest them; for these souldicurs (as I told you) remayning of the former garrisons I cast to be maintayned upon the rente of those landes which shal be escheated, and to have them divided through all Ireland in such places as shalbe thought most convenient, and occasion may require. And this was the course which the Romains used in the conquest of England, for they planted some of theyr legions in all places convenient, the which they caused the countrey to maintayne, cutting upon everye portion of lande a reasonable rent, which they called Romescott, the which might not surcharge the tenaunte or free-holder, and defrayed the pay of the garrison; and this hath bene allwayes observed of all princes in all countreyes to them newly subdued, to sett garrisons amongest them to contayne them in dutye, whose burthen they made them to beare; and the wante of this ordi-Henry the Second, was the cause of the shorte decaye of that government, and the anto Englishmen whom I will have | quicke recoverye agains of the Insh.

fore by all meanes it is to be provided for. And this is it that I would blame, yf it should not misbecome me, in the late planting of Mounster, that noe care was had of this ordinaunce, nor any strength of a garrison provided for, by a certayne allowaunce out of all the sayd landes, but onely the present profitt looked unto, and the safe continuaunce therof for ever hereafter neglected.

But there is a bande of souldiours Eudox. But there is a bande of souldiours layed in Mounster, to the maintenaunce of which, what oddes is there whether the Queene, receaving the rent of the country, doe give paye at her pleasure, or that there be a setled allowaunce appoynted unto them

ont of her landes there?

Iren. There is a great oddes, for nowe that sayd rente of the countrey is not usually applyed to the paye of the souldiours, but it is (everye other occasion coming betweene) converted to other uses, and the souldiours in time of peace discharged and neglected as unnecessarye; whereas yf the sayde rente were appoynted and ordayned by an establishment to this ende onelye, it should not be turned to any other; nor in troublesome times, uppon everye occasion, her Majestie be see troubled with sending over newe souldiours as she nowe is, nor the countrey ever should dare to mutinie, having still the souldiours on theyr necke, nor any forreyne enemye dare to invade, knowing there soe stronge and great a garrison allwayes readye to receave them.

Eudox. Sith then ye thinke that this Romescott of the paye of the souldiours uppon the lande to be both the readyest way to the souldiours, and least troublesome to her Majestie, tell us (I pray you) how ye would have the sayd landes rated, that both a rente may rise thereout unto the Queene, and also the souldiours paye, which (me seemes) wilbe

barde ?

Iren. First we are to consider how much lande there is in all Ulster, that according to the quantitye therof we may cesse the sayd rente and allowaunce issuing therout. Ulster (as the auncient recordes of that realme doe testifye) doth contayne nine thousand plowelandes, everye of which plow-landes contayneth six score acres, after the rate of 21 foote to every pearche of the sayd acre, which amounteth in the whole to 124000 acres, every of which plow-landes I will rate at 46s, 8d, by the years; which is not much more then 1hd. an acre, the which yearsly rent amount-oth in the whole to 18000l. besides 6s. 8d. chiefrie out of every plow-land. But because

the countye of Louthe, being a part and contayning in it 712 phys-lin wholye to eschenie unto her Maje rest, they having in all thee stimued for the most parte author otherwise nowe a greate para-under the rebells, there is an abat made thereout of 400 or 500 ple I estimate the same, the which in the whole yearely rent of 46s, everye plow-land, like as the landes doe, but yet shall pays for position of cesse towards the may of souldiours 20s, out of everye; soe as there is to be deducted former summe 200 or 3001 years nevertheless may be supplied by the fishing, which is exceeding Ulster, and also by an encrease the best landes, and those that best places peere the sea-co-18000%, will defraye the interta 1500 souldiours, with some over the paye of the vittaviers which imployed in the vittayling of the

Eudox, Soe then, belike you leave 1500 souldiours in garrison to be payed principallye out of t her Majestie; the which, when you) will you have garrizoned? Iren. I will have them devided partes; that is, 500 in every go

which I will have to remayne in t same places where they were before to weete, 500 at Strabane and ab foyle, soe as they may holde all the of that parte of the countrey, so them be putt in wardes, upon all thereaboutes, which I knowe to be a second or the country of the co may stopp all passages into the co Ban, up towardes Logh-Sidne merlye directed. Also other 500 upon Logh-Earne, and wardes them which shal be layed at Fer Belicke, at Ballishannon, and on all towardes Conaughte, the which so stronglie commaund all the that waie as that none can passe into Connaught, without their last 500 shall also remayne in the Monaghane, and some of them be wardes, to keepe the keies of all trey, both downewardes, and als O-Relyes countrey, sad the gale, at Emishilin, some at Beldume. Blacke Forte, and see along rive shewed in the first plaunting of And moreover at everye of those fortes ald have the state of a towne layed e and encompassed, in the which I would that there should be placed inhabits of all sortes, as marchauntes, artificers, msbandmen, to whom there should be rs and fraunchises graunted to incorthem. The which, as it wil be no matter lcultye to drawe out of England persons

ahould very gladlye be see placed, ald it in shorte space turns those partes ate comoditye, and bring ere longe to sjestie much profitt; for those places are for trade and trafficke, having most ient out-gates by diverse rivers to the id in-gates to the richest partes of the that they would soone be enriched, and alye enlarged, for the verye seating of arrisons by them: besides, the safetye will alsoe drawe thither store of people ade, as I have seene examples at Mari-the and Phillipstowne in Leynster, by reason of these two fortes, though were but small wardes left in them, ge two good townes nowe growen, which a greatest staye of both those two coun-

far. Indeede (me seemes) three such a, as you say, would doe verye well in places with the garrisons, and in shorte would be soc augmented, as they would be with litle helpe to wall themselves dye: but, for the plaunting of all the the countrey, what order would ye

What other then (as I sayd) to bring) out of England, which should inhabite me; whereunto though, I doubte not, reate troupes would be readye to runne, or that in such cases, the woorst and decayed men are most readye to remove, dd wish them rather to be chosen out partes of the realme, either by discre-wise men thereunto appoynted, or by w by the drumme, as was the old use in ag foorthe of colonyes, or such other canes as shall in theyr wisedome be Amongest the chiefest of ht meetest. Amongest the chiefest of I would have the lande sett into oryes, in such sorte as it is nowe in ster, and devided into hundreds and thes, or wardes, as it is in England, and out into shires as it was aunciently;

countye of Colrane, the countye of Monahon, the countye of Tyrone, the countye of Fermanagh, the countye of Donnegall, being in all tenne. Over all which frish I wish a Lord President and a Counsell to be placed, which may keepe them afterwardes in awe and obedience, and minister unto them justice

and equitye.

Endox. Thus I see the whole purpose of our plot for Ulster, and nowe 1 desire to heare your like opinion for Conaughte.

Iren. By that which I have allreadye sayd of Ulster you may gather my opinion for Conaughte, being verye answerable unto the former. But for that the landes, which therin shall escheate unto her Majesty, are not see intierlye togither as that they can be accoumpted in one somme, it needeth that they be considered severallye. The province of Conaughte contayneth in the whole (as appeareth by the Recordes of Dublin) 7200 plow-landes of the former measure, and is of late devided into six shires or countyes: the countye of Clare, the countye of Leutrum, the countye of Roscomman, the countye of Gallowaye, the countye of Maiho, and the countye of Sleugho. Of the which, all the countye of Sleugho, all the countye of Maiho, the most parte of the countye of Roscomman, the most parte of the countye of Leutrum, a greate parte of the countye of Galloway, and some of the count ye of Clare, is like to escheate unto her Majestie for the rebellion of theyr present possessours. The which two coun-tyes of Sleugho and Maiho are supposed to contayne allmost 3000 plow-landes, the rente wherof, ratabile to the former, I vallewe allmost at 6000l. per annum. The countye of Roscomman, saving what pertayneth to the howse of Roscomman and some fewe other English there latelye seated, is all one, and therfore it is wholve likewise to eschente to her Majestye, saving those portions of English inhabitauntes; and even those English doe (as I understand by them) paye as much rente to her Majestie as is sett upon those in . Ulster, counting theyr composition monye therewithall, see as it may runne all into one reckning with the former two countyes: Soe that this countye of Roscomman, con-tayning 1200 plow-landes, as it is accommpted, amounteth to 2400%, by the years, which with that former two countyes rente maketh about 8300l, for the former wanted somewhate. But what the escheated landes of the county me, the countye of Louthe, the countye of of Galloway and Leutrum will arise unto be yet uncertaine to define, till survey therefore maghe, the countye of Cavan, the made, for that those landes are intermingly with the Earle of Clanvickarde, and others; but it is thought they be the one halfe of both these countyes, soe as they may be counted to the valewe of one whole countye, which contayneth above one thousand plowlandes; for soe manye the least countye of them all comprehendeth, which maketh two thousand poundes more, that is, in all, 10 or 11000t. Thother two countyes must remayne till theyr escheates appeare, the which letting pass, yet as unknowen, yet thus much is knowen to be accounted for certayne, that the composition of these two countyes, being rated at 20s. every plow-land, will amounte to above 2000t, more: all which being layed togither to the former, may be reasonably estimated to rise unto 13000t, the which somme, togither with the rente of the escheated landes in the two last countyes, which cannot yet be valewed, being, (as I doubt not,) no less then a 1000t, more, will yield a pay largely unto a thousand men and theyr victuallers, and a thousand poundes over towardes the Governour.

Eudox. Ye have (me thinkes) made but an estimate of these landes of Conaughte even at a very eventure, soe as it should be harde to builde any certayntye of charge to be raysed

upon the same,

Irea. Not altogither upon uncertayntyes; for thus much may easelye appeare unto you for certayne, as the composition mony of every plowland amounteth unto; for this I would have you principally to understand, that my purpose is to rate all the landes in Ireland at 20s. every plowland, for theyr composition toward the garrison. The which I knowe, in regarde of being freed from all other charges whatsoever, wil be readely and most gladly yeelded unto. So that there being in all Ireland (as appeareth by theyr old recordes) 43920 plowlandes, the same shall amounte to the sum likewise of 43920L, and the rest to be reared of the escheated landes which fall to her Majestie in the sayd provinces of Ulster, Conaughte, and that partie of Leinster under the rebells; for Mounster we deale not yet withall.

Eudox. But tell me this, by the way, doe you then lay composition upon the escheated landes as you doe upon the rest? for soe (me thinkes) you recken alltogither. And that sure were to much to pay seaven nobles out of every plow-land, and composition mony besides, that is 20s, out of every plow-land.

besides, that is 20s, out of every plow-land.

Iren. No, you mistake me; I doe put only should seate himse abouts, upon the seaven nobles rent and composition both upon every plow-land escheated, that is 40s, for the very may be

composition, and 6s, 8d, for the Majestic.

Eudox. I doe now concerney, then (I pray you) to the appear garrisons in Conaughte, and is how many and where you wall placed.

Iren. I would have one the Conaughte in two garrisons; the county of Maiho, about C lors, which shall keepe the N Burkes of Mac William Enter in the countys of Claurichards doughe, that they may conta and the Burkes there, the Kel nyrrs, with all them theregarrison which I formerly pla hearne will serve for all occasion of Slegho, being neere adjoyn as in one nights marche they in any place therof when nee them. And like as in the f garrisons in Ulster, I wished townes to be planted, which garde of that strengthe shall safely with all the countrey a would I also wish to be in this and that besides, there wen lished at Athlone, with a co in the castell there for theyr if Eudox. What should that

Eudox. What should that Governour of Connaughte use allwayes, whose presence will all that township?

all that towneship? Iren, I knowe he doth s much to be disliked that should lye soe farr of, in the of all the province, wheras that he should be continually middest of his charge, that looke out alike into all places ment, and also be soone at he where occasion shall demaun presence of the Governour is great stay and bridle unto the disposed: like as I see it is w Mounster, where the daylyc continually apparaunt: and, also doe I greatly dislike the seating at Dublin, being the the realme, and least needing presence; whereas (me seems since his proper care is of Lei hath care of all besides m should seate himselfe about abouts, upon the skirse of country, so that he might

easely over looke and sometimes overthe Moores, the Butlers, the Dempthe Keatius, the Connors, O-Carrell,
lloy, and all that heape of Irish nations
there lye hudled togither without any
r-rule them, or contayne them in dutye,
he Irishman (I assure you) feares the
nament no longer then he is within
or reache.

zior. Surely (me thinkes) herein you re a matter of much importance, more 1 have hearde ever noted; but sure seemes soe expedient, as that I wonder hene heeretofore ever omitted; but pose the instance of the cittzens of a is the greatest lett therof.

m is the greatest lett therof.

Truly, then it ought not to be see;

cause have they to feare that it wil be
indraunce for them; for Dublin wil be
ms it is, the key of all passages and
contations out of England thither, to noe
redict of those citizens then it nowe is,
uside other places will thereby receave
benefitt. But lett us nowe (I pray you)
to Leinster, in the which I would wish
mme course to be observed as in Uster.

Joar. You meane for the leaving of the
sons in they fortes, and for planting of
the in all those countreyes betwene the
yes of Dublin and the countye of Wexthey worked wast wilde places, I thinke,

they are wonne unto her Majestie, that is none that wil be hastye to seeke to ite them.

Yes enough, (I warraunte you;) for the whole tracke of the countrey he sayne and woodye, yet there are many

valleyes amongest them, fitt for habitations, to which those mountadjoyning wil be a greate increase of rage; for that countrey is a very greate of cattell, and verye fitt for breede; as arne it is nothing naturall, save onely barley and otes, and some places for rve, therfore the larger penniwoorthes may be ed unto them, though otherwise the beas of the mountayne pasturage doe unto the dadness of the soyle, so as I be not but it will fynde inhabitantes and

wtakers enoughe.

wor. Howe much then doe you thinke

will those landes which Fengh Mac Hughe

with under him may amounte unto, and

rent may be reared therout to the

stemance of the garrisons that shal be

there?

Truly, it is impossible by ayme to sand as for experience and knowledge

thereof I doe not thinke that there was every any of the particulars therof, but yet I will (yf it please you) gesse therat, uppon grounde onely of theyr judgement which have formerly devided all that countrey into two shires or countyes, namely the countye of Wicklow, and the countye of Fearnes: the which two I see noe cause but that they should wholve escheate unto ber Majestie, all but the barronye of Arckloe which is the Earle of Ormond-is auncient inheritannee, and hathever bene in his possession; for all the whole lande is the Queenes, unless there be some graunte of any parte therof to be shewed from her Majestie: as I thinke there is onely of New-castell to Sir Henry Harrington, and of the castell of Fearnes to Sir Thomas Musterson, the rest, being allmost thirtye miles over, I doe suppose can contayne noe less then two thousand plowlandes, which I will estimate at 4000l. by the yeare. The rest of Leinster, being seaven countyes, to witt, the countye of Dublin, Kildare, Katarlaghe, Wexford, Kilkennye, the King and Queenes countyes, doe contayne in them 7400 plowlandes, which amounteth to see many poundes for composition to the garrison, that makes in the whole 11,400 poundes, the which somme will yeelde pave unto a thousand souldiours, litle wanting, which may be supplyed out of other landes of the Kavanaghes, which are to be escheated unto her Majestie for the rebellion of theyr possessours, though otherwise indeede they be of her Majesties owne auncient demeane. It is greate reason. But tell us

nowe where would you wishe those garrisons to be layed, whether altogither, or to be dispersed in sundrye places of the countrey?

Iren. Marye, in sundrye places, to witt, in this sorte, or much like as may be better devised, for 200 in a place I doe thinke to be enough for the safegarde of the countrey, and keeping under all suddayne upstartes, that shall seeke to trouble the peace therof: therfore I wish to be layed at Ballinecornh, for the keeping of all badd parsons from Glanmalour, and all the fastness there-aboutes, and also to contayne all that shall be planted in those landes thencefoorthe, 200. Another 200 at Knocklough in theyre former place of garrison, to keepe the Briskelagh and all those mountaynes of the Kavanaghs; 200 more to lie at Fearnes, and upwardes, inward upon the Slane; 200 to be placed at the toric of Clarell; other 200 ut the force of Orange Courted the O-Connors, O-Mologe, Mologe Courted the O-Connors, O-Mologe Courted the O-Connors, O-Molog

Coghlane, Maccagehan, and all those Irish nations bordering there-abouts.

Eudor. Thus I see all your thousand men

bestowed in Leinster: what say you then of Meathe? Which is the first parte?

Iren. Meathe, which contayneth both East

Iren. Meathe, which contayneth both East Meath and West Meath, and of late the Analie nowe called the country of Loong-forde, is accoumpted therunto: But Meath it selfe, according to the old recordes, containeth 4320 plowlandes, and the country of Longfoorde 947, which in the whole make 5267 plowlandes, of which the composition monye will amounte likewise to five thousand, two hundred, threscore and seaven poundes to the mayntenaunce of the garrison. But because all Meathe, lying in the bosome of that kingdome, is allwayes quiett enough, it is needeless to put any garrison there, soe as all that charge may be spared. But in the country of Longfoorde I wish 200 footemen and fiftye horsemen to be placed in some convenient seate betwene the Analie and the Brenie, as about Lough Sillon, or some like place of that river, soe as they mighte keepe both the O-Relyes, and also the O-Farrels, and all that out-skirte of Meathe in awe; the which use upon every light occasion to be stirring, and, having contynuall enmitye amongest themselves, doe thereby

her Majestic. Eudox. It is woorth the harkening unto. But nowe that you have done with Meath, proceede (I pray you) with Mounster, that we may see howe it will rise there for the mayntenaunce of the garrison.

oftentimes trouble all those partes, the charge wherof being 3400 and odd poundes is to be cutt out of that composition monye for Meath

and Longfoorde, the over-plus, being allmost 2000l, by the yeare, will come in clearly e to

Iren. Mounster contayneth by recorde at Dublin 16000 plow-landes, the composition wherof, at the least, will make 16000l, by the yeare, out of the which I would have a thousand souldiours to be mayntayned for the defence of that province, the charge of which with the vittaylers wages, will amounte to 12000l, by the yeare; the other 4000l, will defraye the charges of the President and the Counsell of that province.

Eudox. The reckning is easye; but in this accoumpte, by your leave, (me thinkes) you are deceaved, for in this somme of the composition monye ye counte the landes of the undertakers of that province, whoe are, by theyr graunte from the Queene, to be free from all such impositions whatsoever, ex-

cepting theyr onelye rent, which enough.

Ires. Ye say true, I did soe; b 20s. for every plowland I ment to ducted out of that rent due upcher Majestie, which is noe hinde charge at all more to her Majes nowe is, for all that rent which sof them, she putteth foorthe aga mayntenaunce of the Presidency charge wherof it doth scarcely defined in this account to that characteristic presidency, and also of 1000 sould

shal be mayntayned.

Endox. It should be well, if brought to that. But nowe whe have your thousand men garrison Iren. I would have 100 of the

Irea. I would have 100 of the:
the Baintree where is a most fit
onely to defend all that side of the
from forrayne invasion, but also
all occasions of troubles, to which
trey, being soe remote, is very sul
surely heere also would be plan
towne, having both a verye good
plentifull fishing, and the lande
readye escheated to her Majestie, l

kepte from her by a ragtayle proclaymeth himselfe the bastan

the Earle of Clancare, being ca Mac Cartye, whom it is meete to cutt of; for whensoever the Earle all those landes after him are to her Majestie: he is like to me stirre there, though of himselfe of yet through supportaunce of s whoe lye in the winde, and lool fall of that inheritaunce. Anothe I have placed at Castell-Ma' should keepe all Desmonde and it answereth them both most co Also about Kilmore in the county

would I have placed 200, the wibreake that nest of theeves there

sweare equallie both to the count

cricke, and also the countie of Corhundred would I have lye at Cor to comaunde the towne, as also to for any forreyne occasion: I Waterford, would I place 200, for reasons, and also for other privathat are noe less important. Me this side of Arlo, neere to Moscowhich is the countrey of the Bou Kill-Patricke, I would have 200 Kill-Patricke, I would have 200 Garrisoned, which should scoure White Knightes countrey and Moscrie White, by which place

I VIEW OF THE PRESENT STATE OF IRELAND.

theeves doe lye, which convaye lithes from all Mounster downeardes Tippararye, and the English om the English Pale also up unto wherof they use to make a common sides that, ere long I doubt that so Tippararye it selfe will neede agth in it, which were good to be ye before the evill fall, that is ome expected: And thus you see rrisons placed.

I see it right well, but lett me

I see it right well, but lett me ou) by the way aske you the ye in those citives of Mounster, aterford and Corcke, ye rather isons then in all thothers in For they may thinke themselves reat wronge to be see charged he rest.

will tell you: those two cittyes, he rest, doe offer an in-gate to the most fittye, and also the inhabithem are most ill affected to the vernment and most frendes to the si; but yet, because they shall exceptions to this that they are ove all the rest, I will also laye an the others likewise; for indeede reason that the corporat townes, reate fraunchises and privileges Majestie, and living therby not but drawing to them the wealth Lande, should live soe free as not trakers of the burthen of this or theyr owne safetye, specially the of trouble, and seing all the ened; and therfore I will thus mall ratablye, according to theyr towardes theyr maintenaunce, the: Majestie may (yf she please) of the charge of the rest, and wardes her other costes, or els e charge of the Presidencye in the

		100	Wexford .			25
		50	Drogheda .			25
		50	Rosse			25
		50	Dundalke .			10
nois'	bе	10	Mollingiare			10
		10 '	Newrye			10
		10	Trimme .			10
٥.		10	Ardye			10
		10	Kells			10
		10	Dublin			100
		10				
		25	Somme	٠	٠	580

It is easye, Irenœus, to lave a u any towne, but to fore-see howe

the same may be answered and defrayed is the cheifest parte of good advisement.

Iren. Surely this charge which I putt upon them I knowe to be see reasonable as that it will not much be felte; for the porte townes that have benefitt of shipping may cutt it easelye of theyr trading, and all inland townes of theyr corne and cattell: nether doe I see, but since to them speciallye the benefitt of peace doth redounde, that they speciallye should beare the burthen of theyr safegarde and defence, as we see all the townes of the Lowe-Countreyes doe cutt upon themselves an excise of all thinges towarde the mayntenaunce of the warre that is made in theyr behalfe, to which though these are not to be compared in riches, yet are they to be charged according to theyr povertye.

Eudor. But nowe that you have thus sett up these forces of souldiours, and provided well (as ye suppose) for theyr paie, yet there remayneth to fore-cast how they may be vittayled, and where purveyaunce therof may be made; for in Ireland it selfe I cannot see allmost howe any thing is to be had for them, being allreadye so pitifully wasted as it is with this shorte time of warre.

Iren. For the first two yeares indeede it is needefull that they be vittayled out of England throughlye, from halfe yeare to halfe yeare, aforehand, which time the English Pale shall not be burthened at all, the but shall have time to recovere itselfe; and Mounster also, being nowe reasonablye well stored, will by that time, (yf God send reasonable weather) be throughlye well furnished to supplye a greate parte of that charge, for I knowe there is greate plentye of corne sente over sea from thence, the which yf they might have sale for at home, they would be gladd to have monye soe neere hand, specially yf they were straightly restrayned from transporting of it. unto also there wil be a greate helpe and furtheraunce given in the putting forward of husbandrye in all meete places, as hecreafter shall in due place appeare. But hereafter, when thinges shall growe unto a better strengthe, and the countrey be replenished with corne, as in shorte space it would, yf it be well followed, for the countrey people themselves are great plowers, and small spenders of corne, then would I wish that there should be good store of howese and magasins erected in all those greate place of garrison, and in all great cownes, as we for the vittayling of souldiours and shippe as for all occasions of suddayne services, as also for preventing of all times of dearthe and scarcitye; and this wante is much to be complayned of in England above all other countreyes, whoe, trusting to much to the usuall blessing of the earthe, doe never forecast any such harde seasons, nor any such suddayne occasions as these troublous times may everye day bring foorth, when it will be to late to gather provision from abrode, and to bring it perhaps from farre for the furnishing of shippes or souldiours, which peradventure may neede to be presently employed, and whose wante may (which

God forbidd) happyle hazzarde a kingdome, Eudox. Indeede the wante of these magasins of vittayls, I have hearde oftentimes complayned of in England, and wondred at in other countreyes, but that is nothing nowe to our purpose; but as for these garrisons which ye have nowe soc strongly plaunted throughout all Ireland, and every place swarming with souldiours, shall there be noe end of them? For nowe thus being (me seemes) I doe see rather a countrey of warre then of peace and quiet, which ye earst pretended to worke in Ireland; for if you bringe all thinges to that quietness which you sayd, what neede then to mayntayne soe great forces as you have charged upon it?

Iren. I will unto you, Eudoxus, in privitye discover the drifte of my purpose: I meane (as I tolde you) and doe well hope heereby both to settell an eternall peace in that countrey, and also to make it verye profitable to her Majestie, the which I see must be brought in by a stronge hand, and soe continued, till it runne in a stedfast course of government, the which in this sorte will neither be difficile nor daungerous; for the souldiour being once brought in for the service into Ulster, and having subdued it and Connaughte, I will not have him to laye downe his armes any more, till he have effected that which I purpose; that is, first to have this generall composition for the mayntenaunce of these throughout all the realme, in regarde of the troublous times, and daylye daunger which is threatned to this realme by the King of Spayne: And therupon to bestowe all my souldiours in such sorte as I have done, that noe parte of all that realme shal be able or dare soe much as to quinche. Then will I eftsones bring in my reformation, and therupon establish such an order of government as I may thinke meetest for the good of that realme, which

being once established, and into a right way, I doubt 1 runne on fayrely. And the ever seeke to swarre aside not be able without forrey to remove, as you your sethope) in your own reason rewhich yf ever it shall apher Majestie at pleasure to fer garrisons, and turne her purse, or yf she will ne doe (which I would rather she have a number of bravallwayes readye for any owill imploye them unto, garrisons with fresh ones the mayntenaunce of whe more charge to her Majestie

more charge to her Majestic realme is; for all the revenuch more, she spendeth, e peaceable times that are t nowe stand. And in time is nowe surelye every seave spendeth infinite treasure purpose.

Endox. I perceave you

nowe that you have thus waye unto your reformatio the people soe humbled at they will and must yeelde to that shal be given them. I to understand the same; ginning you promised to howe to redresse all those and abuses, which you she state of government, which there, as in the lawes, culigion: wherin I would gliwhether, insteede of those I have newe lawes made? for

that I see, you may doe whe Iren. I see, Eudoxus, th member our first purpose, a continue the course theref, to speake of Lawes, since with them, I doe not think though nowe it be in the Prince to change all the lenewe; for that should be trouble and confusion, as wel now dwelling there and to be in the Irish. For the Engl trayned up allwayes in the ment, will hardly be enured and the Irish will better be English, then the English government. Therfore sin government. nowe applye lawes titt for t

stitution of common-wealthes it, we will applye the people, and to the lawes, as it most convey be. The lawes therfore we ll abide in the same sorte that both Common Lawe and States uch defectes in the Common inconveniences in the Statutes, seginning we noted and as men of ht shall advise, may be chaunged ther newe Actes and ordinaunces Parliament there confirmed: As yalls of Pleas of the Crowne, and htes between partyes, colourable ces, accessaryes, &c.

But howe will those be redressed

But howe will those be redressed nent, when as the Irish which in Parliament (as you sayd), e themselves agaynst them? hat may nowe be well avoyded:

that soe many Free-holders of hal be established, they togither esses of townes, and such other h-men as may be preferred to be of the Shire, and such like, wil be arde and counter-poise the rest; being nowe broughte more in awe, nore easely submitt to any such a sa shal be for the good of h, and that realme generally.

, and that realme generallye.
You say well for the increase of
s, for theyre numbers will hereby
e augmented; but howe shall it
gh the higher howse, which will
t all of Irish?
Marye, that also may well be re-

the example of that which I have s done in the like case by King ie Thirde (as I remember), whoe, itly bearded and crossed by the the Cleargye, they being then by the Lordes Abbots and others, to d to stronge for him, soe as he for theyr frowardness order and singes as he desired, was advised ut his writtes to certayne Gentelle best abilitye and trust, entitling in Barron-, to serve and sitt as the next Parliament. By which had soe many Barrons in his Pars were able to waigh downe the and theyr frendes; the which Barsay, were not afterwardes Lordes, arronetts, as sundrye of them doe e the name. And by the like delajestie may nowe likewise courbe orte these Irish and unruly e Lordes all good proceedinges.

Eudox. It seemeth noe less then for reforming of all those inconvenient statutes that ye noted in the beginning, and redressing of all those evil customes, and lastly, for settling sound religion amongest them: me thinkes ye shall not neede any more to goe over those particulars agayne, which you mentioned, nor any other which might besides be remembred, but to leave all to the reformation of such Parliamentes, in which, by the good care of the Lord Deputye and Counsell they may all be amended. Therfore nowe you may come to that generall reformation which you spake of, and bringing in of that establishment, by which you sayd all men should be contayned in dutye ever after, without the terrour of warlicke forces, or violent wrestinge of thinges by sharpe punnishments.

Iren. I will soe at your pleasure, the which (me seemes) can by noe meanes be

better plotted then by example of such other realmes as have bene annoyed with like evills, that Ireland nowe is, and useth still to be. And first in this our realme of England, it is manifest, by reporte of the Chronicles and auncient writers, that it was greatlye infested with robbers and out-lawes, which lurked in woodes and fast places, whence they used oftentimes to breake foorthe into the highe wayes, and sometimes into the small villages to robbe and spoyle, For redress wherof it is written that King Allured, or Alfred, who then raigned, did devide the realme into shires, and the shires into hundrethes, and the hundrethes into rapes or wapentakes, and the wapentakes into tithinges: Soe that tenn tithinges made an hundrethe, and five made a lathe or wapentake, of which tenn, ech one was bounde for another, and the eldest or best of them, whom they called the Tithingman or Burseholder that is, the eldest pledge, became suretye for all the rest. See that yf any one of them did starte into any undutiful action, the Burseholder was bounde to bringe him foorthe, whoe joyning cft-sones with all his tithing, would followe that loose person through all places, till they broughte him in. And yf all that tithing fayled, then all that lath was charged for that tythinge, and if that lath failed, then all the hundred was demaunded for them; and yf the hundred, then the shire, whoe, joyning eft-sones togither, would not rest till they had counds out and delivered in that undutiful fellowe which was not amenable to lawe. And herin it seemeth, that that good Suxon Kin

followed the Counsell of Jethro to Moyses. whoe advised him to devide the people into hundredes, and to sett Captaynes and wise men of trust over them, which should take the charge of them, and ease him of that burthen. And soe did Romulus (as you may reade) devide the Romaynes into tribes, and the tribes into Centuries or hundreds. By this ordinaunce the King brought this realme of England, (which before was most troublesome) into that quiett state, that noe one badd person could starte but he was straight taken holde of by those of his owne tithing, and theyr Burseholder, whoe being his neghbour or next kinsman were privye to all his wayes, and looked narrowlye into his life. The which institution (yf it were observed in Ireland) would woorke that effecte which it did then in England, and keepe all men within the compass of dutye and obedience.

Eudox. This is contrarye to that you sayde before; for, (as I remember,) you sayd there was a greate disproportion betwene England and Ireland, see as the lawes which were fitting for one would not fitt the other. Howe comes it then, nowe, that you would transferre a principall institution from England to Ireland?

This lawe was made not by a Nor-Iren. man Conquerour, but by a Saxon King, at what time England was very like to Ireland, as nowe it standes: for it was (as I tolde you) greatlye annoyed with robbers and outlawes, which troubled the whole state of the realme, everye corner having a Robin Hoode in it, that kepte the woodes, and spoyled all passagers and inhabitauntes, as Ireland nowe hath; soe as, me seemes, this ordinaunce would fitt verye well, and bring them all into

Then, when you have thus tithed Eudox.the comunaltye, as ye say, and set Burse-holders over them all, what would ve doe when ye come to the gentellmen? would ye holde the same course?

Iren. Yea, marye, most speciallye; this you must knowe, that all the Irish allmost boast themselves to be gentellmen, noe less then the Welsh; for yf he can derive himselfe from the head of a septe, as most of them can, (and they are experte by theyr Bardes,) then he holdeth himselfe a gentellman, and therupon scorneth eftsones to woorke, or use any handye labour, which he sayeth is the life of a peasaunte or churle; but thencefoorth becometh either an horseboy, or a stokaghe to some kearne, enuring | hold it meets that there were onely

shall be kept in some order, but all shall shifte for themselves, and fa occupation. And moreover it is a use amongest some of theyr best ge sonnes, that soe soone as they are a theyre weapons, they straight a themselves three or fowre strag kerne, with whom wandring a wi up and downe the countrey, takin meate, he at last falleth into so occasion that shal be offred, whi once made knowen, he is the counted a man of woorthe, in whom couradge; wherupon there drawe many other like loose yong mer stirring him up with encouradgem voke him shortly to flatt rebellion: happenes not only e sometimes in th of theyr gentellmen, but oftentime theyr nobellmen, speciallye of th sonnes, as there are fewe without them. For they are not a hamed

acknowledge them, but also boast and use them in such secrett service

themselves will not be seene in as

theyr enemyes, to spoyle theyr n

to oppress and crush some of their stubburne free-holders, which are I

tardes of the Lord Roches there are

Two s

able to theyr bad willes.

himselfe to his weapon, and to hitrade of stealing, (as they counte

that yf a gentellman, or any woorthy them, have any children, the eldes

in Mounster whom he doth not on tenaunce but also privilye maynta releive mightely against his tenaun other is there of the Earle of Clan Desmonde, and many others in ma places. Endox. Then it seemes that th aunce of tithing them by the pol onelye fitt for the gentellmen, but

the nobellmen, whom I would have to have bene of soc honorable m that they should not neede such kinde of being bounde to theyr aller who should rather have helde in at all others from undutifulness then be forced thereunto themselves.

Iren. Yet soe it is, Eudoxus:

because the nobellmen cannot be titl being not many tithinges in them. because a Burscholder over them sl onlye be a greate indignitye, but also to add more power to them then the or to make one the commaunder of

them, and one bounde for another. y, yf any shall swarve, his suretyes or safegarde of theyr bandes either im in, or seeke to serve upon him: ides this, I would wish them all to be to her Majestie, which they never re, but at theyr first creation; and th would sure contayne them greative, weache of it bring them to shorter ance, for God useth to punnish perharpelye. See I reade, that in the of Edwarde the Second, and also of the Seaventh, (when the times were roken) that there was a corporat oth f all the lordes and best gentell-men, ye to the King, which nowe is noe dfull, because many of them are susto have taken another othe privilve badd purposes, and therupon to have d the Sacrament, and bene sworne to a which they thinke bindeth them more eyr alleageance to theyr Prince, or theyr countrey. This tithing of that common-

and taking suretyes of lordes and sen, I like verye well, but that it my troublesome: should it not be as ave them all booked, and the lordes tell-men to take all the meaner sorte emselves? for they are best able to hem in, whensoever any of them

out.

This indeede (Eudoxus) hath bene and yet is a common order amongest have all the people booked by the degentellmen, but yet it is the woorst at ever was devised; for by this of men all the inferiour sorte are under the comaunde of theyr lordes, ed to followe them into any action wer. Nowe this you are to underhat all the rebellions that you see ne to time happen in Ireland are not and captaynes of countreyes, upon willful obstinacye agaynst the goat, which whensoever they will enter ey drawe with them all theyr people allowers, which thinke themselves to goe with them, because they have them and undertaken for them. And the reason that ye have fewe such coasions here in England, by reason noblemen, however they should to be ill disposed, should have noe ande at all over the comunaltye, dwelling under them, because that man standeth uppon himselfe, and

buildeth his fortunes upon his owne fayth and tirme assuraunce: the which this manand thine asstraince: the winch this manner of tithing the polls will woorke also in Ireland. For by this the people are broken into many small partes, like litle streames, that they cannot easely come togither into one head, which is the principall regarde that is to be had in Ireland to keepe them from growing to such a head, and adhering unto great men.

Eudox. But yet I can not see howe this can be well brought, without doing great wrong to the noblemen there; for at the conquest of that realme, those great seg-nioryes and lordships were given them by the King, that they should be the stronger agaynst the Irish, by the multitude of followers and tenauntes under them: all which hold theyr tenementes of them by fealtye, and such services, whereby they are (by the first graunt of the King) made bounde unto them, and tyed to rise out with them into all occasions of service. And this I have often hearde, that when the Lord Deputye hath raysed any generall hostinges, the noblemen have claymed the leading of them, by graunte from the Kinges of England under the Greate Seale exhibited; soe as the Deputyes would not refuse them to have the leading of them, or, yf they did, they would soe woorke, as none of theyr followers should rise foorthe to the hosting.

You say verye true; but will you fruite of these grauntes? I have when these lordes have had the Iren. see the knowen leading of theyr owne followers under them to the generall hosting, that they have for the same cutt upon every plowland within theyr countrey 40s, or more, wherebye some of them have gathered above 7 or 800%, and others much more, into theyr purse, in lieu wherof they have gathered unto themselves a nomber of loose kearne out of all partes, which they have carryed foorth with them, to whom they never gave pennye of enter-taynement, allowed by the countrey or forced by them, but let them feede upon the countreyes, and extort upon all men where they come; for that people will never aske better entertaynement then to have a colour of service or employment given them, by which they will poll and spoyle see outragiously, as the verye Enemye can not doe much woorse: and they also sometimes turne to the Enemyes.

Eudox. It seemes the first intent of these grauntes was suaynet the Irish, which nowe some of them use sgaynet the Queene be selfe. But nowe what remodye is there selfe.

this? Or howe can these grauntes of the Kinges be avoyded, without wronging of those lordes which had those landes and

Indes in the state of the state grauntes from the Kinges by which these landes were given them, have sithence be-stowed the most parte of them amongest theyr kinsfolkes, as every lorde perhaps in his time hath given one or other of his principall cas-tells to his yonger sonne, and other to others, as largely and as amplye as they were given to him; and others they have sold, and others they have sold, and others they have bought, which were not in theyr first graunte, which nowe nevertheless they bring within the compass therof, and take and exacte upon them, as upon their first demeanes, all those kinde of services, yes and the verye wilde Irish exactions, as Coignye and Liverye, for him, and such like, by which they poll and utterly undoe the poore tenauntes and freeholders unto them, which either through ignoraunce knowe not theyr tenures, or through greatness of theyr newe lordes dare not challenge them; yea, and some lordes of countreyes also, as greate ones as themselves, are nowe by strong hand brought under them, and made theyr vassalls. As for example Arondell of Stronde in the Countye of Corcke, whoe was aunciently a greate lorde, and was able to spend 3500L by the yeare, as appeareth by good Recordes, is nowe become the Lord Barryes man, and doth to him all the services which are due unto her Majestie. For reformation of all which, it were good that a commission should be graunted foorth under the Great Seale, as I have seene once recorded in the old counsell booke of Mounster; It was sent foorthe in the time of Sir William Drurye unto persons of speciall trust and judgement to enquire throughout all Ireland, beginning with one countye first, and see resting a while till the same were settled, by the verlicte of a sounde and substantiall jurye, how everye man holdeth his landes, of whom, and by what tenure, soe that everye one should be admitted to shewe and exhibite what right he hath, and by what services he holdeth his land, whether in cheif or in socadge, or in knightes service, or howe else soever. upon would appeare, first howe all those greate English lordes doe clayme those great services, what segnioryes they usurpe, what wardeships they take from the Queene, what landes of hers they conceale: and then howe those Irish captaynes of countreyes have encroched upon the Queenes fr tenauntee, howe they have tenures of them from English Irish Tanistrie, and defeated h all the rightes and dutyes accrewe to her therout, liveryes, mariadges, fines of al manye other comodityes; wh kepte and concealed from her l value of 60,000L yearely, I da in all Ireland, by that which I countye.

Eudox. This, Irenseus, daungerous commission, and n up all the Irish into rebellion, that they have nothing to shew landes which thoy holde, but th would rather drawe them ther landes to be thus drawen away

Iren. Nether should theyr h away from them, nor the utter tages enforced agaynst them: discretion of the commissione made knowen unto them, that Majesties meaning to use a tremitye, but onely to reduce order of English lawe, and make theyr landes of her Majestie, a her her due services, which the of those landes which were at of her. And that they should : be thrust out, but also have grauntes of theyr landes nowe : from her Majestie, soe as they s foorth holde them rightfullye nowe usurpe most wrongfullye; all I would wish, that in al countreyes there were some lar her Majesties free disposition ! ner majesties free disposition i contaying of the rest, and them with English inhabitau tomes, that knowledge might si them, and of all theyr doings manner of practize or conspirate had in hand amongest them, but be given therof by one meanes

theyr practises prevented.

Eudox. Trulye neither can nor yet the Irish lords, think wronged, nor hardlye dealt w to have that indeede which is n owne at all, but her Majesti given to them with such equal (then they are, and also her Maj frauded of her right utterlye; for grace in a prince, to take that wiwhich is absolutely her owne. T

we'll satisfyed, and as for the great hich had such grauntes made them at the Kinges of England, it was in rehat they should keepe out the Irish, and the Kinges right, and his subjectes: but seing that, insteede of defending them, abbe and spoyle them, and, insteede of gout the Irish, they doe not onelye the Irish theyr tenauntes in those and thrust out the English, but also hemselves become mere Irish, with ng with them, fostring with them, abining with them agaynst the Queene; eason is there but that those grauntes wiledges should be either revoked, or at duced to the first intention for which rere graunted? For sure in myne they are more sharply to be chastised armed then the rude Irish, which, being wilde at the first, are nowe become hat more civill, when as these from a sere growen to be wilde and meere

Indeede as you say, Eudoxus, these sde a sharper reformation then the trish, for they are much more stubborne, sobedient to lawe and government, then ah be, and more malicious to the Engst daylye are sent over.

S.E. Is it possible I pray you? Howe

it to pass, and what may be the reason

Marye! they say that the lande is onely by right, being first conquered by smeestours, and that they are wronged newe English mens intruding therunto, they call Alloonagh with as greate reas they would rate a dogge. And for one of theyr auncestours were in times when they were civill and incorrupted) as and Deputyes of the lande, they thinke he like authoritye should be given to and the charge of the realme left in handes; which, for that they see it nowe rise disposed, and that trust not given (which theyr auncestours had) they themselves greatly indignifyed and disland thereby growe both discontented adutifull.

hearde, that English-Irish there should the then the wilde Irish: Lord! howe then the wilde Irish: Lord! howe then the wilde Irish: Lord! howe that countrey alter mens natures! It for nothing (I perceave) that I have that the Counsell of England thinke it do policie to have that realme reformed, and with English, least they should a undutifull as the Irish, and become

much more daungerous: as appeareth by the example of the Lacies in the time of Edward the Second, which you spoke of, that shooke of theyr alleageaunce to theyr naturall Prince, and turned to the Scott (Edward le Bruce), devising to make him King of Ireland.

Noe times have bene without badd men: but as for that purpose of the Counsell of England, which ye spake of, that they should keepe that realme from reformation, I thinke they are most lewdly abused, for theyr great carefulness and carnest endevours doe witness the contrarye. Neither is it the nature of the countrey to alter mens manners, but the badd myndes of them, whoe having bene brought up at home under a straight rule of dutye and obedience, being allwayes restrayned by sharpe penaltyes from lewde behaviour, soe soone as they come thither, where they see lawes more slacklye tended, and the harde restraynt which they were used unto nowe slacked, they growe more loose and careless of theyr dutye: and as it is the nature of all men to love libertye, soe they become flatt libertines, and fall to all licentiousness, more boldly daring to disobey the lawe, through the presumption of favour and frendship, then any Irish dare.

Eudox. Then yf that be see, (me thinkes)

Eudox. Then yf that be soc. (me thinkes) your late advisement was every evill, wherby you wished the Irish to be sowed and sprinckled with the English, and in all the Irish countreyes to have English plaunted amongest them, for to bring them to English fashions, since the English be sooner drawen to the Irish then the Irish to the English: for as you sayd before, if they must runne with the streame, the greater number will carrye away the less: Therfore (me seemes) by this reason it should be better to parte the Irish and English, then to mingle them togither.

Iren. Not see, Eudoxus; for where there is noe good stay of government, and strong ordinaunces to holde them, there indeede the fewer will followe the more, but where there is due order of discipline and good rule, there the better shall goe formost, and the woorse shall followe. And therfore nowe, since Ireland is full of her owne nation, that may not be rooted out, and somewhat stored with English allreadye, and more to be, I thinke it best by an union of manners, and conformitye of myndes, to bring them to be one people, and to putt away the dislikefull conceit both of the one, and the other, which will be by now meanes better then by this substantingling of them: That neither all the English.

by translating of them and scattring of them by small numbers amongest the English, not onely to bring them by dailye conversation unto better liking of ech other, but also to make both of them less able to hurte. And therfore when I come to the tithing of them, I will tithe them one with another, and for the most parte will make an Irish man the tithing man, wherby he shall take the less exception to parcialitye, and yet be the more tyed thereby. But when I come to the Head-borough, which is the head of the Lathe, him will I make an English man, or an Irish man of noe small assuraunce : as also when I come to appoynte the Alderman, that is the head of that hundred, him will I surely choose to be an English man of speciall regarde, that may be a staye and piller of all the bouroughes

be a buye and plant of the policy of the pol hundreth villages, or as some say an hundreth plowlandes, being the same which the Saxons called a Cantred; the which cantred, as I finde recorded in the blacke booke of Ireland, did contayne 30 Villatas terre, which some call, quarters of land, and every Villata can maintayne 400 cowes in pasture, and the 400 cowes to be devided into fowre heardes, so as none of them shall come neere another: every Villata containeth 17 plowlands, as is there sett downe. And by that which I have reade of a bourough it signifieth a free towne, which had a principall officer, called a head-bourough, to become ruler, and undertaker for all the dwellers under him, having for the same fraunchises and priviledges graunted them by the King, wherefit was called a free bourough, and of the lawyers Franciplegium.

Iren. Both that which you say, Eudoxus, is true, and yet that which I say not untrue; for that which ye spake of deviding the countrey into hundreds was a division of the landes of the realme, but this which I tell, was of the people, whoe were thus devided by the poll: soe that an hundreth in this sense signifieth an hundreth pledges, which were under the comaunde and assuraunce of theyr alderman, the which (as I suppose) was also called a wapentake, see named of touching the wapen or sparke of theyr alderman, and swearing to followe him faythfullye and six needs to be feared serve theyr Prince trulye. But others thinke Princes service; and that a wapentake was 10 hundreds or bouroughs: Likewise a bouroughe, as I here the assembling of

use it, and as the old laws still as bourough towne, as they need to a fraunchise towne, but a mayor hundreth free persons, theden bourough or (as ye say) from Borh in old Saxon signifyth suretye, and yet it is see used w speaches, as Chancer saveth borrowe, that is for assurannegat

Euder. I concerve the difference that ye have thus deride into those tithinges and hundred you have them see preserved an For people doe often change inges, and some must dye, whi doe growe up unto strength of

become men.

Iren. These hundreds I wool Iren. These hundreds I wast to assemble themselves once with theyr pledges, and to a selves before the justices of the shall be thereunto appoyined, to and numbred, to see what chappened since the years beforeces to supplye of those years to be overlooked and wiscond of which are coverlooked and wiscond of which are be overlooked and viewed of w and demeanour they be, see as be taken for them, and they p of some tithing: of all which al is to be taken, and bookes mad cordingly.

Eudox. Nowe (me thinkes are to be warned to take heed wares ye fall into that inconve you formerly found faulte will namely, that by this booking doe not gather them unto a ne having broken theyr former not agayne unite them more st everye alderman, having all the of his hundred under his co thinkes) yf he be ill disposed, his companie unto any evill likewise, by this assembling of yeare unto theyr alderman by takes, take heede least ye also casion and meanes to practise

any conspiracye, Iren. Neither of both is to for the aldermen and headbor not be such men of power and of themselves, being to be chos as neede to be feared: Neither, his hundred at his communde for Princes service; and also soons r therof to be doubted, seing it is a justice of peace, or some high be thereunto appoynted: Soe as unges there can noe perill ensue, me assuraunce of peace and great hey are thereby withdrawen from 5, and subjected to theyr Prince. or the better breaking of those septs, which (I tolde you) was greatest strengthes of the Irish, it should doe very well to renewe tute in Ireland that was made in of England (in the raigne of e Fourth), by which it was comit wheras all men then used to be e name of theyr septs, according to all nations, and had noe surnames from thencefoorth ech one should imselfe a severall surname, either or facultye, or of some qualitye or mynd, or of the place where he as everye one should be distinom the other, or from the most by they shall not onely not depend ead of theyr sept, as nowe they to shall in shorte time learne quite is Irish nation. And heerewithall so wish all the Oes and Macks. heads of the septs have taken to s, to be utterlye forbidden and ex-; for that the same being an old some say) first made by O-Brien engthning of the Irish, the abroof will as much enfeeble them. I like this ordinaunce verye well; hat ye have thus devided and disthem, what other order will ye eyr manner of life? For all this, rhaps it may keepe them from and disloyaltye, yet will it not from theyr barbarisme and sahe next thing that I will doe

pointe to everye one, that is not of his free-holde, a certayne trade lich he shall finde himselfe fittest, thought ablest, the which trade counde to followe, and live onely All trades therfore, it is to be unre to be of three kindes, manuall, l. and mixt. The first contaynas needeth exercise of bodylye the perfourmannee of theyr proe other consisting onelye of the witt and reason; the third sort, odelye labour, and partly of witt, ng most of industrye and carefullie first sorte be all handycraftes

and husbandrye labour. Of the second be all sciences, and those which are called the liberall artes. Of the thirde is marchandize and chafferie, that is, buying and selling; and without all these three there is noe commonwealth can allmost consist, or at the least be perfect. But that wretched realme of Ireland wanteth the most principall of them, that is, the intellectuall; therfore in seeking to reforme her state it is specially to be looked unto. But because of husbandrye, which supplyeth unto us all necessarye thinges for foode, wherby we cheifly live, therfore it is first to be provided for. The first thing therfore that we are to drawe these newe tithed men unto, ought to be husbandrye. First, because it is the most easye to be learned, needing onely the labour of the bodye; next, because it is most generall and most needefull; then, because it is most naturall; and lastlye, because it is most enemy to warre, and most hateth unquiettness: As the Poet sayeth,

---- ' bella execrata colonis : '

for husbandrye being the nurse of thrift, and the daughter of industrye and labour, detesteth all that may woorke her hinderaunce, and distroye the travell of her handes, whose hope is all her lives comforte unto the plough: therfore all those Kearne, Stokaghs, and Horseboyes are to be driven and made to employe that ablenesse of bodye, which they were wonte to use to thefte and villauye, hencefoorth to labour and industrye. In the which, by that time they have spente but a litle payne, they will finde such sweetness and happy contentment, that they will after-wardes hardly be hayled away from it, or drawen to theyr woonted lewde life in theeverye and rogerye. And being thus once entred thereunto, they are not onely to be countenaunced and encouradged by all good meanes, but also provided that theyr children after them may be brought up likewise in the same, and succeede in the roomes of theyr fathers. To which end there is a Statute in Ireland allreadye well provided, which com-aundeth that all the sonnes of husbandmen shal be trayned up in theyr fathers trade,

but it is (God wote) very alenderlye executed. Eudox. But doe you not counte, in this trade of husbandrye, pasturing of cattell, and keeping of theyr cowes, for that is reckued as a parte of husbandrye?

Iren. I knowe it is, and needfully e to be used, but I doe not meane to allowe any e those able bodyes, which are able to

bodely labour, to follows a few a cowes grasing, but such impotent persons, as being unable for strong travell, are yet able to drive cattell to and fro the pasture; for this kesping of cowes is of it selfe a verye idle life, and a fitt nurserye of a theefe. For which cause ye remember that I disliked the Irish manner of keeping Bolyes in Sommer upon the mountaynes, and living after that savadge sorte. But yf they will algates feede many cattell, or keepe them on the mountaynes, lett them make some townes neere the mountaynes side, where they may dwell togither with neghbours, and be conversaunt in the viewe of the world. And, conversaint in the views of the world.

to say truth, though Ireland be by nature counted a great soyle of pasture, yet had I rather have fewer cowes kept, and men better mannered, then to have such huge encrease of cattell, and noe encrease of good condicions. I would therfore wish that there were made some ordinaunces amongest them, that whosoever keepeth twentye kine should keep a plough going, for otherwise all men would fall to pasturing, and none to husbandrye, which is a great cause of this dearth nowe in England, and a cause of the usuall stealthes nowe in Ireland: For looke into all coun-treyes that live in such sorte by keeping of cattell, and you shall finde that they are both verye barbarous and uncivill, and also greatly given to warre. The Tartarians, the Muscovites, the Norwayes, the Gothes, the Armenians, and many others doe witness the same. And therefore since nowe we purpose to drawe the Irish from desire of warres and tumults, to the love of peace and civilitye, it is expedient to abridge theyr great custome of hearding, and augment theyr more trade of tillage and husbandrye. As for other occupations and trades, they neede not to be enforced to, but every man bounde onelye to followe one that he thinkes himselfe aptest for. For other trades of artificers wil be occupied for verye necessitye, and constrayned use of them; and soe likewise will marchangles for the same of marchandise for the gayne therof; but learning, and bringing up in liberall sciences, will not come of it selfe, but must be drawen on with straight lawes and ordinaunces: And therfore it were meete that such an acte were ordayned, that all the sonnes of lordes, gentellmen, and such others as are able to bring them up in learning, should be trayned up therin from theyr child-hoode. And for that end everye parrish should be forced to keepe one pettye school-master, adjoyning to the parish church, to be the more in viewe, which

should bring up theyr children in mentes of letters ; and that, in w or barronye, they should ke school-master, which should in grammer, and in the princi to whom they should be com theyr youth to be discipline will in shorte time growe up conversation, that both the rh theyr former rudeness in whobredd, and also the parentes the example of theyr your chi the fowleness of theyr owns viour compared to theyrs: for that wonderfull power in it sel soften and temper the most ster nature,

Eudox. Surelye I am of yo nothing will bring them from life sooner then learning and d after the knowledge and feare therfore I doe still expect, the come therunto, and sett some or tion of religion, which is first to according to the saying of (seeke the kingdome of heaven,

ousnes therof.'

Iren. I have in mynde s lett me (I pray you) first finis had in hand, wherby all th which shall afterwardes be se may abide the more firmelye, a more diligentlye. Nowe that thus tithed and ordered, ar bound unto some honest trade shal be particularly entred and the tithing booke, yet perhap some stragglers and runnagate of themselves come in and ye to this order, and yet after the of this present warre, and esta garrisons in all strong places of where theyre woonted refuge w suppose there will fewe stand doe, they will shortly be bron eares: But yet afterwardes, of these should swarve, or any a trade should afterwardes n same, according to this institut straggle up and downe the cour in corners amongest theyr fre Carooghs, Bardes, Jesters, an would wish that there were a Pr appointed in everye shire, whit throughly e walks through the balls a donzen or half a series

cowne authoritye, with such paynes as serons should seeme to deserve: for yf he conce taken soe idlye roging, he may she him more lightlye, as with stockes, hike; but yf he be founde agayne soe ag, he may scourge him with whippes, or after which yf he be agayne taken, lett. we see the bitterness of the marshall lawe. The property and relieves of the old rebellion ands by him, that have not either come as bearing once come in, doe breake foorthe and once come in, doe breake foorthe and one cup in Gods name; for it was to them for theyr first guilte, and nowe the consenses, lett

have theyr first desarte, as nowe being unfitt to live in a commonwealth.

Mos. This were a good manner; but me as it is an unnecessarye charge, and unfitt to continue the name or forme of marshall lawe, when as there is a proper allreadye appointed for these turnes, it the sheriff of the shire, whose peculiar it is to walke continuallye up and his baly-wick, as ye would have a mall, to snatche up all those runnagates approfitable members, and to bring them i goale to be punnished for the same. but this may well be spared.

Not soe, me seemes; for though the

have this authoritye of himselfe to up all such stragglers, and imprison , yet shall he not doe soe much good, a marshall shall, whom they shall knowe we power of life and death in such cases, peciallye to be appoynted for them: tayne to the sherriff, the sherriff may erin what he can, and yet the marshall ralke his course besides; for both of may doe the more good, and more re the idle rognes, knowing that though we a watche upon the one, yet he may woon the other. But this proviso is full to be had in this case, that the may not have the like power of life marshall hath, and as heertofore they - bene accustomed; for it is daungerous power of life into the handes of him may have benefitt by the partyes as, of the sayd loose liver have any of his owne, the Sherriff is to seaze on, wherby it hath often come to pass, ome that have not deserved perhaps bent of death, though otherwise perhaps beg have bene for they'r goodes sake

caught up, and carryed straight to the boughe; a thing indeede very pittiful and verye horrible. Therfore by noe meanes I would wish the Sherriff to have such authoritye, nor yet to emprison that loosell till the sessions, for soe all gayles might soone be filled, but to send him to the Marshall, whoe, eftsones finding him faultye, shall give him meete correction, and ridd him away foorthwith.

Eudox. I doe nowe perceave your reason

Eudox. I doe nowe perceave your reason well. But come we nowe to that wherof we carst spake, I mean, to religion and religious men; What order will you sett amongest them?

Iren. For religion little have I to saye, my

selfe being (as I sayd) not professed therin, and it selfe being but one, soe as there is but one waye therin; for that which is true onelye is, and the rest are not at all, yet in planting of religion thus much is needfull to be observed, that it be not sought forcebly to be impressed into them with terrour and sharpe penalties, as nowe is the manner, but rather delivered and intimated with mildeness and gentleness, see as it may not be hated afore it be understood, and theyr Professors dispised and rejected. For this I knowe that the most of the Irish are soe farre from understanding of the popish religion as they are of the protestauntes profession; and yet doe they hate it though unknowen, even for the very hatred which they have of the English and theyr government. Therfore it is expedient that some discreete Ministers of theyr owne countrey-men be first sent amongest them, which by theyr milde persuasions and instructions, as also by theyr sober life and conversation, may drawe them first to understand, and afterwardes to embrace, the doctrine of theyr salvation; for yf that the auncient godly Fathers, which first converted them, beinge infidells, to the faith, were able to drawe them from Intidelitye and paganisme to the true beleefe in Christ, as St. Pattricke, and St. Columbi howe much more easelie shall the godlye teachers bring them to the true understanding of that which they allready profess? wherin it is greate wonder to see the oddes which is between the zeale of Popish preistes, and the Ministers of the Gospell; for they spare not to come out of Spayne, from Rome, and from Rhemes, by long toyle and daungerous travell hither, where they knowe perrill of death awayteth them, and noe rewarde nor richess is to be founde, onely to draw the people to the Church of Rome; wherea wome of our idell Ministers, baving a way of or credit and estimation thereby opened unit

them, and having the livinges of the countrev offered them, without paynes, and without perrill, will neither for the same, nor for any love of God, nor zeale of religion, nor for all the good they might doe by winning of see many sowies to God, be drawen foorth from theyr warme nests and theyr sweete loves side to looke out into Godes harvest, which is even readye for the sickle, and all the fieldes yellowe long agoe: doubtless those good old godly Fathers will (I feare me) rise up in the Daye of Judgement to condemne them.

Endox. Surelye, it is great pittye, Ireneus, that there are none chosen out of the Ministers of England, good, sober, and discreet men, which might be sent over thither to teache and instructe them, and that there is not as much care had of theyr sowles as of theyr bodyes; for the care of

both lyeth upon the Prince.

Iren. Were there never soe many Iren. Were there never soe many sent over they should doe smal good till one enormitye be taken from them, that is, that both they be restrayned from sending theyr yonge men abrode to other Universities beyond the seas, as Rhemes, Doway, Lovayne, and the like, and that others from abrode be restrayned from coming to them; for they lurking secretly in theyr howses and in corners of the countrey doe more hurte and hinderaunce to religion with theyr private persuasions, then all the others can doe good with theyr publicke instructions; and though for these later there be a good statute there ordayned, yet the same is not executed, and as for the former there is noe lawe nor order for theyr restrainte at all.

Eudox. I marvayle it is noe better looked unto, and not only this, but that also which, I remember, you mencioned in your abuses concerning the profitts and revenues of the fugitives in Ireland, which by landes of pretence of certayne colourable conveyaunces are sent continuallye over unto them, to the comforting of them and others agaynst her Majestie, for which heere in England there is good order taken; and whye not then as well in Ireland? For though there be noe statute there enacted therfore, yet might her Majestie, by her onelye prerogative, seaze all the fruits and profitts of those fugitives landes into her handes, till they come over to testifye theyr true alleageaunce.

Iren. Indeede she might soe doe; but the combrous times doe perhaps hinder the regarde therof, and of many other good intentions.

Eudox. But why then d it in peaceable times?

Iren. Leave we that considerations, but process Next care in religion is to payre all the ruinous chur most parte lye even with some that have bene lately urhandsomelye patched, a men doe even shonne th uncomeliness therof; therf that there were order tak builte in some better forms churches of England; for the (assure your selfe) doth grade people to the rever quenting therof, what ever to nice fooles saye,- there seemelye forme and come churche." churche.' And, for see a tinuing them, there should wardens of the gravest men appoynted, as there be he which should take the yes herof, and also of the scho I wished to be builded ne churches; for mayntenauncit were meete that some lande were allotted, sith mains are to be looked for. Eudox. Indeede (me se

soe convenient; but when will ye have your churches Ministers mayntained? (as you sayd) are not su make them a newe gown veelde meete maintenannee dignitie of theyr degree.

Iren. There is noe way but to laye two or thre of untill such time as the coun riche and better inhabited, s tithes and other oblations wangmented and better vale that we have gone thus theyr sortes of trades, and theyre good establishment. please) goe next to some pointes of other publicke concerning the good of the And first I wish former, taken for the cutting downer all paces through woodes, waye of the space of a hundre be layed open in every so the of travellers places to

ad. Next, that bridges were builte all rivers, and all the foordes marred spilte, see as none might pass any other but by those bridges, and everye ge to have a gate and a small gate-be sett theron; wherof this good will that noe night stealthes (which are monlye driven in by-wayes and by de foordes unused of anye but such like) be convayed out of one countrey into ther, as they use, but they must pass by bridges, where they may be either by encountred, or easely tracked, or not red to pass at all, by meanes of those -howses: Also that in all straytes and owe passages, as betwene two bogges, through any deepe foorde, or under any matayne side, there should be some little llage, or wooden castell sett, which ald keepe and communde that strayte, rby any rebell that should come in the atrey might be stopped the waye, or pass a great perill. Moreover, that all highe should be fenced and shutt up on sides, leaving onely fortye idthe for passage, see as none should be to passe but through the highe wave, more easely pursued and encountred, m there shal be noe other waye to drive r stollen cattell but therin, as I formerdeclared. Further, that there should be sundrye convenient places, by the high res, townes appoynted to be builte, the ich should be free Bouroughes, and inorate under Bayliffes, to be by theyr abitaunts well and strongly intrenched, stherwise fenced with gates at each side rof, to be shutt nightlye, like as there is manye places of the English Pale, and all I wayes about it to be stronglye shutt up, that none should passe but through those FRES: To some of which it were good that priviledge of a markett were given, the to strengthen and enable them to Tr defence, for nothing dothe sooner civilitye in anye countreye then re markett townes, by reason that people ring often thither for theyr needes, will be see and learne civill manners of the sort. Besides, there is nothing doth staye and strengthen the countreye such corporate townes, as by proofe in rebellions hathe bene seene; in all when the countreves have swarved, townes have stood stiffe and fast, and good relief to the souldiours in all ions of service. And lastly there doth nothing more enriche any countreye or realme then manye townes; for to them will all the people drawe and bring the fruites of theyr trades, as well to make money of them, as to supplye theyr needefull uses; and the countreymen will also be more industrious in tillage, and rearing all husbandrye comodityes, knowing that they shall have readye sale for them at those townes; and in all those townes should there be convenient Innes erected for the lodging and harbourghing of all travellers, which are now oftentimes spoyled by lodging abrode in weake thatched howses, for wante of such safe places to shrowde themselves in.

Endox. But what profitt shall your markett townes reape of theyr markett, whereas each one may sell theyr corne and cattell abrode in the countrey, and make theyr secrett bargaynes amongest themselves, as nowe I understand they use?

Iren. Indeede, Endoxus, they doe soe, and thereby noe small inconvenience doth arise to the commonwealth; for nowe, when any one hath stollen a cowe or a garron, he may secretly sell it in the countreye without privitye of anye, wheras yf he brought it in the markett towne it would perhaps be knowen, and the theif discovered. Therefore it were good that a straighte ordinaunce were made, that none should buye or sell any cattell but in some open markett (there being nowe markett townes everye where at hand) upon a great penaltye; neither should they likewise buye any come to sell the same agayne, unless it were to make malte therof; for by such engrossing and regrating we see the dearthe that nowe comonly raigneth heere in England to have bene caused. Heereunto also is to be added that good ordinaunce, which I remember was once proclaymed throughout all Ireland, That all men should marke theyr cattell with an open severall marke upon theyr flanckes or buttocks, see as yf they happened to be stollen, they might appeare whose they were, and they which should buye them might therby suspecte the owner, and be warned to abstayne from buying of them of a suspected person with such an unknowen marke.

Eudor. Surely these ordinaunces seeme verye expedient, but speciallye that of free townes, of which I wonder there is such small store in Ireland and that in the first peopling and planting therof they were neglected and omitted.

lected and omitted.

Iren. They were not omitted; for the were, through all places of the count.

convenient, manye good townes seated, which through that inundation of the Irish, which through that munation of the risas, wasted and defaced, of which the ruines are yet in manye places to be seene, and of some noe signe at all remaying, save onelye theyr bare names, but theyr seates are not to be founde.

Eudox. But howe then cometh it to pass, that they have never since recovered, nor their habitations reedifyed, as of the rest which have bene noe less spoyled and wasted? Iren. The cause therof was for that, after theyr desolation, they were begged by gentell-

men of the Kinges, under colour to repayre them and gather the poore reliques of the people agayne togither, of whom having obtayned them, they were see farre from obtayned them, they were see farre from reedifying of them, as that by all meanes they have endevoured to keepe them wast, least that, being repayred, theyre charters might be renewed, and their Burgesses restored to theyr landes, which they had nowe in their possession; much like as in these old monumentes of abbeyes, and rethese old monumentes of abbeyes, and religious howses, we see them likewise use to doe: For which cause it is judged that King Henry the Eight bestowed them upon them, knowing that therby they should never be able to rise agayne. And even see doe these Lordes, in those poore old corporate townes, of which I could name you diverse but for kindling of displeasure. Therfore as I wished manye corporate townes to be erected, see would I agayne wish them to be free, not depending upon the service, nor under the commandement of anye but the Governour. And being soe, they will both strengthen all the countreye rounde about them, which by theyr meanes wil be the better replenished and enriched, and also be as continuall holdes for her Majestie, yf the people should revolte and breake out agayne; for without such it is easye to forrale and over-runne the whole lande. Lett be for over-runne the whole lands. Let be one example, all those free-bouroughes in the Lowe-countreyes, which are nowe all the strength therof. These and other like ordinaunces might be delivered for the good which the strength the establishment of that realme, after it is once subdued and reformed, in which it might be afterwardes verye easelye kept and mayn-tayned, with small care of the Governours and Counsell there appoynted, see as that it should in shorte space yeeld a plentifull revenue to the crowne of England; which nowe doth but sucke and consume the trea-

and changefull orders which devised for her good, yet need prosecuted or perfourmed.

Eudox. But in all this yes have not marked any thing by touching the appoyntment of 1 Officer to when you want to the control of t Officer, to whom you wish the perfourmannes of all this to be Onelye I observed some fowle a noted in some of the late Gov reformation wherof you left for

Iren. I delighte not to lay of the woorlde, and therfore they I will not meddle with, but le wisedome of greater heades to be onelye this much I will spen therof, to satisfye your deal Government and cheif Magistra continue as it doth; to weet ruled by a Lorde Deputye of that it is a very safe kinds there-withall I wish that over were placed also a Lord Lieuter of the greatest personages in I an one I could name, upon who all England is fixed, and our l rest); whoe being entitled with and being allwayes heere reside and defende the good cause of ment agaynst all malignours, w through theyr cunning woorkin deprave and pull backe wha shal be well begunne or intende commonlye see by experience the utter ruine and desolation realme: and this Lieutenaunce noe discountenauncing of the l but rather a strengthning and of all his doinges; for nowe the suffred to goe on with any or upon the least information bee that, he is either stopped or other courses appoynted him which he shall runne, which venient it is, is at this howre And therfore this should be one the appoyntment of the Lord) thoritye, that it shoulde be mo absolute then it is, and that he uncontrolled power to doe an he, with the advisement of t should thinke meete to be don not possible for the Cronsell by a Governour there, whose oftentimes to surve therof, through those unsounde plottes

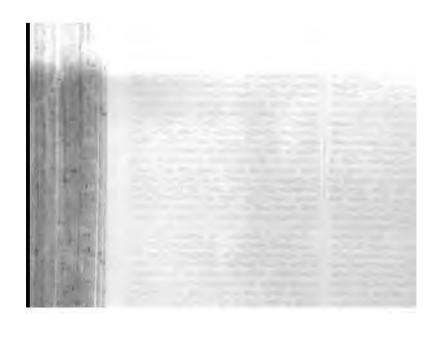
J. 12.

asions, and to take the suddayne ade of time, which being once loste be recovered; whilest, through exdirections from hence, the delayes are oftentimes through other greater most irkesome, the opportunitye there meane time passes away, and greate often groweth, which by such timely ion might easely be stopped. And emember) is woorthelye observed by rell in his discourses upon Livye, e comendeth the manner of the Rorovernment, in giving absolute power seyr Counsuls and Governours, which r abused, they should afterwardes
answeare it: And the contrarye
he reprehendeth in the States of of Florence, and many other princiof Italye, whoe use to limitte heif officers see straightly, as that oftentimes they have lost such occasions as they could never come rayne. The like wherof, whoe soe ne conversaunte in that government ad, hath to often seene to theyr great nce and hurte. Therfore this I ish to be redressed, and yet not soe t in particular thinges he should be sed, though not in the generall sent; as namelye in this, that noe hould be solde by the Lord Deputye ve, nor noe pardons, nor protections for rewardes, nor noe beeves taken for uries of countreys, nor noe shares of icks for nominating theyr Bishops, forfeytures, nor dispensations with tatutes given to theyr servauntes or nor noe selling of licences for trans-n of prohibited wares, and specially e e and flesh, with manye the like; seede some manner of restraint, or great trust in the honourable dispothe Lord Deputye.

could, and as my remembraunce would serve me, runne throughe the state of that whole countrey, both to lett you see what it nowe is, and also what it may be by good care and amendment: Not that I take upon me to chaunge the pollicye of soe greate a king-dome, or prescribe rules to such wise men as have the handling therof, but onelye to shewe you the evills, which in my small experience I have observed to be the cheif hinderaunces of the reformation therof; and by way of conference to declare my simple opinion for the redresse therof, and establishing a good course for that government; which I doe not deliver for a perfect plott of myne owne invention, to be onelye followed, but as I have learned and understood the same by the consultacions and actions of verye wise Governours and Counsellours have sometimes hearde treate whom I thereof. Soe have I thought good to sett downe a remembraunce of them for myne owne good, and your satisfaction, that whoe so list to overlooke them, allthough perhaps much wiser then they which have thus advised of that state, yet at least, by comparison herof, may perhaps better his owne judgement, and by the light of others fore-going him may followe after with more ease, and happely finde a fayrer waye thereunto then they which have gone before.

Thus I have, Eudoxus, as breifly

Eudox. I thanke you, Irenæus, for this your gentell paynes; withall not forgetting, nowe in the shutting up, to putt you in mynde of that which you have formerlye halfe promised, that heereafter when we shall meete agayne uppon the like good occasion, ye will declare unto us those your observations which ye have gathered of the Antiquities of Ireland.



APPENDIX I.

VARIATIONS FROM THE ORIGINAL EDITIONS.

LETTER OF THE AUTHORS), col. 2, 1. 9, early editions read v. USES TO THE AUTHOR), col. 2, 1. 13, faire (1590) RRES TO THE AUTHOR), col. 2, l. 17,). The 4to. 1590 has reede. THE BY THE AUTHOR), col. 1, 1. 30, The 4to. 1590 reads soverain, but fol. eraignes. book 1. canto i. stanza 4, line 5, my n mine feeble (1590).

I. c. i. st. 12, 1. 5, your stroke. The eads your hardy stroke; but it is corsults escaped in the Print, though the ading is retained in the 4to. 1596, and 611. k. I. c. i. st. 15, 1. 7, shapes (1590), L. I. c. i. st. 21, 1. 5, later spring. The 1590, 1596, and 1611 read later ebbe gins swale), but this lection is corrected in sped in the Print. L. c. 1. st. 23, 1. 9, off (1590), ? off (Coli. L. c. i. st. 24, 1. 8, raft (1590), reft I. c. i. st. 30, l. 9, sits (1590), fils (1609). . I. c. i. st. 42, l. 8, sights. The 4to. sighes. In the 'Faults escaped in the sighes. re told to read sights. st. 50, 1. 8, He thought have hought t' have (1611).

I. c. i. st. 50, l. 8, can (1590), gan (1679)
I. c. ii. Arg. l. 3, stead (1596). Th The s steps.
L. c. ii. st. 14. l. 4. et passim (Books I. L. C. II. St. 14, 14, et passing books. In 1596), of (1596).
L. C. ii. st. 17, 1. 5, cruell spies. The 596, and fol. 1609 read cruellies, which in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'
L. C. ii. st. 17, 1. 9, die (1609), dies

. I. c. ii. st. 18, 1. 1, quoth (1596) qd. . I. c. ii. st. 19, l. 9, et passim (Books I. ter (1596), whether (1590). . I. c. ii. st. 22, l. 5, thy (1590), your

I. c. il. st. 29, l. 2, shade him thither Gilher (1896), shadow thither (1809).

P. 20, bk. I. c. ii. st. 29, l. 3, now ymounted. now that mounted (1590, 1596). The reading in the text is found in 'Faults escaped in the Print.' P. 21, bk. I. c. ii. st. 32, l. 9, plaints (1596),

plants (1590). P. 26. bk. I. c. iii. st. 38, 1. 7, the (1590), that

P. 26. DK. 1. C. iv. st. 16, 1. 3, hurtlen (1590), hurlen (1690), P. 29, bk. 1. c. iv. st. 23, 1. 7, dry dropsie (1590), P. 29, bk. 1. c. iv. st. 23, 1. 7, dry dropsie (1590), P. dire dropsie (Upton), hydropsy (Collier).
P. 29, bk. 1. c. iv. st. 24, 1. 3, whally (1590), nieu (1). P. 30, bk. 1. c. iv. st. 27, l. 6, pelfe (1596), pelpe

(1590). P. 30, bk. 1. c. iv. st. 29, 1. 9, fourth (1596), forth

P. 80, bk. I. c. iv. st. 30, l. 4, chaw (1590), jaw

r. 50, 08.1. c. 1v. st. 30, 1. s, chaw (1590), jaw (1699).
P. 30, bk. I. c. iv. st. 30, 1. 6, neighbours (1596), neibors (1590).
P. 30, bk. I. c. iv. st. 32, 1. 9, fifte. first (1590), but fifte is among the errata in Faults escaped in the Print.

P. 81, bk. 1. c. iv. st. 89, 1. 2, faery (1596), fary

P. 33, bk. I. c. v. st. 7, 1. 9, And hewen helmets deepe (1590), And helmets hewen deepe (1596).
P. 34, bk. I. c. v. st. 15, 1. 2, thristy (1590), thiratie (1596).

P. 36, bk. 1. c. v. st. 35, l. 9, leke (1590), leake (1596), P. 36, bk. 1. c. v. st. 38, l. 6, cliffs. The editions 1590, 1596, and 1699 read clifts. The correction is supplied in 'Faults escaped in the Print.' P. 37. bk. 1. c. v. st. 41 1 9 Print.' . 37, bk. I. c. v. st. 41, 1. 2, nigh (1590), high

(1596). P. 38 bk. 1. c. v. st. 52, l. 9, ensewd (1596), en-

P. 38, Dr. I. C. V. St. 52, I. 9, ensewd (1896), ensewed (1896),
P. 38, Dr. I. C. V. St. 1, I. 5, in. The street and folio 1609 read it, though in a smooty the extract folio 1609 read it, though in 5, 1. 3, Or Bacchus (1890), Hughes, If Bacchus.

bk. I. c. vi. at. 23, l. 8, novaled (1590),

P. 41, bk. I. c. vi. st. 23, l. 8, nonsied (1590), noursied (1596). P. 41, bk. L. c. vi. st. 26, l. 5, fiers and fell (1596), neft and swell (1599).

P. 42, bk. t. c. vl. st. 33, L 9, treods (1596), trods (1590). P. 42, hk. L c. vi. st. 39, 1. 7, he (1596), she

(1590).

(1590), P. 43, tht. L. c. vi. st. 47, 1.8, to fight (1590), two fight (1611). P. 45, tht. L. c. vii. st. 12, L. 9, stound (1596), steomi (1599).

P. 45, bk. L. c. vil. st. 13, l. 8, smoke (1596), smot

(1590). P. 43, bk. L. c. vil. st. 18, II. 4, 5, braught, naught (1590), brought, nought (1596).
P. 45, bk. L. c. vil. st. 20, L. 3, that (1590), the (1596).

P. 46, bk. L. c. vil. st. 22, l. 9, sight is omitted in 4to. 1590, but is found in the 4to. 1596, P. 46, bk. l. c. vil. st. 29, l. 4, glitterand (1590), phiner and (1679).

gitter and (1679).
P. 47, bk. I. c. vii. st. 32, l. 18, whose (1609), her (1590).
P. 47, bk. I. c. vii. st. 37, l. 7, trample (1596), amble (1590).
P. 47, bk. t. c. vii. st. 37, l. 8, chanft (1596), thaust (1590).

P. 48, bk. I. c. vii. st. 43, l. 5, ronne. The 4to 1590 has come, which is amended in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'

P. 48, bk. 1. c. vil. at. 47, l. 3, hands (1596). The 4to, 1590 reads hand. P. 49, bk. 1. c. vil. st. 52, l. 4. That. All the early editions read that, but? the.

carly editions read that, but 7 the.
P. 49, bk. 1. c, viii. Arg. 1. 3, that gyaunt (1590, 1596), but the gyaunt is among the errata.
P. 49, bk. 1. c, viii. st. 1, 1. 6, through (1596), thorough (1590).
P. 50, bk. 1. c, viii. st. 7, 1. 6, wise. The 4to. 1590 reads wist, which is corrected in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'
P. 51, bk. 1. c, viii. st. 21, 1. 5, their 2.24;

caped in the Print.

P. 51, bk. I. o. viii, st. 21, l. 5, their 7 his, i. e.
Argoglio's (Church).

P. 51, bk. I. c. viii. st. 21, l. 7, powre (1596),
poure (1590).

P. 51, bk. I. c. viii. st. 22, l. 4, right (so in all
old editions). Most modern editions read left.

P. 51, bk. I. c. viii. st. 24, l. 6, his (1596), her (1590).

P. 53, bk. I. c. viii. st. 44, 1. 4, delight, ? dislike (Upton).

P. 54, bk. L. c. bx. Arg. L. 2, bands (1596). The text of the 4to. 1590 reads hands, but bands is in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'

P. 55, bk. I. c. ix. st. 9, I. 3, the (among errata in 'Fanits escaped in the Print.')
1590 reads that, a lection which Church defends. the (among the

P. 56, bk. 1. c. ix. st. 12, l. 9, on (from *Faults escaped in the Press'). The text has at.
P. 56, bk. 1. c. ix. st. 17, l. 8, process (1590), process (1500).

P. 58, bk. I. c. ix. at. 32, L. 7, glee (1590), ? fee

P. 58, bk. I. c. ix. st. 33, l. 3, cliff in errata, cliff (1590).
P. 58, bk. t. c. ix. st. 33, l. 3, ypight (1596), yplight (1590).

P. 58, bk. L et. 45, L 4, grack (1811).
P. 59, 18: L c. 1r. et. 42, L 7, in 1500 reads \$chi.
P. 50, bk. L c. ir. st. 46, L 5, falsat (1500).

P. 50, bk. L. c. ix. st. 62, 1.1, use (1590).
P. 50, bk. L. c. ix. st. 52, 1.1, use (1590).
P. 60, bk. L. c. ix. st. 52, 1.3, rise lise'd (1611).
P. 60, bk. L. c. ix. st. 52, 1.3, rise lise'd (1611).
P. 60, bk. L. c. ix. st. 53, 1.2, feet (1590), silly (1690).
P. 60, bk. L. c. ix. st. 51, 1.4, praise (1590), is. st. pr. 62, bk. L. c. x. st. 50, 1.3, Depline is found in fol. 1603, ban is simp. P. 63, bk. L. c. x. st. 57, 1.6, Be in soil varies are (1590). Fis day smarting zore (1596).
P. 64, bk. L. c. x. st. 52, 1.6, feet for framelier (1.4) read feetseller.
P. 65, bk. L. c. x. st. 52, 1.6, feet for for framelier (1.4) read feetseller.
P. 65, bk. L. c. x. st. 57, 1.5, prom the errata in "Faults escape The text of the 4to, 1590 has pictained by the fol. 1611, tained by the fol. 1611.

P. 66, bk. L. c. x. st. 59, L. 2, J tions of 1590, 1596, 1609, 1611, m frame is among the strata in 'I the Print.'

P. 67, bk. L. c. K. st. 62, L. 4, (1590). The 4to, 1596 reads Qu and lie'd in like perior. P. 67, bk. I. c. x, st. 62, l. 8, di dc. (1590), And battailes none are k P. 67, bk. I. c. x. st. 62, l. 9, they ted in 1596 and 1611.

P. 67, bk. I. c. x. st. 65, L 3, J (1596).

(1596).

P. 68, bk. I. c. xi. st. 3, This sta in the first 4to., but is in second 4t P. 70, bk. I. c. xi. st. 22, l. 1, (Church).

P. 70, bk. I. c. xi. st. 26, l. 8, singed (1609).

P. 71, bk. I. c. xi. st. 50, l. 5, read its though one is in 'Paults Print.' Mr. Collier says there is reading one.

reading one. P. 71, bk. t. c. xi. st. 37, 1, ; yelded (1590).

P. 72, bk. 1. c. xi. st. 41, l. 4, (4tos. 1590, 1596). P. 73, bk. 1. c. xi. st. 54, l. 7, po P. 75, bk. 1. c. xii. st. 11, l. 2, bs P. 75, bk. 1. c. xii. st. 11, l. 4, go sips (1596).

aps (1890).
P. 76, bk. L. c. xii. st. 17, L. 1, 1596).
P. 77, bk. L. c. xii. st. 32, L. 6, 51 (1596).
P. 77, bk. L. c. xii. st. 34, L. 2, voi (1596).
P. 77, bk. L. c. xii. st. 34, L. 2, voi (1596).
Church thinks that faine = faign (1596).

. xii. st. 34, 1. 3, improvided (1590), annd in some mod :. xii. st. 36, 1. 7, bains (1590), banes :. xii. st. 39, l. 9, sprite (1590). Some us 1611, read spreete. c. xii. st. 40, l. 9, His (1590), Her Prol. st. 2. l. 8, Amazon. The fol. the text of 4to. 1590, reads Amazons, among the errata in 'Faults esint st. 4, 1. 6, thou (1596), then (1590). c. i. st. 3, 1. 2, food (1590), feude . c. i. st. 12, 1. 9, chalenge (1596), . c. i. st. 16, l. 1, liefe (1596, 1609), . c. i. st. 20, L. 2, quit (1590), quite . c. i. st. 20, 1, 7, blotted (1596), c. i. st. 28, 1. 3, well becommeth (1590, meth (1679).
. c. i. st. 31, 1. 4, on (1596), dne c. i. st. 32, L. 7, must (1596), most

. c. i. st. 33, l. 8, thrise is adopted of 4to. 1590, but these occurs in all II. C. i. st. 84. l. 6, steedy (1590). I. c. i. st. 39, l. 4, dolour (1590), c. i. st. 42, 1. 9, stout courage (1590), c. i. st. 47, l. 2. sight (1590), sigh't.

c. l. st. 58, l. 4, frue (1590) ? fruse : c. i. st. 59, l. 2, common (1596),

c. i. st. 59, l. 8, areat (1596), areet . c. ii. st. 4, l. 3, lieu (1590), ? love

ii. st. 5, l. 8, hard (1596), hart (1590). c. ii. st. 7, l. 7, pray (Collier). It is old editions.

c. ii. st. 12, 1. 8, fame (1596), frame c. ii. st. 21, 1. 2, hond (1609), hand

t. c. ii. st. 28, 1. 2, their champions reads her champions, but 4to. 1596

non. . c. ii. st. 30, 1. 1, there (1609), their

I. c. ii. st. 80, 1. 8, bloodgwiltinesse iltnesse (1590, 1596).
. c. ii. st. 34, 1, 9, her (1590), their

c. ii. st. 38, 1. 5, forward (1590),

. 7 of st. 38). c. ii. st. 42, l. 6, to hold. All the old make.

P. 91, bk. II. c. ii. st. 44, l. 4, enrold. The 4to. 1590 reads entrold, the fol. 1609 introld. P. 92, bk. II. c. iii. st. 3, l. 7, heard (1596), hard

(1890).
P. 92, bk. II. c. iii. st. 4, 1. 5, A pleasing vaine of glory, &c. (1890), A pleasing vaine of glory vaine did find (1896).
P. 92, bk. II. c. iii. st. 6, 1. 9, 'Mercy!' loud (so all old editions), ?'Mercy, Lord!'

all old editions), ?' Mercy, Lord!'
P. 92, bk. H. c. iii. st. 11, l. 4, courser (1596), course (1590).

P. 93, bk. II. c. iii. st. 20, l. 5, does greatly them affeare (1590), their haire on end does reare (1595). For greatly (in the errata) the text of the 4to. 1590 has unto.

P. 94, bk. II. c. iii. st. 26, l. 9, fringe (so all the

P. 95, bk. II. c. iii. st. 35. l. 4, many bold emprize (1590), ? many a bold emprize (Jortin).
P. 96, bk. II. c. iii. st. 45, i. 4, one fool (1609),

P. 96, bk. II. c. iii. st. 46, l. 9, erne (1590), yerne

(1609).

P. 96, bk. Phedon (1596) bk. II. c. iv. Arg. l. 8, Phaon (1590),

P. 97, bk. II. c. iv. st. 4, 1. 6, loosely (1596), loosly (1590).
P. 98, bk. II. c. iv. st. 12, 1. 3, hong (1590), hung

(1609). P. 98, bk. II. c. iv. st. 12, l. 8, tonge. The text has tongue, which is altered to tonge in the errata of the 4to. 1590.

P. 98. bk. II. c. iv. st. 13, l. 6, note (1590), no'ts

(1609). P. 98, bk. II. c. iv. st. 17, l. 6, one (1596), wretch (1590). P. 98, bk. п. с. iv. st. 17, l. 8, occasion (1596),

her milful trech (1590) P. 98, bk. II. c. iv. st. 17, 1. 9, light upon (1596),

wandring ketch (1590).

P. 98, bk. II. c. iv. st. 18, 1. 5, chose (1590), chus (1609).
P. 98, bk. II. c. iv. st. 18, 1. 8, Or (1590), Our

(1609).
P. 100, bk. II. c. iv. st. 38, l. 4, this word was (so all the old editions), these words were (Hughes's second edition).

Becond edition).

P. 101, bk. II. c. iv. st. 40, l. 3, should (1596), shold (1590).

P. 101, bk. II. c. iv. st. 45, l. 5, that did fight (1590), thus to fight (1596).

P. 102, bk. II. c. v. Arg. l. 1, Pyrochles, &c. (1590).

The second 4to. 1596 reads:—

Pyrrochles does with Guyon fight, And Furors chayne unbinds; Of whom sore hurt, for his revenge Attin Cymochles finds.

P. 102, bk. II. c. v. st. 5, 1. 9, doe me not much faul (1590), doe not much me faile (1596).
P. 102, bk. II. c. v. st. 8, 1. 7, hurtle (1590), hurlen (1596), hurlen (1611).
P. 103, bk. II. c. v. st. 10, 1. 7, enimyes (1596),

enimye (1590).

P. 103, bk. n. c. v. st. 15, l. 9, who selfe (1890), whose selfe (1609).
P. 104, bk. n. c. v. st. 19, l. 4, shee (1609), hee

(1590, 1596).

P. 104, bk. H. c. v. st. 19, 1.7, garre (1598), do (1596).
P. 104, bk. H. c. v. st. 21, h. 7, occasions (1590), occasion (1609).

P. 104, bk. H. c. v. st. 22, 1. 5, spight (1590), P. 104, bk. H. c. v. st. 25, 1. 1, that (1590), the P. 105, bk. H. c. v. st. 29, 1. 5, pricking (1590), P. 105, bk. H. c. v. st. 29, 1. 5, pricking (1590), P. 105, bk. H. c. v. st. 31, 3. 5 P. 105, bk. II. c. v. at. 31, L.5, In Nemus gaynet, &c. (1590), Gaynd in Nemen (1596). E. 105, bk. II. c. v. at. 32, l. 8, meriments. All old copies read meriment.

P. 105, bk. II. C. V. st. 34, 1. 8, So he them (1590), So them (1596 and 1609). P. 106, bk. II. c. vi. st. 1, 1. 7, abstaine (1590), restrains (1596).

P. 106, bk. II. c. vi. st. 3, 1. 4, As merry as Pope Jone (1890), that nigh her breath was gone (1896).

P. 106, bk. II. c. vl. et. 3, l. 6, That to her might more (1590), That might to her more (1696). P. 107, bk. II. c. vl. et. 12, l. 9, and throne her secret smids, &c. (1590), and her accet smells throw,

&c. (1596). P. 107, bk while (1590). bk. H. c. vi. st. 14, L. 9, whiles (1596), bk. H. c. vi. st. 14, 1. 9, love lay (1590),

P. 107, blc. : loud lay (1596) P. 108, bk. H. c. vi. st. 18, 1.7, wave . . . griesy (1590), waves . . . griesly (1609).
P. 108, bk. H. c. vi. st. 21, L.8, bonds (1590),

bounds (1609).

P. 109, bk. H. c. vi. at. 27, 1. 9, there (1596), their (1590).

(1590).
P. 109, bk. II. c. vi. st. 29, l. 2. importune (1590), importance (1596), important (1609).
P. 110, bk. II. c. vi. st. 38, I. 5, salied (1590), salied (1609).
P. 110, bk. II. c. vi. st. 43, I. 7, hath lent this cursed light (1596), hath lent but this his cursed light (1596). P. 111, bk. H. c. vi. st. 48, 1. 6, wondred (1596).

P. 111, bk. H. C. VI. st. 48, I. 6, wondred (1596), woundred (1590).
P. 111, bk. H. c. vI. st. 50, I. 3, liver swell (1596), livers swell (1590).
P. 111, bk. H. C. vI. st. 51, I. 5, fire too inly (1596), fer inly (1590).
P. 112, bk. H. c. vII. st. 1, I. 2, to a stedfast starre, 2 to the stedfast starre, i. e. the pole-star (Church).
P. 112, bk. H. c. vII. st. 3, I. 9, free million.

(Church).

P. 112, bk. H. c. vil. st. 3, 1. 9, fire-spitting (1590), fire-spitting (1609).

P. 112, bk. H. c. vil. st. 4, 1, 4, Well yet appeared (1590), Well it appeared (1596).

P. 112, bk. H. c. vil. st. 5, 1. 6, Ingoves (1590), Ingoes (1596), Ingot (1679).

P. 112, bk. H. c. vil. st. 5, 1. 9, straunge (1596), straung (1590).

P. 112, bk. H. c. vil. st. 7, 1. 3, rich hile (1590), vich hange (1596).

rich heapes (1596). P. 113, bk. H. c. vii. st. 10, 1. 1, ill besits (1590).

E. 113, DK. H. C. VII. 8L. 10, L. 1, ill bests (1590), ill bests (1699).

P. 113, bk. H. C. VII. st. 12, L. 9, as great (1596), in great (1590).

P. 114, bk. H. C. VII. st. 19, L. 5, bloodenstriages.

P. 114, bk. H. c. vii. at. 19, 1.5, bloodguiltinesse (1609), bloodguiltnesse (1590, 1596).

P. 114, hk. n. c. vil. et. ii. l. l. s 500), informall Papie (1504). Fed time = informal paradonesi sheeli si oiller suggeste elerad as an aneule

Collect Higgsests eternal as an americal P. 114, tak, H. o. vill. st. 24, 1.7, sought (1520). P. 110, lak, H. c. vill. st. 28, 1.4, dying (1520). P. 118, bk. H. c. vill. st. 37, 1.1, st when as (1526).

when ats (1596). P. 116, tht. H. c. vil. at. 59, 1.8, as mespine (1596). P. 116, bk. H. c. vil. at. 40, 1.7, p gron (1590). P. 116, bk. H. c. if. at. 40, 1.7, 8a (1590).

P. 116, bk. n. v. vil. st. 41, l. 1, tooks (1590), sterns was to look (1590) P. 117, bk. n. c. vil. st. 52, l. 6, s

the old copies read chief with P. 115, bk. H. c. vill. st. 69, L (1396), more temperate (1250). P. 118, bk. H. c. vill. st. 64, L 2 (1590), of the pray (1396). P. 119, bk. H. c. vill. st. 2, L 3, hither (1609), Come Acther, Come Latter P. 120, bk. H. c. vill. st. 16, L (1596), tomblacke (1500).

P. 121, bk. H. c. viii. st. 25, L. his cruell fees (from the errain in 'in the Print'). The text of the dis Which those san

The folios (1609, 1611) have: —
Which those same focs, that does at P. 122, bk. n. c. viii. at. 29, 1.7, old editions read upreare.

old editions read upreare.

P. 122, bk. H. c. viii. at. 32, 1.3, lody (1500).

P. 122, bk. H. c. viii. at. 35, 1.5, on his (1609).

P. 123, bk. H. c. viii. at. 37, 1.3, traile (1609).

P. 123, bk. H. c. viii. at. 40, 1.4, ought (1600).

P. 123, bk. H. c. viii. at. 44, 1.8, r not there, Le. not there (1500).

P. 124, bk. H. c. viii. at. 44, 1.8, r not thore, Le. not there (1500).

P. 124, bk. H. c. viii. at. 47, 1.4, unced (1506).

aword (1596).

P. 124, bk. II. c, viii. st. 47, l. 1596, 1609, 1611), &c (1679).
P. 124, bk. II. c. viii. st. 48, L 5, (1609), Sir Guyon (1590).

P. 124, bk, H. c, viii. at, 49, L 7 trend (?).
P. 125, bk, H. c, viii. st. 55, L 3, box

the old editions read seed boxes; directed to be deled among the errasscaped in the Print. 125, bk. H. c. ix. st. 4, I. 3, tel

P. 19 (1679).

P. 126, bk. H. c. ix. st. 6, L. 9, Are

F. 126, bk. H. c. ix. st. 6, 1. 2, Art Arthogall (1590)
P. 126, bk. H. c. ix. st. 7, 1, 5, 8 Sunne (1590), Now hath the Sanne (158 P. 126, bk. H. c. ix. st. 7, 1, 6, obout (1590), Walkie round about (138 P. 126, bk. H. c. ix. st. 9, 1, 1, st. solitions read rote.

II. c. ix. st. 15, 1. 3, Capitaine (1609), k. H. c. ix. st. 18, 1. 8, woo'd (1596), k. II. c. ix. st. 21, 1.1, them (1596), . IL. c. ix. st. 21, l. 3, fensible (1590), L. II. c. ix. st. 28, 1.4, meate (1590), k. II. c. ix. st. 37, 1. 8, doen you love your love (1590). L. H. c. ix. st. 38, 1. 2, mood. All old E. II. c. ix. st. 38, 1. 9, three years emoneths (1596).
L. II. c. ix. st. 41, 1. 7, Castory (from units escaped in the Print'). The texts read lastery. E. H. c. ix. st. 42, l. l, cheare (1596), b. If the reader prefers cleare (the th Collier prints and defends), he must substantive in the sense of clearness, . II. c. ix. st. 48, 1. 3, these (1596), this . H. c. ix. st. 49, l. 4, reason, (so all Collier says that in Drayton's copy of reason is altered to season. II. c. ix. st. 52, 1. 9, th' house (1609), II. c. x. st. 6, 1. 6, For safety that IL C. x. st. 7. L. 7. liveden (1590), lived II. C. E. st. 7, 1. 9, sternnesse (1596), II. c. x. st. 15, 1.9, munificence (1596), 90). II. c. x. st. 19, 1. 5, upon the present in that impatient stoure (1596).

II. c. x. st. 20, 1. 2, to sway (1590), I. c. x. st. 24, 1. 8, if mole (1596), he п. с. x. st. 30, l. 2, weeks (1590), п. с. ж. st. 31, l. 1, too (1596), to II. c. x. st. 34, 1. 7, then (1590), till I. c. x. st. 41, l. 1, Gurgiunt (1590), c. x. st. 43, 1.1, Sisillus. t. c. x. st. 53, 1. 2, in great (1590), . c. x. st. 65, 1. 9, have forst (1590), . c. xi. st. 9, 1.9, they that Bulwarke 16), they against that Bulwarke lent c. xi. st. 10, 1.2, assignment (1590), 36).

. c. xi. st. 11, l. 4, dismayd (so all t and modern) but ? mis-mayd, i. e. amiss, mis-shaped, ill-shaped (Child) ure be right, and it is extremely

f plausible, the comma after ape should be dei Church thought that dismayd=dismayed (frig ened), and that 'Some like to houndes, some like area' should be read as in a parenthesis on the should be read as in a parenthesis, so the said will refer to feends of hell, cf. 'ghas apes, should be read as in a parentness, so a dismayd will refer to feends of hell, cf. 'ghas spectacle dismayd,' F. Q.' bk. III. c. iii. st. \$0, l. P. 141, bk. II. c. xi. st. 13, l. 2, is (1590), w (1596). P. 141, bk. п. с. хі. st. 13, l. 5, assayed (1596 assayled (1596).
P. 142, bk. II. c. xi. st. 21, l. 8, there . . . the (1609), their . . . their (1590). P. 143, bk. II. c. xi. st. 30, l. 9, survive (amouthe errata in 'Faults escaped in the Print'). The texts of the 4to. 1590, and folios 1609, 1611 res revive. P. 143, bk. II. c. xi. st. 32, l. 5, unrest (1896 infest (1890).
P. 145, bk. II. c. xii. Arg. l. 1, by (1896), throug P. 145, bk. II. c. xii. Arg. 1. 2, passing throug (1596), through passing (1590). P. 146, bk. II. c. xii. st. 8, 1. 4, hoars (1590) P. 146, DK. II. C. XII. St. 8, 1. 4, hoars (1890) hoarse (1896). P. 146, bk. II. C. XII. st. 13, 1. 9, Apollos temple (1590), Apolloes honor (1896). P. 147, bk. II. C. XII. st. 21, 1. 1, heedful (1898) earnest (1590).
P. 147, bk. ii. c. xii. st. 28, 1. 9, monocerose (Child), monoceros (1590). P. 148, bk. II. c. xii. s. 27, 1. 4, sea resounding (1609), sea the resounding (1590). P. 149, bk. II. c. xii. st. 39, l. 8, upstaring (1590) upstarting (1596). P. 149, bk. II. c. xii. st. 43, 1.7, mightiest (1596) migtest (1590). P. 150, bk. II. c. xii. st. 47, l. 6, foresee (1609), forsee (1690).
P. 150, bk. II. c. xii. st. 51, 1.1, Therewith (1590), eto (1596). P. 150, bk. H. c. xii. st. 54, 1. 7, Hyacine (1611), Hyacint (1590). P. 151, bk. п. с. хіі. st. 60, l. 5, curious ymageree (1590), pure imageree (1609). P. 151, bk. II. c. xii. st. 61, l. 8. fearefully (1590), tenderly (1596). P. 158, bk. II. c. xii. st. 76, l. 8, That (1596), Thot (1590). P. 153, bk. H. c. xii. st. 77, l. 5, alablaster (1590, 1896, 1609, 1611), alabaster (1679).
P. 183, bk. II. c. xii. st. 81, 1.4, that same (1896), the same (1890). P. 154, bk. II. c. xii. st. 83, 1. 7, spoyle (1590), P. 155, bk. III. c. i. Prol. st. 1, 1. 2, The fayrest (1596), That fayrest (1596) P. 155, bk. III. c. i. Prol. st. 4, 1. 2, thy selfe thou (1500) and (1500) and (1506) (159), your selfe you (1596)
P. 195, bk. III. c. i. Arg. l. 3, Malecastase (from errata in 'Faults escaped in the Print'). The texts of 4tos. 1590, 1596, and folios 1609, 1611, read Materastaes.
P. 160, bk. III. c. i. st. 41, l. 8, lighly (1609), highly (1590).
P. 160, bk. III. c. i. st. 47, l. 7, which (1596),

P. 160, bli

bk. III. c. i. st. 48, l. 2, brust (1590),



(1820), Which I to prove (1826).

P. 164, bk.: III. c. ii. st. 16, 1. 4, allegge (1870), which I to prove (1826).

P. 164, bk.: III. c. ii. st. 16, 1. 9, part (1590), point (1609). Mr. Collier says that Todd was a careless collator, yet Todd is right in saying that the folios read point, and Mr. Collier is wrong in asserting that they read part.

P. 166, bk. III. c. ii. st. 30, 1. 5, her in her warme bed (1890), in her warme bed her dight (1896).

P. 167, bk. III. c. ii. st. 44, 1. 1, minde (1890), mine (1699). (1590). P. 184 1590 read P. 185. bitter (15 P. 185, (Collier). P. 186, (1590). P. 167, bk. III. c. ii. st. 44, l. 1, minde (1590), mine (1609). P. 168, bk. III. c. ii. st. 50, l. 2, breaded (1590), P. 186 (1596), su P. 186. braided (1609). liring (15: P. 186, P. 168, bk. mr. c. iii. st. 1, 1. 1, Most (1590), Oh! (1609). (Collier). P. 169, bk. III. c. iii. st. 3, 1. 1, dredd (1590), drad (1609).
P. 169, bk. III. c. iii. st. 4, 1. 8, protense (1596), pretence (1596). P. 187 to is omitt P. 187. P. 171, bk. III. c. iii. st. 23, 1. 5, shall (1590), all assertion t P. 187, reere (1590 P. 188, 1 P. 171, bk. mr. c. iii. st. 29, 1. 1, with (1590), where (1596).
P. 172, bk. III. c. iii. st. 35, l. 1, thy (1590), the (1596).(1596). P. 172, P. 188. 1 bk. III. c. iii. st. 37, 1. 7, their (1590), (1590). the (1596). P. 188. P. 173, bk. III. c. iii. st. 44. l. 5. weares (in 1590) is omitted by the 4to. 1596 and fol. 1609, and full is inserted to render the line complete. fol. of 1609 P. 189, 4to, 1590 re P. 189, 1 is inserted to render the line complete.

P. 173, bk. III. c. iii. st. 44, l. 6, Ere they to former rule, &c. (1596), Ere they unto their former rule (1680).

P. 173, bk. III. c. iii. st. 50, l. 9, Hee (from the strata in 'Faults escaped in the Print'). The text of 4to. 1590 reads she, and omits as earst, which are supplied from the fol. 1609.

P. 174, bk. III. c. iii. st. 53, l. 3, (need makes good schullers) leach (1590), whom need new strength shall teach (1596). beauties (15 P. 190, . . straw straung; tl P. 190, t

From which read Of wh Vinerva (1596). P. 208, bk. III.

:. III. c. vi. st. 48, 1. 9, losen (1590), . III. c. vi. st. 52, 1. 9, launched (1596),), launced (1609). (1590), the speare (1596).
P. 208, bk. III. c. ix. st. 27, 1. 5, that glause III. c. vii. Arg. l. 4, Gyaunis. It is 90, and Gyants in 1596.
.. III. c. vii. st. 1, 1. 8, she did (1596), (1609), with glaunces (1590). t. III. c. vii. st. 5, 1.1, the tops (1590), t. III. c. vii. st. 9, 1. 3, to (1596), two :. III. c. vii. st. 13, 1.6, hath (1590), i. III. c. vii. st. 18, 1. 5, Might by the ter sonne compast (1590). The verb be ter sonne compast (1590). The verb be derstood before compast. Might be the her sonne (1596) 6. III. c. vii. st. 19, 1. 6. her (1590). .. III. c. vii. st. 23, 1. 4, he (1596), she . III. c. vii. st. 32, l. 7, muchell (1596), 1). Collier is wrong in contradicting tion respecting the lection of the fol. c. III. c. vii. st. 43, l. 8, sere; the 4to. 1596 reads nere. t. III. c. vi 'rom (1609) c. vii. st. 45, l. 5, from him . III. c. vii. st. 46, l. 8, the (1590). that c. III. c. vii. st. 48, l. 4, And many (1596), Till him Chylde Thopas to &c. :. III. c. viii. st. 2, 1. 7, golden (1590), .. III. c. viii. st. 5, 1. 1, advice: - device e (1596) k. III. c. viii. st. 6, l. 7, wex (1590), k. m. c. viii. st. 7, l. 4, to womens mans (1596) t. III. c. viii. st. 9, 1. 9, whom (1609), k. III. c. viii. st. 17, l. he 4to. 1590 has broght, thro 1. 8, brought, c. viii. st. 25, 1, 6, hond. It is c. III. old editions. i. III. c. viii. st. 30, 1. 8, frory (1609), but see p. 204, st. 35, 1. 2. k. III. c. viii. st. 82, 1. 7, Had . . . all the old editions). Church proposed . . . assoyle.
c. III. c. viii. st. 33, l. 9, her by (1590), k. III. c. viii. st. 37, 1. 9, hight (1596), :. III. c. viii. st. 47, 1.5, surely. Upton 5. III. c. viii. st. 49, 1. 2, Thave (1596), 0). k. III. c. ix. st. 2, 1. 4, attone (1596), . III. c. ix. st. 7, 1. 8, misdonne (1596), 90). t. III. c. ix. st. 20, l. 9, persant (1590),

)), present (1611).

(1609), win giainces (1890). P. 208, bk. III. c. ix. st. 27, l. 7, demeasns (1590), demeanure (1609). P. 209, bk. III. c. ix. st. 32, l. 8, glad (1596 yylad (1690). P. 209, bk. III. c. ix. st. 37, l. 7, glories (159 P. 209, bk. III. c. ix. st. 37, l. 7, glories (159 1596, 1609), glorious (1611, 1679). P. 210, bk. III. c. ix. st. 43, l. 9, remoud (1590 remou'd (1609), remou'd (1679). P. 210, bk. III. c. ix. st. 45, 1. 3, neck (1596 necks (1890).
P. 210, bk. III. c. ix. st. 47, 1. 3, heard (1896) nara (1950).
P. 211, bk. III. c. ix. st. 49, l. 4, Which, aft rest (1566), And after rest (1609).
P. 211, bk. III. c. x. st. 2, 1 2, grievously (1596 grievously (1590). P. 212, bk. III. c. x. st. 8, 1. 9, to (1596), wi (1590). P. 213, bk. III. c. x. st. 18, l. 4, Then (1596), (1590). P. 213, bk. III. c. x. st. 21, 1, 9, earned (1590 yearned (1609). P. 214, bk. III. c. x. st. 31, 1. 3, and with t. (1596), that with thy (1590). P. 214, bk. III. c. x. st. 31, 1.7, vertues pay (160i vertuous pray (1590).
P. 215, bk. III. c. x. st, 33, 1.7, over-ronne. is overonne in 1590. P. 215, bk. III. c. x. st. 40, L 1, addresse. A old copies have address old copies have acares.
P. 215, bk. III. c. x. st. 40, 1, 3, wastefull (1896 faithfull (1890).
P. 215, bk. III. c. x. st. 41, 1.7, wide forest, (1890 wild forest (1609).
P. 216, bk. III. c. x. st. 47, 1. 1, the (1609), 1 (1590). P. 218 bk. III. c. xi. st. 2, 1, 3, golden (160) P. 218, OK. III. C. XI. 8t. 2, 1. 0, yourse (1000 golding (1590).

P. 218, bk. III. c. XI. 8t. 4, 1. 4, all that I en &c. (1590), that I did ever, &c. (1596).

P. 218, bk. III. c. Xi. 8t. 6, 1. 6, has (1590 seas (1611). Collier is wrong in contradicti Todd's assertion respecting the reading of the form P. 218, bk. III. c. xi. st. 7, 1. 6, of (1590), (1596). P. 219, bk. III. c. xi. st. 12, l. 1, singults (160) singulfes (1590). P. 220, bk. III. c. xi. st. 19, death (1590), ? l (Jortin). P. 220, bk. III. c. xi. st. 22, 1.8, the which (159) F. 220, DK. III. C. Al. ed. 28, 1. 2, In 4to. 1590 the is omitted.
P. 220, Dk. III. c. xi. st. 28, 1. 2, In beastlike. The 4to. 1590 reads Inglorious a 1. 2, Inglorio like. In fol. 1611 and is omitted. Collier is wro in saying that no old edition omits and P. 220, bk. III. c. xi. st. 27, l. 7, entred (159 decked (1590). P. 221, bk. III. c. xi. st. 20, a. v, Like to a (1590).
P. 221, bk. III. c. xi. st. 88, l. 8, her (1890). (1609).

P. 208, bk. III. c. ix. st. 22, l. 1, Beliona (159)

c. ix. st. 22, 1. 5, her spea

P. 221, bk. III. c. xi. st. 36, 1. 7, thee (1596), the P. 222, bk. m. c. xi. st. 38, l. 5, fire (1590), fler (1596).

P.222, bk. III. c. xi. st. 39, 1.6, each other (1596), P. 222, bk. III. c. xi. st. 39, l. 8, stag (suggested by Jortin). All old copies read hag. his other (1590).

bk. III. c. xi. st. 47, 1. 9, hevens hight by Church). All old editions read P. 223. P. 223, bk. III. C. Xi. (suggested by Church). heven bright.

bk. III. c. xii. st. 7, 1. 8, wood (1596), P. 224 P. 224, Dr. 111. 5. 110. 5. 11 P. 225, bk. others (1596).

225, bk. III. c. xli. st. 12, l. 3, too or froe

P. 228, bk. III. c. xii. st. 12, l. 3, too or free (1590), to and fro (1596).
P. 225, bk. III. c. xii. st. 12, l. 6, winged (1590), wingy (1596).
P. 225, bk. III. c. xii. st. 17, l. 6, did tosse (so all copies). Church would omit did, and for tosse read tost: In her right hand a fibrrand she tost.
P. 226, bk. III. c. xii. st. 18, l. 5, drad (1596),

dread (1590). P. 226, bk. III. c. xii. st. 18, l. 8, hony-laden.

All old editions read hony-lady.
P. 226, bk. III. c. xii. st. 21, 1. 7, fading. Church

thinks that Spenser meant to write failing.
P. 226, bk. III. c. xii. st. 21, 1.8, still (1596), skill (1590).

P. 226, bk. III. c. xii. st. 23, l. 5, hand is omitted in 4tos., but is among the errata in 'Faults escaped in the Print.'
P. 226, bk. III. c. xii. st. 26, l. 7, by the (1590), with that (1598).

P. 226. bk. III. c. xii. st. 27, 1.3,

encay (1596), nothing did remajne (1590).

P. 226, bk. III. c. xii. st. 27, l. 8, It (1590), In (1611).

Collier is wrong respecting the reading of

the folios. P. 227, bk. III. c. xii. st. 28, 1. 1, there (1609). The 4tos. read their.

c. xii. st. 29, 1. 1, wandering 227, bk. III.

(1590), reondering (1611). P. 227, bk. III. c. xii. st. 33, 1. 3, to herselfe (1596), to the next (1590).
P. 227, bk. III. c. xii. st. 34, 1. 4, unto her (1609),

unto him (1590). P. 228, bk. III. c. xii. st. 38, 1.5, bor'd (1596),

sor'd, i.e. made sore, hurt (1590)

P. 228, bk. III. c. xii. st. 40, 1. 6, faire Lady (1596), faire Lad (1590).
P. 228, bk. III. c. xii. st. 45, 1. 9, Whilest here I

doe resnire.

When Spenser printed his first three books of the 'Fairie Queene' the two lovers, Sir Scudamore and

Amoret, have a happy meeting: but afterwards, when he printed the fourth, fifth, and sixth books, he reprinted likewise the first three books; and,

among other alterations, he left out the fiv

stanzas and made three new stanzas, viz. 43, 44.
45. More case issee now, &c. By these alterations this third book not only connects better with the fourth, but the reader is kept in that suspense which is necessary in a well-told story. The stanzas which are mentioned above as omitted in the second edition, and printed in the first, are the

following ;-

At last she came unto the place, where his "She left Sir Scudamour in great distress, "Twixt dolour and despight halfe despend Of his lones succour, of his owne retract,

43.

•• And of the hardie Britomarts successe: "There on the cold earth him now thrown " found.

"In wilfull anguish and dead beaviness,
"And to him cald; whose voices known send
Soon as he heard, himself he reared light hun ground.

There did he see, that most on earth him joi.

"His dearest lone, the comfort of his days.
"Whose too long absence him had sore annual.
"And wearied his life with dull delays. " Straight he upstarted from the loathel land "And to her ran with hasty egernese.

"Like as a Deare, that greedily embayes

"In the cool soile, after long thirstiness, Which he in chace endured hath, now breathlesse.

Lightly he clipt her twixt his armes two

"And streightly did embrace her body high.

"Her body, late the prison of and pains.

"Now the sweet lodge of lone and deare deare. But she, faire Lady. overcommen quient

Of huge affection, did in pleasure melt,

And in sweete ravishment pour on

" spright. word they spake, nor earthly thing in " No " felt, But like two senceles stocks in long embraces " dwelt.

" Had ye them seene, ye would have surely the "That they had beene that faire Hermanica" Which that rich Romane of white "wrought, " And in his costly Bath caused to bee

" So seemd those two, as growne together "That Britomart, halfe envying their be " Was much empassiond in her gentle sprite, " And to her selfe oft wisht like happin In vain she wisht, that fate n'ould let be pe " possesso

Thus doe those louers, with sweet comtered " Each other of lones bitter fruit despris "But now my teme begins to faint and by "All woxen weary of their journal toyle: "Therefore I will their sweatie yokes amount to the state of the sweatie when a more than the sweatie when the sweatie w " At this same furrowes end, till a new out; "And ye, faire Swayns, after your long two"
Now cease your worke, and at your

" play : " Now cease your work ; to morrow is an holy 🚝 P. 229, bk. IV. c. i. l. 4, Triumond. All the editions have Telamond.
P. 231, bk. IV. c. i. st. 16, l. 4, grieful (1990)

equitions have returnment.
P. 231, bk. IV. c. 1. st. 16, 1. 4, grieful (1868).
P. 231, bk. IV. c. 1. st. 16, 1. 7, none (1869).
P. 231, bk. IV. c. 1. st. 16, 1. 7, none (1869).
P. 236, bk. IV. c. ii. st. 2, 1. 5, concents (1869).
Consented (1879).

bk. rv. c. ii. st. 19, l. 1, besitting (1596), 179) bk. IV. c. ii. st, 22, 1, 7, avising. The advising, the folios avising. bk, IV. c. ii. st. 52, 1. 9, so be (1596), be ok. IV. c. iii. st. 7, l. 4, skill (1609), sill, ik. IV. c. iii. st. 8, 1. 8, avengement (1609), 1k. IV. c. iii. st. 9, 1. 6, n'ote (1609), not bk. IV. c. iii. st. 13, l. 8, other brethren opies). It should be second brother second brother ok. IV. c. iii. st. 20, l. l, adventure (so It has been proposed to read advantage; e=opportunity. c. iii. st. 36, l. 3, wards (so all hurch proposed to read swords. k. IV. c. iii. st. 52, 1. 9, elswhere (1609), bk. IV. c. iv. st. 1. 1. 4. minds (1596). bk. IV. c. iv. st. 2, 1. 3, als (1609), els bk. IV. c. iv. st. 2, l. 4, Blandamour bk. IV. c. iv. st. 8, 1. 2, Ferrau (1609), ik. IV. c. iv. st. 10, 1, 5, worse (1609).). ik. IV. c. iv. st. 17, 1. 4, maiden-headed tyr-headed (Church).
)k. IV. c. iv. st. 24, l. 9, secound. The ınd. k. IV. c. iv. st. 24, 1. 1, beam-like (1609), 596). ok. IV. c. iv. st. 29, l. 6, cuffing (1611), 96). bk. IV. c. v. st. 4, l. 4, Lemno (1596), 11). k. IV. c. v. st. 5, 1. 5, Acidalian (1596), k. IV. c. v. st. 6, 1. 8, Martian (1596), k. IV. c. v. st. 16, l. 1, that (1596), the bk. IV. c. v. st. 21, 1. 8, one (so all old bk. IV. c. v. st. 23, 1. 7, sens (1596), bk. IV. c. v. st. 25, 1. 5, one (1609), k. IV. c. v. st. 31, 1. 3, his (1609), her k. IV. c. v. st. 35, l. 4, unpared (1596), (611). k. IV. c. v. st. 87, l. 2, Pyracmon (1609). mds Pynacmon. bk. IV. c. v. st. 40, 1. 7, wheresoever resoere (1611). k. IV. c. vi. st. 24, l. 8, feare (1609), 596). bk. IV. c. vi. st. 28, l. 6, Him (proposed and Church). Her (1596). He (1609). k. IV. c. vi. st. 38, l. 6, ranging (1596),

11).

P. 262, bk. IV. c. vl. st. 44, l. 4, in (15 9) Some modern editors, following fol. 1609, alter to a P. 262, bk. IV. c. vl. st. 46, l. 5, whom (160) who (1596). P. 262, bk. IV. c. vii. st. 1, 1. 1, darts (1608 dart (1596). P. 263, bk. IV. c. vii. st. 10, l. 9, over-sig (1596), ore-sight (1609). P. 264, bk. IV. c. vii. st. 12, 1. 1, captive (1596 Some editors have proposed to read captive. P. 265, bk. IV. c. vii. st. 22, l. 1, Nor hedge (1696 Mr. J. P. Collier proposes to rend For hedge. P. 265, bk. IV. c. vii. st. 23, l. 3, to (1696) omitted in 1679 P. 265, bk, IV. c. vii. st. 25, l. 1, which (1609 with (1596). P. 266. bk. IV. c. vii. st. 84, l. 1, sad (1609 said (1596). bk. IV. c. viii. st. 1, 1. 9, inflxed (1596 P. 267, infected (1611). P. 268, bk. IV. c. viii. st. 9, 1. 9. pertake (1596 partake (1609). P. 268, bk. IV. c. viii. st. 12, l. 3, her (suggeste by Church), him (1596). P. 274, bk. IV. c. viii. st. 64, l. l, this (1596). his (1609). P. 274, bk. IV. c. ix. Arg. l. 2, Æmylia (suggested by Church), Pacana (1596).
P. 274, bk. IV. c. ix. st. l, l. 8, vertuous (1609 bk. Iv. c. ix. Arg. 1. 2, Æmylia (sue Church). Pæana (1596). vertues (1596 P. 274, bk. IV. c. ix. st. 3, 1. 3, these (1596 this (1609). 2015 (1905).
P. 275, bk. Iv. c. ix. st. 11, l. 9, them (suggeste by Church), him (1996).
P. 275, bk. Iv. c. ix. st. 12, l. 2, he (1896 ? they or was (Church). 276, bk. IV. c. ix. st. 14, l. 8, dyde=dye complexioned. Church suggested eyde P. 276, bk. IV. c. ix. st. 17, l. 5, quest. It guest in 1596 and in all old copies.
P. 276, bk. IV. c. ix. st. 17, l. 7, bequest (1596) request (1611).
P. 277, bk. IV. c. ix. st. 28, l. 8, wide. P. 271, DK. IV. C. IX. St. 29, 1. 5, water. as, P. Collier says that in Drayton's copy of the fol. of 1611 wilde is suggested as an emendation for wide P. 277, bk. IV. c. ix. st. 26, 1. 1, Then gan (proceed by Church). In 1596 it is their gan, in 161 P. 277, bk. IV. c. ix. st. 30, l. 8, repayed (1609 repayed (1596).
P. 278, bk. IV. c. ix. st. 37, l. 2, Knight (1596 ? Knights (Upton). P. 279, bk. IV. bk. IV. c. x. st. 7, 1. 9, ancient (1609 ancients (1596). P. 280, bk. IV. c. x. st. 9, l. 1, earne (1596 yearne (1611). P. 280, bk. IV. c. x. st. 17, 1. 5, adward (1596 award (1609). P. 281, bk. IV. c. x. st. 19, 1. 1, meanest (1609 nearest (1596). P. 281, bk. IV. c. x. st. 23, l. 2, ghesse (1596 bee (1609). bk. IV. c. x. st. 23, l. 8, to bee (1596 P . 281, to ghesse (1609), I ghesse (1611). P. 281, bk. IV. c. x. st. 26, 1. 9, aspire (1596 inspire (1611). P. 281, bk. bk. IV. c. x. st. 27, l. 1, Hyllus (1596 Hylus (1609).

P. 282, th. IV. C. x. st. 25, 1.6, hell (so all copies). Some editors have suggested seelinconfound; but hell=0. E. hell or hele=cover, which agrees with its nominative voters. And fire de-C. X. St. 35, 1. 6, hell (so all

P. 284, bk. IV. c. x. st. 51, 1. 9, girlands (so all additions), ? gurdians (Church), ? guerdons (J. P.

Collier).
P. 984, bk. rv. c. x. st. 55, 1. 8, warie (1896),
P. 984, bk. rv. c. x. st. 55, 1. 8, warie (1896),
P. 285, bk. rv. c. x. st. 56, 1. 4, at (1896), on (1609). P. 285, bk. IV. c. xi. wt. 4, 1, 2, dredd (1896),

drad (1609). P. 285, bk. iv. c. xi. st. 4, l. 6, scren (1596), three (1609).

P. 287, bk. IV. c. xi. st. 17, l. 6, age. All old

P. 287, bk. 1V. C. Xi. et. 19, L. 4, Jordald (1896), P. 287, bk. 1V. c. xi. et. 19, L. 4, Jordald (1896), Jordald (1811). P. 289, bk. tv. c. Xi. et. 34, L.5, Grant (Child). The ed. of 1596 reads Guant.

P. 290, bk. IV. c. xl. st. 45, 1.1, lovely (1596),

loving (1609).

P. 290, bk. iv. c. xi. st. 48, l. 8, Endore (1596), read Eudore (Child).
P. 296, bk. iv. c. xi. st. 52, l. 7, last (so all copies). Some editors have proposed to read both.
P. 292, bk. iv. c. xii. st. 13, ll. 1, 2, Thus whilst, &c. (1596).
Thus whilst his stony heart was toucht with the common was the contraction.

And winds has stony near was concelled (1609).

And mighty courage something mollified (1609).

P. 293, bk. tv. c. xii. st. 21, 1. 9, That it was no old sore (1506), That no old sore it was (1611).

P. 295, bk. v. Prol. st. 2, 1. 2, at (1596), as (1611).

P. 295, bk. v. Prol. st. 2, 1. 9, degendered (1596),

P. 295, bk. v. Prol. st. 2, 1. 9, degendered (1596), as degenered (1611). P. 296, bk. v. Prol. st. 2

7 thirteen. P. 206, bk. v. Prol. st. 9, L 4, se (1596), so (1611).

bk. v. Prol. st. 11, 1. 2, stead (1609),

P. 295, 58. V. You et 11, 1. 2, 2000 (1995), P. 297, bk. v. c. l. st. 4, 1. 1, Irena (1609), Eirena (1595), P. 300, bk. v. c. il. Arg. l. 3, Munera, &c. The 4to, has Momera. The correct reading was adopted by Hughes.

P. 300, bk, v. c. ii. st. 2, 1. 7, As to his (1609), And to his (1596). P. 300, bk. v. c. ii. st. 4, 1. 1, he (1609), she (1596).

P. 301, bk. v. c. ii. st. 11, 1.4, When as. All editions read Who as. Church proposed to read Tho as=then as.

bk. v. c. ii. st. 32, 1. 4, earth (1609),

eure (1596). P. 304, bk. v. c. ii. st. 38, I. 1, these (1596),

Mass (1609). P. 304, bk. v. c. ii. st. 44, l. 4, way (1596),

ceyh (1699), P. 304, bk. v. c. ii. st. 45, l. 8, weight (so all editions), P. 305, bk. v. c. ii. st. 46, l. 9, way (1598), bay

(1609).

P. 308, bk. v. c. Ill. st. 20, 1. 2, adversed (so all editions). Upton suggested had eleved.

P. 510, bk. v. c. iii. st. 40, L6, sel P. 510, bk. v. c. ffi. gt. 40, l. 6, sel-were kere (1596).

P. 510, bk. v. c. iv. st. l, l. 3, fini (1596), Had need of (1611).

P. 311, bk. v. c. iv. st. 8, l. 8, d-desere (1609).

P. 315, bk. v. c. iv. st. 22, l. 2, pin piantond (1611).

P. 314, bk. v. c. iv. st. 16, L.1, mail

P. 314, bk. v. c. iv. ac. sq. curicharm (1396).
P. 314, bk. v. c. iv. at. 33, 1.3, hely (1596), ar an'd life a man (1999).
P. 314, bk. v. c. iv. st. 37, 1.3, ac. copies). Church proposed to alter seconds. copies). Church proposed to ainr m new, so as to rhyme with fer. Mr. proposes to read to feare instead of making a suitable rhyme for seare. P. 314, bk. v. c. iv. st. 51, l.6.

their (1611). P. 314. bk. v. c. iv. st. 39. l. i directe (1609), dolle . . . darrite (1306 P. 323, bk. v. c. vi. st. 5, ll. 6, 7, &c. (so all editions); but we ought

For doses, but hourses; for moneths the She told but werkes, &c. P. 323, hk. v. c. vi. st. 18, L.b., so singulfa (1596).

P. 324, bk. v. c. vi. st. 16, L.7, is Mr. J. P. Collier, following Church compacts = a concerted thing. But the stand if we look upon things as in

Chao.
P. 324, bk, v. c. vi. st. 17, 2. 5, h
Here (1596).
P. 325, bk, v. c. vi. st. 24, L 1, fier

(1609); P. 325, bk. v. c. vi. st. 25, 1, 9, m; suggested Knights. P. 325, bk. v. c. vi. st. 29, 1, 5, 1 glimise (1609), glimpse (1679); P. 326, bk. v. c. vi. st. 32, 1, 7, did (P. 326, bk. v. c. vi. st. 33, 1, 7, e

revenge (1609). 326, bk. v. c. vi. st. 34, L. 7, that (1611).

P. 326, bk. v. c. vi. st. 35, 1, 5, wild

(1609).
P. 327, bk. v. c. vii. st. 5, 1.5, vii.
(1609).
P. 327, bk. v. c. vii. st. 5, 1.2,
(1596), 7 his wreathed (Church).
P. 328, bk. v. c. vii. st. 13, 1.5, i

bk. v. c. vii. st. 13, 1. 5, h be (1611). P. 331, bk. v. c. vii. st. 38, 1, 5, but

(1609). P. 331, bk. v. c. vil. st. 42, l. 3, Pri Princes (1596), P. 335, bk. v. c. vill. st. 34, l. 8, c

uras (1679). P. 326, bk. v. c. viii. et. 40, 1. 6, tw

P. 335, bk. v. c. vill. st. 40, 1. 6, tw. known (1596),
P. 337, bk. v. c. vill. st. 48, 1. 6, ski shither (1600),
P. 337, bk. v. c. vill. st. 50, 1. 8 (1596), coward (1600),
P. 336, 52c. v. c. tx. st. 21, 1. 1, 4mi known (1601).

Ato, of 1596 reads Fons,

v. c. ix. st. 33, 1.8, rebellious (1609), 196). :. v. c. ix. st. 44, l. 1, appose (1596),).
c. v. c. x. st. 6, 1.4, and her (1609), 596) k. V. C. x. st. 8, 1, 4, Idols ? Idol c. V. c. x. st. 18, 1. 8, fastnesse (1596), t. V. c. x. st. 23, 1. 1, whether (1596), I). v. c. x. st. 23, 1. 4, threating (1596), 611). L. V. C. X. st. 26, 1. 3, so now ? now so k. V. c. x. st. 37, l. 6, hard preased preaced (1609).
c. V. c. xi. st. 5, l. 9, have rive (1596), 1). c. v. c. xi. st. 12, l. 4, to them (1596), . v. c. xi. st. 13, 1. 9, through (1609). ds throgh. k. v. c. xi. st. 40, l. 6, shall sure 4to. 1596 omits the two words which are supplied from the folio . v. c. xi. st. 41, 1. 2, too blame (1596), '9). . v. c. xi. st. 41, 1. 6, know (suggested mew (1596) c. xi. st. 54, l. 9, corruptfull k. v. pied (1609). c. v. c. xi. st. 61, 1.7, meed (so all The rhyme requires hyre (Church).
. v. c. xi. st. 61, l. 8, froward (1609), 16). v. c. xii. st. 1, 1. 9, enduren (1609),). . v. c. xii. st. 5, 1. 9, the Eagle (1596), t, v, c. xii. st. 17, l. 5, such (1596), v. c. xii. st, 19, 1. 2, shame (1596), lier). v. c. xii. st. 80, 1.6, hungrily (1596), . 19). . VI. Prol. st. 6, 1. 9, fame (adopted by e (1596) . VI. c. i. st. 8, 1. 7, wretched (1596), VI. c. i. st. 28, 1. 6, ere he (1609), ere thou . vi. c. i. st. 34, l. 2, swound (adopted und (1596). . VI. c. i. st. 37, 1. 5, potshares (1596), 11). ; VI. c. i. st. 40, 1. 9, yearne (1596), st. 3, 1.2, deed and word ; VI. c. ii. id deed (1596) . VI. c. ii. st. 3, 1. 8, eares. All old eves. t. VI. c. ii. st. 3, l. 4, eyes. All old eares. c. ii. st. 89, 1. 2, implements vents (1609).

P. 371, bk. vi. c. iii. st. 1, 1, 3, a man (1596) In 1679 a is omitted P. 372, bk. VI. c. iii. st. 12, 1, 7, sace hole (1596) ? assault (Collier). P. 374, bk. vi. c. iii. st. 24, l. 5, Crying aloud here (1609). The 4to. 1596 has Crying aloud h shere (1609). raine to shew, &c. c. iii. st. 28, 1. 6, soft footine P. 374, bk. vi. (1679), softing foot (1606).
P. 374, bk. vr. c. iii. st. 30, 1. 9, thorough (1609)
The 4to. 1596 has through. P. 375, bk. vr. c. iii. st. 35, l. 3, which (1609) The 4to, 1596 has that. P. 376, bk. VI. c. iii. st. 42, l. 4, approve (1609) reprove (1596). reprove (1596).

P. 376, bk. VI. c. iii. st. 42, l. 7, reprove (1609) approve (1596).

P. 376, bk. VI. c. iii. st. 48, l. 2, and all (so al old editions), ? with all.

P. 378, bk. VI. c. iv. st. 13, l. 8, where (1609) there (1596).
P. 878, bk. VI. c. iv. st. 16, 1. 8, hurt (1611) hurts (1596). P. 380, bk. vi. P. 389, bk. VI. c. iv. st. 31, l. 5, of our un happie paine (so all old copies). Church proposes of this our happie paine.
P. 380, bk. VI. c. iv. st. 35, l. 3, Lo / (1809) Lose (1596) P. 381, 1 bk. VI. c. v. Arg. l. 1, Serena (Hughes) Matilda (1596). P. 384, bk. vr. c. v. st. 28, l. 2, lives (1596), ? Hwe Professor Child prints lived. P. 385, bk. vi. c. v. st. 36, 1.4, of (1609), e P. 385 bk. VI. c. v. st. 39, 1. 8, gree (1609) glee (1596). P. 385, bk. vi. c. v. st. 41, 1. 2, there (1609) The 4to. has their. P. 386, bk. vi. c. vi. st. 4, 1. 4, Of which (1596) In which (1611). P. 387, bk. vi. c 4to 1596 has Make. VI. c. vi. st. 11, 1. 9, Makes. Th P. 387, bk. VI. c. vi. st. 17, l. 7, Calepin (Hughes), Calidore (1596), P. 389, bk. VI. c. vi. st. 35, l. 6, Aght (1609) right (1596) P. 891, bk. vi. c. vii. st. 3, 1. 7, armed (1609) The 4to, has arm'd. P. 892, bk. vi. c. vii. st. 15, 1. 9, yearned (1596) earned (1609). P. 395, bk. vi. c. vii. st. 38, 1. 7, through (1609) The 4to. 1596 has throgh. P. 395, bk. vi. c. vii. st. 40, 1. 7, tyreling (1596) tyrling (1679).
P. 896, bk. vi. c. viii. st. 3, 1. 9, misust (1596) misus'd (1609). P. 397, bk. vt. c. viii. st. 11, 1.9, two (1609) F. 507, Date of the control of the c For (1596).

P. 400, bk. Tr. c. Till. st. 39, 1. 4, dains
(1596), daintiest (1609).
P. 401, bk. Tr. c. Till. st. 47, 1, 8, toyle (
toyles (1596).

P. 401, bk. vl. c. viii. st. 50, I. 4, 9ky (1596), shee (1609).
P. 402, bk. vl. c. ix. st. iv. l. 9, done (1596), 7 done (Church and Ujton).
P. 405, bk. vl. c. ix. st. 28, l. 6, 5% housest (1596). Some modern editions read the housest P. 405, bk. vl. c. ix. st. 36, l. 3, addrest (1596), % he drest (Church).
P. 406, bk. vl. c. ix. st. 36, l. 3, Ornone (Hughus), Benone (4to. 1596 and all old editions).
P. 406, bk. vl. c. ix. st. 36, l. 9, bought (1596).

P. 400, bk. VI. c. ix. et. 45, l. 9, bought (1596), \$ sought (Church).
P. 407, bk. VI. c. ix. et. 46, l. 5, did dwell (1611), did well (1596).

P. 407, bk. VI. c. x. t The 4to, has on the port. bk, VI. c. x. st. 2, 1, 9, in the port (1609).

The 4to, has on the port.
P. 409, bk, VI. c. x. st. 22, 1. 5, Eacides. The
4to, has Ecides.
P. 409, bk, VI. c. x. st. 24, 1. 7, froward (1811),
forward (1896).
P. 410, bk, VI. c. x. st. 34, 1. 9, her. Coffler
suggests even before.
P. 411, bk, VI. c. x. st. 36, 1. 6, he (omitted in
all old celitions).
P. 411, bk, VI. c. x. st. 42, 1. 5, forthe (1998).

P. 429, bk. vii. c. vi. st. 54, I. 8, champain (1811), champian (1809). P. 429, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 2, I. 3, feeble. The

folios have sable.

P. 430, bk. vii. v. vii. st. 8, l. 9, showe (1611), show (1609). P. 430, bk. vii. e. vii. st. 9, l. 1, hard (1611),

heard (1609).
P. 430, bk. vil. c. vii. st. 9, 1.7, kinde. The folios have kindes.

430, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 10, 1. 7, they :-

P. 430, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 12, 1. 5, Peleus (1611).
P. 430, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 12, 1. 5, Peleus (1611).
P. 430, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 16, 1. 3, My (1609),
My (1611).
P. 432, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 28, 1. 3, bloosmes
did (1609). The ed. of 1611 omits did.
D. 123, bk. vii. c. vii. st. 28, 1. 5, rode (so all

my (1611),
P. 432, bk. vII. c. vii. st. 28, l. 3, bloosmes
did (1609). The ed. of 1611 omits did.
P. 433, bk. vII. c. vii. st. 41, l. 5, rode (so all
copies); the rhyme requires rade.
P. 433, bk. vII. c. vii. st. 41, l. 7, Idean
(Upton). The folios read Icean.
P. 435, bk. vII. c. vii. st. 55, l. 7, soine (1609).

Jaine (1611).

P. 436, bk. VII. c. ville at. 1, 1.7, to cast (1608), and cast (1611)

P. 436, bk, vm. c. viii, st. 2, 1.5, abback (1609). P. 436, bk, vm. c. viii, st. 1, 1, c, vill, S. J. L.

an optative one signifying 'U a of hosts grant me the enjoymen nal.' Perhaps Subsects upt to a

P. 436, the vir. c, vill. st. (1609 and 1611) ? Safebatts (Chur P. 436, the vill. c, vill. st. 7. (1611), Sabbaoth God (1609).

THE SHEPHEARDES CALL

P. 440, L. 4, Nobleme (1873), a P. 440, L. 12, my (1579), sky (1611 P. 441, col. 1, 1. 16, of few (1579), s P. 441, col. 2, 1, 25, creasing ((1597).

P. 442, col. 1, 1, 5, commun. The P. 442, col. 1, L 49, mme (1586),

1581). P. 442, col. 1, 1, 57, 10 be con (1597), straungers to be consisted (1597), expect (1579) editions read unright.

P. 443, col. 1, 1. 24, as one that (1579).

P. 443, col. 2, L. 21, rare (1879), P. 443, col. 2, II. 1, 2 from bottom, the leath (1897).

P. 444, col. 1, L. 13, more . , . st . . and (1579). P. 444, col. 1, 1. 17, Invention.

has Inverscion. P. 444, col. 1, 1, 18, these (1597), I P. 444, col. 1, 1, 24, definition. T

P. 444, col. I, 1. 35, Æglogues (1 1579 reads Æclogues.

P. 444, col. 1, 1, 40, contains [P. 445, col. 1, 1, 4, Abib. All old

P. 445. col. 2, 1, 8, entraunce,

P. 445, col. 2, 1. 13, itselfe (1397), P. 445, col. 2, 1. 12, 22, of the thother (1579), of the one part . . . of P. 445, col. 2, 1. 25, Shepheard heard (1579).

P. 446 (Januarie), Arg. L 1, Atm (

P. 446, Arg. 1, 5, delights (1579), d P. 446, L 34, bloomes (1579), dow P. 447 (Glosse), col. 2, L, 1, scho st

persons (1597).

omitted in 1597

(1597).

P. 462 (Glosse), col. 1, 1, 4, oracles (1579), miracles (1597). P. 462 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 8, passengers (1579),

P. 462 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 1 from bottom, Algrind

P. 462 (Glosse), col. 1, 1. 1 from bottom, Aigrina (1597), Algrim (1579). P. 462 (Glosse), col. 2, 1l. 32, 34, of whom . . . Prometheus, in 1579 and 1581, but omitted in 1586. P. 462, col. 2, 1. 52, hys (1579), her (1581). P. 463, col. 1, 1. 2, and (1579), or (1588). P. 463, col. 2, 1. 15, agreeing (1597), a greeting (1597), a greeting (1597).

P. 463, col. 2, 1. 22, beware (1579), to beware (1597). P. 464 (JUNE), col. 1, l. 16, shroude (1611), shouder (1579).

P. 464, col. 1, l. 24, rarenes (1611), ravene (1579, 1581, 1586).

P. 464, col. 2, l. 98, painfull (1579), plainefull (1581, 1586).

P. 465 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 4 from bottom, all is

P. 465 (Glosse), col. 2, 1. 15, Lorde (1579), Lorde

of (1597).
P. 465 (Glosse), col. 2, 1. 16, noblesse (1579), noble-

```
RUARIE), 1, 17, threttie (1579), thirtie
t, youngth (1579), youth (1597).
T, hast (1597), hath (1579).
Iadvaunce (1579), to advance (1597).
2, overcrawed (1597), overawed (1579).
11, oft (1579), of (1597).
189, To this the (1579), To this this
8, to the earth (1579), to the ground
        col. 1, 1. 9 from the bottom,
sse), col. 1, 1. 9 from the bottom,
. All 4tos. read meane.
see), col. 2, l. 11 from bottom, giveth
ibleme), col. 1, 1, 10, were (1579),
nbleme), col. 1, 1. 15, rash-headed raded (1597).
pleme), col. 2, 1. 8, God (1597), Gods
bleme), col. 1, l. l. with him (1579),
RCH), col. 1, 1. 4, nighes (to be pro-
dissyllable). The 4tos. read nighest,
righeth.
1, 1. 6, winters (1579), winter (1597).
1, 1, 40, als (1579 and 1597), alas
ilyes Embleme), l. 2, Gods (Child).
is read God
se), col. 1, 1. 9 from bottom, Goddesse Ito. 1579 has Goddes.
ese), col. 1, 1. 5, winged love (1597),
(1579).
UL), (Arg.), l. 2, herein (1579), here
```

nesse (1597) P. 466 (Glosse), col. 1, 13, of (1597), of the (1581). P. 466 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 12, undermyne (1597), undermynde (1579).
P. 466 (JULYE), col. 2, l. 35, witlesse (1597), weetlesse (1579). (esse (1019).
P. 466, col. 2, 1. 58, hyllye (1579), holy (1597).
P. 467, col. 1, 1. 69, forsayd (1597), foresayd (1579).
P. 467, col. 1, 1. 77, recourse (1581), resourse (1579).
P. 467, col. 1, 1. 99, a starre (1611).
The 4tos. P. 467, col. 1, l. 129, And (1886), As (1579, 1881). P. 468, col. 1, l. 191, other (1579), others (1897). P. 468, col. 1, l. 197, welter (1579), weltre (1897). P. 468 (Thomalins Embleme). The old editions), 1.4, alienate (1579), alienated (1597). 1, 1.64, angelick (1579), angel-like 1, 1.135, finenesse (1597), finesse (1579). me), col. 2, l. 12 from bottom, meanesse have Palinodes Embleme. P. 468 (Glosse), col. 1, 1. 10, lapsus (1579), lapsu es (1597). (1597)180), col. 2, 1. 32, defly (1597), deafly 468 (Glosse), col. 2, 1. 7, then (1597), and (1579)2, 1. 18 from bottom, behight (1611).
1, 1581, 1586, 1597, read bedight.
se), col. 1, 1. 7, coronation (1579), car-468 (Glosse), col. 2, 1.9 from bottom, that (1579), the (1586). P. 469 (Glosse), col. 1, 1. 17, of the (1597), of (1579)se), col. 2, l. 6, slea (1579), slay (1597). se), col. 2, l. 9, of (1579), by (1597). se), col. 2, l. 19, blinded (1579, 1581, 469 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 24, of a (1579), of the (1597). P. 470 (AUGUST), (Arg.), L 2, choose (1579), chose Collier, who reads blended, is wrong (1597)t Todd has no authority for printing P. 470, col. 1, 1, 10, did passe (1597), didet passe 611 has blended. YE), (Arg.), l. 1, Afte (1597), Arste P. 470, col. 1, 1. 13, that mischaunce (1597), that neve mischaunce (1579).
P. 470, col. 2, l. 46, hethereard, road hetherward.
P. 470, col. 2, l. 53, holy (1897), holly (1879).
P. 471, col. 1, l. 84, thy hart (1579), my hart 2, l. 19, no (1579), ne (1581). 1, l. 54, great (1587), gread (1579). 1, l. 82, forsay (1597), foresay (1579). 1, l. 150, say I (1597, 1611), sayd I (1597).P. 471, col. 1, l. 104, curelesse (Collier), All editions read carriesse.

P. 471, col. 2, L. 162, debarres... from (1579),
ichars... of (1611).

P. 471, col. 2, L. 166, woodes (1697). The size. LETT 1, 1. 159, witen (1579), twiten (1611). 1, 1, 164, none (1579), no (1597).
2, 1, 211, the (1579, 1581, 1586, 1597), . 1, 1. 278, forestall (1597), forstall has woddes. P. 471, col. 2, 1, 167, or (1579), nor (1597).

```
472, col. 2, ll. 14, 15, so . . . partes (1579),
                                                                                                                                                                                              DRU II 1094.
P. 483 (Glosse), col. 2, 1. 7, Atropos daught
The 4to. 1579 reads Atropodas ughters.
P. 483 (Embleme), col. 2, 1. 5, to (1579), of (158
P. 484 (DECEM.), col. 1, 1. 29, rected (161).
 omitted by 1597.
         P. 473 (SEPTEMBER), col. 1, 1. 6, dirke (1579),
 P. 478 (SEPTEMBER), 601. 1, 1. 6, avac (161).
P. 478, col. 1, 1. 13, ripeth (1579), rippeth (1597).
P. 473, col. 1, 1. 22, I wens (1579), weele (1597).
P. 473, col. 1, 1. 24, estate (1597), astate (1579).
P. 474, col. 1, 1. 99, For-thy (1579), For the
                                                                                                                                                                                               4tos, read wreaked
                                                                                                                                                                                              P. 484, col. 2, 1. 43, derring doe. The 4to. 1. has derring to, but derring doe is in the Glose p. 4.
                                                                                                                                                                                              P. 484, col. 2, 1. 76, season (1579), loathing [16]
P. 484, col. 2, 1. 76, season (1579), reason [16]]
P. 485, col. 1, 1. 89, tenrage (1587), to tari
(1611).
P. 474, col. 1. 112, whote (1579), hote (1597).
P. 474, col. 1. 1. 123, dorn (1579), do (1597).
P. 474, col. 2. 1. 144, stay (1579), stray (1579).
P. 474, col. 2. 1. 145, peed. The 4tos. have yeeld; e folio 1611 reads yead.
P. 474, col. 2. 1. 160, to (1597), too (1579).
P. 474, col. 2. 1. 160, to (1597), too (1579).
P. 474, col. 2. 1. 160, to (1579), pricte (1579).
P. 476, col. 2. 1. 257, her (1579), his (1597).
P. 476 (Glosse), col. 1, 1. 1 from bottom, Thrise.
The 4to. 1579 has Thes: fol. 1611 Thrice.
P. 477 (OCTOBER), col. 2, 1. 75, be forst to fayne (1579), to forst to faine (1611).
 (1611)
                                                                                                                                                                                               (1579)
                                                                                                                                                                                                      P. 485, col. 2, 1. 145, gather together ye (1597), gath
                                                                                                                                                                                              ye togither (1579),
P. 486 (Glosse), col. 1, 1. 7, or (1579), of (187).
P. 486 (Glosse), col. 1, 1. 21, nor (1579), or (187).
P. 486 (Glosse), col. 1, 1. 27, teaper (1579), kep
                                                                                                                                                                                              (1597).
P. 486 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 41, in (1579), in 4
                                                                                                                                                                                               (1597)
                                                                                                                                                                                                      P. 486 (Glosse), col. 2, 1. 16, knewest (1579). know
                                                                                                                                                                                               (1597)
  (1611)
                                                                                                                                                                                              P. 486 (Glosse), col. 2, 1, 20, our (how sur i 1579), how is omitted by 1597.
P. 486 (Glosse), col. 2, 1, 23, Thus. The 4to. 15
         P. 477, col. 2, 1. 79, thy place (1597), the place
  (1579).
(1579).
P. 477, col. 2, l. 80, doe (1579), doest (1597).
P. 477, col. 2, l. 103, weightye. The 4to. 1579 has wightye, the folio 1611 weightie.
P. 478, col. 2, l. 12 from bottom, Arcadian. The 4to. 1579 has Aradian, 4to. 1597, fol. 1611 Arabian.
P. 479 (Glosse), col. 1, l. 11, is. So all old editions
                                                                                                                                                                                              has This.
                                                                                                                                                                                                      P. 486 (Embleme), col. 1, 1, 3, of Poetry (in 157).
                                                                                                                                                                                               is omitted by 1597.
                                                                                                                                                                                              P. 486 (Embleme), col. 1, 1. 8, sec . . . sec. 8 in all the 4tos. Some mod. editions read sea.
                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                             . ner. B
P. 4/9 (Glosse), col. 1, 1. 11, 15. So an oid editions (?) in.
P. 479 (Glosse), col. 1, 11. 27, 28, from stately discourse (1579), to stately course (1577, 1611).
P. 479 (Glosse), col. 1, 1. 32, red knoven to be Virgit (1579), red knew noble Virgit (1587, 1611).
P. 470 (Glosse), col. 1, 1. 39 (Glosse), col. 1, 1. 30 
                                                                                                                                                                                                      P. 486 (Embleme), col. 2, 1. 2, hath (in 1579) i
                                                                                                                                                                                             omitted by 1597.
P. 486 (Embleme), col. 2, 1. 5, quod (1597).
                                                                                                                                                                                             (1579).
P. 486 (Epilogue), col. 2, 1, 1 from bottom. depil
(1579), displease (1597).
         P. 479 (Glosse), col. 1, 1. 88, flocks (1579), flocke
 (1597).
P. 479 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 2, by fire; omitted in
 4to. 1597.
                                                                                                                                                                                                                                       THE RUINES OF TIME.
        P
                 479 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 13, layde (1597), lay
(1579)
                                                                                                                                                                                                    P. 493, 1. 361, to (1591), do (1611).
P. 493, 1. 363, coretize. The edition 1591 real
        P.479 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 40, Petrarch, saying (1579),
 Petrarchs saying (1597).
P. 479 (Glosse, col. 2, 1.12 from bottom, had (1597), hath (1579).
                                                                                                                                                                                             covertize.
                                                                                                                                                                                             P. 494, l. 414, made (1591), ? had (Jortin).
P. 494, l. 447, For he that now, &c. (1391 such as now have most the world at will (1611).
(1597), hath (1579).
P. 479 (Glosse), col. 2, l. 2 from bottom, is (1597),
                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                        (1591), Pa
```

(1611).

with.

worlds.

APPENDIX I.

but in 1597

P. 488 (Glosse), col. 1, 1, 17, enjoy (1579), rec (1597). P. 483 (Glosse), col. 1, 1, 25, dired (1597), de P. 483 (Glosse), col. 2, 1. 5, signe. Not in 11

P. 494, 1. 451, him that (1591), such as (1611)

P. 494, 1. 455, Nor alive, &c. (1591) Alice nor den be of the Muse adorned (1611). P. 494, 1. 493, brickle (1591), brittle (1611). P. 495, 1. 541, Ocean (1611), Ocean (1591). P. 495, 1. 551, which (1611). The ed. 1591 red

P. 495, 1. 571, Was but earth, &c. (1591), Was but of earth and with her weightinesse (1611)

P. 496, 1. 574, worlds (1611), words (1591). P. 496, 1. 647, bred was (1611), was bred (1891). P. 496, 1. 664, the earth (1591) th' earth (1611). P. 496, 1. 676, worldes. All old editions

P. 494, 1. 454, O let the man (1591), O let not then

698

u (1579)

(1597)

(1579).

in fol. 1611.

ı

P. 471, col. 2, l. 172, as (1597), a (1579).
P. 472, col. 2, l. 198, nigheth (1579). The 4to.
1597 has higheth = hieth, hastens.
P. 472 (610ses), col. 2, l. 4, shee, omitted in 4to.
1579, is supplied from the edition of 1597.
P. 470 col. 2 ll. 14 15 15

P. 480 (Glosse), col. 1, 1. 8, forth (1579), out

P. 480 (Glosse), col. 1, 1. 9, whom seeing Vulcane so faire (1579), whom Vulcan seeing so faire (1597, 1611).

P. 480 (NOVEMBER), (Arg.), 1.2, albe (1597), albeit

P. 481, col. 1, 1. 78, you is not in 4tos., but occurs

P. 481, col. 1, 1. 85, hath displayde. The 4to, 1579 F. 401, Col. 1, 1. Co., man angula, 1. Treads doth displaye.

P. 481, col. 1, 1. 98, heame (1597), heme (1579),

P. 481, col. 1, 11. 98, 99, him (1597), hem (1579),

P. 481, col. 2, 1. 115, colourd (1587), coloured

astoined.

S OF THE MUSES.

ew, (?) in rew. Some mod, editions read

gults (1611), singulfs (1591).
it winged God (1591), the winged

petresse (1591), Poetesse in some

ing (1611), loving (1591).

RGIL'S GNAT.

es (1591), ? wave teart (1611). The ed. 1591 has

craan. The ed. 1591 reads As-! (1611) is omitted by 4to. 1591.

e (1591), fler (1611).
oat. The 4to. 1591. reads threat.

tering (1611), flattering (1591). laday (1591), weladay (1611), stile (1611), stye (1591). Worces. The 4to. 1591 reads bil-

rccan (1591) ? Ægean.

L HUBBERD'S TALE.

sip (1611), Goship (1591). Ted upon high (1591), lifted high

'idēs (1611), worlds (1591). tch (1591), thatch (1611). rried (1591), ? cover'd (Collier).

riges (1611), dirges (1591). (1591), ere (1611). e (1591), hee (1611). (in 1611), omitted by 1591. ntrie (1591). This word m ord must be

ree syllables (Todd). Perhaus othefull (1591), ? slothefull (Colindle. The 4to, 1591 and the fol.

whether. The 4to. 1591 has whistopt. The 4to 1591 and fol. 1611 , whither. The 4to. 1591 reads

stal'd (1591), stall'd (1611).

RUINES OF ROME.

ausolus. The 4to 1591 has Mane Giants old (1611), the old Giants The line is defective; ow (1611), Omitted by the 4to. ornaments. The 4to. has orna-

P. 529, 1. 270, Tethis (1591), Thetys (1611). P. 529, 1. 272, dimned, read dimmed. P. 531, 1. 414, stackes (1611), stalkes (1591).

MUITOPOTMOS.

P. 532, 1. 34, yongth (1591), youth (1611). P. 533, 1. 149, champain o're he. The 4to. 1591 has champion he, but the fol. 1611 reads champaine o're he.

P. 534, 1. 250, dispacing. The 4to. has displacing. P. 535, 1. 335, hayrie (1591), ayrie (1611). P. 535, 1. 354, enfested (1591), ? enfesterd (Col-

lier). P. 536. 1. 370, framde craftily (1611), did slily

1. 1000, 1. 101, frame craftily (1611), did tilly frame (1691).
P. 536, 1. 392, hateful (1691), fatall (1611).
P. 536, 1. 431, yongthly. The 4to. has yougthly, but see p. 532, 1. 34.

VISIONS OF THE WORLDS VANITIE.

P. 537, st. 3, 1. 11, did. The 4to. 1591 has doth. P. 538, st. 8, 1. 12, native (1611), nature (1591).

VISIONS OF BELLAY. P. 538, st. 2, 1.9, On. The 4to. 1591 reads one. P. 538, st. 2, 1. 9, Afrike golds, ? Afrikes gold. P. 539, st. 9, 1. 1, astonied. The 4to. 1591 reads

The following is an earlier version of 'The Visions of Bellay,' which is found in the 'THEATRE FOR WORLDLINGS.' 'A Theatre wherein be repre-

FOR WORLDLINGS. 'A Theatre wherein be represented as wel the miseries and calamities that follow the voluptuous Worldlings, As also the greate joyes and pleasures which the faithfull do enjoy. An Argument both profitable and delectable, to all that sincerely love the word of God. Devised by S, John vander Noodl. Seene and allowed according to the order appointed. Imprinted at London by Henry Bynneman. Anno Domini. 1569. 8vo. Then follow two pages of Latin verses—'In commendationem operis ab Nobiliss. et virtutis Studiosissimo Domino, Ioanne vander Noodt Patricio Antuerpiensi æditi, men.' and 'Doctor Gerardus Goossenius Medicus, men. and 'Doctor Gerardus Goossehus Medicus, Physicus, et Poeta Brabant, moder, in Zolium Octastichon.' And a Dedication to Q. Elizabeth, dated 'At London your Majesties Citic and seate royal. The 25. of May, 1569.' and signed, 'Your Majesties most humble servant. Ican cander Noodt.' Next come Spenser's six 'Visions of Petrarch'.

end, and then follow the remaining poems, entitled 'Sonets,' with descriptive woodcuts.
Then follow 107 leaves of Prose, entitled 'A briefe declaration of the Authour upon his visions, taken out of the holy scriptures, and dyvers Ora-tors, Poetes, Philosophers, and true histories. Translated out of French into Englishe by Theo-dore Roest.' The following is an extract. 'And

(called Epigrams), with four additional lines at the

to sette the vanitie and inconstance of worldly and transitorie thyngs, the livelier before your eyes, I have broughte in here twentie sighter or vysions, and caused them to be graven, to the ende al men may see that with their eyes, whiche I go aboute to express by writing, to the delight and plesure of the eye and eares, according unto the saying of Horses. Owne tulit punctum, qui miscult utils duled.

That is to say,

He that teacheth pleasantly and well,

Doth in eche poynt all others excell.

Of which oure visions the learned Poets M. Or which oure visions the learned Peete M, Francisco Petrarcho Gentleman of Florence, did Invent and write in Tuscan the sur fivie, after such types as has had loved honestly the space of .xxi. yeares a fatre, gracious, and a noble Damosell, named Laurette, or (as it pleased him best) Laure, borne of Avinion, who afterward hapmed to die, he being in Italy, for whose death (to shewe his great grief) he mourned ten yeares together, and amongest many of his songs and sorowfull lamentations, devised and made a Ballade or song, containing the song existence, which licause they serve wel to our purpose, i have out of the Bradants speeche, turned them sate the Englishe longue. Tol. 13.

'The other ten visions next ensuing, ar described of one loachim du Bellay, Gentleman of France, the which also, bleause they serve to our purpose, if have translated them out of Dutch into English: fol. 14.

SONETS.

IT was the time when rest the gift of Gods Sweetely sliding into the eyes of men, Doth drowne in the forgetfulnesse of slepe, The carefull travailes of the painefull day;
Then did a ghost appeare before mine eyes
On that great rivers banke that runnes by Rome,
And calling me then by my propre name,
He bade me upwarde unto heaven looke. He bade fite upwarte unto neaven toole. He cride to me, and loe (quod he) beholde, What under this great Temple is containde, Loe all is nought but flying vanitie. So I knowing the worldes unstedirastnesse, Sith onely God surmountes the force of ty In God alone do stay my confidence.

On hill, a frame an hundred cubites hie

I sawe, an hundred pillers eke about,
All of fine Dlamant decking the front,
And fashiond were they all in Dorike wise.
Of bricke, ne yet of marble was the wall,
But shining Christall, which from top to base
out of deepe vaute threw forth a thousand rayes
Upon an hundral steps of purest golde.
Golde was the parget: and the sielyng eke
Did shine all sealy with fine golden plates,
The floor was Jaspis, and of Emerande.
O worldes valuencese. A sodein earthquake loe,
Shaking the hill even from the bottome deepe,
Threwe downe this building to the lowest stone. On hill, a frame an hundred cubites hie

Then did appears to me a sharped spire Of diamant, ten feete eche way in square, Justly proportionde up unto his height, So hie as mought an Archer reache with sight, Upon the top therof was set a pot Made of the mettall that we honour most.

And in this golden vessell couched were
The ashes of a mightie Emperour.

Upon toure corners of the two there by Tu beare the frame, foure great Law of go A worthic tombe for such a worthic caps. Also, pought in this worlde but grish who A sodaine tempest from the leaves, I way With flushe [?flashe] stroke down the

I am raisde up on pillers of Ivoria.

Whereof the bases were of richest pills. The chapters Alabanter, Christial fries. The double front of a triumphall size. On eche side portraide was a victoria. With golden wings in habite of a Nymba And set on hie upon triumphall chars. The auncient glorie of the Romans leads. The worke did show it selfo not wrently But rather made by bis owns shifted hand. But rather made by bis owns shifted hand. That forgeth thunder dartes for Jore is at Let me no more see faire thing under basis Sith I have seene so faire at thing at life. With sodaine falling broken all to have

Then I behelds the faire Dodonian tree.
Upon seven hilles throw forth his dislocation of the control of the con Sende forth agains a twinne of forked tres

I saw the birde that dares beholde the Some With feeble flight venture to mount to hear By more and more she gan to trust bir wa Still following th' example of hir dename I saw hir rise, and with a larger flight Surmount the toppes even of the hiest his And pierce the cloudes, and with hir wareche

reache
The place where is the temple of the Gots.
There was she lost, and sodemly I saw
Where tombling through the aire in longe if
All flaming downe she fell upon the plain.
I saw hir bodie turned all to dust.
And saw the foule that shunnes the chemis Out of hir ashes as a worme arise

Then all astonned with this nightly ghest I saw an hideous body big and strong. Long was his beard, and side did hang his a grisly forehed and Saturnelike face. Leaning against the bally of a pot He shed a water, whose outgushing struck Ran flowing all along the creekie shear Where once the Troyan Duke with Turnel And at his feete a bitch Wolfe did gives To two yong babes. In his right hand he The tree of years, in left the conquesting he The tree of years, in left the conquesting he Then schmid the Person Laura he.

ivers side, a wailing Nimphe, armes with thousand sighs to heaven, r plaint to falling rivers sound, faire visage and golden haire, uod she) this whilome honored face? y glory and the auncient praise. orldes hap was reposed,

f Gods and man I worshipt was? e it not that civile bate e spoile and bootie of the world, w Hydra mete to be assailde hundred such as Hercules, springing heds of monstrous crimes, roes and Caligulaes ing forth to rule this croked shore.

I saw a kindled flame, ke waves with triple point to heaven, cense of precious Ceder tree like odor did perfume the aire. hite, well fetherd on hir winges flie up to the throne of Gods, with most plesant melodie up to heaven in the smoke fire the faire dispersed rayes abrode a thousand shining leames, 1 dropping of a golden shoure h the glystering flame. O grevous erstwhile so pleasaunt scent did yelde, now did breathe corrupted smel.

1 spring rise out of a rocke, istall against the Sunny beames, 3 yellow like the shining land, Pactol drives mon the walne actol drives upon the plaine at arte and nature strived to joyne place all pleasures of the eye. heare a noise alluring slepe

nd benches shone as Ivorie, Nymphes sate side by side about, nie hilles a naked rout of Faunes s cry assembled on the place, their feete uncleane the water fouled, the seats, and droue the Nimphs to

ven at the time when Morpheus doth appeare unto our eyes, e th' inconstance of the heavens : eat Typhæus sister come, I bravely with a morian armed. she seemde to matche the Gods. shore, harde by a violent streame, Trophee over all the worlde vanquisht kings gronde at hir feete, in shamefull wise bounde at their

with so dreadfull sight afrayde, avens warre against hir tho, r striken fall with clap of thunder, t noyse I start in sodaine wonder.

eighth. thirteenth, and fourteenth 'ellay,' which are in Spenser's transla-are not in the 'Theatre for World-There growes lifes truite unto the Churches good

lings; but four others are substituted, of which the writer thus speaks: 'And to the ende we myght speaks more at large of the thing. I have taken foure visions out of the recelations of S. John, where as the Holy Ghost by S. John setteth him (Antichrist) out in his colours.' Fol. 20.

I saw an ugly beast come from the sea, That seven heads, ten crounes, ten hornes did beare, Having theron the vile blaspheming name. The crueil Leopard she resembled much: The cruell Leopard see resemoise much: Feete of a beare, a Lions throte she had. The mightie Dragon gave to hir his power. One of hir heads yet there I did esple, Still freshly bleeding of a grievous wounde. One cride aloude. What one is like (quod he) One cride aloude. What one is like (quod he)
This honoured Dragon, or may him withstande?
And then came from the sea a savage beast,
With Dragons speche, and shewde his force by fire,
With wondrous signes to make all wights adore
The beast, in setting of hir image up.

I saw a Woman sitting on a beast Before mine eyes, of Orenge colour hew: Horrour and dreadfull name of blasphemie Filde hir with pride. And seven heads I saw, Ten hornes also the stately beast did beare. Ten normes also the stately beast did beare. She seemed with glorie of the scarlet faire, And with fine perie and golde puft up in heart. The wine of hooredome in a cup she bare. The name of Mysterie writ in hir face; The bloud of Martyrs dere were hir delite. Most flerce and fell this woman seemde to me. An Angell then descending downe from Heaven, With thondring voice cride out aloude, and sayd, Now for a truth great Babylon is fallen.

Then might I see upon a white horse set The faithfull man with flaming countenaunce, His head did shine with crounce set therupon. The worde of God made him a noble name. His precious robe I saw embrued with bloud. Then saw I from the heaven on horses white, A puissant armie come the selfe same way. Then cried a shining Angell as me thought That birdes from aire descending downe on earth Should warre upon the kings, and eate their fissh.
Then did I see the beast and Kings also
Joinyng their force to slea the faithfull man.
But this fierce hatefull beast and all hir traine Is pitilesse throwne downe in pit of fire.

I saw new Earth, new Heaven, sayde Saint John. And loe, the sea (quod he) is now no more. The holy Citic of the Lorde, from hye Descendeth garnisht as a loved spouse. A voice then sayde, beholde the bright abode Of God and men. For he shall be their God, And all their teares he shall wipe cleane away. Hir brightnesse greater was than can be founde, Square was this Citie, and twelve gates it had. Eche gate was of an orient perfect pearle, Eche gate was of an orient persons stone.

The houses golde, the pavement precious stone. A lively streame, more cleare than Christall is, Ranne through the mid, sprong from triums

THE VISIONS OF PETRARCH.

P. 541, st. 1, 1.5, mole (1591), mought (Theatre for

F. 041, st. 2, 1. 9, that (1591), this (T. for W.).
P. 541, st. 2, 1. 19, those (1591), thee (T. for W.).
P. 541, st. 2, 11. 23—28. In the T. for W. these

lines are as follows: Strake on a rock, that under water lay

O great misfortune, O great griefe, I say, Thus in one moment to see lost and drownde

Thus in one moment is set tost and arounder So great riches, as lyke can not be founde. P. 541, st. 3, 1. 29, The (1591), Then (T. for W.). P. 541, st. 3, 1. 30, the (1591), a (T. for W.). P. 541, st. 3, 1. 31, Amidst (1591), Amidde (T.

F. 541, st. 3, 1. 35, That with, &c. (1591), My spriles were ravisht with these pleasures there (T.

for W.). P. 541, st. 4, 1. 43,

a (1591), the (T. for W.).

F. 541, 5t. 4, 1. 43, a (1591), the (T. for W.).
P. 541, st. 4, 1. 49, To the soft (1591), Unto the gentle (T. for W.)
P. 541, st. 4, 1. 50, That my glad heart, &c. (1591), The sight wheref dyd make my heart rejoyce (T. for

W.).
P. 541, st 4, l. 51, But, while herein, &c. (1591), But while I toke herein, &c. (T. for W.).
P. 541, st. 4, ll. 55, 56, are omitted by T. for W.
P. 541, st. 5, l. 63, at last (1591), at length (T. for W.).

P. 541, st. 5, ll. 68-70, These three lines are not in T. for W. but instead we have the following concluding line:—For pitic and love my heart yet burnes in paine.

P. 541, st. 6, 1. 72, thinking yet (1591), in thinking (T. for W.)

2. 541, st. 6, 1. 81, on (1591), in (T. for W.)

That so, 1, 181, on (183), in (1.10 f W.).
P. 541, st. 6, 1.82, and sorrougul annoy (1591),
That dothe our hearts anoy (T. for W.),
P. 541, st. 6, 1l. 83, 84, are omitted by T. for W.
P. 542, st. 7. This stanza does not occur in T.

for W., but the four following lines are added to the Epigrams: dy Song thus now in thy Conclusions.

Say boldly that these same SIX VISIONS Do yelde unto thy lorde a sweete request, Ere it be long within the earth to rest. P. 542, st. 7, l. 85, behold. The 4to, 1591 reads

DAPHNAIDA

1. 79, unpitied, unplained (1591). Some P. 043, 1. 78, unputed, unpidened (1091). mod. editions read unpited and unplained. P. 644, ll. 159, 160, fro (1591), from (1611). P. 547, l. 391, ttl (1596), telt (1591). P. 547, l. 478, starres (1591), starre (1596). P. 648, l. 487, deepe (1591), deere (1596).

COLIN CLOUTS COME HOME AGAINE.

COLIN CLOUTS COME HOME AGAINM.
P. 549, l. l., knowen. The 4to, 1895 reads knowne.
P. 550, l. 46, glorious bright, i.e. glorious bright
one (1995). Some mod. editions read glory bright.
P. 550, l. 88, lasse (1611), losse (1695).
P. 550, l. 91, chose (1695), choose (1611),
P. 551, l. 168, singuits (1611), singuifs (1595.)
P. 552, l. 315, bordrags. The 4to, 1895 reads bodrags.

P. 553, 1. 382, there is Corydon. The 4to. 1595 roads there is a Corydon.

The od. 1506 mil P. 554, L. 487, Urania, P. 555, 1. 600, clusters. The 4to. 1886 reads shaled P. 555, 1. 601, braumches (suggested by Collect The 4to. 1895 has bunches.

The 4to. 1936 has benches.
P. 556, 1. 767, durat. The ed. 1835 has derei.
P. 556, 1. 757, fare (1611), far (1335).
P. 566, 1. 762, drownded (1535), drownd (1611).
P. 557, 1. 860, her (referring to earth). Some editions read their.

P. 557, 1. 861, life-giving. All old editions real

like giving.
P. 558, 1. 884, the creatures (1611). Ed. 138 in their creatures. Collier suggests these.

ASTROPHE

P. 559, 1. 22, and weetingly (1593)? unreduct. P. 560, 1. 50, often (1611), of (1595). Did sur-ser intend to write of had sighed? P. 560, 1. 53, sight i. e. sighed (1595), night (1611). P. 560, 1. 89, needeth (1611), need (1895). P. 561, 1. 149, beare (1595), biere (1611).

THE DOLEFULL LAY OF CLORINGA

P. 562, 1. 85, him did see (1611), him see (1595). P. 562, 1. 50, fro me (1611), me fro (1595). THE MOURNING MUSE OF THESTYLES.

P. 563, 1. 20, thy ireful, All old editions real

their ireful. 24, Seyne. The old editions read hyper. P. 563, 1. 193, to thee let fall. Some editions read to let thee fall.

A PASTORALL AEGLOGUE

P. 566, 1. 29, testified. Ed. 1595 has testied. P. 566, 1. 41, hard (1595), and (1611).

AN ELEGIE. P. 568, 1. 8, glasse. The ed. 1595 reads graw. P. 568, 1. 72, night (1611), might (158). P. 569, 1. 109, never (1611), ever (1595). P. 569, 1. 134, Astrophili. The original has in

rophrill. P. 569, 1, 150, To short-liede (1593). Some ditions read The short-livde. P. 569, 1. 155, nor (1595), or (1611)

P. 559, 1. 177, do (1595), doth (1611). P. 570, 1. 181, This word (1611), His word (188). P. 570, 1. 206, of each kinde (1611), discolors (188). P. 570, 1. 284, discolor (1611), discolors (188). AN EPITAPH (II.).

P. 571, 1. 25, parallels (1611), parables (1385). P. 572, 1. 39, Go, seeke (1611), tio. arkes (1385).

SONNETS.

P. 574, st. 10, 1. 7, captire. Ed. 1395 reads @ lives.
P. 574, st. 11, 1. 8, unpittied. Ed. 1395 reads

P. 575, st. 15, 1. 3, treasure. Ed. 1596 res treasures

P. 576, st. 21, l. 6, love. Ed. 1595 reads love. P. 576, st. 26, l. 4, brannche is. The cd. a lind reads brannches. P. 576, st. 26, l. 5, rough read tough (SM).

1. 11, Sins (1595), Sith (1611). This stanza is repeated in ed. between stanzas 82 and 83. There

ding in 1.6, it is having it in our tin the omitted version.

11, her (1595), their (1611).

9, first (1595). Some copies read

- , 1. 6, semblant (1597), semblance
- 1, 12, mind (1595). Some editions
- 1. 10, these ? those.
- 1.1, By her. Some editors pro-nut By=concerning. 1. 8, glories (1595). Some editions
- Ed. 1595 reads about. 1. 9, above.
- r worke is all about ywove?
 1. 2, placed. Ed. 1595 has plac'd.
 1. 9, the idea (1611), th' idea
- idæa,
- i, 1. 3, row. The ed 1595 reads

EPITHALMION.

se (1595). Some editions read the. The ed. 1595 reads gir-

dore (so ed. 1595), but read deere as ofessor Child. dreames. All the old editions read

mazefull. The ed. 1595 has maze ull is suggested by Professor Child. receyve. Ed. 1595 has recyve.), nights sad dread (1611), nights

Pouke. The ed. 1595 reads Ponke., your bed (1595). Some modern ed.

wool. The ed. 1595 has woll. thy will (1611), they will (1595).

HYMNES.

IN HYMNE OF LOVE.

make (1596), made (1611). hated fyre. Ed. 1596 has hate fyre. hated fyre. Ed. 1596 has nute fyre. eith. Warton proposed to read

-), Since (1596). Some mod. copies
- I, doest (1596). Some mod. copies
- 7, hath eyde (1596). Some copies

HYMNE OF BEAUTIK.

doest (1596). Some mod. editions

. clotheth it (1596). Collier reads

oft-times. Ed. 1596 has oftimes. The ed. 1596 reads

, will ? evill.

, affections (1596), ? affection.

P. 598, 1. 195, no love (1596), not love (Collier). P. 598, 1. 222, to his fancies (1596), ? of his fan-

AN HYMNE OF HEAVENLIE LOVE.

- P. 599, 1. 53, in powre (1596), of powre (Collier). P. 600, 1. 72, still to them (1596). Collier reads unto them.
- P. 600, 1. 158, launching (1596). Some modern editions read launcing.

- editions read launcing.
 P. 601, l. 179, of us (1596), for us (Collier).
 P. 601, l. 188, us so (1596), was so (Collier).
 P. 601, 195, Even he himselfe. Ed. 1596 has Even himselfe. In 1611 it is Even hee himself.
 P. 601, l. 238, of great (1596), by great (Collier).
 P. 602, l. 266, to thee (1596), for thee (1611). Ed. 1596 has Even

HYMNE OF HEAVENLIE BRAUTIE.

- P. 603, 1. 121, Suns bright beames (1596), Sun-bright beames (1611). P. 604, 1. 165, And dampish aire. Ed. 1596 reads The dark and dampish aire.
- P. 604, 1. 170, more bright (in 1611), is omitted by 1596.
 - P. 605, 1. 270, to paine (1596), a paine (1611). P. 605, 1. 294, on matter (1611), no matter (1596).

PROTHALAMION.

P. 605, 1.5, whom (1596). Some copies read whose. P. 606, 1. 117, Yet (1611), Yeat (1596).

SONNETS WRITTEN BY SPENSER.

I. This is taken from ' Foure Letters, and Certaine

1. This is taken from 'Foure Letters, and Certaine Sonnets: Especially touching Robert Greene, and other parties, by him abused: &c. London. Ato.: In-printed by John Wolfe, 1892.'

II. This is prefixed to 'Nennio, Or a Treatise of Nobility, &c. Written in Italian by that famous Doctor and worthy Knight, Sir John Baptista Nenna of Bari. Done into English by William Jones, Gent., 4to. 1895.'

III Profixed to the Historical Green Greene.

III. Prefixed to the 'Historie of George Castriot, surnamed Scanderbeg, King of Albanie: Containing his famous actes, &c. Newly translated out of French into English by Z. I., Gentleman. Imprinted for W. Ponsonby, 1596, 'fol. There is a copy of this work in the Bodlelan Library. AA. 37. Art. Sold.

IV. Prefixed to 'The Commonwealth and Government of Venice. Written by the Cardinall Gasper

Contareno, and translated out of Italian into English by Lewis Lewkenor, Esquire. London. Imprinted by John Windet for Edmund Mattes, &c., 1599, 4to.

A VIEW OF THE PRESENT STATE OF IRELAND.

- P. 610, col. 2, 1. 17, entred (22), enured (19). P. 610, col. 2, 1. 3 from bottom, Breaghe (22), Iriach (19).
- P. 611, col. 1, 1. 39, sure (22), faire (19). P. 611, col. 2, 1. 10, forestald (22), forestaked (19)
- and 73).
 P. 611, col. 2, Il. 32, 33, Tanistih (22), Tanist (19).
 P. 612, col. 1, L 30, innovation (19), invasion (73).
- 22 = Additional MS. 22022. 19 = Harl. MS.
 1932. 73 = Harl. MS. 7388. W. = Ware's Text.

P. 613, col. 1, 1, 15, kegs (22), plucke (19), P. 613, col. 2, 1, 9 from bottom, warrelike (19), wicket (22), P. 614, col. 2, 1, 15, esured (73), entred (22 and 19), P. 616, col. 1, IL 11, 12, Culters, Mointervitis, Ordirks, MS. 22 units Cultery and Mointervitis; 19 Oroirke. MS. 22 omits Colores and Moniterons; in reads Calvers, Monerco (73 Monerce), and Ourkes (Orourcks 73). P. 615, col. 1, II. 14, 15, Glaummaleerih, Shillelah, Brüsklagh, Polmonte. MS. 19 has Glaumalor (13 Glamalour), Shillelagh and Brisklagh. Polmonte is P. 615, col. 1, 1. 11 from bottom, the Earle of Utsler, Ware's text has the Earle of, which is omitted in the Brit, Mus. MSS. For Utsler, 19 reads Lacis.

P. 615, col. 2, 1, 2, builded . . . Tomond (22), repaired . . . Thomond (19).

P. 615, col. 2, 1, 17 from bottom, Clarifort (19), Clariford (Vare). Omitted by 22.

P. 615, col. 2, 1, 15 from bottom, Mourne and Buttevent (19), Omitted by 22.

P. 615, col. 2, 1, 3 from bottom, remember (22), reads (19). reade (19). P. 616, col. 1, 1. 14 from bottom, Aurt (22), P. 616, col. 1, 1, 14 from bottom, hart (22), scathe (19).
P. 616, col. 2, 1, 1, Donlucs (Ware), Donlace (19).
Omitted by 22.
P. 616, col. 2, 1, 3, Belfast (19). Omitted by 22;
P. 616, col. 2, 1, 12, en Ranagh. Omitted by 22; inserted from 19.
P. 616, col 2, 1, 14, Belfast... Newton. Omitted by 22; inserted from 19.
P. 616, col. 2, 1, 23, in the Ardes. Omitted by 22; inserted from Ware: 19 reads at the Ardes, 73 in Acades. P. 616, col. 2, 1, 29, Bremmegham (22), Bremingneglect to memor specially in thes supposed, being u learning and writ ham (19). P. 616, col. 2, 1, 35, to breathe or (22), to state nor

. 49, Celties (22), Celta (19), Celts

. 38, Aftye (22), fyfteene (19). L 44, Slevius (22), Slanius (W.),

1. 51-52, As the Latine proverbe is n 19 and 73). W. reads as the

. 11-14, for being . . . would (22).

. 12, Isabell (22), Elizabeth (W.,

. 23, auncientrye (22, 73 and W.),

11. 17-21, of the which . . . of the). Omitted by 22). Omitted by 22 1. 37, Gaull (22), Gaules (19),

. 16. Cummurreeih (12), Cummere (78).

.5, winning (22), employing (W. ıg (19). 1. 30, bolyes (W. and 19), bogges

53, bolyes (22), boolying (W.),

. 28. Gaules (22 and W.), Africans

. 56, besemeth (22), deserve (19), .6, encloseth (22), ensconceth (19). l. 44, Beantoolhe (22), Monashutt i. 44, Bear shul (W.).

1.42,43, as have . . . that people. been devised for that people: 22, ormation; 19, as have been devised 1, as have been devised for the re-

11. 26-28. I say . . . to be named w

11. 13, 14, Launlaider (W.), Lanarrigabowe (22).
1, 36, blunt (22), blynde (19 and

. 1, approoraunce (22), apparance

1. 2, 3, Scota . . . judgement (22), tiptian word or carrie anie smacke r judgement (19).

1.9, owles or cuts eyes (19), an (22).

. 15, Irish (W.), English (22). . 17, Farreehs. W. has Ferragh; rah; 73 Ferraghe.

77an; 13 Ferragne.
. 50, clashing (19), lashing (22).
. 1, joining (19), comming (22).
35, oath (19), wealth (22).
1. 81, Lycanthropia (W.), Hican-

44, shavinge (19), shewing (22). 1, 47, 48, an other huge . . . upon ough other huge calamities which

1. 25, 26, Hernan, Shenan, Mau-Shenan, Mangan (W). 1. 84-49, of which sorte . . . quite

39, Cales (22), Cadis (19); 1.43, Irish (22, 19 and 73). Omitted by Ware, who states raidum (22), Galdumon (19). that this passage is in the Lambeth MS., and in the that this passage is in the Lambeth MS., and in the MS. belonging to the Marquis of Stafford.
P. 639, col. 2, l. 24, head (W.), hand (22, 19

and 73).

P. 640, col. 2, 11. 4-12, Me thinkes . . . dislike of (19 and W.). Omitted by 22.
P. 640, col. 2, 1. 48, Tirtaeus (W. and 19), Tyrreus (22).

P. 642, col. 1, 1. 12, Kearrooghs (22), Garrowes

(19), P. 642, col. 2, 11. 45-50, by reading . . . of folke (19), by reading those which you call Folkemoles the which builte by two severall nations, the one by the Sixrons, as the worde signifyeth in Saxone meeting of folke (22).

P. 643, col. 1, 11. 30-34, as ye . . . of stones (19). Omitted by 22.

P. 645, col. 2, 1, 29, to P. 646, col. 1, 1, 41, is truly . . . way togither (22, 19 and 73). Omitted

P. 649, col. 1, 11. 50-53, And this is . . . for ac-

cursed (omitted by W.).
P. 649, col. 1, 1. 52, times not called amisse (19), times called banisse (22).

P. 656, col. 1, 1, 6, Jacques Geffray (22), Sequor Jeffrey (19), Signior Jeffrey (W.)
P. 658, col. 1, 1. 37, Magueeirhe (22), Macguire

P. 658, Col. 1, 1. 31, Maynewire (22), Sangani (73), MacKnyre (19).
P. 658, Col. 2, 1, 11, Tyrrelaghe O-Nrale (22), Turlayh Lecagh (19), Turlouyh Uncale (73).
P. 658, Col. 2, 1, 41, advise (22), decyce (19).
P. 659, Col. 2, 1, 28, Cummerreeighe (22), Co-

mericke (19 and 73).

P. 659, col. 2, Il. 52, 53, Brin in the Brittons . . . darke (22), Brin in the Britons language signifieth twodie, and Toll hillie (19 and 73).

P. 659, col. 2, 1, 58, Deurmuid-ne-Galh (22). Dermonigle (19). P. 660, col. 1, 1, 36, Glan-Maleeirh (22), Glan Malor (19 and W.).

P. 660, col. 1, 1. 37, Ballinecorrih (22), Ballinecarre (19).

P. 660, col. 2, 1. 53, placing (19 and 73), plotting (22).

P. 661 col. 1, 1.48, good spialls (22), good esperialla (19).

P. 661, col. 1, 1. 51, bayte (22), bayjoning (19).
P. 663, col. 1, 1. 11, unto them . . . where the (2), unto them that they shal be brought and re (22). moved with such creete as they have into Leinster,

mocci with such creete as they have into Leinster, where they, &c. (19).

P. 664, col. 1, 1l. 52, 53, which amounteth . . . acres (22). Omitted by W.

P. 672, col. 2, 1. 47, kinde of being bounde (19), kinde of living being bound (22).

P. 675, col. 1, 1l. 37, 38, Alloonagh . . . dogge (22),

Sascona, that is English (19).

P. 676, col. 1, 1. 54, sparke. All the MSS, agree in this reading. Ware has peare, but sparke may be a provincial form of the O. Eng. sparthe, a battle axe.

APPENDIX II.

LETTERS FROM SPENSER (IMMERITO) TO GABRIEL HAI

TO THE WORSHIPFULL HIS VERY SINGULAR GOOD FRIEND, MAISTER G. H.

FELLOW OF TRUNITIE HALL IN CAMBRIDGE."

Good Master G. I perceive by your most curteous and frendly Letters your good will to be no lesse in deset than I alwayes esteemed. In recompence wheref, think I beseech you, that I wil spare neither aposch nor wryting, nor aught size, whenever, and wherescover occasion shal be offred me: yea, I will not stay, till it be offred, but will seeke it in al that possibly I may. And that you may perceive how much your Counsel in al things prevailed with me, and how altogither I am ruled and overruled thereby; I am now determined to alter mine owne former purpose, and to subscribe to your advisement; being notwithstanding resolved still, to abide your farther resolution. My principal doubts are these. First, I was miorded for a while to have intermitted the uttering of my writings; leaste by over-much cloying their noble cares, I should guther a contempt of myself, or else seems rather for gaine and commoditie to doe it, for some sweetnesse that I have already tasted. Then also, mescenceth, the work too base for his excellent Lordship, being made in honour of a private Personage unknowne, which of some yl-willers might be upbraided not to be so worthie, as you knowe she is; or the matter not so weightie, that it should be offred to so weightie, that it should be offred to so weightie a Personage; or the like. The self-former Tile still liketh me well ynough, and your fine Addition no lesse. If these, and the like doubtes, maye be of importance in your seeming, to frustrate any parte of your advice, I beseche you without the least selfe love of your own purpose, councell me for the beste; and the rather doe it faithfullye and carefully, for that, in all things I altribute so muche to your judgement, that I am overmore content to annihilate mine owne determinations, in respecte thereof. And indeede for your selfer to, it stietth with you now, to call your wits and senses togither (which are alwaies at call) when occasion is so failing ofference.

Reprinted from 'Two other very commendable Letters, of the same mens writing: both touching the fresaid Artificial Versifying, and certain other Particulars.—More lately delivered unto the Printer.—Imprinted at London by H. Bynnemann, dwelling in Thames streate, necre unto Baynardes Castell. Anno Dombia, 1580. Cum gratia et privilegio Regiae Majestatis.

I pray you bethinke you well have ter G. and forthwith write me the special points and cavests for the is neptroriton title methinson to train the properties of the methinson to teris but. Your desire to leave of with hir Majestie muste dye in it two worthy Gentlemen, Master Soi Dyer, they have me, I thanke them familiarity : of whom and to whom passeth for youre credite and estim your selfe to conceive, having alway ceived of my unfained affection and you. And nowe they have producted dynamics and also of the ne steade whereof they have produced whereof they have produced whereof they have produced whereof they have produced whereof they have got thaving had thereof already great drawen mee to their faction. News of none, but only of one, that eriliooke, called The Schoole of Almes, a to Maister Sidney, was for his labut leaste it be in the goodnesse of scorne. Siche follie is it, not to hande the inclination and qualitie we we dedicate ours licokes. Social pily incurre entituling My Stamber Pamphlets onto his honor, I me to Maister Dyer. But I am of lat wyth my Englishe Versifying than whyche I should have done long is then have followed your councell, for turn improving after Poisso is Maister E. K not the Andrew Andrew Andrew Land Poisson of Maister Dyers and the Poisson of Maister E. K not the Andrew Andrew Land Poisson of Maister E. K not the Andrew Andrew Land Poisson of Maister E. K not the Research to Maister E. Martille Acceptable of Maister E. K not the Research and Maister E. K not the Research to Maister E. K not the Research and Research and Research and Research and Research and Research and Rese

Anian video egregion after Costos in Maister E. K. hartily desireth to unto your Worshippe; of whome he maketh, your selfe shall breed hys-paynefull and dutifull Verses of Thus much was written at West night; but comming this morning.

night: but comming this morning, teenth of October, to Mystress & delivered to the Carrier, I recey sente me the laste works: whereby otherwhiles continue your old earling in Englishe; whych glorie I h shoulde have bene onely ours heere the Court.

Truste me, your Verses I like participation of the maligne, and grudge at your selfe, once imparts so muche to me. Be you make a treache in Maister Drawa condomalimus tanto 4550x, reinan in his vrine autoritari. You she meete in I endon (whichse, when its we) howe fust I have followed and

en la constitución

e leaste in time I overtake you. solum sequar, (ut sæpenumero sum wam sane assequar dum rivam.
inite I you with the like, not with
but with the verye shortest, namely, pickes: I dare warrant they be pre-r the feete (as you can easily judge), ne inch from the Rule. I will imto the Courte. I praye you, keepe urselfe, or your verieentire friendes, Maister Still, and the reste.

ambicum Trimetrum.

the witnesse of my unhappic state, e fluttring wings of thy fast flying l fly forth unto my Love where-

reastlesse in heavy beilde, or else cerlesse at the cheerfull boorde, or

e carelesse on hir heavenlie Virgi-

ir, that my eyes can take no reste: tell hir, that my mouth can eate no

inals, tell hir, I can heare no mirth. y: Waking Love suffereth no sleepe: ging Love dothe appull the weake

enting Love marreth the Musicall.

nir pleasures were wonte to lull me

t hir beautie was wonte to feede ; hir sweete Tongue was wonte to

mirth. ightly waste, wanting my kindely

dayly starve, wanting my lively

alwayes dye, wanting thy timely

who will bewaile my heavy channee? ve, who will record my cursed end? | who will saye: this was Immerito?

we agayne here to have made an artic Vale of the best fashion: but ed myschaunce! My last tarewell, e great accompt, and muche mar-lde make no mention thereof, I am the Divels name) was thorough one e quite forgotten, but shoulde nowe ave beene sent, whether I hadde seeing it can now be no otherwise, 1 ill togither, wyth all their faultes: ope, you will vonchsafe mee an largest size, or else I tell you true, of the state of th

Ad ornatissimum virum, multis jam dia NOMINIBUS CLARISSIMUM G. H. IMMERI sui, mox in Gallias navigaturi, εὐτυχεῖν. IMMERITO

Sic malus egregium, sic non inimicus Amicum; Sieque novus veterem jubet ipse Poeta Poetam, Salvere, ac coelo, post secula multa secundo Jam reducem, cœlo mage, quam nunc ipee, secundo

Utier. Ecce Deus, (modò sit Deus ille, renixum Qui vocet in scelus, et juratos perdat amores) Ecce Deus mihi clara dedit modò signa Marinus, Et sua veligero leuis parat Æquora Ligno: Mox sulcands, suas etiam pater Æolus Irus Ponit, et ingentes animos Aquilonis—— Cuncta viis sic apta meis : ego solus ineptus. Nam mihi nescio quo mens saucia vulnere,

dudum Fluctuat ancipiti Pelago, dum Navita proram Invalidam validus rapit huc Amor, et rapit illuc. Consiliis Ratio melioribus usa, decusque Immortale levi diffessa Cupidinis Arcu. Angimur hoc dubio, et portu vexamur in ipeo. Magne pharetrati nunc tu contemptor Amoris, (Id tibi Dii nomen precor haud impune remittant)

Hos nodos exsolve, et eris mihi magnus Apollo. Spiritus ad summos, scio, te generosus Honores Exstimulat, maji sque docet spirare Poetam. Quam levis est Amor, et tamen haud levis est Amor omnis.

Ergo nihil laudi reputas æquale perenni, Præque sacrosancta splendoris imagine tanti, Catera, que vecors, uti Numira, vulgus adorat, Practia, Amicitias, urbana peci lia, Nummos, Quaque placent oculis, formas, spectacula, Amores,

Conculcare soles, ut humum, et ludibria sensus. Digna meo certe Harveio sententia, digna Oratore amplo, et generoso pectore, quam non Stoica formidet veterum Sapientia vinclis Sancire æternis : sapor haud tamen omnibus idem.

Dicitur effeti proles facunda Lacrtæ, Quamlibet ignoti jactata per aquora Cœli Inque procello-o longum exsul gurgite ponto Pre tamen amplexu lachrymosa Conjugis, Ortus Colestes Divinique thoros sprevisse beatos.

Tantum Amor, et Mulier, vel Amore potentior. Illum

Tu tamen illudis : tua Magnificentia tanta e Prieque subumbrata Splendoris Imagine tanti Præque illo Meritis famosis nomine parto Precine no avertis innoisi inoine parce Catera, quae Vecors, ati Numina, vulgus aderat, Praclia, Amicitias, armenta, peculia, numinos, Quæque placent oculis,formas, spectacula, Amores, eque placent ori, quaeque auribus, omniu temnis. Quarque

Næ tu grande sapis, Sapor at sapientia non est: Omnis et in parvis benè qui seit desipuisse, Saepe superciliis palmam sapientibus aufert. Ludit Aristippum modo tetrica Turba Sophorum, Mitia purpereo moderantem verba Tyranno Ludit Aristippus dictamina vana Sophorum, Quod levis emensi male torquet Culicis umbas: Et quisquis placuisse Studet Meroibus altis, Desipuise studet sie gratia crescit ineptis. Denique laurigeris quisquis sua tempora vittis,

Insignire volet, Populoque placere faventi, Insepere inamus discit, turpemque pudenda Stutitiae landom quarit. Pater Ennilss unus Bictas in innumeris sapiens: landatur at ipas Carmina vesano fudisse liquentia vine; Nec in pace tua, nostri Cato Maxime sucli, Nomen homerati sacrum mercare Poeba.
Quantumvis illustre canas, et nobile Carmen, Si antire sella, sic Si (Julicorum omnia piena, Tuta sed in medio superest via gurgite, nam Qui Nec reliquia nimium vuit desipniese videri, Nec sapuisse nimis, Espientem dixeris unum. Hinc te merserit unda, illine combusserit Ignis; Nec ta delicias uinia aspernare fluentes. Nec serò Dominam, venientem in vota, nec aurum, Si supia, ablatum, (Curiis ea, Fabrictisque Linque viris miseria miseranda Bophismata; quondam Grande sui decus li, nostri sed dedecus sevi :) Nec sectare n'unis. Res utraque crimite plena. Hoc bene qui callet, (si quis tamen hoc bene callet) Scribe, vel invito sapientem hune Socrate solum.

quondam
Grande sul decus li, nostri sed dedecus sevi :)
Nec sectare nimis. Res utraque crimins plena.
Hot bene qui callet, (si quis tamen hot bene callet).
Seribe, vei invito sapientem hune Secrate solum.
Vis facit una pios : Justos facit altera : et altra
Egressic cordata, ac fortia pectora : vecam
omne tulit punctum, qui miscuit atile duici.
Dii mihi, duice din dederant : verum utile nunquam ;
Utile nunc etiam, ò utinam quoque duice dedis-

Dif mihi (quippe Diis equivalia maxima purvis)
Ni nimis invideant mortalibne esse beatis,
Duice simul tribuisse queant, simul utile : tanta
Set Fortuna tua est ; partier queque utile, queque
Duice dat ad placitum : savo nos sydere nati
Queetlum limis cam per inhospita Cancasa longe,
Perque Pyrenseos montes, Bablionaque torpem.
Quiod si quaesitum nec ibi invenerimus, ingena
Asquor inexhaustis permensi erroribus, altral
Fluctibus in mediis socii quaeremus Ulyssis,
Passibus inde Deam fessis comitabimur segram,
Nobile uni furtum quaerenti dequit orbis.

Passibus inde Peam fessis comitabimur ægram, Nobile qui furtum quarenti defuit orbis. Namque sinu pudet in patrio, tenebrisque pudendia

Non nimis ingenio Juvenem infeelic evirentes Officiis frustra deperdere vilibus Anno». Frugibus et vacuas speratis cerurere spicas, Ibimus ergo statim: (quis cunti fausta pre-

cetur?)
Et pede Clibosas fesso calcabimus Alpes,
Quis dabit interea conditas rore Britanno,
Quis ribi Litterulas? quis carmen amore petulcum!

cum!
Mma sub Oeballi desueta cacumine montis,
Fiebit inexhausto tam longa silentia planetu,
Lagebitque sacrum lacrymis Helicona tacentem,
Lagebitque sacrum lacrymis Helicona tacentem,
Harveiusque bonus (charus licet omnibus idem,
Idque suo merito, prope suavior omnibus unus,
Jangelias et Gabriel, (quamvis comitatus amieno)
Jamerio tamen unum absentem sepe requiret,
Optabitque Utinam meus bio Edmundus adesset,
Qui nova scripaisset, nec Amores conticuisset
Lisa suos, et sepe animo verbisque benignis
Fausta precaretur, Deus illum aliquando reincat,
&c.

Plura veilem per Chaviles, sed non licet per Musas. Vale, Vale plurimum, Mi amabilissime Harveie, meo cordi, meorum onmium longe charizzime.

I was minded also to both smily versa; or Rymen, for a farressi; it have no spare time in the versuch Toyes, that you know wild beed, than mine is presently. I all your Curtesles and Gracus let ore I goe; which will be (I losp. I the next weeke, if I can be dispute I goe thither, as sent by him, and what of him; and there am to emphody, my minde, to his Homer with many superhartic Commencommendations to your selfe, as with you, I radie my last Farres, any more to write unto you, be withail committing to your fallth eternal Memorie of our everlashinviolable Memorie of our coverell inviolable Memorie of our coverlashinviolable Memorie of ou

Leycester House, this 5 77 161 p

Per mare, per terms Vivus, mortusaque Tuns Immerdo.

TO MY LONG APPROOVED A GOOD FRENDE, MASTE

Good Master H. I doubt not land great Important matter in handle while restraineth your Penne, an nesse in provoking me unto that, we nowe faulte. If there bee any soeding, I pray you hartilly, lette us knoworlde see it. But if happly you in Justinians Courte, and give you voured of secreate Studies, as of a doe; yet at least importe some you can be a fault on the courte of secreate Studies, as of a doe; yet at least importe some you name nothing hidden. Little stirred; but that olde greate matter His Honoure never better. I think was also there with you (which learne) as it was here with its; over old buildings and peeces of Church

Reprinted from 'Three proper lian Letters: lately passed between nem: touching the Earthquake in our English refourmed Versifying, face of a wellwiller to them both London by H. Bynneman, dwell streate, neare unto Baynardes Camini, 1680.—Cum gratia et privileg (atts.)'

ge to be hearde of in these Countries, and re some save (I knowe not howe trucky) have knowne the like before in their d quid vobis ridetur magnis Philosophis? your late Englishe Hexameters so exceedingly but I also enure my Penne sometime in that whyche I fynd indeede, as I have heard you defende in worde, neither so harden, nor so that it will easily and fairely yeelde it selfe Moother tongue. For the onely, or chiefest , whych seemeth, is in the Accente: be sometime gapeth, and, as it were, yawneth credly, comming shorte of that it should, and

me exceeding the measure of the Number, Carpenter, the middle sillable being used in speache, when it shall be read long in seemeth like a lame Gosling that draweth one fter hir: and Hearen being used shorte as one e, when it is in verse stretched out with a le, is like a lame dogge that holdes up one But it is to be wonne with Custonic, and

words must be subdued with Use. For, why s name, may not we, as else the Greekes, he kingdome of oure owne Language, and the our Accentes by the sounde, reserving the site to the Verse? Loo, here I let you see the nes of toying in Rymes turned into your fal straightness of Verse by this Tetrument. ch you tell me your fansle without parcialitie.

yee the blindfoulded pretie God, that fea

thered Archer,
Lovers Miseries which maketh his bloodie name i e ye why, his Moother with a Veale hath

coovered his Face? rust me, least he my Loove happely channel to beholds.

me they comparable to those two, which I ated you ex tempore in bed, the last time we grither in Westminster?

& which I eate did I joy, and that which I greedily gorged, s for those many goodly matters leaft I for others

ould hartily wish, you would either send me miss and Procepts of Arte, which you observe antities, or else follows mine, that M. Philip y gave me, being the very same which M. devised, but enlarged with M. Sidneys own ment, and augmented with my Observations,

we might both accorde and agree in one: we overthrowe one an other, and be overn of the rest. of the rest. Trust me, you will hardly be-what greate good liking and estimation Maisper had of your Satyricall Verses, and I, since for had of your Satyricall Verses, and I, since thereof, having before of my selfe had all liking of Englishe Versitying, am even shoute to give you some token, what, and well therein I am able to doe: for, to tell you b, I minde shortely at convenient leysure, to. Gerth a Booke in this kinde, whiche I entitle: Mamion Thamesis; whyche Booke, I dare unke wil be very profitable for the knowledge, We for the Invention and manner of handling. etting forth the marriage of the Thames: re his first beginning, and offspring, and all liar Letters, &c.

the Countrey, that he passeth thorough, and also describe all the Rivers throughout Englande, whyche came to this Weidling, and their rights names, and right passage, &c. A worke, believe me, of much labour, wherein notwithstanding Master Holinshed hath muche furthered and advantaged me, who therein hath bestowed singular paines, in searching oute their firste heades and sources: and also in tracing and dogging oute all their Course, til they full into the Sea.

O Tite, siquid, ego, Ecquid erit pretij?

But of that more hereafter. Nowe, my *Dreames* and *Dring Pellicane*, being fully finished (as I partelye signified in my laste Letters) and presentlye to bee imprinted, I wil in hande forthwith with my Faery Queene, whyche I praye you hartily send me with al expedition: and your frendly Letters, and long expected Judgement wythal, whyche let not be shorte, but in all pointes suche, as you ordinarily e use, and I extraordinarily desire. Multum Westminster. Quarto Nonas Aprilis 1580. Sed, amabo le, meum Corculum tibi se ex animo commendat plurimim : jamdin mirata, te mhil ad literas suas responsi dedisse. Vide queso, ne id libi l'api-lale sil: Mihi certe quidemeril, neque libi hercle im-punè, ut opinor, llerum vale, & quam voles sæpè. Yours alwayes to communele,

Postscripte.

I take best my Dreames shoulde come forth alone, being growen by meanes of the Glosses (running continually in maner of a Paraphrase) full as great as my Calendar. Therin be some things excellently, and many things wittly discoursed of E. K. and the pictures so singularly set forth and purtrayed, as if Michael Angelo were

there, he could (I think) nor amende the beste, nor reprehende the worst. I know you woulde lyke them passing wel. Of my Stemmata Dudiciana, and especially of the sundry Apostrophes therein, adespecially of the sundry Apostrophes therein, na-dressed you knowe to whome, must more alvise-ment be had, than solightly to sende them abroade: howbeit, trust me (though I doe never very well) yet, in my owne fancie, I never dyd better. Verumtamen te sequor soliim: nunquam verò assequar.

EXTRACT FROM HARVEY'S REPLY.*

But Master Collin Cloute is not every body, and But Master Collin Cloule is not every body, and albeit his olde Companions, Master Cuddy and Master Hobbinoll be as little beholding to their Mistresse Poetrie, as ever you writ: yet he peradventure by the meanes of hir special favour, and some personall priviledge, may happely live by Dynny Pellicanes, and purchase great landes, and lordshippes, with the money, which his Calendar and Drames have, and will affourde him. Extra joeum, I like your Dreames passingly well: and the rather, bicause they savour of that singular extra rather, bicause they savour of that singular extra-ordinarie velne and invention, which I ever fancied moste, and in a maner admired onelye in Lucian, Petrarche, Aretine, Pasquill, and all the most deli-

[·] Reprinted from ' Three Proper and wittle fumi-

rata, and fine conceited Gracians and Italians: (for the Romanes to speake of, are but verys ciphars in this kinds:) whose chiestest endevour, and drifts was, to have nothing valgare, but in some respects or other, and aspecially in lively hyperbolicall amplifications, rare, quelint, and odds in every points, and as a man would saye, a degree or two at the leasts, above the reache, and companse of a common schollers capacitie. In whiche respects notwithistanding, as well for the singularitie of the manner, the third three cornected briefly of the singularitie of the manner, the professional visions, and jollyest conceited briefly by the cortex Metaphysicall Visions, and jollyest conceited briefly the continue and the cortex Metaphysicall visions, and jollyest conceited briefly the continue and the profession of the most exquisites and of the most exquisite and drifting in a constant of the whole country:

I am so confirmed in this opinion, that when I hethinke me of the verie notablest, and mosts would read, or hearde, me seemeth the proportion is so manual, that there hardly appeareth any semiliannee of Comparison: no more in a manner than the discussion of Comparison of Cod, and the sensible with a risephanes and Revence in Latin, or with Aristophanes and Revence in Latin, or with the grant of the what needeth this digression between very Wit of man.

Wit of man.

But what needeth this digression between you and me? I dare saye you wyll holde yourselfe reasou in John them you will any other tong. But I will not stan you may be satisfied, if youre Preames be but as well Queene be fairer in your eie than the esteemed of in Englande, as Petrarrhes Visions be in "Mid Hobgoblis runne away with the Italy: which I assure you, is the very worst I wish "Apolto: Marke what I saye, and ye you. But, see, how I have the Arte Memorative at that I thought, but there an End for commannement. In good faith I had once againe fare you well, till God or some good nigh forputen your Faerie Queene: howbeit by good you in a better minde.

reputed matchable in s Witte and eloquent de with Aristophenes and Pleasus and Terenes in Aristophanes and Hensuder in us and Terence in Latin, or with

GLOSSARY.

The numbers refer to the pages.

```
is name, 442, 474
to lower, to hang down, 82, 257, 397
                                                        Adore, to adorn, 290
                                                        Adorné, ornament, 226
andon, 138
                                                         Adowne, down, 49
 ar, 202, 203
                                                        Adrad, adred, adredde, afraid, terrified, 162, 244.
      e, conduct, 356, 406
                                                           272, 507
to aid, support, maintain, 364, 383; alsely, 242
                                                        Adrad, to be frightened, 299
                                                         Advance, to extol, 34; impel, 81
Advanture, chance, 237; opportunity, 243; to attempt, 314
remained, 178

w, to pay the penalty of, to atone for,

101, 122, 179, 212, 235, 258, 595; abide
                                                         Adrien, to view, 308
                                                         Advize, advise, to consider, perceive, take thought
of, bethink, 79, 129, 294, 419
Advizement, consideration 103, 126
ow or cast down, 219, 338
ned, 227; a delay, stay, 155, 202
ipe out, 101
                                                         Adward, an award, 280; to award
 of, from the bank, astray, at a loss,
                                                        Emuling, emulating, rivalling, 550 (semuled, 550)
Afeard, afraid, 217, 235
 de, harbour, 418
                                                        Affect, to frighten, 93, 96
Affect, affection, 365; sorrow, 566; imitation, 594
Affection, passion, 100, 139, 168, 386
t, 58
use, wake up, 218
 abrayde), to start up suddenly, to , 257, 261; to quake with sudden fear,
                                                        Affide, affyde, betrothed, 273, 306; intrusted, 322
Afflicted, low, humble, 11
                                                       Afford, to cousent, 10x
Affrap, to strike, to strike down, to encounter, to
se, deceit, fraud, 141, 230, 359
e. to clog up, choke, encumber, hinder,
                                                            assault, 82, 163
cimming along near the ground, 369
wwpt, account, 444, 515
                                                        Affray, to territy, fray, 184; terror, 340, 345
Affrende, to make friends, 246
rant, to agree, to reconcile, 255, 278, reement, 99, 125
                                                         Affret, encounter, 207, 242
                                                        Afront, to confront, encounter, oppose, 50, 176,
greeably to, according to, 65, 75, 99, rdingly, 139
                                                        Affy, to betroth, espouse, 372, 376; entrust, 322
                                                         Affyannce, betrothal, 99
 side by side, to adjoin, border, 352
                                                        Afore, in front, before, 97, 170
ntertaining (courteonsly), 68
t, garb, 519
                                                         Aggrace, favour, kindness, goodwill, 125; to make
                                                        gracious, 151
Aggrate, to please, delight, charm, treat politely.
to subdue, daunt, tame, 448, caress, 274
                                                            105, 128, 193, 204, 238
                                                                                          349, 410
emble, gather together, 128
crease, 259, 317
                                                         Aglet, point, tag, 94, 366
                                                         Agree, to settle, to cause to agree, 97
'es), purchased provisions, cates, 128 uit, acquite, to deliver, release, 49, 145;
                                                         Agreeably, alike, in a manner to agree, 391
                                                        Agrise, agrize, agryse, agryse, to cause to shudde
to terrify, to make disgusted, 111, 165, 346, 430
free, 314
irystals, 288
                                                         Agrys'd, having a terrible look, distigured, 200
                                                        Aguise, aguise, to deck, adorn, fashic
82,83,165,306,519; to disguise, 107
Alablaster, slabaster, 167
Albr, alber, although, 37,455
aunt, tame, moderate, 195, 260, 341,
                                                                              to deck, milorn, fashion, accourre,
 . 452
sdjudge, 307
sijudge, 455
repare, adjust, direct, clothe, arm, 176,
todrest, ready, 243
persoch, join, 198
dmiration, 547
                                                         Aleggeaunce, alleviation, 186
                                                       Alex, howling, 323
                                                       Algair, algates, altogether, wholly, by all mounts
all ways, at all events, [61, 201, 258, percents
                                                        All, withough, 155; ' all as' = as 11, 448
ider at, 256, 266, 399
```

Astonish, to stun, 272

Allegge, to lessen, allay, 452

```
Almes, a free allowance, alms, 230
Alone (only), without compulsion, 255
Alone, downwards, 397
                                                                                                     Astonying, confounding, 305
Attack, to seize, take prisoner (attack, 365), 1
275, 318
                                                                                                     Attaine, attayne, to find, reach, fall in with, 363
Attaint, to stain. obscure, 47
Attempt, to tempt. 354
Alose, praise, 5
Als. also, 80. 84, 128, 282
Amaine, violently, by force, 235, 256, 364
Amate, to daunt, subdue, to stupefy, terrify, 16, 87, 178, 197, 220; to keep company with, 128
Amate, amazement, 194, 220
                                                                                                     Attendement, intent, 388
                                                                                                     Attent, attention, 211, 406
                                                                                                     Attone (atone). at one, together, reconciled, $1, 1
                                                                                                        264, 277. Allone, attons, at once, together, & III,
Ambassage, embassy, 517
Ameansay, emioussy, on:
Ameansa, ameroed, punished, 583
Ameange, to manage, handle, 97
Ameanunce, carriage, behaviour, 160, 121, 242, 520
                                                                                                     Attrapt, dressed, 251
                                                                                                     Attoeen, attreene, between, 185, 351, 390
Atteixt, between, at intervals, 224
Amis, amice, a priestly vestment
                                                               , 29
                                                                                                    Aumagi, to enamel, 94 sink, lower, descend, is down, 126, 399, 447, 448
Arauni, depart, 388
Amount, to mount up, ascend, 60
 Amore, to move, remove, 31, 56, 219
 Andrile, anvil. 72
Annoy, annoyance, grief, hurt, 40, 91, 129
Antickes, antiques, ancient, or fantastic figures, 94,
                                                                                                     Avauntage, advantage, 103
Anticket, antiquet, ancient, or landastic figures, 94, 112, 223

Apace, fast, copiously, 286

Appall, to falter, 260; to weaken, 160

Appay, apay (præt. and p. p. appay'd, appaid), to please, satisfy, pay, 129, 148, 354, 470, 543

Appeach, to impeach, accuse, 123, 144, 324, 342
                                                                                                     Avaunting, advancing (boastfully), 92
                                                                                                     Arenge, revenge, 258
                                                                                                    Avengement, revenge, 30, 184
Aventred, thrust forward (at a venture), 188, 26
                                                                                                     Arentries, thrust forward (at a venume, 100,000 Arentries, pushing forward, 228 Arize, argre, to perceive, consider, regard, time, take note of, reflect, bethink, 37, 109, 137, 168, 169, 174, 288, 275, 419; advise, 273

Arizefull, observant, 260
 Appease, to cease from. 25
 appease, to cease from. 25
Appele, to accuse. 341; to offer, 168
Appellation, appeal, 427
Apply, to attend to, 65; to bend one's steps to, 106
Approran, to put to the proof, to prove, 482
Approraunce, approval, 153
Arborett, little grove, 107
                                                                                                     Aroid, to depart, go out, 161
Aroure, 'to make avoure' = to
                                                                                                                                                     = to justify, maintain, 37
                                                                                                     Awarned, made, was made aware, 216
Awayte, to wait for, 157; watch, 280
Aschape, to terrify, frighten, 263, 351, 513
 Aread, aread (p. p. area), to tell, say, declare, describe, inform, teach, interpret, explain, 55, 57, 93, 164, 220, 238, 258, 309, 380; appoint, 355; detect, 254
                                                                                                     Augulets (aglets), tags, points of gold, 94
Aym, direction, 107
 Arear, areare, arere, arreare, to the ward, aback, 143, 196, 214, 377, 509
                                            arreare, to the rear, back-
                                                                                                     Babe, doll, 460
                                                                                                      Buce, low, 36, 168
 Arel, arel, to allot, etn. 218, 511, 509
Arel, arel, to allot, entrust, adjudge, 120, 140, 254
Area, in a row, in order, 357.
Arguments, signs, indications, 391
Arights, rightly, 343
                                                                                                     Bace, the game of prisoner's base, 476; 'bad bee' = challenged, 218
                                                                                                      Baffuld, disgraced (as a recreant knight),391,391
                                                                                                     Bajula. disgraced (as a recreant knight), 31, 38
Baile, to deliver. 275: custody, 428
Bains, banns (of marriage), 77
Bule, grief, sorrow, affliction, trouble, 13, 44, 8,
114; bales, ruins, 407; baleful, full of bak, 6
structive, doadly, 169, 241; balefulasse, run
 Arke, box, chest, 248
Arras, 1908, CHEW, 230
Arras, 192
Arras, 193
Arras, 195
Arras, 197
Ashaunce, sideways, 112, 160
                                                                                                         154
 Aslake, to slake, abate, appease, 26
                                                                                                      Balke, to disappoint, to deal at cross purpose, 14
 Aslope, on the slope, aside, 180
                                                                                                     281; a ridge between two furrows, 413
Balliards, billiards, 520
               to try. attempt, assail.
                                                             attack, 20, 28, 97,
     183, 277; an attempt, trial, 83, 92, 93; value, 19,
                                                                                                     Ban, banne, to curse (band, cursed), 197, 273, 58, 349, 368, 601
     177
Assayde, affected, 470
Asseige, to besiege, 141
Assignment, design, 140
                                                                                                     Band, forbid, banish, 167; assemble, 31
Bandog, mastiff, 474
Bane, death, destruction, 142
 Assize, measure, 538
                                                                                                      Banket, banquet, 190, 264
Assoil, assoyl, to absolve, determine, set free, let loose, renew. 65, 104, 160, 208, 243, 397, 533; to pay, 548; remove, 255, 260
                                                                                                     Bannerall, a standard (shaped like a swalled)
                                                                                                         tail), 393
                                                                                                     Barbe, equipments of a horse, horse armour, 8
      soft, to befool, to beguile, bewilder, 132, 202, 452
                                                                                                     Barbican, a watch-tower, 128
 Assure, to promise, assert confidently, 132
                                                                                                     Bard, ornamented with bars (ornaments d
Asseage, to grow mild, 28
                                                                                                        girdle), 94
Assum, to mark or point out, 46
Astart, to start up suddenly, 166
Astert, befall, come upon suddenly, 482
                                                                                                     Base, low, 18; the lower part, 339
Basenesse, a low humble condition, 371
                                                                                                     Basen-wide, widely extended, 519
Astond, astound, astonied, astonished, stunned, 269,
                                                                                                     Bases, armour for the legs, 818
   464
                                                                                                    Bash, to be abushed, 100
```

sem (W.), Galdum (22), Galdumon (19). 5, col. 2, 1, 49, Celties (22), Celtæ (19), Celts 7, col. 1, 1, 38, fiftye (22), fyfteene (19). 7, col. 1, 1, 44, Slevius (22), Slanius (W.),

5, col. 2, 1. 39, Cales (22), Cadis (19); 1. 43,

7, col (19). 7, col 7, col. 1, 11. 51-52, As the Latine proverbe is d by 22; in 19 and 73). W. reads as the be is col. 2, ll. 11-14, for being . . . would (22). i by W.

col. 1, 1. 12, Isabell (22), Elizabeth (W.,

8, col. 1, 1. 23, auncientrye (22, 73 and W.), rie (19).
8, col. 2, 11. 17-21, of the which . . . of the ris (19).

8, col. 2, ll. 17-21, of the which . . . of the (19 and 73). Omitted by 22

28, col. 2, l. 37, Gauli (22), Gaules (19), [8 and W.].

19, col. 1, l. 16. Cummurrecih (12), Cummer-), Camericke (73).

19, col. 2, l. 5, winning (22), employing (W.), empeopling (19).

10, col. 1, l. 30, bolyes (W. and 19), bogges 473).

(W.), and 19), bogges (92), col. 1, 1, 53, bolyes (22), boolying (W.), re (19 and 73).

col. 1, 1. 28. Gaules (22 and W.), Africans 11, cc 173).

1, col. 1, 1. 56, besemeth (22), deserve (19) 11, col. 2, 1. 6, encloseth (22), ensconceth (19).
11. col. 2, 1. 44. Beantoolhe (22). Monashutt 1 78), Monashul (W.).

3, col. 1, 11. 42, 43, as have . . . that people. 3s as have been devised for that people: 22. br theyr reformation; 19, as have been devised for the repople; 73, as have been devised for the ren of the people.

col. 1, 11. 26-28, I say . . . to be named

mitted by · W 3, col. 2, 11. 13, 14, Launlaider (W.), Lan-

2 (19), Layarrigabowe (22). **2**, col. 2, 1. 36, blunt (22), blynde (19 and

3, col. 1, 1. 1, approoraunce (22), apparunce

col. 1, 11. 2, 3, Scota . . . judgement (22), Hite an Egiptian word or carrie anie smacke Bearninge or judgement (19).

18, col. 1, 1.9, oroles or cuts eyes (19), an ĸ,

catt-is eyes (22).

3, col. 1, 1, 15, 17ish (W.), English (22).

3, col. 1, 1, 17, Farrecks. W. bas Ferragh;
cels; 19 Ferrah; 73 Ferraghe.

3, col. 2, 1. 50, clashing (19), lashing (22), 4, col. 1, 1. 50, clashing (19), comming (22), 4, col. 1, 1. 35, oath (19), seenth (22), 4, col. 2, 1. 31, Lycanthropia (W.), Hican-

(22). col. 1. 1. 44, shavinge (19), shercing (22), 6, col. 2. 1, 47, 48, an other huge . . . upon 2), and through other huge calamities which

Pa them (19). 7. col. 2, 11. 25, 26, Hernan, Shenan, Mau-). Heenan, Shenan, Mangan (W). 1. col. 2, 11. 34-49, of which sorte . . . quite

Irish (22, 19 and 73). Omitted by Ware, who states that this passage is in the Lambeth MS., and in the MS. belonging to the Marquis of Stafford.

639, col. 2, 1. 24, head (W.), hand (22, 19 and 73).

P. 640, col. 2, 1l. 4-12, Me thinkes . . . dislike of 19 and W.). Omitted by 22.
P. 640, col. 2, 1. 48, Tirtaus (W. and 19), Tyr-(19 and W.). reus (22).

P. 642, col. 1, 1. 12, Kearrooghs (22), Garrowes (19).

P. 642, col. 2, 11. 45-50, by reading . . . of folke (19), by reading those which you call Folkemoles the which builte by two severall nations, the one by the Suxons, as the worde signifyeth in Saxone meeting of folke (22).

P. 643, col. 1, 11. 30-34, as ye . . . of stones (19). Omitted by 22.

P. 645, col. 2, 1. 29, to P. 646, col. 1, 1. 41, This is truly . . . way togither (22, 19 and 73). Omitted

of rease for 1,91. (22).

(22).

P. 649, col. 1, 11. 50-53, And this is . . . for accursed (omitted by W.).

P. 649, col. 1, 1. 52, limes not called amisse (19),

P. 658, col. 1, 1, 6, Jacques Geffray (22), Sequor Jeffrey (19), Signior Jeffrey (W.) P. 658, col. 1, 1, 37, Magueeirhe (22), Macguire

(73), Macknyre (19).
P. 658, col. 2, 1. 11, Tyrrelaghe O-Neale (22),

Turlagh Lecagh (19), Turlough Uncale (73).

Puringn Leagh (19), Turiouji Omede (13).

P. 659, col. 2. l. 41, advise (22), device (19).

P. 659, col. 2, l. 28, Cummerreciphe (22), Comericke (19 and 73).

P. 659, col. 2, ll. 52, 53, Brin in the Brittons . . darke (22), Brin in the Brittons tanguage significate twoodie, and Toll hullic (19 and 73).

P. 659, col. 2, 1, 58, Deurmuid-ne-Galh (22), Der-

monigle (19).

P. 660, col. 1, L. 36, Glan-Maleeirh (22), Glan Major (19 and W.). P. 660, col. 1, 1. 37, Ballinecorrih (22), Ballinecarre (19).

P. 660, col. 2, 1. 53, placing (19 and 73), plotting (22).

P. 661, col. 1, 1.48, good spialls (22), good especialls (19).

P. 661, col. 1, 1. 51, bayle (22), bayjoning (19).

P. 663, col. 1, 1. 11, unto them . . . where they (22), unto them that they shal be brought and recreete as they have into Leinster, mored with such

where they, &c. (19).

P. 664, col. 1, 11, 52, 53, which amounteth . . . acres (22). Omitted by W.

P. 672, col. 2, 1, 47, kinde of bring bounde (19),

kinde of living being bound (22).

P. 675, col. 1, 11, 37, 38, Allowargh . . . dogge (22), Sascona, that is English (19).

P. 676, col. 1, 1. M., sparke. All the MSS, agree in this reading. Ware has speare, but sparke may be a provincial form of the O. Eng. sparthe, buttle axe.

Can, knows, 452, 453

Carriage, burden, 375

Caudron, caldron, 169

GLOSSARY.

Braverie, finery, 521
Braverie, finery, 521
Bravely, gallantly, splendidly, 107 Brazety, galantiv, spiendady, 101
Brauned, muscular, brawn, 53
Bray (braie), to cry out suddenly, cry aloud, utter aloud, 350; gasp out, 84
Braynepan, skull, 389
Breaded, braided, embroidered, 88, 168 Breare, brere, briar, 64, 160, 213 Breech, breeches, 338 Breede, work, produce, 159 Breem, breme, boisterous, rough, sharp, 433, 448, 485

Brigandine, a kind of light vessel, 533 Brim, margin of the horizon, 341 Brize, bryze, gadfly, 363, 537 Brocage, pimping, 441, 520 Broch, to commence, broach, 162 Brode, abroad, 247 Brond, sword, 121, 226

Brenne, to burn, 246 Brent, burnt, 55, 71, 160 Brickle, brittle, 283, 494

714

Bosse, middle of shield, 858 Bouget, budget 21
Bought, fold, 13, 69, 507
Boult, to sift, bolt, 99
Bounse, to beat, 220

Bourne, boundary, 107

Bowrs, muscles (of the shoulder), 58

Boy, a term of reproach, 105

Bransles, dances, brawls, 212

Brast, burst, 36, 49, 198, 242 Brave, fair, beautiful, 94, 153

Bout, about, 170

sharp), 168

Brondi, sword, 250
Bronds, embers, brands, 115
Brood, a brooding-place (? an error for bood=0.E. bood or abood, an abode, resting place; cf. bode, p. 354), 112 Brooke, to endure, bear brook, 179, 240 Brouzes, twigs, 216 Brunt, assault, 128

Brust, burst, 160, 202, 251
Bruted, renowned, bruited, 514 livutenesse, brutishnesse, brutality, brute-like state, 120, 267

Cautelous, wary, 619 Caved, made hollow, 256 Centonel, a sentinel, 59, 239 Certes, certainly, 164
Cesse, to cease, 274
Cesure, a breaking off, stop, 138

Cancred, cankerd, corrupt, 80, 206 Canon bitt, a smooth round bit (for horses), 6

Capicaya, captain, 141
Caprifole, woodbine, 192
Captiraunce, captivity, 198
Captired, taken captive, enslaved, %, 160
Capuccio, hood (of a cloak), capuchin, 253
Card, chart, 112
Card, chart, 11

Care, sorrow, grief, injury. 268, 349. Caryla.
rowful, 39, 111, 544. Careless, free from
22, 544; uncared for, 251

Carl, carle, an old man, 206; churl, 60, 257

Cast, to consider, plot, resolve, purpose. 71.

197; time, period, opportunity, 402, ***
**whoto cast ** almost dead, 378; a couple, 25

Castory, colour (red or pink), 125

Causen, to assign a cause or reason, explain, 3

Carke, care, sorrow, grief, 16, 481

Chaffar, to chaffer, exchange, 102, 473 Chalenge, to claim, 122, 233, 238, 234; to t follow, 81; accusation, 278 Chamelol water, camlet watered, 290 Chamfred, wrinkled, furrowed, 448

Champein, champien, champion, open con plain, 301, 378, 429 (Champeinesse, a temple warrier, 728 (Charge, mage, 382 (Charge, assault, attack, 277

are leaste in time I overtake you.

solum sequar, (ut appenumero sum aquam sanè assequar dum vivam.
equite I you with the like, not with e, but with the veryeshortest, namely, mbickes: I daro warrant they be prefor the feete (as you can easily judge), one inch from the Rule. I will im-Maister Schney and Maister Dyer at g to the Courte. I praye you, keepe your selfe, or your vericentire friendes, m, Maister Sill, and the roste.

Iambicum Trimetrum.

me, the witnesse of my unhappie state, elfe fluttring wings of thy fast flying and fly forth unto my Love whersobe:

g reastlesse in heavy bedde, or else cheerlesse at the cheerfull boorde, or

me carelesse on hir heavenlie Virgi-

hir, that my eyes can take no reste: e, tell hir, that my mouth can eate no

rginals, tell hir, I can heare no mirth.
say: Waking Love suffereth no electricaging Love dothe appail the weake ke:
menting Love marreth the Musicall.

hir pleasures were wonte to lull me

bat hir beautie was wonte to feede yes: lat hir sweete Tongue was wonte to

ne mirth.
nightly waste, wanting my kindely

I dayly starve, wanting my lively

I alwayes dye, wanting thy timely

e, who will bewaile my heavy chaunce? | arve, who will record my cursed end? | e, who will saye: this was Immerdo!

once agayne here to haue made an heartle Vale of the best fashion: but ured myschannee! My lass farewell ide great accompt, and muche maroulde make no mention thereof, I am in the Divels name) was thorough one nee quite forgotten, but shoulde nowe have beene sent, whether I hadde Seeing it can now be no otherwise. I call togither, wyth all their faultes: hope, you will vouchsafe mee an he largest size, or else I tell you true, verye deepe in my debte; notwyther other sweete, but shorte letter, and we Verses. But I woulde rather I were owne good selfe, and receive a urewell from your owne sweete mouth.

Ad ornatissimum virum, multis jam diu NOMINIBUS CLARISSIMUM G. H. IMMERITO sui, mox in Gallius navigaturi, eŭvuzete.

Sic malus egregium, sic non inimicus Amicum; Sicque novus veterum jubet ipse Pota Poètam; Salvere, ac celo, post secula multa secundo Jam reducem, celo mage, quam nunc ipse, secundo

Utier. Ecce Deus, (modò sit Deus ille, renixum Qui vocet in scelus, et juratos perdat amores) Ecce Deus mihi clara dedit modò signa Marinus, Et sua veligero lenis parat Æquora Ligno: Mox sulcanda, euas etiam pater Æolus Iras Ponit, et ingentes animos Aquilonis—— Cuncta viis sic apta meis: ego solus ineptus. Nam mihi nescio quo mens saucia vulnere, dudum

Fluctuat ancipiti Pelago, dum Navita proram Invalidam validus rapit hue Amor, et rapit illue. Consiliis Ratio nelioribus usa, decusque Immortale levi diffessa Cupidinis Arcu. Angimur hoe dubio, et poitu vexamur in ipso. Magne pharetrati nunc tu contem tor Amoris, (Id tibi Dii nomen precor haud impune remittant)

Hos nodos exsolve, et eris mihi magnus Apollo. Spiritus ad summos, seio, te generosus Honores Exstimulat, maji sque docet spirare Poetam. Quam levis est Amor, et tamen haud levis est Amor omnis.

Ergo nihil laudi reputas aquale perenni, Pracque sacrosancta spiendoris imagine tanti, Cactera, que vecors, uti Numina, vulgus adorat, Practia, Amicitias, urbana peccilia, Nummos, Quaque placent oculis, formas, spectacula, Amores,

Conculcare soles, ut humum, et ludibria senaus. Digna meo certe Harveio sententia, digna Oratore amplo, et generoso pe tore, quam non Stolea formidet veterum Sapientia vinclis Sancire seternis: sapor haud tamen omnibus idem.

mem.
Dicitur effecti proles facunda Lacrtæ,
Quamillet ignoti jactata per aquora Cœli
Inque procello-o longúm exau jurgite ponto,
Præ tamen amplexu lachrymose Conjugis, Ortus
Cœlestes Divûmque thoros sprevises beatos.
Tantum Amor, et Mulier, vel Amore potentior.

Tu tamen illudis: tua Magnificentia tanta est: Praque subumbrata Splendoris Imagine tanti Praque illo Meritis famosis nomine parto Castera, qua Vecors, ati Numina, vulgus adera; Praedia, Amiettina, armenta, peculia, numinos, Quaque placent oculis, formas, spectacula, Amorez, Quaque placent ori, quaque auribas, omnia tennis.

Nat u grande sapis, Supor at sapientia non est: Omnis et in parvis bene qui scit desipnisse, Saepe superciliis padmam sapientibus aufert. Ludit Aristippum modo tetrica Turba Sophorum, Mitta purpo reo moderantem verba Tyranno Ludit Aristippus dictamina vana Sophorum, Quod levis emensi male torquet Culicis umbas: Et quisquis placuisse Studet Beroibus altis, Desipuisse studet sie gratia creacit ineptis. Denique laurigeris quisquis sua tempora vittis,

Covert, concealed, 79 Coverture, covering, shelter, 468 Covetise, covetize, covetousness, 80, 176 Cowardree, cowardice, 522 Cracknell, a thin hard-baked biscuit, 447 Crasie, cracked, 553 Crag, cragge, neck, 449, 478 Craggy, knotty, 265 Crake, to boast, 807; boast, boasting, 140, 434 Crank, a winding, 485
Crank, vigorously, 478
Crapples, grapples, claws, 336
Crased helth, impaired health, 208 Cratch, rack, crib, 601 Creatie, indented with creaks, 539
Creatied, crested, tufted, 231
Creete, cattle, live stock, 652
Cremosis, cremsis, crimson, 140, 449, 456 Cremoin, cremum, crimson, 140, 449, 408
Crewe (priestes crewe) = crewet, cruize, vessel
Crime, accusation, reproach, fault, 153, 449
Crisped, curly (hair), 94
Crooke (cross), gibbet, 318
Croslet, a little cross, 42 Cros-cut, to pierce or cut across, 217 Croud, a fiddle, 588 Cruda, a name, 300 Cruddle, to curdle, 448. Cruddy, curdled, 44, 178 Crumenall, purse, 474 Cud, not the thing chewed, but the somach where the food is received before rumination, 505 Cuffing (or cuffling), striking, 250 Culter, a ploughshare, 564 Culter, dove, 115, 500 Culvering, culverin, a sort of cannon, 847 Cumbrous, troublesome, 14 Curats, curiets, cuirasses, 318, 382 Curelesse, hard to be cured, incurable, 217, 386, Curtaxe, cutlass, 240 Cut, fashion, 514 Dædale, skilful, 155; fertile, 283
Daint, daynt, dainty, 60, 155, 234 (superl. dayntest,
149). Dainty, rare, valuable, 20
Dailie, to trifie, 233. Dalitaunce, idle talk, trifling, 90 Dame, lady, 108
Damnify, to injure, damage, 73, 110
Damozel, damsel, 82
Danisk, Danish, 282 Dapper, neat, pretty, 477 Darrayne, to prepare, get ready, for battle, 31, 44, 157 dazzled, frightened ('a darred lark' is Durres, dazzied, rightened (*a darres lark' 1s generally explained as a lark caught (? frightened) by means of a looking-glass), 428
Dayeuman, a judge, arbitrator, 122
Daze, to dazzie, dim, 13, 51, 573; to confound, 194
Dead-doing, death-dealing, 93
Deuded, deadened, 293 Dealth, bestows, 230 Deare, valuable, precious, 177
Deare, hurt, injury, 48; sore, sad, 143; sorely, 106
Dearling, darling, 273 Dearnelie, sorrowfully, mournfully (literally secretly,

hence lonely, sadly, &c.), 544 Deaw, to beliew, 87, 356

to contend, strive.

125, 897. Debatement, debate, 110

207, 880; battle, strife,

Debate,

Debonsire, gracious, courteous, 20, 188, 183 Decay, to destroy, perish, relax, 134, 144, 38 struction, ruin, death, 22, 43, 186, 223, 440 Deceased, taken by deceit, 303 Deceipt, decelt, 444 Decrete, decease, 844
Decreted, determined on, 258
Decreted, decreased, 259 eeme (prot. dempst), to judge, dosm, 121, 200,: 253, 471, 'doeme his payne'=adjudge his pus ment, 292 Dering-doors, doers of daring deeds, 229
Deface, to defeat, 121
Defame, disgrace, dishonour, 310, 188, 229, 333
Defame, defaced, destroyed, 98, 122, 165 Defeasaunce, defeat, Defeature, defeat, 259
Defeat, to keep or ward off. 151, 245
Deffy, deftly, gracefully, 455
Define, to settle, decide, 242 Deforme, shapeless, deformed, 147
Deform, to avert (by a proper settlement), se. 255 appe Degendered, degenerated, 295 Delay, to temper, stop, remove, 100, 128, 228
Delios (Deluce), flower de-lice (= 50s delicism
the iris, 456
Delices, delights, 105, 279, 310. Delightsoms, delights ful Dell, hole, 452 Delce, dell, hole, cave, 112, 119, 169, 232 Demayne, demeane, de ing, treatment, 121, 129, 208, 388. Den treated, 556 Demisse, submissive, 600
Dempt. See Deeme
Denay, to deny, 199, 219, 294, 413
Dent, dint, blow, 259 Deore, dew, 561 Depainted, depicted, 103
Depaint, to divide, separate, remove, 133, 176
parture, 195 Depende, to hang down, 145, 446
Depend, to hang down, 145, 446
Deprare, to defame, 330
Dernful, mournful, 564. See Dea See Dearnetie Dernius, mournut, sos. See Degraces Dernius, secretly, 227; grievously, severely, 18 Der-doing = performance of daring deeds, 113 Derring-doe, daring deeds, warlike deeds, 16 Derth, scarcity, 20 Deryoe, to draw away, transfer, 22 Descrie, descry, to perceive, discover, 94, 108, reveal, 392 Descrie, to describe, 94, 420 Desine, to denote, 245
Despoirefull drift, hopeless cause, 146 Despoir(still dryft, nopeless cause, 148
Desporate, despairing, 244
Despight, anger, malice, 17, 81, 162; a set defiance, 309
Despight(still, despiteous, malicious, 81, 118
Despoyl, to unrobe, undress, 145
Desac, dais, 284

Desynde, directed, 265
Detaine, detention, 324
Devicefull, full of derices (se mesque, tr)
, Sec.), 806

Devise, devize, to guess st., 128; parpo

hearde of in these Countries, and ie saye (I knowe not howe truely) knowne the like before in their id vobis videtur magnis Philosophis! Englishe Hexameters so exceedingly enure my Penne sometime in that I fynd indeede, as I have heard you I fynd indeede, as I nave neard you in words, neither so harde, nor so will easily and fairely yeelde it selfe tongue. For the onely, or chiefer to gapeth, and, as it were, yawneth more transfer of the it they are the selfer to the selfer t mming shorte of that it should, and ding the measure of the Number, r, the middle sillable being used the, when it shall be read long in like a lame Gosling that draweth one and Hearen being used shorte as one it is in verse stretched out with a e a lame dogge that holdes up one is to be wonne with Custonie, and For, why ast be subdued with Use. ist be subdued with Use. For, why may not we, as else the Greeks, lome of oure owne Language, and centes by the sounde, reserving the e Verse? Loe, here I let you see toying in Rymes turned into your hicese of Verse by this Threaten. Il me your fansie without parcialitie.

plindfoulded pretie God, that fea

Miseries which maketh his bloodie

his Moother with a Veale hath his Face? least he my Loove happely channee

comparable to those two, which I ex tempore in bed, the last time we Westminster?

I eate did I joy, and that which I gorged. se many goodly matters leaft I for

ily wish, you would either send me recepts of Arte, which you observe r else followe mine, that M. Philip but enlarged with M. Sidneys own augmented with my Observations, both accorde and agree in one: throwe one an other, and be over-est. Trust me, you will hardly bete good liking and estimation Maisyour Satyricall Verses, and I, since of haring before of my selfe had of Englishe Versifying, am even o give you some token, what, and un I am able to doe: for, to tell you e shortely at convenient leysure, to c anortely at convenient legistre, to oke in this kinde, whiche I entitle hamesis; whyche Booke, I dare unvery profitable for the knowledge, e Invention and manner of handling, forth the marriage of the Thames: st beginning, and offspring, and all

the Countrey, that he passeth thorough, and also describe all the Rivers throughout Englande, whyche came to this Wedding, and their righte names, and right passage, &c. A worke, believe me, of much labour, wherein notwithstanding Master Holinshed hath muche furthered and advantaged me, who therein hath bestowed singular paines, in searching oute their firste heades and sources; and also in tracing and dogging oute all their Course, til they fall into the Sea

O Tite, siquid, ego, Ecquid erit pretij?

But of that more hereafter. Nowe, my Dreames and Dying Pellicane, being fully finished (as I partelye signified in my laste Letters) and presentive to bee imprinted, I wil in hande forthwith with my Faery Queene, whyche I praye you hartily send me with al expedition: and your frendly Letters, and long expected Judgement wythal, whyche let not be shorte, but in all pointes suche, as you ordinarily an and I artraordinarily desire. Multum But of that more hereafter. Nowe, my Dreames narilye use, and I extraordinarily desire. vale. Westminster. Quarto Nonas Aprilis 1580. Sed, amabo te, meum Corculum tibi se ex animo com-Sed, amaoo te, meam Corculum too se ex animo com-mendat plurimim: januliu mirata, te nihi ad literas suas responsi dedisse. Vide queso, ne id tibi Capi-tale sit: Mihi certè quidemerit, neque tibi hercle im-punè, ut opinor, Iterum vale, & yahn voles sæpè. Yours alwayes to commaunde,

INVERTO

Postscripte. I take best my Drames shoulde come forth alone, being growen by meanes of the Glosse (running continually in maner of a Paraphrase) full as great as my Calendar. Therin be some full as great as my Calendar. Therin be some things excellently, and many things wittly discoursed of E. K. and the pictures so singularly set forth and purtrayed, as if Michael Angelo were there, he could (I think) nor amende the beste, nor reprehende the worst. I know you woulde lyke them passing wel. Of my Stemmata Dudleiana, and reprenence the name of the presence of the passing wel. Of my Stemmala Dudleiana, and especially of the sundry Apostrophes therein, addressed you knowe to whome, must more advisement be had, than so lightly to sende them abroade: howbeit, trust me (though I doe never very well) yet, in my owne fancie, I never dyd better. Verunger solim: nunouam vero assequar.

EXTRACT FROM HARVEY'S REPLY.

But Master Collin Cloule is not every body, and But Master Collin Cloule is not every body, and albeit his olde Companions, Master Cuddy and Master Hobbinoll be as little beholding to their Mistresse Poetrie, as ever you writ: yet he peradventure by the meanes of hir special favour, and some personall priviledge, may happely live by Dying Pellicanes, and purchase great landes, and lordshipper, with the money, which his Calendar and Invanes have, and will affourde him. Extra focurs, I like your Dreames passingly well: and the rather, bicause they savour of that singular extra-ordinarie veine and invention, which I ever fancied moste, and in a maner admired onelye in Lucian, Petrarche, Arctine, Pasquill, and all the most deli-

. Reprinted from ' Three Proper and willie familiar Letters, &c.

GLOS.	SARY.
Earne, to yearn, 12, 41, 293, 452; to be grieved, 213 Earst, erst, first, soonest, previously, 51, 70, 83, 165,	Emploaged, plunged, 213 Empoysoned, poisoned, 187, 189
477: at earst, at length, 295; at present, 485	Emprise, emprize, enterprise, attempt, 98, 1
Easterlings, men of the East (Norwegians, Danes,	810
&c.), 138	Empurpled, purple-dyed, 150, 195, 227
Euth, ethe, easy, 95, 290, 535	Engunter, lest, 450, 459 Enbosome, to fix firmly, 148
Edge, to sharpen, 237 Edifye, to build, inhabit, 15, 157, 495	Enchace, enchase, to adorn, embellish, 76, 13
Eeke, eke, to increase, 37, 166, 199, 241; also, 459	518; to honour with befitting terms, 2
Effercel, made fierce. inflamed, 220	grave, 380; dart, 347
Efforce, to oppose, 164	Encheason, reason, cause, occasion, 83, 469
Efforced, efforst, forced, constrained, compelled (to	Encomberment, hindrance, 400
yield), 119, 228	Encrocke, to come on, 450
Effraid, scared, 13	Endamage, to damage, do harm, 422
Eft, afterwards, again, forthwith, moreover, 82,	Endangerment, danger, 302 Endevourment, endeavour, labour, 515
98, 123, 243, 402 Effsoones, soon after, forthwith, 13, 159	Endew, to endow, 32
Eide, seen, 248	Endile, to censure, 422
Eine, eyes, 568	Endlong, from end to end, continuously, 211,
Eld, age, old age, 61, 93, 239, 288	Endosse, write on the back, endorse, 3.3, 555
Elfe, fairy, 112	Endure, to harden, 270
Els (elles), else, elsewhere, otherwise, 37, 122, 189	Ene, once, 485
Embace. embase, to bring or cast down, humiliare,	Enfelon d, made fell or fierce, 337
195, 361, 388, 574. Embaste, debased, dishonoured,	Enfected. See Infest
157, 209 Embar to grand confine 21 48 219	Enferce, to make fierce, 97 Enforme, to fashion, 386
Embar, to guard, confine, 21, 48, 219 Embassade, ambassador, 598	Enfouldred, hurled out like thunder and ligh
Embassage, embassy, message, 208	72
Embatteil, to arm for battle, 102	Engin, wiles, deceit, contrivance, 99, 161, 21
Embaulm, to anoint, 266	Engirt, surrounded, 602
Embay, to bathe, 56, 63, 84, 124, 151; bask, 534	Englut, to glut, fill, 89
Embayl, to bind up, 94	Engore, to gore, wound, 159, 185, 277, 392
Embellisht, adorned (with flowers), 449	Engorge, to devour, glut, 143
Embosome, to foster, 99	Engraffed, engraft, implanted, fixed, 164, 23
Emboss, to overwhelm, press hard, 57, 158, 225; to	
surround, enclose, 25, 70, 381 Embosse, to adorn, ornament, array, 158, 162, 248	Engrasp, to grasp, 104 Engrave, to bury, 64, 86, 104; to cut, piere.
Embow, to arch over, to curve, bend, 56, 537	Engreere, engriere, to grieve, to be vexed, 59.
Embowell, to take out the bowels, 196	Engrosse, to buy up in large quantities, to r
Embower, to take shelter, 507	681; to write a large letter, 555
Emboyl, to boil (with anger), 97. Emboyled, heated,	Engroste, made thick, 111, 176, 681
71	Enhaunse, to lift up, raise, 13, 109, 260
Embrace, to brace, to fasten, or bind, 361; to pro-	
tect, 203	Principa to Daning one
Embracement, an embrace, 98, 201 Embrave, to decorate, 86, 481	Enlumine, to illumine, 296
Embreade, embroder, to embroider, 189, 225	Enmore, to move. See Emmore Enrace, to implant, 187, 409
Embrewe, to stain with blood, 189, 40)	Enragement, rapture, 602
Embusied, occupied, 265	Enraunge, to range, 367
Eme, uncle, 136	Enraunged, ranged in order, 191, 603
Emeraud, emerald, 150	Enrold, encircled, 91, 147
Emmore, to move, 85, 117	Enseames, encloses, 289
Emong, among, 146. Emongest, amongst, 159, 173	Ensew, ensue, to follow after, pursue, 151, 1
Empale, to enclose, fringe, 535	Ensuing, following, 275
Empare, empair, to diminish, impair, hurt, 67, 134, 311, 352	Ensuarie, to ensuare, entangle, 338
Emparlaunce, trenty, 277, 316	Entayle, to carve, inlay, 94, 109, 112; (sb.) c
Smpart, assign, 261	Enterdeale, negotiation, 334, 520
Empassioned, empassionate, moved or touched with	Enterpris, to undertake, 82
passion, feeling, 22, 210, 219, 342, 536	Enterprize, to entertain, 88; take in hand,
Empeach, to hinder, prevent, 53, 174, 219; hin-	Entertain, take, receive (pay), 126, 370.
drance, 113 : disfigurement, 151	taune, entertainment, hospitality, 90, 341, 3
compeopled, dwelt, 66	Entertake, to entertain, 341
imperce, empierce, to pierce through (prec. em-	Entire, inward, internal, 160, 167, 195, 27
perst, empierst), 86, 124, 184, 210	Entre, Inward, Internal, 160, 167, 195, 27 tyrely, earnestly, 71, 393; entirely, 120 Entraile, entrayl, to twist, entraile, interior, 192, 322, 246, 470
operall, to endanger, 248	199 999. 246, 470
perish, to perish, decay, 448	Entraile, twisting, entanglement, 13
pight, fixed, settled, 101, 181, 242, 420	

GLOSSARY.

The numbers refer to the pages.

```
is name,' 442, 474
to lower, to hang down, 82, 257, 397
                                                                          Adore, to adorn, 290
                                                                          Adorne, ornament, 226
Adowne, down, 49
andon, 138
mr, 202, 203
                                                                          Adrad, adred, adredde, afraid, terrified, 162, 244
       e, conduct, 356, 406
                                                                              272, 507
mave, conduct, 398, 409 or aid, support, maintain, 364, 383; alsely, 242 remained, 178 et, to pay the penalty of, to atone for, 101, 122, 179, 212, 235, 258, 595; abide
                                                                          Adrad, to be frightened, 299
                                                                          Advance, to extol, 34; impel, 81
Advance, to extol, 34; impel, 81
Advanture, chance, 237; opportunity, 243; to attempt, 314
                                                                           Adview, to view, 308
                                                                          Advize, advise, to consider, perceive, take thought of, bethink, 79, 129, 294, 419
ow or cast down, 219, 338
ned, 227; a delay, stay, 155, 202 ipe out, 101
                                                                           Advizement, consideration, 103, 126
                                                                          Advard, an award, 280; to award, 294

Emuling, emulating, rivalling, 550 (æmuled, 550)

Afeard, afraid, 217, 235
d, from the bank, astray, at a loss,
de, harbour, 418
                                                                          Ayeurd, afraid, 217, 235
Affear, to frighten, 93, 96
Affect, affection, 365; sorrow, 566; imitation, 594
Affection, passion, 100, 139, 168, 386
Affide, affyde, betrothed, 273, 306; intrusted, 322
Afflicted, low, humble, 11
Afford, to consent, 103
Affray, to strike, to strike down, to encounter, to assault, 82, 163
Affray, to terrify fray 184; terrory 240, 245
use, wake up, 218
abrayde), to start up suddenly, to, 257, 261; to quake with sudden fear,
se, deceit, fraud, 141, 230, 359
e, to clog up, choke, encumber, hinder,
                                                                           Affray, to terrify, fray, 184; terror, 340, 345
Affrende, to make friends, 246
dimming along near the ground, 369
umpt, account, 444, 515
encourage, 90, 203
                                                                           Affret, encounter, 207, 242
rant, to agree, to reconcile, 255, 278, reement, 99, 125
                                                                           Affront, to confront, encounter, oppose, 50, 176,
                                                                               244
greeably to, according to, 65, 75, 99, rdingly, 139
                                                                           Affy, to betroth, espouse, 372, 376; entrust, 322
                                                                           Affyaunce, betrothal, 99
 side by side, to adjoin, border, 352
                                                                           Afore, in front, before, 97, 170
Aygrace, favour, kindness, goodwill, 125; to make
ntertaining (courteously), 88 (, garb, 519 to subdue, daunt, tame, 448
                                                                               gracious, 151
                                                                           Aggrate, to please, delight, charm, treat politely, 105, 128, 193, 204, 238, 349, 410
 , caress, 274
emble, gather together, 128
crease, 259, 317
                                                                           Aglet, point, tag, 94, 366
Agree, to settle, to cause to agree, 97
                                                                          Agree, to settle, to cause to agree, 97
Agreeably, alike, in a manner to agree, 391
Agrie, agrize, agryze, agryze, to cause to shudder,
to terrify, to make disgusted, 111, 165, 346, 430
Agryz'd, having a terrible look, disfigured, 269
Aguize, aguize, to deck, adorn, fashion, accourre,
82, 83, 165, 300, 519; to disguise, 107
Alablaster, alabaster, 167
Albe, albee, although, 37, 455
es), purchased provisions, cates, 128 uit, acquite, to deliver, release, 49, 145; free, 314
rystals, 288
nunt, tame, moderate, 195, 260, 341,
   452
idjudge, 307
                                                                           Albe, albee, although, 37, 455
                                                                           Aleggeaunce, alleviation, 186
djudge, 435
njunge, 430
repare, adjust, direct, clothe, arm, 176,
4ddress, ready, 243
pproach, join, 198
admiration, 347
                                                                           Alew, howling, 323
                                                                           Algale, algales, altogether, wholly, by all means, in all ways, at all events, 161, 201, 259, nevertheless.
                                                                         All, although, 155; 'all as' = as if, 448
onder at, 256, 266, 399
```

GLOSSARY. 712 Allegge, to lessen, allay, 452 Astonish, to stun, 272 Almes, a free allowance, alms, 230
Alone (only), without compulsion, 255 Astonying, confounding, 305 Attach, to seize, take prisoner (essect, 203), M 275, 318 Alow, downwards, 897 Attains, attayne, to find, reach, fall in with, 363
Attains, to stain, obscure, 47
Attempt, to tempt, 354 Alow, praise, 5 Aloss, praise, 5
Als. also, 80. 84, 123, 232
Amaine, violently, by force, 235, 256, 364
Amate, to daunt, subdue, to stupefy, terrify, 16, 87, 178, 197, 220; to keep company with, 128
Amaze, amazement, 194, 237 Attendement, intent Attent, attention, 211, 406 Attone (atone), at one, together, reconciled, 84, 126
264, 277. Attone, attone, at once, together, 84, 128 Ambassage, embassy, 517 Amearst, amerced, punished, 583 Amenage, to manage, handle, 97
Amenaunce, carriage, behaviour, 160, 121, 242, 520
Amis, amice, a priestly vestment, 29 Attrapt, dressed, 251 Attoeen, attreene, between, 185, 251, 290 Attrict, between, at intervals, 224 Amount, to mount up, ascend, 60
Amove, to move, remove, 31, 56, 219
Andrile, anvil. 72 Aumayl, to enamel, 94 Araile, arale, to fall, sink, lower, descend, but down, 126, 899, 447, 448

Araunt, depart, 388 Annoy, annoyance, grief, hurt, 40, 91, 129
Antickes, antiques, ancient, or fantastic figures, 94, 112, 223
Apace, fast, copiously, 286 Arauntage, advantage, 108 Avaunting, advancing (boastfully), 92 Arenge, revenge, 258 Appail, to falter, 260; to weaken, 160
Appay, apay (præt, and p. p. appay'd, appaid), to
please, satisfy, pay, 129, 148, 354, 470, 543
Appeach, to impeach, accuse, 123, 144, 320, 342 Avengement, revenge, 30, 184
Aventred, thrust forward (at a venture), 188,29 Aventring, pushing forward, 258 take note of, reflect, bethink, 37, 109, 187, 169, 174, 238, 275, 419; advise, 273 Appease, to cease from, 25 Appease, to cease from, 29
Appele, to accuse, 341; th offer, 168
Appellation, appeal, 427
Apple, to attend to, 65; to bend one's steps to, 106
Approven, to put to the proof, to prove, 432
Approxaunce, approval, 153
Arborett, little grove, 107 Arizefull, observant, 260 Avoid, to depart, go out, 161
Aroure, 'to make avoure' = to justify, maintain, 31 Awarned, made, was made aware, 216 Awayle, to wait for, 157; watch, 280 Awhape, to terrify, frighten, 263, 351, 513 Aread, aread (p. p. area), to tell, say, declare, describe, inform, teach, interpret, explain, 55, 57, 93, 164, 220, 238, 258, 309, 380; appoint, 355; detect, 254 Augulets (aglets), tags, points of gold, 94 Aym, direction, 107 Babe, doll, 460
Buce, low, 36, 168
Bace, the game of prisoner's base, 476; 'balks'
=challenged, 218 Arear, areare, arere, arreare, to the rear, backward, aback, 143, 196, 214, 377, 509 Arel, arrel, to allot, entrust, adjudge, 120, 140, 254 Area, in a row, in order, 357. =challenged, 218

Baffuld, disgraced (as a recreant knight), 31, 31

Baile, to deliver, 275; oustody, 428

Bains, banus (of marriage), 77

Bale, grief, sorrow, affliction, trouble, 13, 4, 4, 114; bales, ruins, 407; baleful, full of bale, structive, deadly, 169, 241; balefulasse, 12 Arguments, signs, indications, 391 Arights, rightly, 343 Arights, rightly, 343
Arke, box, chest, 248
Arras, tapestry of Arras, 28
Arraught (pret. of arracch), seized forcibly, 135
As, as if, 51, 70, 126, 197
Askaunce, sideways, 112, 160
Aslake, to slake, abate, appease, 26
Aslape, on the slope, aside, 180
Asay, to try, attempt, assail, attack, 20, 28, 97, 183, 277; an attempt, trial, 83, 92, 93; value, 19, 177 154 Ban, banne, to curse (band, cursed), 197, 273, 349, 368, 601 177 Assayde, affected, 470 Asseige, to besiege, 141 Band, forbid, hanish, 167; assemble, 31 Bandog, mastiff, 474
Bane, death, destruction, 142 Assignment, design, 140 Assite, measure, 538 Banket, banquet, 190, 264
Bannerall, a standard (shaped like a smill Assoil, assoyl, to absolve, determine, set free, let loose, renew, 65, 104, 160, 203, 243, 397, 533; to pay, 548; remove, 255, 260

Assoil, to befool, to beguile, bewilder, 132, 202, 452 tail), 393 Barbe, equipments of a horse, horse-armout, Barbican, a watch-tower, 128 Assure, to promise, assert confidently, 132 Bard, ornamented with bars (ornaments # 1 Asseage, to grow mild, 28 girdle), 94 Assyr, to mark or point out, 46
Assart, to start up suddenly, 166
Assert, befall, come upon suddenly, 482 Base, low, 18; the lower part, 339
Basenesse, a low humble condition, 371 Basen-wide, widely extended, 519

Bases, armour for the legs, 318 Bash, to be abashed, 100

Astond, astound, astonied, astonished, stunned, 269,

```
lowborn, 41, 96
lightly, 316
102; fed, 473
ttack, 422
dy for battle, in order for battle, 33,
nattled, fortified, 537
rly to fatten), to be of good flavour,
lub, 395
lt, 94, 297, 607
642
ill, a position in which one is kept at
aurels, 234, 386
iffice, 103, 404; to bait (a bull), 123;
bate, to let rest, 148
companions, 159
me to, go to, to suit, to happen, 62,
d, equipped, decked, adorned, 81, 111, ;; 'ill-bedight,' disfigured, 112
e, dip, 110
ing, proper, 127
ning, 171
d with gore, 285
doy, use, 95
 command, 90, 178
name, address, pronounce, promise,
7, 91, 198, 238, 244, 286, 313, 455; or-
adjudged, entrusted, 65, 120, 253, 883
  266
nise, 251; call, 484; behott, promised,
d salutation or greeting, 260
amy, a lover, 108, 117; encompass, 575; adorn, 366 lady, 167 or kind) looks, 94, 211, 598 autiful and good woman, 455
rfeited, 212
), are, 232
, 114, 316
enefice, 517
ks of (bent) grass, 377
 236
292; bier, 148
 beseen, of good appearance, comely,
μ, to be seemly, to seem fit, to suit, appear, 128, 129, 159, 161, 276, 320,
ting, 287
idress, 316
med, 216
```

int, besprinkled, 481, 485 bestedded), situated, placed, placed in

```
713
    peril, 14, 85, 217, 267; treated, 383; attended, 230; beset, 184, 244; 'ill bested'=in a bad
 plight, 83
Bestaine, to stain, 265
 Bestow, to place, 128
Bestose, to place, 128
Bestrad, bestrided, 301
Bet, did beat, 89
Betake (pret. betooke), to take (into), to deliver, bestow, betake one's self, 34, 59, 121, 417
Betecene, to deliver, give, 121
Bethinke, to make up one's mind, 40
Bethrall, to take captive, 52
Bethinke, to baddle to begind to be 32
Bethrall, to take aptive, 52
Bethinke bethinke to bedieful to begin to 83, 110, 183;
 Betide, betyde, to befall, to happen to, 83, 110, 183;
betid, betyded, betight, befall, befallen, 307, 482, 552
Bett, better, 477
 Bever, the front part of a helmet (covering the
    mouth), 102
 Bevy, company (of ladies), 128
 Bewaile, to choose, select, 38
Bewray, to reveal, betray, accuse, 31, 36, 168, 244;
    signify, 642
 Bickerment, bickering, strife, 311
 Bid, to pray, 14
Bide, to bid, offer, 202
 Biggen, cup, 460
 Bilive, bylive, blive, forthwith, quickly, 36, 475
 Bils, battle-axes, 353
 Blame, to blemish, 120; injury, hurt, 156
Blanckt, confounded, put out of countenance, 170
 Blast, to wither, 187
 Blatter, to bluster (in note), 704
Blaze, to blazon forth, proclaim, 68
 Blemishment, a blemish, 239
 Blend (pret, and p. part, blent), to mix, confuse,
confound, defile, blemish, stain, obscure, 42, 89,
113, 206, 359, 525, Blent, blinded, obscured,
blotted, 97, 227, 310
 Blere, to blear (one's eyes), deceive, 466
Bless, to preserve, deliver, 19, 44, 87, 259; to bran-
dish, 33, 51
 Blesse, bliss, 281
Blin, to cease, 184
Blincked, dimmed, 206
 Blind, dark, 285
 Blist, wounded, struck, 397
Blist, blessed, 267
 Bloncket, liveries, grey coats, 458
Blont, blunt, unpolished, 474
 Bloosme, blossom, bloom, 268, 448
Blot, blotten, to defame, blemish, 230, 235
Blubbred, wet or stained with tears, 39, 298
 Boad, 'bootles boad'=lived uselessly, profitlessly,
    516
Boads, bodes, portends, 425
Bode, abode, 354, 416
Botey (or beada), 630; 'place (situated in a grassy
hollow) enclosed by man in which to put cattle
    in the spring and summer months, while on the mountain pastures—a place that ensures safety. (HENRY KINAHAN in The Athenœum, No. 2167,
 May 8, 1869)
Bollet, bullet, 45
 Roll, arrow, 452
 Bond, bound, 108, 269
 Boone, prayer, petition, 241, 341
Boord, bord, to accost, to addre
                                                                     s, talk with, 87,
     99, 125, 170; conversation, 212; go side by side,
    289
```

Bore, borne, 247 Borde, coast, 418

714

Borowe, borrowe, pledge, surety, 459, 460, 520 Borrell, rustic, 467 Bosse, middle of shield, 353 Bouget, budget 21
Bought, fold, 13, 69, 507
Boult, to sift, bolt, 99 Bounse, to beat, 220 Bountie, bounty, goodness, 92, 206. Bounteous, generous, good, 160, 164, 219. Bountyhed, generosity, 145, 160, 173
Bourdon, burden (of a song), 567

Bourne, boundary, 107 Bout, about, 170 Bouring-can, a drinking-can, 29
Bound, to lead (by a direct course), 67

re, chamber, inner room, 161; to lodge, shelter, 360, 407 Bowrs, muscles (of the shoulder), 53

Boy, a term of reproach, 105
Boystrous, rough, rude (as applied to a club), 50
Brace, to embrace, encompass, 474 Brag, proudly, 449. Bragly, proudly, 452. Bragging, proud, 449 Brame, shar sharp), 168 sharp passion (cf. O.E. breme, severe,

Bransles, dances, brawls, 212 Brast, burst, 36, 49, 198, 242 Brare, fair, beautiful, 94, 153

Braverie, fair, beautiful, 94, 103
Braverie, finery, 521
Braverie, gallantiv, splendidly, 107
Brauened, muscular, brawny, 53
Bray (braie), to cry out suddenly, cry aloud, utter aloud, 350; gaspont, 84
Braynepan, skull, 389

Breaded, braided, embroidered, 88, 168 Breare, brere, briar, 64, 160, 213 Breech, breeches, 338

Breede, work, produce, 159 Breem, breme, boisterous, rough, sharp, 433, 448, 485 Brenne, to burn, 246

Brent, burnt. 55, 71, 160
Brickle, brittle, 283, 494
Brigandine, a kind of light vessel, 533 Brim, margin of the horizon, 341 Brize, bryze, gadfly, 363, 537 Brocage, pimping, 441, 520

Broch, to commence, broach, 162 Brode, abroad, 247 Brond, sword, 121, 226 Brondiron, sword, 250

Bronds, embers, brands, 115
Brood, a brooding-place (? an error for bood=O.E.
bood or abood, an abode, resting place; cf. bode,
p. 334), 112
Brooke, to endure, bear brook, 179, 240

Brouses, twigs, 216 Brunt, assault, 128

120, 267

Byline, quickly, also active, 55, 183, 212. See belive

Carke, care, sorrow, grief, 16, 481 Carl, carle, an old man, 206; churl, 60, 237

Carriage, burden, 375
Cast, to consider, plot, resolve, purpose, 71
197; time, period, opportunity, 402, aer
utmost cast = almost dead, 378; a couple, 51
Castory, colour (red or plnk), 125
Castory, colour (red or plnk), 125 Caudron, caldron, 169 Causen, to assign a cause or reason, explain.

Cautelous, wary, 619 Cared, made hollow, 256 Centonel, a sentinel, 59, 239

Centonel, a sentinei, ny, 250 Certes, certainly, 164 Cesse, to cease, 274 Cesse, to cease, 274 Cesser, a breaking off, stop, 128 Chaffar, to chaffer, exchange, 102, 473 Chalenge, to claim, 122, 233, 238, 234; to follow, 81; accusation, 278 Chamelot water, camlet watered, 290 Chamelot withless of irrowed, 448

Chamfred, wrinkled, furrowed, 448 Brust, assault, 128
Brust, burst, 160, 202, 251
Brust, penowned, bruited, 514
Brusted, renowned, bruited, 514
Trustenesse, bruitshnesse, brutality, brute-like state.
Championesse, a female warrion, 226
Charge, assault, attack, 277
Charge, assault, attack, 277

uriot, 198 une, 549; a tune, song, 478, 500 fe, to become warm, to be irrit o be irritated, to 27, 47, 96, 432; rage, 301, 368, 383 hazardous, 513 , the cock, 17 , the cock, 1, 80; to chew, 30, 99, 505 ry, 187 riot, 503 re, countenance, favour, cheer, 12, 247. to cheer up, 60 squered, 147 O. B. ciclaton), a rich kind of cloth, 395 eerfully, 501 4, a cherishing, 503 herish, 409 def rent, 663 , enterprise, undertaking, performance, 126, 198, 220, 456, 459 nthlesse), heathen brood, 173 ought with a chiefe, worked with a s a nosegay). 481
ve birth to a child, 419 eplace, 128 rl, 201 divided, 259 arvicei, 209
, scholar, 343, 501
cleft, did cleave, 109, 510
ve, clene, pure, clean, 66;
Cleanly, skilfully, 521
ll, 92, 159, 282 66; entirely, 264, lemency, 329 purpose (properly a hank of thread), 80 76 cet, latch, 461 tet, meet, 40; nbed, mounted, 175, 257 t, 161, 187. Closely, secretly, 41, 166, 189 utches, 339 idaged with a clout or rag, 452 nded, 193 proach, 308 . 246 ocks (in heaps), 480 ;, knowledge, recollection, 83 raced, fondled, 166 eceit, cunning, 460 tence, 444; to hide, 411 sceitful, crafty, 449 bhage-plant, 534 encumber, 449. Com Combrous, laborious, me. 127 mmon, to commune, discourse, 129, 338 o relate (falsely), 435 advantage, 413 in common, equally, 66
?), compacted, concerted, 324
close, 158. Compacture, a close knitting 127 companion, 233 collect, procure, 80 ircuit, 210 ptrived, 195. Compast creast, the round ne helmet, 250 cite, call to aid, 12 , perfection (of character), 187; union, accomplish, 352

Complyne, evensong, 517 Comportaunce, behaviour, 83 Compound, to agree, 355
Comprize, to comprehend, understand, 130 Comprovinciall, to be contained in the same province with, 172 Compyle, to heap up, 164, 169; frame, 268; settle, reconcile, 276 Concert, to harmonize, 236 Concert, tharmony, 224, 598 Concert, to grow together, 267 Cond, learnt, 449, 475 Cond., tearnt, 443, 476
Conditions, qualities, 206, 270, 597
Conduct, conductor, guide, 415; management, 89
Confusion, destruction, 460
Conge, leave, 155, 523 Conjure, to conspire, 346 (onne, to know, 464 Consort, company, companion, 428; concert, 160, 566; to combine, unite (in harmony), 152
Constraint, distress, uneasiness, 87
Containe, to restrain, control, 206, 354, 386 Conteck, dispute, 460 Contempt, contemned, 480 Contrive, to wear out, spend, 130 Controverse, debate, controversy, 252 Convenable, conformable, 474 Convent, to convene, summon, 431 Convert, to turn, 341 Convince, to conquer, overthrow, 165 Coosen, kindred, 170 Coosinage, fraud, 521 Cope, to chop, bargain with, 517
Copesmate, a companion, 521
Coportion, an equal portion, 371
Corage, heart, mind, 164; wrath, 214 Corbe, crooked, 448 Corbe, corbel, a projecting piece of wood, stone, or iron, placed so as to support a weight of material, 279 Cordewayne, cordwayne, cordovan leather, 94, 639 Coronall, a wreath, garland, 187 Coronalion, carnation, 456 Corpse, a (living) body, 597. Corse, a body, 14, 20 bulk, frame, 27 Corsive, corrosive, 276 Cosset, a hand-reared lamb, 480 Cost, to approach, come to one's side, 543 Cote. sheep-fold, 467 Cott, a little boat, 107 Couched, bent, 156; laid (in order), 69 Could, knew, 385 Count, an object of interest or account, 345 Countenaunce, to make a show of, 88 Counter, encounter, 499 Countercast, counterplot, 378 Counterchaunge, return of a blow, 207 Counterfesaunce, a counterfeiting, 54, 201 Counterpoys, to counterbalance, 30 Counterroyle, to oppose, resist, 109 Coupe, a cage, coop, 477 Couplement, couple, 247 303 ('oure, to cover, protect, 120 Courst, chaced, 315 Courting, attendance at court, 520
Couth, could, 118; knew, knew how, 450, 464

Covert, concealed, 79 Coverture, covering, shelter, 466 Covetise, covetize, covetousness, 80, 176 Cowardree, cowardice, 522 Cracknell, a thin hard-baked biscuit, 447 Cræsie, cracked, 553 Crag, cragge, neck, 449, 478
Craggy, knotty, 265
Crake, to boast, 807; boast, boasting, 140, 434 Crank, a winding, 435
Crank, vigorously, 478
Crapples, grapples, claws, 336
Crased helth, impaired health, 208 Cratch, rack, crib, 601 Create, indented with creaks, 589
Create, indented with creaks, 589
Created, crested, tufted, 231
Crete, cattle, live stock, 692
Cremosin, cremsin, crimson, 140, 449, 456
Crews (priestes crews)=crewst, cruise, voss crewe (priestes crewe) = crewet, cruise, vessel, Crime, accusation, reproach, fault, 153, 449 Croste (cross), glibet, 318 Croste, a little cross, 42 Croste, to pierce or cut across, 217 Croud, a fiddle, 588 Crystella to constit. Cruddle, to curdle, 448. Cruddy, curdled, 44, 178 Crumenall, purse, 474 Cud, not the thing chewed, but the somach where the food is received before rumination, 505 Cuffing (or cuffing), striking, 250 Culter, a ploughshare, 564 Culver, dove, 115, 500 Culvering, culverin, a sort of cannon, 847 Cumbrous, troublesome, 14 Curats, curiets, cuirasses, 318, 382 Curelesse, hard to be cured, incurable, 217, 386, Curtaxe, cutlass, 240 Cut, fashion, 514 Derdale, skilful, 155; fertile, 283
Duint, daynt, dainty, 60, 155, 234 (superl. dayntest,
149). Dainty, rare, valuable, 20
Dailie, to trifie, 238. Dalitaunce, idle talk, trifling, an Dame, lady, 108 Dannify, to injure, damage, 73, 110 Dannozel, damsel, 82 Danisk, Danish, 282 Dapper, nest, pretty, 477 rayne, to prepare, get ready, for battle, 81, 44, 157 dazzled, Darred, frightened ('a darred lark' is generally explained as a lark caught (? frightened) generally explained as a lark caught (? frightened) by means of a looking-glass), 428
Dayesman, a judge, arbitrator, 122
Daze, to dazzle, dim, 13, 51, 573; to confound, 194
Dead-ioing, death-dealing, 92
Deadid, deadened, 293
Deatle, bestows, 230
Deatle, laughe precious, 177 Deare, valuable, precious, 177
Deare, valuable, precious, 177
Deare, hurt, injury, 48; sore, sad, 143; sorely, 106
Dearling, darling, 273 Dearnetie, sorrowfully, mournfully (literally secretly,

hence lonely, sadly, &c.), 544 Deaw, to bedow, 87, 856

Debate, to contend, strive, 207, 380; battle, strife, 125, 397. Debatement, debate, 110

Deboneire, gracious, courteous, 20, 188, 182 Decay, to destroy, perish, relax, 134, 144, 36 struction, ruin, desth, 22, 43, 198, 223, 400 Deceased, taken by deceit, 309 Decempt, deceit, 444 Deceme, decemes, 84 e, 844 Decreed, determined on, 258 Decressed, decreased, 259 Deeme (pret. dempst), to judge, deem, 121, 200, 253, 471, 'deeme his payne' = adjudge his pas ment, 292 Deering-doors, doors of daring deeds, 239 Deface, to defeat, 121 Deface, to defeat, 121
Defame, disprace, dishonour, 310, 158, 229, 382
Defaute, defaced, destroyed, 98, 122, 165
Defeasurec, defeat, 75
Defeature, defeat, 259
Defend, to keep or ward off. 151, 245
Define, deftly, gracefully, 455
Define, to settle, decide, 242
Defeate, to settle, decide, 242
Defeate, shapeless, deformed 147 urjare, w settie, decide, 742 Deforme, shapeless, deformed, 147 Defray, to avert (by a proper settlement), appease, 255 Dependered, degenerated, 295 Delay, to temper, stop, remove, 100, 128, 228
Delice (Deluce), flower de-lice (= flos delician the iris, 456 Delices, delights, 105, 279, 310. Delightsome. dell ful Dell, hole, 452 Delve, dell, hole, cave, 112, 119, 169, 233 Demayne, demeane, demeasuure, demeanour, ing, treatment, 121, 129, 208, 388. De treated, 556 Denisse, submissive, 600
Dempt. See Deeme
Denay, to deny, 199. 219, 294, 413
Dent, dint, blow, 259 Deparished, depicted, 103
Deparished, depicted, 103
Deparish to divide, separate, remove, 133, 175 parture, 195 Depend, to hang down, 145, 446
Deprave, to defame, 330
Dernful, mournful, 564. See Dea See Dearnelie Derniy, secretly, 227; grievously, severely, 18
Der-doing=performance of daring deeds, 118
Derring-doe, daring deeds, warlike deeds, 161. 477 Derth, scarcity, 20
Deryve, to draw away, transfer, 22
Descrie, descry, to perceive, discover, 94, 106, reveal, 392 Descrive, to describe, 94, 420
Desine, to denote, 245
Despairefull drift, hopeless cause, 146 Desperate, despairing, 244
Despisht, anger, malice, 17, 81, 162; a son
defiance, 309

Despightful, despiteous, malicious, 81, 118

Depoyl, to unrobe, undress, 145
Depoyl, to unrobe, undress, 145
Desse, dais, 284
Devine, directed, 265
Detaine, detention, 324
Devicefull, 120 of devices (as masques, th

Devise, devize, to guess at, 129; purpos

717

GLOSSARY.

```
k, 160, 268, 405, 447. Died of, reflected on, 380
                                           Devized, paint-
                                                                              Dispredden (pl.), spread out, 29
Disprofesse, to abandon, 220
                                                                              Dispurvayaunce, want of provisions, 212
Disseise, disseize, to disposees, 70, 434
            Descfull, due, 427
                                                                              Disseise, disseize, to dispossess, 70, 484
Disshivered, shivered to pieces, 282
 818.
r, 449
son, 127
                                                                              Dissolute, weak, 201
Distayne, to defile, 205
gated, 588
ice, 154
ered, 352
                                                                              Distent, beaten out, 112
                                                                              Disthronize, to dethrone, 186
Distinct, marked, 874
r, to arrange, prepare, dress, deck, 273; mark, 150
                                                                              Distraine, to rend, 153
Distraine, to rend, 153
Distraught, distracted, 246, 495; drawn apart, separated, 266
ad abroad, enlarge upon, 150, 175
ng, 410
                                                                              parated, 200
Distroubled, greatly troubled, 176
Dite, dighte, to make ready, 51
Diter, ditty, song, 107
Dicerse, distracting, diverting, 16, 87
Diverse, diverged, turned off, 175
at, 11; 'dolors dint'=pang of grief,
n, 449; darkly, 474
der, 97
withhold consent, 372
                                                                              Divide, to play a florid passage in music (Kitchin), 34
Divinde, deffied, 545
o lower, to draw back, 242, 248
                                                                              Divorced, separated by force, 22
Doale=dole, destruction, 314
Documents, instructions, 62
unfortunate, unsuccessful, unhappy,
              Disarenture, mishap, misfor-
unburden, 107
                                                                              Doe, to cause, 45
equit oneself of, account for, 425
                                                                               Doffe, to put off, 175, 208, 405
                                                                               Dole. doole, sorrow, grief, 147, 213, 262, 268, 471, 549. Doolefull. sorrowful, 109
Dolor (dolour), grief, 164, 268
Dome, doome, doom, judgment, censure, 59, 251,
 in two, 232
cipline, 229
tpel, 218
disclosie), to unfold, transform, 76, e, disengage, 254
any-coloured, 30, 213, 223
                                                                              Dome, doc
281, 289
                                                                              Don, to put on, 192, 399
Done, donne, to do, 158, 195, 410, 'of well to donne'
= of well-doing, 63: DOEN, to cause, 93; DOEN
(pl.), they do, 448
sconcerted, 160
o speak disparagingly of, 322
dissuade, 148
tre, to discover, 129, 165
                                                                              Donne, dun, 461
Doomefull, threatening doom, 425
Dortours, sleeping apartments, 420
 ting, 398
iscourteous, 161
                                                                              Doted, foolish, 52
Doub!, fear (also to fear), 183, 348, 349, 369, 379;
ing, 152
 n or shook of, 160
                                                                              Doubt, rear (also to fear), 183, 343, 349, 369, 379; 18 matter of doubt, 352. Doubtful, fearful, 39, 112, 188 Doubted, redoubted, 477 Drad, dred, dread, dreaded, feared, 84, 101, 226, 227, 240, 345, 423; an object of reverence, 11, 269. DREDDEST, most dread, 239 Draft, drift, aim, purpose, 152, 236
stress, 87, 89; uneasiness, 184, 385, ed, ill at ease, afflicted, 375 o draw forth, to cause to flow, 244,
rmity, 357
disguise, 255
isparage, 104
                                                                               Drapel, cloth, 128
val), perfidious, 102, 235
agreeable, 278
                                                                               Draught (=draft), stratagem, aim, 136, 265
                                                                               Drare, drove, 506
Dread, fury, 103. Dreadful, fearful, 159
arated, 281
                                                                              Dreate, Dreve, 108. Dreadful, Tearful, 109
Dreate, Dreve (Drevinent), grief, sortow, dreadful
force, 22, 50, 53, 149, 178, 347, 256, 272. Drevihed,
drearyhood, dryrihed, dreariness, affliction, 187,
162, 166, 225, 535
Dreat, drowned, 118, 145
Dreat, drowned, 118, 145
  114
, 114
ibdue, defeat, grieve, disquiet, 158,
4; defeat, ruin, 305, 408. Dismayfull,
 made, deformed, 141
                                                                              Dresse, to dispose, adorn, 220, 284, 489
Drevill, a slave, 236
ke off a coat of mail, 109
ing, roaming, 534
spairing. See Despairefull
                                                                              Droome, a drum, 59
Droupe, to droop, 134
paragement, 273
                                                                               Drousy-hed, drowsine
                                                                              Drouth, drought, 118
Drover, a boat, 282
Droyle, to work sluggishly, 514
Drugs, dregs, 85
sy for, 25; expense, 128; abundance,
iel, 19
read out, 168; discover, 153
                                                                              Irrugs, aregs, 63
Dumpish, heavy, 236
Duraunce, bondage, 186
Durfall, enduring, 283
Duresse, confinement, 289, 292
Dye, lot, destiny, 211
```

ipline, 68

sport, 160

isparage, 899

displeasaunce, displeasure, 134, 258

d, spread abroad, 91, 266, 358

tayne, entertainment, hospitality, 20, 341, 35 Entertake, to entertain, 341

Emire, invand, interral, 160, 167, 195, 279

tyrely, earnestly, 71, 3837, entirely, 129

Entraile, entrayl, 10 twist, enterine, including 192, 222, 246, 410

Entraile, twisting, entanglement, 13

GLOSSARY.

718

Empeopled, dwelt, 66

Emperill, to endanger, 248

Emperce, empierce, to pierce through (pret. emperal, empieral), 86, 124, 184, 210

Emperish, to perish. decay. 448
EmplyM, fixed, settled, 101, 184, 242, 420

GLOSSARY. Fault, to offend, be in error, 140, 444 west part, depth (bowels), 147 at of, treat, 213, 280, 296, 365 practise, 238. Enured, accustomed, Favour, feature, 331
Favourlesse, not showing favour, 126 Fay, a fairy, 241; faith, 334, 474
Feur, feure, companion, 399; to feure, together, 138
Feur, feuren, to frighten, 147, 176; 'feured — of,' itted habitually, 341 angry, indignant, 251; to emulate, ll about, 178, 349 egnant, 85 rap up, 70 tial, 427 sy, equipment, 68; to array, equip, Fee, tenure, 88; pay, service, 409, 553; property, 233, 276 rmine, 165 Feeble, enfeebled, 51. Feblesse, feebleness, 271
Feeld (golden), an emblazoned field (of a knight's of the ermine, 161 1, 96 shield), 433 ering, 201 ering, 182, 210 shield), 433

Feend, flend, devil, 70

Fetal, let fall, thrown down, 109, 233

Fetl, befell, 249; gall, 218

Fetl, serce, cruel, 172, 220, 337. Fetly, cruelly, 36, 142, 242, 417. Fetlonest, most fell, 239. Fetlonous, wicked, fell, 162. Fetnesse, cruelty, flerceness, 123, 270, 276

Fennittee, womanhood, 193

Feood, feud, cmmity, 232

Fensible, fit for defence, defensible, 127, 212

Fere, companion, husband, 60, 247, 308, 418

Ferme, lodging, 184 , 401 thdraw, 29 appearance, observation, 280, 312 cuse, 29 ank, 369 1, 193. Eternize, to make eternal, 66, amortalize, 503 Ferme, lodging, 184
Ferry, a ferry boat, 108
Fett, to fetch, 131; fetched (rescued), 307
Fleur-de-luce, the iris. See Delice '. Eughen, ewghen, of yew, 70, 519 pel, 137 iskilful, 416 'eless, 146 Feutre, feutre, to place the spear in the rest, to prepare for battle, 252, 258 profit, escheat, 35, 202 perience, 482
he out, 72; to fulfil a term, put an Figure, commission. fiat, 523 235 File, to defile, 162, 266
File, to polish, smoothe, 15, 556
Fine, end, 151, 245 ess out, 144 ise, 425 ned out, 118 Fire, to fix firmly, 112
Fire, to fix firmly, 112
Fire, to be fitting, 87; 'Of loves were fitted'=were suited, furnished with lovers, 231
Fit, fitt. emotion, passion, grief, 229, 260, 314, 350; ot out, 63 ed, 300 nded, 210 a musical strain, 68 action, 343 558 Flaggy. loose, 69, 178 Flatt, plain, 474 Flake, a flash, 163 ledged young, 71, 599 , 194 Flamed, inflamed, 107 Flasket, a basket, 606 a false appearance, 338 Flatting, flatwise, with the flat side (of the sword), 318 Flaw, a gust of wind, d, 210 leceive, 222, 293; to cause to fail, 103 glad, eager, 12, 261, 378; faynd, defaynes, delights, 358 Fleare, to mock, 519 Fleet, to sail, float, 146, 278, 552; to flit, 206 Flex, flax, 160 to feign, dissemble, 34, 93; to mis Flit, fleet, swift, 100, 222; changing, 161; unsubstantial, light, 217 imagine, 420; 'fained dreadful '=apflit, fitte, to move, change, flee, 19, 222. Flitting, fleeting, 70; yielding, 119, 161
Flong, flunz, 503 eadful, 228 ur. cheat, deceiver, vagabond, villain, 459 Flore, ground, spot, 143, 370 Flout, to mock, deride, 397, 428
Flowrets, little flowers, 450 ed, deceived, 20, 160; insecure, weak, falsehoods, 305. Falser, a liar, 461 Flushing, rapidly flowing, 260 ring, 219 izy, fancy, 149; apprehension, 403 roceed, act, deal, 80, 87, 251, 277 Fodder, grass, 222 Foen, foes, 93 Foile, a leaf (of metal), 27 far, 211 a face, 141 nghold, 345 Foison, abundance, plenty, 64 Folkmole, a meeting, assembly, 247
Fon, a fool, 449, 456, 552. Fonly, foolbably, 459
Fond, foolish, doting, 58, 167; fondling, fool, 399

term of life, 200. Fatal, ordained by

GLOSSARY. 7.30 Found, established, 136 Fondly, foolishly, 313, 628. Fondness, folly, 459, Foundring, toppling, falling, 250
Foy, allegiance, faith, 135
Foyle, repulse, defeat, 93; to defeat, rain, o Fond, found, 151; tried, 196 Poyle, repulse, defeat, 93; to defeat, r throw, 136, 351 Poyne, to thrust, push, 103, 124, 344, 317 Fone, foes, 20, 172, 358
Food feud, 50, 80 Foolhappie, undesigned, 38
Foolhardise, foolhardiness, folly, 88, 528
For, notwithstanding, 177; for fear of; what for= counc, to turust, push, 103, 124, 244, 317
Foyson, abundance, 564
Fraight, franght, 473
Frame, to make, form, support, prepare, diret, 52, 56, 157, 158, 159; to put in shape for mel 385 wnat sort of ? 404

Fordo, to destroy, 355. Fordonne, utterly undone, ruined, overcome, 37, 172, 250, 277

Forey, forty, hard by, near, 42, 43, 183; with, 349; past, 157 what sort of ? 454 Franchisement, deliverance, 351 Franck, free, forward, 90 Franckin, freeman, freeholder, 61
Franckin, freeman, freeholder, 61
Francin, a loos woman, 90, 308
Fray, to frighten, terrify, alarm, 15, 17, 28, 3,1
149, 179; affray, 234
France, a stranger, 455 Forecast, previously determined, 227
Foredamned, utterly damned, 217 Forelay, to lay before, or over, 94 Forelifting, lifting up in front, 69 Fret, ornamental border, 288. Fretted, orna with fret-work, 129, 174 Forepast, gone by, 282 Fore-red, foretold, 532 Frett, to consume, 90
Freted, to befriend, 236, 285 Foreshewed, previously instructed, 434
Foreside, the side to the fore, external covering, Friend, to betriend, 236, 285

Frigot, a little boat, 107

Fristes, gambols, 283

Frize, to freeze, 410

Fro, from, 114, 405

Frolicke, 'fained her to frolicke'=desired but it cheerful, 872

Events frombands, 18 Foreignt, forspent, uttorly wasted, 256
Foreignt, to take previous possession of, to hinder, obstruct, 126, 461, 611
Foreignth, previously taught, 45 Forecent, gone before, 467
Forged, false, 21
Forged, false, 21
Forger, fiction, deceit, 161; a counterfeit or assumed character, 310
Forgire, to give up, 404 Fronts, foreheads, 19 Fronts, foreheads, 19
Frorne, frozen, 450
Frory, frosty, frozen, 203, 204
Frounce, to fold, plait, 28
Froward = fromward, at a distance from, 40
Frowie, musty, 467
Fruict, fruit, 449
Fry, swarms (of young children), 74
Fry, to foam, 149
Fullmend, fulminated, 163
Fune for pass away, like smales, 156 Forhaile, to overtake, 475 Forhent, overtaken, 180 Forlent, gave up, 180
Forlows, forlorn, utterly lost, abandoned, 45, 53, 94, 150, 173, 178, 187; forlors (pret.), decerted, 211; lost (to sense of propriety), 354 Formally, expressly, 153 Formerlie, beforehand, 365 Fune, to pass away like smoke, 556 Funerall, death, 104 Forpus, to pass over, 517
Forpussed, past by or through, 213, 310
Forpined, pined away, 217 Furniment, furnishing, 245 Furniture, gear, equipment, 157 Fylde, felt, 420 Forray, to ravage, prey on, 416; a raid, 174
Forsake, to avoid, 70; renounce, 108
Forsay, forsake, 459 Fyle, to polish, 164 Fyled, kept in files, registered, 394 Forsayl, denied residence, banished, 467
Forsayl, denied residence, to delay, waste in sloth,
280, 355; neglect, omit, 425; impede, 465
Forstall, forstallen, to prevent, 475. See Forestall
Forsact, spent with heat, 455 Gage, pledge, 31, 72, 93 Gain, against (as in gainstrive, 264), 38 Gainsay, denial, 164 Galage (galoche), a wooden shoe, 450 Galingale, sweet cyperus, 584 Gail, bile, 18
Gallimanfray, hotch-potch, 442 Forswork, tired with over work, 456 Forthink, to repent, be sorry for, 380; to give up, 292 Gamesome, pleasant, 428 Gan (can) began, did, 18, 48, 110, 120 Forthright, straightway, 115 Forthy, therefore, because, 130, 452 Fortlage, a little fortress, 149, 681 Fortune, to happen, 165, 183, 392 Gang, to go, 452, 474 Gard, safeguard, protection, 165 Garran, a kind of horse, 681 Fortunize, to make happy, 405 Fortuneless, unfortunate, 270 Garre, to cause, make, 104, 455 Gasping, gaping, 454 Gasfull, fearful, dreary, 471 Gate, a goat, 460 Forwasies, utterly wasted, 68, 186 Gate, agost, 460 Gate, var, procession, 147, 178 Gately green, a toke of a light green, 458 Gazzeent, taze, 301 Gealosy, gelosy, jealings, 78, 700 Geore, gere, gear, dress, equipment 421; matter, affair, 373 Forcearie (forcearied), utterly wearie, worn out, 15, 56, 72 Forwent, left, 183, 258; did forgo, 561 forworse, much worne, 42

Foster, forester, 157 Fouldring, thundering, 88

```
scoff, 108
uncommon, 881, 512, 586
 179
; bribed with gold, 186
ord has been variously explained—by gelding, by others as a guilty person. hild explains it as a wild Irishman,
tind, accomplished, 55, 57, 88, 160
her, 88, 84, 124
, think, guess, 39, 230
arms, 60, 124, 378; gesture, deport-
ng, 128, 165, 201
ble, 162, 166. Ghastlinesse, terrible-
s, deem, 39
10ul. 46
gings, greaves, 109
(of torture), 36; plot, contrivance,
 begin, 13, 40, 70, 205
ments, tilts, 11, 477,; to joust, tilt,
dale, 159
den, 411
playee, a sword, 265, 281, 858
? fee property, 58
ry, hamlet, 455
bush of hair overhanging the eyes,
e, indistinct light, 401, 604
ttering, 141, 468
ter, shine, 13, 160, 223
ry, boasting, 92 tful, 201
 474
  marl, 36
lin, 139
, piece, 13, 69
d, 557
dola, 106 odlihead, goodness, 95, 869, 450; arance, 167
rolds, 552
e, wound, 162
sted blood, 84
13, 69, 242
r for the throat, 242
rge kind of hawk, $15
an, 75
greediness, 410
rernment, 150
government, 83,
control, 264
, kindness, 118; to give favour to, 67
ed, 450
, 44
scarlet), 43
nany thanks,117
ing, place, 431
; 250
```

```
Graplement, grasp, clutch, 142
Graste, graced, favoured, 419
Grate, to scorn, 86
   Grayle, gravel, 339, 540
Grayle, the holy vessel said to have been used at
Our Saviour's Last Supper, 137
  Our caviour's Last Supper, 137
Greace, grove, 216, 370
Gree, degree, rank, 468 (st. 15)
Gree, favour, goodwill, 34, 92
Greet, to congratulate, praise, 307, 348; monrnful,
470; to assign with praise (st. 14), 307; to weep,
          454
454
Gres, to grin, snarl, 265, 420
Grenning, grinning, 39
Gride, pierce, 507
Grieful, grievous, 231, 400
Griesie, thick, sluggish, 108; gray, 58
Griesie, grisely, horrible, 36, 145, 157
Griesed, hurt, 49
Grimnes, neverity, savageness (Embl.), 451
Grin, to gnash the teeth, 314
Grie, to grash 70, 350
  Gripe, to grasp, 70, 350
Gripe, gripe, grasp; grasping, greedy, 30, 301, 377
Gronefull, full of groans, 144
 Groome, man, a young man, a servant, 297, 876
Grosse, heavy, 70; the whole, 474
Groundhold, ground-tackle (as cables, anchors), 377
Groveling, with face flat to the ground, 34, 159, 184
Groynd, growled, 420
 Groyna, growies, 420
Grudge, gruich, to murmur, growl, 19, 84, 90, 167
Grydge, cut, pierce through, 123, 162, 209
Gryesy, grysie, squalid, 141, 226; foggy, moist, 162
Gryfon, gryphon, griffin (a fabulous animal), perhaps used for vulture, eagle, 38
Grypt, 'through grypt' = through-gyrd, pierced through, 374
Gustiith to heal 186, 244
  Guarish, to heal, 186, 244
Guerdon, reward, 66, 248
Guerdon, reward, 66, 248
Guiler, to begulle, 206
Guiler, guyler, deceiver, 215
Guill, guilded, 432
Guize, manner, mode (of life), custom, 349, 366
Guife, throat, 474
Gulphing, flowing (like a gulf), 510
Gust, taste, 438
Gybe, gibe (Embl.), 452
Gyeld, guild, courthouse, 116
Gynst, beginnest, 477
Gyre, circle, course, 102, 158
Gyod, fettered, 314
  Habergeon, haberjeon, a small coat of mail, armour for the neck and breast, 109, 174
Habitiment, clothing, 74, 82
Habitannee, habitation, 111
Hable, able, fit, 56, 70.
 tiaote, able, fit, 56, 70,

Hacqueton, a jacket worn under armour, 128

Hagard, wild, untamed, 70

Haile, hayl, to drug, haul, 97, 98, 208

Haile, health, welfare, 560

Haifendeale, half part, 211

Hailene, by my haildom'=by my faith as a Christian, 517

'Has (D). have, 452, 478
   'Han (pl.), have, 452, 478
Hand, 'out of hand' = 8
hand' = near, 40\
                                                                                           met once, 182, 814; 'migh
      Handsell, price, reward, 418
```

Hansomly, neatly, 513	Hippodames, sea-horses, 189, 222
Han, to happen, fortune, lot, 101, 380	Hoary frost, hoarfrest, 446
Happily, haply, by chance, 79	Hole, whole, 186
Happy, successful, 156	Holpen (pp.) helped, 399
Harborough, harbrough, shelter, 464	Hond, hand, 225
Hard, heard, 165	Hong, hung, 189, 190
Hardiment, hardihood, boldness, 56, 82, 156, 133,	Howycrock, pot of honey, 303
211	Hood, state, manner, 329
Hardnesse, rudeness, 274	Hooved, hovered, abode, 556
Hardyked, hardihood, 31, 440	Hopelesse, unexpected, 185
Harnesse, weapons, 314	Hore, hoary, 23
Harrow, an exclamation of distress, a call for	Horrid, rough, 47
help, 124	Hospitage, hospitality, 212
Harten, to encourage, incite, 529; hartned, encou-	
raged, 278	Hoste, to entertain, lodge, 270, 402, 506
Hartlesse, timid, 87	Hostlesse, inhospitable, 218
Haske, a wicker basket for fish, 480	Hostry, lodging, 345
Haubergh, hauberk, hauberque, hawberk, a coat of	Hot, hote, was called, 71, 251, 475; mention
mail, 177, 223, 277	Housling, sacramental, 77
Haughi, high, august, 41	Hore, rise, float, 21, 196; hover, 913
Hault, haughty, 368	Houre, time, 95; 'good houre '=good :
Haulst, embraced, 246	406
Haunten, to frequent, 467	Howres, devotional exercises, 385
Haveour, haviour, deportment, behaviour, 193, 224,	Hoye, vessel, ship, 138
455	Hububs, shouts, din, 216
Hayle, to drag, 302, 362	Hugger mugger, in secret, secretly, 514
Hazardize, danger, 147	Humblesse, humility, humbleness, 19, 25, 24
Hazardry, hazard, risk, 103; gaming, 161	Hurlyburly, noise of battle, 309
Hendlesse-hood, heedlessehood, heedlessness, 449	Hurtle, to rush, dash, hurl, attack, 9,
Heame, home, 481	brandish, 116; crowd, 250
Heard, herd, 448; a keeper of cattle, 403. Heard	Hurtlesse, innocent, 41
groomes, herdsmen, 448	Husband, farmer, 244
Heare, hair, 21, 126. Hearie, hairy, 157	Hyacine, hyacinth, 150
Heast, hest, command, behest, 45, 245, 318; name,	Hye, to hasten, 91, 383; on hye, hastily, 666
290; office (of one who had taken rows), 420	Hylding, base, vile, 384
Heben, ebony, 117; of ebony wood, 11	Hynde, a servant. 397
Heistall, that part of the bridle which is put on	
the horse's head, 309	Idle, causeless, 193
Herdinesse, heedfulness, 326	Idole, image, 91, 254
Heedy, wary, 474	Ill-faste, having an ill-look, 149. Ill-hell
Heeling, heel, 514	turbed in the head, 230
Hefle, raised, 72; threw, 242	Imbrast, embraced, 274
Hell, to cover, 282	Immeasured, unmeasured, 147
Helme, helmet, 287	Imp, child, scion, shoot, 11, 187, 286, 349
Hem, them, 459	Imp, to engraft, insert, 603
Hend, to seize, grasp, 350	Impacable, unappeasible, 277, 493
Henge, hinge, 70	Imperceable, not able to be pierced, 69
Hent, took, seized, 111, 141	Implore, entreaty, 106
Her, their, 460	
Herbane harba 180	Imply, to enfold, entangle, envelop, 30, 70, 1

Importable, intolerable, 122
Importune, violent, savage, 73, 123; full off 173; to threaten, 157; to solicit, 342
Importunely, with importunity, 119
Impresse, to make an impression, 140
Improvided, unprovided, unlowder for, 77
In, inne, dwelling, lodging, 15, 148, 171, 42
In, 'in . . . lyte' = fall upon, 163
Incontinent, forthwith, immediately, 39
Indee, to put on, 191, 212
Indifferent impartial, 163, 341. Indifferent partially, 481, 492
Indignaunce, indignation, 219
Indignaunce, indignation, 219
Indignaunce, indignation, 219

Indigne, unworthy, 2:3
Indigne, unworthy, 2:3
Indignel, unworthy, 2:3
Indignity, to treat with indignity, 364
Inferd, 6:16ced, 3:9
Infert, to make herce or houttle, homite, att
Influence, the power of the start, 3:3
Informed, formed imperfectly, 188

Importable, intolerable, 122

GLOSSARY.

722

Her, their, 460 Herbars, herbs, 130 Hern-shaw, heron, 392

Hersall, rehearsall, 219

Herry, hery, to praise, worship, honour, 146, 160, 448, 478

Hersel, rehearsall, 219
Herse, ceremonial, 168
Hether, hither, 401, 455
Hee, shape, form, 16
Hee, hacking, 401
Heydepayes, dances, 461
Hide, hastened. See Hye
Hidder (if not an error for hider=hither) = heceer; animals of the male kind, 474
Hie, to hasten, 286
High maned, 58, 158; entrusted, 28; di-

Might, called, named. 58, 158; entrusted, 28; directed, 348; pronounce worthy, hence determine, choose, 394; appointed, 264; purports, 414
Might, on hight'—aloud, 388
Mid, held, 287

GLOSSARY.

1

```
n. 599
                                                                  Kirlle, a coat fastened at the waist, 30
re, 280, 499
                                                                  Knee, projection of rocks. 58
                                                                 Knife, a sword, dagger, 103
Kon, know, 552. Kond, kn
Kydzi, knewest, 485
Kynded, begotten, 320
bitant, 431
, 161, 164, 220; entirely, 459
adventure, 163, 298
1, 133
                                                                 Lackey, to follow as a servant, 367
Lad, led, 154, 225
Lade, to load, 322
urteousness, 555
180
athe, 94
tch out, 72; to denote, name, 421; course, 101
                                                                 Luesie, lazy, 448
Laid, attacked, 277
                                                                 Laire, plain, 273
Lamping, shining, 168, 573
tention, 77, 224; knowledge, 185, 499
, 82
                                                                  Lanck loynes, slender waist, 189
est, 426
                                                                  Langurous, languid, 81
termingle, interweave, 308, 421
intermix, 4
                                                                 Lap, lappe, to fold, entangle, 94, 187
Larded, fattened, 449
Lare, pasture, 270
mmnnicate, 372
                                                                  Large, bountiful, 50
Latched, seized, caught, 453
ail upon, 90
on, 185
e into, 191
out, 183, 302
                                                                  Launce, balance, 194
                                                                 Launch, to pierce, 84, 261, 366
Laver, a basin, 151
Lay, field, lea, plain, 201, 214
n, 254
264
  weary, 17
                                                                 Lay, cry, 83
Lay, to throw up, 115
glorious, 82
                                                                 Lay, law, 136
Layd, faint, 477
Laye, laity, 459
Laystall, a dunghill, a place for the deposit of filth, 38
pilgrim's staff, 42, 548
:57, 395; a scolding woman, 143
 variance, 89
                                                                 Lasar, leper, 27
Lea, field, 449
ss wretch, 515
                                                                Leach, a physician, 170, 179
Leacheraft, medical skill, 170
Leake, leaky, 398
Leany, lean, 468
ardy, danger, 101
of leather tied round the legs of
which they are held upon the fist,
                                                                Leany, tean, 468
Leape, a basket, 486
Leare, lore, counsel, 219, 245. Leares, lessons, 196
Leasing, lying, falsehood, 43, 130, 140
Least, lest, 350
ndsome, pretty, lively, 11, 160, 233 -e, jollity, joyfulness, prettiness, live-
57, 460 y, 415
ul piece, 63
                                                                 Leave, to raise, 134
                                                                 Ledden, dialect, speech, 287, 556
Lee, river, 302, 496
Leese, to loose, 474
Lefte, lifted, 95
al, 71
mnny, 150
be glad, enjoy, 159
Iness, merriment, 226 aunce, joyousness, 458, 480 ts, 316
                                                                 Legier demain, sleight of hand, 339, 519
                                                                 Leke, leaky, 36
Leman, a lover, 45, 105, 165
                                                                 Lend, to give, provide, 131
Lengd, longed, 461
  See Kern
                                                                Lenger, longer, 14
Lepped, did leap, 453
Lere, to learn, 484; lore, 461, 557
re, charge, 16, 467, 484; to take 'heedie keepe' = watchful care, 339;
rd, 459, 481
                                                                Lesinges, lies, 461
Lesinges, lies, 461
Lesioned, instructed, 193
Lest, to listen, 362
Let, to hinder, 45, 85,
 166
 327
try, 597. Kend, kent, knew, pern, 74, 121, 195, 350, 552, 460. Kenst,
                                                                                                 85, 183; 'let be' = away with,
149, 452
                                                                    93; hindrance, 50, 143, 231
foot-soldier, 640
                                                                Level, to direct one's cour
r, 468
30
                                                                Lerin, lightning, 187, 467. Lerin brond, thunder-
                                                                    bolt, 426
                                                                Level, ignorant, wicked, foolish, 450. Levely, foolishly, 270, 448
Levelnesse, wickedness, 181, 310
. 112
   se nature, 92
                                                                Libbard, leopard, 41, 94, 158, 166
Lich, like, 196
167, 293; sex, 168; occupation, 96.
ral, 50, 161, 209
                                                              Lief, liefe, dear, beloved, 25, 56; willing, 207; 'liefe
1, 461
```

```
GLOSSARY.
          724
         or sory'=willing or unwilling=lief or loth, 365, 424: (comp.) liefer, 58, 99, 158; (superl.) liefest, 213, 'liefest liefe'=dearest loved one, 166
Liege, lord, master—one to whom faith has been pledged, 393. Liegeman, a vassal, one who owes homage to a liege lord, 92
Lift, ling, full of life, 417, 588
Lig, liggen, to lie, 381, 459, 460
Light, easy, ready, 161; to lighten, 185; befall, 353
Lightly, quickly, 761
Lignage, lynage, lineage, 40
Like, to please, 114
Like as, as if, 316
Likely, similar, 598
                                                                                                                                                                                Mace, sceptre, 132
                                                                                                                                                                               Mace, sceptre, 102
Macerate, to tear, 505
Madding, foolish, 455
Mage, magician, 170
                                                                                                                                                                                 Magnes-stone, the magnet, 14
                                                                                                                                                                                Mail, may, male, armour, 237
Maine, mayne, force, 44, 50, 141; coma,
Mainelly, mayne, strongly, violently, 40, 13
Mainsheat, mainsail, 356
                                                                                                                                                                                 Maintenaunce, condition, 199
                                                                                                                                                                                 Maisterdome, maistery, mastery, superiority,
                                                                                                                                                                                       158, 234
                                                                                                                                                                                 Maistring, superior, controlling, 194, 774, 694
Make, to write poetry, 441
Make, companion, mate, 44, 218, 238
Malefice, evil deed, 523
           Likely, similar, 598
           Likelynesse, likeness, 331
Lill, to put out the tongue, 36
          Lill, to put out the tongue, 38
Limbeck, retort, 432
Limbeck, a bloodhound, limer, 302
Lin, to cease, 14, 36, 171, 202, 547
List, to desire, like, 125; (impers.) please, 164, 278.
List, ut, attentive, 239
Lite, lyte, alight, befall, 387, 385
Livelod, lirelood, livelihood, 311, 372
Lively, lifelike, living, 125, 159, 200
Livelyhed, livelihead, livelihood, 88; living original, 125; motion of a living being, 393
                                                                                                                                                                                Malegice, evil deed, 523
Malegine, ill intent, deceit, guile, 161
Malice (pret. malist), regarded with malice,
ill-will to, 406, 534, 601
Maligne, to gradge, 179
Mall, club, mallet, 49, 257; to manl, 348
Malalent, ill-will, 181
Mand, blocked up with men, 417
Manie, many company, multitude, 75, 322, 38
                                                                                                                                                                                Manie, mass, company, multitude, 78, 222, 32
Manner, kind of, 279
Manue, to rest with outspread wings, 369
Mard, spoilt, injured, dishonoured, 139, 214
         125; motion of a living being, 398
Livery, delivery, 381
Loafty, loathsome, 232, 351
Loft, height, 16
Lome, clay, loam, 403
Lompish, dull, slow, 16, 181, 225
Long, to belong, 32, 174, 367
Loord, lout, 195, 446
Loos, fame, 419
Loose, to solve, 350
Lope, leapt, 453
Lopp, branch, 448
Lore, learning, teaching, fashion, 91, 246, 287; speech, 354
                  125; motion of a living being, 393
                                                                                                                                                                                 Marye, margin, bank, 102, 274
Maryent, margin, 178
Marle, ground, soil, 143
Marishes, marshes, 345
Martelled, hammered, 198
Martelled, hammered, 198
                                                                                                                                                                                  Martyr, to afflict, torment, 263
                                                                                                                                                                                Martyre, to afflict, torment, 263
Martyries, to devote as a martyr, 554
Maske, to conceal oneself by means of a m
at a masquerade), 43, 174
Masse, wealth, 206; material, 283
Massy, massive, 214
Mate, to stupely, confound, amate, 55
Matchlesse, not to be matched, 233
Matchlesse, not to be matched, 233
Matchlesse, not no be matched, 234
Mauarre. massiare; in suite of, a curse on! 8
                  speech, 354
            Lore, lorn, left, deserted, 27, 228; lost sight of, 847
            Loring, learning, 381
Loring, losell, lozell, a loose idle fellow, 92, 378, 467
Lose, to loosen, 224
                                                                                                                                                                                 Maugre, maulgre, in spite of, a curse on! 16.
220, 234; unwellingly, 299
                                                                                                                                                                                 Maris, thrush, 588
                                                                                                                                                                                Maris, thrush, 988

Mayntenamic, behaviour, 474

Maysterdome, superiority, 301

Mazed, amazed, confounded, 234, 261

Mazelul = amazelul, wonderful, 369

Mazer, a kind of hard wood (probably the 181

180; a bowl made of maple, and richly 6

mented, 470

Mathematical and down 1/1 244, 360
            Lusen, to set loose, 193.
                                                                                    Los'te = loosed, dissolved, 176
           Lot, fate, 365; share, 250
Lothfull, unwilling, unpleasant, loathsome, 180
           Loup, loop, 126
Loul, low, to bow. to do obeisance, 65, 93, 214, 238
           Lorely, loving, 25, 238, 246; lovingly, 246; lorely, of love, 261, 394
            Lorer, an opening in the roof to let out the smoke,
                                                                                                                                                                                 Me, 'he cast me down' (l. 244), 260
                  411
                                                                                                                                                                                 Mealth, melteth, 57
                                                                                                                                                                                Mealth, melteth, 57
Mean, Mealth, moderate, moderation, 113, 184
means, 228; 'by meanes,' because, 339
Meanesse, humble birth, 373
Meanly, moderately, 513
Meare, pure, 143; boundary, 210
Mear'd, divided, shared, 529
Measure, moderation, 401
Medawart, meadow-wort, 121
Measured, sang, 148
Measured, sang, 148
           Lug, a perch or rod of land, 132
Lumine, to illumine, 602
Luskishnesse, sluggishness, 364
            Lust, pleasure, desire, 251, 290, 480; to desire,
                  please, 113
         Diesse, 113
Luster, a glittering, sheen, 353
Lustlesse, feeble, listless, 29, 181, 364
Lustlesse, feeble, listless, 29, 181, 364
Lustlhede, lustlyhed, lustyhead, pleasure, 216, 459, 532; pleasure (of youth), 460
Lymiter, a friar licensed to beg within a certain
                                                                                                                                                                                Measured, sang, 148
Measurelesse, boundless, 500
                                                                                                                                                                               measurreisse, Douintiess, 308
Meddle, medle, to mix, 36, 445
Meed, reward, 515
Meere, skulvise, antixe, 856
Meint, mingled, 452
Melampode, Disch beliebere, 45
Mell, to Intermeddle, 14, 350
              district, 513
      Lynays, lineage, 12
   Lyne, linen, 535
Lyle, to alight, light, befall, 387
Lythe, pliant, 449, 507
```

```
L 82
842, 887
1, meant, 227
inited, 18, 317
ciful, 474
 thanks, favour, 103; thank you, 82
eryment, merry-making, sport, 108,
, cheerful, 105
prize, contempt, insolence, 116, 207, 20, 147
e, secrete, 95, 206, 226; prison, 105, m, 889
d, united, 467
great, 97, 177, 211
, 251; midmost, 28
e, 293
ted, 90
o mind, 87
nindful, 269
ifling song, but properly a musical
fies, toys, 268
purite, 90
ushed, 72
 to mirke' = very obscure, 474
eliever, 84
formed, 116
alse faith, misbelief, 124, 459
leem amiss, misjudge, 73, 360. Missleading, 18. Misdempt, misjudged,
214
    862
1e, 1
ating, 29
resed, 381
nisdo, 206
paring sadly, 376
ign wrongfully, 26 rtune, 852
astray, 468
e, misrule, 459
pass, 376, 600
ppen amiss, 24
 aped, 196
te, to dialike, 305, 460
sconstruction, 270
to no purpose, uselessly, 418; abuse, 260, 474
unseemly, to misbecome, 203 seemly, wrong, 57, 90; deceit, 49 mity, 357
```

ing, 358, 468 rices for the dead, 517

anage, guide (a horse), 47; to wield; management, 226

ommemorate, 502

```
Misshapen, deformed, 140
 Mister, sort of, manner of, 57, 182, 468
Misthought, mistake, 273
Mistooke, suspected, 219
Mistrayne, to mislead, 858
 Mistrephe, to misiesal, ooo
Mistreph, signifies, matters, 199
Missiesene, to think amiss, 79
Missiesene, to think amiss, 79
Missiesele, to rain in little drops, 482
 Mo, moe, more, 59, 222
Mochell, much, 449, 470
Mold, mole, spot, 418
Moldwarp, mole, 556
Molt, melted, 102
Mome, blockhead, 428
 Moniment, mark, stamp, 112; record, 181
Monocros, sea-unicorn (? sword-fish), 147
Moorish, morish, marshy, 288, 507
Moralize, to cause to be moral, 168
More, root, plant, 430
  Morion, helmet, 482, 535
 Morrow, morning, 306
Mortall, deadly, 89
 Mortality, the estate of mortal man, 60
Most, greatest, 286
Mostschat, generally, 556
Mot, mote (pl. moten), may, must, might, 191, 236,
267
Mott, measured, 553
Mought, might, 452
Mought, might, 452
Mould, to moulder, 96; shape, form, 27
Mountenance, space, distance, 202, 220
Mowes, insulting grimaces, mouths, 396
Moyie, to defile, 601
Muchell, much, great, 32, 40, 197, 214
Muck, weath, 113, 214
Mucky, sordid, vile, 113, 206, 405
Muming, masking, 520
Munificence (munificence), fortification, defence, 188
Mured, walled, enclosed, 21, wonderment, 77
Muse, to wonder, 82; wonderment, 77
  Muse, to wonder, 82; wonderment, 77
 Musicall, music, 458
Must, new wine, 438
 Myndes, resolves, 101
Mysterie, profession, trade, 514
 Namely, especially, 434
Napron, apron, 318
Narre, nearer, 46
Nas, has not, 459
Native, natural, 325
Nathlesse, nathless, none the less, never the less, 161, 254
Nathemoe, nathemone, none
more, 57, 97, 102, 184, 421
                                                             none the more, never the
Ne, nor, 14
Neat, cattle, 402
Needments, necessaries, 551
Nempt, named, 214
Nempi, named, 214
Nephenes, descendants, grandchildren, 35, 122, 177
Net, nett, purs, clean, 226, 401
Nethelesse, nevertheless, 442, 444
Newell, a new thing, 461
Nigardise, niggardliness, miserilness, 269
Nigh, to approach, 452
Nighty, nearly, 467
```

University, completed, passed, 118

```
Nill, will not, 183, 219; will or nill, willing or un-
willing, 27; 'nilled,' unwilling, 264
Nimblesse, nimbleness, 340
Nip, to slander, 519
Nobilesse, noblesse, nobleness, noblity, 52, 441, 465
Nominate, to name, affirm, 67
Nones, nonce, occasion, 539
                                                                                                                                                        Outerought, completed, passed, 118
Overdal, everywhere, 72; all over, 69
Overdore, overthrew, 251
Overcame, overspread, 194
Overcame, to crow over, insult, 59, 449
Overdight, decked over, overed over, overg
      Noviture, norture, nurture, bringing up, 91
Nortures, Norwegiaus, 172
Not, note, wot not, know not, knows not. (It sometimes seems to stand for ne mote = could not), 173,
                                                                                                                                                        117, 271, 554
Overgo, to overpower, surpass, 300, 471
Overgine, to give over, 173, 515
Overgine, to give over, 173, 515
Overgine, to draw over, 447
Overhall, to draw over, 447
Overhall, overtook, 133, 307; overtaken, 184, 1
Overlest, overcast, 189, 494
Overlode, to overwhelm, 356
Overplast, overhanging, 82
Overplast, overhanging, 82
             192, 226, 293, 806
        Nothing, not at all, 107
      Noting, not at an, 10'
Notifye, to proclaim, 228
Nought, not, of no value, 128
Nould, would not, 40, 374, 394
Noule, the head, pate, 433
Nourice, nurse, 491
                                                                                                                                                        Overplast, overhanging, 82
Over-radylt, overtook, 376
Over-red, read over, 223
Overses, to over-run, oppress, 302
Oversee, to overlook, 129, 515
Overlight, escape (through having overlook danger), 38
Oversee, to overlook
       Noursie, nousie, to nurse, foster, rear, 41, 297, 380 Nousling, nestling, burrowing, 288, 556
       Novell, news, 449
       Noyance, noyaunce, annoyance, 224
Noyd, noyed, annoyed, 63, 72, 160
        Noyes, noise, 245
                                                                                                                                                         Oversicim, to swim over, 172
                                                                                                                                                        Oversaim, to swim over, 172
Overbore, overthrow, 251
Overthwart, opposite, 284
Overture, an open place, 465
Over, to own. See Ought
Ouch, a socket of gold to hold precious stom
jewel, 19, 63, 177
Overell, blackbird, 588
Oustrie, overtich, 141
       Noyous, annoying, disagreeable, injurious, 87, 73
       Noysome, hurtful, 407
Nycely, carefully, 225
Nye, to draw near, 461
Nye, is not, 460
       Oaker, ochre, 491
Obliquid, oblique, 435
       Obsequy, funeral rite, 86
Oddes, advantage, 368
                                                                                                                                                         Oystrige, ostrich, 141
       Offices, satisfactory, 300 (1), offi, 460; upon, 247; by, 112, 118, 285; of all, above all, 407 (1), that which falls off, 92
                                                                                                                                                         Pace, pase, step, pass, passage, 27, 157
Packe, to pack off, 424; a burden, 368
       Offend, to harm, hurt, 151, 379
Offend, to harm, hurt, 151, 379
Offenew, recently, 416
Offenew, origin, 138
On, one, 489
                                                                                                                                                         Paddock, toad, 484
                                                                                                                                                         Paine, payne, labour, pains, 141; punishment, did him paine'=took pains, exerted his
                                                                                                                                                               855
                                                                                                                                                         Paire, to impair, 48
Paled, 'pincht upon gold, and paled part per |
366='adorned with golden points or en and regularly intersected with stripes. I raidry a shield is said to be parted per pale it is longitudinally divided by a pale or limit.
       Onely, chief, especial, 80
Ope, open, 246
Oppress, taken captive, 153
       Or, ere, before, 517
Ordain, to set (the battle) in order, 133
       Order, to arrange, 128; rank (of army), 127
Ordinaunce, arrangement, 128; ordinance, artillery,
                                                                                                                                                         Puled, fenced off, 33
      Oricalche, a kind of brass, 532
Origane, bastard marjoram, 21
Other, left, 97, 358
Otherwhites, elsewhere, 150
Otherwhites, sometimes, 212, 230
Ought, owned, 31, 123, 521; owed, 160
                                                                                                                                                         Pull, to subdue, moderate, 311
Pull, a cloak of rich material, 318, 467
                                                                                                                                                         Panachau, panacea, 85
Pannikell, skull, crown, 184
                                                                                                                                                        Paragon, paragone, companion, equal, 233, 253
rivalry, 174
Paramour, a lover, 456
       Outbarre, to arrest. 138
      Outgo, to surpass, 253
Outhyred, let out for hire, 295
                                                                                                                                                         Pararaunt, first, beforehand, 164, 558; in !
                                                                                                                                                             408
      Outlaunced, outlaunched, 533
Out-learn, to learn from, 270
                                                                                                                                                         Parbreake, vomit, 13
                                                                                                                                                        Pardale, penther, 41
                                                                                                                                                         Parentage, parent, 134
       Outrage, violence, outburst, 90
      Outstrained, outstretched, 507
                                                                                                                                                        Parget, plaster, 538
Outscreenes, 301
Outscreenes, 301
Outsceene, wear out, 239; pass, spend, 227
Outscell, to gush or well out, 13; (pret.) outscide, 509
Outscell, surpassed, 454
Outscin, to get out, 232
Outscind (=outwin), to get out, 307
Outscrest, wrest out, discover, 99
                                                                                                                                                       Pariet, plaster, 538
Part, party, 249; depart, 24
Partake, to share, 98
Parture, departure, 205
Pas, passe (passing, surpassing), to surpass, et 28, 63, 108, 117, 235, 308
Passion, suffering, 20, 288. Passioned, eff.
```

g, be grieved. Passionate, to express fence, 122. Patronesse, a female dece, pansy, 159, 221, 456 tok, 223 9 pains, exert, 28 e, balance, 132 aling, 429 qual, 369 265 d, base knight, 374 fortified place, as a castle, ship, &c., 1, 212, 302 fect, 477 ar tree, 458 at, 449 poise, weigh, 804, 557 ie, restrain, 302 ... iaments (of wood or stone) hanging a Gothic roof, 279 t of food, 318 rce, 47
pardies, truly, 42, 65, 93, 205 ecessity, 92 risk, 448 ous, 157, 196, 228, 282 sunt, piercing, 65, 94, 208 nley, 534 ring, 208 reonal appearance, 165 :k, 185, lain, 474 See Purveyaunce provision. ind of blunderbuss, 622 amnt, 96 companion, 564 untenance, 430 cture, 130
placed, fastened, 22, 186, 449
plunder, 300, 524, 581
rrow, grief, 58; to waste away through
5; 'pined ghost,' a spirit wasted away
orment), 188, 267; done to pine, caused 128 passionate, tender-hearted, 136 ice, of rank, 269 c, to complain, 186, 219, 220 intive, 815 oned, 313 e tree, 12 pleasure, delight, 20, 450; pleasauns, ording pleasure, 150 ow pool, plash, 123
 plight), weave, plait, fold, 107, 20
it, fold, 94, 840; condition, 208, 233 208, , 233

weight, force, 78, 856

164 1, 263 ler, 300 craft, 185 rpoises, 552

to appoint, 273, 292; a whit, 'to poynt'

Port, portance, portaunce, demeanour, bearing, 92, 93, 116, 165, 204, 222
Portesse, breviary, 29
Possesse, to accomplish, 174 Potshares = potshards, fragments of broken vessels, Pouke, a goblin called Puck or Robin Goodfellow, Pouldred, powdered, spotted, 44, 165; reduced to powder, 530 Pounce, claws, talons, 70, 315 Pound, weight, balance, 'new in pound' = anew in the balance, 303 Pourtrahed, drawn, 128 Pourtraite, quartraiture, portrait, image, 40, 94, 155, 253 (vb.), 442
Pousse, pease, 470 Poynant, piercing, sharp, 45, 122, 156, 242 Poyne, weight, 303; force, 73 Practic, practicke, treacherous, deceitful, 77; skilful, 242, 384 Prancke, to trim, deck, adorn, adjust, 28, 90, 92; a malicious trick, 298 Pray, to be the prey of, 410; to make a prey of, 312 Preace, prease, to pre 22, 116, 250 Prece, to prove, 525 prease, to press, 76, 242, 424; a press, crowd, Prefard, preferred, 238
Prefixt, fixed beforehand, 351 Prejudize, foresight, 130 Prepense, to consider, 219 Presage, to tell or point out, foresee, 68 Presence, reception-room, 28 President, precedent, 310
Prest ready, prepared, 122, 244
Pretend, to attempt, 141; to stretch out (or over), offer, 378, 414 Prevent, anticipate, 365, 398 Price, to pay the price of, atone for, 35, 58; value, 68 Prick, to ride hard, to spur on quickly, 298; point, centre of target, 145, 474

Prickett, a buck, 484 Prief, priefe, proof, trial, experiment, 53, 56, 63, 85, 99, 380 Priere, to prove, 314 Prime, pryme, spring time, 21, 158, 192; morning, Primitias, first fruits, 517 Primrose, chief rose, 449 Principle, beginning, 348 Prise, adventure, 898 Price, pricy, secret, 474. Pricitalife, 98; intimate relation, 252 Privitee, privitie, private Procure, to arrange, entreat, 155 Prodigious, ominous, 231 Professe, to present the appearance of, 387 Proine, proune, to prune or trim the feathers, 565 Project, to throw forward, 365 Prolling, prowling, 474 Prolong, to postpone, 248 Prone, subjected, 165 Proper, own, peculiar, 137; proper good, own pro-perty, 299 Protense, a stretching out, 169
Proce, to experience, try, loci, 261, 268, 305
Procekenent, a provoking, 247

Puissa

prowess, 56 Prune, 95. See Proins

Pryse, to pay for, 285. See Price Puddle, a small stream, 500

ni, powerful, 286

Pumie, pumy stones, pumice stones, 186, 488
Purchase, to obtain, to get, win (honestly or otherwise), 98, 456 Purchas, purchase, property, booty, robbery, 24, 98, 418 Purfled, embroidered on the edge, 19, 94 Purport, disguise, 161 Purpos, purpose, conversation, discourse, 20, 75, 92, 163, 201, 280; 'to purpose,' to the purpose, 101; to speak as 'purpose diversity' = to speak as 'purpose diversity' = to speak of various things, 146 Pursuivant, a pursuer, 518 Pursuivant, a pursuer, 518
Pursuy, to provide, 93, 355
Pursuyance, provision, management, 78, 156, function, 159, 223
Puttocke, a kite, 817
Pyne, pain (of hunger), 318; torment, 65
Pyoning, diggings, work of pioneers, 138 Quasile, to cast down, defeat, conquer, 98, 165, 203; perish, 481
Quasint, nice, fastidious, 194, 230
Qualify, to ease, soothe, 111
Quarie, quarrel, a square-headed arrow, 142, 148 Quarrie, quarre, a square-needed arrow, 122, 148
Quarrie, quarry, prey, game, 144, 197, 815
Quart, quaitet, 138
Quayd, quaitet, quelled, subdued, 50
Queense, a worthless woman, 270
Queint, quaint, 478; 'queint elect,' oddly chosen, 196 Queint, quenched, 103 Quell, to kill, to subdue, 116, 411; to perish, 434; to abate, 452; to disconcert, frighten, 307, 356 Queme, to pleas e, 458 Quest, expedition, pursuit, 199, 262 Quick, quinche, to stir, move, 341, 670
Quick, alive, 84; 'some quicke' = something alive,

Pross, brave; (superl.) Prossest, 31, 84, 171. Prosses,

Quistage, quietness, 246 Quight, to set free, 50; to requite, 186 Quilled, padded, 102 Quip, a jeer, taunt, 519; to sneer at, taunt, 395 Quire, company, 401 Quirk, a quip, 618 xessr., a quip, olo (quit, quite, quyte, to set free, to requite, repay, 19, 556; to return (a sainte), 14, 62; freed, removed, 33, 67, 231; 'quite clame,' to release, 367 Quode, quaked, 214 Rablement, a rabble, troop, 36, 75, 141, 525
Race, to raze, 154, 172; to cut, 317; raced, erased, 340 Rad, rode, 301
Rad, perceived, 206, 361. See Read
Ragt, bereft, 14, 470
Ragged, rugged, 36
Raite, rayle, to flow, pour down, 43, 128, 181, 222, Rain, rayne, to reign, 37; kingdom, 114, 180, 244
Rain, rayne, to reign, 37; kingdom, 114, 180, 244
Rain, rayne, to reign, 37; kingdom, 114, 180, 244 Ramp, tear, attack, 26, 85; leap, 421
Ranci, flercely, 92; vigorous growing, 466

Randon, random, 202, 458 Ranckorous, sharp, 450 Ranks, fleroely, 256 Kenze, Beroely, 255
Rase, rapine, 263
Raseal, rushell, low, base, worthless, 141, 222
Rase (pret. rush), to erase, 183, 233
Rash, to tear violently, hack, 237, 307. Seek, quic
Park, translad 2077. Rate, to scold, 207 Rate, to scold, 207
Rate, allowance, 209; order, state, 284
Rath, early, scon, 171, 467. Rather, early-ben
Rath, mound, 642
Rasspht, reached, extended, took, 41, 184, 389
Rasspht, roached, extended, took, 41, 184, 389
Ravishment, estates, 404
Ray, to dedile, soil, 84, 203, 379, 540
Ray, army, 305, 351
Rayle, abuse, 234
Rayle, abuse, 234
Rayne, kingdom, 367
Rayons, rays, beams, 538

Raynes, rays, beams, \$58
Read, reede, advice, 296, 369; motte, 290; pre
466; prophecy, 293
Read, reed (pret. rad, red), to know, decks
plain or advise, discover, perceive, supper
14, 42, 52, 67, 107, 117, 164, 171; regard, lif
Readifye, to rebuild, 136
Realife, to reform, 435
Reamas, realms, 187 Realis, to reform, 425
Reames, realms, 187
Reare, to raise, take up or away, stal, 168,
212, 217; excite, 156; to rouse, 233
Reason, proportion, 88
Reason (prot. rgft, raft), to bereave, take:
(forcibly), 26, 120, 141, 201
Rebuke, conduct deserving of reproof, rudeses
Rebuke, reckless, 521
Rechlesse, reckless, 521
Recleyme, to call back, 355 (ab.), 213
Records. to remember. to call to mind. 233, 48

Recorde, to remember, to call to mind, 293, 48 Recourse, to render to call to mind, 283, we Recourse, reconers, recurse, to recurs, to recurs, as a few recourse recurs, 300; return, 208, 260

Recoyle, to retire, retreat, 62

Recuile, recule, to recoil, 353, 363

Red, redd, declared, described, perceived, 25

67, 107, 117, 190, 216, 223, 429, 533, 3ec 26

Redishouses to rensy 244 Redisbourse, to repay, 244
Redoubted, doughty, 206
Redoubted, to overflow, flow, be redundant, \$\mathbf{S}\$

279
Redress, to reunite, remake, 36; to rest, 246
Reed, to deem, 112. Reeds, read, to advise, 13.
Reek, to smoke, 474
Reek, to roll, 186
Refection, refreshment, 294
Reft, bereft, taken violently away, 182, 173,
Bee Reave Regalitie, rights of royalty, 86
Regarde, a subject demanding consideration (

reparts, a subject demanding consideration tention, 115; value, 413
Regiment, government, command, 131, 172, 35
Rete, to care, rock, 486
Reteat, to break losse from, 88; to give up, 5
Reteat, to give way, to shacken, relax, with
194, 237 Relide, to ally, jobs, 277

GLOSSARY.

```
over, revive, live again, 60, 178, 200,
retrace, 195
 vithout hope of rescue, 36
hank, 141
 , 198
o encounter, meet in battle, 31

nfierst), made more fierce or=renforst
 d, 124
iforced, enforced, made fresh effort,
 , 455, 470
i, 455, 470
everse, overturn, 31, 310
tance, 226; to grieve, 205
siling (of courage), 19
w term signifying to take possession
laimed, giving security at the same
thmit the question of property to a
lai within a given time, 294
ry off, 83, 183
of, shame, 67, 169, 176
sprive of, take away, 85
 ieve, 294
take, 144, 248
quire, demand, 41
and, 90
 ted, returned, 246
 instate, to be reposersed of, 136
compare, 213
, look, regard, 195
 ent, 288
 caution, 356
correspondence, reply (in music), 152 reathe again, 98 stless, 346
tution, 184
 , 336
rn (the eyes) back, 98
ure, portrait, 94, 125
reat, 94, 244, 284
ment, 405
 , 159
 revenge, 234
 turn, to cause to return, 168, 175 lothe, 82
reviling, abuse, 98
all, withdraw, 220
lback, 220
pity, to be sorry for, to lament over, 172, 185
     'in rew,' in order, 499
 mild, a loose impure person, ribald, 81
sad, a total injury person, ribato, of
es, 115,
skill in explaining riddles, 223
undant, abundantly, much, frequent,
12, 249. Rigitye, abundantly, 455
oken, 114; gap, fissure, fragment, 20,
 184. Rigorous, violent, ?26
 19
e, riot, extravagance, 159, 226, 259
```

tear, 186, 305 to, 181

ncursion, 400 and, anchorage for ships, 78

```
Rong, rang, 162
  Rontes, young bullocks, 448
Roode, a cross, crucifix, 385
  Rosiere, a rose tree, 127
  Rosmarine, a sea-monster that was supposed to feed on the dew on the tops of the sea rocks, 147;
 feed on the dew on rosemary, 584 Role, a lyre, harp, 132, 275 Roules, rolls, records, 394 Rosside, a roundelay, a kind of song, 471 rowd, troop, 127, 305
  Rout, crowd, troop, 127, 305
Rose, to shoot (with a sort of arrow called a rover),
11, 161, 320, 471
Rosel, the ring of a bit—any small moveable ring,
  Rowne, place, space, 59, 188
Rownded, whispered, 214
  Roundell, a round bubble (of foam), 178
  Rouse, rouse, to shake up, 69, 95
  Royne, to mutter, 341
Rubin, Rubine, the ruby, 94, 150
  Ruone, the ruby, 94, 150
Ruddock, redbreast, 588
Rue, to prive, 20, 348
Ruffed, ruffled, 165, 501. Ruffle, disordered, 30.
Ruffled, ruffling, 213
Ruinale, to ruin, 146, 346; ruined, 522
Ruing, pitying, 343
Ruinese Januese 500
  Ruing, pitying, 543
Ruilese, lawiesa, 509
Ruih, jaty, 17, 182. Ruihfull, piteous, 465
Ruity, rooty, 605
Rufe, frequent, common, 466
Ryve, to pierce, 185
 Sacrament, oath of purgation taken by an accused party, 299
Sacred, accursed, 53, 149, 354
Sad, firm, heavy, grave, 23, 61, 84, 89, 122
Saine, sayne, to say (pl. say), 435, 460, 481
Sake, cause, 34
  Sale, a wicker net (made of sallows or willows), 484
  Salew, to salute, 260
Saliaunce, onslaught, 83
Salied, leapt, sallied, 392
Sallows, willows, 256
  Sallors, willows, 256
Salroge, savage, wild, 23, 133, 173, 215, 251, 341
Salue, to salute, 121
Salue, to heal, save, remedy, 133, 250, 320
Salving, salvation, restoration, 82
Sam, together, 66, 460
Samile, 818 stuff, 225
Sample, example, 467
Sagagine, blood colour, 201
  Sanguine, blood-colour, 201
Sardonian, sardonic, 339
Sau/gard, guard, defence, 102.
protect, 205
                                                                                                   Savegard, to
  Saulge, sage, 584
Saw, word, saying, proverb, sentence, 558
Say, a thin stuff (for cloaks), 80, 224
  Say, assay, proof, 417
Scald, scabby, 54
Scand, climbed, 424
Scarabee, a bestle, 537
Scarmoges, skirmishes, 109
  Scath, hurt, harm, damage, ruin, 77, 159, 212, 485, 577
Scatter, to let drop, 86
Scatterling, a vagrant, 128, 624
```

Scerne, to discern, 385

```
Scerne, to discern, 385
Schuchin, scutchin, escutcheon, shield, device on a
shield, 177, 233, 242, 353
Scolopendra, a fish resembling a centipede, 147
Scope, aim, 482; dimension, 210; 'aymed scope,'
a mark aimed at, 372
Scorse, to exchange, 181, 207
Scould, scowled, 90
Scould, scowled, 90
 Scriene, scrine, scryne, skreene, a cabinet for papers, a writing desk, 11, 131; entrance of a hall, 340 Scrike, shrick, 379
 Scruze, to squeeze, crush, 144, 151, 185
Scryde, descried, 358
 Sileigne, to disdain, 160, 161
Sea-shouldring, having shoulders that displace the
  sea, 147
Sear, to burn, 70; burning, 69
  Sease, to fasten on, seize, 72
See, seat. 282
  Seelde, seldom, rare, 69, 570
Seely, simple, innocent, 39, 92, 192, 466
Seem, 'nought seemeth' = it is not seemly, 460
  Seeming, apparently, 226
Seeming, apparently, 226
Seeming, apparently, 302
Seemily in a seemly manner, 123; comely, 148;
       apparent, 226
  Scenilyhed, a seemly appearance, 269
Scene, skilled, experienced, 239, 442
Seew, to pursue, 209
  Seised, taken possession of, 76
Seisin, possession, 381
  Scicouth, seldom known, rare, strange, 269
  Sell, seat, saddle, 87, 92, 158, 175, 250
Semblaunce, semblaunt, semblant, likeness, appearance, phantom, 82, 150, 167, 168, 181, 195, 282; cher, entertainment, 378
   Sence, feeling, 259
  Seneschall, governor, steward, 231, 343
Sens, since, 254
   Sensefull, sensible, 881
  Sent, scent, perception, 16, 180, 196, 257
Sere, scar, 446
Serre, to bring to bear upon, 137
  Set by, to esteem, 262
Sererall, diverse, 24
  Sew, to follow, 88, 113, 180, 186, 402; to solicit, 294
Seyne, to say. See Sayne
  Sepne, to say. See Sayne
Shade, to shadow, represent, 327
  Shallop, sloop, 197
Shame, to feel shame, to be ashamed, 147
  Shamefas', modest, 318
   Shamefastnesse, modesty, 808
  Shard, division, boundary, 110; cut, 297
Share, portion, piece, 19; to cut, 237, 297, 317
Shayre, shires, 135
Sheare, to cut, divide, 109, 178, 256
  Sheare, shere, bright, clear, 218
 Sheares, wings, 119
Shed, to spill life blood, to kill, 115
Sheene, shene, bright, shining, clear, 81, 90, 162, 180
Shend (pret. shent), to disgrace, defile, abuse, reproach, shame, 17, 81, 102, 120, 181, 206, 235,
```

```
corruption of thider (thither) must mana deer, she animals, 475
Shield, 'God shield,' God forbid, 466
Shine, shyne, a bright light, 67; bright, M3
Shier, to quiver, 235, 237
Shone, shallow, 427
Shone, to shun, 161
Shope, shaped, framed, 320
Shol, advanced (in years), 324
Shrichs-owle, shriek owl, 491
Shrices, to question (shrive), 293
Shricks, shriek, 379
Shrieke, to question (shrive), 293
Shrifts, confessions, 517
Shrighi, a shriek, 118, 377; to shriek, 293
Shritting, shrill, 33, 203, 239
Shriving, confession, 517
Shrowde, to take shelter, 449
Sib, sibe, akin, related, 395
Sich, such, 196, 171
Sicker, sure, 452
Sickernesse, security, safety, 223
Sicrenesse, security, safety, 223
Sicrenesse, security, safety, 223
Sicrenesse, security, safety, 223
Sicrenesse, security, safety, 223
                                                                                                                                                                                                                      Sickernesse, security, safety, 223
Siege, seat, 90, 116
Sield, cieled, 318
                                                                                                                                                                                                                      Sient, scion, 296
                                                                                                                                                                                                                      Sight, sighed, 85
                                                                                                                                                                                                                      Sign, watchword; representation, picture, A Sike, such, 460
                                                                                                                                                                                                                       Silly, simple, innocent, 42, 194, 216
Simplesse, simplicity, 467
Sin, since, 417
                                                                                                                                                                                                                      Sin, since, 211
Singults, sighs, 219, 500
Sinke, hoard, deposit, 14
Sidel, placed, strated, 191
Sith, sithe, sythe, time, since, 37, 124, 215, 334,
Sithers, since, since that time, 32, 37, 55, 111, 1
                                                                                                                                                                                                                       Sithes, times, 447, 191
Sits, is becoming, 14, 459
                                                                                                                                                                                                                        Stean, a dagger, 631
                                                                                                                                                                                                                      Secan, a dagger, 531
Still, to signify, to be a matter of important
Stippet, a little boat, 146
Slacke, slow, 190
Slake, to slack, 169, 332
Slacer, slobber, 337
Slight, sleight, device, trick, 46, 234, 339
                                                                                                                                                                                                                      Slipper, slippery, 482
Stombry, sleepy, 190
Slug, to live idle, 82
                                                                                                                                                                                                                       Sly, subtle, clever, 124
                                                                                                                                                                                                                     Sy, subtle, clever, 124
Smirke, neat, trim, 449
Smil, smote, 19, 348; smitten, 166, 231
Smot, smote, 158; smitten, 167
Smouldry, smouldring, suffocating, 102, 220
Smag, a knot, 142, 263
Snaggy, knotted, covered with knots, 44
                                                                                                                                                                                                                      Snags, knots, 263
Snaky-wreathed = (?) snake-ywreathed, mile
                                                                                                                                                                                                                             twined, 425
                                                                                                                                                                                                                     Snar, to snarl, 420
Snarled, twisted, 225
pronce. shame, 17, 81, 102, 120, 181, 206, 235, Snebbe, to reprove, anab, 449
467, 607
Mere, to cleave, divide, 106
Shere, bright, clear, 167, 259
Mere, mark, track, 23
Shidder (generally explained as she), but if not a Solein, and, 480
```

corruption of thider (thither) must n

```
newhat, 484
06
ed, exposed to the sun, 447
unshiny, 446
r. 456
ruth, 460; truly, 170, 174, 277
y, 485
dich, truly, indeed, 164, 844, 367
diction, omen, 205, a kind of flower like a carnation, 458
y, 160, 561
, inasmuch as, 76
sourse, to swoop on, as a bird does upon
strike, attack, 33, 133, 177, 243, 244,
63; the swoop (of a hawk), 143; blow,
nerse, 25
thsay, 286. Southsayer, soothsayer, 38 remembrance, 107, 111, 124, 459 eld, 74. Sownd = swound, swoon, 112
eld, 74. So
nd, 105, 111
, 250
43
lk, roam, 240, 273, 297
houlders, 109
h, to cause to sparkle, 159
1g, niggardliness, 161; to save, 263, 459
error for sparkle), a battle-axe, 676
bar, 348
sight, 603
speed, misfortune, 254
 452
ilt, shut, 347, 460
sperse, scatter, 15, 310
spense, scatter, 19, 510
keen glances, eyes, 19, 159, 398, 401
maure, grudge, 161
uge, destroy, 27, 199
 inlaid, 278
 produced, 489
age, carry off, 114
ved out quickly, 277
ie, 189
med betrothed, 60
d, 340
h, 434
ien, to spread over, to cover, 157 kled, 150, 237, 584
 t, 310
ingal, youth, 535
onth, stripling, 843
d, having heads that spring afresh,
ng, 162, 175
nr, 156
w
ot forth, 187
ry trifling fellow, 516
are, a rule, a carpenter's measure, 86
f, prop, 40
parage, 544
bait, 80, 407
e, 114
, taken, 524
, 473
ie, 197
```

fared,' stood up stiffly, 927

solemn rite, 60

```
Stark, strong, stiff, 16, 84
Star-read, knowledge of the stars, 296
Startuppe, a wooden shoe, 451 (Glosse)
State, stately, 473
Stay, to hold, hold up, support, 220
Stayd, caused to stay, 372
Stayd, constant, 148
Stayded, constant, 148
Stayne, to dim, deface, 99
Stayre, a step, 187
Stayre, a step, 187
Stead, sted, station, place, situation, 51, 58, 72, 164, 223, 249
Stead, to help, avail, bestead, 126
Stead, to help, avail, bestead, 126
Steane, a stone (vessel), 434
Steare, a steer, 222, 261
Sted, place, condition, 357; steed, horse, 51. See
Stead
       Stead
 Steedy, steady, 83
Steely, steady, 83
Steely = steelen, of steel, 297
Steemed, esteemed, 282, 410
Steep, to bathe, stain, 162
Stellhs, thofts, 24
Steme, to exhale, 109
Stemes to exhale, 109
Steme, to Enhance, 108
Steme, to rush against, 237
Stent, to cease, stop, 98
Sterve, to die, 230; to starve, 594
Steven, voice, cry, 475
Stew, a hot steaming place, 72
Site, to ascend, 278
Site, to ascend, 278
Site, to ascend, 278
Site, to stop, cease, 176, 242; a stop, limit, 564
Site, to str, move, incite, provoke, 102, 198; to direct, steer, 80
Stole, a long robe, 76
Stomachous, angry, 121
Stomacke, temper, 116
Stond, attach, 141
 Stonied, astonished, alarmed, 351
Stound, stounds end, a moment of time. 52, 53;
Stound, stound, stoud, a moment of time. 52, 53;
(a time of) trouble, peril, alarm, assault, 122, 158,
162, 255; effort, 485; a stunning influence, a
blow, amazement, 258, 261, 306, 522; stunned,
        blow, a:
 Stound, astonishment, amazement, 568
Stours, accommence, amazement, ass
Stour, to swoop, 144
Stour, stubborn, bold, 174, 226
Stoure, stoere, tumult, disturbance, battle, passion,
ft, 18, 169, 163, 446, 447; paroxysm, 173; danger,
peril, 25, 32
 Straine, race, lineage, 271.
Straine, 1809, lineage, 271.
Straine, strayene, to stretch out, 114
Straint, grasp, strain, 301
Strake, strook, 95, 98, 507; a streak, 98
Straune, foreign, borrowed, 225
Straune, to wield, 114; to embody in strains, 480
Strukt, a street, 116
Streight, a street, 110
Streight, narrow, strait, strict, 355, 583; close, 274
Streightly, straitly, closely, 122, 166
Streightly, straitless, 323
Street, strain, race, 341, 387
Street, distress, 136, 219
Strict, the company 140
Strich, the screech-owl, 149
Strif-ful, stryfull, contentious, 88, 164, 248, 255
Stroken, struck, 367
Strond, strand, 196
```

Strong, strung, 504 Strong, to spread out, display, 467 Stub, stock of a tree, 58 Sty, to ascend, mount, 70, 117 Subject, lying beneath, 70, 194 Submisse, submissive, 284 Subtile, fine-spun, 153 Subverst, subverted, 228 Succeed, to approach, 377 Successe, succession, 136 Sue, solicit. See Sew Sufferaunce, patience, endurance, 235
Sufferaunce, abundance, 534
Suffisci, satisfied, 22 Suffled, satished, 72 Supred, sweet, 105 Supple, to make supple, 185 Suppress, to overcome, keep down, 396 Surbate, to batter, 178 Surbate, bruised, wearied, 89 Surcase, to leave off, utterly to cease, 158, 178, 237, 304 Surcharge, to attack with renewed vigour, 277 Surcharged, heavily laden, 266 Surplusage, excess, 114 Surpeusage, excess, 114
Surprise, to seize suddenly, 410
Surmount, to surpass, 131
Surquedry, pride, insolence, presumption, 148, 157,
211, 303 Surview, survew, to overlook, survey, 449 Suspect, suspicion, 39
Swain, swayn, a labourer, youth, person, 393, 453
Swart, black, 133 Swarre, to swerve, retreat, 62, 96, 156 Swat, did sweat, 305 swar, and sweat, 305 Sway, to swing, brandish, wield (arms), 136, 162; force, 317; a rapid motion, 147 Sweard, sword, 244, 552 Sweath-bands, swaddling-bands, 379 Swell, fainted, swooned, 263; burnt, 44; (? swelled, 220) Swinck, labour, toil, 112, 474 Sicinge, to singe, 70 Sicole, sweetly. See Soole Swound, swoon, 263 Sybbe, akin, related, 461 Syker, truly, 467 Syriye, surly, 468 Table, a picture, 59 Tabrere, one playing on a tabour, 458
Tackie (pl. tackies), rigging, 78
Tadaunce, to advance, 449
Taking, sickness, 456
Talauniz, talons, 72
Tamburins, small drums, 464

Tane, taken, 546
Tapets, tapestry, figured work, 585

Tens (? lene, lend, give), to bestow, 186
Tell, to count, 114. Teld, told, 385
Temed, yoked in a team, 178

Tare, tore, 197 Targe, target, 102 Tarras, terrace, 840

Teene (lene),

Stud. studde, trunk, stock, 452; shrub bush, 505

Temewise, like a team, 222 Temper, to govern, control, 525
Tempering, controlling, governing, 100
Tend, to wait on, 310
Tender, to tend, attend to, 193, 372
Terebinth, the turpentine tree, 467
Termelesse, unlimited, 600
These to recover the top 600 Termelesse, unlimited, 600 Thes, to prosper, thirtye, 83 Theoreryes, thefts, 222 Thelement, the elements, 449 Their, then, 43, 168 Thereto, besides, 168 Thetch, thatch, 515 Theher, thither, 307 Thether, thither, 307
Thether, thither, 307
Thesed, behaved, mannered, 100, 597
Thesed, pehaved, manners, 55, 60, 83, 137
Thick, a thicket, 84, 453
Thilk, thilke, that same, this, 447, 450, 454
Tho, thee, then, 13, 17, 158, 459.

The, the, pl. than 474 A14
Thone, the one, the first, 445
Thorough, through, 246, 374
Throughly, thoroughly, 118, 307, 383
Thother, that other, the other, 148, 445
Thous-thou es, thou art, 468, 552
Thrall, to take captive, emalare, 85, 219; tring is subjection, constrain, 319; a slave, 38; emiss 417 417 Threat, to threaten, 179, 227. Threatfull, threating, 227
Threater, a fiall, 325
Threttie, thirty, 448
Thrid, a thread, 240
Thrill, to pierce, 163, 166, 184, 213, 266. Thrist, to piercing, 70, 101
Thrist, to thirst, 42; thirst, 106
Thristy, thirsty, 64, 105
Throw, time, while, 180
Throw, three, pang, 64; thrust, attack, 163, 12
184, 244, 245
Thrust, to thirst, 89; thirst, 199
Thwart, athwart, 186
Thrist, 190
Theoret, athwart, 187
Tickle, uncertain, insecure, 178, 431, 542
Ticke, 94c; time, season, opportunity, 30, 190, 26 Threat, to threaten, 179, 227. Threatfull, threats Tide, tyle, time, season, opportunity, 30, 190, 311
Tide, tyle, time, season, opportunity, 30, 190, 311
Timbered, massive (like timbers), 305 Timbered, massive (like timbers), 305
Timelese, untimely, 570
Timely, seasonable, beautiful, 446
Tinct, coloured, 481
Tine, affiction, 294
Tine, to light, kindle, inflame, 14, 190, 195, 213, 3
Tine or teen, sorrow, grief, pain, 218, 245, 224
Tire, rank, train, 30
Tire, tyre, attire, dress, 54, 63, 86, 450
Titmass. Helon-amprony 480 Titnose, hedge-sparrow, 480
To=for (as in to frend), 14
Todde, a thick bush, 452
Tofore, before, 248, 387
Too, very, 449, 460
Tode, weapon, 95 Tarsal, terrace, 340
Tassal gent, the tiersel, or male gomhawk, 180
Tassacage, to assuage, 448
Tauchrie lace, a lace (girdle) bought at the fair of
St. Audrey or St. Ethetred, 456
Teade, a torch, 78, 535, 887
Teade, a torch, 78, 535, 887
Teade, a torch, 348. See Tine
Ethes (2 Leave, lond, ed. ro.), to best ow. 186 Tooting, looking about, 452 Top, head, 46 Toren heare, torn halr, ses pain, 58, 76, 86, 218, To-rent, rent sembler, 363
To-rent, rent sembler, 363
Tort, wrong, lujury, 18, 108, 184, 311
To-rtious, injurious, wrongtal, 38, 378, 381
Tossen, to brandlab, tom, 163

```
ring, unsteady, 488, 449
                                                                          Unbid, without a prayer, 60
ring, unsteady, 435, 449
pieces, 338
joust, 80 (ab.), 164
worry, 143
ble, 99; approaching, near at hand,
                                                                          Unblest, unwounded, 801
                                                                          Unbrace, to unfasten
                                                                                                                     97
                                                                          Uncivile, wild, uncivilised, 112
                                                                          Uncouth, unusual, strange, 13, 163, 215, 267
Uncrudded, uncurdled, 589
Undefide, unchallenged, 122
out, 338
ort, 110, 151; to play, 629
                                                                          Underfong, to surprise, circumvent, 300, 465
Underhand, secretly, 289
Underlay, to diminish, 505
track, tract, 196, 271, 874; to trace, 110 tread, 110; occupation, 148; con-
                                                                          Undersay, to affirm in contradiction to anyone,
                                                                          4/4
Underwong, burden (of a song), 471
Understand, to learn the cause of (or perhaps to take in hand for purpose of arbitration), 24
Undertake, to perceive, hear, 309
Undertime, time of the mid-day meal, 195
Undertime, time of the mid-day meal, 195
Undertime, time of the mid-day meal, 195
sfer, 243
to drag along, trail, to allure, 390; snare, trap, 38, 57, 169, 212, 271; sembly, 303
or the hair, tresses, 88, 208
sformed, 221
ansmute, transform, 47, 95, 159
ranspose, 222
                                                                           Undight, to undress, take off ornaments, unloose, 23, 146, 185, 190, 392
                                                                          23, 146, 185, 180, 332
Uneasy, disturbed, 159
Uneath, unneath, unneathes, uneth, scarcely,
difficulty, uneasily, 58, 68, 106, 183, 211, 473
Unespyde, unseen, 159
Unglide, unpolished, 196
(with trappings), 120, 527, 120, 527
                                                                                                                                                                      with
oven, adorned, 316
                                                                           Ungentle, uncourteous, 162
                                                                          Ungentlenesse, base conduct, 182
Unguilty, not conscious of guilt, 165
Unhable, incapable, 29
Unhable, paine, unsuccessful labours (because there was no heir to reap the benefit of their pains),
 helour, a traitor, 31, 81, 99, 136, 397,
 se, hold parley with, 202 (sb.), 231
is
 hant,
            cutting, 70, 817
                                                                               280
                                                                          Unhappy, unfortunate, 111
Unhastie, slow, 23
Unhesie, unhele, to expose, uncover, 152, 253
Unheedy, unwary, 132. Unheedily, unheedingly,
 s of 30 mass
                               which were usually
on as many different days, for the
        492; prove, a daw trie = prove a
                                                                               280
ol, 521
                                                                          Unherst, 'took from the herse or temporary monument where the knights' arms were hung,' 310
Unkempt, uncombed, rude, 214, 480
Unkend, unkent, unknown, 286, 440
 l-formed, 159; pleasing, 160
 id, 78
ty of being threefold, 78
th, footstep, 211, 466, 474
adless spear, 123, 242
                                                                           Unkind, unnatural, 167
Unkindly, unnatural, 132, 446
Unlast, unlaced, 365
                                                                           Unlich, unlike, 35
585, 92
, 303 ated, having the head cut off, 102 up, 216; carry off, 70, 264; a bundle,
                                                                          Unlike, not likely, 320
                                                                           Unmanurd, not cultivated, 132
Unmand, uninjured, 407
Unmede, unit, 198, 232
Unnethes, scarcely, 446
Unnoble, ignoble, 502
mayed, 87
ified, 302
iled, 278, 541
unter, 258, 278
an, 288
70, 109
                                                                           Unpurvaide of, unprovided with, 424
Unred, untold, 291
                                                                           Unredrest, without redress, unrescued, 272
                                                                           Unreproved, blameless, 113
                                                                           Unrestfulnesse, uncasiness, 454
 823
                                                                           Unshed, unparted, 266
 d, 35
d, 35
265, 508
1, 56. See Tine, Teen
5 grief, to perish, 289
nt, 478
male tyrant, 37
                                                                           Unsoote, unsweet, 485
Unspidie, unseen, 188
Unstayd, unsteady, 363
                                                                           Unthrifty, wicked, 80
Unthriftyhead, unthrift, 147, 226
                                                                           Untill, unto, 68, 482
 ng like a tyrant, 262
                                                                           Untimely, unfortunately, 319
ittire, 282
y, 157, 395
                                                                          Untrust, unbound, 566
Unralmed, invaluable, 584
                                                                           Unwary, unwary, unexpected, 16
Unwary, unware, unexpectedly, M, 166
Unware, unwared, unexpectedly, M, 166
unknown, 250, 452, 461
```

isor of a helmet, 160, 251 unsual, strange, 68

Weasand-pipe, windpipe, 242 Weather, to expose to the weather, 313 Weather, waved, floated, 311 Weed, clothes, dress, 11, 45, 94, 120 Weeke, wick, 134

Weft, a waif, 309

thing cast adrift, 215

Weeldelesse, unwieldy, 243
Ween (pret. weend), to suppose, expert. #
17, 58, 99, 251

11, 98, 93, 201
Weel, secten, to know, learn, understand, F
23, 92, 157, 163, 185. To seed=to wit, 18
Westingly, knowledge, 347
Westingly, knowingly, 372
Westlesse, unconscious, ignorant, 106, 163, 5

Wefte, was wafted, 108; avoided, 179; 1

Wel-away the white, also the time! 473
Weld, to while, govern, 729, 338
Welke, to wane, 14, 207, 447
Welkin, sky, beavens, 28

GLOSSARY.

734

Uniceeting, not knowing, unconscious, 21, 22, 174

Venger, avenger, 24
Ventayle, the place of the helmet, 165, 259
Vented, lifted up the visor, 160

Ventrous, venturous, bold, adventurous, 149, 239 Vere, to veer, 356 Vermeil, vermeill vermell, rermily, vermilion, 134,

Vertuous, possessing virtue or power, 154
Vestiment, vestment, 227
Vetchy, consisting of the straw of the vetch (tare),

Venteth, snuffeth, 449 Ventre, to venture, 265

Vild, vile, 38, 349
Vildly, vilely, 14, 27
Villein, base-born, low, 142
Virelayes, light songs, 480, 546

Virginal, pertaining to a virgin, 127 Visnomie, visage, 311, 535 Vitall, life-giving, 81

160, 201, 277

475

```
Worshippe, honour, reverence, 12, 163
Worth, to be, 109
Wot, wote, know, knows, 7, 59, 206, 449
Wotes, knows, 206. Wotest, knowest, 93

    12; very (well affectionate), 175
    134. Well-head, fountain head, 113
    in exclamation of great sorrow, alas!

                                                                            Woundlesse, unwounded, 477
Woved, wooed, 412
xperienced, 306
abounding in moral wisdom, 449
                                                                            Work, wored, 412
Work, woren, become, grown, 30, 180, 271
Wracke, wreck, destruction, violence, 38, 448; to take vengesne, 261. Wrackfull, avenging, 405
Wrat, to wrest, 357
Wrate, did write, 227
11, 468
n, go, 273

sy, course, 257, 386

sand, windpipe, 301

v, increase, become, 120, 196, 207

01
n, go, 273
                                                                            Wrating, mewing like a cat, 420
Wrating, mewing like a cat, 420
Wrat, vengeance, 53, 75; ruin, 198; to avenge, take vengeance on, 93, 164
Wreat/ull, avenging, 297
Wreat/ull, avenging, 297
Wreat/, to turn, 88
Wret, destruction, 21
what sort of a, 455
re, place, 66, 177
ly, 505
erwhelm, 91, 98
                                                                             Wrest, to wrench, twist, 153; a wrenching, over-
ich of two, 21, 301; 'Alas the while!' = woe worth the
                                                                                turning, 144, 153
                                                                             Wrest, the wrist, 33, 194
                                                                            wrete, to twist, 13
Wretle, to twist, 13
Wrigle, wriggling, 448
Wrif (pl. writtes), writing, a written paper, 76, 163
Wroke, wroken, avenged, 104, 238, 265, 463
"../ere=erewhile, formerly, lately, 57,
at, whilst, 292
                                                                            Wrye, awry, crooked, 448
Wull, will, 590
Wyde, turned away (cf. wide of the mark), 123
Wyte, wyten, to blame, 353, 516, 558
overed with a wimple, 430 kind of whale, 147
ed, 485
6, 128, 198
rmerly, 28 (chains), 220
                                                                             I', as a prefix of the past participle, is frequently
-about, 414
er, 475
                                                                                employed by Spenser, as Y-clad, clothed, 12, 14. Y-fraught, filled, 20, &c.
     blame; 'worthy wight' = merited
                                                                             l'ate, gate, 460
                                                                            Tate, gate, 400
Tbent, turned, gone, 180
Tbet, beaten, 248
Tblent, blinded, dazzled, 18, 456
Tbore, born, 177
Tcond, learnt, 461
Tclad, clad, 14
n, being, 129, 140
A 453
ckly, 473
vild apple, 195
ıble, 458
 gather, plait, fold, 12; a covering for
                                                                             Ycleepe, to call, 550
Ycleped, called, named, 182
 veil 76
ret (out), 232; come up to, 363
ard, wise man, 28, 296
node, manner, guise, 161, 165, 173
                                                                             I'dle, empty, 83
                                                                             Ydlesse, idleness, 369
Ydrad, ydred, dreaded, feared, 11
rnew, 165
                                                                             l'ead, yede, yeed, to go (properly a preterite tense),
                                                                                68, 96
witch
                                                                             Fearne, to earn, 365, 392
Feuen, give in, 455
Ffere, together, in company with, 54, 455
Ifretted, ad rned, 165
xd, 464
wyle, to blame, twit, reprove, 147, 180,
ameless, 471
withheld, 140
                                                                             Ygo, ygoe, gone, ago, 19, 183
Yglaunst, glanced, glided, 198
Yilde, yield, 138
vithout, 359
seless, foolish, 466
 intelligence, 149. Wittily, wisely, sen-
                                                                             Yirks, jirks, lashes, 395
Yike, alike, 30
d, 124, 233
                                                                             17k, same, 471
                                                                             Ymol, melted, 220
Ympe, youth, 224.
Ympt, joined, 275
Ynd, India, 38
   womanly feeling, 402
m), be wont, 208
                                                                                                                 See Imp
(wonning), dwelling-place, abode, 114, 175, 378; to dwell, 42, 117, 184, 369
                                                                             Ynne, abode, inn, 480
Yod, yode, went, 60, 112, 202
Yodest, didst go, 567
re wont, 449
accustomed, 226
                                                                            Yold, yielded, 219
Yond, yonder, 420
Yond, outrageous, terrible, 196
Yonghly, youthin, 536
Youngling, young of man or beaut, 88
frantic, furious, 30, 85, 98, 277
adness, 220
rell, 504, 557
```

0 951

i or spent the time, 27%

GLOSSARY.

ga Han

19.50 (P. 19.50)

Foungth, yougth, youth, 480, 582
Founker, a youth, 251
Founker, a youth, 251
Founker, a youth, 251
Founker, a youthful, 95
Fyent, pent up, 446
Fylight, plighted, 91
Frage in apright, rapt in spirit, 558
Frees, wearles, 204
Fron-braced, sinewed like iron (of the arm), 102

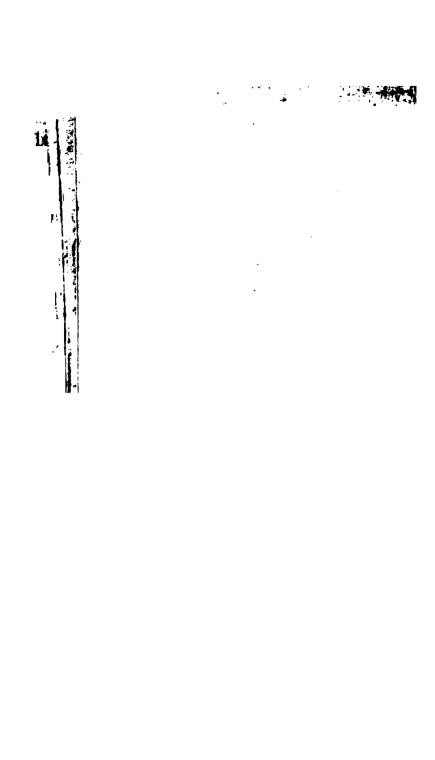
Farme, together, 433
Tabrilled, did sound shrill, 550
Flost, harassed, 463
Flost, crainly, truly, 82, 199
Fosts, ortainly, truly, 82, 199
Fosts, 'had Farid', vain after-regret; liter
I known' (how it would have turned out
Furnale, yearoke, yearokea, avenged, reven
285, 388

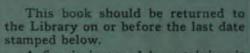
SPOTTESWOODE AND CO., NEW-STREET SQUARE,
SPOTTESWOODE AND CO., NEW-STREET SQUA

<u>.</u>

.

.





A fine is incurred by retaining it beyond the specified time.

Please return promptly.

APR 9 '58 H

NOV 158 H

OL 172 2 N BOOM-DUE 9 OCT 5 1981

7 2450 R 1

